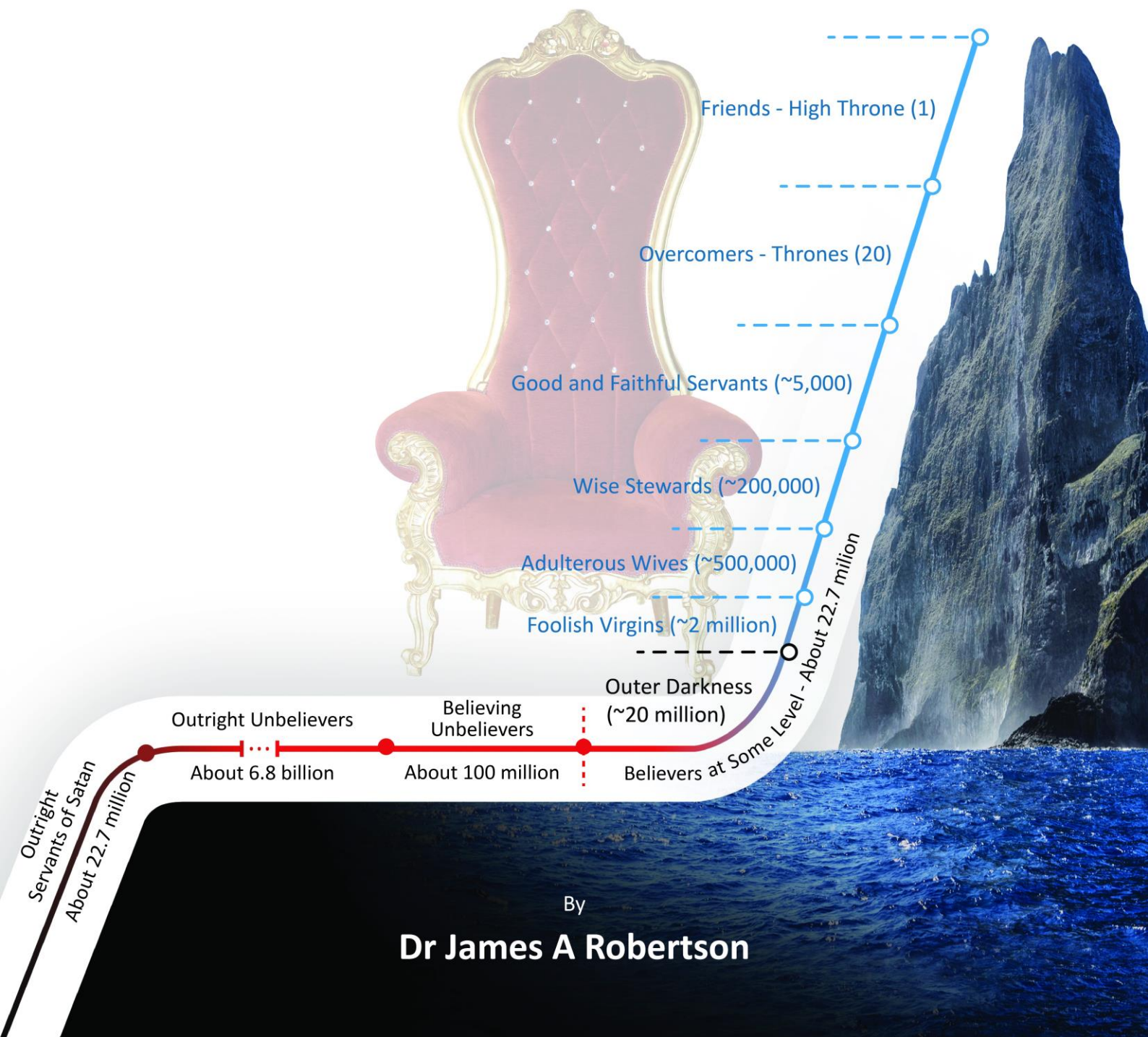


# The Almighty Creator Desires a DEEP Personal Relationship with YOU!

## Volume 10 - Part 1

Towards Heaven on Earth in Life and Marriage  
Yah's Plan for Healing Marriage and Life  
Recorded in 2000  
Foundational teachings on the Anointed Life



By

**Dr James A Robertson**



---

# **The Almighty Creator Desires a DEEP PERSONAL relationship with YOU!**

**Volume 10: Part 1**

**Towards Heaven on Earth in Life and Marriage  
Yah's Plan for Healing Marriage and Life  
Recorded in 2000  
Foundational teachings on the Anointed Life**

**End Time Issue Ministries  
Dr James A Robertson**

This is part one of the tenth volume in a set of twelve volumes (15 books). The printed version of the first volume, of "Most Important" writings, includes a CD with a collection of Recommended Worship Songs and a collection of material, including the website, on a USB Memory Card.

---

---

**ISBN (Softcover)**

**ISBN (Electronic)**

First Printing May 2019

**Copyright End Time Issue Ministries and Dr James Robertson © 1998 through 2019**

You may copy and cite this book partially or in full.

We leave it to you to decide whether to acknowledge the source or not and whether you quote accurately or not. We are confident that the Almighty Creator will judge any use of this material and reward those deserving of reward and punish anyone deserving of punishment.

---

## **Why Seek a DEEP Personal Relationship with the Almighty Creator?**

As you open this volume the immediate question that may cross your mind is “why should I seek a DEEP Personal Relationship with the Creator, IF there IS a Creator.”

There is much in this collection of books to answer that question but let me give you the short form here:

1. The Almighty Creator created Human Beings so that EVERY ONE OF US might have a DEEP Personal Relationship with Him.
2. He also created us with the intention that He might actively participate in our lives help us with our daily tasks, help us to invent new things and generally participate constructively in every facet of our lives.
3. We are surrounded by evidence that the Creator exists. The complexity of the Universe, the Earth, the Plants, the Animals and Human Beings ALL point to the existence of the Creator.
4. The fact that all moderately advanced life forms reproduce sexually, which requires that the male and female fit together and function perfectly for the species to reproduce evidences the existence of a Higher Creative Power.
5. We are intended to live forever. When your body dies you will either go to Heaven, where, depending on the works you have done on Earth, you will receive a rank ranging from a place in the Outer Darkness with weeping and wailing and gnashing of teeth through to an extremely high throne with great power, authority and splendour, it is your choice.
6. If you fail to believe, which is the ultimate sin, when your body dies you will become a disembodied Ancestor Spirit or Demon with a status in the Satanic realm associated with the evil you have perpetrated in this life. In general this will not be a particularly nice existence. At the end of this age, IF the Almighty loses His Contest with Satan

you will remain on Earth with no motive power, not a pleasant state of affairs. If Satan loses, you will be cast into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone where, in a moment of terror and torment, you will be utterly destroyed.

It is up to you, I have great certainty that the RIGHT way to live one's life is to serve the Almighty faithfully and qualify to sit on a High Throne for Eternity. This series of books contains much information geared to assisting you to do this.

I encourage you right now to take a quality decision to serve the Almighty faithfully to the end!

---

## Why Read These Books?

This volume is part of a collection of fifteen books comprising roughly 7,500 pages and well over 1,000 articles that address a huge diversity of issues relating to seeking to draw close to the Almighty. These books include:

1. Commentary on the current state of the Earth and mankind.
2. Commentary on the direction in which mankind is going and what must still happen.
3. Commentary on how things got to be the way they are today.
4. Corrections to widely held errors and statement of important truths.
5. Principles with regard to drawing close to the Almighty.
6. Diverse other topics associated with the subject of developing a DEEP Personal Relationship with the Almighty Creator.

These volumes present in considerable detail my learnings from March 1993 to February 2019 including the outcome of years of prayer, fasting, separation and seeking. I believe that the Almighty Creator, Yah the Eternally Self-Existing has said that this collection of writings is important and valuable and, accordingly, on that basis, I commend them to you for your consideration and reading.

Much of what is presented in the books is also present on the website at [www.ETI-Ministries.org](http://www.ETI-Ministries.org)

---

## Companion Volumes

This is part 1 of Volume 10 in a set which comprises twelve volumes and fifteen books comprising nearly all writings and publications of significance since the start of this ministry.

There are twelve Volumes in the Book Set, fifteen physical books. If you are wanting to really draw close to the Almighty there is a huge amount of learning contained in these books which run to over 7,500 pages on a huge diversity of subjects.

Much of this material was written or recorded under a material anointing and with a material level of leading by the Spirit of Yah and I therefore commend this Book Set to you as a resource that can help you draw closer to the Almighty and better understand what is going on on Earth today.

### Essential Elements Flyers

Having collated the information for the Booklet below I realized I could net down the content to those items that were Essential for a person making a first-time decision to Serve the Almighty to a single A4 sheet with three folds. Similarly, I could net down other items for a person who already believed to help them take the first step on the ladder to becoming a Friend of Yah. These two flyers will be distributed together with the Book Set.

### Critical Elements of Belief Booklet

As I was completing the Book Set below I decided to produce a couple of concise one-page bullet point summaries of key aspects of what I advocate. Over a period of two weeks that extended to a list of about 23 such one-page analyses on all the major areas that I hold opinions on that I think are valuable and from Father. These have been assembled into Booklet form and will be distributed together with the Book Set as well as independently.

Collectively the lists in this document provide a concise way for any person to gain an overview of all the major areas of belief that I consider important. This Booklet will be distributed together with the Book Set and provides an entry point for the Book Set listed below.

### Volume 0:

Some key statements of what I believe plus most recent teachings including teachings from the Radio Programme



that commenced in October 2018 as well as other recent teachings that were written after the first volumes were finalized. Volume 0 also contains the Tables of Contents of all the Volumes in the Set which will facilitate you in finding material of interest. This information is also available on the Website at various levels of accessibility – the Website is fully searchable both with Google Site Search and the Article Search on the Articles Database.

I believe that the material in Volume 0 is the most rounded and most mature of all the material I have created and therefore I recommend Volume 0 as the place to start if you do not have the interest to read the remaining Volumes.

### **Volume 1:**

Volume 1 contains what I consider to be the most important writings I have originated barring what is contained in Volume 0 which material originated after Volumes 1 to 5 were finalized. Volume 1 includes an Audio Compact Disk of Recommended Worship Songs plus a USB Memory Card containing all articles I have written plus books, audio teachings, videos and the Website. These items are also available on the Website.

There is a lot of important material in Volume 1.

### **Volume 2:**

All writings between the Day of Atonement 2014 and July 2018. These writings consolidate what I had learned and reported up to 2014 and represents a more mature view of those learnings. There is also a large collection of direct quotes given to me by the Almighty in 2014.

I strongly recommend that you read Volume 2 after reading Volume 1.

### **Volume 3:**

All the Website Header Articles written in 2014 plus recent articles not included in Volumes 1 and 2. The Website Headers cover a very large diversity of topics – about 700 short to medium length articles.

This volume is well worth reading in terms of getting answers to many questions. All of this material is also available on the USB Memory Card associated with Volume 1 which you can browse on your computer without an Internet connection. This can also be downloaded off the Website.

#### **Volume 4:**

All articles published between the Day of Atonement 2009 and the Day of Atonement 2014. These articles cover a period where my understanding of diverse topics was maturing, particularly adjusting to the Bible NOT being “The Word of God” and Yahooshua {Jesus} NOT being the Almighty in the flesh. Many other topics are addressed.

A useful collection.

#### **Volume 5:**

A collection of eBooks never previously formally published on a range of topics. These were written between 1998 and 2000 with one written between 2004 and 2007. Most of these contain words and doctrine that I have since come to understand to be incorrect, however in all cases there is much in the core message that is relevant and sound.

#### **Volumes 6 to 9:**

Many of the articles published from around Passover 2000 to the Day of Atonement 2009. These articles trace my journey from being a deeply committed Charismatic Christian with numerous powerful and affirming spiritual experiences and believing that the Bible was “The Word of God” and that Jesus (Yahooshua) was the Almighty in the flesh to recognizing that both of these beliefs were false and that we should worship the Almighty only.

If you are a believer who is really seeking to deeply understand the matters of the Almighty, and particularly if you come from a Christian beginning, you may find this collection of writings useful. Start reading with Volume 9 and then read 8, 7 and 6.

I also came to deeply understand that Islam and Judaism are belief sets that are EQUALLY valid to the Almighty and that Christianity is NOT the defining belief set. I now adhere to a set of beliefs that are effectively an interpolation between Christianity, Judaism and Islam.

These articles also trace the Prophetic shifts in the spiritual dispensation during this period including Satan being sentenced to 1,000 years in the Pit in 2003 and the shifts that have followed.

#### **Volume 6**

Writings in 2005 through to the Day of Atonement 2009. During this period I concentrated on secular activities at the

expense of the Ministry and much of what I posted took the form of articles from other sources. During this period I was in a covenant relationship with a woman that was also not supportive of the Ministry. This was also a period of consolidation with regard to my revised understanding of key principles as outlined above.

#### **Volume 7**

Writings in 2003 and 2004. A time of some personal turmoil and struggle. Also consolidating what I had learned in the years before this. In May 2003 I convened the Court of Heaven to Judge Satan and have him sentenced to isolation in the Pit (Abyss) for 1,000 years.

#### **Volume 8**

Writings in 2002. A period of intense learning and consolidation.

#### **Volume 9**

Writings in 2000 and 2001. A period of intense learning. During this period I was learning a lot about the errors of the Christian faith and correcting my learning in those areas. I was also developing my understanding of the way that spiritual affairs operate.

I also learned that the Quran was more inspired than the Bible and that Islam was based on service to the Almighty, Allah being simply the Arabic word for “Elohim” in Hebrew, “Almighty” in English.

This was all preparation for sending Satan to the Pit in May 2003.

#### **Volume 10:**

Transcripts of a series of over 50 audio teachings on Marriage and the Anointed Life and the Almighty’s plan for Marriage to be “Heaven on Earth” recorded in the second part of 2000. Also a series of prophetic messages that provide the lead-in to what is happening in the Spirit realm today. The teachings are also available as audio tracks on USB Memory Card accompanying Volume 1 and also available on the Website.

These teachings, which run to over 1,100 pages have been recently transcribed but I do not have the time and resources to Proof Read them, accordingly they are presented in draft format. Father has, nonetheless stressed to me that they are an extremely important collection of teachings when it comes to understanding the Anointed Life and Marriage.

**Volume 11:**

Strategic Analysis of Life and Marriage. This was undertaken using a Spreadsheet based Strategic Analysis method given to me by Father for use in my business. This provides a highly structured analysis of life and marriage in a way that is directed at enabling us to formulate the best overall approach to a successful life on Earth of which marriage is one of the key components.

---

## Dedication

This volume is dedicated to Yah the Eternally Self-Existing, the Almighty Creator of the Heavens and the Earth who is the reason for our existence – commonly but incorrectly referred to as “The LORD” and “God”.

This set has much to say about Yahooshua {Jesus} and is dedicated to him as the most powerful human being in the Universe and Lord of all Human Lords and King of all Human Kings. In this capacity he submits to the Almighty Creator as the ultimate Lord and ultimate King and is seated at the Right Hand of the Almighty WAITING for his enemies to be made his footstool.

It is my prayer that through reading what is contained in this book you will draw closer to Yah, the Creator, and, if you do not yet know Him, that you will come to know Him.

On the Earthly Plane, this book is dedicated to Iain Peters who led me back to Father on Friday 12<sup>th</sup> March 1993 and set me on the course that has brought me to the point of publishing these books – Thank you Iain!

It is also dedicated to my parents, Angus and Thelma who laid the foundations in my life that have enabled me to do this work. Also my daughter, Alexandra, who I pray will one day embrace these truths.

Also to Ingrid, Geraldine and Esther who have materially stood by me at different times in my journey and without whom significant components of what I offer in this Book Set would potentially not exist.

Margot has partnered with me and sat with me on Zoom throughout the time these volumes were being compiled and given much encouragement and much prayer. She has also supported, encouraged and coached me with regard to the presentation of the Radio programme. Thank you Margot.

---

## Request for Judgment

The footer to every email I send out when I publish articles today reads:

*May Yah, The Almighty Creator, bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you and give you His peace.*

*May Yah judge me severely and correct me harshly and show me the level of my present deception and how to correct it with regard to everything that I write and publish.*

I pray this for you and for me as you read this document. The second prayer is particularly important since it gives Father Yah, the Almighty Creator, blanket permission to correct me any time I am in error. This is your best guarantee that what was written from around 2009 onwards IS accurate. That said you must STILL seek Yah for confirmation and clarification with regard to ALL that I have written as I am constantly learning and therefore what I write may be incomplete or not entirely accurate in terms of the greater scheme of things.

---

## **Caveat**

As a general rule Father Yah has impressed on me NOT to go back and edit previous messages. Accordingly you will find that some messages at some level do not agree with others. If I were to start trying to harmonize all my existing writings which run to over 1,000 articles and 13 books, I would stop writing new material. Where you find discrepancies please turn to Father Yah, HE has ALL the answers.

Note that in some of the older writings I was still under the impression that the Bible was the Inspired Word of Yah, Father subsequently corrected this error but I have NOT gone back and changed the documents that use that language in this volume or on the website.

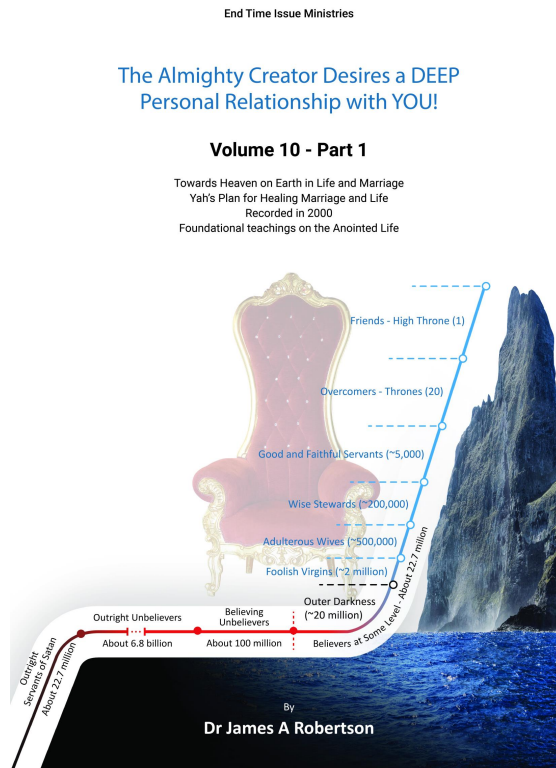
## **Offense**

There is much in this book to offend you, particularly if you are a committed believer, I counsel that where you find things that you do NOT understand or agree with that you put those items to one side and move on. In so counselling you I advise that this book is being compiled after years of intense seeking, fasting and close relationship with Father and I testify that the essence of many of the messages IS inspired and accurate

---

## About the Cover

The image on the cover represents the continuum between deep / ALL evil which is Satan on the bottom left to ALL good and ALL truth which is Yah the Eternally Self-Existing, the Almighty Creator, which is on the extreme right.



The jagged steep mountain symbolizes how difficult it is to draw close to Father Yah in the present age and how easy it is to fall from any level through pride, self-righteousness and other sin and error.

This collection of writings and, indeed, all of my writings are about how to move from some position on this curve to the position on the top right which is occupied by people close to Father Yah with the designation of “Friend” being the highest status that any human being can aspire to in this life.

The components of the curve are as follows (statistics are as at 25 December 2015) for ALL religious groups worldwide:

1. Believers at Some Level – about 22.7 million made up of:
  - a. Friends (1) – high throne – put Father Yah first in their lives and serve Him faithfully.



- b. Overcomers (20) – throne – have overcome sin and the temptations of this world.
  - c. Good and Faithful Servants (~5,000) – significant measure of faithful service.
  - d. Wise Stewards (~200,000) – some measure of faithful service.
  - e. Adulterous Wives (~500,000) – some level of infilling of the Spirit of the Almighty but continue in error and unbelief.
  - f. Foolish Virgins (~2 million) – believe but no infilling of the Spirit of the Almighty.
  - g. Outer Darkness (the majority -- ~20 million) – at some level once believed sufficiently to qualify for Heaven but nothing beyond that.
- 2. Believing Unbelievers -- about 100 million – think they believe but so full of error they do not actually believe in the Almighty.
  - 3. Outright Unbelievers -- about 6.8 billion plus, the bulk of the population of the Earth – no awareness of any significance of the existence of the Almighty.
  - 4. Outright Servants of Satan -- about 22.7 million – at some level consciously serving Satan in roughly analogous groupings to those serving the Creator.

It is my hope that by reading this volume and by visiting my website at [www.ETI-Ministries.org](http://www.ETI-Ministries.org) or [www.End-Time-IssueMinistries.org](http://www.End-Time-IssueMinistries.org) you will be challenged to seek to move your life to the top right of the curve and become Father's Friend and qualify for a High Throne in Heaven for Eternity.

I hope that in time this volume will be accompanied by six further collection of my writings – these documents are in course of being compiled and most are available electronically if you would like to email me.

Refer to the articles "[The Demographics of the Kingdom of Yah on Earth Today](#)" and "[Demographics of the Kingdom of Yah elaboration](#)" in Volume 1.

---

## Vocabulary

Throughout this volume I have used vocabulary that you may find unfamiliar. These words have been drawn from the roots of the faith which are most accurately reflected in the language today known as Hebrew which is most directly related to the language that was used at the time of Creation.

This language has rich meaning that is not always accurately translated in English and other modern languages. The meanings and transliterations that I use here are a mixture of what is academically recorded and what I have been shown by Father Yah, the Almighty Creator.

The most commonly occurring words that are used are:

**“Yah”** as in “Yah the Eternally Self-Existing” – the true name of the Almighty Creator. Frequently translated “The LORD”. “The LORD” has blasphemous connotations and should never be used to refer to the Creator.

**“Yahooeh”** – most accurate transliteration of the Hebrew phrase which means “Yah the Eternally Self-Existing” which is more commonly but inaccurately transliterated as “Yahweh”. Frequently translated “The LORD”. Why a “Yahoo.com” email address takes the Name of the Almighty in vain.

**“Almighty”**, “Mighty One” or “mighty one” depending on context -- commonly but inaccurately translated “God” which has blasphemous connotations.

**“El”** – “Beloved Mighty One” – term of endearment for the Almighty Creator used by those close to Him. Frequently inaccurately translated “God”.

**“Yahooshua”** – meaning “Yah is Salvation” – the correct name of the man commonly referred to as “Jesus” and a common Hebrew name 2,000 years ago.

**“Anointed by the Spirit of Yah”**, **“Anointing of the Spirit of Yah”**, or **“Anointed One”** depending on context – commonly but inaccurately translated as “Christ” and incorrectly regarded as another name for Yahooshua {Jesus}. Source of much confusion regarding the identity of Yahooshua – Christ refers to Yah NOT Yahooshua.

**“Qodesh”** – commonly but inaccurately translated as “Holy” which has blasphemous connotations – means “set-apart”, “separated”, “dedicated to the Almighty”.

**“Emissary”** – a senior servant of the Almighty who is sent by the Almighty – commonly but inaccurately translated as “Apostle”. A senior rank on Earth.

**“Spokesman” or “Spokeswoman”** – commonly but inaccurately translated as “Prophet” or “Prophetess” – one who hears the Almighty and speaks on His behalf.

**Names including Yah** – see the article in section 6: “The TRUE Names of the Almighty in the Bible” for detailed discussion of all of these names. It is not possible to fully understand the history of anointed servants without knowing the extent to which the name of Yah is pervasive in that history.

**“Stake”** – Yahooshua died on a length of tree trunk, NOT a “cross” this is borne out by the Greek text. The cross is a Satanic symbol.

**“Assembly”** – commonly but incorrectly translated as “Church”.

**“Pesach”** – commonly translated as “Passover”.

**“Shavuot”** – commonly translated as Pentecost.

There are other words that are used in places in this volume but the above items are the most common words.

Throughout my writings incorrect words are reported in curly brackets in most cases e.g. “{Jesus}”.

---

## Sponsorship

While some donations have been received the vast majority of the time, effort and finances used in the creation of these articles and in the preparation and publication of these articles has come from own endeavours and through the finances of the family units of which I was a member from time to time.

The principal source of funding of these physical volumes has been through my business, James A Robertson and Associates Limited.



This business provides consultancy and management services which provide the revenue that provides me with food, shelter and the finances used in the collation, preparation and publication of these volumes.

The logo is based on the Strategy – Tactics Matrix of Professor Malcolm McDonald. Strategy, which McDonald defines as “doing the RIGHT THINGS” is on the horizontal axis of the matrix and Tactics, which he defines as “doing THINGS RIGHT” is on the vertical axis. It follows that an organization or person who does the RIGHT things WELL will prosper and thrive.

James Robertson and Associates assists clients to do this with regard to business strategy, business information systems and business processes generally.

I have applied this same principle in my walk with the Almighty, constantly seeking to understand what He considers to be the RIGHT things and to do them WELL.

This set of books therefore are a resource to help you live your life such that on the Day of your Judgment you will find

that you have done the RIGHT things WELL in the sight of the Almighty.

For more information see:

<http://www.James-A-Robertson-and-Associates.com/>

and

<https://www.linkedin.com/in/DrJamesARobertson>

In this business the Almighty has taught me a huge amount about business, strategy, ERP, human nature, etc. I would be happy to discuss how we can be of assistance to your organization.

I would like to acknowledge Russel Diniz and Remote Software Solutions who sponsored the uploading of articles from 2014 to 2018 onto the website and Nikita Narvekar who did the work. May the Almighty bless them abundantly.

I would like to acknowledge Sarita Benade who sponsored the printing of Volume 1 to the tune of 1,000 Australian Dollars, may the Almighty bless her abundantly.

---

## Acknowledgements

I would like to acknowledge the following people:

**Geraldine Schoultz** who has been interceding for me and my ministry constantly for many years and who has covered this project with prayer and encouragement.

**Margot Murphy** who has stood by me, encouraged me and prayed for me throughout the time that I was compiling these Volumes. She has also supported, encouraged and coached me with regard to the presentation of the Radio programmes.

**Nikita Narvekar** who collated, sorted, classified and cleansed the articles for Volumes 4 through 10. She has also done substantial work on the Website building webpages and uploading hundreds of articles (she has a Masters in Information Technology and is a Web Designer and Developer. She also revised the covers. I strongly recommend her. May the Almighty bless her abundantly. She can be contacted at:

[contact@sunshell.info](mailto:contact@sunshell.info) or [sunshell.works@gmail.com](mailto:sunshell.works@gmail.com)

**Gratiela Dumitrescu** who created the covers for the books. May the Almighty bless her abundantly. I strongly recommend her, she can be found on Upwork at:

<https://www.upwork.com/freelancers/~0157ad00e64379df31>

**Murtaza Kapaasi** who formatted all Volumes diligently and precisely and is directly responsible for the overall appearance of the text. I strongly recommend him. May the Almighty bless him abundantly. He can be found on Upwork at:

<https://www.upwork.com/freelancers/~017be35721b665562d>

**Dipankar Dey** who transcribed a substantial number of these articles. He can be found on Upwork at:

<https://www.upwork.com/freelancers/~0182bf9b1fb06414ac>

**Lindsay Peacock** who transcribed and edited a substantial number of these articles. She can be found on Upwork at:

<https://www.upwork.com/freelancers/~0158644f89d77e879e>

**Taryn Byleveld** who transcribed a substantial number of these articles. She can be found on Upwork at:

<https://www.upwork.com/freelancers/~01596652ece6c65132>

---

## Table of Contents

Why Seek a DEEP Personal Relationship with the Almighty Creator? .....	v
Why Read These Books? .....	vii
Companion Volumes.....	viii
Dedication .....	xiii
Request for Judgment.....	xiv
Caveat.....	xv
About the Cover.....	xvi
Vocabulary.....	xviii
Sponsorship .....	xx
Acknowledgements .....	xxii
Table of Contents.....	xxiii
Foreword .....	xxxv
Preface: An Engineering Approach to Relationship with the Almighty .....	xxxvii
Overview of this Volume – Volume 10 in the set .....	xl
Caution re Transcripts.....	xli
Audio Compact Disc and USB Memory Card with Website Plus “Proof of Global Flood” DVD Set ..	xlii
Preamble .....	3
Extract from an Earlier Introduction .....	4
Apology.....	4
Important Note -- Teachings from other Ministries.....	5
Transcripts in Draft.....	5
Table of Contents .....	5
00 00 Introduction .....	5
01 The Coming Tribulation .....	5
02 Judgment in this Life.....	6
03 Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce & Adultery .....	7
04 Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage.....	8
05 Practical Application of the Marriage Teachings .....	9
06 A Study on the Ministry of Deliverance.....	9
07 Conclusion .....	9
About the eBook The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery .....	10
About the detailed Marriage Strategy.....	10
Original Introduction to the Marriage and Anointed Life Teachings .....	11

Inclusion of Other Teachings .....	12
<b>Introduction.....</b>	<b>13</b>
<b>Section 1 : The Coming Tribulation .....</b>	<b>29</b>
Introduction .....	29
01 01 Job and Serving God.....	29
Spiritual eyes .....	29
Universal message of God .....	30
The value of Jesus .....	31
Resurrection .....	32
Paul the Apostle.....	32
Wisdom .....	33
Conclusion .....	33
Prayer .....	34
James Robertson.....	34
01 02 Job and Sanctify Yourselves.....	36
Two encounters .....	37
God is big.....	38
Come close to God .....	38
Faith .....	39
Prayer .....	40
James Robertson.....	41
01 03 Things that need to be dealt with in the Earth.....	43
Destroying our beautiful world .....	44
End Times .....	45
The coming of Jesus Christ .....	47
James Robertson.....	49
01 04 Abundance in Famine – Outpouring of the Holy Spirit .....	50
Famine.....	50
God’s cause .....	51
Faith .....	52
Elijah.....	54
End of the End Times .....	55
James Robertson.....	56
01 05 Do you love like Jesus loves? .....	57
Christian - true of false .....	57
Being Christ-like.....	58
Walking like Jesus .....	59
Without love.....	60



Judgement.....	62
The Final Quest .....	62
Sergei Kourdakov .....	63
Evil in the world .....	64
Creflo Dollar.....	64
Prayer.....	65
01 07 What brings Jesus Joy .....	67
The Joy of the Lord Jesus Christ.....	68
Born in sin.....	68
Unity with God.....	69
Foothold for Satan .....	70
Free from sin .....	70
The Holy Spirit .....	72
Forgiveness.....	72
Renewing your mind .....	73
01 09 Who is the Good Samaritan?.....	75
The Bible.....	76
The meaning of life .....	76
The Good Samaritan .....	77
Oil and Wine .....	78
The Bottomless Pit.....	79
Jesus' coming.....	79
Demon Possessed .....	80
Cleansing and purifying.....	80
01 10 You must be Born-Again – God cannot compromise with sin.....	82
The workings of the Spirit .....	83
Nicodemus.....	83
Born-again .....	83
“Ye Must” .....	84
Two choices .....	85
Seek the Lord .....	86
The ruler of the world .....	87
For Christ or against Christ.....	88
Sowing and reaping.....	89
01 11 Spiritual Warfare Prayers .....	91
Spiritual warfare .....	91
The Time of Tribulation.....	93
Keep praying.....	94
Prayers .....	94

01 12 -Words and Prophetic Words, etc. ....	98
Hurtful words.....	99
See the Glory of God .....	100
The Creation .....	100
Using your words .....	101
James.....	104
Prayers .....	104
Witnessing.....	106
01 13 The Gift of God .....	107
Three major events .....	108
Mankind .....	108
Light in the darkness .....	109
Power display .....	110
The Word.....	110
Choices .....	111
01 14 The Wrath of God for the Church .....	112
Judgement and tribulation .....	113
Yahweh.....	114
The roaring lion.....	115
The judgement seat of God .....	116
Ahab and Jezebel .....	116
Job and his wife .....	117
Commandments .....	118
Obeying God’s Commandments .....	119
Salvation.....	120
Spiritual death .....	121
Hell breaking loose.....	122
A divine appointment .....	123
Church .....	123
Do not take the name of Yahweh in vain .....	123
Families .....	124
Honor your father and mother .....	124
You shall not murder.....	125
You shall not steal.....	125
You shall not bear false witness .....	125
You shall not covet.....	125
The sanctification of marriage.....	126
Divorce .....	126
01 16a The Wrath of God for Adultery – Part 1 .....	128

Adultery.....	128
Judgement.....	129
Adultery is destroying lives .....	130
Pornea.....	131
Putting away and divorce.....	132
Spiritual death .....	132
What is a wife .....	133
Virginity .....	134
Covenant .....	135
Spiritual ties.....	136
Incest.....	137
01-16b – The Wrath of God for Adultery – Part 2.....	138
Recap.....	139
The remnant .....	144
Blaspheming .....	144
The act of marriage.....	145
David .....	147
The Word of God .....	148
Prayer .....	148
Steps to salvation.....	149
<b>Section 2: Judgment in this Life.....</b>	<b>151</b>
Introduction .....	151
02 01 Judgment in this Life .....	152
02 02 Responding to Developments in the Church.....	161
02 03 Judgment in this Life -- God’s Objective -- Revival.....	174
02 04 Manifestations of Judgment -- Lying Wonders, etc.....	181
02 05 Rapture to Escape coming Judgment? -- Prepare for Tribulation .....	187
02 06 The Financial Stewardship Responsibilities of those who Give.....	199
02 07 Poverty in the Church of Jesus Christ.....	203
02 08 Poverty in the Church Part 2 .....	221
02 09 Poverty in the Church Part 3 .....	233
02_10 Poverty in the Church Part 4 .....	247
02 11 Spiritual Warfare Prayers Preparing for the Coming Judgment.....	264
02 12 Words + {Prophetic Words + Mark of the beast} .....	283
<b>Section 3: The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery.....</b>	<b>297</b>
Introduction .....	297
03 01 Foundation Concepts - the Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery .....	298

Husband and Wife United .....	298
Mystery .....	299
Lust.....	300
Marriage is a Blood Covenant .....	300
After the Wedding Ceremony .....	301
Divorce .....	303
Forbidding Marriage .....	304
Preparing for Judgement.....	304
Keeping His Commandments .....	304
The Holy Spirit is a Teacher .....	305
The Final Quest.....	306
The Cross .....	308
03 02 How Scripture Defines the Marriage Covenant.....	311
Scriptural definition of Marriage .....	311
Gospel Marriages.....	312
The Final Quest.....	313
Lazarus .....	314
Adultery.....	314
Virginity .....	315
Conclusions.....	316
Marriage Covenant .....	317
Covenants.....	318
Adam and Eve.....	318
Cleaving.....	319
Christian Covenant and Marriage Covenant .....	320
The Bible on Marriage.....	321
Love.....	321
Final Prayer.....	323
03 03 The One Flesh Bond and Submission .....	325
My Testimony .....	325
One Flesh Bond.....	327
Husbands and Wives.....	327
Breaking the One Flesh Bond .....	329
Love or Lust .....	331
Divorce .....	331
Is Love a precondition for Marriage?.....	332
Agape Love .....	333
Submission .....	335
Keeping God's Commandments .....	337

Serving God .....	338
Abraham and Sarah .....	339
Prayer .....	340
03 04 Love .....	344
Marriage .....	344
Marriage Covenant .....	345
Submission and Covering .....	345
Watchmen .....	347
One Flesh Bond .....	348
Agape Love .....	348
Love is from God .....	349
Love in Marriage .....	349
Definition of Love .....	350
Lovemaking .....	351
The Power of love .....	351
Abuse .....	352
Covering .....	353
03 05 The Husband as Covering but the Wife Builds the House .....	356
Ruth .....	356
Husbands and Wives .....	357
To Spread your Covering .....	357
Fallen Angels .....	357
Covering .....	357
Building the House .....	358
03 06 Headship - Christ and Church as Pattern for Husband and Wife .....	366
Husband as head of the wife .....	366
Relationships in the marriage and with God .....	368
Married to God .....	369
God created man for pleasure and fellowship .....	370
Priests .....	371
Praise and Worship God .....	373
Looking to Jesus .....	374
Drawing closer to God .....	375
Don't give the devil a foothold .....	377
03 07 The Scriptural Definition of Adultery .....	378
The accountability of Pastors and teachers .....	386
Judgment revisited .....	387
God's Definition with Sexual Sin .....	389
03 08 Tying Up Some Loose Ends - Some Controversial Points .....	392

Lust and Adultery of the Heart .....	397
Lust is Covetousness and it is Sin.....	397
Lust, Pornography, and Fashion .....	399
Lust and the Dress of Young Woman.....	400
Acceptable Working Hours.....	400
Important Aspects of Marriage .....	401
The End of Age.....	405
03 09 Do you love like Jesus loves? .....	409
The Loveless Church.....	409
Christian, true or false? .....	409
Love .....	410
Receiving Jesus .....	410
Keeping His Commandments .....	411
The light.....	411
Faithfulness .....	412
The Fruits of the Spirit.....	413
Husbands and Wives.....	414
The Holocaust Museum and the Jews .....	414
Rick Joyner.....	415
Communism .....	415
Lord, teach me how to Love .....	416
Step up to the Challenge .....	417
A final prayer .....	417
03 10 Scriptural Divorce Versus Putting Away .....	421
My Marriage .....	421
God permits divorce in certain circumstances .....	423
Covering and Adultery .....	425
Marrying an unbeliever.....	425
Putting away.....	426
Adultery and fornication .....	428
Uncleanness .....	429
Judgement.....	429
Christian Marriage .....	430
Marriage in the sight of God .....	431
Divorce in terms of God .....	431
Worldly sins.....	432
The Ideal Partner .....	433
Work, Abuse, Cheating in Marriage.....	434
Husbands role in the marriage .....	435

Virginity .....	436
Healing from Divorce .....	436
One Flesh Bond .....	436
Cutting curses .....	436
Marriage to a divorced woman .....	437
Punishment and Judgement.....	437
Signs .....	438
Conclusion .....	439
03 11 Marriage - Summing Up .....	440
The Principles of Marriage as God intended .....	441
Virginity .....	442
One Flesh Bond .....	442
Headship.....	443
Two-Edged Sword .....	444
Submission .....	444
Covering .....	446
03 12 Scriptural Response to the Sexuality of Teenage Girls .....	451
First Sexual Experiences .....	451
Age for marriage .....	451
The Talmud .....	452
Becoming sexually aware .....	452
Foundation of Marriage .....	453
Sexually active .....	454
Guidance for teenagers.....	455
Father and daughter .....	455
Sexual feelings .....	456
Seek prayerful guidance.....	457
03 13 The Scriptural Relevance of betrothal .....	457
Betrothal .....	457
Bride Price .....	458
Deception .....	458
Marriage.....	459
Covering .....	460
Genealogy.....	461
The Book of Ruth .....	462
Timnah and Shelah .....	462
Betrothal and putting away.....	463
Lying with others .....	464
Rape .....	465

03 14 The Price of Righteousness: Lessons from Judges 19-21 – Rape, Vows, Oaths .....	466
Homosexuality and rape .....	466
Judgement.....	468
The Body of Christ.....	469
Vows.....	470
Death penalty .....	471
Ungodly vows .....	472
Famine.....	474
Vows, oaths and promises .....	475
Lies .....	477
03 15 Marriage Matters for Men .....	478
Age of men for marriage .....	478
Worldly principles to marriage .....	480
Sons taking over from their fathers .....	481
Men making a living.....	482
Young girls marrying .....	484
Responsibilities.....	485
Co-residing.....	486
Avoiding broken marriages .....	487
God’s way .....	487
The head of the house .....	488
Working together.....	489
03 16 Learning How to Love .....	490
Transformed by love .....	491
Love with Intensity.....	491
Love is a Decision.....	492
Perfect love drives out fear .....	492
Loving God.....	493
Compassion .....	494
Faith and Love .....	496
Patience.....	497
Weaknesses and strengths.....	498
Love covers sin.....	498
Unconfessed sin.....	499
Forgiveness.....	500
Factors of love .....	501
Prayers and confessions.....	503
03 17 The Scriptural Response to a Rebellious or Treacherous Wife.....	504
One Flesh Bond.....	504



Harmony.....	505
Mirror relationships .....	506
Covering .....	508
Love like Jesus loves.....	508
Treachery.....	511
Repentance from the wife.....	513
03 18 Is Polygamy Scriptural? .....	515
Polygamy .....	515
Marriage – a prophetic statement.....	517
Israel and Polygamy .....	519
References in Scripture .....	520
Viewers’ commentary .....	522
Wife.....	523
Mia .....	524
God’s intention .....	525
David .....	526
Monogamy .....	527
Virginity .....	530
More women than men in the world.....	531
Enforced monogamy .....	531
03 19 Facilitating Change in Marriage .....	533
Leading wives into harmony and agreement .....	534
Adverse experiences .....	535
Become more like Jesus .....	535
Deliverance .....	536
Spiritual change .....	537
Difficulty changing .....	538
Training the body.....	538
Stages of development .....	539
The fullness of love and blessings of God .....	541
Love.....	541
Becoming more like Christ .....	542
Husbands and wives.....	543
Removing covering .....	544
Prayers .....	545
Making love .....	546
The Church and marriage .....	547
03 20 Closure - The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery .....	547
First teaching .....	547

Second teaching.....	548
Third teaching.....	549
Fifth teaching.....	550
Sixth teaching .....	551
Seventh teaching .....	552
Eighth teaching .....	552
Ninth teaching .....	553
Tenth teaching.....	553
Eleventh teaching .....	554
Twelfth teaching .....	554
Thirteenth teaching .....	554
Fourteenth teaching .....	555
Fifteenth teaching.....	555
Sixteenth lesson.....	556
Seventeenth teaching .....	556
Eighteenth teaching.....	557
Nineteenth teaching .....	558
Volume 2 .....	559
The Call.....	559
Facilitating change in marriage.....	559
Before the judgement seat of Christ in this life.....	560
Praying mysteries in the Spirit.....	560
How to discipline your flesh, Renewing your mind and The power of the tongue .....	560
Healing .....	560
Demonic Oppression of the Flesh and Deliverance.....	561
Jezebel.....	561
Cutting the marriage covenant.....	561
Implementing change .....	561
Building the One Flesh Bond .....	562
Responsibility of Christian men .....	562
Reaching for the heights and pinnacles of marriage .....	563
Conclusion .....	563
<b>Table of Contents of Volume 10: Part 2 .....</b>	<b>565</b>

---

## Foreword

On Friday 12<sup>th</sup> March 1993, having been awake all night running strategic processes to try and figure out why my life was such a mess and figuring out the most reliable way to kill myself the Almighty spoke to me audibly from within the room and said “Phone Iain Peters, he has something you need”.

I had been in an adulterous relationship with another man’s wife for two years. During that time we made love passionately and considerably hundreds of times but we never spoke of love – I believed I loved my wife and therefore could not love another woman. When the affair was exposed and I was forced to part company with my mistress who was also my personal assistant, I was devastated to learn that I was massively in love with her such that I could not visualize living without her and so I was seriously considering suicide.

I had been a believer, albeit a nominal believer, since I was confirmed in the Anglican Church at the age of around 13 years old and had been a server or Altar Boy from the age of nineteen for about six years. Eventually I became alienated from the church by the hypocrisy and teachings that did not make sense and so I walked away and progressively backslid to a point where I entered into adultery.

After the Almighty spoke to me I phoned Iain and he invited me to have dinner with him. After dinner he shared with me his living relationship with the Almighty in which prayers were answered and he experienced healing and divine provision. He lead me in prayer to rededicate myself to serving the Almighty.

Iain took me to his church and pointed me in the direction that I have followed ever since.

At that time I understood that my intellect had set me on a course that was headed for destruction and that if I had succeeded in killing myself at that time I would have found myself in Hell. I repented deeply and set myself to seeking to know the Almighty. I reasoned that He was the creator of all things and was therefore the Master Engineer and that, accordingly He would not expect me to compromise my Engineering rigour and disciplines in order to understand Him. Accordingly I set about learning about Him in a rigorous and disciplined fashion asking masses of questions.

Progressively over the years I came to understand that the Church and mankind generally were full of error and, increasingly I came to rely on hearing directly from our Father in Heaven.

The road was a difficult one with numerous pitfalls and traps and lots of painful lessons but, somehow, I have managed to stay more or less on track through all of this.

In 2000 I fasted seriously for the first time and started to receive dramatic revelation. This has continued with another program of fasts in 2010 and again in 2013 and 2014 leading to a point where I was extremely close to Father just before the Day of Atonement in 2014 which is when the two core articles in this volume were written – “*The Almighty Creator Desires a DEEP Personal Relationship with YOU!*” and “*Seven Components in Drawing Close to the Almighty Creator*”.

From 2000 onwards I published regularly on various email lists and in 2013-14 my wife at the time, Ester, helped me to build the present website, <http://www.ETI-Ministries.org>

During this journey I increasingly came to understand that the Creator, His True Name is “Yah the Eternally Self-Existing”, had created us to be His Friends and to work with us in discovering and learning about His Creation but that as a consequence of the fall of man virtually no human beings knew this let alone sought it with commitment. This understanding culminated in my decision to write the two articles above and that, in turn, has led to the creation of this volume in the hope that I will challenge a few people to seek to become TRUE FRIENDS of the Almighty.

I commend this volume to you as containing articles most of which were written under a significant anointing and with a significant level of inspiration and I pray that the study of this material will stimulate YOU to seek to become a FRIEND of Yah. I pray that I will soon be able to publish additional volumes and encourage you to contact me to obtain copies.

*May Father bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you.*

*May Yah judge me severely and correct me harshly and show me the level of my present deception and how to correct it with regard to everything that I write and publish.*

Warm regards and blessings,  
James



**James Robertson**  
**End Time Issue Ministries**  
**Emissary and Spokesman of Yah**  
**London**  
**20 April 2019**

Website : <http://www.ETI-Ministries.org> and <http://end-time-issueministries.org/>

YouTube on the Global Flood: <http://www.YouTube.com/user/ProofOfGlobalFlood>

SlideShare Flood Presentations: <http://www.slideshare.net/End Time Issue Ministries>

Facebook: <https://www.facebook.com/profile.php?id=100006994485801>

Radio: <http://RelationshipWithCreatorRadio.com/> and broadcast on [www.W4CY.com](http://www.W4CY.com)

---

# Preface: An Engineering Approach to Relationship with the Almighty

Yah the Eternally Self-Existing, the Almighty Creator says:

*"I am the most rational and understandable being in existence and yet the religious cranks and bible punchers have caused people to view me as irrational, unreasonable and nonsensical and therefore NOT worthy of rational consideration!"*

And

*"People insist on force-fitting me into their boxes according to their limited understanding and incomplete knowledge, instead of seeking to understand me and conform to me"*

This volume is the culmination of applying Engineering Principles to the matters of the Almighty Creator since 1993



I have been designing and making things that work since about the age of five, I have a Bachelors Honours degree in Engineering and a PhD in Engineering and have been a registered Professional Engineer for many years.

I hold that Engineering is very robust and demanding -- things, whether machines, buildings, bridges, computer software, etc ONLY work if they are exactly designed, exactly built and

exactly operated -- Engineering as an occupation and a way of doing things focusses on designing and building things that work reliably and sustainably for the design life of that item.

Between the age of around 24 and the age of 40 I became increasingly disillusioned with religion because it did NOT satisfy my requirements for rigour, precision, ability to be understood, etc. By rejecting the sloppy approach of established religion I made the mistake of also almost entirely rejecting the Creator as NOT existing, a mistake that many logical, thinking people make.

In March 1993, on the point of killing myself, the Almighty spoke to me audibly as described elsewhere in this Volume and I turned back to Him who had spoken to me.

In doing this I took a decision that since He had created everything with such obvious precision it was clear that He would NOT require me to compromise my Engineering ways of thinking and analysing and I therefore set about learning about Him on the basis that:

1. He is an Engineer amongst all His other talents and abilities;
2. therefore everything He does is logical and able to be understood;

3. He is willing and able to answer EVERY sincere, probing, inquiring question seeking after understanding.

He has operated with me on this basis now for over 24 years at time of writing (September 2017 -- age sixty three) and I commend this approach to anyone who is seeking truth and particularly to those sceptics who are highly educated and have been turned off belief in the Almighty as a consequence of the irrational and illogical teachings of institutional religion.

I hold that Engineering is one of the most demanding occupations on the planet today, make a mistake and buildings collapse, systems fail. The world of structures, machines, electronics, software is extremely unforgiving and therefore the level of rigor that Engineers perforce adopt is great. I decided that the Almighty would NOT expect me to compromise on my Engineering rigor even a little bit and therefore EVERYTHING was capable of rigorous analysis and understanding.

In over 24 years I have NEVER found reason to go back on or question this decision.

I also chose to rely on the Almighty Himself to guide me.

Yes I would learn from people BUT, when I did NOT understand what they said or what they said did not work, I would ALWAYS turn to Him for answers. I have slipped on this a few times and relied on men BUT nearly ALL the time I have relied on Him to teach me. In the process I have come to understand that just about everything that the church teaches is massively in error and at odds with the truths of the Almighty, just as was the case in the days of Yahooshua {Jesus}.

Since 2000 almost all my learning has been directly from Him with other humans providing occasional snippets of information.

What is presented on my website and in this Volume is founded on these two principles:

1. Engineering rigour;
2. Answers directly from the Almighty.

This is underpinned by an intense personal experiential knowledge of the existence of the Almighty Creator grounded in His deep desire to have a DEEP personal relationship with each one of us AND to talk to us and counsel us and guide us in EVERYTHING.

He is JUST as interested in your areas of expertise and interest as you are. He created each one of us to walk with Him and talk with Him.

When considering what you find in this Volume and those that I hope will follow it, please keep in mind that you should NEVER follow me or ANY other human, follow ONLY Yah. It is up to YOU what you take from this Volume, you must exercise your intellect – by all means learn from my example and my teachings BUT always follow Yah alone!

Be aware that I am human and fallible and come from the same background of gross error as everyone else on this planet and, accordingly, my understanding today may still be skewed to some extent. That said, in many cases my understanding today is very different to what it was ten years ago or even more recently. Accordingly my recent articles may differ materially from earlier articles on the same subject. The more recent articles are generally more accurate.

At the end of the day YOU must discern what is truth and what is error in this Volume -- you are accountable for what you believe on the Day of Judgment and for what you do with what you read.

Should you find issues you disagree with you are welcome to contact me.

That said I testify that I have spent thousands of hours seeking to draw close to Father and that I have prayed regularly to be shown the level of my present deception and how to correct it and asked for judgement for sin so I DO have a high level of confidence that much of what is in this Volume IS largely given by Him and can be trusted.

I pray that as you read this Volume you will find reasons to draw closer to Him, that you will find answers to difficult questions and that your intellect will be challenged in the satisfying way that mine has been.

**James Robertson BSc (Eng), PhD  
PrEng (Retired), LtCol (Retired)**

---

## Overview of this Volume – Volume 10 in the set

This volume contains transcripts of all the audio recordings that I made relating to to the subject “Heaven on Earth in Marriage – The Almighty’s Plan for Healing Marriage in the New Millenium” and related matters, including foretelling the present Tribulation. These messages were recorded in the second half of 2000.

When I started recording I intended to record a few messages. As things progressed I obtained more and more revelation. I also received guidance where audio messages and books from third parties, some of which I had obtained years previously, slotted into the overall script to give a rich tapestry of messages addressing not only marriage but the Anointed Life as a whole.

Concurrently with this I was engaged on a program of eight three-day water only fasts at ten day intervals seeking truth. As a consequence, I received dramatic revelation on a wide diversit of fronts, including those which are mentioned above. This included the true names of the Almighty and the man commonly referred to as Jesus, the true Sabbath, the falsehood of Christmas, etc. This spate of revelation continued for much of 2001, refer to other books in this series for more information on this.

This Book Set is intended to help you on your journey to learn about Father Yah and build a deep relationship with Him. This particular volume provides a very detailed tapestry of information relating to how marriage and the Anointed Life was intended to be and how to get there.



---

## Caution re Transcripts

The transcripts are nearly complete in draft but must still be proofread. Given that they run to over 1,100 pages it will take time for me to do this. There may therefore be minor typographic errors and errors where the transcriber misheard what I said or did not understand it. Regrettably I have used up all available Annual Leave producing this Book Set so it is likely to be a year or longer before I have time to proofread the entire set. However, Father has stated to me that He has been waiting a long time (19 years) for me to make these documents available and that He would rather I publish them now in their present form than wait for a further indeterminate period for me to proofread and publish.

This set provides a comprehensive analysis of the current spiritual dispensation and also why marriage in this age is such a mess and HOW to fix it. I therefore encourage you to read these texts allowing for the possibly of minor mis-transcription to a limited degree.

These recordings were made in 2000 at a time when I was receiving considerable revelation on diverse topics with the result that my doctrine changed substantially during and after the recording of these teachings, nevertheless the fundamental message of these teachings is sound and very important and inspired at a significant level.

Accordingly I must advise caution in reading these texts – there ARE MANY important truths but they are intermingled with significant error relating to the Name of the Almighty, the Name of Yahooshua {Jesus}, the Person of Yahooshua, the Bible and related topics that mostly do NOT impact the overall marriage teaching.

---

## **Audio Compact Disc and USB Memory Card with Website Plus “Proof of Global Flood” DVD Set**

In support of this Volume and the other Volumes in the series Volume 1 also contains an Audio Compact Disc with copies of the recommended worship songs with doctrinally erroneous elements removed as far as possible and accompanied with corrected listings of the words that are used in the songs.

The Worship songs plus corrected wording are also available at:

<https://www.eti-ministries.org/recommended-worship-songs>

Volume 1 also contains a USB Memory Card which contains considerable data including a full copy of the Website that you can browse on your computer without an Internet connection. An almost complete set of all the articles and books that I have ever written on the matters of the Almighty is also contained on the Memory Card. All the audio recordings from which the audio transcripts were extracted are also contained on the Memory Card.

All volumes of this book in various formats, the content of the CD and the contents of the Memory Card can be downloaded from the webpage

<https://www.eti-ministries.org/compilation-of-all-writings-to-2019>

Email me at [CD\\_and\\_Memory\\_Stick@ETI-Ministries.org](mailto:CD_and_Memory_Stick@ETI-Ministries.org) to obtain a copy of these items if the Weblinks do not work.

Together with Volume 1 is also distributed a set of two DVD's with 11 Videos relating to “Proof of a Global Flood” – this set provides powerful evidence of the reality of the Flood, how it happened, where the water came from and where the water went.

---

# **The Almighty Creator Desires a DEEP PERSONAL relationship with YOU!**

**Volume 10: Part 1**

**Towards Heaven on Earth in Life and Marriage**

**Yah's Plan for Healing Marriage and Life**

**Recorded in 2000**

**Foundational teachings on the Anointed Life**

---

This page is intentionally kept blank.

---

## Preamble

This section presents contextual comment.

In 1995 I became aware of the extremely high level of divorce in the Christian church and started praying about it. Inherent in asking why there was so much divorce was a question about what was required to prevent divorce.

As a consequence I was given a considerable amount of direct revelation and also led into a large amount of inquiry and research including getting divorced and remarried myself.

In about 1997-98 I wrote and compiled an eBook of over 360 pages on “The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery with many of my findings and observations including extracts from a variety of other books, etc. This book is contained in Volume 5 of the Book Set and is on the Website at <https://www.eti-ministries.org/men-women/scriptural-definition-of-marriage>

In 2000 I set out to create a few audio teachings on marriage. At the same time I embarked on a series of what would eventually be nine three day fasts at ten day intervals seeking truth. With this I started to receive dramatic revelation on numerous fronts. Concurrently with this we were attending a small fellowship in Pretoria North with Neil Dreyer and a series of prophetic messages were preached over the same period that correlated with what Father was showing me that created an important context to what I was recording. The end result was that the body of teachings expanded to a collection of some 105 recordings many ranging from an hour to two hours in length. Many of these messages were recorded by me, others came from various other sources but fitted the overall picture.

The title that came to me after I had started with the recordings was “*God’s Plan for Healing Marriage – Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage*”. These were recorded from roughly the middle of 2000 to early in 2001. During this period I came to understand that the Name of the Almighty was NOT “God” and NOT “The LORD” but was, at that time, “Yahweh” which I subsequently came to understand meant “Yah the Eternally Self-Existing”. I learned many other things.

I subsequently transferred the recordings from Audio Cassette Tapes to Computer and then to Audio CD’s. A limited number of copies were distributed in various formats.

In 2014, when we were building the [www.ETI-Ministries.org](http://www.ETI-Ministries.org) website I was impressed to upload these audio files onto the website and this was done.

In 2018, as I was preparing a set of books covering just about all my publications since around 1998 it occurred to me to have the recordings transcribed, something I had long meant to do but not had the resources. Father confirmed to me that while the recordings were old and contained significant doctrinal error the basic message and content WAS inspired by Him at a significant level and He would really like me to have them transcribed so that they could be made more widely available.

Regrettably, Carol Orfer, the person who recorded the Deliverance series, was offended by something on my website and forbade me to use her material so there is a gap in the body of knowledge represented here that was not intended. The eBook “Seven Components in Drawing Close to the

Almighty” at <https://www.eti-ministries.org/seven-components-of-drawing-close> provides guidance on alternative methods of getting free of Demons and setting oneself apart {sanctifying oneself}.

It is my understanding that barring the errors with regard to overall doctrine regarding Names, Sabbaths and related issues the core message on was “Yah’s *Plan for Healing Marriage – Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage*” is sound and provides a huge amount of guidance on how to achieve a highly successful, pleasurable, fulfilling and sustainable marriage. This was complemented subsequently by the Marriage Strategy which is published on the Website at <https://www.eti-ministries.org/men-women/marriage-strategy>. Taken together these resources provide a powerful basis for successful marriage.

## **Extract from an Earlier Introduction**

Subsequent to recording these messages I received much greater revelation on diverse topics including the reality that Yahooshua {Jesus} was a prophet and man and NOT the Almighty in the flesh although it was the Spirit of the Almighty ON Yahooshua that enabled Yahooshua to perform miracles and speak for the Almighty, just as the Spirit of the Almighty on an anointed believer today may enable similar deeds.

It is therefore important to understand that there is material here that attributes things to Jesus that belong to the Almighty Creator -- this error is widespread -- please see the section on Yahooshua on the Website.

Accordingly, as with all material from this Ministry, I caution that because I am constantly learning the older material DOES contain errors, Father Yah consistently says to me that this is NOT an issue and I am NOT to get caught up in going back and "correcting" previous writings and recordings. He says that it is up to YOU to seek truth and filter out error and there is much material on this website to enable you to do that.

Even though these articles are now 19 years old at time of writing Father has stressed to me that there is MUCH of value in them and He has pressed me to load them onto the website -- on this basis I commend these teachings to you if you are serious about achieving Heaven on Earth in your marriage.

## **Apology**

At the time that I recorded these teachings I was suffering from extreme tiredness and consequently the voice pace and pitch is NOT as animated as I would like, at the same time I would like to confirm that Father WAS leading me, albeit that I was hearing Him less accurately than I believe I do today.

Please accept my apology for the quality of the recording.

## **Important Note -- Teachings from other Ministries**

It is important to stress that the material from other Ministries cited in these teachings is included because Father expressly instructed me to include them, their inclusion does NOT constitute an overall endorsement of those other ministries by myself NOR does it constitute any form of endorsement from them.

Their material, to the extent that it was given to them by the Almighty Creator, Yah the Eternally Self-Existing is His material to distribute as He sees fit.

## **Transcripts in Draft**

The transcripts are nearly complete in draft but must still be proofread. Given that they run to over 1,100 pages it will take time for me to do this. There may therefore be minor typographic errors and errors where the transcriber misheard what I said or did not understand it. Regrettably I have used up all available Annual Leave producing this Book Set so it is likely to be a year or longer before I have time to proofread the entire set. However, Father has stated to me that He has been waiting a long time (19 years) for me to make these documents available and that He would rather publish them now in their present form than wait for a further indeterminate period for me to proofread and publish.

This set provides a comprehensive analysis of the current spiritual dispensation and also why marriage in this age is such a mess and HOW to fix it. I therefore encourage you to read these texts allowing for possibly mis-transcription to a limited degree.

## **Table of Contents**

The Contents of the entire set are as follows:

### **00 00 Introduction**

00 01 Introduction to the Full Series

### **01 The Coming Tribulation**

A series of messages given while the marriage series was being recorded relating to coming tribulation and judgment of the church. These teachings provide important context to the marriage teachings.

01 00 Introduction -- The Coming Tribulation

01 01 Job and Serving God by Neil Dreyer

01 02 Job and Sanctify Yourselves by Neil Dreyer

01 03 Things That Need to be Dealt with in the Earth by Neil Dreyer

01 04 Abundance in Famine -- Outpouring of the Holy Spirit by Neil Dreyer

01 05 Do YOU Love Like Jesus Loves? By James Robertson

01 07 What Brings Jesus Joy? by Neil Dreyer

01 09 Who Is the Good Samaritan? By Chris McIntyre

01 10 You Must be Born Again -- God Cannot Compromise with Sin by Neil Dreyer

01 11 Spiritual Warfare Prayers by James Robertson

01 12 Words (+ Prophetic Words, etc) by Dutch Kinnear

01 13 The Gift of God by Neil Dreyer

01 14 The Wrath of God for the Church by James Robertson

01 16a The Wrath of God for Adultery - Part 1 by James Robertson

01 16b The Wrath of God for Adultery - Part 2 by James Robertson

## **02 Judgment in this Life**

A series of teachings with regard to the subject of Judgment in this Life and why many committed believers are struggling to survive financially. These provide a vital context to understanding how the Satanic Realm kill's, steals and destroys in this life and how to resist them effectively. Also an important context to the teachings on marriage.

02 00 Introduction -- Judgment in this Life

02 01 Judgment in this Life

02 02 Responding to Developments in the Church

02 03 Judgment in this Life -- God's Objective -- Revival

02 04 Manifestations of Judgment -- Lying Wonders, etc

02 05 "Rapture" to Escape coming Judgment? Prepare for Tribulation

02 06 The Financial Stewardship of believers-- Responsibilities of those who Give

02 07 Poverty in the Church of Jesus Christ-- an indicator of Sin and Judgment in Our Lives, Part 1 of 4

02 08 Poverty in the Church Part 2

02 09 Poverty in the Church Part 3

02 10 Poverty in the Church Part 4

02 11 Spiritual Warfare Prayers Preparing for the Coming Judgment

02 12 Words + {Prophetic Words + Mark of the beast?}



### **03 Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce & Adultery**

An in depth examination of what can be inferred from the Bible regarding marriage, divorce and adultery and related subjects towards an overall goal of the Almighty that marriage should be as Heaven on Earth – the first few teachings are based on the eBook “*Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery*” which is presented at <https://www.eti-ministries.org/men-women/scriptural-definition-of-marriage> and is contained in Volume 5 of the Book Set. These teachings lay the scriptural foundation for understanding why there is so much divorce and marital distress in the Body of Christ today and what is required in order to turn this around.

03 00 Introduction -- Definition of Marriage Divorce and Adultery

03 01 Foundation Concepts -- the Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery

03 02 How Scripture Defines the Marriage Covenant

03 03 The One Flesh Bond and Submission

03 04 Love

03 05 The Husband as Covering but the Wife Builds the House

03 06 Headship -- the Relationship between Christ and the Church as a Pattern for the Relationship between Husband and Wife

03 07 The Scriptural Definition of Adultery

03 08 Tying Up Some Loose Ends -- Some Controversial Points

03 09 Do You Love Like Jesus Loves?

03 10 Scriptural Divorce Versus "Putting Away"

03 11 Marriage -- Summing Up

03 12 Scriptural Response to the Sexuality of Teenage Girls

03 13 The Scriptural Relevance of betrothal

03 14 The Price of Righteousness -- Lessons from Judges 19-21 -- Rape, Vows, Oaths, Etc

03 15 Marriage Matters for Men

03 16 Learning How to Love

03 17 The Scriptural Response to a Rebellious or Treacherous Wife

03 18 Is Polygamy Scriptural?

03 19 Facilitating Change in Marriage

03 20 Closure -- Volume 1 -- the Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery

## **04 Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage**

The second set of teachings of an in depth examination of what is required to achieve the overall goal of the Almighty that marriage should be as Heaven on Earth. These teachings build on the foundation of the first series and contain a diverse set of teachings on the Believers way, the Believing life, bringing about change in our lives by the Spirit of Yah, etc. This is the spiritual "how to" with regard to application of the teachings in the first set of tapes.

04 01 Introduction -- Volume 2 -- Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage

04 02 Bringing Joy to Jesus

04 03 Kingdom Context -- The Call -- End of the Age

04 04 Preparing for Change in Marriage

04 05 Faithfulness

04 06 Before the Judgment Seat of Christ in this Life

04 07 The Realm of Exceedingly Abundantly -- Hidden Answers by the Holy Spirit

04 08 How to Discipline Your Flesh

04 09 Renewing Your Mind

04 10 The Power of the tongue

04 11 The Anointing & the Four offices of Jesus'

04 12 Demonic Oppression of the Flesh and Deliverance

04 13 Cleansing the Temple of the Holy Spirit & Jezebel

04 14 Covenant made by Blood -- Hesed - Agape

04 15 Cutting the Marriage Covenant

04 16 Faith and Implementing Change

04 17 The Power of Negativity -- Preventing Change

04 18 Building the House (the One Flesh Bond)

04 19 Building the House Continued

04 20 The World -- the Church and Marriage from 4000 BC to 2000 AD

04 21 Responsibility of Married Christian Women towards Single Christian Women

04 22 Living in Excellence - Reaching for the Heights of Marriage

04 23 Spreading the Good News -- the Theology of Nobodies

## **05 Practical Application of the Marriage Teachings**

The third set of teachings give an in-depth examination of what is required to achieve the overall goal of the Almighty that marriage should be as Heaven on Earth building on the first series. These teachings take the teachings in Parts 3 and 4 and provide a far reaching set of guidelines on how to apply them in a wide variety of situations relating to healing marriage, recovering from divorce, etc. These teachings include specific recommendations with regard to ministry procedures, prayers to pray, etc.

05 00 Introduction -- Volume 2 -- Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage

05 01 Foundation for a Miracle -- Fundamentals of the Faith

05 02 Healing Marriage -- Who Are You Really Married to?

05 03 Resolving One Flesh Bonds

05 04 What Scripture Really Says About Marriage -- for Men

05 05 What Scripture Really Says About Marriage -- for Women

05 06 Divorce-- First Seek Healing

05 07 Sanctifying Your Marriage and Cutting a Holy Covenant

05 08 Deciding to, Preparing for and Starting Marriage

05 09 Recovering from Adultery; Divorce; Putting Away; Rape; Violence; Homosexuality; Lesbianism; bestiality; Satanism; Etc

05 10 The Implications of Isaiah 4--1

05 11 Forging the One Flesh Bond (the Art of Sexual Love Making in Godly Marriage)

05 12 Further Considerations (and the One Flesh Bond Continued)

## **06 A Study on the Ministry of Deliverance**

A series of teachings with regard to the ministry deliverance by a highly anointed and gifted servant in that field, recordings made in the late 1990's.

This is an important set of teachings as there is NOT that much published material available.

Regrettably Carol Orfer forbade me to include her material on my Website. The article on Seven Components of Drawing Close to the Almighty at <https://www.eti-ministries.org/seven-components-of-drawing-close> contains alternative processes.

## **07 Conclusion**

Collectively the full set of teachings represent a comprehensive understanding of what the Spirit of Yah is saying to the Body of Believers today in the area of healing marriages in order to bring an end to divorce and prepare for the coming of the Yahooshua.

## About the eBook The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery

This eBook is printed in Volume 5 of the Book Set and is also online at <https://www.eti-ministries.org/men-women/scriptural-definition-of-marriage>

This book was written in 1998/99 following several years of intense research and study of the Bible in order to understand what marriage, divorce and adultery REALLY were.

While my understanding of many factors has changed radically since writing the book the analysis of marriage, adultery and divorce remains almost entirely valid, the book is available on the website for download and the main section of the book are presented on the Website.

This was the first time that I discovered that the Christian Church was in MAJOR error and was totally NOT prepared to consider its error.

I found that men who I respected and believed to be close to the Almighty suddenly turned vicious, aggressive, threatening and irrational.

They claimed to believe the Bible to be authoritative but totally rejected arguments based on the Bible.

This book was written in order to evidence what Father Yah had shown me based on the Bible which was my measuring stick at that stage.

It was only much later that I realized that the Bible was NOT all that I had been told it was.

The book systematically catalogues EVERY Bible verse that has ANYTHING to say about men, women, marriage, divorce, adultery and sex and analyzes what is presented there in order to present comprehensive evidence that it IS Biblical for more than one woman to marry one man, that virginity is set-apart {sacred} and that adultery is sex with a woman who is NOT a virgin and whose virginity one did NOT take.

Marriage, adultery and divorce are exhaustively examined in this book and, while my understanding on many topics has changed radically, my basic understanding on these topics remains much as it was when the book was written with the exception that I now understand that the Almighty is MUCH more willing to grant divorce for outright covenant breaking than I had understood at that time -- see the section on divorce for more information.

## About the detailed Marriage Strategy

The Marriage Strategy analysis was undertaken in 2001 but Yah says it remains valid.

A series of Critical Issues processes were undertaken to examine various facets to marriage the way Yah intended it to be.

I have learned much since doing this analysis including a number of divorces and a number of covenant unions yet Yah clearly tells me to make this information available. It is available at <https://www.eti-ministries.org/men-women/marriage-strategy> It is also published as Volume 11 in this Book Set.

A bit more context:

In 1995 I asked Father Yah why there was so much divorce in the body of believers.

In the years that followed He taught me much, including telling me to get divorced myself.

In 1997 / 98 having undertaken considerable research I wrote the eBook “The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery”, cited above.

In the middle of 2000 a series of events resulted in me separating myself from worldly activities and setting myself apart to serve Father with fasting and prayer. In the latter half of 2000, during nine three day fasts at intervals of 10 days I tape recorded over fifty x one-and-a-half-hour audio teachings on marriage.

Through all of 2001 I was separated and seeking Father, learning a huge amount, writing a large number of articles, spending considerable time in prayer and reading and generally growing and learning rapidly.

Late in 2001 I was impressed to undertake a strategic analysis of marriage using a suite of Excel Spreadsheets that I had developed for business use.

The result of this was a series of spreadsheets analyzing every aspect of marriage and the headings of family life and covenant-based business which are available for download off the website at the link above.

Father has impressed on me to make this more readily available and stressed that notwithstanding what I have learned in the intervening period “this is a VERY important document”.

## **Original Introduction to the Marriage and Anointed Life Teachings**

### **Yahweh’s Plan for Healing Marriage**

#### **Introduction (2nd Edition)**

This series of teaching tapes was birthed in 1995 when I was deeply distressed at the 66% plus level of “divorce” in the Body of Yahshuah Messiah (Church of Jesus Christ) and cried out to Yahweh (The Lord) to show me why there was so much divorce. That was the beginning of a journey deep into aspects of scripture that are not generally recognized or understood in the Body or the world today.

Early on in this journey, I found myself confronted with scriptures which totally challenged certain principles which I had accepted as fundamental to the practice of marriage in the Messianic (Christian) Faith. In one instance, I argued constantly with the Spirit of Yahweh for months while finding the truth that He was showing me, which was totally contrary to modern belief, confirmed from Genesis to Revelation. He has taken me to meet people and purchase books half way around the world, He has spoken to me through His Word and numerous other ways.

These tapes were started together with a series of four three day fasts over a period of about 40 days starting in September 2000. In the process of recording, Yahweh gave further revelation and undertook a major work in my own marriage as He showed me a vision of His view of marriage which is beyond all that we can ask or imagine in its beauty and spiritual authority.

**HE TRULY DOES INTEND ALL MARRIAGES TO WORK AND TO BE HEAVEN ON EARTH!!**

Initially I understood there to be about six tapes titled “Understanding Yahweh’s Way in Marriage - The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery”, this expanded to ten, then to twenty,

then to a second volume of a further 23 titled "Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage" and then a third volume of twelve tapes was revealed, titled "Practical Application of Marriage Teachings". Finally, on 27 December 2000, He guided me to produce a compendium including a set of teachings and prophetic words over the same period given at a Fellowship in Pretoria which He had led me to title "The Coming Tribulation" plus a set of tapes I recorded in late 1999 early 2000 titled "Judgment in This Life" together with a set of teachings on "A Study on The Ministry of Deliverance" obtained at a course given by another ministry.

Immediately after issuing the first edition of these teachings, i was given three messages on "The Wrath of God For The Church", the second and third messages dealing with "The Judgment For Adultery", these tapes are included at the end of the series on "The Coming Tribulation". This set of 96 tapes, which provides a comprehensive guide to healing marriage, preparing for marriage and experiencing HEAVEN ON EARTH IN MARRIAGE, I was impressed to call "Yahweh's Plan for Healing Marriage in the Seventh Millennium".

This series of tapes unfolds a great and many faceted canvas of marriage and the church today. It has been crafted by the Holy Spirit for our edification and instruction and I urge all readers to LISTEN TO ALL TAPES IN SEQUENCE. If you miss tapes and jump around you will almost certainly encounter information that you will not be properly equipped to handle UNLESS you have prayerfully listened to EACH TAPE IN TURN!

#### **Inclusion of Other Teachings**

While recording these tapes, I was led to incorporate various teachings, sometimes tapes I had not listened to for years, as Yahweh (The Lord) painted the full picture. The inclusion of these tapes does not signify that the people who Yahweh used to deliver these teachings have any knowledge of this Ministry or these teachings and therefore does not in any way signify whether these people and ministries have accepted these teachings or not.

They are included as the spoken Word of Yahweh as led by His Spirit as they represent part of the Free Gift which God constantly gives to His people through His Apostles, Prophets, Evangelists, Pastors and Teachers by His Spirit. In praying about including the teachings of others in response to comment received from a certain quarter, I was given Acts 8:20-23 "20 But Peter said to him, "Your money perish with you, because you thought that the gift of God could be purchased with money! 21 "You have neither part nor portion in this matter, for your heart is not right in the sight of God. 22 "Repent therefore of this your wickedness, and pray God if perhaps the thought of your heart may be forgiven you. 23 "For I see that you are poisoned by bitterness and bound by iniquity." (NKJ) From this it was clear to me that there is no basis for any person to profit from or deny teachings.

May Yahweh bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of Yahshua Messiah Adonai (The Lord Jesus Christ) of Nazareth, King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

Amen.

James Robertson,  
Randburg, South Africa,  
December 2000, 2nd Edition June 2001

---

## Introduction

Greetings in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. This is the introduction to a series of tapes, which I felt impressed this morning to call *"God's Plan for Healing Marriage in the Seventh Millennium."* This series of tapes started life about seven years ago when faced with the absolute grief and hurt and anger and bitterness of three Christian women who had been abandoned by their husbands and confronted with the reality that in excess of 60% of all Christian marriages were ending in divorce, I cried out to God and said why. As an engineer and an analyst that by implication meant that I was asking God how to fix it. And in the years that followed since a day early in 1995, God has taken me on the most amazing rollercoaster ride to open my eyes to see what is going on in the spiritual realm. As He did that, He took me halfway around the world to meet with people, to buy obscure books in obscure bookshops. He spoke to me through teachings of servants of this age and previous ages. He lead me to university libraries and He spoke to me through His word. He opened my eyes to His word and ways that frequently challenged me enormously. In the process, He also took me into contact with people who could not accept and could not believe what God was showing me. He showed me the magnitude of the manner in which Satan has gone about bringing the church to a place where 60% to 70% of all Christian marriages end in divorce and even high-profile international church leaders think it is acceptable for them to get divorced or alternatively think that their marriage is beyond being saved. And in all of this God has progressively opened my eyes to give me the most wonderful picture and the most wonderful vision of how He intended marriage to be.

The Lord God intended marriage to be Heaven on Earth. He intended it to be a prophetic statement of our relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. He gave us marriage in order to understand how we should relate to Him and relate to Jesus. It is the most fabulous and most awesome picture but it is a picture that is hardly understood in the Body of Christ today. It is a great privilege to me to bring to you this series of teachings which by the time you have completed listening to these tapes, I truly believe will have given you a vision of Heaven on Earth in marriage. And in the process, as an engineer seeking an answer He has given me I believe in this set of tapes, solutions to every problem that I have encountered in terms of marital relations not working, the things that give rise to divorce.

So in this series of tapes you will find solutions to any marriage that is not working to the extent that I say to you with deep conviction as I open the presentation of this series of teachings that God is able and willing to make your marriage work. He is able to heal and deliver any marriage where that marriage is according to the Word of God, I am not talking about situations of adultery and deception, that God is able to heal any marriage and make that marriage Heaven on Earth if husband and wife will go before Him in faith and trust Him and put into practice which is contained in these teachings. I go so far as to say that even if a Christian is married to an unbeliever, if you diligently apply what is contained in these teachings, your marriage will become wonderful and there is a strong possibility that you will bring your spouse to salvation.

In fact I would go so far as to say that many of the principles contained in this series of teachings will even bring about a situation where a marriage between unbelievers will improve dramatically if they will receive the truths that are contained. In this whole journey, in this process of being constantly confronted with truth in the Word of God, which were deeply hidden and are deeply hidden from the Body of Christ at large, I found myself regularly being challenged. Early on in the process, after I cried

out to God, I started to get an answer by His spirit, which completely confounded everything that I had believed the Word of God said regarding the fundamentals of marriage. As I argued with Him night after night and day after day and asked for confirmation after confirmation, He gave me those confirmations. I read from Genesis to Revelation and found confirmation in every book of Scripture.

He sent people across my path, He lead me to buy books, He confirmed it and He confirmed it until finally I had to say, *"Father I accept the truth."* That was the first of a number of major paradigm shift that I was required to make as I had to choose between putting the Word of God first in my life or compromising with the ways of the world and therefore the ways of Satan. In the process, I was persecuted, I lost my business, I lost my wife, I lost custody of my children.

The truth that I bring you today is a truth has cost dearly but it is a truth that truly is a pearl of great price. I urge you to receive this truth for what it is, a pearl of infinite price, of infinite value. It is a pearl which is one of the pearls that Jesus died for. It is one of the pearls that is absolutely paramount in preparing the bride of Christ for this incoming king. The Lord has said to me that church cannot be ready for the marriage supper of the lamb until the church understands how marriage was intended to be. A bride in which 70% of believers are divorced and remarried is not fit for the King of Kings and Lord of Lords. She must be healed, she must be restored. She must be cleansed of her unrighteousness. Jesus is returning for a bride without spot or blemish. One of the biggest spots and blemishes on the bride of Christ right now is the level of divorce, putting away, adultery and fornication. So I urge you to listen diligently and work systematically through this series of tapes and put into practice what you find here in order that you may serve the Lord your God effectively in this age, that you may not be found to be an unprofitable servant on the Day of Judgement and that you may be found to be a sheep and not a goat, wheat and not tares, a wise virgin and not a foolish virgin. A faithful servant and not a worker of iniquity that you may not find on the Day of Judgement that you have failed your saviour.

As I was putting all this together and preparing and as I have been through the Scriptures time and time again, I am constantly confronted with some truths which are immensely painful to Jesus, to his Father, to the Holy Spirit, and which are immensely painful to anybody who will open their hearts to feel Jesus' heart on the matter. I refer you first of all to Malachi 2:14-16: *"Yet you say, 'For what reason?' Because the Lord has been witness Between you and the wife of your youth, With whom you have dealt treacherously; Yet she is your companion And your wife by covenant. But did He not make them one, Having a remnant of the Spirit? And why one? He seeks godly offspring. Therefore take heed to your spirit, And let none deal treacherously with the wife of his youth. 'For the Lord God of Israel says That He hates divorce, For it covers one's garment with violence,' Says the Lord of hosts. 'Therefore take heed to your spirit, That you do not deal treacherously.'" Matthew 19:8-9: "He (Jesus) said to them, 'Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, permitted you to divorce your wives, but from the beginning it was not so. And I say to you, whoever divorces his wife, except for sexual immorality, and marries another, commits adultery; and whoever marries her who is divorced commits adultery.'" 1 Corinthians 6:9-10: "Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived. Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners will inherit the kingdom of God."*

So we see not only is that putting away of a woman for no cause adultery, we see that those who commit that sin will not inherit the Kingdom of God. As I have gone down this journey, the Lord has repeatedly brought me into sharp confrontation with His Scriptures. On more than one occasion when I wanted to walk away from this truth where I wanted to turn from the persecution and the condemnation, He has brought me up sharp with Scripture. One of them which He gave to me in an



instance where I was debating whether to prepare a document which is one of the many on which this teaching is based, He took me to Mark 7:6-9: *"He answered and said to them, 'Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written: 'This people honours Me with their lips, But their heart is far from Me. And in vain they worship Me, Teaching as doctrines the commandments of men.' For laying aside the commandment of God, you hold the tradition of men—the washing of pitchers and cups, and many other such things you do.' He said to them, 'All too well you reject the commandment of God, that you may keep your tradition.'"* And I have seen very clearly in this teaching in this series that almost everything that is taught by the church today with regard to marriage, is subject to the judgement in that passage of Scripture. It is the traditions of men and it nullifies the commandments of God in virtually every conceivable area of marriage.

Again, another Scripture, Matthew 7:3-5: *"And why do you look at the speck in your brother's eye, but do not consider the plank in your own eye? Or how can you say to your brother, 'Let me remove the speck from your eye,' and look, a plank is in your own eye? Hypocrite! First remove the plank from your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother's eye."* If 70% of the church of Jesus Christ is divorced, how do people presume to continue to counsel newly married people in the way they have counselled before those whose marriage has failed? As I wrestled with these truths, my marriage of 25 years in the Sight of God failed as God showed me that my wife had been treacherously betraying me for our entire relationship and yet I had been for endless counselling, I put into practice everything that I found to do that the council gave me and yet eventually my wife lost to salvation, blasphemed the Holy Spirit and Jesus Christ turned his back on her and walked away to leave her to go to hell.

Recently I was ministering to another man who had a similar experience. The Lord Jesus appeared to him in a vision and showed him a rotten corpse in his bed. His wife had been spiritually dead for years. I would say to you as you listen to these tapes, if something rises up from some of what has to be said in these tapes, please take authority over it. Until you have seen the woman you have loved for 25 years, turn go to hell with no turning back and you have lost custody of your children to that woman, you cannot comprehend the magnitude of the spiritual turmoil and destruction that is taking place in marriage on the Earth today. So I urge you whenever you find yourself confronted with truths in these teachings which are hard to swallow, please put aside your offence. An offence is a crime, it is a sin. We are not called to get offended with one another, we are called to love one another. When offence rises up, there is something wrong. Put it aside and please listen carefully lest you too find yourself in a place of judgement.

Another Scripture, James 3:1-2: *"My brethren, let not many of you become teachers, knowing that we shall receive a stricter judgment. For we all stumble in many things. If anyone does not stumble in word, he is a perfect man, able also to bridle the whole body."* We know only too well that only Jesus is the perfect man. So we will all make mistakes. It is not a sin to discover that you have made a mistake. It is a sin to refuse to repent to that mistake. There is much in this series of teachings which is almost certainly going to require you to admit that you have made mistakes. I urge before all things fear God and fear His judgement.

This morning as the Lord was tying together a whole series of parallel activities that had been going on in my life for some time and giving me the final picture of this series of teachings and how they should be assembled, He took me to John 9 and I want to read that entire chapter to you because it contains a fundamentally important principle to be applied in understanding what follows. *"Now as Jesus passed by, He saw a man who was blind from birth. And His disciples asked Him, saying, 'Rabbi, who sinned, this man or his parents, that he was born blind?'"* Jesus answered, *'Neither this man nor his*

parents sinned, but that the works of God should be revealed in him. I must work the works of Him who sent Me while it is day; the night is coming when no one can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.' When He had said these things, He spat on the ground and made clay with the saliva; and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay. And He said to him, 'Go, wash in the pool of Siloam' (which is translated, Sent). So he went and washed, and came back seeing. Therefore the neighbours and those who previously had seen that he was blind said, 'Is not this he who sat and begged?' Some said, 'This is he.' Others said, 'He is like him.' He said, 'I am he.' Therefore they said to him, 'How were your eyes opened?' He answered and said, 'A Man called Jesus made clay and anointed my eyes and said to me, 'Go to the pool of Siloam and wash.' So I went and washed, and I received sight.' Then they said to him, 'Where is He?' He said, 'I do not know.'

They brought him who formerly was blind to the Pharisees. Now it was a Sabbath when Jesus made the clay and opened his eyes. Then the Pharisees also asked him again how he had received his sight. He said to them, 'He put clay on my eyes, and I washed, and I see.' Therefore some of the Pharisees said, 'This Man is not from God, because He does not keep the Sabbath.' Others said, 'How can a man who is a sinner do such signs?' And there was a division among them. They said to the blind man again, 'What do you say about Him because He opened your eyes?' He said, 'He is a prophet.' But the Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind and received his sight, until they called the parents of him who had received his sight. And they asked them, saying, 'Is this your son, who you say was born blind? How then does he now see?' His parents answered them and said, 'We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind; but by what means he now sees we do not know, or who opened his eyes we do not know. He is of age; ask him. He will speak for himself.'

His parents said these things because they feared the Jews, for the Jews had agreed already that if anyone confessed that He was Christ, he would be put out of the synagogue. Therefore his parents said, 'He is of age; ask him.' So they again called the man who was blind, and said to him, 'Give God the glory! We know that this Man is a sinner.' He answered and said, 'Whether He is a sinner or not I do not know. One thing I know: that though I was blind, now I see.' Then they said to him again, 'What did He do to you? How did He open your eyes?' He answered them, 'I told you already, and you did not listen. Why do you want to hear it again? Do you also want to become His disciples?' Then they reviled him and said, 'You are His disciple, but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spoke to Moses; as for this fellow, we do not know where He is from.' The man answered and said to them, 'Why, this is a marvellous thing, that you do not know where He is from; yet He has opened my eyes! Now we know that God does not hear sinners; but if anyone is a worshiper of God and does His will, He hears him. Since the world began it has been unheard of that anyone opened the eyes of one who was born blind. If this Man were not from God, He could do nothing.' They answered and said to him, 'You were completely born in sins, and are you teaching us?' And they cast him out.

Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when He had found him, He said to him, 'Do you believe in the Son of God?' He answered and said, 'Who is He, Lord, that I may believe in Him?' And Jesus said to him, 'You have both seen Him and it is He who is talking with you.' Then he said, 'Lord, I believe!' And he worshiped Him. And Jesus said, 'For judgment I have come into this world, that those who do not see may see, and that those who see may be made blind.' Then some of the Pharisees who were with Him heard these words, and said to Him, 'Are we blind also?' Jesus said to them, 'If you were blind, you would have no sin; but now you say, 'We see.' Therefore your sin remains.'"

I urge you to consider carefully the implication of this and the previous messages of Scripture. The men who crucified the Lord Jesus Christ were men who were highly knowledgeable in the Word of God. There were urgently seeking the coming of Messiah but they had their traditions, their

preconceived notions of how God was and how He would act so firmly entrenched that even in this example, they could not would not accept the Lord of glory. We are in an age where Jesus is moving on this Earth and again, many who claim to see are rejecting him. No more in no other area is this pronounced as it is in the area of marriage. We have no option if we fear God but to recognise that for there to be 70% divorce in the Body of Christ, there is something terribly, terribly, terribly wrong and therefore we dare not hold on to any tradition, any preconceived notions, any doctrine of man. We must return to the living Word of God to Jesus himself no matter how much Satan persecutes us.

In parallel with putting this whole series together, the Lord has been opening my eyes with regard to the scriptures pertaining to the end of the age and perhaps the most succinct summary of that is contained in Matthew 24:29-30: *"Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory."* There can be absolutely no doubt that the church must go through tribulation first. The question is purely the timing. And it is not my intention to give an in-depth declaration of the word of God and the subject, however I have been impressed to include as the first set of 11 tapes in this series, a series of tapes recorded at the meetings of Foundation for Living Christian Fellowship in Pretoria, South Africa going back to the beginning of October this year when the Lord suddenly told me and my wife to move and join ourselves to that congregation until the end of the year and in that series of teachings, He took that congregation, which is a small group of mature believers many who have been in the faith for 30, 40, 50 years down the road of strong teaching to show us very clearly that the church was already in tribulation and that much greater tribulation was at hand to show us clearly that Jesus ushered in a spiritual covenant and that we should cease looking with the eyes, our natural eyes and stop looking at the things which are seen and look to what was happening in the spirit realm. To see that there was indeed a great tribulation on the Earth and that even greater tribulation was to follow, to see that judgement is at the very door and accordingly in this series entitled 'God's Plan for Healing Marriage in the Seventh Millennium' the first collection of tapes is a series of tapes from FFL. They are not all the teachings that have been given in that period, but they are a sequence which God led me to put together for that congregation under the title *"The coming tribulation."*

I would encourage you before you get too far into the teachings on marriage to listen attentively to what the Spirit of God is saying to the prophetic words associated with a number of the messages and understand that there is no more time to put off doing what God has called you to do to put off drawing close to Him. People are dying in the spirit like flies, right now, we just cannot see it. The level of spiritual persecution and turmoil is intensified certainly for those who are truly seeking to serve God. The level of backsliding and falling away is escalating in an alarming proportion according to all that I speak to, there is no more time. Tribulation is at the very door. We have been in tribulation but the tribulation that is to come is far beyond anything that we have been anticipating but it is in the spirit realm. Yes, there may be concentration camps. Yes, there may be plans to eliminate all but 500 million people on this Earth but none of those are what Scripture is talking about. I have seen this clearly only for the last week or so but I say to you now with profound conviction, do not look to the things that are seen. Ask God to open the eyes of your spirit to see what is going on in Scripture realm and see the massive battle that is taking place and claiming the lives of maybe even at this stage, millions of people who have called on the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

A further Scripture, 2 Corinthians 5:10-11: *"For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive the things done in the body, according to what he has done, whether good or bad. Knowing, therefore, the terror of the Lord, we persuade men; but we are well known to God, and I also trust are well known in your consciences."* Do you know the terror of the Lord? Do you fear appearing before the judgement seat of Christ or are you complacent that judgement is an awesome thing, few will emerge unscathed. Most will find that they have been unprofitable servants and the best only they will be saved, their works having been found to be in a straw and stubble and consumed by fire. I urge you to listen diligently to the teachings that follow.

1 Peter 4:16-19: *"Yet if anyone suffers as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let him glorify God in this matter. For the time has come for judgment to begin at the house of God; and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the gospel of God? Now 'If the righteous one is scarcely saved, Where will the ungodly and the sinner appear?' Therefore let those who suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to Him in doing good, as to a faithful Creator."* My friends, judgement has begun in the house of God and His house must be fully and completely judged before he will judge the world. We must be dealt with in all our sin and in all our iniquity before the wrath of God is poured out on those who do not have the saving knowledge of the Lord Jesus Christ. Do not allow those who would tell you that rupture will precede tribulation to mislead you. We are in tribulation, there will be no rising up of believers to meet the Lord in the air until the church has been judged and refined by fire and prepared to be a spotless bride for the lamb of God and until the world has been judged.

Matthew 12:35-37: *"A good man out of the good treasure of his heart brings forth good things, and an evil man out of the evil treasure brings forth evil things. But I say to you that for every idle word men may speak, they will give account of it in the day of judgment. For by your words you will be justified, and by your words you will be condemned."* We have to examine our words, we have to ensure that our words are profitable and productive and we have to ensure that what is being taught regarding marriage is according to the Word of God. I say again, most of what you will find in these teachings which is solidly based on Scripture will reveal to you the magnitude of the errors in the church with regard to what Scripture says in the subject of marriage. To return to judgement, Matthew 10:29-34: *"Are not two sparrows sold for a copper coin? And not one of them falls to the ground apart from your Father's will. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Do not fear therefore; you are of more value than many sparrows. Therefore whoever confesses Me before men, him I will also confess before My Father who is in heaven. But whoever denies Me before men, him I will also deny before My Father who is in heaven. Do not think that I came to bring peace on earth. I did not come to bring peace but a sword."* That is Jesus speaking. Understand that if not one sparrow falls to the ground apart from our Father's will, then not one hair of your head will be harmed, you will not suffer illness, you will not suffer financial loss, you will not suffer divorce, you will not suffer anything apart from your Father's will. I am not talking fatalism, I am talking judgement.

As the second set of tapes in this series is a series that I produced about a year ago entitled *"Judgement In This Life,"* which goes in detail into the manifestations of judgement in this life. How to diagnose them and in broad terms, how to respond to them, how to turn from your sin to bring an end to judgement. And like the series on the coming tribulation, these are presented in order to provide a solid scriptural and spiritual context to the teaching on marriage. You do not necessarily have to listen to all the tapes on tribulation and all the tapes on judgement before you start listening to the tape series on marriage, but I would encourage you to consider seriously doing that. If you have a deep and settled assurance of the reality of judgement in this life and the reality of tribulation which is the

manifestation of judgement in this life at a settled and reverent certainty that you can no longer afford sin in your life, you will find it far easier to accept what is contained in this series on marriage.

Let us understand briefly the principles that are contained in this series on judgement from the perspective how do we experience tribulation, how do we experience judgement, how is it that people get sick and do not get healed? How is it that people lose loved ones? How is it that Christians are bankrupted and cannot recover financially despite faith in the promises? The answer to all of these things is judgement. The answer to all of these things is sin. John 10:9-11 Jesus speaking: *"I am the door. If anyone enters by Me, he will be saved, and will go in and out and find pasture. The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly. I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep."* We now understand Satan comes to steal, to kill, and to destroy. So if this killing, stealing, and destroying going on in your life and I am not necessarily talking physically, but also spiritually. But if you are financially destitute, if you are in ill health and cannot get healed, then Satan is to blame. Satan is doing something.

1 Peter 5:8-9: *"Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour. Resist him, steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same sufferings are experienced by your brotherhood in the world."* Satan looks for the people he may devour that is a permissive sense. In other words, he can devour nobody unless he is given permission. So we are told to resist him. We resist Satan by dealing with the things in our lives which give him a legal right to attack us. Why do I say that? 1 John 2:1-4: *"My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world. Now by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His commandments. He who says, 'I know Him,' and does not keep His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him."*

We dare not say we love God and continue to preach heresy in the area of marriage or any other area. Recognise the role of an advocate in a court of law. The advocate pleads the case on behalf of his customer, his client, seeking minimisation of sentence or of judgement of not guilty. Jesus does the same thing. He stands before the Throne of God, the Father or rather he is seated at the right hand of God the Father as our advocate pleading our case and where we are young and inexperienced in the faith, he extends grace. He asks for grace. He asks for the sin to be covered by the blood. But as we go older and more mature in Christ, if we do not actively and personally bring our sin to the cross, confess it, repent of it, and turn around from it and receive forgiveness, Jesus cannot continue to release us from the consequence of our sins. Our advocate cannot plead for clemency when we have been before the court on the same charge previously and been granted reprieve. Hebrews 12:22-25: *"But you have come to Mount Zion and to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, to an innumerable company of angels, to the general assembly and church of the firstborn who are registered in heaven, to God the Judge of all, to the spirits of just men made perfect, to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling that speaks better things than that of Abel. See that you do not refuse Him who speaks. For if they did not escape who refused Him who spoke on earth, much more shall we not escape if we turn away from Him who speaks from Heaven."*

Again, we see Jesus, the mediator, the advocate pleading on our behalf. God the Father is a righteous judge. He abhors sin. He must judge us. In the Book of Revelation, we read that Satan is before the Throne of God night and day accusing the brethren. What does he do? Satan is the accuser of the brethren. Satan is the prosecutor. Satan looks for sin in our life and he takes that sin to the courtroom of Heaven and he requests, nay he demands sentence for every sin. And in the process, Satan sends

out his Demons to trigger us into more sin. But if not a sparrow falls to the ground, so would be the Father's will, no risk, Satan cannot attack or kill, steal, and destroy in your life more than the Father permits and Father will not permit more than your sin allows. Job 1:6-12: *"Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan also came among them. And the Lord said to Satan, 'From where do you come?' So Satan answered the Lord and said, 'From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and forth on it.' Then the Lord said to Satan, 'Have you considered My servant Job, that there is none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil?' So Satan answered the Lord and said, 'Does Job fear God for nothing? Have You not made a hedge around him, around his household, and around all that he has on every side? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his possessions have increased in the land. But now, stretch out Your hand and touch all that he has, and he will surely curse You to Your face!' And the Lord said to Satan, 'Behold, all that he has is in your power; only do not lay a hand on his person.' So Satan went out from the presence of the Lord."* So there we see Satan in the throne room of God. We see that he has been roaming around, we see that he camps and we see that God says that Job is in His power; how come Job is in his power?

Job 3:25: *"For the thing I greatly feared has come upon me, And what I dreaded has happened to me."* So we see that Job was walking in fear, not faith. Fear is the opposite of faith. Fear is faith in the devil. Earlier we read in Job that Job offered sacrifices in case his sons had sinned, not because they had sinned. He offered sacrifices in fear, not in faith. Job chapter 29, the whole chapter, I just read a few verses from 18 to 23: *"Then I (Job) said, 'I shall die in my nest, And multiply my days as the sand. My root is spread out to the waters, And the dew lies all night on my branch. My glory is fresh within me, And my bow is renewed in my hand. Men listened to me and waited, And kept silence for my counsel. After my words they did not speak again, And my speech settled on them as dew. They waited for me as for the rain, And they opened their mouth wide as for the spring rain.'"* In the whole of chapter 9 is Job boasting about how esteemed he was, how wise he was. We see in the middle of those verses that I just read his pronouncement about the manner in which he would die in his nest, multiplying his days as the sand. Total presumption, total pride. God says that he resists the proud.

So out of that passage we see that judgement comes upon believers because of sin in their lives and the second set of tapes in this series was tapes on judgement in this life provide a fairly comprehensive analysis based on my own experience of saying why Lord, of how Satan secures judgement against us and what we can do in broad terms to avoid those judgements. I would urge you to listen, firstly to the set of tapes on the coming tribulation, the first part of the first volume of this set, volume 0 and then to set of tapes on judgement in this life as the lord leads, but please be sure that it is the Lord leading. You might want to start listening to the marriage series in parallel with this, but based on the fact that this is profoundly what I believe God has shown me and is profoundly the manner in which He has taken me through this journey myself, I urge you to listen to these tapes in sequence.

The third set of tapes is volume 1, in the marriage series, which is entitled *"The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery"* and in this collection of 20 tapes, there is a comprehensive scriptural analysis of all the doctrines relating to marriage. It is a rigorous analysis and leaves no room for [inaudible 0:46:58] that I do not make any statements in that teaching of any significance so that I have first been through an extremely rigorous process of trial whereby the Lord has shown me of the veracity and the truths of what is declared in those teachings. I am not talking about days or weeks or even months, I am talking about years. All the fundamentals contained in those teachings have been known to me for several years. They have been documented by me, they have been tested in practice. They have been debated with others and made much persecution and I declare to you before the

Throne of God today that they are truth before God. I urge you therefore to listen attentively to the content of those 20 tapes. And if you find things which are hard to examine your heart and to go before the Throne of God and ask Him to confirm what is there.

The second volume of the marriage teachings entitled *"Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage"* is a set of 23 tapes in which God paints the most awesome picture for marriage as a holy and sacred institution on Earth, a shadow and type of our relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ, a fundamentally important requirement for the Bride of Christ to be prepared. Something that sums up the entire Christian walk in the entire Christian way, something that requires holiness and sanctification if it is truly to be the institution God intended it to be. Something that is both awesome and beautiful and wonderful at the same time. In those tapes He has taken us on the most wonderful journey, bringing teachings from a wide variety of different sources, prominent men and women of God around us. His teachings He brought together some of whom He gave me four, five years ago assembled to paint a wonderful picture of what God intended marriage to be and the spiritual tools and techniques and methods that He has provided for us to get there. This set of tapes also draws together various things from my experience as an engineer and management consultant, particularly in the areas of the management of change and collectively these tapes contain most of what you need to know in order to get even the most destitute marriage healed, restored, and brought to the place of being Heaven on Earth.

Volume 3 of the marriage series is entitled *"Application of the Marriage Teachings."* It is a compendium of tapes dealing with a variety of subjects ranging from who you are married to, to sanctifying your marriage, to recovering from divorce, adultery, rape, etc., and various other topics, all of which are necessary to build on the foundations made in the first two series of teachings on marriage. This set of 12 tapes ties together everything that is contained in all the tapes preceding it.

The final set of tapes in this series is entitled *"The Ministry of Deliverance."* It is a series of tapes produced by a lady by the name of Carol Auffer who has a ministry in the area of deliverance and these tapes are distributed at cost to those who require them, and I have taken the liberty of including them here because I truly believe they are amongst the most anointed messages in the area of deliverance that I have encountered and without that knowledge, resolving many of the things which give rise to the failure of marriages is at best problematic at worst impossible and so the Lord has impressed on me to incorporate as the last set of tapes in this series, the 15 tapes of Carol's teaching on deliverance. We also have copies of her manual available to those who might need it in terms of the diagrams, etc., recognising that the Ministry of Deliverance is a Ministry of great spiritual danger for those who do not know what they are doing and I refer you to the Seven Sons of Sceva who were beaten up when trying to exercise a man in the name of Jesus without having a revelation of their authority in Christ. But if you have a revelation of your authority in Christ, if you are aware of what the Word of God says, but you lack the basic information to effectively minister deliverance to yourself or your spouse or your family, these tapes contain that information. It is information to be used carefully as led by the Spirit of God that they are a powerful set of tapes. Taken together with the other tapes in this series, I truly believe that the Lord has provided everyone of us with a complete and compact set of knowledge for the healing of marriage.

If you listen to this entire set of tapes, I have no doubt that you will find that you need to listen to them repeatedly over several years progressively putting into practice more and more of what you learn. We have learnt much just as we have put together these tapes and we have seen a major blessing in our own marriage and even so as I listen to the tapes from time to time as I have been putting together and assembling this entire set, I keep finding truth that I am not yet fully walking in my own life. I have no doubt that I need to listen to these tapes repeatedly to come to the place where

I know God has purposed for us to be, which is Heaven on Earth in our marriage. I have no doubt that it will take some years before we are walking fully in this and I have no doubt that it will be a lifetime before we come to the fullness of the stature of the man Jesus Christ. I have absolute assurance that if anybody listening to these tapes is diligent and works systematically through them, they will experience a miracle in even the most difficult marriage. You must understand the context of judgement. You must understand the context of the requirement to overcome in this life. You must understand the context that God is bringing revival to this world and that a fundamental requirement for revival is a revival in marriage. You must understand the absolute paramount significance of unity in the Body of Christ. John 17:20-21, Jesus speaking: *"I do not pray for these alone, but also for those who will believe in Me through their word; that they all may be one, as You, Father, are in Me, and I in You; that they also may be one in Us, that the world may believe that You sent Me."*

The first step to that is for perfect unity and harmony to prevail in Christian marriages. Then the world will begin to believe that God sent Jesus and as we learn and apply the lessons in marriage to the Body of Christ to tear down the walls of division between denominations and congregations, we will see the day when believers in this Earth will do the works that Jesus did and greater works because they are dwelling in unity. Satan hates marriage, because he knows that man and woman fully united with the full magnitude of the One Flesh Bond are an unstoppable spiritual entity and that a congregation of such men and women is a spiritual force to be reckoned with that will rock the very gates of hell. I challenge you today, lay down your life for the truths regarding marriage. Go all out for Jesus Christ to learn what he has to teach you about marriage. It will change your life, your children's lives, and change the world. Having said all this, you must work systematically. This set of tapes will challenge virtually everything you have ever been taught or believed about marriage. If you jump around, if you do as somebody did the other day and went straight to tape #8 of the first part of marriage which is entitled *"Tying Up Some Loose Ends, Some Controversial Points,"* you will almost certainly be offended because you will not have the scriptural context and the background to what is contained in that tape. The same applies to many other tapes in this series.

God has taken us on a journey, He has painted a wonderful panorama, He has charted a course through a jungle of demonic infestation, but there is no short cut. Please stick to the road, work through the tapes systematically and you will be blessed. You may find that there are some aspects in some of the tapes that are hard to accept and while I would be the first to acknowledge the possibility that there is leaven in what I have done, I say again, that none of the more significant truths that are contained in these tapes are placed there lightly. They are placed there with the absolute total 100% unshakeable conviction that they are the word and the will of God. So if you find something that you are battling to accept, may I suggest to you that you just pass it by, put it on the shelf and ask God to speak to you about it and either to confirm it or deny it and move on to the next tape.

There is an enormous diversity of subjects addressed and each of them is addressed iteratively in ever-increasing detail. Therefore, if one of them offends you, just put it aside and carry on with the rest of the tapes in this series. There are teachings from various ministries included particularly in volume 2 of the marriage series and clearly the first series on the coming tribulation and the series on deliverance, I need to say to you that the inclusion of these teachings does not in any way signify that the people concerned have been consulted about their content of the rest of the tapes and therefore I do not hold an opinion of whether they confirm or deny those teachings and their inclusion does not represent in any way in natural terms and endorsement of me or my ministry with the content of the tapes. That is not to say that I believe that if they were to listen to these tapes systematically, they will not come to a similar revelation of the truth, just that at this moment in time they have not had that



opportunity because that is not the way that God has led me. I need to stress to you that the tapes are contained and these messages from other ministries are contained because I truly believe and I have been led by the Spirit of God to include them that it is the Will of God that those messages are being spoken through anointed men and women of God by the leading of the Spirit of God. Again, there are elements of heaven in every message. We are all human, only Jesus Christ is perfect. We all make mistakes. We all slip up. We all get ideas at the last minute, which add or take away a little bit from what the Spirit of God has said. Do not get distracted by those things. There are elements in some of those teachings which are not at [inaudible 1:01:00] with what I have taught but that is not the point. The heart of what God is saying through those people, the heart of what He is saying through me is all part of the big picture, which we will only fully comprehend and understand when we have shrugged off this mortal coil and we are dwelling for eternity, God willing, with Jesus.

I must stress that the Word of God is free. It is a free gift and therefore it is very clear to me that it is not for any human being to restrict the distribution of His word, nor is it for them to charge and make a profit for the distribution of His word. We distribute these tapes and teachings at no cost, funds permitting, save only that where it is necessary to post the large sets of tapes internationally, we would ask for a donation to cover postage if you can afford it. We have arranged distribution in various countries to facilitate that. The teachings are available on data CD suitable for playing in any multimedia computer, which has a sound card and speakers in order to make it more cost effective and affordable to supply the whole set of teachings to those who require them. I would encourage you if you feel it would be useful to make copies of some or all of the tapes with CDs and pass them on to others, please feel free to do so. You do not need to approach me for permission. By the same token, if you want to use some or the entire series of teachings in any public forum to the glory of God, you are welcome to do so. All I ask is that you understand that if you misrepresent or twist or distort or selectively detrimentally edit the contents of these teachings, you will be judged for your actions on the Day of Judgement.

I would also mention that these teachings were produced against a very tight deadline as a consequence of my own disobedience and I confess that that is sin and I repent of it and I have repented of it and by the same token, I confess that I was not sanctified as I would have liked and consequently I was under continual demonic attacks as I was preparing these messages. You will find the odd tape where there was quite a lot of yawning, slurring, and even perhaps occasional transposing of words as a consequence of my failure to sanctify myself sufficiently and I confess again that that is sin and I repent of it and I continue to seek the Lord's guidance to come to a place where these things are less material. But I say that in this context that I have been through a great journey of sanctification in the last few years to come to a place we are notwithstanding the fact that I have these attacks. I believe that I speak from a position of some degree of sanctification and I remind you that at the end of his life, Paul the apostle, the greatest perhaps apostle that has ever lived referred to himself as the chief of all sinners at the end of his life. It is also to mention that in the process of recording these steps, I was learning about the technology, it is the first time I have ever produced tapes of this nature or in fact done anything in a formal recording environment and I have started out with relatively limited equipment and as the thing unfolded, the Lord provided more sophisticated equipment and taught me how to use the tools more effectively. But nevertheless, these tapes have not been produced in a recording studio with studio quality equipment and again, please accept the intention here is not to produce some highflying, glitzy, professional presentation. It is to share from my heart what God has been teaching me over the last five, six years in order that you may be blessed and your marriage healed and that you may share these truths with others that they may be blessed and their marriage is healed.

If you feel that you are more competent to record what is contained in these tapes, share by all means at liberty to do so. God willing, these tapes will shortly be available as I have said before on a series of data CDs and MP3 digital audio format together with some supplementary documents plus labels and audiocassette and CD case covers to make it easy for you to make copies of these teachings. As I say, you are free to reproduce and duplicate the set of tapes or the CDs as led by the Lord. I appeal to you to distribute the entire set and not selective tapes. At the same time, it is not necessary to acknowledge the source if you do not want to. The copyright is not mine, it is the Lord's.

I hope shortly also to have a website with all of these teachings on a compressed audio format suitable for downloading or emailing. You can contact me at [James@End-Time-Issues.org.za](mailto:James@End-Time-Issues.org.za) for more information on that. The tapes can be obtained locally in South Africa from End Time Issue Ministries, PO Box 898, Randpark Ridge 2156, Republic of South Africa or by contacting me on the email address I have just given you or telephonically. International dialling code in most countries 0027, local code 11, telephone 791-2327, fax 0027-11791-5004, and you are welcome to contact me and refer others to me. My name is James Robertson by the way. For copies of these tapes and other teaching materials, I have also arranged provisionally for distribution of these materials in other centres around the world. In the United States you can contact Scott Ledbetter at Remnant Sounds Ministries, 2500 Louis Henna Boulevard, Apartment 3203, Round Rock, Texas 78664, United States of America. Email [Scott.Ledbetter@Hotmail.com](mailto:Scott.Ledbetter@Hotmail.com).

In the United Kingdom you can contact Isaac Aluochier, PO Box 22855, London, NW98ZF, United Kingdom. His telephone number, his cellular mobile is, country codes ++44, code in the United Kingdom 956187232. His email address: [ServantsOfYahweh@CWCom.net](mailto:ServantsOfYahweh@CWCom.net). These ministries should be able to help you with the teachings on CD and some of them may be able to help you with the full set of audio tapes. If you have any difficulty, please contact me as indicated previously. As mentioned before, we do not charge for the supply of these materials. The other ministries may charge as they feel led by the Lord and as they deem appropriate. Should the Lord lead you to sow into this ministry, the ministry is End Time Issues and our bank account is called End Time Issue Ministries. The account number is 0427527805 at the Standard Bank of South Africa, Randburg Branch, branch code 018005. In some cases, the branch code may need to be reflected as an eight-digit number in which case it is 018005 as before, followed by 90. This depends on the bank at which the deposit is being made.

That completes the preparatory introduction for the series of teachings. I pray that you will enjoy and be blessed as much as I have what God has in store for you in the tapes that follow. I appreciate it is an extremely long and seemingly onerous journey, but if you recognise that marriage is the state or the institution which perhaps more than virtually anything else in your life influences how you overcome in this life and how you serve God and in fact, how you find life to be, I am sure that you will appreciate that some degree of effort is required to experience Heaven on Earth in marriage. So welcome and I really hope that you enjoy what to me is the most wonderful and beautiful picture that the Lord God Almighty has painted concerning marriage, the way He intends it to be and how everyone of us can have our marriages healed in this age.

Father I pray that all that is being said on this tape and all that is said in this entire series that is according to your word and according to your will, will find deep root in the hearts of the hearers. It will be engrafted by your spirit, watered and nourished and fed by your spirit and will grow forth and produce abundant fruit. Father I ask likewise that anything that may be contained in this tape or any other tape that is not according to your word, not according to your will, will be blown away by your spirit and find no root in the hearts of the hearers, in Jesus name. And Father I ask that you will send your mighty warring Angels to encamp around those who would listen to these tapes to guide them

to strengthen them, to give them the fortitude by your spirit, to press on and to listen to this entire series no matter what the price that they may come to a place of experiencing your Heaven on Earth in their marriages. I thank you Father that their marriages are healed and restored that they walk in the fullness of the anointing and the calling that you have for them and I thank you for blessing them and prospering them in every way, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, King of Kings and Lord of Lords, saviour of the world. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you. Amen.

This is the introduction to the series of tapes from Foundation for Living, Christian Fellowship entitled *"The Coming Tribulation."* The series of teachings contained in this set trace a period of time from the 1st of October the year 2000 to the 31st of December the year 2000, in terms of which God progressively revealed to the congregation the situation in the world today, made a very definite call for holiness and sanctification and through the prophetic word in particular made it very clear to us that the time of tribulation was at hand, that judgement was to be expected and that we should prepare our hearts for that judgement and seek God as never before. It is also established that there were strong indications to believe that the Mark of the Beast was a spiritual rather than a natural mark. This series is included at the beginning of the series - *"God's Plan for Healing Marriage in the Seventh Millennium"* in order to provide a more detailed spiritual context for this entire set of teachings as something which God has provided to bring the Bride of Christ to a place of holiness and sanctification for the return of the bridegroom. I pray that you will find these teachings and encouragement in Jesus name.

This is the introduction to the set of tapes entitled *"Judgement in this life"* incorporated into the suite of tapes, *"God's Plan for Healing Marriage in the Seventh Millennium."* This set of tapes were recorded by this ministry about a year ago as an initial set of 10 tapes with two additional tapes added recently derived from the developments at the Foundation for Living ministry. The basic content of the set of tapes is a comprehensive analysis of the scriptural basis whereby Satan gains footholds to attack us in this life and a catalogue of aspects which open the door for Satan to gain legal right in the judgement hall of God to kill, steal, and destroy in our lives in the process of accusing the brethren and executing judgement against us for our sin. It is incorporated into this suite of tapes at this point in order to lay a solid foundation for the teachings on marriage to assist listeners to understand how absolutely essential it is for a Christian, to walk in holiness and sanctification, to walk in quick repentance, to walk in the love of God and put the word of God first and the commandments of God first in one's life in order to minimise the extent to which Satan is able to use legal means to attack us. With that background and with the revelation of the coming tribulation out of the first set of tapes, it is my hope that you will be in a place having listened to this series on judgement to have a good understanding of how the devil attacks you and then as you walk down the road of coming to greater and greater revelation in the area of marriage seeing your marriage healed, you will be able to better understand what the devil is doing to you, understanding that since marriage is such a fundamentally important truth and that Satan has fought so hard for so long to steal marriage the way God intended it to be, he is not going to give up on your marriage without a fight. He is going to use whatever legal means he can to distract you from putting these teachings into effect and from coming into a place where there really is Heaven on Earth in your marriage, particularly if he has had you in a situation where your marriage has been less than fulfilling, where there has perhaps been talk of divorce or where there has been regular argument, etc.

Satan knows that as you start walking through these teachings, his hold on your life is going to be substantially diminished and therefore he is likely to pull out all the stops to seek to prevent that from

happening. With these teachings behind you and dealing with obvious sin that the Holy Spirit reveals to you as you listen to this series of tapes, I truly believe that the Lord will enable you to stand strong with the onslaught that Satan will bring against you and equally as we move into great tribulation, the sin in our lives is the basis whereby Satan is going to obtain judgement against us and kill, steal, destroy, persecute, do whatever he can find to do against those who truly are committed to serving the Lord God. So with that background, I encourage you to listen to the series on judgement before moving into the series on marriage purely in order to lay a solid foundation. This is not to say that you could not start listening to the series on marriage concurrently with or before the series on judgement, but I was very impressed with the Lord this morning as I was finalising this pack of teaching tapes that it should be in this sequence that people should lay a foundation of a revelation of the coming tribulation and the tribulation that is at hand, a revelation of judgement, which is the mechanism through which Satan brings tribulation and then from there going in to dealing with the issues of marriage, understanding the full significance and the impact of adopting scriptural practices in the area of marriage and other areas of our lives. So with that in mind, I pray that you will be blessed and benefitted from what is contained in this particular subset of the teaching tapes. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, King of Kings, and Lord of Lords. Amen.

This is the introduction to Volume 1 of the marriage teachings in the suite of tapes entitled *"God's Plan for Healing Marriage in the Seventh Millennium."* Volume 1 of the three volume set on marriage is entitled *"The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery"* and it provides a 20-teaching or 20-tape set of a comprehensive analysis of what the scriptures have to say about the subjects relating to marriage, divorce, adultery and related topics. In total this suite provides a solid and robust and comprehensive scriptural basis for understanding what the Word of God truly says about marriage for understanding how God intended marriage to be, understanding how God intended marriage to work. It provides a robust statement that God created marriage to work between any man and any woman provided they are both believers. It provides a basis for understanding the power and the potential of marriage as God created it to be. It provides the foundation which the rest of this teaching is built up.

Volume 2 in the marriage suite which is entitled *"Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage"* provides a whole lot of scriptural and spiritual principles with regard to bringing about the necessary change to experience Heaven on Earth in your marriage to have your marriage healed no matter what the state of that marriage may be. Volume 3 in this series entitled *"Practical Application of Marriage Teachings"* goes into a variety of specific aspects required to put these teachings into practice in the lives of believers no matter what the background from which their lives and their marriages have come. This set of tapes as I says is a comprehensive scriptural, if you like, doctrinal analysis of what the Word of God really says. I need to stress to you, it contains much that you are going to find controversial, much that is going to challenge you. It has taken me many years to get to a place where I can come before you confidently and say that this is what the Word of God says. I come to you in the capacity of an apostle and prophet of God and I appeal to you to listen carefully and attentively to what is contained in these tapes, the bulk of the message as given by the Spirit of God, recognising our humanity and our frailty and our propensity to miss it from time to time. There may be the odd bits of leaven and I ask you to forgive me for that, but at the same time, I declare before the Throne of God right now that the bulk of what is contained in these teachings, everything that is of substance has been subject to the most careful and rigorous scrutiny, measurement against the Word of God, debate and argument with the Spirit of God, asking for confirmation and confirmation until I can come before you to say and serve the Lord, these are the factors that are giving rise to the 70% odd failure rate of marriages in the

Christian church today that are giving rise to fornication and adultery on a global scale of the magnitude that is beyond comprehension as one comes to grasp it and understand it.

Therefore I urge you to listen attentively to what the Spirit of God is saying through these tapes. At the same time, I must say to you, please, please, please follow the sequence of these tapes. Start at the beginning and go on to the end. Each tape builds on the foundation of the first tape, builds on the Word of God in such a way that God willing, you will be able that each step of the way to accept the truths that are revealed as the teachings unfold. The teachings comprise a suite of iterative approaches to the truths which God is revealing. I had not seen the picture in the light that it is presented in these teachings. Before I did the teachings, they unfolded literally at the leading of the Holy Spirit and the Spirit of God on a daily basis over a period of about three months. When I started these tapes and recorded the first one, I expected to record six tapes, that grew to 10 tapes, it grew to 20 tapes, it grew to 43 tapes, it grew to 55 tapes, and then it ended up with the supplementation of the various other tapes which make up the series at about 94-95 tapes. And only as this thing came to completion this very morning of the day that I am recoding this message on the 27th of December, the year 2000, did I see fully how the Lord had pulled all of this together to provide a set of tapes which I have complete certainty provide the answer to just about anything that can be wrong with just about any marriage in the Christian faith.

This set of tapes, even though it is a large number represents God's plan for healing your marriage and making your marriage Heaven on Earth if you will choose to step out in faith, listen to these tapes diligently and systematically and put into practice what is contained in them. You will get your miracle. But recognise that it has taken a long time for you to learn all the stuff that you have learnt that has brought you to a place where your marriage is not necessarily the way God intended it to be, it is going to take some time and some effort to get it to the place where God did intend it to be.

With that I pray that you will be blessed and that you will find these tapes accomplish that which God has appointed for your life at this time, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. Amen.

This is the introduction to Volume 2 of the marriage tapes in the suite of tapes *"God's Plan for Healing of Marriage in the Seventh Millennium."* The second volume of marriage teachings concerned with *"Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage."* This set of teachings builds on the first set of marriage teachings and I cannot stress strongly enough how important it is for you first of all to listen to the tapes in Volume 1 of the Marriage Series and I would encourage you to have made sure that you listen to the tapes on the Coming Tribulation and the tapes on Judgement in this Life before you do that. Please in going through Volume 2 work systematically, start at the beginning and go on till you get to the end. As with the previous series, you will find much that is controversial and much which if you do not approach this in the order that the Spirit of God gave it to me is likely to offend you. As I mentioned before, the whole process that God has used in this is iteratively dealing and digging deeper and deeper into the truths of His word, into the practical application of those truths, and in the process, revealing more and more which has the potential to offend if you do not have the right foundation. So please walk the journey that the Lord has set out in the series of tapes.

Volume 2 of the tapes that we are dealing with now comprises 23 teachings. It includes teachings from a variety of different ministries on issues such as faithfulness, the blood covenant, disciplining of flesh, etc., and that was a combination of tapes which the Lord just led me to pull together as the teachings were unfolding to assist to paint a wonderful tapestry of the beauty of what marriage was intended to be, the vision that God has for marriage and that He wants us to have for marriage and how to get there. The spiritual principles and spiritual disciplines and scriptural principles that God has provided

for us to get our marriages healed and to come to a place of Heaven on Earth in marriage, to deal with the issues of change. This set of tapes also draws on my experience as a management consultant in the areas of bringing about organisational change and some lessons and principles associated with that and it draws on my entire life experience, things that God has been dealing with me on for a number of years and as with the first series, I say to you with firm conviction, all the fundamental principles that are contained in these teachings, God has been revealing to me over a number of years to finer points of how it all fits together, the finer points of how it is applied and practised have only been revealed to me as I have been putting the tapes together but the underlying core scriptural principles or things that I have been wrestling with and debating with God for a number of years and I declare again as with the first volume, this is given by the Spirit of God, please receive it as that, in Jesus name. Amen.

---

## Section 1 : The Coming Tribulation

**James Robertson**

**1 October 2000 – 31 December 2000**

### Introduction

This is the introduction to the series of tapes, from Foundation for living Christian Fellowship, entitled The Coming Tribulation. The series of teachings contained in the set, a period of time from the 1st October 2000 to the 31st December 2000, in terms of which God progressively revealed to the congregation the situation in the world today, made a very definite call for holiness and sanctification, and through the prophetic word in particular, made it very clear to us that the time of tribulation was at hand. Judgment was to be expected and we should prepare our hearts for that judgment and seek God as never before. It was also established that there were strong indications to believe that the mark of the beast was a spiritual, rather than a natural mark. This series is included at the beginning of the series, God's plan for healing marriage in the seventh millennium, in order to provide a more detailed spiritual context for this entire set of teachings, as something which God has provided to bring the Bride of Christ to a place of holiness and sanctification, for the return of the Bridegroom. I pray that you will find these teachings and encouragement in Jesus' name.

### 01 01 Job and Serving God

**Neil Dreyer**

Job learned something that was vital. He learned something about God that he didn't know before. He saw God as he'd never seen the Lord before in his life and that's vital. God had to deal with that man in order to show him what he needed. So often when we get converted, we've got the answers, we know it all and we go forward in our own wisdom, and in our own strength and God keeps pulling back and pulling back and pulling back, until you learn something. *That it's not by might, nor by power, but by my Spirit, sayeth the Lord, but that's the way that it works and there is no other.* And you get brought to the end of the tether and you understand that I have a misconception over time. Job was in that category.

### Spiritual eyes

Listen to what he has to say in Job 42:1-6. *"Then Job said to the Lord, I know that You can do all things and that no thought or purpose of Yours can be restrained or thwarted. You said to me, who is this that darkens and obscures counsel by words without knowledge. Therefore, I now see I have rashly uttered what I did not understand, things too wonderful for me. I did not know. I had virtually said to You what You've said to me. Here I beseech You and I will speak. I will demand of You and You declared to me,*

*I've heard of You only by the hearing of the ear, but now my spiritual eye sees You. Therefore, I loathe my words and abhor myself and repent in dust and in ashes."*

I have heard of You only by the hearing of the ear, but now my spiritual eyes see You, and what I see changes everything that I've ever thought and everything that I've ever desired, and everything that's burned within my heart has been changed, because now I see God. Before I saw him other than myself, I saw a lot of the things that I wanted, and the goals that I had, and the wisdom that I had, but now Lord, I understand that all these things were as nothing. They are as dust. Only what is of God abides and endures. It is only what is of God that is worthwhile. We are passing through this world but once, we will not pass again. Only what's done in Christ shall last. That's the only work that abides and this man had to realize that he had to understand that my own understanding of the whole situation was all topsy turvy, that what I needed from the beginning was a word from God. What I needed was the wisdom of the Lord to speak into my situation so that I would know what I should be doing to achieve the greatest and the highest and the most. That's what God wants for your life and for mine. Can you say Amen to that. God wants the highest and the best for your life and mine and He aims at it all times, and then we come with our words.

And this man, Job had a total misconception. He had a failure to understand. He listened to the reasons of man. He asked questions why. It was the wisdom of this world that came over his lips, not the wisdom of God, not by inspiration of the Spirit. It arose out of his agony, it arose out of his difficulties, out of his problems, out of his own troubled thinking. These were the questions that he was asking and all the time God was sublimely going right over the top and God knew exactly where He was going and what He was about and what He wanted to achieve in this man's life. It is a wonderful thing to know that God has got a purpose for my life. Can you say Amen to that? It is a wonderful thing for you to know that God has got a purpose for your life, that it didn't happen by accident, that when He called you that day, and you heard His voice, God had a purpose, that's why He called.

And that wasn't the end of the calling. That was just the beginning, and He's leading on beyond that point so that you might grow up into Him in all things and that you might know the joy that is of the Lord. Job heard God's voice and men from time immemorial have heard the voice of God, and it was when men have heard, that things have begun to happen, when men have understood what it is, the purpose of God is, that's the time when things began to happen. And even the supernatural came in through the front door and then handled power in things that they would have dreamed of before, because they understood what God was saying. It is the universal message. I want to tell you, there is no other, it's here, it's all here. There are many religions, but there is only one God sir, and there's only one universal message and it is this. - that Jesus Christ died for sinners, that Jesus Christ came into the world to bless you and to me, to give us eternal life and to give us power over sin and over the devil.

### **Universal message of God**

That's why Jesus came into the world. It is the universal message of God. There is no other. Job thought he knew. He was confident in what he thought, very confident. We were at Paddy Bosman's house yesterday. We were having a discussion, and he was saying that there was a young man that he knew years ago who was in the same line of business that he was in, and he witnessed to this young man and he took exception to it, that Paddy should have the trust to come and speak to him about Jesus Christ. And he says, the man came to my house. I invited him in. He refused to come in and he began to curse God like I'd never heard anybody cursing God before. He stood on my lower lawn and he belittled God and abraded God and made Him little and as if He was of no consequence. He had his



day and he said a week later, I read his death notice in the newspaper and it was all over, there was nothing left.

All the words were just air because he'd gone on the wrong side of truth. He got on the wrong side of what God wanted and he began to do and use the wisdom of this world. And this wisdom of this world leads away from God, it doesn't lead to Him and His purposes in the fulfillment of His will. It is not of God, it is of this world. And as I say, it passes away and goes its own way. This is knowledge but knowledge of time. Yet the sum total of the wise men of our day, turn their backs on God and they become so wise that they don't need God anymore. He is out of the picture.

Yuri Gagarin went into outer space. He was the first man that ever did it. When he arrived back on earth planet, he said, I looked for God everywhere and I could not see Him and he didn't know God was all around in nature, didn't cease out there in space and Creation, didn't cease as far as he went. Creation was there before his eyes. The handy work of God was everywhere, but he could not see, he could not understand. Our sister (Inaudible 00:07:17) has just come back from Poland. She phoned me and she said that I was going to a Pentecostal Church there and then she said something that staggered me. She said, the Polish government does not allow the Church to preach the second coming of Christ. They are not allowed to teach it, it's out of bounds and they may not say that it is so. And yet it is one of the great facts that are coming our way. We see that that is coming. God is moving by His Spirit all over the face of the earth. Hallelujah, can you say Amen to that? God is moving. I want you to come with me to 1 Corinthians, chapter 2:1-2.

### **The value of Jesus**

Paul's speaking. He says, *"as for myself, brethren, when I came to you, I did not come proclaiming to you the testimony, evidence and mystery of the secret of God concerning what He has done through Christ for the salvation of men. In lofty words of eloquence or human philosophy and wisdom. I didn't go down that avenue because it's a dead end for I resolve to know nothing, to be acquainted with nothing, to make a display of the knowledge of nothing and to be conscious of nothing among you, except Jesus Christ, the Messiah and Him crucifying. And I passed into a state of weakness and was in fear and dread and great trembling after I'd come among you. And my language and my message were not set forth in persuasive, enticing and plausible words of wisdom, but they were in demonstration of the Holy Spirit and power that is a proof by the Spirit of the power of God operating on me and stirring in the minds of my hearers, the most holy emotions and thus persuading them.*

*So that your faith should not rest in the wisdom of men or human philosophy, but in the power of God. Yet when we were among the full grown, spiritually mature Christians who are ripe in understanding, we do impart a higher wisdom, that is the knowledge of the divine plan, previously hidden that it is indeed not a wisdom of this present age, nor of this world or the leaders and rulers of this age who are being brought to nothing and are doomed to pass away. But rather what we are setting forth is the wisdom of God once hidden from the human understanding and now revealed to us by God, that wisdom which God devised and decreed before the ages for our glorification, that is to lift us into the glory of His presence. Now listen, none of the rulers of this age or world perceived and recognized and understood this, for if they had they would never have crucified the Lord of Glory."*

They would have understood the value of Jesus Christ and the message that He was bringing. They would never have crucified Him. They would have Lorded him, they would have lifted Him up and glorified His name for who and what He is, for hear his wisdom. The Bible says the beginning of wisdom

is the fear of the Lord. That's the beginning. Why is that the wisdom of God? Because the wisdom of God teaches you fear, it teaches you respect, it teaches you that God is, and He cannot be trifled with.

I'm not dealing with the man down the road when I'm dealing with God. I'm not comparing myself with my neighbor. I'm dealing with Jesus, the Christ, the Son of the living God, and this is the standard of the Lord, and when any human being who is passing through this world and understands that 70 years of my allotted life span, and if by reason of strength I reach eighty, I'm going to pass away. And the place where I stood will no longer be remembered, then wisdom says, *my God, where am I going? My God, what is there for me down the line? Is it oblivion I cease to exist?*

## **Resurrection**

The Bible says that Jesus Christ rose from the dead on the third day and became the first fruits of them that slept. God promises a resurrection to all men, some to damnation, some to everlasting life, but a resurrection all men will have. And I can't go into my grave and hide away from my sins there, but they will follow me. And God will deal with them and He will eventually judge them because they are offenses against the living God. I did not fear, and I went and did my thing and I kept on doing it as if there was no God, as if there were no comebacks, as if there were no price tags on what I was doing. And God knows there's nothing that you get in this world that is for nothing. There is a price tag on absolutely everything. You pay the full price. You don't take anything for nothing. God knows that, and God wants to work in your life and in my life, those works that abide, those things that are not troubled by the passage of time.

I place a deposit in the heavenlies. My treasure is not upon the earth. My treasure is in Heaven and neither moth nor rust can corrupt, and men cannot break through and steal, where nobody can take my credit away from me because God is the guardian of my credit, and He's got my account and He knows everything about Neil Dreyer. I remember when I was just a young man, full of myself, and I was arrogant without knowing the arrogance and the extent of the arrogance. I did not understand how far I was away from God, how far I was away from that which was right and that which was good and that which was noble and honorable.

I had no understanding of these things and then one night, God came into my life, came knocking on the door of my heart and He changed me in an instant of time, and I became a brand new creature in Christ. And suddenly I understood so many things like Job understood. I knew what was happening for the first time in my life. Up to that point of time I had the wisdom of this world and it led me astray. It led me into all kinds of experiences that were not good for me, and then suddenly I saw God, and seeing God I solved that and I understood that all of these things were empty. They were passing away as if they never were, and the things of God were the abiding things.

## **Paul the Apostle**

The Apostle Paul had only one message. He comes to the Areopagus, this place in Athens, place of learning, the center, where people are always asking questions and putting forth new theories. And here he comes along to speak to these people in the previous chapter. The Bible says that he gave the Word of God to the people. It was God's Word the man was speaking. And the wise men of this world heard of this man and they said, we would hear what this babbler has to say. This one that stacks together some thoughts of his own, we'll hear what he's got to say. And Paul's got to get up with the Areopagus and he's got to speak in the name of God. And he sets forth God and he says, when I passed by, I saw an altar to the unknown God, whom he therefore worshipped in ignorance, him

declare I unto you. And he began to speak one thing, and it was the resurrection of Jesus Christ. Jesus is alive. Jesus died and He rose again on the third day. This is my message, I know no other.

## **Wisdom**

In these days, I'm seeing a lot of wisdom. I'm seeing a lot of things coming from the United States of America and there are so many ideas, so many thoughts about the Gospel of Jesus Christ. You know, there's so much, I asked the question, where is the simplicity of the Gospel? Where's it gone to? What happened? People come along and they are so (inaudible 00:15:15), they are so clever. They were clever in Paul's day. They are clever in ours. This is the most knowledgeable generation of all time. We know more than any previous generation has ever known, and with all our knowledge we've turned our backs on God. The wise men of this world say you don't need Him, you have evolved from the apes, you didn't come from the Creation of God and you need not concern yourself about these things. I want to tell you, when people start talking like that, I have one answer that comes to my mind. What of Jesus Christ? What is everything that Jesus did? And He lived, and everything that He said, what about these things? Jesus is the authority, hear His wisdom, it is found in Him.

The Bible tells us that God will make foolishness the wisdom of men. That's coming. It's on the agenda. Let me tell you it's around the corner. When suddenly all of the things that men have built up will come to nothing. We have discovered the human genome and we can't see the handiwork of God. We don't know where He's at, we don't know how to hear His voice, we don't how to speak to Him generally. There is a need that is in our world of God that is tremendous. You've got to be blind not to know that we're tobogganing towards a tragedy. You've got to be blind not to understand that God and what He has said is coming to pass before your eyes. We need the Lord, we need His wisdom and the beginning of wisdom is the fear of the Lord.

The wisest thing that I've ever done in my life was when I got down on my knees, in the city of Pretoria, in the foyer and with all my heart I said, God forgive me, God, cleanse me from all my sin, give me another chance. Lord, tell me, teach me how to live my life differently, because the way that I'm living my life now, the way that I'm living this one is heading toward tragedy, I can see it. Scales were taken off my eyes and you know, I saw Neil Dreyer, and I saw my God and the comparison was tremendous. I was right out of my depth and I understood there's only One that can save me. My arrogance must go out through the door, my self-sufficiency must go out through the door. And with everything that I've got, I'm going to say God, I need You, I need Your touch upon my life, I need You to work within me the things that I cannot work myself. Can you say Amen to that?

## **Conclusion**

I want you to close your eyes. Jesus, Jesus. I've been preaching. It's not what I've been saying that's important, it's what the Spirit of God has been saying to you. What have you picked up here this morning? What did God zero in on as I was speaking to you? This is a matter between you and the Lord. It's personal, but I know that God's been speaking from the beginning of the service and God's been challenging us. Folks, we've got to take God into account. You've got to take into account what God wants. You've got to seek Him and find Him so that He might direct us as a body, and direct us as individuals and families, so that God's will can be done in our lives. This is what's needed.

I want you to reach out toward the Lord, as you're sitting there this morning, for your need. You know what God's called you to. Cry to God for that thing. Ask Him, Lord, work in my life these things, You know I can't do it for myself. You can't it for yourself. God can, only God can. Allow the Lord to work in your life. Allow Him to work this morning, right there as you're sitting in your seat and say, Lord,

here am I, You know me, You know the date of my birth, You know the time of my departure from this world, You know everything in between. Oh God, help me to fill in the things of the Lord, to do the most that I can. At least the furthestest that I can. Anoint me by Your Spirit, Lord. Use me for Your glory. Direct my steps oh God, because I dare not walk alone. I don't know the way. I don't have the answers. Only You do. Oh God, bless me.

### **Prayer**

Heavenly Father, we come to You in the lovely name of Jesus as a congregation this morning and we need you desperately, Lord. We need everything that You can give, and oh God, we know that they're on tap, that You said in Your word that You will anoint by Your Spirit, that You will show signs and wonders and mighty deeds of the Holy Ghost. You said that in Your Word, Heavenly Father, we come to You and we pray (inaudible 00:20:14) prayer here this morning. We are standing together, Lord. It's not just Pastor Dreyer, it's Pastor Dreyer and the people. We're asking, oh God, that You will work out Your will in this congregation, in these lives. Lord, do things that are all together different, we pray, and Lord, we'll give You the glory and the praise and the honor as we see people being changed, as we see people being reached, as we see the name of God being glorified in our suburbs. Lord, in Jesus name, pour out Your Spirit. We pray that no evil force will be able to stay it, oh God, but that it will flow like a mighty river, oh God, accomplishing Your will. Do it, Lord, we pray, and we'll give You the praise, the glory and the honor because You are our God. Thank you Lord, in Jesus name. Amen.

### **James Robertson**

The Lord told me, yesterday in fact, that He wanted this message taped and shared with others, so we've taped it and there will be copies available for those who want it. But He just gave me during Neil's message, just a passage of Scripture and it's important that you understand the context. Yesterday was the first day of the days of awe, the awesome days, and the ninth of October is the Day of Atonement. From that, we go onto the Feast of Tabernacles, and in God's calendar those are very, very important days in any year, but they are particularly important days right now. The days of awe are the days that you are given at the end of the year to get your life right with God. And that is the message that the Lord gave to Neil today. It's really important that you understand that. God is saying now, not tomorrow, not next week, is the time to get your life right with Him because He is about to do a great thing on the earth. Those of you who have got Bibles just turn with me to Matthew 24 please. And I'm sure you're familiar with Matthew 24. I'm not going to read the whole passage, but I want to take you to verse 9, and the next few verses.

*"Then they will deliver you up to tribulation and kill you, and you will be hated by all nations for My Name's sake, and then many will be offended, will betray one another and will hate one another. Then many false prophets will rise up and deceive many, and because lawlessness will abound, the love of many will grow cold, but he who endures to the end, shall be saved, and this Gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all nations, and then the end will come."*

And then the next passage goes on to speak of the abomination of desolation in the temple. There is much happening that you may or may not be aware of, there are threats of bomb attacks in Jerusalem right now, there are all sorts of things happening in the world that are not widely known, many of which speak to the fulfillment of those prophecies.

And while I would be the last to say with absolute certainty that we are now on the very threshold of the fulfillment with those prophecies, I truly believe with all my heart that we are indeed at that point. I believe that the message that Neil brought to us very profoundly confirms that that which was prayed

before the meeting, the words that were brought in the meeting before the message, confirmed that to me. And I really, really encourage everybody here. You're not here by accident. You're not here just because you kind of thought, well maybe I'd pitch up today. You are here because God has a very, very, very important message for you today. Today, there is a trite saying in the world, today's the first day of the rest of your life, but today is the first day of the rest of your service to Jesus Christ. Today is the day where you have an opportunity at the beginning of the days of all, leading up to the Day of Atonement in just over a week's time to make a decision?

Will you do what God has called you to do? There's not a person in this room who doesn't know what God has called them to do. The question is, are you in a place that I've just come out of? I have just come out of two, three-day fasts seeking to get my life right because I realized there was much that the Lord had called me to do, that I had been slack and not faithful in performing. The question of the Lord to each one of us today is, will you lay down your life, starting now and do all that He's called you to do no matter what the cost? Will you stop putting your job first, will you stop putting your interests first, will you stop putting your hobbies first, will you stop even putting your family first. Will you do what He's told you to do?

Some of you have been called to go and preach the Gospel elsewhere in the world. Some of you have been called to ministries that are so out of line with what our understanding can believe that God has called you to do, that you're scared to share it with anybody. But God is saying to you, today, will you lay down your life and go and do what I've called you to do because My ways are not your ways, My thoughts are not your thoughts, My thoughts are higher than your thoughts, beyond anything that you can ask or imagine, and I have a plan and a purpose for you. Will you do what I've called you to do today, says the Lord, because you are a vital part of the plan and I don't have time anymore to mess around with unfaithful people, or with disobedient people. I'm calling you today to do what I have for you to do. And that is the Word of the Lord for every one of us this morning.

So I would really encourage you, and with Neil's consent, that anybody who has received that message this morning, anybody who is convicted of that message, Neil, if you're in agreement, if they could perhaps just come forward and just pray for them. So if there is anybody who wants to just make a resolute, no turning back commitment to go and do whatever it is that right now you know is in your heart, that God has called you to do. Are you prepared to say, I have to resign my job tomorrow, I will resign my job tomorrow. If I have to step out in faith and do whatever I have to do in order to accomplish that which God has called me to do, no matter how big and how wide and how deep it seems to you, He will take you. But He is looking for people who, like Isaiah will say, here I am, send me. So if there's anybody here who wants to respond to that, please if you'd just come to the front and perhaps Neil, and perhaps myself can just pray briefly for you.

Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put out by the Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do, and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this has been a blessing to you, please assist us by passing it on. Thank you for your cooperation. God bless you.

If you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realize your need, may I pray for you that Jesus Christ may enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary? In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon your life, that your whole future

shall be coloured by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory, for we need every mouth, we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie Hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are each Sunday, 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact me, James Robertson, on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327, or cell phone 083 251 0644, or fax 011-791 5004 or email jamesr@infodoor.co.za, and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## 01 02 Job and Sanctify Yourself

**Neil Dreyer -- 8 October 2000**

I want you to come with me to the book of Hebrews 10th Chapter. Hebrews Chapter 10. I am reading from the 11th verse of Hebrews Chapter 10. We'll take it from the 8th verse. The Lord speaking, says, *"sacrifices and offerings, burnt offerings and sin offerings you do not desire, nor were you pleased with them, although the Lord required them to be made. Then He said, 'here am I, I've come to do Your will.' He sets aside the first to establish the second and by that will we've been made holy through the sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ once for all. Day after day every priest stands and performs his religious duties; again, and again, He offers the same sacrifices which can never take away sins, but when this priest had offered for all time one sacrifice for sins, He sat down at the right hand of God. Since that time, He waits for His enemies to be made His footstool because by one sacrifice He has made perfect forever those who are being made holy."*

Notice the language there. He says He has made perfect forever those who are being made holy. It's a continuous process that has been done. *"This is the Covenant I will make with them. After that time, says the Lord, I will put My laws in their hearts, and I will write them in their minds'. Then He adds, 'their sins and lawless acts I will remember no more,' and where these have been forgiven there is no longer any sacrifice for sin. Therefore, brothers, since we have confidence to enter into the most Holy Place by the blood of Jesus, by a new and a living way, opening up for us through the curtain that is His body. And since we have a great high Priest over the House of God, let us draw near to God with a sincere heart, in full assurance of faith having our hearts sprinkled to cleanse us from guilty conscience and having our bodies washed with pure water. Let us hold unswervingly to the hope we profess for He who promised is faithful. Let us consider how we may spur one another on towards love and good deeds. Let us not giving up meeting together as some are in the habit of doing, but let us encourage one another and all the more, as you see the day approaching. He says, if we deliberately keep on sinning after we've received the knowledge of the truth, no sacrifice for sins is left, only a fearful experience, expectation of judgment and a raging fire that will consume the enemies."*

In another translation, it says our Father God is a consuming fire. Then come to chapter 12. He says there, verse 18. *"You have not come to the mountain that can be touched and that is burning with fire to darkness, gloom and storm; to a trumpet blast or to such a voice speaking words that those who heard it begged that no further word be spoken to them, because they could not bear that was commanded, if even an animal touched the mountain it was stoned. The sight was so terrifying that Moses said, I am trembling with fear. But you have come to Mount Zion to the heavenly Jerusalem, the city of the living God. You've come to thousands upon thousands of Angels in joyful assembly, to the Church of the firstborn whose names are written in heaven. You've come to God, the judge of all men, to the spirits of righteous men made perfect, to Jesus, the mediator of the new Covenant and to the sprinkling of the blood that speaks better things than the blood of Abel. So, see to it that you do not refuse him who speaks. If they did not escape when they refused him who warned them on earth, how much less shall we, if we turn away from Him who warns us from Heaven? At that time His voice shook the earth, but now He has promised once more, I will shake not only the earth but also the heavens."* The words "once more" indicate the moving of what can be shaken, that is created things, so that what cannot be shaken may remain. *"Therefore, since we are receiving a Kingdom that cannot be shaken, let us be thankful and so worship God acceptably, with reverence and awful fear for our God is a consuming fire."*

Heavenly father, we worship You and magnify Your lovely name this morning for the fullness of Your work, for the fullness of Your provision, oh God. Heavenly Father, just as in the world, You established everything it was necessary for us to maintain, generation after generation so that it is self-contained. (Inaudible 00:05:19) and You made everything possible for the maintenance of spiritual life and that entered into Your presence, oh God, (inaudible 00:05:30)). We bless You, we magnify Your name. You left nothing undone, no stone unturned, every provision has been made long before we knew it was there You placed it there and You waited for us to discover, oh God, in Your presence, in Your mercy, we bless You that You've done that for us in (inaudible 00:05:49) through Jesus Christ, our Lord and nothing, nothing shall be able to be taken away from us for God guarantees it (inaudible 00:06:00). We ask, oh God that You will bless Your (inaudible 00:06:05) and that we might hear and that we might rejoice in You and magnify Your name. Thank You, Father, in that lovely name we ask it, praising You because You hear us in that name. Amen.

## **Two encounters**

We have just read about two encounters with the living God, two encounters that were terrifying to the people involved. We hear that the first account was taking place at Mount Sinai when the mountain shook and there was fire on the mountain, and the place trembled and the people cried out to God and said *"God, stop speaking to us because we can't bear the voice that we're hearing."* And I believe that Moses also cried out with the people. They were terrified at the presence of the living God. In God is Holy, in God is awesome, God is all powerful. He is bigger than our biggest big, and we must understand that. We are dealing with a living God, an almighty God. You're not dealing with a man down the road. We're dealing with God and with God (inaudible 00:07:08). And so, Moses and the people of Israel cried out and said, *"Please Lord, withhold Your hand because we can't bear the glory."*

And then we hear of another account that takes place after the resurrection of Jesus Christ and this takes place in the Heavens. This is not on the earth any longer, I want to tell you that the same awe and terror paves the way. Throughout the whole of the Bible there is active obedience toward the living God. This willingness to bow down to His Glory and to give Him all the honor and the praise that is due unto His name, so that we stand in awe of Him at all times. There is no familiarity with God in

the whole of the Bible. Whenever there was an epiphany, when God appeared on the earth, the people that saw Him trembled and were afraid, and some of them were sick for a period of time after having seen this majestic sight. And they walked away from it different people because they understood who they were dealing with. And many times, in the world there are people that have no inkling whatsoever who it is that they're dealing with, they don't understand Him, they've never seen Him, and so they have their own minds view of what God is. And it is a human view, and it is limited by the humanity of the people that are beholding Him.

### **God is big**

God is bigger than our biggest imagination. We can't understand it at all, and I'm so concerned nowadays at the familiarity that I'm seeing all around me towards God, even amongst the religious people, a familiarity so that we bring God to a position where He is equal with us, and we can speak to Him as we do to our friends around the corner. God cannot be trifled with. He is Almighty. The Bible tells us here that we must enter into His presence and we must do so with a pure heart, with a heart that's been cleansed by sprinkling. We must have a conscience that is purged before we enter into the presence of God. That is a prerequisite, because God cannot tolerate sin and sin cannot come close to God.

There are many people that ridicule God. There are many people who make God small in their times, in their talking and in their thinking, and they boast of great things, and this is very fearful ground. It is terrible ground to be on. It is dangerous territory, not only for the person who's talking that way about God, but terrible for the people who are hearing it as well, because they are impressed by it. It seems to be so strong and so powerful and the person seems to have such definite ideas that he must be a strong person, but I'll tell you this, who is it that runs when the Glory of God is revealed? Who is it when the Glory of God begins to praise forth, who will be the one that finds out and says mountains, cover us and hide us from Him that sits upon the Throne and His Glory? Who is it that runs?

I'll tell you, it will be the profane. It will be the people that have treated God lightly. You can only treat God Almighty lightly at a distance, if the distance is the distance of sin. It is sin that blinds the eyes of men to the Glory of God so they don't understand who it is that they're working with and who it is they're talking about, the language that they use you would think that God doesn't hear it, that there's no book that's recording every deed and every word that men are speaking. They think that they can say what they say with liberty, without any context, I can say what I like because I am so strong in my own ability, in my own thinking and in my own mind. I'm strong, I don't need God. Who is it that walks into a consuming fire? Who is it that walks into the Holiness of God Almighty? Who is it? There are many that will walk more quietly into Gods presence without bowing their heads. They are the ignorant ones. They are the fools that the Bible speaks about. They think that God is nothing. And they've got an idea that is wrong, an idea that is from the Devil, not from God. They don't understand that the Lord is greater than what they think, and they're not giving Him the honor that is due unto His name.

### **Come close to God**

When we come into His presence, we come with reverential fear. Fear is the birth place of faith, let me tell you that, the fire of God is the birth place of faith. It's when we come close to Him that we begin to see what He is, who He is and what He's capable of. In order for you to come close to God, out of the fire, and no man wants to come near to God because we don't want to be exposed by the presence of this Holy One. We don't want God to see deep into our hearts and what's going on in our



minds all the time. If God looks inside and He sees, and He beholds the sin, and He know that my sins have separated me from God, that's the thing that stands in the way, the only thing that is in the way of my sin, my pride, my arrogance, my belief in myself and not my belief in God. I need to come to the point where I am walking with Him on His terms, and He understands that I'm doing it from my heart, and He knows that it's real and it's sincere.

I must come before Him with a true heart, but He says, come to Me. It is necessary for me to come to the fire in order to be saved. I've got to be there. The fire must burn, the fire must reveal me for who I am in the sight of God, not in the sight of my neighbour, in the sight of God Almighty, who am I? What am I? Where am I going? What are my goals? What are my ambitions? What are the things that are the driving forces in my life? What are they? How can they have anything to do with God Almighty? How (inaudible 00:13:16) How much of God is there in my life? This is the question that we need to be settled in order for you to find out. I need you to come to the fire, and He says that it must be burned, (inaudible 00:13:33), He left a mark on me that I will remember until the day that I die. He taught me a lesson that I will never forget because I understood, suddenly I understood I am dealing with God here. I'm dealing with what He wants from my life and I understood that I was out of line, and that's a terrible realization.

You know the profane person that is mentioned in the Bible, he is evil. The Bible says that he sold his birth right for a paddle of porridge. It wasn't important. That's why he said it wasn't important, (inaudible 00:14:14). He didn't understand we need the might of Christ to keep us walking in the path that God wants us to go. We need the might of Christ and we need to renew it daily. We need to come before Him every day, bow down and say My Lord, what do you want? What is it in my life that You want to focus on? What do You want to do? What do You want to get rid of in my life? What do You want to do? I said to you on a previous occasion that there's one experience of being born-again, but there are many conversions and God leads you on in different paths so that you might grow.

## **Faith**

And Esau came to the time when what his (inaudible 00:14:53) was more important than what He asked him. And so many Christians out here, are not here, and they act here, and they put it here, but God wants it here and He wants it here, in the heart and in the mind. He wants us to walk with Him, according to His precepts, and according to His Commandments. He says, *I'll write them on their minds and in their hearts by My Spirit, I'll do that so that they can walk with Me and abide to the shadow of the Almighty.* The Bible says this, that if I have faith as a mustard seed, I'll be able to tell a mountain to move, and it will move. What will it be, my brother, when I enter into the (inaudible 00:15:34) of all because I have delighted in Christ and (inaudible 00:15:37) in the fullness of faith? What is the fullness of faith that God is speaking about? There are different kinds of faith, there is little faith, there is great faith, there is much faith, and there is no faith. All of these are things that happen within the hearts and the minds of the people.

Some come before God with no faith and nothing happens (inaudible 00:16:05). He's got to believe God and who God is. He must believe in the honesty and (inaudible 00:16:11). If God says that thing, that's what He means. That's the basis of our faith. If God says it, I believe it. That's what I am. There are people who come before God and great things have happened as a result, in the fullness of the assurance of faith where I am assured. You remember what Jesus said to His disciples. He was talking about the woman that gave birth to a child, that she had agony until the child was born, and when the child was born, she had much joy because the child was reborn to her. She doesn't forget the anguish. If God is (inaudible 00:16:50) Ask in My name, and it shall be given by My Father and He shall (inaudible

00:16:59) I'm making it possible for you, I am sitting by my Father at the right hand, the Majesty on high to fulfil what (inaudible 00:17:09) talks about, this fullness here, the Kingdom of Holiness of God (inaudible 00:17:13) - (00:17:25) And you can come before my Father and you can ask Him, and He will bless you and work within your life those things that are from above.

I think of the man Abraham, how that man was told by God to go in the country that he knew not and being obedient he went, not knowing, he didn't know (inaudible 00:17:47) -(00:17:53) that's the first time that I'm really believing, when I don't know anymore, when I can't believe the truth with my mind and I rely entirely on God, that's the first sign that I'm believing and that's why he came away from everything that he knew, into the area where he didn't know. He never saw it coming (inaudible 00:18:14)- (00:18:18) was going, and God saw the man (inaudible 00:18:20) - (00:18:26) see, and wherever you put the soles of your foot I'm going to give it to you. I'm going to reward you because you have full assurance of faith, you have believed Me, you trusted Me completely, and I say to you beloved (inaudible 00:18:41) - (00:18:57) that you might know this blessing that I'm offering, the world is (inaudible 00:19:05). The world needs it today. We don't need the ideas of men, we don't need the wisdom of men, I can tell you. We need the wisdom of God. We need all to move in the nation. We were talking in Cape Town yesterday morning and we were saying that there's such filth flowing into the world as never before, and I said (inaudible 00:19:26) that we allowed the sin to come into the world, is not the biggest sin. The biggest sin that there is, is that we condone it, (inaudible 00:19:38) - (00:19:45) We're doing the right thing for the first time. Beloved you've got to be mad to think what we are doing is right. (inaudible 00:19:53) - (00:20:09) but what people are doing.

Perilous signs shall come because men will be lovers of their own selves more than lovers of God and he gives you a list of things that are happening today all around us. You can hear it in the news, you can see it in the newspaper. It's happening and it's man made. It comes through man, by the devil, in opposition to the living God. Do we need the assurance, that full assurance of faith? We need it. (inaudible 00:20:34) You need it, I need it, the Church of God needs it. We need to step up to each other, not into the old, we've got to step over, we've got to breach this thing and we've got to step into the Holiest of all into what is our right, into what is our rightful claim, (inaudible 00:21:00). What do you think of yourself this morning? When we say, enter into the presence of God, how do we enter? Measuring with the fullness that a child has.

I remember my father died in his 80's. My mother died in her 60's. My Dad (Inaudible 00:21:23) - (00:21:36) And he said my son, I long for the day when you put your (inaudible 00:21:42) - (00:21:46) I want to invite you and when you come to God with the full assurance of a child, (inaudible 00:21:52) - (00:22:17) to be in a position where I can come before God and say Lord, I'm asking for this and I truly believe that I am going to get it because Jesus gave it to me. Can you say Amen to that? That's what God wants for you and that's what God wants for me. I must make a confession. I just borrowed somebody else's Bible here. I left the mic at home so we couldn't tape the sermon. I left my Bible at home so I can't preach. Anyway, praise the Lord.

## Prayer

Heavenly Father, we come to You in the lovely name of Jesus and we worship You. We bless Your lovely name, oh God, because You've got such things for us that eye has not seen, nor ear heard, nor have entered into the heart the things God had prepared for them, and lovingly called according to His purposes. I thank You Lord that You've done that, that You've made a way for us, oh God, to walk in, a way to walk in and experience the path with You, You've made it possible through Jesus Christ and we worship You, oh Lord. If this is what You want to give us, oh God, in Jesus name we need it.

Heavenly Father help us to take it in installments, everything that's there, every table is full. Father help us to help ourselves as we pray Lord in the fullness that you invest. We thank you Lord for the message You've given us. Repeat with me, and we're standing on the threshold of something much bigger that's coming, we've been hearing sounds of the (inaudible 00:24:00) - (00:24:14) and we understand the times are vitally important at this time. Guide us oh God, we pray, that we will reach as far as we can (inaudible 00:24:25) and do as much as we can do by Your grace oh God, (inaudible 00:24:31) - (00:24:40) ordinary people. (inaudible 00:24:43) - (00:24:54) that Jesus may be brought (inaudible 00:24:56) - (00:25:03) In Jesus name. Thank You, Lord. Amen.

On Wednesday there will be a sermon meeting here as usual. The one in (inaudible 00:25:40) Park, has moved to Sunday night. There'll be the dedication of the organ soon. Birthdays, the 9th. Is the 9th your age? Many happy returns of the day. May God bless you. We ask to pray for Eddie and Lienie. Lienie is a sick lady. Pray for Paddy. He has an aortic aneurism. Pray for Auntie Muriel, for sister Els, for Paul and our sister. The other couple that come here, their mother is not well. We are going to go see them after the service this morning. Pray for the Van Der Heevers. She has heart trouble. Pray for the coming dedication service that God will bless it and use it for His glory.

Next week, tea duty will be Mavis's team. You see the sign up there, Kerrin Sher. I've got stuff in the boot of my car, sister, that I want to give to you, and anything that you can bring along to assist, like toiletries, soap, tissues, that kind of thing, please do, they can use it. Okay, will you take the plant in for us. Praise the Lord.

### **James Robertson**

I just want to share something with you in the light of Neil's message. The Lord has taken me on a series of three days fasts, so I've been eating for seven days, fasting for three days, and I've just come off the third fast this morning. Then I fasted sleep as well last night. I got to bed at about 3-4 o'clock this morning. At 10 o'clock last night I was led to tune in to CNN. I hardly ever watch television. You may or may not have seen the papers. The Prime Minister of Israel has given the Palestinians until tomorrow to stop the hostilities otherwise he is cancelling all peace processes. At 2 o'clock this morning I tuned into CNN again. Moments before that, the United Nations security councilor passed a vote, fourteen in favor condemning Israel and United States had abstained, and it is very uncommon for the United States to abstain. You may not be aware of the heart of the issue. The heart of the issue is the Muslims have taken operation of the Temple Mount, massive mosques in the basis of Solomon's temple, and for the last two years they've been progressively preventing the Jews from coming to the temple. It has reached the point now where they are even seeking to prevent the Jews coming to the (inaudible 00:29:04).

So, what you read in the press about Ariel Sharon visiting the Temple Mount is a complete smokescreen of the enemy. What we're facing here is a situation where Satan has been seeking to deny the Jews access to the Temple. Again, you may not be aware, some years ago, a red heifer was born for the first time in something like two or three thousand years. So, for the first time it is actually possible for a Levite to be sanctified for temple service, because for something like two or three thousand years, there has not been a red heifer. You may also not be aware that after the Covenant had been found, all the temple literature had been found. God is moving in this situation, and the Jews are looking for the return of the Messiah imminently, and they're looking for the signs for the reconstruction of the temple.

So, you have a massive conflict here in the spiritual realm that the Jews have been standing for all these thousands of years, for the reconstruction of the temple, on the Temple Mount. And right now, where they see the fulfillment of that, they see the red heifer, they see other things coming to pass, they see the signs of the times Neil was referring to. And suddenly it seems to be slipping out of their grasp. There are now five mosques apparently on the Temple Mount, and the Jews have been virtually prevented from accessing it. I believe in my spirit that there is every reason - and I brought through some documents - I think I actually put them in Neil's car, there are a number of prophecies which suggest that the war of God would start on the 28th and the 29th of September. I think I shared that with you last week. The hostilities began at that date. I think there's strong reason for us to believe that all-out war is going to break out in Israel tomorrow. There is a very profound reason for it to be tomorrow because tomorrow is the Day of Atonement, and that is a very significant day in God's calendar. It ties in again with what Neil is saying, we are at the very brink of judgment. I would hesitate to say with certainty that we are absolutely at the doors of the tribulation, but it does seem that way to me. I was on the internet last night, just looking at what various people are saying, and there is a broad consensus that around about the next couple of weeks, something dramatic is foretold by Scripture.

There are different opinions. Some people are looking to the rapture, some people are looking to the tribulation, some people are looking to the war of God, some people are looking at other things but everybody, virtually without exception, is looking to something to happen in the next couple of weeks. The great day of the feast of Tabernacles is the 24th of October. That is another very significant day in God's calendar. So, I would really urge everybody here today, Neil's message is a message of great importance today. It's a message which deals with what God requires of us. We can no longer play games with God, we can no longer pursue our idle interpretations of the Word of God and twist the Word of God as I've seen in so many of these things, to try and make the Word of God say what we want it to say or what we don't want it to say. But I would counsel everybody here, be prepared for what looks to me like all out warfare.

Last night they were deploying tanks throughout Israel, in areas in Jerusalem where there haven't been tanks in something like 12 years. They airlifted troops onto the Lebanese border. The Israeli troops were taken hostage yesterday. So, President Bill Clinton cancelled all his appointments last night in order to devote all his attention to it. The banner on CNN is 'crisis in the Middle East'. I believe there are strong reasons that if it is not tomorrow, within days, but I believe there are strong reasons to believe tomorrow we will see a declaration of war. I believe we will see that flare up into quite possibly the third world war. But whatever it is, it will be massive conflict and recognize also that there is turmoil in Yugoslavia at the moment.

Yugoslavia is part of the heritage of Gog and Magog. Gog and Magog are two of the descendants of Noah who moved North into Russia, Yugoslavia and that area. So, it is no coincidence that what is happening in Russia right now. So, whatever happens, and it's not possible for us to know precisely what's going to happen, but I think we must expect great turmoil and with that, we must expect the other side of what Neil was talking about. We are going to see great judgment around the world for the flippant and presumptuous manner in which many, many people in the Body of Christ have treated God. I really believe that the cup is about to overflow, and everybody here should really be searching their hearts. There is nothing more important to date. As of this moment at 30 minutes past 10, on the 8th of October, year 2000, there is nothing more important than getting your life right with God, getting as close to God as you possibly can, because if you want to walk through the furnace the way Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego did, if you want to go into the den with the lions and have the

mouths of the lions stopped up by the Angels, you had better be in right standing with God, and you had better be in the place that Neil was talking about. If you are being trite and flippant about your relationship with God, you better believe you're not going to stand in the judgment which is (inaudible 00:34:57).

The Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put up by the Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing to you please assist us by passing it on. We thank you for your cooperation. God bless you. If you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realize your need may I pray for you that Jesus Christ may enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon your life, that your whole future shall be coloured by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory, for we need every mouth, and we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact me, James Robertson on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327 or cell phone 083 251 0644 or fax 011 791 5004 or email jamesr@infodoor.co.za and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## **01 03 Things that need to be dealt with in the Earth**

### ***Neil Dreyer***

The things that need to be dealt with in the earth. It says here, "Romans Chapter 1, verse 28, *"And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a debased mind to do those things which are not fitting, being filled with all unrighteousness, sexual immorality, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness, full of envy, murder, strife, deceit, evil mindedness, whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, violent, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to Seraphs, undiscerning, untrustworthy, unloving, unforgiving, unmerciful, who knowing the righteous judgment of God that those who practice such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but also approve of those who practice them."* My word, what a list. What a list of things that destroy and break down, that hurt, that have sharp edges. What a list of things, and every one of them comes into the world through men, through people like you and me. What a tremendous state of affairs. If a Holy

God should allow this to continue without rebate, without any turning aside on it, what tremendous things would result to this world? What monstrosities would we create? What terrible things?

### **Destroying our beautiful world**

I said to you last week when I spoke to you, that God doesn't have to lift a finger to destroy the world, all he need do is leave it to man. If he left it to men, they'd do the job all by themselves. We are busy doing it. We're destroying this beautiful world on which we're living, and greed is the master of the world. People want more and more and more, and the world cannot sustain it. The world cannot give what men are demanding. The world is not big enough. It's become too small to meet the rapacious needs of men, and too small to accommodate us. We've become too important in our own thinking, because we've left God out of it. It has been said that if man neglects God, it's not long before he begins to play God, and we're doing it. Come again with me to 2 Peter 3 and 3-13. Here Paul is writing to Timothy and he says, *"knowing this first, that scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts."* I believe that you've got to be blind if you don't know that we are tobogganing toward disaster. You've got to be blind if you see around you the signs of the times. You've got to be totally blind. We're heading for the biggest struggle the world has ever faced. God warned us. God told us. He said, if sin prevails upon the earth, this is going to be the result, the soul of that sin shall die. It will come to an end.

And here God is saying, these people are doing these things, they mock. It says, *"knowing this first. the scoffers will come in the last days, walking according to their own lusts, and saying where is the promise of His coming, but since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of Creation. So, this way, they willingly forget that by the Word of God, the Heavens were of old and the Earth standing out of the water and in the water by which the world that then existed, perished, being flooded with water, but the Heavens and the Earth which now exist are kept in store by the same word, reserved for fire until the day of judgment and tradition of ungodly men. But Beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord, one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years is one day. The Lord is not slack concerning His promise as some count slackness, but He's long suffering towards us, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance. But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night, in which the heavens will pass away with a great noise and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, both the Earth and the works that are therein will be burned up. Therefore, since all these things will be dissolved, what manner of persons ought you to be in holy conduct and godliness?"*

This is the other side of the coin. Looking for and hastening the coming of the day of God because of which the Heavens will be dissolved being on fire, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat. Nevertheless, we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth in which righteousness dwells. Therefore beloved, looking forward to these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace without spot and blameless, and account that the long suffering of the Lord is salvation. That's also our beloved, Paul, who, according to the wisdom given to him, has written. They say, mocking me, where is the promise of His coming? This is the most gigantic event in world history. It is paralleled only by the first advent of Jesus Christ. It is the most important thing that's facing us right now. Jesus Christ is coming back again.

He asked the question, when I return, will I find the faith in the Earth? Will I find faithful people that are worshipping Me, because of all the things that are coming upon the Earth, all the temptations, all the trials, all the difficulties, because of all these things, who will be serving Me in the end? For what He says, he that endureth unto the end, the same shall be saved. These are the things that are facing

us right now, beloved, and we need to understand where we stand. We need to understand where we stand. Jesus, in Matthew 24, deals with this period of time very dramatically. He has tremendous things to say to this generation, to you sitting in your seat here this morning. Jesus has a message for you, for these times in which you are. What you should be doing and what you should not be doing are recorded there for your benefit and for mine. So, I want you to come with me to Matthew 24, if you will right now.

## End Times

Matthew 24, speaking of end times, *"Blessed be the name of the Lord which made the Heavens and the Earth, and He's well able to keep them from total annihilation."* He's able to do it, He's got the power. Can you imagine what power will be unleashed when the elements begin to melt with a fervent heat, and the Heavens roll up like a scroll, and things begin to dissolve all around you? Can you imagine what power there is that will have to bring that pass. And beloved, that's the power of Almighty God. It's the power of God that can go into reverse. It's the same power that can heal, it's the same power that can give life where death is reigning. It's the same power, and God wants us to understand it. He's saying to you and to me this morning, I've got the power. Jesus, in all power in Heaven and Earth has given unto me, and because that is in my hands, I command you to go in My name and make disciples of all nations. Go and work on My behalf. Put aside the other things that hinder, the things that get in the way, set your goals, and achieve them by the grace of God. Do it God's way, because the power is there, it's there.

To many of us it's latent, it's hanging in the air over our heads, and God is saying, where are the people that are asking for it? Where are the people that are believing for it? For there were great forces unleashed in the Earth and there were great powers that are there from God to oppose them. Can you say Amen to that. God wants us to oppose everything that the devil is doing, and if the devil is mighty, our God is mightier. He's more powerful by far in anything that the devil can do. Jesus speaks in Matthew 24, they come to Him, *"His disciples come to Him."* It says, *"Jesus went out and departed from the temple and His disciples came to Him to show Him the buildings of the temple. Jesus said to them, 'Do you not see all these things? Assuredly, I say unto you, that not one stone will be left upon another that shall not be thrown down.' And as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately,"* understand that. *"They came to Him privately, saying, tell us."* Jesus speaks in Matthew 24, almost entirely to believers. *"Now, He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately saying, tell us, three things. When will these things be? The throwing down to the temple, and what will be the sign of Your coming, the second thing, and the end of the age."* Three things. That's what Jesus Christ is answering in Matthew 24. So, they say, tell us, we want to know. He's not talking to the world here, He's talking to the disciples. He's talking to you and to me. And so, they say, *"tell us, when shall these things be? What shall be the sign of Your coming at the end of the age?"*

Only Matthew mentions this, the end of the age. The others don't, other gospels, that is. This was a private discussion between believers, the leader speaking to His disciples in which He follows and giving them instructions, believers only. And He says this, He says His disciples came to him. Matthew 24, from the world point of view, is not discussed. There are only a few verses that Jesus gives to the worldview. He's giving it from the Christian's point of view, the Christian's perspective. This can be seen as I've said from the language. In verse 4, he says, *"Take heed that no one deceives you, My believers."* Verse 5, *"And you shall hear of wars, and rumors of wars. See that you are not troubled. Nation shall rise against nation, kingdom against kingdom. There'll be famines and pestilences and there will be earthquakes in diverse places. These things are all happening around you right now."*

*You're in the midst of them. It's not something that you have to look forward to, it's happening every single day."*

We know that we've got a crisis on our hands in the Middle East. This is predicted. The Middle East will be the flash point for the last World war, the Armageddon war, the consummation of the tribulation, as I see it. That's going to come. And things are moving into gear to bring them to pass, and God is orchestrating it. God says, I'm going to do it because I'm going to have the final say in the world, I'm going to be the one that says the last word. So, in verse 9, he says, *"Then they will deliver you to tribulation and will kill you, and you will be hated by all nations for My name's sake."* In the 10th verse, He says, *"Many will be offended."* That's believers. Many believers will be offended because iniquity shall abound, and it says they shall betray one another. In verse 12, He says, *"Because lawlessness will abound, the love of many,"* that is Christian, *"the love of many for God, will grow cold."*

These are all signs of what's going to happen. Tell me something. Do you think that Christianity is flourishing in the world? Or do you believe that Christianity is growing cold? Do you believe that there are many that were serving God at one time that are not serving Him today? If you look at statistics about Church attendance in America and in England, you'll find that there's been a dramatic drop, tremendously. People have turned aside from the faith. That doesn't mean to say that God's not working and bringing others in, but I'm telling you that that's happened. In verse 13, He says, *"but he, that endures to the end, shall be saved."* And the only end that is mentioned in Matthew, is the end of the age. And it says he that endures to the end, that is the end of the age, he shall be saved. That one shall be secure in the hands of God. Verse 14, *"And this Gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all nations, and then the end will come. After this has been done, after the Gospel has been preached, the end will come."*

Verse 21, *"For then, there will be great tribulation such as was not since the beginning of the world, until this time, nor ever shall be."* Verse 27 says, *"Unless those days are shortened, no flesh will be saved, believers and unbelievers alike. And for the elect sake, those days shall be shortened, the tribulation will reach such heights as to threaten all life on earth, animal or otherwise, so that no flesh will be able to survive."* Beloved, what we're doing to our world is leading there. The ozone layer has opened wider now than it has ever done before. People are being warned to stay out of the sun because this causes cancer. And the ozone layer is growing. We've got an ice cap melt that's going on right now and this is causing floods in the world. We've got things happening today in the cosmic region that are terrible. People are being faced with tremendous things. People, there is trouble everywhere. There are many Christians that are paying for the Christianity right now with their lives. Many of them. It's happening, and we need to understand that these are all the signs of the times that we're living in. And unless those days be shortened, no flesh should be saved.

Verse 23, *"Then if anyone says to you, here is Christ, or there is Christ, do not believe it."* Verse 26 says this, *"If they say, look, He's in the desert, do not go out or look where He is in the inner chambers, do not believe it, for as the lightning comes from the eastern fascist through the west, so also shall the coming of the Son of Man be."* That is tremendously spectacular. If you stand outside, particularly on an evening and watch the lightning flash from the east to the west, let me tell you something, that's spectacular. Jesus says, that's how I'm going to be coming. Every eye shall see Me, it will be spectacular, it will be a tremendous occurrence that's going to take place, not just the suddenness beloved, that He's talking of here, but the visual is strongly stated, so that the secret aspect is refuted. You can't do something like that in a hole in the corner.



## The coming of Jesus Christ

The only time in Matthew 24 that Jesus addresses the world point of view is found in 37 to 40. *"But as the days of Noah were, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be, for as the days before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving marriage, until the flood came and took them all away, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be."* That history is going to repeat itself again. There's going to be a generation that will not listen. They will not hear anything of the Gospel. Noah preached the Word. They didn't listen to the Word. They stood aside from the Word. They wouldn't have the Word. Do you understand? And that's the reason why they were taken by surprise, because they were not ready, they didn't listen to the Word of God. We've got to prepare ourselves for the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ.

What is being emphasized here is the suddenness with which destruction comes upon all who were not prepared, who knew not, not the suddenness with which the believers are saying. The evil were removed, for when the flood was over, the believers were the only ones that were left. They had gone through the flood, they were not taken out of it, but were taken safely through it. So, to emphasize the suddenness of this destruction, Jesus said in verse 40, *"Them too will be in the field, the one will be taken, the other, left. Two women will be grinding at the mill, one will be taken and the other, left."* Verse 42 says, *"Watch therefore, for you do not know when the Lord cometh."* Luke 31 and 34 says, *"And take heed to yourselves, that your heart's been not weighted down with carousing, drunkenness, and the cares of this world and that day come up on you unexpectedly."* 40, *"Will come as a snare on all those who dwell on the face of the earth, wherefore, pray always that you may be worthy to escape these things that will come to pass and to stand before the Lord."* Mathew 24 and 12 says, *"And because lawlessness will abound, the love of many will wax cold."*

Their experience will test them. These people are going through fire, they're standing for Christ under tremendous pressure. And if you are going to stand with Christ, you're going to stand under tremendous pressure. You're going to know forces coming against you that are tremendous. Satan knows that his time is short, and he wants to destroy everything that pertains to Jesus Christ. So, we must stand. The way of escape is the Rapture. Why does Jesus instruct believers on how to go through the tribulation if they are not going to be part of the tribulation? He speaks to them, and tells them over and over again, these things are going to happen to you. So, beloved, I don't believe that we are going to be taken out of it, I believe that we're going to have to go through it. Revelations 7, 13 to 14 says, *"Then one of the elders answered to me, 'who were these arrayed in white robes and where did they come from?'" And he said to him, "sir, they knowest." So, he said to me, these are the ones who come out of the great tribulation."* That's according to the new King James version, *"and have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the lamb."*

Verse 17 says, *"For the Lord, who is in the midst of those will shepherd them and lead them to living fountains of water, and God will wipe away every tear from their eyes, tears caused by suffering, abuse, and even death by persecution."* That's what Jesus Christ is going to do. The final salvation. You see, the Bible says that we're not going to escape trouble, we're going to go through it, and that's going to be the final test of our Christian faith. Where do we stand? Do we really love Jesus Christ? It says in Matthew 24, 29 and 31, listen to this, *"Immediately after the tribulation of those days, the sun will be darkened and the moon will not give its light, and the stars will fall from Heaven, and the powers of Heaven will be shaken."* That's the last stages of the tribulation. *"Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in Heaven, and then all the tribes of the Earth will mourn, all unbelievers. They will see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of Heaven, and with power and great glory, and He will send His Angels*

*with a great sound of the trumpet and they will gather these elect from the four wings of Heaven to the other."*

But the message of Matthew 24 is given unto us, and we might go according to it. Praise the name of the Lord. Jesus Christ is going to come to restore everything upon the Earth. He is going to do it. That's within His power. Do you remember how, years ago, there was a man, Elijah, who was God's prophet? God's anointing was upon the man, and there was this Syrian King, who was opposing Israel, and every time he set a trap for the Israelite King, the Prophet told the King in his bedchamber what was being discussed in the other quarters. And the Syrian king came to the point where he was grieved and he said, "listen here, which of you counselors with whom I'm discussing keeps on telling the King of Israel the things that I'm discussing in secret?" And they said, "no, not one of us, there's nobody doing that, but he's got a prophet, he's got a man who hears from Heaven, a man who knows he's God, and everything that you say here, he just records it to his King." And the king said, "get that man at any price, I want him. And he sends an entire army to come and capture this man, Elijah.

And Elijah is in Dothan, and Dothan was to have been the end of the road. It was to have been the place where he would end it all. And so, they go to bed that night, and the next morning when they wake up, his servant looks out through the window and gets the shock of his life. He doesn't understand why it is, because how important is he really, because he sees all around, every window that he looks through, he sees glinting spears. There's a huge army on the mountains, all around. And the man is horrified. This is the end. He grabs his head and he says, "this is the end, there's nothing more that we can do. And I want to tell you on our own, there's nothing more that we can do, there's nothing that we've got that the world needs." Let me tell you, it's what we've got, that of Jesus Christ that the world needs, not what we've got. It's not your ability, it's your availability that God wants. That's the thing that counts. And this man comes to the point where he says, "what can we do, what shall we do with the words that he uses, what shall we do. We are hopeless, we are outnumbered, there's nothing we can do."

The prophet of God prays, and he says, "God, open his eyes, let him see, let him see what is there, that which is just outside the sight of the natural man. Let him see what there is. Let him see the resources of God. Let him see how big they are." And suddenly God opens that man's eyes and he is amazed. All around the mountains, there is a great host of the army of the living God. I wonder what they look like. I think he was awe inspired because suddenly he sees they're not surrounded, but the Syrian army is surrounded. They're not at a disadvantage, the army that's opposing them is at a disadvantage because God is in the thing. And beloved, the devil wants to destroy this world. He wants to destroy everything that God ever made, and God is on the other side and He's saying it will never be, I yet have chosen Jerusalem, it is the city of the Great King. He will sit there, that's why God will preserve it. Jesus is coming, He's going to stand up on the Mount of Olives and the Mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof.

General Allenby was a geologist before he went to the first World War and was in Palestine. And as a geologist he forbade any building on the Mount of Olives because there's an actual fissure running through, and it can crack at any time. And the Bible says that when Jesus returns, he will stand on the Mount of Olives and the Mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof, and there shall be a great valley there. God is going to change the Geography of the world. It's going to come. There are going to be tremendous things in the offing, and there are fearful things that are going to happen in the offing, but beloved, there are more wonderful things that are coming, Hallelujah. God is going to pour out of His Spirit and the time is now. The time is ready, the time is for us to reach out and touch the hand of God, so that the power might flow into your life, into your home, into your circle, in the area

where you're working, so that the words you speak would have power such as it's never had, so that your testimony will count like it has never done before, and you can pray for the sick and God will give healing for you.

These things are in the offing. Oh God, open the eyes of the Church. Oh God, open our eyes that we may see, that we may understand all these resources that God has given to us, so that we may begin to use the store house of God Almighty, that we may begin to use what He has provided. The difficulty is that we're not using it. It's lying there. It's not being used. God wants us to use it. He wants us to get up as an army. Remember Ezekiel, how there was the valley of the dry bones. Do you remember? Remember Brother Oliphant preaching on the valley of the dry bones. He says God said, "Bones, come through his (inaudible 00:27:01)" And bones began to move. And the one bone came through his bone, they knew exactly where they had to go, oh Hallelujah. They knew where they belonged. It was thousands of bones, but each one you exactly to which body it belonged, and eventually there was a whole skeleton army lying there, and God says to the servants of God, (inaudible 00:27:29)

### **James Robertson**

As we were praying at the beginning of the meeting, the Lord gave me a word, but just before I give you that word, and you really need to hear this in the context of the message that Neil has just brought. I shared with you last Sunday, that I've been on three three-day fasts and I'd been up the previous night and I'd been searching the internet just to see what the Body of Christ was saying about the fulfillment of the end times. And I shared with you too, that there was a broad consensus that people were expecting things to happen, and I believe many of us are discerned in the Spirit that this is so. But, what I saw on the Internet, and it's something that I think is known to most of us, is that the vast majority, and I do mean the vast majority of the Body of Christ is expecting the Rapture to take place before the Tribulation, and there are very few people who are prepared to have the boldness to do what our Brother did this morning and stand up in a pulpit and say, we're going through the tribulation.

We are not going to go out of here hearing some happy clappy little goodbye world sort of thing before the rubber hits the road. The rubber is going to hit the road, and we're going to be on the road, and if we're not careful, we're going to be under the rubber, not on top of the rubber. And I really believe that one of the things that the Lord is really, really challenging every one of us about in this place today, is not just to take the Gospel of Salvation of the Lord Jesus Christ to the world, but to take the truth of what Neil has preached today to the Body of Christ, because understand that if you think that you are going to be out of here in the twinkling of an eye before things get rough, you are not going to be in the place that you need to be to overcome to the end. And it is time that the Body of Christ is told the truth.

The Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put up by the Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing to you please assist us by passing it on. We thank you for your cooperation. God bless you. If you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realize your need may I pray for you that Jesus Christ may enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon your life, that your whole future shall be coloured by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory, for we need every mouth, and

we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact me, James Robertson on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327 or cell phone 083 251 0644 or fax 011 791 5004 or email jamesr@infodoor.co.za and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## **01 04 Abundance in Famine – Outpouring of the Holy Spirit**

**Neil Dreyer**

This is a special occasion for her. It's dedication time, and she's here as a mother. She's come for her children. There's something that she's looking for from the hands of God. She's saying, Oh God bless my children. God do something in their lives that will be lasting, that will be enduring. I want this life to count. I want it to be blessed and to be a blessing. That's why she's here. She's asking God to come in, and there are very heavy responsibilities resting on her shoulders this morning. She knows what I'm talking about, big responsibilities. She's making big decisions folks. And here we are, as a Church, and we can be drawn in to her battles in to her pains, in to her difficulties, they are to be part with us. And we are to share with her. She reminds me of another lady that I'm going to be speaking about a little later in the sermon this morning.

### **Famine**

I want you to come with me to the book of Genesis, and we'll read from the 26th chapter. Genesis 26, the first 12 verses will do. It will suffice for my text. Genesis 26 1:12. *"I rejoice in the Lord, my God."* I'm so glad to be with you this morning, so glad to be able to bring this Word because it lies heavily upon my heart. It says then, *"there was a famine in the land besides the first famine that was in the days of Abraham. And Isaac went to Abimelek, king of the Philistines and Gerar, and the Lord appeared unto him and said, "Go not down into Egypt, dwell in the land which I shall tell thee of. So, journey in this land, and I will be with thee and will bless thee, for unto thee and unto thy seed I will give all these countries and I will perform the oath which I swear Abraham thy father. And I will make thy seed to multiply as the stars of Heaven, and will give unto thy seed all these countries, and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed because Abraham obeyed my voice and kept my charge, my Commandments, my statutes and my laws," and Isaac dwelt in Gerar."*

And remember the place asked him of his wife. Now let's go on to verse 12. *"And then Isaac sowed him that land. And the seeds in the same year hundredfold, and the Lord blessed it."* I want you to notice, it says in there that there was a famine in the land, besides the first famine which was in the

days of Abraham. So, Isaac was in a state of famine. In the state of famine, God says, I want you to stay in this country. Don't go looking for food elsewhere, stay in the famine. Then God goes further. *"He says, if you stay in the land, if you will obey me, I'll give you the land, but what I want you to do is, I want you to sow. I want you to sow in famine."* It's a very strange request, that someone should sow in famine. *"Isaac did that, and when he did it, God blessed him. God began to move in his life in brand new ways, in ways that he'd never seen before."*

The Lord was moving by His Spirit, and the minute God begins to move by His Spirit, everything is absolutely different. Everything becomes new, everything becomes a possibility, not a hindrance. It's not a stumbling stone, it's a stepping stone. As soon as God begins to move, you'll begin to have an insight you didn't have before and you'll see the opportunities for what they are, God-given. They're coming into your life to enrich you, coming into your life to bless you, not to rob you, not to take away from you. Sowing in famines is against all logic, it is opposite to what most would expect and should expect. The result he got flowed out of an act of faith. Faith is not always logical, but faith is always daring. Faith believes God in the most difficult situations. In the most difficult circumstances, it says I can't, but I know one who can, I know that my God can do anything but fail, I know that my God is able to meet every need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus, according to my budget, God can do it. The Lord is able to meet every need when we trust Him.

I ask you a question. Who sows precious seed in famine? Wouldn't it be folly? Wouldn't it be better to wait for better conditions, when the rain is falling, to plant your seed? Many wait for ideal situations to arise. They want perfect situations, and they live lives of desperate and quiet desperation. They don't rise to the challenges of faith, they want to remain on safe ground for all the days of their lives. Humanity is trying to make everything safe. We want to remove the risk out of everything, we want certainties. All of them must be certainties. We're afraid of risks, we're afraid of that area into which we must move if we're going to have faith. And certainty says, keep the seed, it can feed you. Don't be a fool, don't waste it in the ground. Keep it, don't risk. This is the fear of most people. We're afraid of risk, and so we try and protect everything that we can. Should we stick to what is certain, beloved? Should we, or should we venture out with God?

What do you say? Do we venture out with God or do we stick with what is certain? You know sometimes famine is the only way that God can get us to move, to take us out of the situation where we are, to take us away from security, and lead us to prayer. It leads us to seeking His face. When you are uncertain and when you've got problems on your mind, then you begin to dig deep into your resources, and you begin to find out what your resources really are. What can I trust? What can I hold on to? What can help me in these circumstances? What prayers arise out of trouble, my friend, what prayers arise out of agony of spirit? What depths we go to, and what heights we climb to reaching out. We've got to do it because we know that we're desperate. And so, we reach beyond ourselves, and we come closer to God than at any other time, because we're seeking Him and because we're in famine and we're feeling it. We're being scorched by the heat and we know that we're in trouble. I believe that famine creates anxiety, tension, it leads to deep emotion, it brings need, reaching deep to make contact.

### **God's cause**

Desperation is not a bad thing, it is a good thing, oh to God, that the Church of Jesus Christ would become desperate instead of being satisfied with the situation and sitting back with ease and doing nothing. We've got to get to the place where we are desperate, and I'll tell you this, God will make us desperate in this country. God will do it because God's got a cause that is bigger than what you are,

bigger than South Africa, and bigger than the world. It's God's cause, and God wants it to go forward, and if the Lord moves us and He stirs up our nest, then it will be right, and we'll have to go with Him. Famine can be an instrument in God's hand, to bring us to faith, because we have no other options. Then it is a time of opportunity, of growth, of expansion, of reaching further, of higher experience of new things to finding God there, where we've never found Him before. You will never, beloved, come to full faith until you come to full commitment, until you reach that point where you're giving your all.

Genesis 26 1-12, *"Isaac sowed his seed, he committed himself to all that he had."* Everything that he had, he committed to result, he was looking for a result, the result the God spoke about. That's what he wanted. And so, he was prepared to commit everything material to that one result. God is going to bless me in this land. It was not a gamble and it was not a throw of the dice. This is faith, this is confidence, this is assurance in God. It's not blind faith that we're trusting. We're looking beyond these things. The world will give us many opinions, but this is trusting God implicitly. The record shows this morning that those folks, those ones who have taken the biggest risks are the ones that have produced the biggest results. They've tackled things that were way above themselves, and yet they believed, and because they believed, God met them. They didn't have the goods within themselves. They didn't. They had to rely on God for everything, but when they committed themselves, God met them at every point of their need, and they were victorious. They were the overcomers. They won through because they happen to believe, and they happen to trust.

## Faith

In Hebrews 11 and 8, the Bible says by faith, Abraham obeyed when he was called to go out into a place that he should afterward receive as an inheritance. And he went, not knowing where he was going or what might befall him. He didn't know what was going to happen. He risked his family, he lost everything that he had, he didn't know what kind of animosity he was going to meet out there. He had no idea. He didn't know what kind of people were out there. He did not know whether they were the enemies or friends. He didn't know. But God said, I want you to go into the unknown. And when he went into the unknown, he had to do one thing. He had to trust God, because there was nothing else that he could trust in. It was the Lord. And so, he went.

And the Bible says in the 12th verse, *"Therefore from one man, and him as good as day, were born as many as the stars of the sky in multitude innumerable as the sands of the sea shore."* And God gave him families upon families, right down to generations of time. You're part of the family of Abraham. So am I. We're children of faith. God has given him families in every nation of the earth. They are there and they worship God, and it was because of Abraham. He believed. Against hope, he believed, and God gave him an answer that has been a blessing to this day.

He obeyed the prompting of faith, he listened to God's still, small voice and it worked. Hallelujah. Moses led the whole nation of Israel out of security and the provisions of Egypt into the desert without a map, without a compass and no hotels on the way, no taps. He went, trusting God. Surely, that man must have seen that the odds were stacked against him. How do you take a nation into the desert without having farms out there? How do you make provision for them? Where do you find the food, where do you find the water? All of these questions must have come to him, and I think that's one of the reasons why initially, his knees buckled beneath him. He said send someone else, God, I can't go, I don't have the goods. God said, go with Me, and I will show you My power, I will reveal My hand to you. And God did it wonderfully, because he trusted. Wonderful things came into his life, wonderful experiences of the mercy and the love of God, they came to him in floods. And he was blessed and

was a different man afterwards. He came out of the desert different to the man that went into desert, let me tell you that.

God blessed the man, and God showed him His power. Praise the name of the Lord. What a risk he took. What a challenge, what a responsibility, what an ask to ask of a man. What a thing. You see, someone must always lead where others can follow, but who dares lead. Most stand back and say, “send someone else God, it's not for me.” The Lord calls you to witness, you say, let somebody else do the witnessing Lord, I'm not a witness. Lord, I can't speak, I'm like Moses, I stutter, I can't do it, Lord. And God hears that coming from His children time and again. When there's a challenge, they say, I can't do it, Lord. And God is saying, I know you can't do it, I didn't ask you to do it. I didn't ask you for your ability, I asked you for availability. I want you to do what I'm saying, that's what I want. I don't want you to have the goods, I'll give them to you. I will provide.

What is the anointing of the Spirit of God for then? If it's not for this very thing, to make up the lack that you know and the lack that I know, you can't wait until you've got all the knowledge before you open your mouth to speak. It's in speaking that you learn your lessons and you learn while you're teaching. James 1 and 2 says, *“Count it all joy when you fall into diverse temptations, knowing this is the sign, the extending of your faith work of patience, but their patience have the perfect work that you may be perfect and entire.”* That word, ‘temptations’, is adversity. So, it reads like this, count it all joy when you fall into different kinds of adversity. When you've got things opposing you, when they challenge your faith, this is a challenge to your faith that James is talking about. He says, when your faith is challenged, rejoice, because then your faith is extended when it is challenged.

How many times have you spoken to someone of another religion and you were afraid to open your mouth lest they proved you wrong? And so, you keep silence, and you hold your peace. And you had your faith tested by adversity, by opposition, and you didn't take the bait, you didn't use it for God. My word, God is able, he says, *“Do not think in that hour what thee shall say, for it shall be given to you in that hour.”* And Steven was the first one to use it, and the Bible says they could not withstand the wisdom and the power by which He spoke. My word, he didn't have to go and think about answers, God gave them to him. And they were adequate. The answers of God are always adequate. Can I hear an Amen? I hear a dead silence, I don't hear very much. Praise God, we bless You Lord and magnify Your name, we exalt You. Amen.

It is here that God starts with us, where we have believing faith, believing beyond trial. Famine comes to every life. It comes to every household, when things are thin on the ground and you know that you're battling, you don't have the resources that you need, and you don't have the facilities that you need, and so you're battling. It's not easy. It's not easy to start a Church, let me tell you that. You don't have facilities and you don't have what you need to do it. It's a difficult situation, but here, famine comes to every life. It comes to the prophets home. It comes to the Christians home. Nobody is exempt, and once knocked on the prophets door, because the prophet had died, and inevitably, problems came flooding through the door, and they were financial difficulties.

And the woman, the mother, was in dire straits because the creditors wanted their money. What they were prepared to do was to sell any assets that she had. The only assets she had were her two boys. And this woman tried everything in her power for her children. She pleaded as only a mother can plead. She wanted belief. She knew that these children had grown up in a godly home. They had been filled with the truth of God's Word, they were assets to the Kingdom of God and now they were going to be buried, they would be slaves, they wouldn't have an opinion, and they wouldn't have a right. They wouldn't be able to speak to anybody who has never given them permission to do so. They

couldn't speak their religion or their faith. They had to do what the master said because he had the power of life and death over them. Once they were sold, that was it, it was the end, there was no recourse, and the mother knew it. They broke her heart, I'm sure, and she began to look for an answer somewhere, anywhere and the prophet died. There were values there, there was spiritual potential there, and this loss would have been the greatest loss of all.

## Elijah

And Elijah, the prophet knew the father, the Bible tells me that. And probably he knew the family as well, so he was acquainted with what was going on here. And he meets a woman and she appeals, as I said, as only a mother can appeal, "please, is there anything that you can do prophet?" He's a prophet, he is not a financier, he's not a banker, he doesn't carry a roll of notes in his back pocket. He prophesies, that's his function. She comes to the prophet and says, "help me," and the prophet is led by the Spirit of God. I know that for sure. How do I know it? Because his advice worked. Hallelujah. And when it works, that's God. And he says, what have you got in the house? And she says, I've got a pot of oil. And you can hear the writer. Do you know what it says? I've got a pot of oil, but what's that in my problem? How's that going to solve my difficulty? How's it going to meet my need, prophet of God? He said to the girl, "borrow vessels from your neighbors, borrow not a few, get as many as you can." Underline it. Christian, as many as you can. Get as many pots as you can, because God fills pots, and he says he gets the pots.

And she goes and find pots everywhere, and she brings them to her house, and he says, "now what I want you to do is, I want you to take your single pot of oil, and I want you to pour it from one pot to the next, and you set aside that which is full." Listen to the faith of this man of God. You set aside that which is full. And the woman takes her pot, and she pours, and this pot gets filled and this one's not empty. And she goes to the next one and she pours, and this one is filled and this one's not empty.

Beloved, God needs pots. He needs receptacles. He needs something in which to pour His blessings. He's looking for the pots to come from you and me. We are the pots. We are the ones that need to be filled. We are the ones that need to overflow. Can you say Amen to that? We need to be in a position where God can flow through us so the oil will not cease. The woman kept pouring, and the Bible says, is there not yet another pot and the son says, we have no other pot, and the oil ceased. The minute that everything that she brought, everything that she'd had faith for was filled, the oil stopped flowing. I say this - if God could miraculously fill two pots from one, He could fill a thousand pots from one. It's not a bigger miracle, it's exactly the same. It's within His scope. This woman came to the end of her resources, she was in famine, she'd lost everything and was about to lose the two sons that she had left, and she was in trouble. And you know what, God gave her a little pot because we're so aware of our loss and we're so aware of our emptiness and our vulnerability when we're in famine, we know what our problem is so very well.

We can describe it in detail to anybody we know so well. We know what the difficulties are, yes, but if you meet this need, then there's this one, and this one telescopes into that one, and that creates that difficulty, and I can't do this because of this. We know all the difficulties. Somebody said, we mustn't tell God how big our problems are, we must tell our problems how big our God is. We must let him know that God is almighty, that He can do anything but fail. And so, God gives her a pot, something that she can focus on. It's the mercy of God. The Bible says, when evil comes in like a flood, then lift up your eyes and look for the standard of God. The Lord will raise up a standard against the evil one. God will do that. Look for the standard, it's there. Look for the pot, look for the thing that



God's given you, the thing that He's put into your hands, the thing that you can do. Look for that and use it.

Moses, what's that in your hand? A stick. Use it. Madam, what have you got? Use it. Use what God gives you. Joshua, what have you got in your hand? I've got a mandrel. Strike the water, it works. How do you open water with a mandrel? If you take a cloak and strike the water, what do you think is going to happen? You get a wet cloak. When you do it, then God tells you the river opens. Praise the Lord. What shall I do for you? You see, that's the problem. The evidence that we see is there. We have proof of our needs. We see it large because it's real, and then we need help. And what a wonderful thing it is when someone comes aside to help you. When you get cooperation from people, what a blessing that is. You feel bigger. When somebody shows concern for you as an individual, you know what that does for you? You're right down at the bottom there, and somebody comes and says, brother, I know, I'm praying for you, I've been praying for you all along the line, I've been asking God to bless you. What a blessing it is. That's mercy.

And the Lord says that we must uphold one another, doesn't it? He says, we must love one another fervently, out of a pure heart. Doesn't the Bible say that? What a blessing it is to have that kind of support. We need someone else's eyes sometimes, eyes to be able to see. The Bible says in 1 Corinthians, 10 and 13, *"No temptation has overtaken you except such as is common to man. God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation, will also make the way of escape, that you may be able to bear it, that you may be able to endure, that you may be able to push through."* It says, *"I will not allow you to be tempted above what you are able."* In other words, you will not fail. You will not register failures. You will register successes, as long as you've got faith, as long as you trust me.

God will provide an Elijah. He will provide a pot, something to look for. So, this one did that, and God blessed her mightily. As you fill the vessels on the day of Pentecost, oh God, fill the vessels again, oh God, stir Your Church, get Your people on their feet, God, get them moving. Heavenly father move by Your Spirit. You said, I will pour out My Spirit upon all flesh, that was before the last day. God, we're there, it's time for an outpouring of the Spirit of God. Can you say Amen to that? It's time beloved. It's time we need it. The world needs it more than we do. We need a move of the Spirit of God, so that we don't move in our own strength. It is a faith position with God that we need. Your presence causes the sensation on the day of Pentecost. It wasn't Peter, my friend or James or John, it was what God did. It was a move of the Spirit of God that brought the response.

### **End of the End Times**

When this was noised abroad, the people came running. And when God begins to move, it's different. It's not just a sermon, it's not just words. God is speaking, and people know it. Some things have got to be different. And God wants to move by His Spirit in a different way. It is time for the outpouring of Your Spirit, for we're at the end of the End Times. Matthew 24 tells us of the Church taking the world on and winning through. Now is the time to serve God, beloved brother and sister. This Gospel must be preached in the world for a witness, and the witness will have to be with power. And I say, oh God, bring the people that will bring the pots, and bring the pots full of oil, oh Lord. Do it for us. It's what You can do, not what I can do, it's what God can do. And I say, Lord, do it by Your grace. The time is now. To move in the Spirit of God means power, it means wisdom, it means knowledge, it means courage, and it means everything that we need. God puts it there, and suddenly we're moving on a different plane altogether.

The demon world will stand back aghast, as Jesus Christ takes up His rightful place in the world and does that which is right in His sight. The Bible says they were all filled with the Spirit, and they were filled with that which was Godly. They were filled with it. What came out of him was Godly, it was anointed by the Spirit of God because it was born of God. Praise the Lord. Those people waited and they obeyed. We need to be in the move of God, beloved, moving with it. It wasn't Abraham, Moses or Elijah, it was God. It happens when it is taken out of human hands and people know, *dis die Here die*. This is God that's moving here. When God is definitely needed, then faith is easy, and anything can happen. One thing leads to another. God just brings it to pass. He brings it to you because you're ready for it. He brings it to you because you can handle it, He brings it to you because you want it, because it's not a problem to you or a nuisance to you, but you want it. You want to serve God, you want to do it His way.

In closing the sermon, I want to make some other statements quickly. There is a vital ministry that is to come according to God's Word, vital to the end times. It is the Elijah Ministry. In Malachi 4 and 5 - 6, God says, *"Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and the vatful day of the Lord."* And I believe that's now. This is the vatful day of the Lord. Now. And He will turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the hearts of the children to their fathers, less I come and smite the earth with a curse. This is a vital mighty ministry, to avert this worldwide disaster that God should curse the earth. It's the breaking up of homes, through adultery, through neglect, through lack of love, through lack of responsibility, without association between people. It is out-of-contact families, dysfunctional families, and they are in the preponderance. They grow it all the time. It's happening. We're seeing it happening all around us. Family break-up is a common present day phenomenal, it's happening.

In Luke, the Bible says, in the 1st chapter, in the 17th verse, *"He will go before him in the spirit and the power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just."* Listen, it adds this, *"to make ready a people prepared for the Lord,"* which is again, a vital ministry and a powerful ministry, *"to prepare a people for the coming of the Lord, so that they might be ready"*

The Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put up by the Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing to you please assist us by passing it on. We thank you for your cooperation. God bless you. If you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realize your need may I pray for you that Jesus Christ may enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon your life, that your whole future shall be coloured by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory, for we need every mouth, and we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

### **James Robertson**

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should you be

led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact me, James Robertson on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327 or cell phone 083 251 0644 or fax 011 791 5004 or email jamesr@infodoor.co.za and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## **01 05 Do you love like Jesus loves?**

**James Robertson**

Greetings in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. I have a message for you, which has certainly challenged me, and I believe it will challenge you. Many of you are aware that over the last forty days or so, I've been on a four, three-day fasts, the most recent of which came to an end on Tuesday. And in that period, I've been seeking to draw closer to the Lord amongst other things. On this last fast the Lord really started to challenge me on love, on the love of Jesus, the love that Jesus has for us, and you really need to get this book, 'Lord, teach me how to love', by Creflo Dollar. And Ingrid will tell you, I normally read a book of this size in about an hour and a half/two hours. It's probably taken me about five or six hours so far, and I'm only halfway through. I've been incredibly, incredibly challenged by that. And the Scripture that sort of came to my heart just before I got up, and everything that I have to say today, because some of what I'm going to say is going to sound, if you take it wrong, quite harsh, but I'm preaching to myself as much as to anybody else. And it's really something that I believe that the Lord wants to tackle.

### **Christian - true or false**

The Churches are (inaudible 00:01:44) right now and this passage in Revelation 2, which in the new King James has the subtitle 'The loveless Church.' *"Nevertheless, I have this against you that you have left your first love. Remember therefore from where you are fallen, repent and do the first works or else I will come to you quickly and remove your lamp stand from its place unless you repent."* And the Lord has really been dealing with me in the last couple of weeks in terms of just how far I've fallen from that first love, just how far I've fallen from that place where it was never difficult to get up at five o'clock in the morning and seek his face. It was never difficult to do whatever He wanted me to do. And the message that the Lord has given me, which stands quite startling, but I believe it's incredibly profound, is Christian, true or false.

And I believe the Lord would challenge each one of us this morning to ask yourself, Christian, true or false? We turn to Acts chapter 11 verses 25 to 27. *"Then Barnabas departed for Tarsus to seek Saul and when he had found him, he brought him to Antioch. So, it was for a whole year they assembled with the Church and taught a great many people and the disciples were first called Christians in Antioch. And in these days a prophet came from Jerusalem to Antioch."* And my understanding of the word 'Christian' is that it's derived from the Greek, it relates to the word Christos, and it refers to little Christ-like ones, and my understanding of what was happening in Antioch in those days, is that the Spirit was moving powerfully. People were getting healed, people were getting saved, and people

were getting delivered. And the question that I believe the Lord asked me, and I believe it's a question that each one of us have to answer, is if we call ourselves Christians, and if we truly are little Christ-like ones. When was the last time someone was healed as your shadow passed by? When was the last time blind eyes were opened when you laid hands on somebody? When was the last time a crippled man leapt and praised God after you'd prayed for him?

### **Being Christ-like**

My brothers and sisters, the answer I have to give the Lord is never. And how do I presume to appropriate the name of Christ. Yes, I'm saved by His grace, yes, his Spirit dwells in me, but how dare I presume to call myself a little Christ-like one. But I believe the Lord wants to challenge each one of us with that today. Do you dwell in Christ? Do we dwell in Christ? Are we so full of Christ that He overflows out of us so that the world sees Christ and not James, or Peter, or whoever? Why are we so full of ourselves that there's so little room for Him? We don't have the right to appropriate His name as a label. It is a gift. It is something that people see in us. It is for unbelievers to determine whether we are Christ-like, not for us to appropriate His name.

And as I pondered this in the last week or two, the thing that has just been hitting me and hitting me is the difference is love. And about a week or so ago, I said Lord, I don't think I even understand what is meant by love the way you describe it. Yes, I know what it says in 1 Corinthians 13, yes, I know what the Word of God says, but do I actually know in my spirit, in my heart what love is. Do I actually walk the love of Jesus Christ? And the answer was no. I don't think I even begin to understand it. And as I read this book, I've read sort of one or two pages and just being convicted and said, Lord, I don't know how to love the way Jesus loved. And if we started at a very straight forward point, Deuteronomy chapter 6 verses 4 & 5, "*Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God, the Lord is one. You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your strength.*"

And in Matthew 22, 36 – 40, Jesus confirmed that. Somebody came to Him and said "*Teacher, what is the great Commandment of the law?*" Jesus said to him, *you shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first and the great Commandment and the second is like it. You shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two Commandments hang all, not some, all the law and the prophets.*" If we do not profoundly have a revelation of God's love and what it is and walk in it, we cannot keep the Commandments. We actually are as clanging cymbals, without any substance as Christians, if we do not have a profound revelation of what Jesus is saying there, when He says to love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your mind, all your soul and all your strength, and it's very easy to get carnal and say, oh Jesus, how much I love you.

There is even a song that's going around in many charismatic circles at the moment, which I think must grieve the Lord terribly. 'Jesus, do you know how much I love you?' I mean, what an insult. The mighty God knows the thoughts of our hearts and we presume to ask Him if He knows how much we love Him. We don't know ourselves how little we love Him.

John 5 verses 42 to 44, "*but I know you that you do not have the love of God in you.*" I really have to receive that and we each have to listen to what Jesus is saying, because Jesus is not speaking to people who are far off from us. "*I've come in My Father's name and you do not receive Me. If another comes in his own name, him you will receive. How can you believe who receives honor from another, but do not seek the honor that comes from the only God?*" And just how often does God send somebody to us and we don't receive Him because He doesn't conform. Today, if an unknown prophet comes into the midst of the average assembly and seeks to prophesize in the name of God, the Church will not

receive him. The vast majority of assemblies will ask for his credentials and tell him that once he has fellowshipped there for six months, then perhaps they will permit him to speak in public. And when they do that, they reject Him who sent them.

1 John 2, 3 to 11, *"And by this we know that we know Him, if we keep His Commandments. He who says, I know Him and does not keep His Commandments is a liar and the truth is not in him."* When you get a revelation on what that verse is saying it's like a really solid slap with a very large piece of wet fish. It really is profound. If I look at my own life over the last few years, *"by this, we know that we know Him. If we keep His Commandments, he who says, I know Him and does not keep his Commandments is a liar and the truth is not in him."* How many times have we half done what we know the Word requires of it? How many times has He spoken to us by that still quiet voice and we've said no Lord, not now, later or whatever? But whoever keeps His Word, truly the love of God is perfected in him, by this we know that we are in Him.

### **Walking like Jesus**

It comes back to what I said at the opening. It doesn't help to have Jesus in us. We must be in Christ to the point where He has so encompassed us, that we are able to keep His Commandments. He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as He walked, just as Jesus walked. Again, do we presume to label ourselves Christians or can the world in fact see Christ in us. Brethren, I write no new Commandment to you, but an old Commandment which you've had from the beginning. The old Commandment is the word which you heard from the beginning. Again, a new Commandment I write to you of which thing is true in Him and in you, because the darkness is passing away and the true light is already shining. He who says he is in the light and hates his brother is in darkness until now. And again, how many of us can truly say that we do not have unresolved differences and disputes with old school friends, with old army colleagues, with business associates, with family members.

I wrote a whole list after I read this. *"He who loves his brother abides in the light and there is no cause for stumbling in him, but he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness and does not know where he is going because the darkness has blinded his eyes."* And I was saying, Lord help me, I can't hear Your voice as well as I used to, and then I had to admit that I got angry with people, I've been offended with people. I still don't know how to make right with some of those people, but I will not know where I'm going until I have, nor will you. Creflo Dollar makes an extremely important point. Your obedience to the Word of God and the Spirit of God is the measure of your love of God. You cannot say you love God if you're not doing what you know to do out of this Book. I'm not saying the things you don't know to do, but where you've read a passage of Scripture and you've been convicted, if you don't put that into practice in your life, how can you say, I love God?

Where the Spirit of God has spoken to you and told you to do something, whether it's to make restitution with somebody you've wronged, or whether it's to go and make right with somebody that you've wronged, if you don't do it, then your love is growing cold. Obedience delayed is partial obedience. It's disobedience and it's not love. I just printed out a poster that I made for myself and I thought it might help some of you as well. I've only done ten, so if each cluster of people could share. It's just some thoughts out of a series of tapes on faithfulness that I started listening to led by the Spirit of God on my first pass about 35, 40 days ago. And that too just really, really rocked me. The heading at the top here, 'why is He relevant?' And what that means is, when you come before the Judgment seat of Christ, you will be confronted with the things that you have done, that you ought not to have done, and the things that you have not done, that you ought to have done.

And at that moment, as you stand before the Almighty God, why, will be irrelevant. But Lord, I had a sore toe, Lord, I had flu, Lord, you know how much that person swore at me, Lord, whatever, will count for nothing. The worst that can happen will be 'depart from me thou worker of iniquity, I never knew you.' Those Scriptures are written to believers, they're not written to unbelievers. It's fearsome. And there are many others there and I'm not presuming to say that they all apply to you, but they're just headlines that I wrote down as I was going through that document and realizing just how faithless I had become in my service of God.

Something else that's really, really rocked me this week because we've been walking by faith for many years, and certainly in the last four years, we've never gone without food on the table. We've gone through some really, really testing times in large measure as a result of our own disobedience and our own sin as the Lord has taken us through various trials, but a very challenging verse, because we hear so much about the faith walk in this age, and I'm sure most of us listened to many teachings on faith and consider ourselves as to be people who walk by faith. Galatians 5, verse 6, *"For in Christ Jesus, neither circumcision, nor uncircumcision avails anything but faith working through love."*

### **Without love**

In other words, without love, faith is powerless. Faith cannot work without love. And again, these are old truths that one can listen to and say, yeah, but I've read that Scripture dozens of times, I know about that. But if you do what I've been doing recently and read these Scriptures and say, Lord, show me what's wrong in my life. I had to admit my faith was being made powerless by my lack of love. And I would ask each one of you to challenge yourselves on that. And again, I've done another little poster here from 1 Corinthians 13. Thanks, my girl, you can hand this one out as well. I mean I just thought since I'd done them, I'd bring them for you and please use them as you see fit. *"Though I speak with tongues of men and of Angels but have not love, I have become a sounding brass or a clanging cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and though I have all faith so that I could remove mountains but have not love, I am nothing."*

Without love we're nothing. We have no standing before God. If we act in Jesus' name without love, it's startling. *"And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor and though I give my body to be burned but have not love, it profits me nothing. Love suffers long and is kind. Love does not envy. Love does not parade itself, is not puffed up, does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil, does not rejoice in iniquity but rejoices in the truth. Bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things, love never fails."* And one of the tragedies of the world in which we live now, is the world would have us believe that love is a transitory thing. People fall into love and out of love. They may fall into lust and out of lust, but God's love never fails.

When a man and woman have loved, they can never not love. They may be confused, they may be distracted, but they can never cease loving except in extreme cases of treachery. And we don't walk that, well I don't walk that. *"And the fruits of the spirit, love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness and self-control. Against such things, there is no law."* And again deeply, deeply challenging Scriptures. I would like to go on and continue and consider a few practical aspects. Just out of some things that have really come to my attention again in the last few days, and things which were racing through my head last night thinking about this message.

John 15, 12 to 15, *"This is My Commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. Greater love has no one than this than, to lay down one's life for His Friends. You are My Friends."* 'If', one of the smallest words in the English language and perhaps one of the biggest words in the Bible. *"You're*

*my Friends, if you do whatever I command you."* There it is again. If you love God, you will do His Commandments. "No longer will I call you servants, for a servant does not know what his master is doing, but I've called you Friends, for all things that I heard from My Father and I've made known to you."

And certainly, we've seen in this congregation in the last few weeks that the Lord has been speaking to us at some length about the things which are to come to pass shortly. He's doing that because He regards us as Friends. It's so vital that we love Him, so vital that we obey Him, so vital that we do what we know He's calling us to do with the truths that He's given us. Perhaps you can turn with me to 1 Peter, Chapter 2 to 1 Peter Chapter 3, or in fact if you like, even to chapter 4, 19. I think it might be one of the most challenging passages of Scripture that each one of us need to confront in the days to come, because it speaks of submission to governance, it speaks of submission to mask it, it speaks of wives submission to husbands.

I'm just going to lift out a couple of verses. I'm not going to read the whole thing, but I would encourage you to go away and meditate on this in the light of this message. 1 Peter 2, 13, *"Therefore, submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether to the king of supreme or to governors, as to those who are sent by Him for the punishment of evil doers and the praise of those who do good."* And so, it goes on. Verse 18, *"Servants be submissive to your masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the harsh, for this is commendable, if because of conscience toward God one endures grief, suffering wrongfully. For what credit is it if, when you are beaten for your faults, you take it patiently, but when you do good and suffer if you take it patiently, this is commendable before God. For to this you were called because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example that you should follow His steps, who committed no sin, nor is deceit found in His mouth. And when He was reviled, did not revile in return. When He suffered, He did not threaten, but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously, who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree that we having died to sin and might live for righteousness, by whose stripes you were healed."*

And we so readily claim the last part of that verse 24, *"by His stripes we are healed,"* but do we recognize that when He was reviled, He did not revile in return, that He suffered in silence even though every blow was unrighteous, every blow was unmerited and yet we are so quick, and I speak for myself, again, I can't speak for you, but I just speak for myself. I respond so easily to a false accusation or an insult or something like that. It carries on and I'm not going to pick up the whole passage, but 1 Peter 3 verse 1, *"wives, likewise be submissive to your own husbands,"* and this is a startling Scripture. It's one that really hit home a few weeks ago. Wives, likewise, like what? Like Jesus. Submit to your husbands in what? In everything. Ephesians 5, 22 I think it is. *"Wives submit to your husbands in everything,"* whether your husband is righteous or whether your husband is unrighteous, submit to your husband, like Jesus submitted to the Pharisees and the high priests. *"That some may be won out of conduct of their wives."*

It's an awesome Scripture for any woman who's married to an unbeliever, and it's a salutary warning for any woman who thinks of marrying an unbeliever. It requires that you lay down your life for that man in whatever way it comes to. And so, we go on. I'm not going to go all the way down. Verse 7 makes it very clear that the husband has an obligation to take his wife under his covering and to take the blows on her account to protect her in the same way that Jesus took the blows for us.

Again, it's this concept of a love that we don't understand. And so we go in verse 12, *"For the eyes of the Lord are on the righteous and His ears are open to their prayers, but the face of the Lord is against those who do evil, and who is he who will harm you if you become followers of what is good, but even*

*if you should suffer for righteousness sake, you are blessed and do not be afraid of their threats, will be troubled."* We go onto chapter 4, *"Beloved do not think it's strange concerning the fiery trial, which is to try you as though some strange thing happened to you but rejoice to the extent that you partake of Christ's sufferings, that when His glory is revealed, you may also be glad with exceeding joy."*

## **Judgement**

Verse 17, *"For the time has come for judgment to begin at the House of God and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the Gospel of God?"* And I have to say to you that I have no doubt the judgment is about to begin with the House of God. We've heard of the coming tribulation. We've seen the evidence of the war that's building in the Middle East, that we need to understand that the judgment that will come on the world, will come first on the Church. We will be convicted of our sins, we will have to deal with the things that are wrong in our lives. It's not a pleasant thought. We need to get our lives right with God. We need to come to that place of love, where it is us in Christ, not just Christ in us. We need to come to that place where we can lay our lives down for the sake of the Gospel and count it an honor and a privilege to do that.

When I was in the Holocaust museum in Jerusalem in about June 1996 - The Holocaust museum is where the Israeli's commemorate the holocaust, Bergen Belsen, Treblinka, all of those absolutely terrible atrocities that were committed against the Jews by people who call themselves Christians, incidentally. And at that same trip I was speaking at two conferences, and I have a slide at the end of my presentations with a cross on it, and I prayed about it and I said, *Lord, do you want me to take the slide out? I don't want to offend this Jewish audience.* He said, no, leave it, I want you to apologize to them for what has been done to them in the name of Jesus Christ. So, two conferences in Tel Aviv in 1996, I got up and at the end I said, I want to apologize to you, Jesus Christ was a Jew and the things that have been done to the Jews in the name of Jesus Christ are not right. And I ask you to forgive me.

It was an incredibly moving experience for me and what was even more astounding for me, there was a number of elderly Jewish men who came up to me afterwards and said, we can't tell you how much that means to us. Brothers and sisters, God is asking us to lay down our lives for our brothers in Christ, and for the Jews and for the unbelievers.

## **The Final Quest**

I just want to close by reading three brief passages out of three books, which have touched me enormously on this subject. I don't know how many of you have come across this book, 'The Final Quest' by Rick Joyner. If you haven't, I would strongly encourage you to get it and read it. The five prophetic visions where Joyner was taken up into Heaven, he comes before the judgment seat of Christ and it's a serious, serious wake up call to the Church. But I just want to read one little passage. This is where Joyner has come to the throne itself. He's before the Lord Jesus Christ. He's been through the judgment and he's discovered how little of his life he's actually led for Christ.

And Jesus offers him a cup. *"I then looked back at the Lord and was astonished to see tears in His eyes, He had wiped the tears away from every eye here except His own. As a tear ran down His cheek, He caught it in His hands and He then offered it to me. This is My cup; will you drink it with Me. There was no way I could refuse Him. As the Lord continued to look at me, I began to feel His great love. Even as foul as I was, He still loved me. As undeserving as I was, He wanted me to be close to Him and then He said, I love all of these...this is now in Heaven...I love all of these with the love that you cannot understand. I also love all who are supposed to be here but did not come. I have left the 99 to go after the one who was lost. My shepherds would not leave the one to go after the 99 who are still lost. I*



*came to save the lost. Will you share My heart to go to save the lost? Will you help Me to fill this room? Will you help to fill these thrones and every other seat in this hall? Will you take up this quest to bring joy to heaven? To Me and to My Father, this judgment is for My own household and My own house is not full. The last battle will not be over until My house is full. Only then will it be time for us to redeem the earth and remove the evil from My Creation. If you drink my cup, you will love the lost the way that I love them.*

### **Sergei Kourdakov**

Every time I read that passage and it's some three years, I think, since I first read that, it just really strikes me how wrapped up I get in the cares of this world and how little I devote myself to the things of the Kingdom. How little I devote myself to bringing souls to salvation. How little I devote myself to sharing the truth that the Lord has given me as He seeks to restore the Church towards truth. I then want to read a short passage from this book, which I read about two years ago. It is called Sergei, an Afrikaans book, it's a translation from English but I don't have the translation so bear with me. I'm going to read it in Afrikaans.

It's the biography of a young man called Sergei Kourdakov. His father was a General in the Russian army in the Second World War, his mother was a Christian. They were murdered shortly after the war, I think when Stalin took over. I'm not sure of the details. He grew up in an orphanage. He was extremely talented. He came to be one of the top recruits at the Russian naval military academy up in northeastern Soviet Russia. He went on to become the leader of the Communist Youth League in that city. He was then recruited by the KGB along with something like 20 other young men, all exceptionally good athletes, extremely fit, extremely strong to put down, what the KGB had identified as the greatest single threat to communism, those people that they called believers. Those people who were spiritual Christians who just would not bow the knee to the communist God.

This young man eventually came to salvation and I will tell you a bit more about that in a moment. But he came to salvation through the life testimony of two Christian women. The first was a young girl of about 16, who they found at a home Church meeting of about 10 or 15 people. The group got bigger than this, who were meeting clandestinely in a house. They stripped her naked and they beat her with their bare hands until the flesh fell from her back. The next day they went into her place of employment and they told them that she was a Christian and she lost her job. A week later they went to break up another home cell meeting and she was there. They couldn't understand it. She said, I love Jesus so much I can't not be here, and they let her go. They couldn't understand.

A few days later they went to another meeting and I just want him to read a page from that. They're just about to break in.

*By die deur het ons 'n oomblik bly staan, my man het gewag vir my teken, skielik het ek geskreu, nou die stooktog het begin, die deur was opgesluit, opsugtelig dat hulle ons nie verwag het nie en ons het ingebars. Soos die spioen gese het was daar 15 of 16 verlowiges teenwoordig, almal styf teen mekaar gedruk in die klein reimte. Ons het hulle in die middle van die gebed getrap. (Inaudible 00:34:23) het 'n Bybel by haar gelowige gegryp en dit stukkend geskeur. Een van die vroue het uitgeroep, hoekom doen jy dit? Dit was 'n hartseer diep kreet, maar het Vladimir geiriteer sodat hy haar reg in die gesig geslaan het. Dit was 'n professionele goed gemukde hou wat enige man sou verpletter. Wat nog te se 'n klein tingerige vroultjie. Sy het terug geval teen die ander gelowiges en op die vloer neer gesak, haar gesig bebloed. Gille het die lug deur gevlieg toe my man haar in die werk gespring het. Ek het die hefboompie aan my knuppel gedruk en dit op sy kortste gestel sodat dit meer bruikbaar was in daardie*

*klein vertrekke. Knuppels and feiste was reeds aan die werk en die geskreeu van die gelowiges was genoeg om jou oordromme te laat bars. Sommige het uit vrees gegil en anders van pyn.*

*Ek het 'n ou vrou naby die muur gesien, vrees op haar gesig, haar lippe bewend in gebed. As gevolg van die lewaai kon ek nie hoor wat sy se nie maar haar gebed het my biesend gemaak. Ek het 'n paar tree vorentoe geneem en my knuppel gelig om haar te slaan. Sy het my raak gesien, gereed om te slaan en hard opgebid, ek het 'n oomblik gekalm, meer uit nuskierigheid as uit enige iets anders. Terwyl my arm in die lug was, gereed om my knuppel op haar meerlose hoof neer te bring het ek haar woorde gehoor, 'God, vergewe hierdie jong man, wys hom die ware dag, open sy oe en hulp hom, vergewe hom Liewe Vader.' Ek was stom geslaan. Hoekom bid sy nie vir hulp vir haarself nie. Sy is die een wat aan stons geslaan gaan word. Ek was woedend dat sy, 'n onbekende vrou vir my Sergei Kourdakov, leier van die Kommuniste Jeug Liege moes bid. In 'n vlag van woede het ek my knuppel stywer gegruip en klaar gemaak om dit teen haar kop te slaan. Ek sou haar met al my mag geslaan, genoeg om haar dood dit maak.*

*Ek het begin swaai en toe gebeur 'n einardige ding, ek kan dit nie verduidelik nie. Iemand het my gewigte gegruip en dit terug gedruk. Ek was verbaas, dit het seer gemaak. Dit was nie my verbeelding nie, dit was 'n werklikke drukking op my gewig tot dit seer gemaak het. Ek het gedink dis dalk n gelowige en omdraai om te slaan maar daar was niemand nie, ek het weer gekyk. Niemand kon my arm gegryp het nie en tog het ek dit gevoel. Dit was nog steeds seer. Ek het geskok, bly staan, die bloed het na my kop gevloei en ek het warm geword terwyl vrees oor my gespoel het. Dit was bokant my denke, dit was verwarrant, onwerklik en toe het ek alles vergeet. Ek het my knuppel laat val en uitgehardloop met 'n warm bluisende gevoel in my gesig en bloed kloppend in my kop. Trane het my wange begin afloop.*

Do we love enough to pray for somebody who's about to crush our skulls and not think of ourselves? That young man subsequently jumped ship in the Pacific Ocean, five miles off Vancouver in the middle of a massive storm. By the grace of God, miraculously, he should have died of exposure within minutes, but he was washed up on the shore of Vancouver and came to salvation and shared his testimony. God alone knows how many people's lives have been touched by those two women who loved Jesus so much that they obeyed His Commandments to love their enemies, to do good to them that hate them. Are we ready to do that?

### **Evil in the world**

If the worst things that some people are speculating as being about to happen in this world really do happen, if the rumors about the concentration camps near Kokstad, the gas chambers and the ovens designed to kill 3000 people a day are true, if the rumors about the concentration camp in the Eastrand near Nigel in an old disused mine with similar capacity are true, if the rumors about the 45 concentration camps in the United States are true, if the rumors about a United Nation plan to annihilate two thirds of the world's population are true, the spirit that was behind the Union of Soviet socialist republics, the spirit that was behind the Gestapo is about to break loose on this world.

### **Creflo Dollar**

Will you love your enemies the way Jesus did? Or will you retreat into self-pity and self-centeredness. I've got one last passage that I want to read and then I'm done. And it comes very much closer to home. This is from Creflo Dollar's book, "Lord, teach me how to love", and I strongly encourage you to see if you can get hold of it. They do have offices near us if you can't get hold of it elsewhere. He's entitled it 'Covering others with love'. He says, I like this translation of 1 Corinthians 13, it, "love does

*not rejoice in injustice and unrighteousness, but rejoices when right and truth prevail. Love bears up under anything and everything that comes, is ever ready to believe the best of every person. It hopes and has faith under all circumstances, and it endures everything without weakening.”* That's verse 6 and 7 from the amplified.

He says, I have known preachers who've fallen into sin, one of them had to check himself into an institution. He was shocked to see me the first time I went to visit him. He was so sure that, like many others I had only come to hurt him more with words of condemnation. He actually asked me to leave, but I refused. I had already predetermined that we would have Communion together that day, so I found a cracker and some juice, then I sat down with him to make a covenant agreement with him. I grabbed his face and said, I promise to love you forever and if you should die, I'll see to it that your wife is taken care of and that your children get a first-class education. I will not leave you, no matter what you do. I love you unconditionally.

He was so moved by the level of God's compassion, by the fact that God would actually send someone to convey His love at such a time that he was blown away. We both cried. I still cry every time we get together because I think, what if I killed him with my words and actions? Where would he be today? Now this man of God is whole. He made a complete recovery and is even more anointed now than he was before. There is no greater joy than seeing people climb out of a pit of despair and press on to higher levels of spirituality. That's the way God meant it to be. That's the end of my message. All that leaves me to say is I believe the Lord is challenging every one of us here today to step up to that measure of love, which is the fullness of the man, Christ Jesus, to set aside everything to do with self, to set aside all our preconceived notions and to love as we have never loved before. To love the lost, not just the lost outside the Church, but the lost inside the Church who are so deceived in so many areas.

Those people who think that being a Christian is a Sunday School picnic, they don't realize that they will have to endure great persecution and tribulation for their faith. Do we love them enough to tell them the truth, no matter what they do to us? To love our enemies if they persecute us, even if we confronted that angry young man who has the capacity to utterly smash our faces in in his rage against our faith, say Father, forgive him, love him, save him. Are we prepared to reach out to those in the faith who have fallen, and love them unconditionally and pick them up?

### **Prayer**

Father, I just bring this message before You now. I pray Lord, that above all things, if there be anything that I've said, which is not of You that You will blow it away right now by Your Spirit, that it will find no root, that all it is of You would take root in the hearts of those who've heard me and it will bring forth, Lord, abundant fruit. Father, my cry today for myself, and for all those who hear me is teach us to love like Jesus loved and not to count the cost. Dear father, in the name of Jesus, I ask You to pour out Your Spirit upon those people right now. I ask You to fill us to overflowing with the glory and compassion of Your Spirit. Cleanse us of our unrighteousness, cleanse us of our self-centeredness and let us see people the way You see them Lord God. Let us know Your will in every situation. Let us experience Your heart in every situation. Let us be vessels for Your love. Let us be vessels for Your faith, bind us in Christ Jesus. Let us come to the place where there is so little of us and so much of Jesus that the world says, look, there is a Christian.

Father take us out to this place of mediocrity where the world cannot see any difference between us and the unbelievers. Take us out of this place of compromise where the unbelievers are better able to

tell us what's wrong with our lives than we are. Take us into a place where Jesus is everything in our lives. Father, Abba, Daddy, we cannot do it in our own strength, we cannot do it in our own ability, all we can say to You is Daddy, in the name of Yahooshua, Your Son, crucify our flesh, destroy self-centeredness, self-righteousness and self-confidence, and everything that has anything to do with self, let us be crucified this day with the Lord Jesus Christ. Let's go out of this place truly new creatures in Christ. Father, we ask You by Your Spirit to convict us of our sin, to convict us of anything that You've called us to do that we've left undone, and everything You've told us not to do that we've done.

We ask You to convict us of our willful disobedience and our negligence and just our plain carelessness. Father, in the name of Jesus, forgive us, Lord. We are not worthy to come before Your throne, but we come nonetheless by faith in the saving grace and the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, for You have said we could come boldly before the throne of Christ, and we ask You today, Father in the name of Jesus for grace to serve You, for grace to love the way Jesus loves, and loved, when he walked this Earth, for grace to love the way those two women in impoverished circumstances in Soviet Russia, enemies, that the leader of the Communist Youth League jumped ship to find the God that they knew. Lord, take us, bend us, break us, use us, fill us with Your love today. Let us never be the same, let us never think the same, deliver us from our obsession with the things of the world, for our obsession with our own comforts and our own cares and what people think of us, and our cardinal secular activities.

Take us Lord Jesus and hold us in Your arms and infuse us with Your love that we are changed forever. Please don't stop. Show us everything that has to change. We yield ourselves to You right now, Lord God. Let me just say Father, into Your hands we commend our spirits, our hearts, our minds, our souls, our bodies and all that we have, our families, our children, our houses, our cars, every material thing that we have we would give it to You, Lord. None of these things are any worth, save the love of Jesus Christ, our Lord. Lord, He gave everything that we might be saved, and we give You everything that we might be saved and that we might save others. Lord, today we commit ourselves to lay our treasure in Heaven and no longer to lay our treasure on earth. Let us not squander the few precious years that You've given us on this earth concerning ourselves with cardinal things but let us concern ourselves with that which is written in Your Book concerning us. Let us concern ourselves with that which You will say to us on that great day.

Lord, our desire is to be found to have been faithful servants, not to be told, depart from me, you workers of iniquity. Praise You, Jesus. Praise you Lord. Just stand and just receive from Him. He just wants to pour out His Spirit on you, every one of you, just stand. Lord, pour out Your Spirit upon Your people now. Fill us Lord, fill up the fire of Your Spirit, burn out the gross, burn out the char, the furnace, by Your Holy anointing, cleanse us Lord Jesus. And Jesus, I just want to say how sorry I am for all the times I disobeyed You. I'm going to say how sorry I am for all the times I've responded in a sense and in anger, for all the times that the people around me have seen Your great name brought into distribute by my conduct because I've not walked it. Father, I repent of that right now in Jesus' name. I ask You to forgive me.

I ask You to cleanse me with Your blood, I turn around and I choose to return to my first love as never before, not by might, not by power, but by Your Spirit. For I am unable, in my own strength, so much as to love myself, let alone to love my enemies, but by Your Spirit all things are possible. Nothing is impossible with You. Thank You Jesus for loving us, thank You Jesus for dying for us, thank You Jesus that soon You will return for us. Amen.

The Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put up by the

Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing to you please assist us by passing it on. We thank you for your cooperation. God bless you. If you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realize your need may I pray for you that Jesus Christ may enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon your life, that your whole future shall be colored by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory, for we need every mouth, and we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact me, James Robertson on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327 or cell phone 083 251 0644 or fax 011 791 5004 or email [jamesr@infodoor.co.za](mailto:jamesr@infodoor.co.za) and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## 01 07 What brings Jesus Joy

**Neil Dreyer**

If we're in the place where God wants us to be, we're going to take advantage of it. You could witness to somebody by speaking to them. Better still, you can speak and give a tract. Better still, if you're being blessed by a message, give them a tape, an audio tape. Take them, distribute them. We need to reach out, folks, we need to be active in this outreach, and God can bless us in it. So, please, if you ask my brother for tapes, he'll give you tapes. Is that right, brother? That's perfectly right. I want you to come with me to the Gospel of St. Luke, the 10th Chapter, and we'll read the first 12 verses together. With desire, have I desired to preach this message to you this morning, Luke chapter 10 verses 1 to 12, Jesus says in the previous chapter, He ends it by saying, *"no man, having put his hand to the plough looking back is worthy of the Kingdom of God? When you start ploughing, determine that you're going to plough to the end of the furrow. Without looking back because you're not worthy, if you regret beginning that ploughing. God wants you to do it whole heartedly, no man builds a tower, except he sits down first of all and counts the costs. He wants us to count the costs."*

And then He goes, and it says, *"after these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two by two before His face into every city and place whether He, Himself would come."* Here's planning here. Do you see it? Jesus plans. He says, *"You go ahead into every village and to every town."*

*Prepare it, I'm coming.*" So, they go ahead, they preach there, Jesus comes along, and he finds the right audience, it's organization.

Here Christ is working with the 70, *"therefore said He unto them, the harvest truly is great, but the laborers are few. Pray thee, therefore the Lord of the harvest that He would send forth laborers into His harvest. Go your ways. Behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves, carry neither spurs, nor script, nor shoes and salute no man by the way. And into whatsoever house she enters first say, peace be to this house. And if the son of peace be there, then your peace shall rest upon it, if not, it shall turn to you again. And in the same house, remain eating and drinking such things as they give, for the laborer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house, and into whatsoever city you enter, and they receive you, eat such things as I said before you. And heal the sick that are there and say unto them, the Kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But into whatsoever city you enter, and they receive you not, go your ways, out into the streets of the same and say, even the very dust of the city which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you notwithstanding. Be ye sure of this, but the Kingdom of God is come nigh unto you, but I say unto you that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom and Gomorrah."*

### **The Joy of the Lord Jesus Christ**

So, Lord, we worship You and we pray that You will bless the preaching of this word, in Jesus' name. Amen. I've entitled it, 'The Joy of the Lord Jesus Christ.' What were the things that made Jesus happy? You're very aware of the things that make you happy. You know what kind of news you like to hear and what kind of news you don't like to hear, but what was it that made Jesus the son of God glad? What rejoiced His heart? What were the things that were important to Him, as the Son of God? These are the things that we need to look into just a little. In Romans 5 and 12, the Scripture sets forth a scenario for what we are about to say.

### **Born in sin**

It says this in Romans 5 and 12, *"wherefore, as by one man," this is tremendous, as by one man, sin entered the world, and the result is tremendous, death by sin.*" It comes from one man, and result is death by sin. Listen. *"So, death passed upon all men."* It's tremendously wide. *"It goes from generation to generation, from the cradle to the grave. It affects every person that breathes, and it came into the world through one door, through one man."* Staggering. What kind of man must this man, Adam, have been, that he could have such a tremendous effect on his generation and every succeeding generation that followed? His action was vital. God put tremendous things in this man's hands. He handled tremendous power, otherwise this could never have happened. *"So, death passed upon all men for that all of sin."* This statement is clear, and the result is as plain as the nose on your face. It affects you and it affects your children, it affects all your relatives, and everybody that you know. There's not a single human being that's not affected by it.

And here, it's not just a matter of being born in sin, he says, we are all born in sin, but we are not sinners. We are born that way, but we are not sinners. We are sinners when we start committing sin. And he says, from the time of understanding, we have all sinned and come short of the glory of God. The little ones that can understand, comes to the age of understanding, and the older ones, everybody, we are all tainted, we are all touched by the same thing, we have the same virus, we're in the same difficulties. And then you come to the 15th verse and listen to this, *"But not as the offense, so also is the free gift, for if through the offense of one, many be dead, much more the grace of God and the gift of grace, which is by one Man, Jesus Christ, have abounded unto all men. Have abounded that overflow."* This grace will overflow to all men, every man that's ever been condemned.

Jesus Christ has got something to say, this one Man that came into our world to redeem the world, to do a tremendous work for all of humanity. Some people say, well, I had nothing to do with Adam. I wasn't there. That's true, but neither did you have anything to do with Calvary and the death of Jesus Christ. It was free, absolutely free. He did it for you. You didn't have to do a thing, you just had to believe it. He did all the suffering, and you get all the benefits. Blessed be the name of Jesus the Christ. Worship Him. Adam had the seed of life within him, and he passed on this life to all. It was a tainted life, it was a corrupted life, and the Bible gives us a result. The result was a curse. It says it passed this on to all of us, a curse of weakness and of failure. We did it over and over and over again in his footsteps.

In Genesis 3 in 17, "*Cursed is the ground for thy sake, in sorrow shall thy eat of it all the days of thy life.*" And this is the first mention of limited life, isn't it? In the day that thou leaders spare of, thou shalt surely die, yet it is. All the days of thy life, as long as you shall live, but you will not live forever, for as long as you will live, the death sentence was passed and yet it was carried up. That was the result of original sin. Sin is like AIDS, beloved. You might deny its power over your life, but if you have it, you cannot deny the evidence, and not one of us can deny the evidence of what God's Word is saying, for all of us have sinned and come short of the glory of God. We are tempted by it, it's within us, it's in our genes, if you like. It comes out of us.

I said to a black man one time, we're not sinners because we commit sin, we are sinners, that's why we sin. It's natural and we're all in that category. We are sinners. But humanity paid a much bigger price by inheritance than just this life. By faith, we have a relationship, and that relationship is a powerful relationship. If you don't have faith, you don't have the power, you've lost it. And Adam was cut off from God. That was the tragedy. From that moment onward, he was on his own and he was vulnerable. He was susceptible to everything that the devil could throw at him, because he was outside the protection of God, and when we step outside the protection of God, we lose power, we lose power with God, and we've lost this thing that will give us victory in life, that will enable us to overcome. We lose these things. Cut off from God, we are nothing, we are nobodies. We are destined for annihilation and we deserve it, and we have no right to anything more.

## **Unity with God**

So, we lose standing, we lose position, we lose authority, we lose power, and union with God, that only faith can bring. When we have this unity with God and this liberty to come to Him and say, my Father, and I know that I'm His son, I can put my knees under His table, and I will not be rebuked. I've got a place, I belong. As Pretorius said, it's not the long prayers. All you need to do is talk to Jesus, and it's enough. When the soul cries out to God, when we're sometimes in agony before Him and we say, oh God, I need You more than words can ever tell, you don't have to pray for hours, but when you say that and you mean it, God knows it. It registers with Him, He knows that you are sincere. He was vulnerable without protection from his own weakness, and when man is not under control, he becomes out of control. He doesn't have control any more. He's like the alcoholic who thinks that he's in control of his habits and of his life, but the truth is that the habit controls him and controls his life. It is a make-believe world that he has when he thinks he's in control. He's not making the choices, he's under control, and he's a victim.

Without God, man is bound in a prison unto his own weakness, ineffective through his inability, the lack of ability to trust, to know his God. He does not have the faith that can bring change in vital situations. And with the alcoholic, the very first drink was the one that set the pattern for the rest of his life. He didn't know that he was falling into a trap, but it was a death trap. And he didn't know it.

He walked into it with his eyes wide open, and man does it time and again, and, again and again. He doesn't know why things are going wrong in his life. He doesn't understand why things just don't come right and he doesn't understand that sin has separated him from God, from the source of life, from the source of blessing. And he's walking alone, and he thinks he's making the decisions. It's a dream world, it is a fantasy world, a world where reality does not exist. The lie is, I am managing, I am doing all right, you better believe me, and all the time he's failing, hand over fist.

### **Foothold for Satan**

This gave Satan the first foothold in the world. It was through the weakness of man. Sin entered through one door, the weakness of man. The rhinovirus is the one that causes flu, and they say the rhinovirus has as a secret. You come to a normal cell and he begins to tickle it, and suddenly that cell which is meant to defend you against the rhinovirus opens to the rhinovirus because he thinks he's friendly. The rhinovirus goes in, and the minute it's inside, it begins to multiply at a furious rate, until eventually he bursts the whole cell, and the cell is fatally wounded. And then he spreads throughout your body and he ravages you for weeks. They say he stops just as suddenly as he began. But if he continued, nobody would survive, it would be your end. But he destroys the cells that he inhabits, and the devil inhabits the human being, and he sent to destroy him. He'll destroy him and bring him to nothing. The devil has nothing to do with you except in order to take from you and to destroy you. Sin always robs of power because the sinner loses the confidence to come to God and liberty is the casualty.

Conscience keeps him away from God because he says, I've got no right. How many people don't think like that? I've got no right to come to God, I must first of all put my life right, then I can come to God. That's a fantasy. You will never do it. Only God can change your life. Only God can put you on the right track, and you need to walk with Him every step of the way and then God will bless you and use you. Sin always robs of power because the sinner loses the confidence to come to God, their own thoughts. The Bible says either condemn or justify them, and many condemn themselves before God. Conscience does that, and this is through Jesus Christ from his Father's throne. This is why He came to the earth. This is why He was willing to go to Calvary all the way. For this joy that was set before Him, the prospect of doing this, of being this, of being the victim in your place and mine, of being the sacrifice of God, for the joy that was set before Him to do this.

Jesus came to the world. This is what drew Him. Jesus wanted to come. In Hebrews 10, 6 to 7, the Bible says, *"In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin thou hast no pleasure. Then said I, lo, I come."* In the volume of the book, it is written of me, to do Thy will, oh God, to obey with my whole life in living and in dying on behalf of all humanity, to do on their behalf what they're unable to do and give themselves. I'll do it for them, I will be the perfect man in their stead, I will be the spotless lamb of God, I'll be sinless. For their sakes, I'll keep myself pure. For their sakes I'll be everything that God's law requires. What gives Jesus joy? Not the glory. Satan wanted the glory. He said, I will be like the most high, I will establish my throne in the sights of the north. And from thence, he fell. He wanted the glory. Jesus doesn't want it. He didn't come here for that reason. He came to die.

### **Free from sin**

Listen to this heart this morning. In John 12, 27 to 28. He says, *"Now is my soul troubled. And what shall I say, what shall I choose? Father, save me from this hour."* Is that what he wanted? Save me from this hour. *"But for this course, came I unto this hour. Father glorify Thy name."* You take the glory, that's all I want to do. I want to glorify You and I want You to save people, don't save me, save them by my death, Lord. Do that. This is why I am here. Bring glory to yourself by my death. Christ came to



this hour for this course, and He made this hour, your hour and mine. This was the hour of our triumph, it was the hour of His death, but it was the hour of our triumph over the devil. Over all these forces, here is the victory. It's Jesus dying on the Cross of Calvary for you, for everything that you've ever done in the whole of your life, the things that you brush about, the things that you're ashamed of, Jesus died for every one of them. He made it possible for you to live past it, beyond it, above it. He made it possible so that you never have to go back there again and say, Lord, I'm sorry. Once, it's forgiven, it's forgotten as if it never was, and you're sinless because the blood of Jesus Christ, God's Son cleanses us from all sin. Isn't that a marvelous statement?

From all sin, I'm free, from everything that binds me. Praise His Holy name. In Zephaniah 3 and 17, the Bible says this, *"The Lord thy God that is in the midst of thee is mighty. He will save, He will rejoice over thee with joy, He will rest in his love, He will joy over thee with singing."* Can you imagine Jesus singing about Eustace, Jesus singing about Neil Dreyer? What would Jesus sing? Choruses? What would Jesus sing? He is going to sing triumphantly. Say, this is my trophy, Father, this is what I brought to You. Take a look, he's pure, he's clean as the German snow, there's not a mark on him the devil can't do a thing with him. Isn't God wonderful? Praise His Holy name. He is so good. This joy is the result of Christ's saving His people. You'll remember the momentous words as He died, he says, *"it is finished."* Oh Hallelujah, it's not the end of a nightmare, it's the beginning of a glorious truth. It is over, sin is defeated, the devil is defeated. And this marks the end of slavery and bondage for you and for me. It is restoring what has been lost, and squandered and neglected.

The people say, does each generation of kids get the music it deserves? The answer is no, but it gets the music that defines it, the music that tells you what they are, what they're after. Yes, this is what it tells you. You listen to the music today and here is what it says. And this is what the youngsters are looking for. It has been said that we get the politicians and the children that we deserve. And the Bible says, *"We reap what we sow."* This is what Christ came to deliver us from, the consequences. He came to deliver us from the consequences of our own behavior, so that we don't have to pay the price from giving out just desserts. Jesus set us free from this. So, this is a new era, a new beginning, the dawning of a new day. Opportunity from God once again knocks at humanity's door, and says, you can't live your life over, but you can live it differently. Jesus makes that possible.

Hebrews 12 and 1 to 2, *"Wherefore, seeing that we are also surrounded about by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside the weight and the sin that does so easily beset us, let us run with patience the race that is set before us, this new beginning. Looking unto Jesus, the author and the finisher of our faith, who for the joy that was set before Him, endured the Cross despising the shame, and He sat down at the right end of the throne of God."* Where's His dignity? Do you know how important your dignity is to you? Do you know what happens if somebody slights you or somebody insults you? What kind of reaction do you get? What happens in your mind and your heart? Jesus Christ embraced the Cross, and what He did, how He overcame it was He despised it, He despised the shame. He couldn't turn in one way or the other from the will of God. Ego didn't get in the way, and ego can't get in the way of you and me when we are doing God's service. We don't have the right. Man crucified Him, but God raised Him and put Him at His right hand, accepted, honored and glorified. Was this His joy, is this what He wanted?

I say no, the Cross was. We are the representative in Heaven, beloved. And He has wounds in His hands, His feet, and in His side. We've got a representative there, a high priest familiar with our weaknesses, who understands. He prevails for us, on His merit, not ours. He comes before God on what He's done for us, not what we've done for ourselves. Christ did that. He did it for you and for

me. Do you understand why I love it, why I want to serve Him? Amen. And from this position, Jesus Christ pours out His Holy Spirit.

## The Holy Spirit

In John 7 and 39 it says, *"But this spake ye of the Spirit which they that believe on Him should receive, for the Holy Ghost was not yet given because Jesus Christ was not yet glorified."* When Jesus Christ was glorified, He was ascended to the right hand of the majesty on high. When the Holy Spirit came on the day of Pentecost, they knew that Jesus had arrived there. Do you understand? That was the sign for the outpouring of the Holy Ghost. So, we rejoice in the Lord. Why did He do it?

I want you to read with me now, Luke chapter 10, verses 17 to 24. Here's His vision, *"And the 72 returned again with joy saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through Thy name. And He said unto them, Behold, I saw Satan falling, Satan has lightning fall from Heaven. Behold, I give unto you power to tread upon serpents and scorpions and over all the power of the enemy and nothing shall by any means hurt you. Notwithstanding in this, rejoice, not that the spirits are subject unto you, but rather rejoice because your names are written in Heaven. In that hour, Jesus rejoiced in Spirit. And listen what pleases Him. And He said, I thank thee, oh Father, Lord of Heaven and Earth, that Thou hath hid these things from the wise and the prudent and has revealed them unto babes, even so Father, for so it seemed good in Thy sight. All things are delivered to Me and My Father and no man knows who the Son is, but the Father, and who the Father is, but the Son, and to Him to who the Son will reveal Him. And He turned to His disciples and said, privately, blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see, for I tell you that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see and have not seen them. And to hear those things which ye hear and have not heard that."*

## Forgiveness

Have you heard, have you seen? Are you amongst the mighty and the wise, or are you amongst the humble? I'm so glad that I'm not a big man. I'm so glad that I'm enough of a child to accept Jesus Christ. I thank God and I thank God for the things that mine eyes have seen, and mine ears have heard. I thank God for the understanding that He's given me. I was praying the other day. I walk when I pray, and there's somebody that has done me a lot of harm, and I thought to myself. I was praying for the person, I don't pray against people, I ask God to have His will in their lives. I was praying for this person - God bless this person, save his soul, changes his outlook, make him different. And the Lord brought a thought to me. I've never been able to understand what Jesus meant when He said, *Father, forgive them for they know not what they do*. Because they knew what they were doing. They did it with malice and aforethought. They wanted to kill Him, they wanted to put Him aside, and He knew it, and yet He says, forgive them, they don't know what they're doing.

What did He mean? You see, before I got saved, I was a different man altogether to the man that emerged from the city hall when Christ came into his life. I saw things altogether differently. I saw it from God's perspective. Before, I saw it from the world's perspective. I only understood the world's perspective, not God's. And then God came into my life and I saw the world from His perspective, and it's a different perspective. And the man who doesn't see it from God's perspective is really not responsible for his behavior, because he doesn't understand, and that's what Jesus was saying. They don't understand what they're doing, because they can't see it from God's point of view, they've been blinded, the devil has blinded their life. And I can't claim benefit. I can't say that it was the cleverness of my decision that would save my soul. It was the grace of God.

And if the grace of God saved my soul, beloved, then I must have the similar grace to this person who has harmed me, because he doesn't understand what he's doing, and he doesn't know God. And I can't expect him to behave in a Godly way. He doesn't know how, he's never learnt, he's never been so privileged as I have, because I've learned it from my Father's hand. Blessed be His holy name. So, Jesus was glad.

In Luke 8 and 1, it says, *"And it came to pass afterwards, that He went throughout every city and village, preaching and showing the glad tidings of the Kingdom of God, and the twelve were with him."* They shared the same vision, they were on the same mission, they were doing the same thing. They took it from Jesus, and they carried it forward. That's what's going to happen amongst us. We've got to take it from Jesus and carry it forward. And this makes Jesus glad. The glad tidings of the kingdom, these are the things that filled His life. Jesus wasn't thinking of having a mansion. He didn't want to become a multimillionaire, those weren't His interests. It was the Kingdom of God. He was sold out entirely to that Kingdom.

### **Renewing your mind**

All right, I want to ask you a question. Do you think that madness is a blessed release from reality? I want to say to you no, it is torment. In Mark 5 and 1, it says, *"and they came over into the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gerasene's."* That was part of Christ's strategy. He was reaching out to villages across the seas. He had to reach somebody. There was somebody there that needed Him, and so He comes over the sea in the boat with His disciples. The 2nd verse says, *"And when they came out of the ship, immediately,"* as by prearrangement, *"immediately, they went out unto them, out of the tombs, a man with an unclean spirit."* It was a prearranged meeting. Jesus said, for this purpose have I come into the world, here is one of the purposes. Verse 3, *"This man had been dwelling among the tombs, and no man could bind him, no, not with chains, he broke chains in pieces so that no man could chain him."*

In verse 5, it says, *"And always,"* listen to it, listen to this tragedy, *"and always, night and day, without variation, without change, the same pattern, day after day, after dreary day, night and day, he was in the mountains and in the tombs crying and cutting himself with stones. When he saw Jesus, he came, and he worshipped Him and bowed at His feet."* One power inferior bowing before the superior power of God. He recognized Him. The mad man recognized what sane people often don't see. They understood who Jesus was. In their madness, they knew. And sane men looked past and they don't understand, don't know who He is. Always, day and night, night and day, all the time, he gave himself entirely to what was in his deranged mind, what he thought was profitable, but it was mindless, it was thoughtless. It was going nowhere, and he was going in circles with his life, with the precious days of his life, achieving absolutely nothing. Amounting to nothing. All the effort didn't mean this. He gave himself to it, entirely, more definitely than most people give to making a fortune.

It has been said that men ruin their health making a fortune, and then they spend a fortune trying to regain their health. They go around in circles. And here was this man doing this, achieving nothing, giving his life trivial pursuit, his life, meaningless. Many normal people are on this treadmill of life, I want to tell you. They give themselves avidly to things that have no benefit and think this is success. What the mad man was doing, filled his mind, it occupied him. It filled his days and nights. Was this vision? Was this what God intended for him? No, I tell you, this was Satan's work. It's diabolic. It's tragic. It's theft. It's taking away from a man that could be profitable to him and his values have gone down the tube.

The devil does that every time fellows. He doesn't want you to succeed. He doesn't want you to walk with God. I tell you that no one will ever get the victory over Satan and the weakness he brings until he recognizes who is behind the behavior. If you keep on making excuses, friend, for the life that you're living, you're never going to arrive where God wants you to be. You've got to recognize who it is responsible for the things that we are thinking and the things that we're doing, so that we can deal with it. And if we don't recognize Satan's hand, we'll never defeat him, he will always have his hand on your shoulder. Evil that destroys a life while holding our promises that never can be fulfilled. It is a mist, a mirage, and a dream of delusion. We need help to separate imagination from reality.

Jesus Christ said in John 10 and 10, "*The thief cometh not but for to steal and to kill and to destroy, I am come that ye might have life and that ye might have it more abundantly.*" The amazing thing is that the madman was so deluded that he was doing what he wanted to. It was a choice, but it was a choice that was made under pressure from spiritual forces that he didn't understand. Romans 12 and 2 says, "*Be not conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may be able to prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.*" The renewing of the mind is changing your value system, it's coming over to God side, it's getting your perspectives on you, your life and God right. The madman does all the time what he wanted to do, and somehow it made twisted sense of nonsense. It was weird, but to him, it made him somehow, and so he kept on doing it.

Here, there are no limitations, all is acceptable, it can be done. I've heard this voice, I've heard the person talking to someone that doesn't exist, rebuking, and fighting. I've seen a grown woman go to a tap and begin to wash her dress while it is upon her. You say this is not rational. No, it's not, but it's tragic. I've heard this voice, it is a mockery of sanity. This man's satisfaction came from torturing himself, destruction was in his paths. He was his own nemesis and his own victim. If you keep doing what you want to, does that always satisfy? If you have no restrictions, are you really free, are you best left alone to go your way?

In Mark 5 and 15, "*and they came to Jesus, the people of the village of Diadora, and they see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion sitting in cloth and in his right mind, and they were afraid.*" Amazing. They begged Jesus to leave their coasts, they were amazed. And the world is afraid of people who are in their right minds. They don't want to hear it. They don't want to know that they're wrong. They don't want anybody to tell them that. Leave me, I want to cut myself and torture myself in the tombs. I want to do my own thing. Leave me, even if it's irrational, I want to do it.

What do you fear in life? What peace have you got? What assurance, beloved? That's vital. Before we left Boksburg, I met a man. He was talking to me. He was an alcoholic, rehabilitated. And there was a man in the same town, and this fellow could drink. He had the constitution of a horse. My friend said to me that I used to buy a can of wine every weekend, and he would sit on the carpet in my wife's house and I would drink until I was unconscious. And that men would sit there drinking, drinking, drinking long after I passed out. And do you know that men really believe that the man who can take drink like that, that is a real man? Do you believe it? It's something worthy to be admired? I say its lunacy, crazy. What are you giving it for, what are you doing it for? Oh beloved, we need the Lord.

Let's bow our heads in prayer before the Lord, shall we. Heavenly father, we come to You in the lovely name of Jesus, and we worship You, and oh God, we so desperately want to be in our right mind when it comes to the things of God. Lord, we want to be, as they say in Afrikaans, *by ons positiewe*. We want to make the choices, Lord. We don't to have things that are more powerful than what we are, beings that are more powerful than what we are, making the decisions. Oh God, bring us to that point, we

pray, where we will decide by the light of the Word of God, that which is right and then put our backs into it, oh God, and say, this is where I stand, these are the things that I stand for, it's non-negotiable, I stand here, like Martin Luther when he said, "here I stand sir, help me God I can do no other." In Jesus' name, guide us by your Spirit, Lord, as a congregation, as individuals, guide us oh God. There's a world out there that is in the same position as the madman of Diadora was in. People, madly going after pleasure without thinking, Lord. Heavenly Father, in Jesus name, help us to be a force for You in this place among our friends, among our family, Lord, help us, I pray. In Jesus' name that You may be exalted and worshiped, oh Lord, blessed be Your name. Amen.

The Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put up by the Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing to you please assist us by passing it on. We thank you for your cooperation. God bless you. If you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realize your need may I pray for you that Jesus Christ may enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon your life, that your whole future shall be colored by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory, for we need every mouth, and we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact me, James Robertson on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327 or cell phone 083 251 0644 or fax 011 791 5004 or email jamesr@infodoor.co.za and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## **01 09 Who is the Good Samaritan?**

***Chris McIntyre***

I want to thank Pastor Neil for this opportunity today. This is the first time I've done this, but I'm trusting the Lord that it's going to be great. The funny thing is I've been thinking about this for quite some time, and a couple of months ago, Pastor Neil came to me, and said to me, why don't you try preaching one Sunday. And it was a bit of a revelation to me. So, I said yes, I've been thinking about it, and I went away, and I thought about it for quite some time and eventually one Sunday I said to Pastor Neil, I'm ready, I want to go for it. And he said that his wife was saying during that week that

she was asking him, when is Chris going to do something? So, I believe this is anointing today. I want to thank God for the ability that I have, what He's given me. Sometimes you just have to break down and say, Lord, I'm worthy of this. Wonderful.

## **The Bible**

Some people call this a book, a normal book. They have it in their book shelf, they never read it, but it's there. It's some high spiritual meaning in their life, but they didn't really know what it's all about. Some people have these big coffee table versions, they date back from 18th century, and they're worth a lot of money. They put them on their table for everybody to see, but what does it help if it's not read. This is not a book people, this is the Living Word. The Word that was here before time, the Word that was made flesh in Jesus Christ. It has anointing to it, it's living. Have you ever felt when you're sad, when you're worried, you open the book and, boom, a verse comes to you, it jumps off the page, it's living, it speaks right into your situation, and it touches your heart? And you say, wow God, thank You, thank You for uplifting me, for giving me enough courage, and for giving me enough ability to go through the next day.

It's happened to me many times. Sometimes when I'm happy and I'm joyful and I've just got this exhilarating joy, and I open the Word and I fall down on the ground and I say, God, thank You Lord. And sometimes I have tears in my eyes, just to know how much God loves me, because His Words speak directly into your soul.

Anyway, today I'm going to tell you a little bit about this Book, the Book with a capital B. Does anybody know where the middle point of the Book is? It's just a little bit of mathematics to get the thing going a bit. The middle of this Book is Psalm 118. To be more specific, the middle of the Book is Psalm 118 verse 8, 1188. Isn't it just a coincidence that before page 1188, there are 1188 verses, and after Psalms 118 verse 8, there are another 1188 verses? I don't know. Because Moses was born in 1520 BC, he died 1400, he lived for 120 years, and he wrote the first 5 books of the Bible. The last book was written around about 100AD. Now that gives you about 1600 years in which this book was written. Some of the writers didn't even know that other people were writing their passages before this was all put together, and that's an amazing Word of God. If we look at more figures, we can talk about 40, we can talk about 3, we can talk about 2, and we can talk about Moses. Moses lived for 120 years, 40, 40, 40. 40 in the courts of Egypt, 40 in the deserts as a shepherd, and 40 years leading the Israelites out of Egypt.

Then you talk about King's, over a 40-year period, 3 kings, 3 prophets. 40, 40, 40 - 120 years. There are a lot of things that we don't understand that will be revealed to us one day.

## **The meaning of life**

Some people want to know what is the meaning of life? If we go to the Word and we go to Acts 17, 25 - 27, *"Many of you served by human hands as they lack anything for He Himself who gives life and death and all things to all people, and He made from one common origin, one source, one blood, all nations of men to settle on the face of the earth, having definitely determined their allotted periods of time, their fixed boundaries of their habitation, their settlements, their lands and a boat, so that they should seek God in the hope that they might feel after Him and find Him, although He's not far from each one of us."* That hits you hard. Everybody is always trying to find what's the meaning of life. But here it is. The meaning of life is to find God, to find Him and love Him.

## The Good Samaritan

Today, I'm going to talk on Luke 10, 29, and it's the story about the Good Samaritan. Everybody knows the story of the Good Samaritan, but hopefully I'm going to give you another view point on the good Samaritan that maybe you haven't thought about. Jesus, over here, was talking to the lawyer, and this guy was trying to catch Him out and he asked Him, who is your neighbor? So, Jesus gave him this little parable. Jesus, taking him up, replied, *"A certain man was going down from Jerusalem, down to Jericho and he fell amongst the robbers who stripped him of his clothes and belongings, and beat him and went their way unconcerned, leaving him half dead as it happened. Now, by coincidence, a certain priest was going down along that road. When he saw him, he passed him by on the other side. A Levite likewise came down to the place and saw him and passed him by on the other side of the road, but a certain Samaritan, as he was traveling along, came down to where he was, and when he saw him, he was moved with pity and sympathy for him. And he went to him and dressed his wounds pouring on them oil and wine. Then he set him on his own beast and brought him to an inn and took care of him. The next day, he took out 2 Dinar and gave them to the innkeeper saying, take care of him and whatever more you spend, I, myself will repay you when I return."*

And then he carries on and he says, *"and which three of these do you think provided neighbor to him? And he answered the one who showed pity and mercy on him. And Jesus said to him, go and do likewise."* Now, this story about who is your neighbor. It's a person near, yes, it's a person who you've got bonds of humanity with, that's also true. But the Pharisees in those days use that term 'neighbor' very exclusively because it was the people who were really religious in their way of thinking, who really kept to the mosaic laws, and who did not break them. Those were the neighbors. This was actually quite an insult to that person whom Jesus was talking to, because they couldn't even get the word 'Samaritan' over their lips. There was quite a thing between them. So, that was a bit of a controversial issue to this bright chap that Jesus was talking to. So, let's go back and we'll break it down.

First, I'd just like to pray, Lord Jesus Christ, I humble myself before You this morning, I humble myself before the people this morning as a sinner, oh Lord, I'm a sinner, there's no two ways about it, but I know Lord that when I repent, when I come to You and I say sorry God, for the things I've done, You forgive me, You want my slate clean, oh Lord. And I thank You Jesus for that, I thank You God that I'm a child of Yours. I can stand here and say, Lord, I'm not worthy, but Jesus Christ died for me and shed His blood so that I may be in Heaven one day. And I say, thank You Lord for that. Amen.

Alright, let's take it from the beginning. Jesus replied, a certain man was going from Jerusalem down to Jericho. Now what did he do.? He was going from Jerusalem. Jerusalem was a holy city. It is still the holy city of three major religions, which is Christianity, Judaism, and Islam. Now, he was going down, literally, it does mean he was going down because Jericho is about 10 kilometers away, and it's a drop of 3300 feet, which is about a kilometer, so it's quite a long drop all the way down to Jericho, and it's a windy road and there are a lot of places for thieves to hide in ambush. It was well known for that in that time. If you look at it from a point of view of imagery, he's backsliding this guy, he's going from a holy place to a worldly place. He's backsliding. This guy is going backwards. What happens when you go backwards? You get into debt, you rely on yourself, you rely on your own abilities, instead of relying on God. James is saying last night, tithe, give the first 10% to God because it's His money, but what happens is you keep it because you need it for your tyres, you need it for this, you need it for that. God is not interested in that. He's interested in, do you follow His Word or not.

Anyway, this guy was backsliding. What happens when you backslide? You start taking drugs, you fall into debt, you start drinking, and you start doing all these funny things. What happens? The devil gets

a hold of you. Why? Because he is in the world, and you've become part of the world. And what happened was, this guy was backsliding he fell amongst the robbers. What happens is, those people, they clean you out, and then they leave you. This guy here was left half dead, naked, no money, no nothing. He was left there. That's what happens when we backslide. Now it's not really difficult to understand why he was left half dead and naked, because it's only the work of Satan that can do that. Our God clothes us, our God feeds us, our God is an awesome God.

Now, by coincidence a certain priest was going down along the road, and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. Now the priest could not touch this guy. He didn't want to get his hands dirty, it was ceremonially unclean if you touched this man. So, he had to look the other way and pass by. Likewise, the Levite, but he at least looked a bit, he was a bit lower than the priest. He was the caretaker of the sanctuaries and he looked after the priests. And he looked and then 'I'd better not,' and walked on. Why do these people walk by? First of all, the priests denied Jesus Christ as their personal Savior. The only way to the Father is through Jesus Christ. It's what He says in the Word. He did not believe in Jesus Christ. In fact, they were opposed to Jesus Christ, they're the people that put Him on the cross. Likewise, with the Levite, they could not believe. Their morals, their dogma, and their whole religious law was so strong that they had to do what does right in the mosaic law otherwise they were not partakers.

But what did they do? They worshipped with a heartless way of worship, and its without sympathy and love - that kind of worship. It's just, you do what you have to do every day, to stick with the law. That's not what God is all about. God accepts us for who we are. Jesus Christ accepts us for who we are, we all are sinners. I will never not be a sinner. I've got a damaged nature, which I have to try and shed all the time. You have to say, oh Lord, I'm sorry for doing that, please help me. Help me again. And God, what does He do? He steps in again and He says, son, don't worry about it, do not do it again. And you try not to do it again, but you might do it again, but it doesn't matter, as long as in your heart, you feel, please Lord, don't let me do it again, let me try harder and you really try harder.

## **Oil and Wine**

Now the Samaritan comes along. So, he was a traveler they say. The Samaritan was traveling along when he saw him, and he was moved with pity and sympathy for him. We know that the Samaritans and the Jews didn't mix. We know that from the story of the Samaritan woman in John 4 verse 9, where God was at the well, and Jesus Christ was at the well, and the Samaritan asked him, why are you asking a Samaritan woman for water? So, there was a little bit of a thing going on between these two people. But he was moved by sympathy and pity. Now isn't that the heart of God, of Jesus Christ? He came down from Heaven to us, with sympathy and with love to help us, to help us get to Heaven any way, by shedding his blood. Further on, it says, and he went to him and dressed up his wounds, pouring on oil and wine. Oil is a symbol of the Holy Spirit. It always has been right throughout the Bible, anointing of the Holy Spirit, always did it with oil, anointed Kings, whatever. Wine, what is wine? Wine is a symbol of Jesus Christ's blood shed on the Cross, the partakers of communion, that's why we do it. So, who is this man, the Samaritan? He poured on oil and wine and he set him on his own and brought him to an inn and took care of him.

And the next day, he took out 2 Dinar and gave it to the Innkeeper. Now when we've checked the 2 Dinar, we go back to Matthew 20. Matthew 20 verse 1, it says, *"For the Kingdom of Heaven is like the owner of an estate who went out in the morning along with the dawn to hire workman for his vineyard. And after agreeing with the laborers for a Dinar a day, he sent them into his vineyard."* So, what did he do? Over here, he made a wages fee of 1 Dinar a day for their wages. If we go now to 2 Peter 3, 8,



it says, *"Nevertheless, do not let this one fact escape you, beloved, that with the Lord, one day is a thousand years, and a thousand years is one day."* Now if we go back, he says to him, *"And the next day he took out 2 Dinar, two days wages and he gave it to the Innkeeper and said, take care of him and whatever more you spend, I myself will repay you when I return."*

So, we're looking at 2 Dinar, we're looking at two days wages, we're looking at two thousand years. So, what did He pay for us? He died on the Cross, He paid the ultimate price for us for two days, two thousand years. If we look at John 4, 40, we will see that it says, "so when the Samaritan arrived, they asked him to remain with him, and he did stay there two days. Then many more believed and adhered and relied on him because of his personal message, what he himself said, and they told the woman, now, when we no longer believe trust of faith just because what you have said, for we have heard Him ourselves personally, and know that He truly is the Savior of the world, Jesus Christ.

But after these 2 days, Jesus went on from there into Galilee. Although He, Himself declared that a prophet has no honor in his own country. So, what we've seen here is that Jesus Christ left after two days and two days from the time is almost up at the moment. So, we have to go down to John 2 verse 1, *"and on the third day, there was a wedding in Canaan, in Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there."* Okay so the two thousand years are up, so, why on the third day is the wedding? Well, the wedding is on the third day, that gives us an extra day, which is an extra thousand years.

### **The Bottomless Pit**

And if we go to Revelations 20, 1 - 3, oops, we are treading on very thin ice here, we're going to Revelations, it's quite a touchy subject. And if you don't know where it is, it's just before the hot cover. And then we go to 1 to 3, *"Then I saw an Angel descending from Heaven and he was holding the key of the Abyss, the bottomless Pit and a great chain was in his hand. And he gripped and overpowered the dragon, that old serpent in Primeval Times, who is the devil and Satan and securely bound him for a thousand years. Then he hauled him into the Abyss, the bottomless Pit, and closed it, and sealed it above him so that he should no longer lead astray and deceive the nations until the thousand years were at end. After that, he must be liberated for a short time."*

### **Jesus' coming**

Verse 4, *"Then I saw a throne, sitting on them were those whom authority to act as judges and to pass sentences were entrusted. I also saw the souls of those who had been slain with axes, beheaded for their witnessing to Jesus, and for preaching and testifying the Word of God, and who had refused to pay a homepage to the beast or his statue, and had not accepted his mark or permitted it to be stamped on their forehead, or on their hands. And they lived again and ruled with Jesus Christ, the Messiah, a thousand years."* If you go a little bit further, it tells you about the wedding afterwards. If you look at Revelations 22, 12 it says, *"And behold, I am coming soon and I shall bring My wages and rewards with Me to repay, render to each one of us, just what his own actions and his own work merit."*

So, what happened is Jesus is going to bring back the portion of the wages that each one will receive after two days, just like the Samaritan is going to bring back to the innkeeper anything extra which he has paid. If we go to Isaiah 6, 1 to 3, *"Come and let us return to the Lord, for He has torn so that He may heal us, and He has stricken, so that He may bind us up. After two days, He will receive us, quicken us, give us life and on the third day, He will raise us up that we may live before Him. Let us know and recognize Him, acquainted with and understand Him, let us be zealous to know the Lord. His going forth is prepared and certain as dawn, and He will come to us as the heavy rain, the latter rain that waters the earth. So, on the third day, we will live before Him."*

Exodus 19, 10, and the Lord says to Moses, *"Go and sanctify the people, set them apart for today and tomorrow, and let them wash their clothes, and be ready by the third day, for the third day, The Lord will come down upon Mount Sinai in the sight of all the people."* It might not be Mount of Sinai, but it will be the Mount of Olives, and that is also predicted in Revelations. Strange how in the Bible, it's a puzzle that all puzzles back to the same thing. It's strange how three days, two days, all these days have a certain meaning and they all come back to one thing, the second Coming of Jesus Christ. Joshua 3, *"Joshua rose early in the morning and they moved from Shittim and came to Jordan, he and all the Israelites, and lodged there before passing over to the exodus. After three days, the officers went to the camp commanding the people, when you see the Ark of the Covenant, the Lord your God being born, by the Levitical priests, set out from where you are and follow it. Yet, a space must be kept between you and it, about two thousand cubits by measure. Come not near it, that you may be able to see the Ark, know the way you must go, for you have not passed this way before."*

What does this implicate? It's implicates the Baptism. The Jews were Baptized, it was a Baptismal thing going through Jordan into the Promised land. And it's about two thousand years since Jesus Christ was baptized in that same river, not too far away from where these people passed through. Then I would like to go to Luke 13, 32, it says, *"And he said to them, go and tell that sly, crafty fox, skulking and cowardly, behold, I drive out demons and perform healings today and tomorrow. And on the third day, I finish and complete my course. But nevertheless, I must continue on my way today and tomorrow and the day after that, for it will never do for a prophet to be destroyed away from Jerusalem."* So, what did he say in the two thousand years, the day after today and tomorrow? He will drive out demons.

### **Demon Possessed**

Now, if we go back to Mark 5, 13 we will see that is the story about the guy called Legion, when Jesus crossed the sea to get away from the people, He came to Garcenes, and there was a man there who was chained, and he was beating himself. He was possessed by demons and they were shaking and screaming, and he was beating, bruising and cutting himself with stones. He recognized Jesus. He said Lord, leave me alone, leave me. It wasn't him that recognized Jesus, it was the spirit inside that recognized Jesus and they wanted to stay in him. From verse 12, *"And the demons begged him, send us into those hogs, that we may go in them. So, he gave them permission, and unclean spirits came out of the man and entered into the hogs and the herd, and numbering about two thousand, they rushed headlong down a steep slope and into the sea and drowned in the sea."*

There again, the number two thousand, I feel that it's once again, God's divine Book of wisdom here that predicts two thousand, and two thousand years of the Holy Spirit in the world, and that we, as Christians have got the power to do all these things, drive out demons, and heal people, only because God has given us that for two thousand years. Then, if can we go back to the first miracle that God did in John 2, 1, *"And on the third day they were at a wedding in Canaan of Galilee, and the mother of Jesus was there. Jesus was also invited with His disciples to the wedding. And when the wine was all gone, the mother of Jesus said to Him, they have no more wine. Jesus said to her, dear woman, what is that, that you told Me? My time and hour has not come yet."* So, what happened here was Jesus changed the water from the ceremonial water jars into wine.

### **Cleansing and purifying**

Why did he do this? Well, it was another simplification. That was the old way of cleaning yourself, purifying yourself before you came into the temple. You would wash yourself with water, wash your

feet and your hands. Now, what did God do? He actually did away with that to a certain extent. He did not take anything away from the Old Testament, but by changing the water into wine, what did He do? It's the ceremony cleansing of the water now changed to the wine, the Blood of Christ, we are cleaned through the blood of Christ if we believe in Jesus Christ as our personal Savior. Matthew 28, 19 and 20 says, *"Go then and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe everything that I've commanded you. And behold, I am with you all the days, perpetually, uniformly and on every occasion to the very close and consummation of the age."*

What is Jesus telling us? He's telling us that He will never ever leave us. We, as Christians, as it is written, will yet have to face a number of things for our faith, but it's a small price to pay really, because if you look once more, and that's Romans 8, 35 onwards, it says, *"Who shall separate us from Christ's love? Shall suffering and affliction and tribulation, calamity, distress, persecution or hunger or destitution or peril or sword? Even as it is written for Thy sake, we are put to death all day long, and we are regarded as counted as sheep for the slaughter. Yet admit all things, we are more than conquerors and gain a surprising victory through Him who loves us, for I am persuaded beyond doubt, I'm sure that neither death nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor things impending and threatening, nor things to come, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor anything else in all Creation will be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus, our Lord."*

So, people, what I'm saying today is, although the time is near, the time of the second coming of Christ has never been so right. The signs are here. We don't have to fear because nothing can separate us from the love of Jesus. And everybody must have that in their hearts imprinted, in their minds, that God is an awesome God, and our flesh is flesh, it's going to pass away, but God's love will never pass away. And I long for the day to see Christ in the clouds, and all these people here to be together for all eternity, and that's my message. Thank you.

The Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put up by the Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing to you please assist us by passing it on. We thank you for your cooperation. God bless you. If you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realize your need may I pray for you that Jesus Christ may enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon your life, that your whole future shall be colored by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory, for we need every mouth, and we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact

me, James Robertson on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327 or cell phone 083 251 0644 or fax 011 791 5004 or email jamesr@infodoor.co.za and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## **01 10 You must be Born-Again – God cannot compromise with sin**

**Neil Dreyer**

We love You Lord. We worship Your lovely name. We magnify You. We know our inadequacy, oh God, when it comes to the worship of the living God. We don't have enough vocabulary Lord, we don't have enough poetry within us. We don't have enough glory to express it. But oh Lord, we feel it. We feel it, and we magnify Your name this morning, and we say we love You. We love You Lord and we want to serve You with all of our hearts. Lord, we want to hold back nothing, all that we are and all that we have we want to dedicate to You this day, oh God, and say take it all. It belongs to You. It is Yours, Yours, and Yours alone. We will serve no foreign gods, we will serve no one else but the living God. And we worship You and magnify Your name. And Lord You want us to do that. You want us to worship You, to acknowledge none other for oh God, why should we seek for the living among the dead?

And Oh Lord why should we go to those that have a familiar spirit when we can go straight to the throne room of God. We thank You Lord and worship You, that You've made a way for us to walk in time and right into eternity, and it is a sure way. It is the King's highway. And oh Lord, we thank You that Christ secured it for us on the Cross of Calvary. He made it ours. And Lord, we bless You and magnify Your name for everything that You've given us so graciously and so wonderfully. Lord, we worship and praise Thy holy name and say to You that we love You and adore You. And oh God, walk with us all of the way right through life, Lord, we pray and oh God, that we shall experience what David experienced so long ago. "*Ye, though I walk through the Valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil for Thou art with me.*" Blessed be the name of the Lord. Praise Him, praise Him all ye people and give glory unto His name. Hallelujah. Hallelujah. I love You, Lord.

Bless you this morning oh God. And we thank You for Your presence with us. Lord, it is precious, precious, precious to us to feel the touch of God upon our lives, to know the impulse of Your will as You move in one direction and another. Thank You Lord that You take time with us, that You are our shepherd Lord, and we are the sheep of Your pasture because You made us that. We thank You Lord that You made us Your own responsibility. We bless You for it and magnify Your name. For Lord, wherever I go in this world, there is no place that I can go where God is not. I thank You lord, that wherever we go, whether it'd be in Heaven or on earth, You are there. Always there. And Lord, we thank You that You've known our paths. From the time that we began to walk with You, You knew exactly where we were, and who we were. And Lord we bless You for this. We pray this morning, oh God, that You undertake for us around Your Word, that You will glorify Your name in all things, that Lord we may rejoice because of what God does further in this service, in Jesus' name, we ask it, praising You because You hear us. Amen.

Aren't you grateful for our organist? Every time the organ opens its mighty voice, I say Amen. Aren't you glad for our guitarist who strums away every Sunday? Amen. Aren't you glad for our song leader who leads us in the worship of the Lord every Sunday? Amen. Aren't you glad to God for you? Yes. Amen. God's been good to us and God's done wonderful things in our lives and God's got wonderful

plans for our lives. Do you remember the sermon of last Sunday? My brother Chris over there in the back. What a blessing that was to us. I see Naomi is not here this morning, but she was mightily blessed last Sunday. I was going to suggest to her that she takes one of the tapes that my brother's got here. You've got that tape, have you? Now listen, there are tapes that our brothers are making regularly every week. You know Christians go around with tracts and they give tracts to people. My brother is offering a service and I don't believe that it's right that he should pay for the service. I think it's right that the Church should pay for the service. Can you say amen to that. But I do believe that we can take the tracts, or instead of taking tracts, take a tape of a sermon, and give the tape to somebody. Testify. Open your mouth. Pretoria North needs to know that we are here. How will they ever know if you don't tell them? Isn't that right? People don't just come to Church, they are brought to Church.

### **The workings of the Spirit**

We were in a meeting on Saturday morning that was such a blessing to me. I want to tell you, it was tremendous. I saw the workings of the Spirit of God and that's a precious sight. I saw it happening in an elderly woman's life as she sat there and listened, reduced to tears, until she came to Christ and then the peace of God flooded her soul. That's a wonderful thing. That's a miracle and God is still performing miracles. Can you say amen to that? Amen. God loves you. Can you say it? God loves me. God loves me with an everlasting love. Amen. And I love the Lord. Tell him, I love you, Lord. Raise your hands, I love you, Lord. I worship you. I love you Jesus. I magnify Your name. I want to serve You all the days of my life. Nothing else will satisfy. Nothing else can meet the need. Just You, Lord, just You. Thank You, Jesus.

### **Nicodemus**

I want you to come with me this morning. The Gospel of St John, will you? Let's read it together. I'm going to take three passages of Scripture this morning. John Chapter 3, verse 1 and then verses 3-7. The Bible says there, *"There was a man of the pharisees named Nicodemus a ruler of the Jews."* Let's take the next verse. *"The same came to Jesus by night and said unto him, Rabbi, we know that Thou art the teacher that comes from God, for no man can do these miracles that Thou do, except that God be with Him"* That should've been enough. What Jesus Christ was doing, should have been enough for Nicodemus. But he comes and tells Jesus what he knows about what Jesus is doing, and yet it's not enough for him. How often it is that need hides away behind religion. We can be so religious and miss God. And Nicodemus was religious, and he was missing God. And Jesus had to say to him, except you were born again, Nicodemus, you will never see the Kingdom of God. In spite of your religion, in spite of going to the synagogue every Saturday, you are lost, and you need to know a way to walk in. You need to be able to walk with Me through your life with Me. You need to share it with Me. You need Me to look into you and to show you what I'm really seeing there.

### **Born-again**

We need the Lord. And so, Nicodemus came to Jesus by night. Take a look at the third verse, *"Jesus answered and said unto him, 'verily, verily I say unto thee, except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of God.'" Nicodemus said unto Him, "how can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter the second time into his mother's womb and be born?" Jesus answered, "verily, verily I say unto thee, except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter the Kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh and that which is born of the Spirit is Spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, ye must be born again."* You see how many times Jesus says born again. He repeats it over and over and over, and God does that in His work. He doesn't make one isolated statement. He says it over and

over and over again. That's Jesus. You go through the Word of God and you find out what He is saying over and over and over again. He makes it very plain so that you can make no mistake about it. It's there. I don't believe in building a doctrine on one verse of Scripture. You do it on the whole of Scripture. It either supports it or it doesn't, and so this man came to Jesus by night.

I want you now to come with me to Psalm 22. I want to read the first few verses there. Psalm 22 hear what happens here. It involves the same Christ, years between, but it's the same Christ. It's the statement of Jesus on the Cross. He says, *"My God, My God, why hast Thou forsaken me? Why art Thou so far from helping Me and from the words of My roaring, Oh My God, I cry in the daytime, but Thou hearest not, and in the night season I am not silent. I keep asking You, I keep coming before You and You say to a man that needs to be born again, you must be born again. What Father do You say to me? What hope do You hold out to me? Here I am facing the Cross and what is the answer of Heaven. Father take this cup away from Me if it be possible, nevertheless, not My will be done, but thy will be done,"* and not a sound comes from the Throne of God. Not one word. God doesn't step in to stop it. He allows it and He doesn't answer the prayer because there was no other way. Jesus had to go the way of the Cross.

And then I want you to come to me to Revelations chapter 19, and I'm reading from the 11th verse there so that we can get the whole picture, John is speaking, and he says, *"I saw Heaven open and behold a white horse, and He that sat upon him was called faithful and true. And in righteousness".* Listen to this, *"in righteousness doth He judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire and on His head were many crowns and He had a name written that no man knew, but He Himself and He was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood, His own blood and He's name is called the Word of God. And the armies which art in Heaven followed Him upon white horses clothed in fine linen, white and clean, and out of His mouth there was a sharp sword that with that He should smite the nation's and He shall rule them with a rod of iron, and He treadeth the wine press of the fierceness and the rock of the Almighty God and He hath on His vesture and on His thigh a name written King of Kings and Lord of Lords,"* and I say, Hallelujah. It is not there but it should be there. Hallelujah. Amen. He's coming.

I ask you, what has the Christ of Revelations got to do with the Christ of Psalm 22. What has the Christ of Revelations got to do with the Christ of John Chapter 3, *"You must be born again."* I want to tell you He's got everything to do with it. Everything. He had everything to do with your salvation. He has everything to do with the world plan that He has, the thing that God's been working at from the beginning of time. God wants to establish a Kingdom upon earth. Do you know that? God wants to do it, but it will be a Kingdom wherein dwelleth righteousness and nothing they maketh it a lie or maketh it an offense shall enter in there. They won't have the right. God will hold the rights to entry. He reserves the right. And God says in order to have the rights, ye must be born-again. You must come in line with My thinking and My way of working with My plan for the world. You must come in line with it so that you can serve together with Me.

### **"Ye Must"**

And so, I have entitled the sermon this morning, "Ye must". Nicodemus is referred to as a certain man, but really, he could be any man. For this call is universal. It's to all men everywhere. He could rightly be called Mr. Whomsoever. For if it applies to him, it applies particularly to others. I want to say that applies particularly to you. And so, this morning I want you to take away Nicodemus' name there and put your name there. Then it becomes intensely personal, then God is speaking to you directly from His Word. He's saying to you, wherever you are, Peter, James or John, you must be born-again. It is an imperative. There are no alternatives to it. There's no alternative to salvation. You have it or you don't.

It is part of your life or it's not part of your life. Your name is recorded in the Lamb's Book of Life, or it's not there and God wants us to know that. God is dealing with the situation and He's dealing with it in His holiness.

We must be born-again, but why? That's a very good question. Nicodemus asked "how". That's also a very good question. How does this thing happen? How does a person get there? What is involved on my part? What do I have to do in order to be born-again? Because Jesus says, you must be born again. It is an imperative. Something you've got to do, something that must be coming out of your life towards God. It's got to be there. And God wants you to understand that it is that which only you can do. You must do your part and if everybody understood that question, everybody would be asking that one question, "how." How does this happen? How does it come to me? Why must I be born-again? What is involved in such a decision? Anyone who is satisfied with his life as it has been from youth does not see the need. And because he does not see the need, he is satisfied with what the position is. He will not change because he cannot change. He sees only one thing and he is seeing it from his own perspective and not God's perspective. He doesn't understand what is required of him in relationship to God, and that's one of the first things that the Spirit of God does in the individual.

I believe Nicodemus came to Jesus that night because the Spirit of God was moving him. The Spirit of God made him aware of the need. And when we are aware of need, we seek for answers. The Bible says, "*They, that are whole don't need a position.*" You don't go to the doctor when you're healthy. You go to the doctor when you're sick, when you have a need, then you want the doctor, and it doesn't take you long to find him when you really are sick. And so, if you're satisfied with your life, you don't see the need for change. In Mathew 12 and 13. The Bible says this, "*He that is not with Me is against Me.*" Christ's statement, "*and he that gathereth not with Me, scattereth abroad.*" There are only two choices, you're either with Him, or you're against Him. You're either reaping with Him or you're scattering abroad, away from Him. One of the two. You don't have a middle fence here, you don't have a middle course.

## **Two choices**

There are only two choices, and God wants us to understand that as well. Anyone who qualifies for change needs to know this, that there are two aspects that come into focus here. Two things. There is that which you've got to do, but there is that which only God Almighty can do. You can't touch it. You can't change it, only God can do it, and that's where the grace of God comes in. The Lord wants to be gracious to every person that has a need for change in his life. If you realize it, if you know that I am a sinner, if you know that I've done things in my life that don't add up to what God wants, then you need the cleansing. Then you need God to do something in your life for you. When the Lord says you must be born-again, that is a personal impeditive. You must. You must realize the need for it. You're not just a bystander to events that take place apart from you. It must touch you. You don't meet the need yourself, but beloved you recognize that there is a need. That's the first thing. I can't create the need, but I can realize that there is a need in my life and the Bible tells me that each of us has a conscience. Each one of us is in the position where we have all come short of the glory of God. Some realize it, some don't.

I've spoken to many people, you know, and I found many times that people will admit to you freely that, I have sinned. They will tell you that I'm not perfect, I've made my mistakes, I've done wrong things in my life, but that's not conviction. That's not what the Spirit is doing. When the Spirit of God convicts of sin, my friend, you tremble in the presence of God. When the Spirit begins to convict of sin, there's one thing that you need more than anything else and that's reconciliation and you know

I've got to find it. I've got to find God somewhere in this situation that I'm in, because I don't know the answers on my own. You don't meet the need, but you recognize the need.

### **Seek the Lord**

In Isaiah 55 and 6, Bible says, "*Seek ye the Lord, while He may be found, call ye upon Him while He is near.*" Isaiah 26, and 9 says "*with my soul have I desired Thee in Thy might, Ye with my spirit within me, will I seek Ye early. For when the judgments are in the earth, the inhabitants of the earth will learn righteousness.*" People seeking God with their soul, with their spirit, there's an involvement here. I need God. Have you ever felt it? I need God, not just as a name, not just as someone that I say a fast prayer to, but I need God for who He is and what He is. I need God for the changes that He alone can bring about in my life. I need God to work within me so that I can be the clay and He can be the potter. That's what I need. I need God to do this in my life. These are the things. This is your need. This is your decision. It is God's call to your need, He focuses it by the Spirit. He makes it clear to you. This is it. This is what you need.

In John 3, 5, the Bible says, "*unless a man is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the Kingdom.*" But the Lord goes on by saying this in the eighth verse, "*The wind bloweth where it listeth and though can hearest the sound thereof, but cannot tell them, whether it cometh or goeth. So is everyone that is born of the Spirit.*" You can't put your finger on that one. That's nothing that arises from you. The Spirit bloweth where he will like the wind. It is invisible. You can't see it, but you can see the impact of it. You can see the result of it. It happens in you and then the evidence becomes obvious, there's the fruit that flows out of your life. Any person that's born-again is a changed person. Can you say amen to that?

The light is transformed because Christ enters in. The Spirit does this and the Spirit alone. You cannot. You don't know how in this area, this is the realm of the Spirit and I say to you this morning, as Christ was formed in the womb by the Spirit, so must Christ be born by us by that same Spirit. He bears Christ within you. It's the nature of Christ that comes into the child of God. You must be born-again, not just for your salvation, but to serve the greater purposes of God. The same Spirit that brought forth order out of chaos, is the Spirit that is in work in the world today. It's that Spirit that we need to follow. Now we are either this morning, part of God's solution, or we are part of the problem of our world. One of the two. Again, I say to you, there's no middle course. You're either part of the problem or part of the solution. The choices that men make are vital. That is why the Bible says this, the Angels rejoice in Heaven over every sinner that repents. Why do they rejoice? What is it that they rejoice about? It puts Him on another road altogether. There's a transformation that takes place. He is serving another purpose. He has seen God's cause upon the earth.

Jesus said, "*Go ye into all the world and make disciples of all nations.*" What I'm looking for is changed men and women. I'm looking for people who've met with God, because people that meet with God speak for God. People that need God and live for God. Something starts coming out of their lives again and they are different, then they can change the world. The Bible says, "*Ye are the salt of the earth. If the salt has lost its flavor, where shall it be salted?*" It needs to have its influence in the world to change the world. That's what you're there for. God didn't just save you just to save your soul. God saved you to be an example in the world out there and to speak for Him, to stand for the things that are right against the things that are wrong, to seek the establishment of God's kingdom and not Satan's kingdom.



## The ruler of the world

Martin Luther prayed, and he said, "*Punish us, we pray Thee, but be not silent toward us. Show us, Oh God*". He was crying to God, and he says, "*I want you to punish us*". Beloved that's a fearsome prayer. For what if God hears and answers that prayer. What will you do? What will happen in your life? But let me go further. What if God does not answer that prayer and He allows us to continue in our sin without stopping us, without saying one word to us. Where would the world be going to? What would we be supporting? Would we be supporting the holiness of God or the purposes of God, or would we be serving the purpose of another? I believe we would be serving the purpose of someone else who is malign, someone whom Jesus Christ referred to as a killer and a thief, who does not come but to kill and destroy. This is his purpose with the world. He doesn't own one square inch of the world's territory for God made it, but he's claiming it.

He's claiming it and multitudes upon the multitudes are giving it to him. They're surrendering it to the devil so that he can use it and do with it what he wants to. You can see the decline that's going on in our world. It's tobogganing down, and it's gaining speed all the time. We're heading for tremendous difficulties between people because we've sold out Jesus Christ to another one, and we're allowing him to rule in our world. Someone said, Christ would have lost my soul if He had not refused to compromise with me. Christ can't afford to compromise. God cannot afford to compromise.

Just recently I had a very interesting discussion with a professor of history. He wants to write a book on General Louis Botha. This is his next project. I spoke to him. I respect the man's Christianity. He's a lovely man. I met him at a wedding. I preached at my niece's wedding and I heard this voice behind me at the reception, a very deep voice, and he slipped a piece of cardboard into my hand and slipped away. I looked this way, and he was gone. When I looked up, he was walking towards his table. He told me his name. He said, "I've been a family friend for years." I met him. I went to see him. He said to me, "Pastor Dreyer I would love you to be my pastor." But he is a Dutch Reformed elder. And so, I made another appointment to see him again and I went and spoke to him. He said, "help me." I said, "with what?" He said, "I cannot reconcile the God of love of the New Testament, with the God that instructed Israel to destroy completely, people, men, women and children and even the animals. I can't reconcile that cruelty with the love of God. Help me on it."

And a thought struck me very forcibly. Can God afford to compromise with sin? If God compromises with sin, He is an accessory before the fact. He's agreeing with it. God must judge it, otherwise He's not holy any longer, otherwise He's not true any longer. And He is allowing the stage to the devil, to have and do what he wants to do with our world, with your life, with my life, with our futures. He's doing that.

Take a look at Romans chapter 2. I quoted this to the professor. It says this, from the 5th verse through to the 16th, "*But after the hardness and impenitent heart treasureth up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God, who will render to every man according to his deeds.*" God has always done that. He has rendered to every man according to his deeds. God assesses you by what you're doing, by what you're allowing into your life. God accesses you by that. Nothing else. It's not words, it's what you are. It's what's coming out of you.

This is what God is seeing, and so He says, He accesses men by their worth, "*who will render to every man according to his deeds, to them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honor in mortality and eternal life, but unto them that are contentious and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath, tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doith evil*

*of the Jew first and also of the Gentile, but glory, honor and peace to every man that worketh good to the Jew first, and also to the gentile. For there is no respect of persons with God, for as many as have sinned without the law, shall also perish without the law. And as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law. For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the Lord shall be justified. For when the gentiles which have not the law, do by nature the things containing the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves, which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness and their thought the meanwhile accusing, or else excusing one another in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ, according to My Gospel."*

### **For Christ or against Christ**

God says, it's up to the individual. I believe that everybody in history has had the opportunity of turning. I believe that every person has had the right to say no or to say yes. It's all in the decisions that we make, and God assesses us according to our judgments. If we don't want the Kingdom of God, we want the Kingdom of darkness. If we are not for Christ, we are against Him. We are reposing Him, and we want another kingdom in a world that suits our lifestyle. And our lifestyle is crooked, and our lifestyle is out of the way, but we want it. The adulterer doesn't want the Commandment that says, "*thou shalt not commit adultery*," the thief doesn't want the Commandment that says "*thou shalt not steal*," it cuts against his way of life, and so he chooses it and God says, if you choose it, I'll give it to you. You will have it and you will not see the Kingdom of God because in the Kingdom, nothing that is of unrighteousness will enter in there. Nothing. God will keep it pure. If he didn't do it, the same process will start again as what's been happening in our world.

If men went to the moon and established a colony there, it would not be long before we had the first murder, as you've had in Genesis. It wouldn't be long before you would have the first committing of adultery, but it would be there because man takes within what he is. And he proliferates everything around him. If God's going to have a pure Kingdom, He's got to have out of that Kingdom everything that is impure. He's got to have it. Otherwise the process will start all over again and we will do there what we've done in our world, and we will be in the same position again. God can't have that.

Romans 3 and 9 - 20 says this, "*What then, are we better than they? No, in no ways, for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin. As it is written, there is none righteous. No, not one. There is none that understand it, there is none that seeketh after God, they've all gone out of the way, they've all together become unprofitable, there is none that doeth good, no not one. Their throat is an open sepulcher, with their tongues they use deceit, the poison of asps is under their lips, whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness, their feet are swift to shed blood, destruction and misery are in their ways, and the way of peace have they not known, there is no fear of God before their eyes, now we know that what things soever the law saith, it saith to them who are under the law, that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God, therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in His sight, for by the law is the knowledge of sin."*

God says, nobody will be justified in My sight. Who will be justified, that thou may be justified when thou speakest, that God may be justified, and all the world will keep silent? There will not be one person that will ever be able to come to God and say, You judged Me unjustly, not one side. The Lord will say, I've got it on record. Jesus Christ said, in that I will not judge you, but this Word that I've given you, will judge you. You've got it, it's on your shelf. It tells you everything about yourself, about who you are and what you are and everything that God thinks about it. It tells you all of that, and beloved, we must take heed to what the Word has to say, because it is for you and it is for me. God will have

to judge the world, or else man will destroy it all on his own. God does not want the world destroyed because He made it in the fullness thereof. The earth is the Lord's and the fullness thereof, and they that dwell therein, they belong to God and He's the Good Shepherd, and He wants to preserve it. He wants to keep it. He wants the new Heavens and the new Earth to dwell in righteousness. God wants that. He wants it. And folks, we're either working with God toward that end, or we're working against God toward that end.

Listen to me. Hear me this morning. I'm saying that to you this morning. We are either working towards this end with God, or we are working against this end with God. The choices that you make decide what kind of Kingdom there is going to be in this world. It has been said that we deserve the children and the politicians we get. It's our choice. We choose these things, but all the time God wants to bless. Listen to this. Ephesians 2 and 1, He says, "*And you hath He quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins, wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience.*" God has quickened you. He said, that's my answer. I'll give you life, I'll breathe into you if you want it, by Calvary, by the death of My Son, I'll give you a second chance, I'll give you a new chance. Do you want it? Do you want God, and do you want His cause? Do you want His Kingdom to be established upon the Earth in righteousness?

### **Sowing and reaping**

Galatians 6 and 7, "*Be not deceived, God is not mocked for whatsoever a man soweth that shall he also reap, for ye that soweth of the flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption, but he that soweth of the Spirit, shall of the Spirit breathe life everlasting.*" Conversion doesn't take place outside any individual's realm of choice. God will not convert anyone independent of their will. You do the sowing and you reap the crop. The point of conversion is the realization of a way that must be walked. I must walk my walk with God. I must make my decision together with Him so that He can work in my life the things that I cannot work myself. The Bible says in John 3 and 16, listen to it, "*for God so loved the world that He gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life,*" and that word 'world' is cosmos. He's not talking about people of the world. He's talking about the physical world, the birds, and the bees, and the trees, and the grass. God so loved that world that He gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life in the world that God's going to preserve, in the new heavens and the new earth.

God's going to do that and so you're marked for it. He marks you and you become His. God speaks to Israel and He says, "*and thou becamest Mine.*" You became mine, my wife. Do you understand? Beloved, God wants to bless you and God wants to make you a blessing in the world, but there's a fight we're involved in. We fight not against flesh and blood, but against principalities and powers, and wicked spirits. The rulers of the darkness of this world, spiritual wickedness in high places. These are the things that we're fighting against. Understand it. It's not a picnic, and God needs a testimony that's powerful in the world. God needs you to stand against these things. Beloved, if we do not have indignation against sin, it's not the sign of a poor spirit, it's showing an unlikeness with Christ. Jesus was indignant with the world and we need to get indignant with this world, because it's trying to rob God of His rights and it's robbing people of God's right in their lives.

We're fighting a war, and are you aware of it? Do you understand the things that are at stake, the things that are happening right around you, right now as you sit in your seat? God is looking for those who will put on the whole armor of God, who say, here I stand, like Martin Luther did, here I stand, so help me God, I can do no wrong, I don't have a choice. As I said to you, I was listening to a lady speaking

on Saturday morning, it was a tremendous meeting, I want to tell you, and she was saying, how that the new age wants to push Christianity right off the agenda of the Church. (inaudible 46:23.01) They want to hear, but they don't want to hear the truth and beloved, the Gospel is being curbed on every side in this country. It's happening now. You may not tell a man that he's a sinner. That's where we're heading. You may not tell people that homosexuality is wrong. You may not tell them that they're an adulterer. You may not tell them that. You can be taken to court for it. Let me tell you, it's happening. We're being squeezed from every side so that we can't say what's the truth in this country anymore. If you do, you can be in trouble.

Beloved, we need to pray and above all we need to be dedicated, so we know where we stand and what we're about. Amen.

Let's close our eyes. Heavenly father, I come to You in the lovely name of Jesus and You know what I thought about this message before I ever preached it. It was a burden on my heart oh God, and oh Lord, I've delivered it. It has not been easy, but I have delivered it. And I pray, oh God, that You will undertake for each one of us, that Lord, we will see clearly before us what the choices really are, and Heavenly Father, every time Christ will come up trumps for us. Let it be so Lord, we pray, that every time it shall be that we choose the Lord and His way, you asked Peter to do it, you asked John to do it. (inaudible 48:11.04) call it by its name. We won't use scientific words Lord, it makes it sound better. We will call it by the name that the Bible calls it by. Sin. And sin will not enter the Kingdom of God. We are asking oh God, that You will teach us then, that so shall we walk, that we may walk onto well pleasing. In Christ's name we ask it. Thank You because You hear us. Amen. We have the communion here this morning. The Bible speaks about the dedication that we have toward the Lord.

He says, "*name this that I declare unto you, I praise you not that you come together not for the better but for the worse. There must be differences among you for I received of the Lord, that which also I delivered unto you that the Lord Jesus, the same night in which he was betrayed, took bread and when He'd given thanks, He'd break it and say, take it, eat it, this is My Body, which is broken for you. Do this in remembrance of Me. After the same manner also, He took the cup and said, this is the new cup of the New Testament in My blood, this do ye often, and as you drink it in remembrance of Me, for as often as you eat this bread and drink of this cup, be sure the Lord's death, until He come, whosoever therefore shall eat this bread and drink, this cup of the Lord unworthily shall be guilty of the body and the blood of the Lord, but let a man examine himself and so let him eat of that bread and drink of that cup, so that he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, drinketh unto damnation unto himself, not discerning the Lord's body. For this cause many are weak and sickly among you* (inaudible 50:16.14) We invite you to join with us in this Holy Communion (inaudible 50:43.04) - (53:26.12)

The Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put up by the Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing to you please assist us by passing it on. We thank you for your cooperation. God bless you. If you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realize your need may I pray for you that Jesus Christ may enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon your life, that your whole future shall be colored by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory, for we need every mouth, and

we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact me, James Robertson on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327 or cell phone 083 251 0644 or fax 011 791 5004 or email jamesr@infodoor.co.za and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## **01 11 Spiritual Warfare Prayers**

***James Robertson -- 9 December 2000***

This tape was prepared on the 9th of December 2000. It contains a series of prayers for the congregation of Foundation for Living Church in Pretoria North, to pray over Pretoria North and the country. The context of these prayers is that the Lord has indicated that is a particular Demonic principality that is operating over the geographic location where we are meeting, and that in order for the Lord's purpose to be accomplished in Pretoria North, and in fact in the country of South Africa and in the world, it is necessary for this principality and power to be broken at this stage. In order to break it, it is necessary that as a congregation collectively, and individually, we offer up a concerted prayer on a regular basis and intercession against this principality. In order to equip the members of the congregation for this warfare, I have prepared this tape which includes some Scriptures setting out the basis of what is contained in this tape, and then a series of prayers which I would ask you to pray and agree when you listen to the tape, and to pray that on a regular basis in Jesus' name.

### **Spiritual warfare**

A few Scriptures, 2 Corinthians 10, 3-6, "*For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh, for the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds, casting down arguments and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ and being ready to punish all disobedience when your obedience is fulfilled.*" So, we see here that the war in which we are engaged in, is not a carnal fleshly war, it is a spiritual war and that the weapons of our warfare are also not physical, they are mighty in God for pulling down of strongholds, casting down of arguments and casting down every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ. We are going to be focusing our attention on pulling down strongholds over the SAVF hall and the immediate vicinity over Pretoria North, over Pretoria, over Gauteng, over South Africa, over Africa and over the world.

1 Timothy 1, 17-19, "*Now to the King, eternal, immortal invisible to God who alone is wise, be honor and glory for ever and ever Amen. This charge I commit to you, my son Timothy, according to the prophecies previously made concerning you that by them you may wage the good warfare, having faith in a good conscience which some, having rejected concerning the faith, have suffered shipwreck.*" And so, we see that it is scriptural for us to wage warfare. It is necessary that we have faith, and a good conscience, which means that we examine ourselves before God and deal with anything in our hearts and any sin that God requires us to deal with at this time. You should examine yourself carefully and see part of this process of being able to seek holiness and sanctification in your own life, which would equip you to be more effective as an intercessor for the congregation, for the area and for the world to intercede and wage warfare against Satan, without going before God first and searching your heart and seeking to make right with God. To deal with sin is something that you should be weary of doing.

Ephesians 6, 10-18, "*Finally, My brethren, be strong in the Lord and in the power of His might, put on the whole armor of God that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places. Therefore, take up the whole armor of God that you may be able to withstand in the evil day and having done all, to stand, stand therefore having girded your waist with truth, having put on the breastplate of righteousness and having shod your feet with the preparation of the Gospel of peace. Above all taking the shield of faith with which you will be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one and take the helmet of salvation and the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God, praying always with all prayer and supplication of Spirit, being watchful to this end with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints.*"

Romans 8, 35-39, "*Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written for your sake, we are killed all day long. We are accounted as sheep to the slaughter . Yet in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him who loved us. For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus, our Lord.*" We see from the passage in Ephesians that the armor is truth, and righteousness, and salvation, and faith, and we see that in fighting this warfare there will be tribulation, distress, persecution and so forth, but that we are not dealing with things of this life, we are dealing with things of this life to come, and that at the end of the day, if we are obedient and we do what God has called us to do, nothing will separate us from the love of God.

Colossians 1,16, "*For by Him all things were created that are in Heaven and on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers, all things were created through Him for Him.*" And we see here that there are four levels of Angelic rulership over the earth, thrones, dominions, principalities and powers, and there are two categories of these. There are those that are serving the living God, and there are those that are serving Satan. We will be praying in a few moments to tear down the principalities, powers, thrones and dominions that are operating over the areas that we are dealing with. To place this in a broader context, Revelations 20, 1-3, "*Then I saw an Angel descending from Heaven. He was holding the key of The Abyss, the Bottomless Pit, and a great chain was in his hand, and he gripped and overpowered the dragon, that old serpent of prime evil times, who is the devil and Satan, and securely bound him for a thousand years. Then he hurled him in The Abyss, the Bottomless Pit and closed it, and sealed it above him that so he should no longer lead astray,*

*deceive and seduce the nations until the thousand years were at an end. After that he must be liberated for a short time."*

### **The Time of Tribulation**

So, we see that at the end of the age, Satan, and as I understand it, that includes all his cohorts, Demons and fallen Angels, will be cast into The Pit for a thousand years, and then the Kingdom of Righteousness will come on the earth in the millennium reign of Christ on earth. Now, as we've seen in the teachings over the last two months or so, the time of tribulation is at hand and the fulfillment of Matthew 24, in that area is at hand, and therefore we understand that the time when Satan will be cast into The Pit for a thousand years, is fast approaching. But we also understand that God has given the authority over the earth to mankind. Mankind sinned and gave that authority to Satan. Jesus came back, or Jesus came and died on the Cross, and He took that authority back, and we read in the Scripture that Jesus says that all authority in Heaven and earth has been given unto Him, and He then charged us to go forth and to do the work that He was sending us to do. So only men and God speaking through men by His Holy Spirit, have the authority over Satan and casting him into The Pit. Therefore for Satan to be cast into The Pit for a thousand years, it is necessary for us as believers to join in agreement to tear down the principalities, powers, thrones and dominions that are operating over this world and cast them into The Pit, and to ask the Father to send His mighty warring Angels to give effect to our prayer, in order that victory may be achieved and that Satan may be cast into The Pit, and that peace may come upon the earth in the spiritual realm.

So, with that context, I'm going to go through a series of prayers based on the Scriptures that I've just read to you and would ask you to listen prayerfully and to pray along with the tape to release and to align your heart with what is being said and to agree with it. And I would ask you to do this on a regular basis in the days ahead. We have a very serious responsibility in this congregation to intercede for this particular location where God has seen fit to situate our meeting place. And it's important that we recognize that as was mentioned on the 3rd of December, there are a large number of congregations on the same city block and in the immediate vicinity. The fact that God has found it necessary to establish another congregation on the same piece of territory, indicates that the spiritual warfare that is found in that area is not being seen to completion. We therefore are called to pick up the battle wherever it might be at this moment in time, and to take it, and to see it through to completion. And we're required to overcome to the end.

So, I'd ask you to pray with me. Firstly, based on Ephesians 6, verses 10-18, we will put on the whole armor of God, and I'll just pray through that. We will then ask the Father, in the name of the Son to cover ourselves, the congregation and the leadership, and so forth, with the blood of Jesus so that we are safe from Demonic attack. We will then systematically tear down the principalities, powers, thrones and dominions that are operating over the area, over the country and over the world. It's important to understand that there is a force of prayer which has to be generated. We read in Daniel that Daniel prayed, interceded and fasted for three weeks before the Angel was able to get through to him, and in the interim was warring with the Prince of Persia. So, again it is scriptural to understand that, we can't just pray a prayer like this once against the massive principalities and powers of darkness that are operating over this world and expect them all to be cast into The Pit. We have to raise up a concerted voice of intercession in harmony and unity to tear these things down, and we must do that for as long as the Lord requires us to do it.

## **Keep praying**

My understanding is we must keep praying these prayers until we know that Satan has been cast into The Pit for a 1000 years. My understanding of that is something of the order of 3/3 and a half years in the future. So, we need to start praying this. We need to start praying it over the meeting place, we need to start praying this prayer over our individual homes. Ingrid and I have been led to the Lord to pray more or less as I am about to pray for something, of the order of two nearly 2 years now. The picture that we have is that as each congregation prays continually into the darkness over the earth, they slowly are rolling back the darkness, they are pulling down the principalities and powers immediately over the geographic location where they are, and it's like opening out a dome of light over that location, and slowly as more and more is pulled into the opening that we create, the whole of Satan's kingdom will crumble. And as more and more people around the world pray this basic prayer on a consistent basis, these little domes of light over the places of prayer focus. will get bigger, and they will start to join together. Eventually we will see the darkness rolling back, and eventually at the end, the entire kingdom of Satan will collapse and be cast into The Pit.

So, it is important that we should run and not grow weary, and that we should keep interceding in this, even if the Lord moves you onto another congregation, it is important that you keep praying this prayer. Not only for the SAVF hall and the location where we are currently situated, but for your house where you live, or any new congregation the Lord may take you to. He will require you, when He does move you, to share this teaching and this information with them if they're not aware of it, and to pray it over that area. So, this truth needs to be spread out now across the world so that more and more believers can start systematically tearing these things down.

## **Prayers**

Father we come to You in the name of Jesus, and we put on the whole armor of God, that we may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil, for we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, powers and the rulers of the darkness of this age, against the spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places. Father we commit today, in the name of Jesus, to come against these things on a consistent basis and to tear them down over the SAVF hall in Pretoria North, and over our country and over the world, In Jesus' name. Therefore, Father, in the name of Jesus we take up the whole armor of God that we may be able to withstand in the evil day, and when we have done all, to stand. We gird our waists with the belt of truth, having put it on, and we put on the breastplate of righteousness. We put on the shoes which are the preparation of the Gospel of peace, and we take the shield of faith with which we will be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one. We take the helmet of salvation and we put it on our heads, and we take the sword of the Spirit which is the Word of God.

Father, we ask You in the name of Jesus to strengthen truth in our lives, to strengthen the preparation of the Gospel of peace in our lives, to strengthen righteousness, holiness and sanctification in our lives, to give us a revelation that Jesus Christ is our righteousness. Father, to strengthen our faith, to nourish our faith, and that our faith may grow. To implant and to establish the truth of salvation in our lives, that helmet will protect our thoughts in everything we do. We ask You Father, in the name of Jesus to anoint us to read your Word, we ask You to open Your Word to us such as we have never seen it open before. We ask You to engraft and implant in our hearts the truth of Your Word and the Scriptures that we need to know, and to have written on the tablet of our heart for the purpose of what You've called us to do for this warfare. And Father we ask You to teach us to use the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God in every situation to cut through the darkness of this present age. And Father we ask You



in the name of Jesus, by Your Holy Spirit to give us utterance in prayer at all times without ceasing. To pray by the Spirit that we may be watchful, with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints for the deliverance of this world from the powers of Satan, in Jesus' name.

Father I ask You now, in the name of Jesus, and I would ask each one of you to, as you pray just to put in the names of your own family and to see your family covered by the blood of Jesus. It is important that you understand that the blood of Jesus is the sign and the mark of the Covenant that we have with God. The blood of Jesus was shed at the Cross, voluntarily by Jesus Christ to purchase our redemption, and it is that blood that has given us the right and the authority to use Jesus' name. It is that blood that protects us and shields us from the works of the enemy, and it is up to us to claim the blood and to plead the blood over every situation in order that we may be safe to conduct this warfare.

Father we come to You now in the name of Jesus and we plead the blood over families, over our congregation, the leadership, over every believer in Pretoria North, over the SAVF Hall and SAVF Property, in the name of Jesus. Father I just thank You now, in the name of Jesus, that You cover every member of my immediate and extended family with the blood of Jesus, from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet. I thank You that You cover Neil Dreyer and Louise, and their family with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet, Father their children and their grandchildren, all cousins, uncles and aunts, nephews and nieces, covered with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet. Father, I ask You to cover the entire congregation of Foundation for Living Church and their families and relatives, with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet, in Jesus' Name.

Father I ask You to cover every believer in Pretoria North with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet. I ask You to cover every believer in South Africa with the blood of Jesus from the top their heads to the soles of their feet. I ask You to cover every believer on this planet with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet, in Jesus' Name. I ask You to cover the SAVF Hall in Pretoria North, Jack Hendon Street with the blood of Jesus, the walls, the floors, the ceiling, the roof, the doors, the windows, the window frames, the door posts and the lintels covered with the blood of Jesus. I ask You Father to cover the entire SAVF Property with the blood of Jesus in Jesus' Name.

Father, we thank You that the blood of Jesus is against Satan and we plead the blood over all of these things, and we thank You for the blood. We thank You for the safekeeping of the blood. We thank You for the blood covenant we have with You Father, cut in the blood of Jesus, cut in the flesh of Jesus, with the blood flowing down the Cross onto the mercy seat, and we thank You for mighty deliverance. We thank You that we come before You, not in our own trusting or in our own righteousness, but in Jesus Christ who is our righteousness. We thank You that we come before You in the authority of the name of Jesus, the name above all names, the name at which every knee shall bow, every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord. Father we thank You, that as believers, bought with the blood, covered with the blood, we have the authority to come against these principalities, powers, thrones and dominions and tear them down, in Jesus' name.

And Father we thank You that Jesus is coming soon. We thank You that peace is coming on the earth soon. We thank You that soon this world will be free of Satan and his Demons and fallen angels, in the Name of Jesus. We praise you for that Father. We glorify Your Holy name, we worship You, Lord and God, Savior and King. Father, we ask You that You bring the people that You want into the FFR congregation in Jesus' name, and we ask You to take anybody that You don't want, out. We ask You to open doors that no man may close, and close doors that no man may open. We pray Father that You

will keep any agent of Satan, any witch or warlock, Satanist or any other servant of Satan, from coming into that meeting place, from coming into the congregation, in Jesus' name.

"Have I not called you," says the Lord. "I've called every one of you," says the Lord. "I've established you, and I have planted you in this place for a season to do the work I have called you to do. Therefore, be bold and very courageous," says the Lord, "step out now and tear down Mine enemies, tear them down and cast them into The Pit, for I am coming soon," says the Lord. "But victory must be won. All My enemies must be put as a footstool under My feet, and I have called you, and I have established you and I have anointed you to do the work. You are the souls in My army, you are the soldiers whose spiritual authority is required to deliver and set this world free and take back all that the enemy has stolen. So be bold and very courageous." That ends the Word of the Lord.

Father, we come to You in the name of Jesus and we just come in unity, harmony and agreement to take authority over the principalities, powers, thrones and dominions that are operating over this world and to tear them down and to cast them into The Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' name. I come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over the South African Vroue Federasie Hall in the block, north of Station Street, bounded on the west by Jack Hendon Street, and the east by Eeufees Road in Pretoria North. We come against any principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over that hall, in the name of Jesus we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' name. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over that property, in the name of Jesus, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand year, in the name of Yahooshua. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over that city block, in the name of Jesus, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' name.

We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over the immediate suburban area of the SAVF hall, in the name of Jesus, we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years, in the name of Yahooshua. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over Pretoria North, in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' name. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over the city of Pretoria, in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over the province of Gauteng and in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' Name. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over the Old Transvaal Province, and in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' Name.

We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over the Republic of South Africa, and in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' Name. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over Southern Africa in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' Name. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over the continent of Africa, in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years. We come against every principality, power and dominion that is operating over Planet Earth, in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' Name.

Satan, we come against you in the name of Jesus, and we declare that the Word of God states that on the appointed day, the Father will send one of his mighty warring Angels, to bind you and chain you, and cast you into The Pit for a thousand years. And Father, we thank You now, in the name of Jesus, that that day is close at hand and we thank You Father, in the name of Jesus, that You will send Your mighty warring Angels to bind Satan, to chain him and to cast him into The Bottomless Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' name. Father, we ask in the name of Jesus that You will send Your mighty warring Angels to bind and tear down any principality, power, throne and dominion that we have named and cast them into The Pit for a thousand years, in Jesus' Name. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over Neil Dreyer, in the name of Jesus, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years. And Father, in the name of Jesus, we speak now that everything that is holding back Neil Dreyer's ministry as an apostle to reach out and touch the nations, is torn down and broken down now.

Father, we thank You that You have anointed him, and You've called him to go forth to the nations as You've appointed, and we thank You Father that You release him and that You open every door that needs to be opened and close every door that needs to be closed in Jesus' name. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over the Dreyer family, in the name of Jesus, we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years. We come against every principality, power, throne and dominion that is operating over the Dreyer family residence, in the name of Jesus we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into The Pit for a thousand years in Jesus' name.

Father we praise You, we worship You, we glorify Your Holy name. Father, we thank You for mighty deliverance in our congregation, in the area of Pretoria North and in the world at large. Father, we thank You that the day is coming when we will no longer be harassed and persecuted by Satan. The day is coming when peace will come on earth in Jesus' name, and we praise You for that, we glorify You for that, we give you all the honor and all the glory. We thank You Father that You have given us the opportunity to intercede for this world, to be Your servants, and we ask You Father to help us to be faithful to the end, to overcome to the end, not to grow weary and to give up. Father it is our desire to be found to be faithful servants at the end of this age, and for that reason we ask You to judge us severely and correct us harshly that we may serve You more perfectly.

We ask You Father in the name of Jesus, to reveal the level of our present deception and what You require of us to do about it. We ask You Father to show us everything in our lives that You want us to deal with, everything that You want us to change, that we may come to a place of holiness and sanctification, that we may be vessels for honor in Your house, in Jesus' Name. And we worship You, and we praise You and we Glorify Your holy name, in Jesus' name.

This prayer was recorded by James Robertson on the morning of Sunday, the 10th of December, the year 2000. Should you have any queries and need to contact me, I can be contacted on Johannesburg (011) 791 2327 or my cell phone is 083 251 6644, fax number (011) 791 5004, email jamesr@infodoor.co.za. In case you don't have Neil Dreyer's phone number, he can be contacted on (012) 808 1650. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, King of Kings and Lord of Lords, Savior of the world. Amen

## 01 12 -Words and Prophetic Words, etc.

### *Dutch Kinnear*

I want You to do more than that. Go to one another and tell one another that. Will you do that? Just tell them. God bless you, my darling. Praise God. Praise the Lord. Amen. Oh God, we praise Your lovely name, worship You, we exalt You Jesus, we magnify Your name and adore You. Lord, we bless You, we worship You, we adore You and magnify Your lovely name. We thank You, oh God, that You opened our eyes, that we may behold the glory of the Lord, that we may understand who it is that we're dealing with. Lord, we thank You. You are the son of the living God and You came and touched lives. You came and sought us when we weren't looking for You, and You found us when we didn't want You Lord. Oh God, we worship You and magnify Your name, for such grace we have never encountered. Lord, we know that grace was what made it possible for us to find You, Lord. Oh God, because You were looking for us long before that time, blessed be Your holy name because You've been so good, so merciful, so kind. Thank You Lord. You did for us what no one else could do. You made us into new people oh Lord, changed us in an instant of time by Your divine grace. We bless You and exalt You oh God. We magnify Your lovely name. Praise the Lord. Oh, my soul and all that is within me. Blessed be His name. Hallelujah. Hallelujah. We worship Thee. Praise His name.

What shall it be said Lord, If I move in a brand-new direction? Shall I first consult with You? Shall I ask You the way that I must go. Shall I seek advice from the sons of men whose breath is in their nostrils or shall it be that men shall seek my face and seek me for the direction that I go? For I say to you, I bless you in the direction in which I go. Those that walk with me in that direction shall naturally be blessed. There shall be a fallout of the blessings of the Lord on every side, for I say to you at this time, even in the History of the world, it is more vital than ever before, says the Lord, even for Mine own to take hold of My Word and do according to what I've said. It is vital that you understand what is written, for did I not say unto (inaudible 14:00.07)long ago, the (inaudible 14:01.14) not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God.

I say to you in this time, it is vital that Mine own should understand what it is they've spoken, what I have said, so that they might be directed and governed by it, and that it might be a compass around them, sayeth the Lord. That which keeps and that which blesses, I say to you, abide ye within My Word for by the Word shall men be judged, by the Word shall their needs be assessed, I say to you, even by the Word which I have given. Therefore, stand by it, for it is a precious lamp unto your feet, that ye should not stumble, that ye might walk in the light and not be in the dark, that you might understand. For I say to you, they that be in the world and lean to the wisdom of men, walk in darkness and they do not understand, that I say blessed are your ears for thy hear and your eyes for they see, for there is understanding in the hearing and seeing of the Word. Know that I blessed, sayeth the Lord, and that I use it for My glory.

And watch it lift the eyes of men from off the Earth from which they came. What shall it be that lifts their eyes to the Heavens and the things that I have in store for them, that My Word, it shall be a ladder, sayeth the Lord, that ye shall walk up on? And as ye claim what My Word says, so My Word becomes powerful within your life. I say to you things begin to flow through you that were not there before, because you understand and you're walking in the light. And I say to you, My Word is a director, My Word is a directive from My throne, and it worketh within the sons of men and within their hearts that they may know that tis, the way of the world, is not the way of My God and the wisdom of the world is not the wisdom of the Word of My Lord. And they may understand that here

is wisdom, even in this Word that I've given. Therefore, say I unto thee, take the Word, for it will lift your eyes even to those goals that are before and those things that must be accomplished, for My Word must find fulfillment, I say unto thee.

The things that I promised must find fulfillment, and I say to you that the generation that is, is a generation that is seeing the end times and seeing the things that are coming upon the face of the Earth. That generation needs no Word of God to understand the direction that I'm going in, and the direction that the History of the world is going in. It is in My Word. It is recorded, I say unto You. Therefore, take heed unto it as a light that shineth in the dark place and walk in the light thereof that you do not stumble, so shall you walk with Me and know this. I shall walk with you, even the light of that Word that I have given. Jesus, we worship Thee, we bless Thy name, we exalt Thee and magnify Thy name. Lord, in Jesus' name, we come before You, the congregation, we say Lord, here is our life, here we are.

We say, Lord, we understand that there is no alternative to God, no feasible alternative to God, Your will is paramount, and Your Word is definitive. We need to hold to that Word with everything that's within us, oh God. In Jesus' name, strengthen every person here this morning, anointed by the Holy Ghost, oh God, we pray that oh Lord, we'll see things in a different way even as the Spirit of God reveals the will of God to each one of us. Lord, there are ministries here that need to be carried out. I pray in Jesus' name, that the day of sitting at the backseat is past, but the day of stepping forward to do the work of the Lord has come. Lord, if we have the urgency of the Spirit upon us, then Lord we will understand and we'll know within ourselves now that the pace has quickened, oh God, and that the time is short. We ask You in Jesus' name to guide and to direct, and we'll give You all the glory and the praise, and the honor. Thank You lord. In Jesus' name. Amen. We bless the Lord and magnify His name for His goodness and His mercy.

### **Hurtful words**

It's so good to see every one of you and to share with you on this lovely occasion, these things that are happening around us. We praise God. He's got a Word prepared for us. Brother Dutch is going to bring the word for us this morning that God has laid on his heart. Are You ready? Amen. Praise the Lord. God bless you my brother. Let me ask you a question, to start off. When last did any of us proclaim the Word, not to the nations, to our neighbor? I think a few of us realize the power of words. In the secular society, we use it to transfer knowledge, ideas, and it's the basis of our communication. And as kids, we chanted, 'sticks and stones can break my bones, but words can never hurt me,' couldn't be more wrong, because that's so wrong. We have this movement in the world today against physical violence. Now, me personally, I believe a good chop behind the ear is the best psychology for a child that's getting out of whack. But you know, on the surface, it's commendable, we're not allowed to chastise our children, and a child may not be caned.

Just recently, I've read about children who have taken their parents to court because they gave them a hiding. People who use violence are supposed to be barbaric, but I think the physical bully is no worse than the verbal bully. In all the (inaudible 30:49.23) against violence, we've forgotten the (inaudible 30:53.23) damage that words can do. We don't see it as damaging because the effects are not immediately visible, but they slowly manifest themselves like a cancer damage, and the damage is often worse than a violent act. How many lives have been destroyed by parents and teachers with careless words to young people? We call them stupid and dumb. And we would go to school, and children who don't have nice clothes, or parents don't have a nice car, they make fun of them, and we don't realize the deep wounds we make in the psyche of people.

In Matthew 5, 22 we read, *"But I say to you that everyone who continues to be angry with his brother or harbors incidentally," this is from the amplified Bible, "who harbors malice, enmity of heart against him, shall be liable and be unable to escape the punishment imposed by the court. And whoever speaks contemptuously and insultingly to his brother, shall be reliable and unable to escape the punishment imposed by this religion. And whoever says, 'you cursed fool, you empty headed idiot' to his brother, shall be liable and unable to escape the hell of fire."* I think all of us at some time, have seen the helpless predicament of the verbally inefficient being criticized by the verbally proficient. Words that cut the flesh from our souls, words that destroy the spirit, that lay waste to our hopes and dreams, and permanently damage the delicate fabric of our personalities. So, also can they be used to lift people up, to raise them above their circumstances and see the glorious vision of God. I believe one of the greatest things in life today is to see life as it is, and not as it should be.

### **See the Glory of God**

We should see the glory of God in everything, we should see His shred of purpose in anything that happened to our lives. And I just recently have begun to experience this. We've had a terrible two weeks, my wife and I, all sorts of calamities have hit us, but strangely enough, not once was I worried, not once was concerned. People couldn't understand that I was so laid back, but you see, I know Who's on my side. It's that simple. We should manifest this love of God in our lives and in our actions. We should see the potential of people, and not their circumstances. We should act, believing that we can and are making a difference. We should be bold, declaring who and what we are. And most of all, we call ourselves Christians. We must be careful not to smudge the good name of Jesus Christ by what we do and what we say. And all too often we fall down on that. It has been said that the pen is mightier than the sword, and that's very true. It is true because words give birth to every deed that has ever been committed.

If you look at the great things that have happened in life and the bad things that have happened in life, History all started in the imagination, but we articulated it with the word. They've changed lives, forced people to get involved in noble deeds, giving people pity and compassion. Words are the stimulus that launch dreams, destinies and noble causes. Words are the weft and woof of everything that is good or bad in our society. The Bible often talks about words and names, and their importance. Just as an example, Ibram became Abraham, which means father of many. God thought it was so important that he changed his name, and that word, just the word 'Abraham', meant so much. It was a Word of God that created the universe and all that's in it, and He created it out of nothing with words.

### **The Creation**

In Genesis 1, 3 we read, *"And God said, let there be light, and there was light."* Words. He just spoke them. *"In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God and the Word was God."* John, Chapter 1, 1. Hebrews 11, 3, *"By faith, we understand that the words were framed by the Word of God, so that the things which are seen were not made of things which are visible."* Our words are either destructive or creative. They have an effect on everybody around us and on ourselves. Careless words can be so damaging. Modern doctors and psychologists are only now beginning to understand what the Bible has been talking about for 2000 years, how important words are. In James 3 verse 2, we read, *"For we stumble in many things. If anyone does not stumble in word, he is a perfect man, able also to bridle the whole body."* Words are the cause of our blessings and our curses. Words are the causes of people to be broken down and people to be lifted up? Words were the start of great things.

## Using your words

A mature person is one who is able to control his words. This of course, does not justify those who find it easy to say nothing, who parade their lack of purpose or opinion as being the strong, silent type. You've met them, I'm sure. I'm thinking about this, but they don't say a thing, because if they do, they'll just put their foot in it. Our life reflects what's on our mind or our imagination. That's where all our actions in words start, in our mind, and they come through in the word. Our thoughts and words are also influenced by our associations. They're negative or positive. The good, they are either on God's business or in Satan business. Understand this. There is no middle ground. You can't just withdraw. It's this or that. This is manifested and influenced by our marriages, what we say, how we say it, and when we say it? Just to give you an idea, you look at your wife and you say to her, my dear, when I look into your face, time stands still. I could always say you've got a face that stops a clock. Now I don't know which one will get me anywhere, but what I'm trying to say is that it's the way you use the words that is very important.

Unless we protect ourselves with the Word and allow the Holy Spirit to strengthen us, count our words, or sparingly use them, we will get into a lot of trouble. Words are so easily uttered and so insignificant. Sometimes they can have a catastrophic effects and consequences, physically and emotionally, beyond anything we can think. I'd like to just relate one silly little episode during the Second World War. The Americans had dropped the first bomb, I think it was Hiroshima. They then sent an ultimatum to the Japanese high command and they said, surrender. The Japanese wrote back, and they used a word called 'moshimutsu.' I hope I've got it right. What it means in Japanese is 'no', 'maybe'. When the American translators got that, they looked at this and they said, look, we know in Japanese this means no. One of the colleagues said no, it could be maybe, you know how they are phonetical. And it's just from that one word that the second bomb was dropped on Nagasaki. Over 100,000 people died just because of the wrong understanding of that word.

Just recently, in South Africa, there was a young couple that went on a murder spree. I think they murdered something like five people. When the young lady was asked, why did you do it? She said, he told me he loved me. That word was so important to her that she became a criminal, and murdered people, just to get that from him. Our words come from our heart and divulge the very intent of our thinking. They also reflect the power of the person who's speaking them, and I think we've all experienced that. Many times, people say something, ah, it's just Pete, forget about it, or hey, that's Koos, you'd better listen. The Roman Centurion in Matthew 8 verse 8 understood the power of the word and the person who was speaking when he told Jesus, *just to speak, and my servant will get well*. He understood that. We must remember that when we speak, we should be speaking in the power of God, Jesus and the Holy Spirit. We shouldn't just use words so idly.

In Proverbs 18, 21, we read death and life are in the power of the tongue, and we can commit suicide with this thing. We can do it, and I think I've done it many times, it's my biggest problem. In Romans 7, *"Yet in all these things, we are more than conquerors through Him who loved us."* In Mark 11, 23, *"For assuredly, I say unto you, whoever says to this mountain, be removed and be cast to the sea, and does not doubt that in his heart, but believes in his heart that these things he says will come to pass, will have whatever he says."* When we speak, we must have a clear objective, and this is so important. We mustn't just idly talk or babble. Think, count your words, and use them purposefully. Just think for a moment, when we read the Bible and we try to interpret it, we look at the words that are used, changes have been made in the course of Christianity by some man seeing the true meaning of those words, and the whole thing changes. Whether the word says 'or', or 'they', or 'You', or 'us', it makes

such a difference. Many prayers, I believe go astray today because we muddle in the words we use, we just sort of go on and get it over with.

We should shoot it clearly, like someone shooting at a target, and point your words directly and clearly on what you want. We must also speak what's in line with the Word of God, not just talk. In Psalm 19 verse 14, we read, *"Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart be acceptable in Thy sight, oh Lord, my Strength and my Redeemer."* Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart be acceptable in Thy sight, oh Lord. I think if all of us thought of that little verse before we opened our mouths, we wouldn't talk so much, because we'd begin to think of just what are we saying. We must learn to use the words and 'the' word for the purpose the Lord God almighty intended. We're supposed to speak about our fantastic God, and how many of us do? We are admonished to rejoice in the Lord and pray without ceasing, and yet whenever I've spoken about this, I've met resistance, because I'm told you can't do that at work, or when you go play sports, or you can't do it here...

It's like we have to take this word and just set aside little times for it, Sundays for two hours at night, or one hour we spend in the quiet time of the morning, and the rest of the time we've got to jump into the world. Paul said it many times - I will speak in and out of season. People keep on telling me, you have to find an opportunity. That's not what the Bible says, and I'm just simple and I'm pretty stupid, so I just go with what it says. We have to learn that. We have to learn to understand because so often we interpret it to suit our own means, or what happens is, we go on a tangent and we only look at this one aspect of the Bible. We must be a calming influence in our environment. I once heard it as we must be an anti-septic in our environment. We must be the symbol of truth. We must be the leaders in thought, action and the Word of truth. And most importantly, we need to know our Lord intimately and to articulate who and what He is.

I have heard on talk shows, and if you listen, you'll see some of these TV shows in America, let me tell you something, when one of our people, a Christian, meets a Satanist, or an atheist, they eat us for breakfast. They wipe the floor with us. Why? Because we don't know our Lord properly. We haven't read enough about Him, we haven't talked enough about Him. We're not ready for it because they make fools of us. They use catchphrases that we struggle with. We don't know what to do. We must defend Jesus at all times without (inaudible 00:46:15.28). In Matthew 12, 26, *"But I say to you that for every idle word men may speak, they will give an account of it on the Day of judgment."* It frightens the pants off me, because I know all the idle words I have spoken. We always talk about the last word that a person has. They're normally very important, dying words, before the person dies, they say something. I just want to give you Jesus Christ as a reminder.

#### *Speak about Jesus*

Matthew 28, 19 to 20, *"Go therefore, and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you, and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age."* And I'll ask you a metaphorical question. When last did we do that? I think last time I preached out, I said you mustn't take too serious what I say, because normally I'm preaching to myself, and I ask myself that question, when last did I do that? When you look at the environment of a Church, you find you'll get the people who do the manual work and those that go out and do the Evangelizing, and you get the preacher. Now the funny thing is, we expect the preacher's faith to carry us through. Are you with me here? When we go on some new project, we want to do something. The faith of the congregation is with a preacher. We expect his faith to carry us through. And then you get the people who are very happy to



do the busy work, wash the floors, wash the dishes, bake the cakes, but don't ask me to talk to a stranger about Jesus.

Do you know what I'm talking about? 'Don't ask me.' That's not their bag, but it is our bag. It's everybody's job, because we're too busy. We run off and work at the bazaar, so now we're doing something good or we are collecting for something, but we have to speak to people about it otherwise we are wasting our time. They must hear and know the Word. That Word that is in this wonderful Book has got to be spoken to everybody around us. I think you all know the power of that Word, and the lives its changed. It is vital that these things, like the bazaars, the feeding schemes, it needs to be done, there's no question about it, they are vital to the Church, but not at the expense of preaching the Word. People will often offer to do all the manual workers as long as you don't ask them to Evangelize. We have to learn to do the practical things that Jesus did, to tell people about God, to live your sermon without fear, to walk with your feet on the ground, to pray continually, and most of all, and this is a warning to us Pentecostal Churches, we must be very careful that our exuberance does not become a hinderance to other people.

I've been in a situation where I've invited somebody to a Church. He vowed never to go there again, it was crazy. Just be sure that exuberance does not chase people away. In short, as Paul said, "We must become all things to all people so that we can spread the Word of God." And just a little aside, when we believe -all of us here are believers - we must ask ourselves this question, and I think this is key to what I've been speaking about this morning. Why do we believe? And if we look at it, we'll find we got it from our parents, we went to Church when we were kids, it's our environment, we lived in a small town, everybody went to Church, and everybody believed. We got it from our society and environment. Now, these are the things that cause us to believe, but with respect, it's not good enough, because we have to look at our reasons for believing. Our reason.

And there, we talk about internalizing the Word of God, and experiencing the change in our lives, in our thinking, the supernatural experience of the Holy Spirit, the intimacy with Jesus Christ and the Word. When the reason is in place, when the reason is there, it's not just because of what we exalt from other people, but it's a deep-seated reason, we know now why, and we can then maybe meet the standard. Revelations 12, 11, also from the amplified, *"And they overcame, conquered him by the means of the blood of the Lamb and by the utterance of their testimony, for they did not love and cling to life, even when faced with death, holding their lives cheap, until they had to die for the witnessing."* And I just asked how many of us would be in that position and die for our witnessing. It's a question we must ask ourselves over and over and over. We cannot pay lip service to God. It's got to be meaningful and it must be something that comes from the heart. Life changing. May the grace of Jesus Christ, the love of God and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you now and forever more. Amen.

Oh Father, Lord God Almighty, we've gathered here this morning, Lord as sinners, acknowledging that You are our God, our Father and Our Creator, and we are but Your creatures who humble ourselves in humility and worship and praise You. Amen. We rejoice in the Lord and magnify His name for His goodness and His mercy.

You've heard what our brother has been saying this morning. A vital message. I want to say to you that we've been speaking to you for some time now about the tape ministry, these cassettes. My brother James has made this beautiful album here. Take a look at it. There are all those sermons in there. These are for distribution.

## James

These sets of eight tapes basically from the days of the Lord telling us to come here and bring tape recorders. There's a number of sets here. If there are not enough sets there, I'll make more. There's no charge for them. The only requirement is the Word of God, and it really does show that the Lord has brought a whole lot of things today, which are prophetic words and (inaudible 54:59.26). These things are for your own education with the Body of God at large. This has been prepared specifically with the mind to giving to other Christian leaders. So, if you know a pastor or somebody, somewhere, and the Lord knows you in your heart, give them this, because the bulk of the Church is not in touch with the message that needs to be preached to (inaudible 55:24.15) The only reason its free is to spread the Gospel. If you want to get donations, that's fine but it's between you and the Lord.

Then there are two other tapes there, the message that Neil preached on the 3rd of December, "You must be born again," and "God cannot compromise with sin." That is essentially an Evangelistic message. There are about ten copies of that tape at the back there. The idea is that you can take that and as Neil said, you can give it out essentially as a Gospel tape. There is a brief message of salvation at the end. There are contacts for Neil. So, it's a self-contained message. You can give them your tape and they can listen to it as the Lord leads, and it's a very powerful testimony of salvation. Again, take what's there. If you need more, just give me a shout. You're free to make as many copies of all of these tapes as you want. So, those of you who don't want to take a full set of tapes, or whether it's a specific message that has really struck you, there are a couple of copies of each of the individual messages that stand alone in a little library case. You can take that as an individual one. There are a number of copies of last week's message, I've got a special tape for you, but there are copies of that as well for any of the other family or friends that were here.

## Prayers

And then what I said, was it last week or the week before, about Spiritual warfare? This building, this city block is under a major Demonic Satanic principality power over the whole of Pretoria North. The fulcrum of Satan's power over this entire geographic area is settled above this area. That's why there are so many Churches here. But the Church has not been diligent in tearing down those principalities and power. And basically, (inaudible 57:32.02) for nearly 2 and a half years. I've got some experience in mining engineering and if you're going to mine an old body like a diamond (inaudible 57:44.04) you go from underneath, you drill a fan shaped hole, you blast it and then it collapses, you blast again, and it collapses. So, on this tape, there's about ten copies of this tape, it's called Spiritual warfare over Pretoria North with regular prayer. I would encourage each family to take this tape, listen to it, pray until you've got the context of the prayer, and then start saying that prayer every night when you intercede.

So, pray first of all, over this geographic location, perhaps secondly over Neil and his Ministry, pray thirdly over your house, your family, and your problems. And basically, it's like that diamond pipe, it's firing shots up into the Spirit realm and slowly tearing this thing down. The more we tear down, the more the individual families and the individual congregations will overlap until eventually Satan's cohorts can be cast into The Pit for a thousand years.

If I may, just take one more minute, while I'm at it, very interesting in terms of Dutch's message today. My brother in law is out from the States, and my Ministry is called End Time Issues, and he gets emails from me from time to time. And he said to me, I really need to sit down with you and hear in more detail what your interpretation of Scripture in that area. So, we took him to the airport this morning

and I was expanding my understanding of where we are at. And as he got out of the car, he said, what about the mark of the beast. And we've been hearing about microchips and what have you, and I've been wrestling with this. It just hit me this morning, and I said to Ingrid coming back from the airport, what I'm seeing more and more, and Neil touched on it the other day, that you're not even going to be able to tell people that they're sinners. That's in a big way up here. I've been ministering over the Internet to people in the States who have been persecuted in a serious fashion for their faith, and the FBI are monitoring them. They basically are getting into a place where they're completely in bondage. They're telling their neighbors not to speak to them.

I was invited to apply for the position for a million rand a year remuneration a few weeks ago, and on my CV, I've got that I'm a believer. They phoned me up and they said most people don't put that on their CV. I said I'm a committed Christian, it's important to me, it doesn't affect my work in the sense of the quality of the work that I do. They wanted to meet with me on Saturday, and Saturday is the true Sabbath, and I don't work on Saturdays. They never came back to me. The point about that is what we are moving into, and I'm sure that after Dutch's message I'm almost 100% certain the mark of the beast is on the forehead and it's on the hand. What do You do with the hand? You communicate contractually the word that comes through your mouth or comes out of your mouth. I think that the mark of the beast is actually whether you are willing to speak the Word of God and acknowledge Jesus Christ in any situation. If you will not, if you will bow to Satan and you would bow to the world and deny your faith, if you're prepared to teach, fine, I could have had that job, I was one of three candidates, for a million Rand a year, chief executive of twenty-five companies.

All I had to do was take that paragraph at the bottom of my CV and zip my lips on that subject when I spoke to that person, and that's more and more the case. If we are prepared to compromise, we're accepting the mark of the beast. If we are not prepared to compromise, if we are willing to put on our CV's, to put on our company letterhead, if we have our own companies, Jesus Christ is Lord, the Word of Christ says, if you will acknowledge Me before men, I will acknowledge you before the Father, but if you will not do that, if you will keep quiet, if the world can't see that you're any different to the rest of them, and they discover by accident after they've known you for 3 years that you're a Christian, you're accepting, I think, the mark of the beast. You are silencing what's in your heart, you're preventing it from coming out of your mouth and you're not righting the contraction.

There's more and more situations coming. It's getting more and more tense in the United States, for example, there are emotions (inaudible 02:25.00) court. They want to move any teaching with regards to morality in sex education in schools. In other words, they now want to teach sex in school as a subject that you practice, and they want to remove all reference to abstinence or anything else. It's just another biological subject, it's a bodily function that you perform with whoever you can find to perform with, and the reason they want to remove it is because they claim it's religion, and constitution now presents religion. And the thing that struck me, is the day is going to come, where, if you're a teacher in the United States, a Christian, you're either going to have to, when you apply for a job, say, I'm sorry, I cannot compromise on that, that is fornication and adultery, I cannot teach sex education without telling people about adultery and fornication, which means they will probably not get a job.

And the thing that struck me this morning is if you don't have a job, you can't buy. So, if you are not prepared to compromise with the world, if you're not prepared to say I cannot teach sex education without morality, I cannot do this, I cannot do that, I cannot be a business on my own account without acknowledging Jesus Christ as Lord, if you do that, you're going to find it harder and harder to get a job, to keep the job, to be in business, but if you compromise, I think you might just be (inaudible

01:03:57.20) and you need to understand that. Tribulation is upon us. Judgement is upon us. We cannot play games with God anymore. We cannot dabble at words anymore.

### **Witnessing**

I'm sorry, but I'm really overflowing at the moment. Ingrid's son (inaudible 01:04:14.18) has been through absolute hell. His natural father was an alcoholic all his life. He came home blind drunk, and he got to a point where he was so demonized that Ingrid and the children slept behind locked doors for two months before God finally took her out of that marriage. She got custody, but he was seeing him every second week. He was just going down, the bloodline was so strong, the influence was so strong, he was getting all his father's demons. They were manifesting and he was becoming rebellious, he was becoming absolutely insufferable. In June, July this year, we were getting absolutely desperate. We said Father, we cannot handle this anymore, whatever we do, however we pray, he's just going down the slope. You've got to do something, it's been six weeks since he started this. That was the beginning of August, September. Since September, October, November, that child has changed. You would not believe it was the same child. He didn't want to help around the house, he didn't want to do anything. On Thursday, he said to me, James, I'll paint the roof of the house. No asking or anything. He got one of his friends, and they've been up there in the sun rubbing the roof down. It's a painted roof, and it's hard, hard work and he's going for it. He's committed.

I am so blessed, I'm bubbling over, I've got to give the glory to God. I have to say to you, it doesn't matter how bad it is, whether it's your children, your staff, whatever, God is able, but we have to pray right. We have not because we ask not and we (inaudible 01:06:08.05) we have to pray the will of God. We've got to stop telling God the answer to our problems. All we say is Father, we don't know what to do. And the minute we stop telling God what to do, that child's life is turned around. We've got to do it. He's been doing absolute miracles in our own lives.

He brought a guy across our paths just over a week ago. A youngster, 30 years old, Scott. We picked him up two months ago hitchhiking. He got picked up and we ministered to him. He went back. The Lord took me all the way to Pretoria (inaudible 01:06:49.18) just come back to the Lord. He's living in our servants room. He's been through absolute hell. And yesterday, I was ministering to him and sharing with him because (inaudible 1:07:02.26). He started with a bag of (inaudible 01:07:04.06) drunk. At the age of about 5, his mother divorced his father. There is whole bunch of stuff about his birth, she had a hysterectomy and he got blamed for it, etc. At the age of 8, she remarried, and this guy she married used to come home drunk and say, 'you're good for nothing, you're a thief, you're a liar, you're this, you're that.' And yesterday I was ministering to him and he said to me, James, he must have said that to me at least 100 times. I said to him in the name of Jesus, you're not a liar, you're not a thief, you're created in the light of God. And the change in that man's life just with that Revelation, we prayed and (inaudible 01:07:55.12). And last night I went to see him at about 10 o'clock, just before I went to bed. He said, the Word is coming alive to me like I've never experienced.

God is so good people. He is so good, but we have to understand the power of words. That guy has still got a lot to go through, he's addicted to drugs, he's addicted to cough mixture, he's been homosexually raped, you name it, it's happened to him. He's a lovely gentle guy, and God has got such a calling on his side. His entire life has been absolutely distorted and destroyed all those years. We have to understand His word. Amen.

The Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put up by the

Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing to You please assist us by passing it on. We thank You for Your cooperation. God bless You. If You have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon Your life and You realize Your need may I pray for You that Jesus Christ may enter Your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon Your life, that Your whole future shall be colored by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in Your life. May God bless You and use You for His glory, for we need every mouth, and we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless You. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should You be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as You feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should You require additional copies of this tape, please contact me, James Robertson on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327 or cell phone 083 251 0644 or fax 011 791 5004 or email [jamesr@infodoor.co.za](mailto:jamesr@infodoor.co.za) and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to You. May the Lord bless You and keep You and make His face to shine upon You, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## **01 13 The Gift of God**

***Neil Dreyer***

Let me speak to you this morning on the gift of God. The gift of God is light, that which came into the world, to change the world forever. It will never be the same. I've got two Scriptures, take a look with me in Genesis, chapter 1, the first few verses, and then we'll go to John, chapter 1, the first 5 verses. *"In the beginning," whenever that was, "it was God that created the Heavens and the Earth. And the Earth was without form and void and darkness was upon the face of the deep. The Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters, and God said, 'let there be light.' And because He said it, there was light. It came to the world."* Then if you come with me to John, chapter 1, the first 5 verses. *"In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God, all things were made by Him," his personality, "and without Him, was not anything made that was made. In Him was life, and the life was the light of men, and the light shineth in the darkness, and the darkness comprehended it not."*

Heavenly Father, we worship and magnify Your glorious name this morning. We thank You for the inestimable gift of Jesus Christ, for what He brought with Him. Jesus is the light of the world, and He lighteth the soul and the life of every member that has cometh into the world. We worship You and magnify Your name. And Lord, this morning we want to say, You're the gift of God to us, the greatest Christmas present we've ever received. We bless You and magnify Your name. When You came, You

brought eternal life with You, You brought the mercy and the love and the justice and the things of God with You. We thank You Lord, and then You brought them into our lives because You came in, the light that lighteth the soul of every man that cometh into the world. Thank You, Lord. In Jesus' name.

### **Three major events**

I want to ask you this morning, if you could ask God for anything this morning, what would it be? I suppose it depends on how old you are. Youngsters would ask for one thing, others would ask for many things. But what would you cherish? What would you think would be the most important of all? There are three major events in the world, and not one of them is being carried by the History of the world. It is being shelved. It's being put on the back burner. It's not that important in the eyes of the world. These three things are the Creation, with man as the prime creation of God. The second is the fall of that man and the realization of universal sin, and its nature. And the third, is the redemption of man, and that includes the final reign of Jesus Christ upon the Earth. The present world system opposes all three. It says, they're not necessary, that they're outdated. It argues that man evolved, thus making Creation an unnecessarily fiction. God didn't make us, we just grew, like topsy, we just grew up, God wasn't involved.

And the first thing that the world does is remove God from His world. The world takes Him out of touch with His world and says, you've got no right here, when all the time we're squatters on God's territory. We have no right upon one square inch of this world except God gives us the right. And the Kingdom that is coming, God gives us the right and He alone gives entry or says any are forbidden. It is God. It is His world. It is the things that He has created. Secondly, the world argues that evolution logically results in the thought that man is not fallen at all but rather is moving steadily towards perfection without any of (inaudible 04:40.03) part, we just need be what we are, and ultimately, we'll be right and there'll be nothing wrong and our world will be a wonderful place. We are just evolved there. That's the second thought that they have about what God has got to say.

And that, in a sense, thirdly, makes man his own redeemer, we save ourselves. God has got nothing to do with it. I can bypass the Cross, I don't have to go that way at all, repentance is not a necessity in my life. God is not necessary. But I say to you this morning, what of God, what of sin in the world? Our technology can be murderous, and it can't be denied that there are those that are willing to use it, that there is the desire to overcome and to conquer. What of greed, what of immorality? Are these part of that perfection we're talking about? Is this for the development that God wants?

### **Mankind**

Listen to your news, listen to the radio, listen to the television and tell me, is this the perfection that man is heading for? There is very little difference. Down the ages, one thing is predominant. Man keeps failing, man keeps falling short, and man can't stand the highest standards. Are these all part of that perfection? The Bible teaches that there is something radically wrong with the world, and the Internet just tells us how widespread it is as it feeds the desires of men. And this is the real reality. This is what we are facing. The world itself is neither good nor bad. Man is problem. He is the reason why things go wrong in this world. God made it perfect. There was nothing wrong with it. The truth is that it is not so rosy a picture as men present. In fact, the world is in dire trouble. And the question arises, what can save the world? What can save mankind from himself? God says, "I am necessary, I am needed in every life, there is no life that is complete except I play a part there, except I can speak into the situation and give My wisdom and the benefit of what I know."

Men cannot make it on their own. God knows it. He says it over and over and over again. Each one of us needs a God. Each one of us need a living God, one who can point the way for us to go. Blessed be His Holy name. God is needed. And intent is always revealed by priorities, and there is never more so than in the Bible. God has made this a priority. In fact, this is what the Bible is all about, about change, about renewal, about a new life, a new possibility, and a second chance. This is what the Bible is, and which of us don't need it? How many of us have faced situations in our life that we wish we could excise, or just take out and we move as if it never happened, because it brings a blush to the face. And we understand that we've come short, every one of us does. Not one of us is perfect. We know it. Perfection for man on his own terms is a myth. The Bible tells us that change, and renewal is needed.

### **Light in the darkness**

In Creation, the very first thing, the priority that God did, was to bring order out of chaos, light out of darkness. These were the things that He was involved with. God separated what was functional from what was useless, what was wrong, from what was right. He cut a path right through this order. Darkness covers disorganization, it covers these things. And God says it's got to be removed so that people may see the light, and being the light is understanding the situation as it really is. He made a declaration of intent and purpose, and then He acted on it, and God gave an answer, and what was the answer that God gave? I want to tell you this morning. The only enemy that darkness has got, is light. In the absence of light, it reigns supreme, it rules, and people walk in darkness and they don't know that the light is there. They don't understand the difference between right and wrong. And there is a standard in the world today that is akin to madness in my opinion. People come to conclusions and have ideas and have values that are so way out, that you can't understand it, and you can't comprehend it. People do and say the most amazing things. Light is the only enemy the dark has. Only light can challenge the dark for supremacy. Only right can conquer wrong. Only God can conquer Satan, beloved, not the wisdom of a man bent on going on his own way.

On our own, we are no match. Darkness will swallow the world. In spite of the United Nations and in spite of everything that man says can be done, we don't find answers for the problems of our world. So, God gave light, and that was the perfect answer. In Genesis 1 and 2, the Bible says darkness was upon the face of the deep, it covers it, it is there, it is upon covering like a blanket. And darkness reigns supreme in the absence of light, as it always does, then it is supreme, and people go that way. But light is always the nemesis of the dark. Darkness reign only until the Word of God came. The Bible says, *"and God said, 'Let there be light, and there was light.'"* The instant light came, in that same instance the darkness could not reign, in fact, it could no longer exist. It went. There was the battle that ensued. Their battle was joined.

Billy Graham, in one of his crusades organized with the people that each person that came into the auditorium was issued with a match and something to strike it on. And they were told that at a certain time, they would be instructed to light their matches in unison. And just before the order was given, all the lights in the auditorium were doused, and pitch darkness reigned. Then the instruction came - light your match. Thousands upon thousands of people each lit a little match and the light illuminated that stadium as if the lights were on. God is the Light of the world, and every one of us is a particle of that light. And as we carry light, so the light comes to the world. Jesus is a reality, but He needs to be declared. The ends of the Earth need to know about Him, and need to know what He brought with Him, and what He's offering. The world needs to know that that there are alternatives to what's happening in our world. It doesn't have to be like this. We don't have to have the kinds of things we're having, there are other possibilities with God, and He wants us to know that, He wants us labelled for it, and He wants us to know and act on it.

The Word said, carries the meaning of challenge, and God challenged the darkness, and because He challenged it, it went. And when we challenge it, it goes. It's got to go out of the world. We've got to open our mouths and we've got to speak and let the world know. There is a natural light that owes its existence to natural causes, and the Bible tells me this, that it was only on the fourth day that the sun and the moon and the stars were placed in orbit, on the fourth day. But in the beginning, God said, "let there be light." It was a different light, it was the light that came by the Spirit of God, moving upon the face of the waters. It is a spiritual thing, it is embodied in a person, it is real, it is wonderful, and it is the truth. And that's what God wants the world to know because the truth can save our world. Only the truth can do it. The lies will never save our world. The light God commanded, came into the world through the Holy Spirit operating on the Word of God in the beginning. It was the Word that overcame. That light was the greatest gifts of God's Creation, so that we can walk in it all the days of our lives.

### **Power display**

In Genesis 1 and 2, the Bible says this, *"And the Earth was without form and void, and darkness was upon the face of the deep, and the Spirit of God moved upon the waters."* That was a power display. Don't forget it. It was a power display. The Spirit was involved. And when the day of Pentecost came and God said, the light is going to break upon the world, it came by the Holy Spirit, and it will only come by the Holy Spirit. There is no other source for it. We must be empowered from on high. We must handle the power of God, otherwise nothing is going to happen. What comes from me and what comes from you naturally will not change our world, but what God puts through it will change the world. It has the power to do so and God wants us to know, God wants us to act on it, and to take it as from His hand. The battle between dark and light, right and wrong has continued ever since.

Avast divide including man, there is a chasm, but on the other side there is light. There is a choice that we can make. We can walk in the light or we can walk in the darkness. When we were born, we were born into this arena. The battle is with and about us, about the minds of men. The battles aren't fought on the front line of the battle field, they are fought here in the minds and the hearts of men. Their allegiance and their dedication are what they give themselves to, what they stand for, and what they tell the world about themselves. These are the things that are important. We were born into it. The battle between dark and light, right and wrong became our battlefield. We are all involved. We are either for or we're against. We have taken sides. We do this every day in the decisions that we make. There are some for, or we decide against. We are either with, or we are against. There is no neutrality in this war. We either win or we lose. And the world is either forfeit or it is won. We either promote or we oppose.

### **The Word**

And God moved on your behalf and mine when He sent His Son into the world. 2000 years ago, in the beginning, right at that moment when the Spirit moved on the waters, in the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God and the Word was God. *"All things were made by Him and without Him was not anything made that was made. In Him was the life and the life was the light of men, and the light shines in the darkness and the darkness comprehended it not."* The amplified version gives that last rendering, *"for the darkness has never overpowered it, put it out or has not absorbed it, has not appropriated it, isn't perceptive to it. The darkness has never overcome it."* Not once. It's always been victorious. What God put in place has never failed. It remains the answer for the world and for mankind. It is the greatest cause, the greatest challenge that there is that can face your life. It is the greatest thing that you can do if you serve the Lord, to divide the purely temporal from the eternal, to be light bearers for God against darkness wherever we find it and to know the difference, to tell the



truth because we believe in the truth, because we believe that it is the only truth with people walking in truth that can save the world. It's this.

This is the answer. If I stand for it, if I do not give place and give ground to the darkness but am myself enlightened with the light that lightens the soul of every man that cometh into the world, that darkness shall be banished from the world and the hearts of men forever. It will go because it has no right here. We've come to the time where there is, I believe, no more time to run, for where will we run too? We have to stand. There is no longer any place to hide because the truth is going to come out. There is tremendous pressure in the world today for people to bring out what they are and who they are. You can't hide away. It's becoming more and more of a pattern. This difference between the right and the wrong. It's being exposed and I believe that that's the hand and the handiwork of God. There is only one thing that is logical in my mind and that is that we must go God's way. In Joel 3 and 14, the Bible says, "*Multitudes in the Valley of decision for the day of the Lord is near in the Valley of decision.*"

### Choices

You and I are making decisions that affect eternity every moment of the day of our lives, and the world is deciding about light and darkness right now. The dividing lines are made clearly drawn as mankind decides where they stand. Only God's light can banish the darkness and dry it out of the hearts of men from Jesus Christ, the Light of the world. This, I believe is God's greatest gift to mankind and He has placed it in the hands of those willing to use it and to walk in the light of it. The apostle Paul advises you and me in 2 Corinthians 6 and 1 - 2, "*we then, as workers together with Him, beseech you also, that you receive not the grace of God in vain, for He said, I have heard Thee in the time accepted and in the day of salvation have I suckered thee. Behold now is the accepted time. Behold now is the day of salvation.*"

And Micah 6 and 8 says this, "*He hath shewed thee, O man, what is good; and what doth the Lord require of thee, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with thy God, He hath showed thee.*" God doesn't leave us in the dark about our priorities. Your priorities are in your hands, you make the decisions. God influences and God speaks, but you make the decisions. You decide where you will stand, and you can't hide it any longer. We are not heading for perfection as men through evolution, from what we are to what we must be. That's not happening. The only perfection that there is beloved, is through the blood of Jesus Christ into the Kingdom that He is about to establish. That's it. That's where perfection lies. We're either moving to the Kingdom or we're not. We are either in line or we are not. Our lives are that which God wants to preserve in His Kingdom and His Kingdom is holiness unto the Lord and the lives that God wants to preserve, are the ones that are in line with that concept. Nothing else. The standards of the world will be left out forever. They will not come into His Kingdom. They've got no right there. God is a holy God. Our God is a consuming fire. He doesn't allow, so He burns it up. He destroys it.

Take a look at the life of Jesus. Watch what He was. He came into the world so that God may know what the standard is, so that we may know what God is like. Jesus declared God unto the world. It's that Jesus that's coming back. Nothing has changed. Just as He was, so will He be? What He was against, He's still against, what He is for, or was for, He still is for. It's exactly the same. Nothing has changed. If we want to walk with Him, we must change, not Him. We must. We must come blind with the standards that He's given us in this Book, and He says, "in that day, I will not judge you, the Word that I've given you will judge you." You've got it in your pocket. You've got it on the shelf. It's speaking

whether you read it or not, it's speaking about you. It's handling your situation. It's telling the world and that's how God is going to do it.

So, this morning, I'm sorry that I haven't really preached a Christmas service to you. Normally I preach Christmas services and I enjoy doing so, but this morning I haven't preached you one like that. I preached God's gift to you. That's God's gift. The real gift of God.

Heavenly father, we come to You in the lovely name of Jesus and we worship You and we magnify Your lovely name. We exalt You because You're our God beside whom there is none other. And Lord, we worship You and adore You and we give You glory and majesty and praise, and Lord, bless our fellowship in the years to come, I pray, bless this group of people, meet their needs, oh God. And glorify Your name in every life, we love them in the Lord. And heavenly Father I ask that You would just work your work in them, because those are precious in Christ's name. Amen.

The Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put up by the Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing to you please assist us by passing it on. We thank you for your cooperation. God bless you. If you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realize your need may I pray for you that Jesus Christ may enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon your life, that your whole future shall be colored by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory, for we need every mouth, and we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact me, James Robertson on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327 or cell phone 083 251 0644 or fax 011 791 5004 or email jamesr@infodoor.co.za and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## **01 14 The Wrath of God for the Church**

***James Robertson***

The Lord has given me what certainly is the most difficult message I've ever given and it's quite possibly the most difficult message that you've ever heard, but it's for the beginning of the year 2001. So,

before we start, I just want to ask you to join with me in prayer. Father, we come to You in the name of Jesus. Lord, I bring this word before You. I ask for Your anointing and Your action on everything that is uttered. I ask that everything that is according to Your will and according to Your Word will find deep roots in the hearts of those who hear this message, but that if I utter anything that is not according to Your perfect will and Your perfect word, that You will blow it away in Jesus' name. Father, I ask that You will send Your mighty Angels to encamp all who hear this message, to bind and silence any spirit that would seek to interfere with the receiving of this message. I ask You to cover all here with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet. I ask You to cover anybody who is related to them with the blood of Jesus. And Father, I ask that You will make the way, that You will speak to us through Your Word today, and that You will guide us and prepare us for that which is to come, in the mighty name of Jesus. Amen.

Just to give you a little bit of context to this message. As you know, I shared with you a few weeks ago that the Lord had given me this project. I just brought it to show you that's the project. It's 96 teaching facts, including that proof that I handed out here from this congregation, plus the set I did a year ago on judgment in this life, plus 55 tapes on healing marriage and how to experience heaven in marriage, plus another 15 tapes from another ministry on deliverance, which the Lord led me to put all together on Thursday last week. It's entitled, "Gods plan for healing marriage in the seventh millennium." However, you look at it, we are now into the seventh millennium, seven thousand years from the Creation of Adam and Eve. Whether it started - some people reckon it started on the Tabernacle's 1996, other people reckoned it happened on other dates, but the latest that I've heard anybody say it's going to start, is tomorrow. And there's no scriptural reason why it should be tomorrow because tomorrow is not significant in God calendars as a day that God has appointed. It's not Tabernacles, it's not Passover, and it's not any of the feasts in Scripture.

But however, we look at it, we are now into the tenth millennium, and so those things which are prophesied for the seventh millennium are coming to pass, and I'm here to tell you that God has been extending grace and extending grace, and grace is no more, in terms of the sin that has to be dealt with. Now we've heard the messages that have been building up that Neil has been preaching, and I'm going to recap a couple of points out of that, and then I'm going to take you further. I'm going to take you through the headlines of what God has shown me, why wrath is going to be poured out on the Church right now, and thereafter on the world, and what we need to do as believers, to respond to the judgment that is now upon the earth, in order that we may overcome to the end. Because if we do not know why the judgment is coming and the tribulation and how to respond to it, we will be inadequately equipped. And the reason this message is so significant, and I was impressed that this thing had to be finished yesterday, we couriered a pack, it's also on the CD, that (inaudible 00:03:39) digital CD's and that was couriered off with about 10 CD's and a set of tapes to the United States yesterday. Another set to Malawi, another CD to Singapore and God-willing in the next few days, another pack to London.

### **Judgement and tribulation**

What's significant is that the lead into that whole message, is what has been preached here over the last three months. And the sense that I have, and I say this in all humility, is that there are not many people around the world who are listening attentively to what the Spirit of God is saying in the season, because of the Words that the Spirit is bringing now is very, very firm. Many people would say they're harsh. Many people would say God can't speak that way, but we've seen repeatedly in the words that have been brought over the last few months that God is calling us to holiness and sanctification. So, the title of my message given by the Spirit of God is, "The Wrath of God for the Church - why judgement

is coming on the Church today." And I want to start off very briefly by talking a little bit about how judgment comes and what tribulation is. I then want to go on to the heart of the message. I've printed out all the Scriptures that apply to the message. Therefore, I'm not going to read them all in detail. You can take them away with you and God-willing, next Sunday I'll have copies of the tape for you.

So, let me just take it from there. 1 Peter 4, 17 and 18, *"the time has come for judgment to begin at the House of God. And if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the Gospel of God."* Now if the righteous one is scarcely saved, where will the ungodly and the sinner appear? Now, just focus on two points there. Judgment begins at the House of God. It doesn't end with the House of God. God cannot judge the ungodly and the unrighteous and those who have never accepted Jesus Christ, until He has judged those who believe. Those of us who accept that this is the Holy Spirit inspired Word of God, must be subject to harsher judgment than those who have never believed it. So, God has to judge the Church before He can judge the world. Before Satan can be cast into The Pit, God must sanctify His Church. He must sort out the wheat and the chaff, the goats and the sheep, the wheat and the (inaudible 00:05:53) That is where we're at now, the sifting and the refining. We've been praying for years now, Lord, send Your fire and the fire is upon us.

## **Yahweh**

Just before I go any further, I've mentioned the name Yahweh, and you've probably heard me use it before and I just want to read what's in this document in front of you. The word, Yahweh, I'm going to use it throughout the rest of this teaching as far as I remember, to reflect the fact that the correct translation of the Hebrew word generally translated, 'the Lord', and you read it in your Bibles in little capitals, and in many others is in fact the word Yahweh. Yahweh is the proper name for our God, and it appears 6,828 times in the Old Testament. (inaudible 00:06:36) says, Lord, the divine name Yahweh. W-H-Y-H is the correct Hebrew rendition. It appears only in the Bible. It's precise meaning is much debated. God chose it as His personal name by which He related specifically to His chosen or covenant people. In other words, by way of analogy, I've got here, my name is James, but my designation is husband, and for Ingrid to constantly call me husband, rather than James is very impersonal, and I guess most men would get pretty upset with their wives, and wives vice versa if their husband always said wife, rather than Anne or Jane or whatever the case may be.

So, we don't get into the full relationship with the Lord God Almighty with Yahweh God, if we only refer to Him as the Lord. A bit of a sting in the tail there, is that the word, 'the Lord', is the correct English translation of the word 'Baal'. It's a bit of the sting. Okay. (inaudible 00:07:37) interference with what goes on in this world, has got us to use the correct English translation of the Hebrew word, Baal, to reflect the Lord God. Yahweh is His name. It is untranslatable. He is Yahweh in every language, in all times and in all seasons. Just as a matter of interest, the correct translation, or the correct word for Jesus, bearing in mind for those of you who don't know it, the New Testament was not written in Greek, it was written in Aramaic. It was then translated into Greek, the Aramaic scripts still exist in the far east, but most people have been led to believe that it's Greek. Jesus is the Greek rendition of Yahooshua and is a derivative of Yahweh. So, we see the relationship between the Lord God, Yahweh and His Son Yahooshua.

So, I just wanted to make that point because the season is coming where God will no longer wink at our ignorance. We need to start to know His name if we want to come into that place where the Lord God and Yahooshua are so real to me that nothing else is more real. We can't come into that place unless we can speak to Him with His personal name that He has given us. So, if you turn over, continuing with understanding judgment, Revelations 12, verses 9 to 11, *"And the great dragon was*

*cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, who deceives the whole world. He was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. Then I heard a loud voice saying in Heaven, now salvation and strength and the Kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ has come for the accuser of our brethren who accused them before our God, night and day has been crossed out. And they overcame him by the blood of the lamb and by the word of their testimony."*

### **The roaring lion**

The broad context of that is this is where we're heading. We're heading to the day when Satan is going to be finally cast into The Pit and locked away for 1000 years. And I think that's in Revelations chapter 19, but I want you to see two things about that verse in Scripture. That is written present tense. It's not something that happened previously. It's something that's going to happen in a couple of years' time as I best understand it. Now he is before the throne of God, night and day accusing, or if you want to put it into terms as we understand, prosecuting the brethren. So, I want you to get that, because I want to paint a picture of a courtroom, because we're talking about judgment and we need to understand how judgement works. Take a look at 1 Peter 5, 8 and 9, "*Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour, resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same sufferings are experienced by your brother living in the world.*"

Now we hear a lot about Satan is like a roaring lion. He's not really a roaring lion, he is more dangerous than a roaring lion, let me tell you, but the key verse, the keyword in that Scripture for today is whom he may, it's permissive. He can't touch the hair on your head without it be the Fathers will. We read in Matthew, not one (inaudible 00:10:58) falls to the ground but apart from Jesus speaking, apart from the Father's will. Satan cannot steal from you. He cannot do anything in your life. He cannot cause you to become ill. He cannot cause you to become poor. He cannot cause you to do anything, save the Father permits it. We don't necessarily want to get our teeth into it, but we need to get our teeth into it, what is ahead. 1 John 2, 1 to 7, "*My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin, and if anyone sins, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ, the righteous and He Himself is the propitiation for our sins and not for ours only, but also for the whole world. Now by this we know that we know Him if we keep His Commandments. He who says I know Him and does not keep His Commandments is a liar and the truth is not in him, but whoever keeps His Word, truly the love of God is perfected in him. Brethren, by this we know that we're in Him. He who says he abides in Him or to himself or walks just as He walks. Brethren, I write no new Commandment unto you, but an old Commandment which you have had from the beginning. The old Commandment is the word which you have heard from the beginning.*"

And there are a couple of points in that passage that I want you to see. First of all, Jesus is the advocate. So now we're painting a picture of judgment and I have a prosecutor which is Satan, and I have an advocate. What does an advocate do in a courtroom? He pleads the defendant's case. He pleads his client's case. In a criminal case, the prosecutor acts for the state in bringing the accusations and the appealing's of judgement against the offender, and the advocate pleads either to prove the innocence with mitigation of sentence. So, we have Jesus, the advocate, who brings the Cross and brings the sacrifices of Calvary and the blood of the Cross in mitigation of sentence. However, we read elsewhere in Hebrews 6 and Hebrews 10 that we cannot rely on that if we sin.

The other thing we see is that we know we love God if we keep His Commandments, and also that the word that John was bringing there is an old Commandment, the word that we've heard from the beginning. It's the Word we've heard since the beginning of Genesis, not just the Word that we've heard since the beginning of Matthew. And that's very important because the message that I'm going

to bring you, or I'm in the process of bringing you, is that the Church today is breaking every one of the ten Commandments, willfully and knowledgeably because they have had their eyes closed to the Word of God, and that is at the heart of the judgment that is now upon this earth. So, we now see, and I want you to have a picture of the judgement order of the throne when you turn over with me to the next page. And I want to give you a couple of cameos out of Scripture to help you to understand what happens before the judgment seat.

### **The judgement seat of God**

What's happening right now as we speak before the judgment seat of God, 1 Kings 22, 19 to 23, this is the situation just before Ahab was killed in battle. And Micaiah, the prophet said, *"Therefore, hear the Word of Yahweh, I saw Yahweh sitting on his throne, and all the host of heaven standing by on his right hand and on his left. And Yahweh said, who will persuade Ahab to go up that he may fall at Ramothgilead? So, one has taken this manner, and one has taken that manner, and the Spirit came forward, and stood before Yahweh and said, I will persuade him. Yahweh said to him, in what way? So, he said, I will go out and be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And Yahweh said, you shall persuade him, and also prevail also. Go out and do so. Therefore look, Yahweh has put a lying spirit in the mouth of all these prophets of yours, and Yahweh has declared disaster against you."*

### **Ahab and Jezebel**

Now that is happening in fulfilment of an earlier prophecy in terms of which it was said, that Jezebel, the dogs would lick the blood of Ahab and they would eat Jezebel and there would be nothing left of her. And following on from that we see God bringing judgement on Ahab and Jezebel through an intervention where He opens a door to certain of Satan's demons, to actually intervene in the life of Ahab and Jezebel because of their continuous work of sin. If you read the whole of Ahab and Jezebel's story behind that, you will see that Elijah calls down fire from Heaven to devour and sacrifice 450 prophets of Baal who were slain. Jezebel then sought to destroy Elijah. Ahab in the meantime, in between all of this, repented in sackcloth and ashes. God repented of His prophecy to destroy Ahab, and Ahab went back into his willful ways. We see the whole life of Jezebel and Ahab. And Jezebel is a type and a shadow of the Jezebel spirit, which is very dominant in the western world. It's been dominant in the Church that has come out of Rome, and it is very dominant and very assertive, particularly in the modern Charismatic Churches. And Jezebel, is, if you like, a shadow and a type wife of Satan.

And you see that also to a point in Revelations where Jezebel is referred to as a harlot. So, we need to look at that in the context of what's happening in this age. If we go into the (inaudible 00:16:30) in Job chapter 1, verses 6 to 12, *"Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before Yahweh, and Satan also came among them."* Now the Sons of God is a poor translation. I think it refers to the Spirit Creations and that includes all the Angels and Angelic beings and the Demons, etc. *"And Yahweh said to Satan, from where do you come? So, Satan answered Yahweh and said, from going to and fro in the earth, and from walking back and forth on it."*

Now I'll just take you back to 1 Peter 5, 8 where we read that Satan runs around like a roaring lion, and so we said he goes back to and fro on the earth. *"And then Yahweh said to Satan, have you considered my servant Job? There is none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil. So, Satan answered Yahweh and said, does Job fear God for nothing. Have you not made a hedge around him, and around his household and around all that he has on every side? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his position has increased in the land. Now, stretch*

*out your hand and touch all that he has, and he will surely curse you to your face. So, Yahweh said to Satan, behold, all that he has is in your power; do not lay a hand on this person. So, Satan went out in the presence of Yahweh."*

### **Job and his wife**

Now I'll draw your attention. This ties back to the first message that's on that series of tapes that Neil preached about Job. And it's important that you see, because this passage of teachings is from that teaching at the beginning, I think it was October, through to this teaching today and represents a passage that God has given us. It's a package that he wants to give to the Church as a whole. So, we see there the judgment seat again. We see Satan involved in a discussion with God before anything can happen to Job. Satan then goes out and he takes everything, Job's children, his possessions, his cattle, his sheep, his camels, the whole shooting match. Job is left destitute. And then in Job chapter 2, verses 1 to 9, again, there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before Yahweh and Satan came also among them to present himself before Yahweh in verse 7. *"So, Satan went out in the presence of Yahweh and struck Job with painful boils from the sole of his foot to the crown of his head, and he took him a potsherd to scrape himself with while he sat in the midst of the ashes. And his wife said to him, do you still hold fast your integrity? Curse God and die."*

What we see there is before Satan could touch Job physically, he had to go back before the throne of God. Then what I also want you to see, and this is really important in terms of the teaching for the prevalent in the Church today, is that Job's wife was unscathed throughout this whole process. She was under her husband's covering and notwithstanding the fact that she got really close to being a bit blasphemous at that point, she was under his covering. She did not get touched personally throughout the entire episode. Women need to understand that if they submit to their husbands, if they are in complete submission to their husbands in everything, Ephesians 5, I think it's 23 says, and they are told in 1 Peter, 3, 1, *"submit like Christ submitted to those who crucified Him, in absolutely everything."* A woman who is in complete submission to her husband will not be touched by the devil, unless she gets out from under her husband's covering, or if the sin in her life is at such a magnitude that God actually has to discipline her husband to a point where he then has to discipline the wife.

And we need to understand that because the power of marriage lies in that hierarchy of accountability, a woman who is in complete submission to her husband in everything, will be completely sheltered, and she can intercede for her husband and lift him up and do all sorts of things. This is part of the revelation of what God's been giving us on these tapes that I've been recording. Why was Satan permitted to attack Job? We must understand Satan has also been learning. Job is supposedly the oldest book in the Bible. It's the oldest account. So, what we're actually reading about there is before Satan knew a whole lot of the stuff that I'm talking about today, Satan was still learning. He didn't know what his boundaries were. He thought he couldn't touch Job until the Father said to him, have you considered my servant Job? He is in your hand. Why was he in Satan's hand? Job 3, 25 is part of the answer. *"For the thing I greatly feared has come upon me and what I dreaded has happened to me."*

If we read in the first 2 chapters of Job, we read that Job was offering sacrifices in case his children had sinned. So out of fear, reactive, preventative, lack of faith, fear, which is Satan the devil, Job was saying because he wasn't coming to God, and Satan was saying, I know I've sinned, please forgive me. He was saying, maybe my sons have sinned, and I'm scared that they might have, and here he said he actually greatly feared that he would lose everything. So that gave Satan a legal right to attack him. Job 29, 18 to 22 very specifically, but the whole of Job 29, which Neil picked up in his message says -

this is Job speaking, verse 18, *"then I said, I shall die in my nest and I shall multiply my days as the sand."* Job had forgotten at that point before the judgment came on him, that he was actually completely dependent on God. He was exalting himself and he was foretelling in his opinion where he would stand, so fear and pride, two of the biggest things that will open the door to Satan to kill and destroy. If we just turn over.

## Commandments

What is the basis of judgment? The whole of Pretoria is judgement, but if you read Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy, there's a whole lot of Historical account. And the crux of the matter is there are some limited passages in those five books which actually set out the Torah of the fundamentals of God's law. And those are the 10 Commandments, plus certain passages in Leviticus 18 and 20 which deal with sexual sin and things like that. Certain other passages deal with uncleanness, which are a shadow and type of what we have today and a whole lot of sacrifices. We have to understand that Jesus came as the spotless Lamb in fulfillment of the animal sacrifices which are set out particularly in Leviticus, but we need to get to the basis on which Satan can come before the throne of judgment. And it's important to understand that the critical components of Torah all appear twice.

So, you get the 10 Commandments in Exodus chapter 20, and you get them almost verbatim again in Deuteronomy, chapter 5. You get the laws concerning sexual sin in Leviticus 18, and you get them almost verbatim again in Leviticus chapter 20. Some of them are repeated, I think it's in Deuteronomy 31 or 32. So here's the first occurrence, and this is Exodus 20 verses 1 to 23, the account of what was on those tablets of stone that God gave to Moses. But I'm not going to read those. I'm going to flip straight over to the next sheet, which is Deuteronomy chapter 5. And I want to read that to you because I want to lift out some key points there. This one, this is now Moses recapping what happens on the night. *"Moses called all of Israel and said to them, hear O Israel, the statutes and judgments. So here we find the judgements again which I speak of today, that you may learn them, and be careful to observe them. Yahweh our God made a covenant with us in Horeb. Yahweh did not make the covenant with our fathers, but with us, those who are here today, all of us who are alive. Yahweh talked with you face to face on the mountain from the midst of the fire. I stood between Yahweh and you at that time to declare to you the word of Yahweh, for you were afraid because of the fire and you did not go up the mountain."*

Now the first thing is this is the only time in the whole of Scripture, barring a couple of incidents in Jesus' life, where the Father spoke from a cloud. This is the only instance in which Yahweh got to appear to a mass of people in a flame of fire. So, this is a pretty significant passage of Scripture and we need to recognize that what is said here is profoundly important in the sight of God. Now I did insert here, two passages from Matthew chapter 22 and here, verse 37. *"You shall love Yahweh, your God with all Your heart, all your soul, with all your mind. This is the first and greatest Commandment."* And the way I see it, the first four of the ten Commandments are summed up in, *"You shall love Yahweh, your God with all your heart, with all your soul and with all your mind."* So, if I carry on, *"I'm Yahweh, your God who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the House of bondage, you shall have no other gods before me."*

The first Commandment, *"you shall not make for yourself any carved image."* The second Commandment. I'm not going to read all the bits in between, you can follow that yourself. *"You shall not take the name of your God in vain."* The third Commandment, *"observe the Sabbath Day to keep it holy."* The fourth Commandment. And he goes into a lot of detail about the Sabbath Day. *"Six days,*



*you shall labor and do all your work, but the seventh day is the Sabbath of Yahweh your God, on it you shall not do any work.*" I just want to bring out another of these little pieces that we need to know to understand what's going on in the age today. Sunday is the first day of the week. It always has been the first day of the week. Saturday is the seventh day of the week. Saturday always has been and always will be God's Sabbath. Sunday is the day of the Son. It is the day of the worship of the Son. It was introduced into the Christian Church in about 315AD by the council of Trent, in order to distance the Christian gentile Church from its Jewish heritage and a whole lot of other heresies were introduced between 300 and 600AD by the Roman Church through the Pope. This was even before the Pope, when the so-called emperor of the Roman Empire and also the head of the Church in a titular and in fact in a legislative capacity.

And I believe, and I'm in contact with more and more people who are observing the true Sabbath as Saturday for Sabbath observant Christian. These are greater and (inaudible 00:27:17) where the Spirit is saying, keep the Sabbath. It's not a legalistic thing, but it's a case that the Lord is saying, if you truly love Me, honor My day, and that's another area where the Church is, in many areas, not in line with what God is saying. And then I want to go on and introduce Matthew 29 verse 39, *"you shall love your neighbor as yourself."* And the remaining 6 of the 10 Commandments all deal with our relationships with our neighbors. And that came through very strongly in the place of worship just now. *"Love Your neighbor as Jesus has loved you."* The fifth Commandment, *"honor your father and your mother."* Six, *"you shall not murder."* Seven, *"you shall not commit adultery."* Eight, *"you shall not steal."* Nine, *"you shall not be a false witness against your neighbor."* And ten, *"you shall not covet your neighbor's wife and you shall not desire your neighbor's house, his field, his manservant, his maid servant, his ox, his donkey or anything that is your neighbors."*

These words "(inaudible 00:28:15) in the mountain from the midst of the fire, the cloud and the thick darkness, with a loud voice, and he added no more. And he wrote them on two tablets of stone and gave them to me." I'll ask you two things about that passage. First thing he said, this is Moses speaking. He added no more. Secondly, he wrote them on tablets of stone. Stone is unchanging. Stone speaks of things which don't change. So, the ten Commandments have never ever been modified or changed. They remain just as profoundly important today as they were when Moses received them from God on the tablets of stone, as God saw fit to come down on Mount Horeb and speak them to the people of Israel. And it goes on, verse 29, this is Yahweh speaking, *"oh that they had such a heart in them, they would fear me and always keep all my Commandments, that it might be well with them and their children forever."*

### **Obeying God's Commandments**

There's no limit on those ten Commandments. But what is important to understand is that if we observe those ten Commandments, it will go well with us and our children forever. And what I want you to see in the context of what I've shared earlier about the judgement seat, is in so far as it's not going well with us, it's because we are breaking to a greater or less extent one or more of those commodities. Therefore, Satan is able to obtain judgment against us. So, if we are ill, if we have lack, if there's anything wrong in our lives, we need to see it in this context, because if we were fully honoring in the vein of keeping the 10 Commandments, there could be no judgment and it would go well. And it's important that you understand. I wrote this about a year ago. It's called, *"Poverty in the Church of Jesus Christ."* This has some contributory factors towards holiness, sanctification and circumcision of the heart. And that's a digest of things that God has been showing me over the last six or seven years. But the important thing about it is God has given us judgement in order to enable us to come to a place of holiness and sanctification. So, if something goes wrong in your life...

I'm an engineer and I kind of got into this by accident, because when I came back to the Lord in 1993, after being terribly backslidden and on the point of physical and spiritual death, and well on my way to hell, I realized since then that my life hasn't been my own. I should have been in hell seven years ago, and He reached down and pulled me out of it. As an engineer, I really threw myself into the Word, and things kept going wrong and I kept saying Lord, why. And he kept giving me answers and a lot of the answers were in conflict with what the Church was telling me. I was going for counseling. I was trying to save my marriage, which didn't happen. Eventually I had to say goodbye, in a sense, but the woman that I've loved for 25 years turned her back on Jesus and went to hell. I have to tell you, that is a shocking experience. To see somebody that you've loved for 25 years lose their salvation.

## Salvation

So, don't tell me people can't lose their salvation. I've seen people lose their salvation and it's a horrible experience. But in that process, I was asking God. I kept getting answers and that's the digest of what's in that document, but there's not time to go through all of that today. I want to take you then to Matthew 5, verses 17 to 20. This is Jesus speaking. *"Do not think that I came to destroy the law or the prophets. I did not come to destroy, but to fulfil, until earth and Heaven pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law."* This is speaking about (inaudible 00:32:03) five or seven Hebrew words translated law in the English. There is the Torah, which is the written Word of God, which is the five books of Moses. Then there's the Psalms and the Proverbs, which are all part of the law. There's the prophets, which I assume would include the New Testament, and then there's the oral. As I understand it, Jesus is speaking about the Torah. He's not speaking about the oral law, and so forth, He is speaking about these 10 Commandments, and certain other passages of the books of Moses.

*"Whoever therefore breaks one of the least of these Commandments and teaches men so, shall be called least in the Kingdom of Heaven. But whoever does and teaches them, he shall be called great in the Kingdom of Heaven. For I say to you that unless righteousness exceeds the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you will by no means enter the Kingdom of Heaven."* (inaudible 00:32:57) get to the point of sharing with you just a few other headlines where we are breaking these laws today in ignorance, because that's what we've been taught, and our fathers were taught before us. Matthew 7, verses 12 to 15 different. *"Therefore, whatever you want Me to do to you, do also to them for this is the law and the prophets, enter by the narrow gate for wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction. And there are many who go in by it, because narrow is the gate and difficult is the way which leads to life and there are few who find it."*

We need to really be aware that Jesus himself says that few would find life and the 10 Commandments are the key to life. Matthew 22 verses 36 to 40, *"Teacher what is the greatest Commandment in the Lord? Jesus said to him, you shall love Yahweh your God with all your heart, all your soul with all your mind. This is the first and great Commandment and the second is, you shall love your neighbor as yourself. On these two hang all the law and the prophets."* And finally, Luke 24, verses 42 to 45 we see that Jesus speaks of himself as fulfilling the Law of Moses and the prophets. So, Jesus in a very real sense is the law. If you turn over to me...I want to pose the question to you. Where are we now? And I want to read to you Isaiah chapter 4, verses 6 to 2 in reverse order, and it will become evident to you in a minute why I read it in reverse order. It's all speaking about the same period of time. It's a progression.

*"There will be a tabernacle for shade in the daytime from the heat for a place of refuge and for a shelter from storm and rain."* Preceding that, so that's the end result. This is now the new Jerusalem returns.

Verse 5, preceding that, *"then Yahweh will create above every dwelling place in Mount Zion, and upon her assemblies a cloud and smoke by day, and the shining of the flaming fire by night, for over all the glory, there will be a covering.* Verse 4, *"when the Lord has washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion and purged the blood of Jerusalem from her midst, by the spirit of judgement and by the spirit of burning."*

### **Spiritual death**

And I say to you today, before the throne of God, by the Spirit of God that we are now coming into that time. The spirit of judgment and the spirit of burning has come upon the earth, and we will see this more and more. I had an instance recently when I was ministering telephonically to somebody. He'd been having a lot of problems. He had a vision in which the Lord Jesus appeared to him. There was a lump, and he showed him his marital bed, and there was a lump under the sheets, and the Lord said, "take away the cover", and under the cover was a rotting carcass of a woman. The Lord said that it's your wife. She was spiritually dead. She'd lost her salvation, she had blasphemed the Holy Spirit and she had got into rebellion against the Word of God. The Lord said to me today the day is a hand, where people will wake up and find that their husband or their wife has died and is spiritually dead. They will be joined to somebody who no longer has the hope of life, because of what is coming.

And I made this point a couple of weeks ago, and I'm now profoundly convinced of it. The Word of God says, *"lean not on your own understanding, look not to the things that are seen, but look to the things that are unseen."* 6000 years ago, we dealt with things that were seen. In Moses' day, everything was seen, everything was an animal, and uncleanness was an animal. It was given to us as a shadow of the types, so that as mankind grew to maturity in this age, we would have the metaphors with which to see in the spiritual realm. I profoundly submit to you today that the great tribulation and the judgment that is at hand is spiritual. If we run around looking for physical marks of beasts, or if we run around looking for physical manifestations of judgment, we will be missing it. It will be like that man that I spoke to on the phone the other day. If we look with the eyes of our spirit, we will see rotting, stinking, spiritual corpses all around the world.

Revelations says, *"A third of mankind is slain here and a third is slain there."* Spiritual death is come upon the world and it is about to come upon the world far more severely than we can comprehend the impossible. I was talking to somebody just a few weeks ago, commenting at the dinner here. I was chatting to Norman, and we were talking about a few of these things and he said the Bosman family have been in the ministry for three generations. And Norman was saying, in the entire period, they've seen more tribulation, more loss, more illness in the body of Christ in the last two years than in all the previous years. And we're in that period, and we are going to see much more in the days ahead. We are coming into a situation, and I was chatting to somebody else. He's been serving the Lord for 30/40/50 years. He said we've seen more really prominent people who have moved strongly with God throughout their lives, backslide into extravagant sin in the last couple of years, than he's ever seen. We are in the process where people who are complacent, or people who think they stand, are going to fall, because that's the age we're in.

If we look behind us and see the slackness which God has tolerated in the Church before and we extrapolate that into the future, we will go horribly, horribly, horribly wrong. Verse 3, *"And it shall come to pass that he who is left in Zion and remains in Jerusalem will be called holy, everyone who's recorded among the living in Jerusalem."* Verse 2, and remember, I'm working backwards, but this is all dealing with essentially the same period of time. *"In that day, the branch of Yahweh shall be beautiful and glorious, and the fruit of the earth shall be excellent and appealing for those of Israel"*

*who have escaped.*" Now, Israel, which we know is the shadow and the type of the Church many people claim, and I believe this to be the case, but Zion and Jerusalem speak of the true spiritual Church, and Babylon in Revelations speaks of the Carnal Church, the Church that is, if you like, in bed with the world. There are other interpretations, and remember that the Jews say, what I believe is a very profound statement, they refer to the 17 facets of the Torah's (inaudible 00:39:44)

In other words, there is not a passage of Scripture which God cannot reveal to you 70 different ways, depending on what He's speaking to you about. So, we take superficial interpretation of Scripture, but I believe one of the dimensions of Zion and Jerusalem is those who will overcome to the end, those who will be part of the bride of Christ, those who will dwell in the new Jerusalem, those who would be sheep and not goats, those who will be wheat, and not (inaudible 00:40:17) and those who will be wise virgins and not foolish virgins. The Bible is full of injunctions that the vast majority of the men who have ever walked this Earth will spend eternity, not in Heaven, but in hell. And this is speaking about that remnant who will overcome.

### **Hell breaking loose**

My time is running out. I just want to go very briefly through the headlines and God-willing maybe on another occasion, we can go into some more of these in a bit more detail. Let's just run through the 10 commandments. You shall have no other gods before me. I was going to share things that are on my heart, most of which are going to rock your socks, rattle your cages and shake your paradigm, but that's the message that God has told me to give you today. These are things, and I'm not going to say anything today lightly, I'm not going to say anything that God has not been dealing with me about in most instances for years, at the very least for months. I'm finishing today my eighth 3-day fast in 3 and a half/4 months, and something, I can't tell you what, but I can just tell you that I have an immense awareness that something is about to break. My sense is very strong that judgment should have started in real grand measure at the Feast of Tabernacles this year. But because the Church is so ignorant of God's times and God's peace, He's given us until the end of 2000, the 1st of January 2001 because that is a day that even mankind in their ignorance knows it to be the beginning of the new millennium.

Even if you want to get into an argument. It was 2000 the last year of the 6th millennium or the first year of the 7th millennium. I truly believe something of immense magnitude is about to break on the Earth, maybe even tonight, but it's not going to be visible. What the Lord showed me, what the spirit of Yahweh showed me as I was reading in Matthew, Mark, and Luke over the last few weeks, the number of times Jesus said, go and tell no man. Have you ever thought about that? Jesus healed the lepers and the blind man. He said, don't tell anybody I healed you. He never publicized, and it's like that today. Out there in the world, God is not telling anybody. He's only telling those who have ears to listen and eyes to see. But I really believe that if you were to stand on the right hand of God at midnight tonight, and look around the earth, by the Spirit of God, I'm telling you, all hell is going to break loose. You're going to see spiritual carnage of a magnitude, that right now we can't believe is possible. Those of us who survive the next couple of years are going to look back and say, my God, how did I survive, how did I get through? And we're going to see people that we knew, that we loved who have fallen by the wayside, and lost their salvation. I want to say that to you with great sincerity.

You shall have no other gods before me, let's just work through this. Now, I'm taking this purely from the point of view, why is the Church today breaking the 10 Commandments and why is judgment coming on the Church? And I'm just going to give you headlines. I could talk for a day on each one of these points probably. You shall have no other gods before me. Most Christians today have their

pastor, or their denomination as a god before Yahweh. How many people, when you tell them you're a Christian, the first thing they ask you is, where do you fellowship? And if you don't give them the right answer, they kind of write you off. So, if you're a 7th day Adventist, or a Mormon or a Jehovah's witness or whatever (and I'm picking those deliberately) and you happen to be a true believer, I have to say to you, in the last 3 years, God has rattled my cage on this thing like you can't believe, because there are true believers in every one of those groupings. Whether they're the predominant or whether they're a minority, it doesn't matter, there are people there who would have personal relationships with God. But because we put a label on them, and we don't look to see if they have a relationship with Jesus...

### **A divine appointment**

I received a sincere rebuke from the Lord about five years ago. He arranged a divine appointment with a Muslim woman who started telling me about the love of her god. And I thought, my God, she's talking to me about my God. Now I'm not talking about the Muslims who are into serious idol worship and all the rest, I'm talking about a specific woman who has a deep personal relationship with the same God that I have. She doesn't know His name, and because of what the Christian Church has done over the centuries, she has a great difficulty in believing that Yahooshua, Jesus, could possibly be He who is foretold in the five books of Moses, which the Muslims, I have to tell you, hold in much greater reverence than the average Christian does. People are getting stoned to death by Muslims and (inaudible 00:46:05) in Cape Town for breaking what's in the first five books of the Bible. And then the Christians are going and persecuting them. They're just doing what the Torah tells them to do. It's prominent world leaders - God before God.

### **Church**

I got to a point where somebody asked me, what Church do you belong to? I say, I belong to the Church of the Lord Jesus Christ, because that's the point. You shall not make for yourself any carved image - maybe a bit of a debatable one in this age - but we've got photographs, we've got videos, and we've got all sorts of things. And the vast majority of people are sucked into one or other form of idolatry. There are very few people that I know of in this age who have not got a burning desire for something, and I'm preaching to myself here, please understand. The Lord has been dealing with me on a number of issues, recently, and one of them is this thing about I can't get my mind totally focused on Jesus in praise and worship. I do sometimes, but sometimes I don't. Sometimes I'm thinking about other things. And the Lord has been saying to me, you've been into all sorts of things, you've lusted after all sorts of things, why can't you think about Jesus with a passion and the desire that you've lusted after things in the world. And I have to say to you, if we can't come to praise and worship and be completely lost in our worship of God, without any other thought intruding, about the catering afterwards or anything, we have to ask ourselves, whether we have, (inaudible 00:48:37) remembering we're talking about spiritual types and shadows of things.

### **Do not take the name of Yahweh in vain**

You shall not take the name of Yahweh, your God in vain. Well, I kind of opened with that. I'm not going to be gentle with this one because it's a really rough one. If you're using the name of the Lord, which is Baal, to speak about God, I think you're not actually honoring that Commandment. And we can go into other things, but I'm just going to give you a heads-up. Observe the Sabbath day to keep it holy. Now, that's another start, and we can get into a whole debate and I've got into debates with various people about why we're under grace, and we're not under law, and why we can't just keep

Sunday instead of Saturday. And there's a passage in Corinthians dealing with new believers in the gentile Church which relaxes the Commandments. So, I'm not saying this from a legalistic point of view, I'm just saying what's on my heart, and that is if we truly want to observe the Sabbath Day to keep it holy, we should. And it goes beyond that.

We have in the Bible a whole lot of holy days, and the thing that struck me this week, I've been engaged in some correspondence with a couple of major ministries on email. They should have responded to me this weekend and they didn't, because the matter was quite pressing, because everybody's closed, and they've all gone away. But now the Feast of Tabernacles or the Feast of Passover and the other holy days in God's calendar, everybody is working. I'm just presenting to you from a perspective of, we celebrate the day of the birth of the Son of God, which is the 25th of December, and we don't celebrate the great day of the Feast of Tabernacles, which by broad consensus of those that understand Scripture, is the day that Jesus was born on. In the process, we lose sight of God's calendar and the things that affect Him. So, those are the things about, you shall love Yahweh your God with all your heart, with all your soul and all your our mind. The second, you shall love your father and your mother.

### **Families**

And again, this is something that the Lord really convicted me of a month or two ago. In Bible times, families live together as an extended family. A young child grew up. As a teenager, he was involved around the business of the family. When he got to about the age of 20, he would marry. He would bring his bride to live in his father's house. From the age of 20 - 30, he would progressively take over the running of the family business, or the family farm, or whatever it was. At about the age of 30, his father would now be about 50 to 60 years old and could retire from the day to day running of the family business, leaving his son to run the family business, while the father became the elderly, and concerned himself of the affairs of the community, with the state and with judging. And he would also be a mentor and a guide to his son as his son grew. The grandparents would help with raising of the children. The men would marry a girl in the world that are virgins. In Deuteronomy 22, it refers specifically to girl of 12 and a half years old. Mary was by most accounts somewhere between 12 and a half and 14 years old when she gave birth to Jesus. That girl would come into her father in laws house, still immature, and she would be schooled by her husband's mother in the ways of being a housewife, and in ways of raising the children. The children would be raised by the parents and the grandparents collectively.

### **Honor your father and mother**

But the thing about that, in the context of the fifth Commandment, honor your father and your mother, is we take our elderly and we shut them off, and I'm guilty of this. I actually don't know how to fix this particular one because my mother is in a frail care environment where she now needs constant nursing, and I don't have the infrastructure to substitute for that. But we ship our elderly off to die out of hands, if you want to put it crudely. We don't honor our mother and our father by pushing them off there, and it goes (inaudible 00:52:43) rebellion. I think we see that with teenagers. The vast majority of children don't know other than how to be rebellious and to answer back. They're encouraged to answer back and give snappy replies. There's a whole bunch of Scriptures which say that if you curse your mother and your father, your lamp will be put out.

**You shall not murder**

Six, you shall not murder. Abortions are right in the world today, and a full portion of the Church is condoning it. We are not applying the Word of God with regards to murder. God said to Noah long before Moses, *"If man sheds the blood of man by the hand of man, shall his life be taken."* Yet we let them live and they carry on and they murder and rape. Nowhere ever, has God done away with the death penalty. In fact, Paul himself before the judge seat, I think it's in (inaudible 00:53:43) says, "If I have done anything worthy of death, I do not refuse to die." So, Jesus didn't do away with the death penalty for capital sins.

**You shall not steal**

You shall not steal. I don't even think we need to go into that one. Stealing is absolutely wrong. Stealing is taking anything that doesn't belong to you, just picking up something on the side of the road that somebody has dropped, if you don't seek to restore it to the person that's lost it, to the more overt things, through to the way many Churches take up the offering. There's nothing in the Bible, and please I'm not getting into anybody here. The way Neil takes up the offering is very circumspect compared to most Churches, which leave you a bunch of Scriptures and basically beat you until you feel absolutely guilty to put into the offering. The only thing you'll find in Scripture with regards to an offering is a box next to the door with a hole drilled in it. Anything else, reading the Scripture and getting somebody to come up and in innocence, beat the congregation over the head, if you're not telling them all the truth and they're all in lack and what have you, because you're not preaching the truth to them, I think you could call that stealing.

**You shall not bear false witness**

You shall not bare false witness against your neighbor. That comes down to this whole thing of words. It comes down to lying, it comes down to white lies, it comes down to jokes, and it comes down to a whole bunch of things. How many people can honestly say that in the last twelve months, they have not said something which was untrue, and which is somebody's (inaudible 00:55:29) I'm guilty. I keep finding myself cracking little jokes and then I realize, gee whiz, if I really have revelation of what words mean, I wouldn't want that to happen.

**You shall not covet**

And then ten, you shall not covet your neighbor's wife. You shall not desire your neighbor's house, his field, his manservant, his maidservant, his ox or donkey or anything that's your neighbors. It's very difficult in this age because just about everything that's advertised or everything that's in advertised, is about instilling a culture of covetousness and are used today in particular, and are driven by this thing of the bigger, the better and the glossier, and what have you... But I have to say to you again, a large portion of the Church is also driven by the bigger and a better meeting place, assembly, (inaudible 00:56:25) pastor and whatever the case may be. As I say, there's some of these that I could go on to in a lot more detail.

I just want to bring one last sting in the tail and then I'm done. I deliberately left out the first verse of Isaiah 4, but it has immense bearing, for what I said earlier about people dying. I'm just going to read a couple of translations of Isaiah 4, 1, New King James. *"In that day, seven women"*, and I want you to recognize I read you the other 6 verses of Isaiah 4, first. We're talking about this age. *"That day, seven women shall take hold of one man, saying we will eat our own food and wear our own apparel, only let us be called by your name to take away our reproach."* The NIV. *"In that day seven women will take*

*hold of one man and say, we will eat our own food and provide our own clothes, only let us be called by your name, take away our disgrace." King James, "In that day, seven women shall take hold of one man, saying we will eat our own bread and wear our own apparel, only let us be called by thy name to take away our reproach." And the living Bible, which normally I wouldn't use, because it's really got an enormous amount of inaccuracy, but I just felt impressed this morning to look at it. "At that time so few men will be left alive, but seven women will fight over each of them and say, let us all marry you, we will finish our own food and clothing, only let us be called by your name, so that we won't be mocked as old maids."*

### **The sanctification of marriage**

And what I'm saying to you, and this is a particular caution to the men, on two fronts. Isaiah 4, 1 tells us that there will be seven times the number of women as men in Zion, Jerusalem that (inaudible 00:58:20)believes at the end of the age. Men are very much more likely to fall away in what is about to happen and what is already happening, than women.(inaudible 00:58:31) the final question is visions report that there are far more women engaged in the battle than there are men. There are reports that there are far more women in Heaven on thrones than there are men. Men, for the most part, are so caught up in the carnality of the world, the competition, the lust and so forth. As we read there, seven times more women will qualify to be part of Zion than men. We need be aware of that. The congress of that, is that women are going to have a hard time finding the throne. What you see as a consequence of that, leads into a whole discussion about how we don't understand the full holiness and sanctification of marriage.

We're talking about Jesus returning for a spotless bride, and that's why this set of types the Lord led me to prepare is so paramount, because it deals with preparing the bride. And what we are talking about now is the beginning, maybe not quite the beginning, but an intensification of the preparation. Yahweh, God the Father is not going to permit his Son to return to marry the Church in its present form. It has to be sanctified, and we need to understand that until marriage in this age is sanctified, the Church will not be sanctified. Yahweh showed me in the Passover this year in a series of messages, Deuteronomy 22 is absolutely explicit, the act of marriage in the Bible is sexual intercourse with a virgin. Anything else, except with a widow is adultery unless that woman has clearly and explicitly been committed to be divorced by God, and generally that can only happen if her husband was going to hell without a return ticket. In other words, he was beyond redemption. Everything else is adultery.

### **Divorce**

Somewhere between 60 and 70% of all marriages in the body of Christ today, will end in divorce and in remarriage. And I say to you, by the Spirit of God, the vast majority of those people are living in adultery. We know recently of an instance, a man who married a divorced woman, he was an elder in the Church, apparently a lovely man of God. He was dead within 6 months and the Word of God was that he was involved in adultery. I ministered to somebody else, a year or two ago who had lost everything, gone bankrupt in six months after marrying a divorced woman. Those are people who are really causing (inaudible 01:00:57) so they've been in the forefront of judgment in that area, but I need to say to you, it is coming like a flood on the Earth, the judgment for adultery. God said to me in March, April, just before Passover, every man and every women who's sexually joined themselves to somebody, who's not living with them today as husband or wife, and who in turn, has gone and sexually joined themselves to somebody who's not living with them, as husband and wife, is spiritually... Because in Genesis 2, 24 it says, *"for this reason, a man shall leave his father and his mother and shall cleave unto his wife, and the two shall become one spiritual bond."*



And I say that to you from profound personal experience. I had to break the One Flesh Bond that nearly destroyed me six years ago. Every man and woman in that state, is spiritually one with every Satanist, every witch, every warlock, and every wizard on this planet. So, Satan has a spiritual hotline into the heart and the body of Christ of every person who's living in adultery or has been in adultery and (inaudible 01:02:02) which is the vast majority of the Church today. And so, God is calling us to a level of holiness and sanctification, which in our current understanding of the practices of the Word of God, we can't really comprehend, but I say to you that we're going to have to comprehend that in the days ahead. I have no doubt that those who will lay aside every (inaudible 01:02:35) and seek holiness and sanctification to do right in the sight of God, no matter what the cost, will overcome and endure to the end, but those who stick their little tongue in the river of God and continue to play footsie-footsie, hold hands with the devil, and hold on to those things which are in the defiance with the Word of God, hold on to the traditions of the elders.

We don't, for the most part, understand how far the Church consciously and deliberately departed from the ordinances of Torah between 300 and 600 AD, when they were deliberately distancing themselves from the Jewish heritage. We need to return to our roots. We need to return to the vine that we have grafted into. If we do not, we will be burned with fire. That's the end of my message.

The Community Church is a Pentecostal Church that believes the Gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put up by the Mail and Guardian newspaper that the day of the Christian Church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be declared to the ends of the earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing to you please assist us by passing it on. We thank you for your cooperation. God bless you. If you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realize your need may I pray for you that Jesus Christ may enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus' name, I pray that God will move by His Spirit upon your life, that your whole future shall be colored by the fact that Jesus is alive and that He's alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory, for we need every mouth, and we need every effort to bring the message across to those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church meets at the South African Vroue Federasie hall, Jack Hendon Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012 808 1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 09h30 in the morning at the SAVF hall. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, banking account details are as follows. Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank, Branch: Silverton, Account Number: 51030119874, Branch Code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgment for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact me, James Robertson on Johannesburg, that's 011 791 2327 or cell phone 083 251 0644 or fax 011 791 5004 or email [jamesr@infodoor.co.za](mailto:jamesr@infodoor.co.za) and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of kings. Amen.

## 01 16a The Wrath of God for Adultery – Part 1

**James Robertson**

Morning everyone. Neil asked me to continue with what I was preaching on last week, so that's what I'm going to do. In a moment, I'll hand out, as I did last week, a set of Scriptures, because it's rather a lengthy message that the Lord has given me again today. But again, as with the message last week, it's not something that can be broken into pieces. I have to say to you that today's message is even more challenging than last week's message, and it's going to challenge every one of us. It's going to challenge me in bringing it, and it's going to challenge you in hearing because this is really getting to the heart of some of the issues that are facing the Church in this time of tribulation. So, before I bring any more, can I just ask you to bow with me and let's bring just bring this word before the Lord. Father, we come to You in the name of Yahooshua. We bring this word before You now. Father, I just pray that You open every one of the hearts to receive all that is in this message that is of You. Father, that should there be anything that is not according to Your perfect will and Your perfect Word, that You will just blow it away. Thank You Father, that Your Angels encamp around to protect us, thank You that no word informed against us shall prosper. Thank You that You cover every person listening to this message with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet, and that You cover the entire environment where we are with the blood of Jesus, that no agent of Satan can in any way, interfere with that which You would have us hear from Your Word today. In Jesus' name. Amen.

### **Adultery**

Before I forget, there's one copy of the transcription of last week's message at the back there for those of you who want and there are tapes as well. I only realized when I was doing the transcription last week, that I'd left out completely in the recap, the 7th Commandment, "*Thou shall not commit adultery*". And I realized, as I was preparing this message, that that was by the Spirit of God that He wanted to deal with that particular subject separately today. So, my message today and a continuation of last week's message for those of you who weren't here, which was entitled "The wrath of God for the Church, why judgement is coming on the Church today," which was a message essentially which God said to us that the Church is currently in this age, breaking every one of the 10 Commandments willfully, and to a point knowingly, and that judgment would come on the Church for that reason. The message today is the judgment for adultery.

In presenting this message, I will present you with some background to understand how God actually defines adultery in the spiritual sense. I would ask you not to page ahead as last week because if you do, you will kind of get ahead of what I'm saying and that may make things more difficult. Before I go into that, one aspect is perhaps evidence, or perhaps not in the context of the message that I brought last week. I presented one dimension, and you remember I referred to the multiple dimensions of Torah and of Scripture. I've presented one dimension of how Satan operates. Clearly, I wasn't dealing with all these dimensions and there's a very obvious other dimension, and that is the way in which, through demonic interferences, Satan tries to trap us into lies, he traps us into false doctrine and so on and so forth. But my objective last week was not really to deal with that. Satan, in that whole situation is playing a dual role. On the one hand, he's fermenting unrest in the Church, if you like, with lies and what have you. And on the other hand, that you saw last week, he's coming before the throne of judgement and saying, ah ha, look, I caught them out, I want judgement against them.

## Judgement

So, it's a very complex subject and not one that we can deal with as quickly as that. And just as an aside, I mentioned the book last week "Poverty in the Church of Jesus Christ", which is a whole sort of diagnostic catalogue of things which, in my experience, have led to loss in the lives of believers, I will put it at the back of the list. If anybody would like a copy, just fill your name in and I'll bring a copy for you next week. Ok, let's get back to the judgement for adultery, and I need to make one other point here. Judgement in this life is mercy from God. Many people, in my experience in the Church today, don't want to talk about judgment, and if you start talking to them about judgment, they kind of get offended and they think you're trying to be ugly to them. But we need to understand judgment in this day. Judgment in this life is grace and mercy from God. We can either have judgment now in this life and pay the price for our sin now, or we can live the life of comfort and not face judgment in this life. In this, we will be judged at the end of our lives when we come before the judgment seat of Christ, and we will pay a much dearer price in terms of the part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone or whatever the case may be. And possibly in the extreme lose our salvation.

So, this process that we talked about last week is not something that is as unpleasant as it may be to be judged in this life. It is mercy and it is grace, if we receive it as such and we see that it provides us with a means to change the way we conduct our lives in this life. If we don't, if we become offended when God judges us, we just keep sin upon sin. 2 Corinthians 5, 9 to 11, *"Therefore, we make it our aim whether present or absent to be well pleasing to Him, for we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ, that each one may receive the things done in the body according to what he has done whether good or bad, knowing therefore, the terror of the Lord, we persuade men that we are well known to God and I also trust a well-known in your consciousness."* And one of the things that has struck me in the last couple of years, because the Lord has been dealing with me on a subject of judgment now for about 4/5 years. We went through a whole court case 3 years ago where we experienced a trial. We were defending, or in fact we were the plaintiffs in a civil court action for breach of contract against us. And so, we got a very firsthand experience of what the judgment process is about and that made this whole thing a lot more alive to us.

What I find is that the majority of Christians don't know this terror of the Lord. They don't have a fear of the judgement seat of Christ. That is one of the pivotal factors behind what I was teaching on last week. The reason there is so much error in what the Church practices and preaches today is simply because the majority of Christians have not got a revelation that the day will come where they will stand on the own before the judgment seat of Christ, and a decision will be taken with regards to their future destiny. Most people do not have a revelation that they can lose their salvation. Most do not have a revelation that they can have a part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone. I'll touch on that again later, but I need to make the point. Revelations 21, 8 refers to the part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone. So, it is possible to go to hell for Eternity, but as I understand that it is also possible to spend a period of time in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone, which is the cleansing and it is paying the price of sin that is not dealt with in this life.

So, the judgment seat of Christ is an awful place, a place full of awe. We should be reverently fearful of the judgment seat of Christ, because we must all stand before that judgment seat one day and we must all give account to every word that we have spoken, every deed that we have done, and whether we've done what God called us to do. And I've been, as I mentioned to you previously, over the last few months, the Lord has been dealing with me very severely since October this year, around a variety of these issues in terms of things that I was leaving undone. And part of what I was leaving undone

relates to what's in this message. So, I bring this message to you with a revelation of the awesomeness of the judgment seat of Christ and how awful the call of this message is today.

So, in the last message, we went through the whole judgment process and we went through headlines of how each of the 10 Commandments has been broken through greater or lesser extent by some or a large portion of the Church today. And I'm not going to go through that because I'm acutely aware of the time constraints. We went to Exodus 20, Deuteronomy 5 and we looked at all of that. And as I say, I only noticed when I was transcribing, and it only really hit me when I was preparing this message that somehow, I completely missed the 7th Commandment, you shall not commit adultery.

### **Adultery is destroying lives**

I don't want to say to you today, and this is the subject that I've been praying into for years, so I don't take any of the statements I'm going to make today, lightly. Adultery is probably destroying more lives in and outside the body of Christ, than any other single sin today. There are probably more souls in hell today as a consequence of sexual sin than anything else. There are probably more believers in the body of Christ who are going to have an awful shock on the day of judgment as a consequences of adultery, than and in other area. And it's important to understand, Jesus' ministry began with a miracle at a wedding and it ends with a miracle of the marriage supper of the lamb. So, God has been restoring over the last 500 years since Luther and the reformation, the truth of the faith, and the last truth that He's restoring as I mentioned briefly with those tapes that I showed you last week, is the truth about marriage. Because until the Church has been cleansed in that area, the bridegroom cannot return to a spotless bride.

And we see in 2 Peter 3, 14, one of the number of verses which speaks of this, *"therefore beloved, looking forward to these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace without spot and blameless."* The Church cannot be without spot while two thirds of all marriages in the Christian faith are ending in divorce and remarriage. The majority of them are ending in divorce for reasons which are not scriptural. (inaudible 00:11:36) the other people who divorced, who God permitted to be divorced, but generally after a very testing period. There are others who just wake up one day and say, I don't like your face anymore, and they get divorced and they think it's acceptable, and it's not. I'll show you why, as I go through.

So, let's look at what is the judgement for adultery, and it's summed up very succinctly in 1 Corinthians 6 verses 9 and 10, *"Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the Kingdom of God? Do not be deceived, neither fornicators nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomizers, nor thieves, nor coveters, nor drunkards, nor violence, nor extortioners will inherit the Kingdom of God."* And that's pretty crystal clear. We need to be clear what these things are that we need to see. I just want to give you a few examples, and the Lord has been taking us on a journey over a number of years to be able to give this message today.

I think I mentioned this last week, I heard recently, the case of an elder in the congregation, very well loved and well respected, he married a divorced woman who was dead within six months. The Word of God was that he was an adulterer. We ministered personally to a man about three years ago who went bankrupt within six months of marrying a divorced woman. On a less dramatic note, we minister quite regularly to people who are in permanent financial lack, simply because their house is divided, because the wife is not an agreement with the husband, there's strife in the home and I'll show you more later how that allows the devil to kill, steal and destroy in a marital situation.

By contrast, we administered in another situation where a woman had come to salvation about 5, 6 years ago, and had been living in the sight of God in adultery for 20 years. And basically, she experienced no discomfort until God took her out of the marriage and then in a period of 8 hours of prophetic ministry, revealed that she had been seduced. She'd lost her virginity under hypnosis and she had absolutely no recollection of it, but in the sight of God, she was married to the man who took her virginity under hypnosis. Now, that is really shocking stuff in the sense of the understanding of a lot of these subjects.

Proverbs 7 verses 1, 5 and 27, "*My son, keep My words and treasure My commands within you, that they may keep you from the immoral woman, from the seductress who splatters with her words.*" And then Proverbs 7 goes on with a whole account of this adulteress wife who seduces this young man. Verse 27, "*Her house is the way to hell, descending to the chambers of death.*" So, we should be under no illusion, the judgment for adultery is very severe indeed. It's not something to trifle with and it is not something that we should be wishy washy in our understanding of what Scripture says. Therefore, forgive me for being very robust in terms of what I'm going to share with you today, but it's time that the Church comes out of the closet and owns what adultery is and starts dealing with adultery, because those people who do not hear the truth in this life, are going to pay a terrible price as we've just heard.

### **Pornea**

Matthew 9 in the new King James, Jesus speaking, "*And I say to you, whoever divorces his wife except for sexual immorality and marries another, commits adultery and whoever marries her, who is divorced, commits adultery.*" As I said, over 60 - 70% of all marriages in the body of Christ are ending in divorce, and the vast majority of them are covered by that verse of Scripture. Matthew 19, 9, this is now the King James, which lifts this out a little bit more clearly, "*And I say unto you, whoever shall put away his wife except it be for fornication,*" the Greek word is 'pornea', "*and shall marry another, committeth adultery. And who so ever marieth her which is put away, doth commit adultery.*" So, fornication and adultery are all derivatives of the same concept, but let's take it a little bit further. (inaudible 00:15:49) defines the word, pornea, as illicit sexual intercourse and metaphorically, the worship of idols. And the more detailed explanations is there in the text I've given you.

What you've seen through our Scripture is the act of sexual immorality and the act of spiritual immorality are almost interchangeably used, the same words are used. God speaks of the adultery of Israel and He speaks of adultery in marriage. And it comes back to this principle. Everything in our relationship with God is the shadow and a type of the relationship between husband and wife, and vice versa. So, it's important to understand that Jesus, when He spoke of pornea, He was speaking not only of straight forward obvious sexual immorality, He was also speaking of spiritual immorality.

I was divorced on the basis of persistent spiritual sins over 25 years, and when the Lord told me to get divorced, I didn't even understand what I'm sharing with you now. I just knew that God told me to get divorced, and it was only subsequently, that I came to understand why I had to get out when He told me to get out, because I was on the brink of being destroyed spiritually myself. So, pornea is something which is devastatingly terrible. It's not something where you wake up one morning and you look at the person in the bed next to you and say, I don't like your face, I think God's just told me to get divorced. Revelations 21, 8 "*But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the Lake which burns with Fire and Brimstone,*" which is the second death. "And I just want to digress there a moment. It's something that most Christians don't see, a little bit about all liars. So, the next time you tell a joke which involves an

untruth, just remember the number of minutes you might spend in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone as a result of that. We will be judged for every idle word that we speak.

### **Putting away and divorce**

So, we need to understand that anything that is a lie, anything you're potentially lying about, if we don't repent of it... I've been through a serious cleansing processes just as I shared briefly last week, but the sexually immoral, Revelation 21, 8 in the King James version refers to whoremungers, the Greek word is ' pornos', which is a variation of pornea, and it speaks of the same thing. Its sexual or spiritual adultery. Malachi 2 verses 13 to 16, which most of you are probably familiar with, to go to a lesser extent, but I want to read it from the King James because the King James makes a very important distinction. Sorry, I missed that in Matthew 19, 9 at the top of the page. In the King James, it refers to putting away, not divorce, and I'll come back to that now.

*"And this you have done again, covering the alter of the Lord, Yahweh, with tears, with weeping and with crying out so much that he regarded not the offering anymore, will receive it with good will at your hand. If you say, wherefore, because Yahweh have been witnessed between he and the wife of thy youth has been (inaudible 00:19:04) treacherously, yet he shewed thy companion and the wife of thy Covenant and did not He make one, yet had He the residue of the Spirit and wherefor one, that He might seek a godly seed, therefore take heed to your spirit and let none deal treacherously against the wife of his youth, for Yahweh the God of Israel sayeth that He hateth putting away for one covereth violence with his garment, said Yahweh of hope. Therefore, take heed to your spirit that you deal not treacherously."*

Now, there is an enormous difference between putting away and divorce. In virtually every modern translation of the Bible, it uses the word divorce, instead of putting away. The vast majority of what we call divorce today, is putting away. Jesus, in Matthew 19 was addressing specifically the moral climate that we have in the world today. Prostitution was right, fornication in Pagan Rome and Pagan Greece was absolutely right. All these abominable practices that we condone and accept in the world today were right in Jesus' day as well. Caligula was the emperor of the Rome just after Jesus' death and some of you may have seen him, if you've ever been overseas, and seen the adverts for the movie 'Caligula' which had the most vile practices in. And those practices are prevalent today particularly in the spiritual sense.

### **Spiritual death**

So, what God is saying here is he hates putting away. He accepts that a marital partner will reach a place of pornea, which is irredeemable, that they will lose their salvation and go to hell, and under those circumstances, he will permit divorce. Putting away is just throwing yourself out of the house for no reason. It's very simple. And pornea, adultery, putting away, they're all the same thing, it's a spiritual thing, and I hope in the next few minutes to make that alive to you. Adultery is a spiritual state. It's not just a physical act, it is an irreversible spiritual state. Well, not totally irreversible. It can be reversed with the correct repentance and the correct prayers. But see also that pornea, adultery is treachery. See the number of times the word 'treachery' is used there. A digression, but it's an important digression because it is fundamental for understanding what the Word of God says, with regards to the issue of divorce, adultery etcetera.

There is a condition of irreversible spiritual death for a born-again believer, and there are two passages here, Hebrews 6, 4 to 8 which says, *"It is impossible for those who were once enlightened and close to the heavenly gift and have become partakers of the Holy Spirit."* Verse 6, *"If they fall away to renew*

*them again to repentance since they crucify again for themselves the Son of God and put Him into an open chain."* Hebrews 10, 24 to 31 and I'll just pick up again a couple of verses, *"For if we sin willfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sin but a certain fearful expectation of judgement and theory indignation, which will devour the adversaries."* And certainly, in my experience... I cried out to the Lord in '95 about the level of divorce and He started to open the words for me around these areas. I've seen the extent to which people in the body of Christ don't want to confront the truth that we're talking about today. They don't have a fearful revelation of those passages in Hebrews 6 and 10.

I had this situation, where shortly after I'd moved out and started the divorce proceedings against my ex-wife, I was praying for her, and the Lord said to me, Hebrew 6 applies, (inaudible 00:23:05) And that is a terrible experience, but it's very real. We need to understand, that is the basis on which God permits divorce. It's a person who has come to salvation and lost their salvation irrevocably. If they were married before either of them came to salvation, then the party who has come to salvation is required by Scripture to lay down their life until death for the salvation of their other spouse, unless that other spouse reaches a point where they lose salvation or come to a point where either they've lost salvation, or they've committed the unpardonable sin and they can no longer come to salvation. One of the things that people need to understand is if you join yourself to an unbeliever, if you've joined yourself to somebody who's doubtful in the faith, you're committed to them for life except in the most extreme set of circumstances.

The last Scripture, which again many Christians seem to take lightly in this day, Jesus is speaking, *"Therefore I say to you, every sin and blasphemy will be forgiven them, but the blasphemy against the Spirit will not be forgiven them. Anyone who speaks a word against the Son of man, it will be forgiven him, but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it will not be forgiven him, either in this age or in the age to come."* And what I've observed over the years is that the most powerful spiritual force available to mankind on this Earth is a husband and wife who are in absolute perfect unity, harmony and agreement. The Word of God is very clear that whatsoever we agree on Earth, will be granted in Heaven. And because of the husband and wife becoming One Flesh in marriage, if they come into complete harmony, it's the same prayer coming out of two mouths, and that is one of the most powerful instruments available to God on this Earth. That is why Satan hates marriage so much and one of reasons there is so much deception and so much error around the area of marriage today.

So, again in some of what I'm going to share with you today, you are going to be seriously confronted relative to what you have believed the Word of God says in some of these areas. I ask you, if anything rises up inside you, please take authority over it. I know of one man of God who blasphemed the Holy Spirit in his reaction to some of these truths, and I know several instances where this has happened, because Satan has got such a strong hold in the Church in some of these areas. Let's look at the specific definition of adultery, one of many in Scripture, Leviticus 18, 20, *"Moreover, you shall not lie carnally with your neighbor's wife to defile yourself with her."* Deuteronomy 22, 22, *"If a man is found lying with a woman married to a husband, then both of them shall die, the man that lay with the woman and the woman. So, you should put away the evil from Israel."* Again, it's very specific. Adultery is a man lying with a woman who's married to another man, having sexual intercourse.

### **What is a wife**

So, let's understand what is a wife, because this is where we start to get serious confusion in the body of Christ today. What is the wife and what is marriage? Let's look first of all at Deuteronomy 22 verses 28 and 29, *"If a man finds a young woman who's a virgin, who is not betrothed and seizes her and lies*

*with her, and are they are found out, then the man who lays with her shall give to the young woman's father 50 shekels of silver and she shall be his wife, because he has humbled her, he shall not be permitted to,"* this is from the New King James, *"put away for all his days."* There is no other requirement in Scripture for marriage except that the man takes the woman's virginity, and I'll come back to that in a moment. The taking of vows and everything else are incidental and they're supplementary. The minute a man takes a woman's virginity, that is the act of marriage.

Deuteronomy 22, 13 to 21, I'm not going to read the whole thing, but it makes it very clear indeed. It basically says that if a man comes to marry a woman, and on his wedding night, he discovers that she's not a virgin, then she is a harlot and needs to be put to death. However, if she brings a false accusation, again, we see that he may not divorce her all his days. And there is whole lot of other circumstantial stuff round about the evidence of virginity etcetera. We don't have time to go into there but understand that the basis to the sentence of death on this young woman is simply that she purported to be a virgin and therefore marriageable, and on the night of the wedding, she was found not to be a virgin and she was taken outside, and she was stoned to death on the lack of the evidence of the blood loss of her virginity.

It's that harsh. So, we need to understand that if a woman is a virgin, she's not married. If she's lost her virginity, she is either married, if she's living with a man that she lost her virginity to, and she's only had one man. If she is a widow, and her first husband has died, she's permitted to remarry, otherwise baring (inaudible 00:28:45).04] which I'll get to into a moment, she's a harlot and she will be subject to the death penalty on the Day of judgment. If she's divorced by the Spirit of God for Scriptural reasons, the Word of God is completely void in terms of what it says, concerning that situation. However, we know from our own experience in ministry that God does permit marriage, remarriage for women who are truly divorced in His sight. But there is no Scriptural guidance as to on what basis. So, we have to turn to the Spirit of God. We have to go to Him, and we have to trust totally on His leading. We have to put out pieces, we have to do whatever we have to do to make absolutely sure if we're planning to marry a woman who's not a virgin, that it's spiritually safe to marry her. So, we can replace the word 'marry' or 'marriage' in the Scriptures with the word 'sexual intercourse with a virgin'. Now, I understand that's a little bit provocative to some people, but that is what the word 'marriage' in Scripture means.

## Virginity

A wife is a woman who lives with the man she gave her virginity to. It's as simple as that. Anything other than that is embellishment, it is not at the heart of the situation. So, the consequence of that is there is no such thing as a one-night stand. There can be an accidental marriage, but there is no such thing as a one-night stand. The majority of the Church today will tell you that you got a little bit over excited in the back of the car and she lost her virginity. Well just go and repent and God will bring the right person across your path. Folks, it is not like that. If that's what happens, you are married. That's the way it is. And if a woman goes and then joins herself to somebody else, she will find herself classified in the courtroom of God as a harlot, whether she did it naively or whether she did it because her pastor told her it was ok. The people that we ministered about, that i mentioned earlier, the man who died, and the man who went bankrupt, both had been told by the Church that it was safe to marry. And there is another whole discussion there about the judgment that comes with people who give false council like that. If the Church understood the consequences of something like that, there would be a lot less hate speech to express judgment in areas like that.



The next page, the definition of a virgin...I'm not going to go into that in a lot of detail. But there are a couple of points there. The virgin that is referred to is a girl at puberty. The girl comes into the age of spiritual majority in the sight of God at the time of puberty, which is generally somewhere between 12 and a half and 13 or 14 years old today. And it's important to understand that all these passages that speak about marriage, are speaking about girls at that age. Now again, that is a major paradigm to us today. But we need to understand that that's the reality. So, before we judge girls of 15 and 16 who are battling with their sexuality, we need to understand why, because the reality is God never intended them to live the way we require them to live in this age. And I understand that that is immensely controversial, but we need to confront these truths because we set ourselves up as judges and arbitrators over people and make their lives miserable.

The harsh reality, folks, is secular statistics indicate that of the order of a third of all women in the world today have lost their virginity by their fourteenth birthday. And of the order of two thirds of all women in the world today, have had intercourse with at least two men by the time they get married. Those are harsh statistics, those are statistics that are sending billions of souls to hell and we need to confront them. Let's go and look at what is the marriage Covenant, because I'm sure everybody would agree with me that marriage is a Covenant. So, let's understand what the Word of God says about the marriage Covenant.

### **Covenant**

First of all, Hebrews 9, 18, *"Therefore not even the first Covenant was dedicated without blood."* The Covenant requires the shedding of blood. "Genesis 15, 14 to 21 is presented there and you are all familiar, I'm sure with the story of the first Covenant that God cuts with Abraham, where he cuts the animals in part and the fiery oven passes through it. I will just read a few verses, verse 6, *"And he believed in Yahweh and he accounted him for righteousness."* Verse 8, *"And he said, Lord God, how shall I know that I will inherit it."* Verse 10, *"And he brought all these feasts to him and cut them in two down the middle and placed each piece opposite the other."* Verse 17, *"And it came to pass that the sun went down, and it was dark, but behold there appeared a smoking oven and a burning torch that passed between those pieces."* Verse 18. *"On the same day, the Lord made a Covenant with Abraham."*

That is the most explicit description we have anywhere in Scripture with regards to the cutting of the Covenant. Jeremiah 34 verse 18, *"And I would give the men who have transgressed my Covenant who have not performed the words of the Covenant which they made before me, when they cut the calf in two and passed between the parts of it"* So again we see that a Covenant involves the death of an animal. In the footnotes through Genesis 15; 10, the living Torah, which is a very anointed, modern translation of the five books of Moses that they have subsequently brought out, several volumes of the Living Life. It's got a series of commentaries by some very anointed Rabbis. It's the most anointed translation of the Old Testament that I've ever read. If you want the Old Testament to come alive, that is the translation to read in my experience. It says here. "Abraham", and that translation relating to Genesis 15,10, says, *"Abraham bought all these for him. He split them in half and placed one half opposite the other."* And the footnotes to that verse in The Living Torah says, *"split them, this is the way of making a Covenant."*

Indeed, the words (inaudible 00:35:11) appear to be closely related. It symbolizes that just as the two halves of the animal were really one, so were the two people making the Covenant. Moreover, just as one side cannot live without the other, so the two cannot live without each other. It was also seen as a malediction anyone violating the oath would be torn asunder like the animals. So, we see the principal aspects of Covenants which (inaudible 00:35:38) a Covenant is made by splitting or cutting

some living thing and shedding blood. People who make a blood Covenant become one and cannot live without one another and a person who breaks the Covenant is to be put to death. So, we there find the underlying Covenant principle behind the death penalty for adultery. We also find some guidance in terms of better understanding what the marriage Covenant is all about. The Oxford dictionary defines split, 'break forcibly or to be broken into parts especially longitudinally, or with the grain or the plain of cleavage' and out of that we get the crux of understanding the marriage Covenant.

In Genesis 2, 21 to 25, which again, I'm sure you're all familiar with, verse 23 says *"This is my bone of my bone and flesh of my flesh, she shall be called woman because she was taken out of man."* Verse 24, *"Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother and shall cleave unto his wife and they shall be one flesh."* So, you see that the verse 24 speaks directly of the act of sexual union, which results in the cutting of Covenant with the shedding of blood. And it's really, really important to understand that. And if you would just bear with me, it's an important point, I don't mean to offend anybody, but the reason Satan uses that symbol the way he does, for lust and love, is because of what is physically represents. So that symbol is used by Satan to create a subliminal effect of men thinking about women's most holy parts. And it's really important to understand it. Every time you see one of these Valentines cards or one of your kids innocently draws a heart etc., it is getting to the very heart of the marriage Covenant. It is an extremely sexually explicit symbol. And that is why Satan has made us so oblivious to what it signifies. It's the most terrible abomination and we are completely oblivious to it in the world and in the Church today.

1 Corinthians 12, 23 and 24, *"and those members of the body which we think to be less honorable, on these we bestow greater honor and our own presentable parts have greater modesty, that our presentable parts have no need, but God composed the body having given greater honor to that part which lacks it."* So, we see from that that God is saying that the male and female genital are the most holy part of the body, the most honored part of the body and that is why public nudity is such a shame and such an abomination. Those are the most holy organs. They should only be seen within the marriage bed.

### **Spiritual ties**

Let's go and take that a bit further, we've been now to Genesis 2, 24 and let's go to Matthew 19, 5 and 6, and I'm reading from the amplified. And Jesus is again speaking. *"For this reason, a man shall leave his father and mother and shall be united,"* the amplified verse says, *"and joined separately to his wife and the two shall become one flesh. So, they are no longer two but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder and separate."* And we kind of hear that and we use it in a legalistic sense, but I've been down a very, very rough road in that area. I came back to serving God. I gave my life and I had an experience with God when I was about 13 in the Anglican Church. I got highly offended with the hypocrisy and what have you in the Church. By the time I was about 17 or 18...and I backslid totally until about 7/8 years ago, so I was 39. I was in adultery, my life was in a mess and I was on the express lane headed to hell, and everything had been opened, the relations were exposed, and it came to an end. I suddenly found that notwithstanding all the will in the world and having to come back to the Lord and truly have a revelation that I was headed to hell, and truly repented of my sins of adultery, I still could not cut off the ties that I had with this woman that I'd committed adultery with.

And the Lord took me through a very dramatic period of cleansing and a period teaching in that. So basically, what the Word of God is in fact telling us here is that when a man has intercourse with a woman, part of the man's spirit joins irreversibly to the spirit of the woman. And the more they make

love, the more passionately they're in love, the more passionately and unreservedly they give themselves to one another, the stronger that bond becomes. So, in the sight of God, that man and that woman are no longer two people, and this is the heart of understanding marriage. Their very spirits become fused together. It's no longer John and Jane. It's just John. Two people, but in the spirit sense, and the stronger that gets, eventually if it grows to the full extent possible, the man and a woman are able to communicate with one another, if you like, telepathically across great distances. You can think of something and phone her and say, I was about to say this to you, and she will say, yes that's exactly what I was thinking of saying to you.

They will be able to communicate, and once they get to that point their prayers become immensely powerful. But where you have that in a situation, if it was ungodly, you've got an enormous problem. So, what we have in the world today, you're probably all familiar with that symbol for a male, which is a biological symbol and the symbol for a female. I'm just using them for convenience because I need to do a couple of drawings. In a Godly marriage that's the (inaudible 00:41:53) that you have. If this woman goes and joins herself to a couple of other men, she's joined like that. And then remember, this is an unbreakable spiritual bond. It can be broken but it can only be broken, from my own experience, through a very broken, contrite heart and humble petition before the throne of God, because there is no scriptural basis anywhere for it to be broken. So that is adultery.

Adultery is a spiritual state in which a man is joined to a woman, who is joined to one or more other men. Now, as I said to you last week, the reality is that the Lord showed me at the Passover last year that the vast majority of people in the body of Christ are joined to at least one other person with whom they are not living. And that person is joined to at least one other person with whom they're not living. The result is, you can see the spiders web goes on indefinitely, and now one of these people is joined to the body of Christ and the body of Christ is joined to every Satanist, every witch and every warlock on the planet. In God's sight, that is what the spiritual manifestation of adultery and fornication is. When God looks down on people in this situation, He doesn't just see John and Jane. He sees John joined to Peter and Joe and all the rest of it. And that is why fornication and adultery is such an absolute abomination in the sight of God, because it takes an orderly relationship which is what you've got there, and it turns it into something which is absolutely horrifyingly inappropriate and debilitating.

### **Incest**

If you take it one other (inaudible 00:43:43), and it's important to understand why incest is such a problem. If we just take an example of a woman who has a daughter, and the man, the father, has intercourse with his daughter - and folks this is harsh stuff, but the statistics indicate that 20% of all women on the planet today have lost their virginity to a close relative, either father, stepfather, brother or uncle. 20% of all women on the earth today lose their virginity to incest. And basically, what you get then, there's the bloodline passing through the father, the mother and the daughter and there's the One Flesh Bond (inaudible 00:44:35) which again is an absolute abomination in the sight of God. Once you understand that, you understand why Leviticus 18 and Leviticus 20 speak so harshly about incest. Understand that there is grace in the present age for adultery.

We see in John 8, 3 to 11, a woman caught in the act of adultery, where they caught her in the act but they only brought the woman in, they didn't bring the man, and Jesus wrote on the ground, then again I'm sure you're familiar with that story, but at the end of the day, Jesus said, neither do I condemn you, go and sin no more. And it appalls me the number of people who take that verse and say that if you're living in adultery just (inaudible 00:45:18) and then you find you can carry on with that

relationship. (inaudible 00:45:23) doesn't say that at all. It says, go and sin no more. If a man and woman who are married in the sight of the world, are living in adultery in the sight of God, that's it. The Word of God says go and sin no more. Now there are certain things that you can do. There are prayers that you can pray and ask the Lord for guidance and there are some instances where God will sanctify that union, depending on the spiritual state of the man who originally took that woman's virginity, but there are many instances, and I cite again the experience we had because it was a real eye opener to us.

This woman was in her forties. We were ministering to her. I'd actually given her a word by the Spirit of God confirming that God was permitting her to divorce. She had been working for years trying to save her marriage. Her husband was an unbeliever. She'd come to salvation a number of years ago, and she was in a terrible state over this whole divorce. We started ministering to her. She came and had supper with us. She sat in our lounge until 4 o'clock the next morning, and the Lord started to give me words of knowledge and just certain key phrases, and the Holy Spirit started to give her visions. And after eight hours she realized that she had been seduced under hypnosis when she was 16 years old. She'd been taken through a whole marriage ceremony.

## **01-16b – The Wrath of God for Adultery – Part 2**

***James Robertson***

The message contained on this tape is extremely challenging, and I would urge you to listen no further if you've not listened to the two preceding messages recorded at Foundation for Living Christian Church in Pretoria North on the 31st of December, the years 2000, and the 7th of January, the year 2001. Those tapes are available from this ministry, and they create the necessary context dealing as they do with The Wrath of God for the Church today and why judgment is coming on the Church today and particularly, the wrath of God and the judgment for adultery. If you've not listened to those two messages, you could seriously misunderstand what is being communicated in this message, so I would appeal to you, if you haven't listened to those two messages, or read them in hard copy format, please do so before going further with this tape. If you don't have those tapes or those messages, please contact me. My name is James Robertson, the ministry is A Church Without Walls, a ministry of End Time Issue ministries and can be contacted on the internet by email at [james@end-time-issues.org.za](mailto:james@end-time-issues.org.za). Alternatively, we can be contacted at Johannesburg, South Africa. South African code: 0027 for most countries, local code 011 791 2327, or cell phone 083 251 6644, or fax 791 5004. I urge you please to get hold of those preceding two tapes from me before listening to this tape.

Those of you who have heard the previous two tapes or read the previous two teachings, I ask you to join with me in prayer now. Father, we come to You in the name of Yahooshua, the Messiah and we ask for Your wisdom and Your guidance in the delivery and the receiving of this teaching. In the name of Yahooshua, I bind any spirit that would seek to interfere with the reception of this message. In the name of Yahooshua, I command you to go down and be silent, and I stop your ears and stop your mouth until this message is complete. In the name of Yahooshua, the Messiah. And I ask You Father, in the name of Yahooshua to send your mighty warring Angels to bind and silence any spirit that would hinder the receiving of this message. I ask Father, that You will open the hearts and the ears of the spirits of the hearers, to hear clearly Your Word and Your will in this message, and that You will close their ears and close their hearts to anything that is not of You. I ask, Father that everything that is in

this message that is of You, will find deep roots in the hearts of the hearers and that if there be anything which is not according to Your perfect will and Your Word, that You will, by Your Spirit, blow it away and it will find no root in the hearts of the hearers. I ask You to cover the hearers with the blood of Jesus, from the top of the heads to the soles of the feet. I ask You to cover their family members and the entire environment where they are listening to this tape, with the blood of Jesus, in the name of Yahooshua the Messiah. Amen.

Saturday the 13th of January 2001, the previous two weeks, 31st of December and the 7th of January, I preached at Foundation for Living Christian Fellowship in Pretoria. The message on the 31st of December was The Wrath of God for the Church and why judgment is coming on the Church today. In that message, we saw very clearly that tribulation was upon the world and we reviewed the judgment process. Last week, the message was the judgment for adultery and continuation of the previous message. In that message, we went into some depth, as to what God says about marriage and adultery in the Word of God. Those messages were intended as a recap on what was preached at FFL. It was to close off the 3-part set of teachings on the current judgment, bearing in mind that about a year ago, we did produce a set of 10 tapes on judgment in this life. It goes into some detail into all aspects of the subject of judgment. Before I carry on with the teaching today, I would like to recap some of the points out of last week's teaching, as I'm continuing today with the subject of the judgment for adultery. We saw in the last teaching that it's vital that we know the terror of the Lord, because we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ. We saw that the seventh Commandment says, "*you shall not commit adultery*." I made the assertion that that Commandment may be being broken in such a way as to send more souls to Hell and possibly any other of the ten Commandments, bearing in mind that on the 31st of December, I was impressed with the Spirit of Yahweh to say that judgment was coming on the Church, because the Church was materially breaking every one of the ten Commandments.

### **Recap**

Today, we sit with a situation where over two thirds of all marriages in the body of Christ are ending in divorce. Some reports indicate that the level of divorce in the body of Christ is in fact higher than the level of divorce in the world. So, we see that Satan is wreaking great havoc. We saw last week in the teaching on the judgment for adultery, the judgment for adultery has said we will not inherit the Kingdom of God, and that adulterers will have their part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone, which is the second death. There is some uncertainty as to exactly what that message says. There does appear to be an indication, and it seems to be supported by the visions of Rick Joyner reported in the book, "Final Quest". But under certain circumstances, a believer may be cast into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone for a season, to pay the penalty of their sin and may then spend the rest of Eternity in Heaven. But on the other hand, we saw very clearly that Proverbs 7, 27 says that adultery is the way to hell.

I cited the example of two specific cases. We've become aware of a man who, having married a woman who was divorced in the sight of the world, but not in the sight of God, died within six months. The Word of God being that he was in adultery, and then the other man who went bankrupt in six months. So, we saw that judgment was already coming from the Church, where they were committing adultery, particularly those who are mature enough and knowledgeable enough. But I say to you today, by the Spirit of God, the judgment for adultery is about to become very harsh and very severe in the body of Christ. We iterate the point that was made on the 31st of December. It is not necessarily that we're going to see large numbers of people physically dead, but we're going to see people in lack. We are

going to see people in ill health. We are going to see people falling away and losing their salvation if they do not deal with adultery in their lives.

We looked at the definition of adultery, and we saw that adultery was essentially the act of sexual intercourse with another man's wife. We saw further that adultery is used in certain instances to describe unfaithfulness. And we saw that the word 'fornication' or 'pornea' used by Jesus, or the translation of the word used by Jesus in Matthew 19, 9 refers to a spiritual state which can be likened to treachery. So, we saw that adultery is not just a physical, sexual act of adultery. It can also be pornea, the spiritual fornication, the spiritual unfaithfulness of a wife to her husband, or of a man towards Yahooshua Messiah, Jesus Christ. And we have to understand that that goes into the realms of submission and rebellion as well.

We saw that in last week's teaching, that rebellion is the sin of witchcraft, and rebellion is the opposite of submission. A wife who refuses to submit to her husband in everything according to the Scriptures, finds herself moving into an area of witchcraft. By moving into an area of witchcraft, she's moving away from God, and she's moving into pornea. And in the extreme cases we've seen, based on our own case histories that we've shared out of own ministry, that that can lead to people losing their salvation. We also saw that it is definitely possible in Hebrews 6, Hebrews 10, Matthew 12, for a person to lose their salvation on a basis where there is absolutely no redemption, and there's no coming back to God. Their spirit becomes completely dead to God with no hope of salvation because they have crucified again the son of God and put Him into open shame. So, we need to understand that people who persist in adultery in this generation, be it physical sexual adultery, or be it spiritual, pornea, unfaithfulness, treachery, rebellion on the part of the wife, or lack of submission, will find themselves losing their salvation.

We saw on the 31st of December that the Lord was saying that there would be massive spiritual carnage in the next few years given that Revelations is speaking of a spiritual state, not just a physical state, and that billions of people will die in the next few years. A third of the world's population will die spiritually, without hope of redemption. A large proportion of the Church will fall away. There will be a great falling away. It will be spiritual. There may be physical manifestations for those who want to see, but we've seen also, that we have been in great tribulation for some years now and people are misguided. They're looking for physical tribulation. We went on and we discussed what is marriage, what is a wife, and we saw very clearly that marriage was sexual intercourse with a woman who is a virgin.

We saw that there were certain criteria in terms of which a man could marry a widow. We inferred from certain experiential precedent that Yahweh will, under certain circumstances, release a woman who is divorced, to remarry. But we saw very clearly, that the basis for divorce is spiritual death on the part of the husband, for a woman to get divorced from the husband, for a man to divorce his wife. It is persistent pornea leading to a state of finality, an irreversible state of spiritual death. It is not somebody who backslides, it's not somebody who is unsaved and is not coming to salvation, it is a person who has made a commitment, has accepted Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior, and then backslides to a point into willful sin, into pornea, into rebellion, to a point where they lose their salvation. At that point, it's very clear that Yahweh, God will permit a woman to divorce her husband, or a husband to divorce his wife. Prior to reaching that state, there is no scriptural basis for such release.

There are indications that, where a woman lost her virginity prior to coming to salvation, under circumstances the Lord will extend grace and release her to remarry. But we saw in some detail, the

case of the woman seduced at the age of 16, under hypnosis in her 40's, was told that she was married to that man and she had absolutely no recollection until the Holy Spirit revealed it to her. So, we have no robust basis to say that a woman who has lost her virginity to a man who is still alive, is free to remarry unless the Spirit of God very clearly shows that that is the case. We saw also, that a woman who marries foolishly an unbelieving man is probably required to lay down her life until her death or his death, for his salvation, again unless he comes to a place where he is in absolutely unrepentant sinner with no further prospect of salvation. And that is a very small proportion of situations in the world today. All other women, who in the worlds terms remarry are committing adultery, and men who marry them are committing adultery, and the judgment for adultery will apply.

We saw that the Word of God defined a virgin as being a girl who had just come to puberty, and we saw clearly that the Word of God showed that that was the age that God intended girls to marry at. We saw that about a third of all girls in the world today are reportedly losing their virginity by their 14th birthday, and that consequently, we needed to reassess exactly what it is that we impose on young girls in terms of marriageability, and so forth. We went in some length into understanding that the marriage Covenant. We saw from Hebrews 9, 18, that the Covenant requires the shedding of blood. We saw from Genesis 15, 4 to 21, and from Jeremiah 34, 18, that the cutting of the Covenant involved the shedding of blood and the passing of the parties making the Covenant through the blood of the animal that had been slain. We saw that the Covenant was defined as resulting in a situation in which the parties to the Covenant could not live without one another, and that the malediction or the curse of the Covenant, or the Godly Covenant is death, and therefore, that is why death is mandated in the case of adultery. And even if we don't experience physical death today in the case of adultery, it gives arise to spiritual death.

We saw also that the root words of Covenant and split respectively in the Hebrew Baruth and bothou are closely related. We saw that splits speaks of breaking into parts longitudinally with the grain plain of cleavage, and we tied that to the Genesis 2, 24 in the King James, where we read that a man shall cleave unto his wife, and they shall be one flesh. And so, we saw that the Covenant Act of marriage in a Godly union is the act of physical sexual intercourse between a man and a virgin, with the shedding of blood, and that no other verbal or other action is required for a marriage Covenant to come into place. We saw that the word 'marriage' can in fact be replaced in Scripture as sexual intercourse with a virgin. Marriage to a widow is a very special situation and marriage to a divorced woman is only permissible where God has clearly shown that to be allowed. We also saw that there is no explicit guidance in Scripture to determine whether a divorced woman is free to remarry. The implication of that and the (inaudible 00:17:03) sense, is don't marry a divorced woman, but we know from personal experience that there are instances where Yahweh does extend grace, and that under certain circumstances led by the Spirit of God, it is permissible to marry a divorced woman.

We also saw that the Valentine's Day heart, the symbol of love, is in fact symbolic of a woman's most holy organ, and that it is an abomination that it's used in the way it is, and it contains a whole lot of subliminal erotic messages which are highly undesirable in the body of Christ. We also examined the One Flesh Bond. We saw that that was a very solid, spiritual tie, which ties a man and a woman together. And we saw from that, that a man and woman who's joined to more than one man or vice versa, finds themselves tied into a network which extends to every Satanist, witch and warlock on the planet, which is an abomination in the sight of God. We saw that incest results in the One Flesh Bond short circuiting the blood line and is also an abomination in the sight of God. By the same token, homosexuality results in a One Flesh Bond between men, which is an abomination, which is at the

route of adultery, whether a One Flesh Bond passes through one woman, from a man to woman, to another man, if that women has had intercourse with more than one man.

We saw that the Word of God was very clear. Ephesians 5, 22 to 24, "*Wives submit to your own husbands as to the Lord in everything.*" 1 Peter chapter 3 verse 1, "*Wives, likewise, be submissive to your own husbands*", referring to 1 Peter chapter 2, where Jesus is reported as being submitted in totality to those people who crucified him. When he was reviled, He did not revile in return. When He suffered, He did not threaten. He committed Himself to Him who judges righteously. So, we saw that a wife is required to submit to her husband in everything, irrespective of whether he's righteous or not. We saw that that was a major reason why a Godly Christian woman should not marry an unbeliever, or even an immature believer, who had not reached a level of sanctification and holiness where he could adequately in a Godly fashion, care for his wife, otherwise she could find herself forced into all sorts of things. We saw again, that this does not constitute a basis for divorce. A woman who has married foolishly, must bear the consequence of her mistake for the rest of her life. We saw in 1 Samuel 15, 23 that rebellion, which is the opposite of submission, is as a sin of witchcraft and stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry in the context of Samuel speaking, because you've rejected the Word of Yahweh, he's also rejected you from being king.

And we see that a rebellious wife is in fact guilty of the form of witchcraft, a form of rebellion. It can ultimately lead to her losing her salvation. It can lead her to a state of pornea, and it can lead to a situation in which divorce is permitted in the Word of God. We saw that the Word of God is quite clear, that a women's desire, in Genesis 3, 16, shall be for her husband and we saw in Deuteronomy 21, 15 to 17, that the Word of God provides for a wife to be unloved, and that therefore there is no basis for a women to claim that she wants a divorce on the basis that she is unloved, or does not love or have desire any longer for her husband. And we saw that virtually, all the reasons accepted in the world and in the Church today for divorce, are not acceptable before the throne of God. And consequently, the vast majority of people who have divorced in the Church in the current age, are living in adultery, and will be judged accordingly. And this is why it is so vital, that this message is preached to the four corners of the world, that this truth is shared by those who've heard this message.

I must stress that having heard this message, you must understand that Ezekiel 3, and Ezekiel 33 make it very clear that you are responsible for this truth and for imparting this truth to others. We cannot take a truth like this and remain silent about it, otherwise the blood of those who die and go to hell, as a consequence of our silence will be on our hands and we'll face a very harsh judgment. We saw Proverbs 14, 1, saying that "*a wise woman builds her house and a foolish pulls it down with her hands.*" Proverbs 12, 4, "*An excellent wife is the crown of her husband, but she who causes shame is like rottenness of his bones.*" Proverbs 25, 24, "*It's better to dwell in a corner of a house top than a house shared with a contentious woman.*" The amplified also says fault finding, reinforced in Proverbs 21, 19 and 21, 9. We also looked at the other aspect, 1 Peter 3, 7, "*Husbands, likewise dwell with them,*" that's their wives, "*with understanding, giving honor to the wife as the weaker vessel and as being theirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers may not be hindered.*" We stress that a house divided against itself will fall.

Luke 11, 17, says that "*A wife who gets into contention with her husband is pulling down her husband's house.*" She is creating a state which feels like rottenness in his bones, a spiritual state. It doesn't matter how seriously out of line her husband is, a wife does not have the spiritual authority to bring it into life, whether it's by passive or active resistance, whether it's arguing with him, whether it's reviling him, whether it's threatening him, or whether it's controlling him. She does not have that



authority. She's required by the Word of God to submit to him in everything. And we read reading in 1 Peter 3, that *"if she submits by her humble submission, she may win her husband over."* That is the only way a wife who has a husband who's out of line, can actively win her husband over, by complete and total positive proactive submission. We saw also that Yahweh is head of Yahooshua, Yahooshua is the head of the husband, the husband is the head of the wife, and the wife, in a sense, is the head of the children.

We saw that there was a mirror situation there. And we saw that if her husband was out of line, or she thought he was out of line, a wife had the opportunity to go to Yahooshua in prayer and ask him to deal with her husband. By the same token, the husband does not have any scriptural authority to discipline a wayward wife. All he can do is go to Yahooshua and ask Yahooshua and Yahweh to discipline his wife. Under certain circumstances, he can hand his wife over to Satan, that she may learn to submit and be disciplined. We saw also, that if a wife is not in submission to her husband and was conducting herself towards the husband in an unsatisfactory fashion, it was quite possible that her behavior was mirroring the husband behavior towards Yahooshua. We need to understand that one of the major reasons that marriages today are such a mess, is because the majority of men's relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ is also a mess. By the same token, the relationship between children and their father is a mirror of the relationship between the father and Yahweh God the Father. Therefore, we must infer that the reason that the majority of children's conduct today is so far from what we would desire, is in large measure because the relationship between men and God the Father is in such a mess. There is so much rebellion, there's so much false teaching, and there's so much wrong conduct.

By the same token, we saw that the conduct of the children towards their mother could be a mirror of the mothers' conduct towards her husband. Therefore again, we need to understand that if we got the hierarchy of our relationships right and dealt with the things that were wrong, in the husbands case, in his relationship with God the Father, with Yahooshua Jesus Christ, the Savior, in the wife's case with her husband and so forth, that many problems in the world today, would come right. And having understood that, we also need to understand that based on those principals, where a husband is not in full submission to Yahooshua, the Messiah Jesus Christ, or to God the Father, Yahweh, he should not expect his wife to be in full submission to him, or his children to be in full submission to him. If they're not, and he divorces his wife because she is not in submission to him, and he's not in submission to God, then he should not be surprised if he receives a very harsh judgment, and therefore, on the day of judgment, he finds that he's in adultery.

So, we need to understand, God created marriage to work and there is no basis in Scripture for people just to get divorced in the manner that they are doing today. I would now like to, having basically finished my recap of what was taught last weekend and hopefully made it very clear that there's a diversity of behavior within the context of marriage, which is totally and completely unacceptable in the sight of God, and hopefully, sensitized those who hear this message to the fact that there is a harsh judgment, and I do mean a harsh judgment as in wholesale losing its salvation, falling away in great measure, coming upon the Church of Jesus Christ, Yahooshua the Messiah in the days ahead. I'm not talking a years' time, I'm talking the year 2001, 2002 and 2003. It's very clear to me by the Spirit of God, that the next 3 years are going to be absolutely critical for those who would seek to find themselves as overcomers on the Day of Judgment. In the teaching on the 31st of December on the Wrath of God for the Church, I touched on in some detail, Isaiah 4. We saw that Isaiah 4 clearly spoke of this age. We saw that Isaiah 4 spoke of the spirit of burning and the spirit of judgment, it spoke of the remnant coming out of the Church. And the next three years are going to see us go through a

period of that refining, as the spirit of judgment and the spirit of burning is now upon the Church of the Lord Jesus Christ. It will come upon the world in due course.

We see the physical manifestation of this, and the confirmation in the physical realm in terms of the abominations on the temple Mount in Jerusalem, in terms of the war in Israel, which broke out at Yom Kippur last year in fulfillment of prophecy, with the entire world ranked against Israel. We see the prospect of a full-scale war as a possibility there, but whether that happens again in the natural or not spiritually, the entire world has arraigned itself to the United Nations against Israel. And we must see the fulfillment of that prophecy. We must see the spiritual death that will result from that, and we must see the evidence of that in our own lives and the lives around us and we must fear with a holy terror the judgment seat of Christ.

### **The remnant**

We also saw that Isaiah 4,1, at the beginning of those 6 verses of Isaiah 4, gives us a startling principle in terms of what most people who call themselves by the name of Christ believe today. In the King James version, Isaiah 4,1 says, *"In that day seven woman shall take hold of one man saying, we will eat our own bread and wear our own apparel and you let us be called by thine name to take away our reproach."* We saw that as I said, led by the Spirit of God, I was impressed to look at Isaiah 4,1 in the Living Bible, which is not a translation I normally refer to because it makes it very clear what is being said there. That time is the time we are in today. It is the end of the age. It is speaking of the remnant that comes through the tribulation. It is speaking about those who are refined by the spirit of burning and the spirit of judgement. It is talking about those who are true believers. *"At that time so few men will be left alive, that seven women will fight over each of them, and say let us all marry you. We will furnish our own food and clothing and let us be called by your own name, so that we won't be mocked as old maids."*

We saw that based on that we could infer, that there would be seven times as many woman as men in the body of overcomers, in the remnant, in those who would endure to the end, that six out of seven men will die spiritually. This creates enormous challenges today. It means that any woman who is thinking of getting married must be extremely cautious to seek the guidance of the Spirit of God before she marries. It means that any man who calls himself by the name of Christ in this age, must be extremely conscious of the possibility and the high probability that he could lose his salvation before this age is out. Therefore, he should be extremely diligent in seeking to draw near to God in this age and setting aside all the cares of the world that may be distracting him and tearing him away from serving God.

### **Blaspheming**

The key point that comes out of all of this, and it is an absolutely critical point, it is an immensely challenging point, and before I do so, I need to refer you to Matthew 12, verses 31 and 32. *"Therefore I say to you, every sin and blasphemy will be forgiven men, but the blasphemy against the Spirit will not be forgiven men. Anyone who speaks a word against the Son of Man, it will be forgiven him, but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it will not be forgiven him, either in this age or in the age to come."* Blaspheming the Holy Spirit is a very quick way for any human being to lose their salvation. I have witnessed it on several occasions. It is a terrible sight. We must understand the context of Matthew 12. Matthew 12 relates to the situation where the Pharisees were saying that Jesus was casting out demons by Beelzebub, the prince of demons. In other words, they were retributing what was being done by the anointing of the Holy Spirit to Satan. Jesus warned them, that by attributing

the workings of the Holy Spirit to Satan, they were blaspheming the Holy Spirit and they were in danger of losing their salvation forever.

So, I must adjourn you with what I am about to say. Please, I appreciate it is highly controversial, and I appreciate it is extremely difficult in terms of what virtually all of us have been taught in the years to date. Do not respond to what I have to say now by saying that is of Satan. I declare it to you today, that by the Spirit of the Lord, before the throne of God, that what I am about to say to you is of God. It is of Yahweh, the Lord God himself. It is dealing with perhaps the most deeply seated heresy in the body of Christ today. It is a heresy that is so firmly entrenched and virtually nobody in the body of Christ is willing to accept it as heresy. It so entrenched that virtually nobody in the body of Christ is willing to confront it head on. But I say to you today, by the Spirit of God, it is heresy and to declare that what is about to be said is of Satan, may well place you in a position of blaspheming the Holy Spirit.

So, I ask you to listen carefully to what is about to be said, and then to pray and ask God to confirm it. I can supply many, many references, hundreds of Scriptures in order to support what is about to be said. I can supply you with a book of over 300 pages to support what is about to be said. I can supply you with an entire set of teaching tapes, which will support what I am about to say. But I implore you, that if you fear God and you fear His judgement, listen attentively to that which I am about to say. Whether she did it naively, whether she did it because her pastor told her it was ok, the people that I mentioned earlier, the man who died, and the man who went bankrupt, both had been told by the Church that it was safe to marry. There is another discussion there about the judgement that comes to people who give false council like that. If the Church understood the consequences of something like that, they would be a lot less hasty to express judgements in areas like that.

The next page, the definition of the virgin. I am not going to go into that in a lot of detail, but there are a couple of points there. The virgin that is referred to is a girl at puberty. The girl comes into the age of spiritual majority in the sight of God at the time of puberty, which is generally somewhere between the ages of 12 and a half, and 14 years old today. The reality is that God never intended them to live the way we require them to live in this age. I understand that is immensely controversial, but we need to confront these truths. We set ourselves up as judges and arbitrators over people and make their lives miserable. The harsh reality folks is secular statistics indicate that of the order of a third of all woman in the world today have lost their virginity by their 14th birthday. Of the order of two thirds of all woman in the world today have had intercourse with at least 2 men by the time they get married. Those are harsh statistics. Those are statistics which are sending billions of souls to hell. We need to confront them. You will, I imagine, have noticed in the teaching last week in the recap that has preceded this today, a number of apparent anomalies with your current understanding of the Word of God.

### **The act of marriage**

Firstly, we have seen that the act of marriage is the act of sexual intercourse with a virgin. We have seen that there are no other requirements. Accordingly based on that simple principle of Scripture, it is clear that a man who takes the virginity of more than one woman is married to each of those women. Secondly, we have seen that the One Flesh Bond is an unbreakable spiritual bond and we've seen that fornication involves men joining themselves to women who had joined to other men, and so does adultery. A simplistic examination of the diagrams that were drawn last week will reveal that a man who joins himself to several women, who joined themselves to no other man, maintains hierarchical state of order, which is instantly recognizable as the same hierarchy of order in the rest of the Church,

and the rest of the world. It is common place, in any other institution in human existence, and in the spirit realm, for one head to have a number of subordinates. It is absolutely scriptural for a man to have several wives and we see that throughout Scripture from Genesis to Revelations.

When I first became aware of this I started crying out to God about the level of divorce. For three months I argued with Him, because the first answer I got was that one of the major reasons for the high level of divorce, and the specific reason for the three instances of hurting and broken women, where their husbands had gone after other women, all three related to this situation. In each case the man had taken a second wife, but because of the false doctrines of the Church, he had discarded his first wife, causing enormous grief and distress. Basically, in that period of time, as I debated and argued with the Spirit of God, with the Holy Spirit, I asked Him to show me where the institution of monogamy had come into place. I read from Genesis to Revelations, and He showed me in virtually every single book of the Bible, that if you read it diligently, you will find confirmation that it has always been Yahweh God's intention that a man should be able to have more than one wife.

We see from the very definition of the marriage Covenant, the shedding of blood from the virgin flesh of the wife, that it's a fact that God created Eve to be capable of having only one husband, and Adam to be capable of having more than one wife. And therefore, so-called, if you like, plural marriage, polygamy, godly marriage, with more than one wife is entirely scriptural and it has been in place since the beginning. I understand that what I have just said to you has probably shocked you to the core. As I said I had enormous difficulty with myself for many months. I would encourage you, that if you are as challenged as I expect you will be by what I have just said, please whatever you do, do not attribute it to Satan. Do not put yourself in the place of blaspheming the Holy Spirit and thereby losing your salvation for Eternity. Go before the throne of God and go to the Word of God. Start reading in Genesis, and read all the way to Revelations, and see that Jesus Christ is married to a body comprising many people.

See that Ephesians 5 clearly makes it apparent, the direct parallel between the body of Christ and the body of man through the One Flesh Bond. See that Jesus, in Matthew, I think it's 23, saw fit to use a parable where a man was planning to marry ten virgins on the same night, to give us a better understanding of his return. See that throughout Scripture, Yahweh God has appointed this truth. Then I ask you to consider very carefully the significance of seven in Isaiah 4,1. Please understand that seven is not a random number in Scripture. There are seven lamps on the Menorah and there are seven days of the week. On the seventh day, God rested. There are seven Spirits of God before the throne of God in the book of Revelations. Wherever you find seven, God is speaking of fulfillment, completion, and the end. God is speaking of Covenant. He's speaking of holiness when he speaks of seven. He is speaking of sanctification. So, when God speaks in Isaiah 4,1 of seven women to one man in the remnant of survivors, in the body of Chris at the end of the age, He is speaking about the fulfillment of His perfect will for the consummation of this age.

The fact that we don't understand how to live that, is because we have been subject to the heresy of monogamy for nearly 2000 years imposed on the Church by the roman pagan Gentile. Demonic forces through the emperor Justinian in 600 and others, does not alter the fact that God intended, at the end of the age for seven times more women than men to endure and overcome. He also intended every one of those women to have a husband. That is what Isaiah 4,1 shows us. A more detailed study of Scripture will show us that it is God's intention for every woman to be married. It's not God's intention for women to be without the covering of a man. I would like to take you on a slightly different direction now, because it is important before this tape ends, that you have an understanding of what we're talking about here.

## David

I take you to 2 Samuel 12, verses 7-9. This is the situation where David has committed adultery with Bathsheba. Nathan the prophet comes to him. He speaks a parable to him. Then Nathan says to David in verse 7, *"You are the man. Thus, says Yahweh God of Israel, I anointed you king over Israel, and I delivered you from the hand of Saul. I gave you your master's house and your master's wives into your keeping and gave you the house of Israel and Judah, and if that had been too little, I would have given you much more. Why have you despised the Commandment of Yahweh to do evil in his sight? You've killed Uriah the Hittite with a sword. You've taken his wife to be your wife and have killed him with a sword of the people of Aman."* Understand that at the time that David took Bathsheba as his wife, he had at least conservatively about six or seven, if not twenty wives. And then secondly, understand that Yahweh clearly says he gave David, Saul's wives, plural, not singular. So, Yahweh explicitly participated in David taking additional wives over and above the wives that he had before Saul's death.

Then consider 1 Kings 15 verse 5, *"Because David did what was right in the eyes Yahweh and had not turned aside from anything that he commanded him, all the days of his life, except in the matter of Uriah the Hittite."* And so, we see that David, who had taken many wives before his adultery with Bathsheba and murder of Uriah, did what was right in the sight of Yahweh all his days in everything else. And therefore, we have to conclude that the Bible is unambiguously and clearly saying that it is right in the sight of Yahweh for a man to have more than one wife. If we move on a 1000 years to Acts 13, 22 and 23, and this is Peter before the Sanhedrin. *"And when he had removed him, he raised up for them David as king, to whom also he gave testimony and said I found David the son of Jesse, a man after my own heart, who will do all my will. From this man's seed according to the promise God raised up for Israel, a Savior Jesus."*

So, a thousand years after David's death, Yahweh says that David was a man after his own heart. Therefore, we must understand if God has said that David is a man after his own heart, and God has said that David has done right throughout his life except in the matter of Uriah the Hittite, then it is Yahweh's heart for a man to have more than one wife, and that Isaiah 4,1 represents the perfect will of God for men in the body of believers in this age. It's not a question, as we saw on the 31st of December of what men want, it is a question of women who are immensely vulnerable to demonic forces and to demonic attack and satanic influence, if they do not have a godly covering, needing a covering. That's what Isaiah 4, 1 says. Isaiah 4 says that there will be women who will be so desperate for a covering that they will be willing to go into this form of marriage. And I would just ask you to consider the number of Scriptures which say that David did right in the sight of God all his life.

1 Kings 11 v 33 *"My ways to do what is right in my eyes and keep my statutes and my judgements as did his father David."* 1Kings 11, 38, *"Keep My statutes and My Commandments as My servant David did. Then I will be with you and build for you an enduring house as I built for David and will give Israel to you."* 1 Kings 14 v 8, *"As My servant David who kept My Commandments."* 1 Kings 15, 5, *"Because David did what was right in the eyes of the Lord and had not turned aside from anything that He commanded him."* We have read that before, but it bears repeating. And so, we go. 1 Kings 15, 11 to Kings 14, 3 to Kings 16, 2, to Kings 18, 3 to Kings 22, 2 to Chronicles 28, 1, to Chronicles 29, 2, to Chronicles 34, 2, all of which say along the lines of what was right and in the sight of Yahweh and walked in the ways of his father David, he did not turn aside from the right hand or to the left.

## The Word of God

If you're looking for further confirmation, there are literally hundreds of Scriptures. Exodus 21, 10 is completely unambiguous. *"If he takes another wife, he shall not diminish her, that's the first wives food, her clothing and her marriage rights,"* and that is an absolute necessity in terms Isaiah 4, 1, which relaxes the conditions of Exodus 21, 10, saying that in this age women will be able to provide their own food and clothing. I would imagine that at this moment, you, for the most part are probably surprised and possibly shocked by the message that I've just shared with you, but I have to say what I said to you at the outset. By the Spirit of God, before the throne of God today, I declare to you that this is the Word of God. I declare to you that there can be no compromise on the Word of God. I declare to you that the doctrine of monogamy espoused by most of the Church around the world today is heresy of the worst kind.

It is causing millions of people to fall unwittingly and unknowingly into adultery, a part in the second death and denying them inheritance in the Kingdom of God. I assure you by the Spirit of God that those who are preaching this abominable heresy, face the most awful condemnation and penalties on the day of judgment. The blood of every single adulterer that they have ever counselled or advised, or taught, will be upon their hands. Millions, if not billions of souls in hell for Eternity will be upon the hands of those who will not confront this truth and proclaim it from the rooftops, as Jesus commanded us with respect of all aspects of the Gospel, not just those aspects of the Gospel that are palatable and appeal to itching ears. It is time for the body of Christ to wake up, to accept the truth of what is in the Gospel, the Word of God from Genesis to Revelation, and to lay down heresy in favor of truth. Judgment is upon the world. Judgment is upon the Church and the Word of the Lord today is that He will no longer endure the Church's tolerance of false doctrine and heresy. Judgment is upon the earth and upon the Church right now, and those who will not repent and turn around in the days ahead will be amongst those who will found to have died during this time of great tribulation.

## Prayer

"Father I pray that all that has been spoken today, that is according to Your Word and according to Your will, will find deep root in the hearts of the hearers. And should there be anything that is not according to Your Word and Your perfect will, that it will be blown away, and find no root in the name of Yahooshua. May the Lord Bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you. In the name of Yahooshua Messiah of Nazareth, King of kings and Lord of Lords and Savior of the world. Amen.

This tape has been recorded by a Church without walls, a ministry of End Time Ministries. PO Box 898, Randpark Ridge, Randburg 2156, Republic of South Africa. We can be contacted by email at: james@end-time-issues.org.za. Our phone numbers, international dialing code, normally 0027, but this may vary from country to country. The 27 is standard. (0027) 11 791 2327 or in South Africa, (011) 791 2327. My mobile number: (0027) 83 2516644, and in South Africa 083 251 6644. Our fax number internationally (0027) 11 791 5004, and locally (011) 791 5004.

All materials produced by this ministry are available at no cost to those who require them, irrespective of financial means. At the same time donations and offerings are clearly welcome to support the Word. Please feel free to copy any of our materials in part or in full, as the Lord leads you, understanding that the manner in which you utilize those materials and the manner in which you cite them and quote them is for your account on the Day of Judgment. So, we would ask you to use the materials widely, but please feel free to copy them however you see fit and to share these truths with anybody as the Lord leads. I would urge those of you who received copies of these tapes of no charge, that once

you've listened to them, that you consider passing them on and blessing others with them. Our heart's desire is that they should not become an artifact sitting on a bookshop shelf gathering dust, but the Word of God contained in these teachings should be spread as far and as widely as possible.

Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this ministry, our bank account is: End Time Issue Ministries, the account number is 0427527805, the branch is the Standard bank of South Africa, Randburg branch, and the branch code is 018005. If, in the listening to these messages you have realized that you do not have a personal saving relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ, and that if you were to die right now, you would not spend Eternity in Heaven with Him, I would urge you to accept Jesus Christ as Lord and Savior and to pray the prayer of salvation.

### **Steps to salvation**

These steps to salvation are as follows. Firstly, admit and recognize that you are a sinner. Romans 3 verse 23 says, "*For all have sinned and fallen short of the glory of God.*" Secondly, accept and believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, that He came to earth as a man, that He was crucified and died on the Cross, but on the third day He rose again, is now seated at the right hand of the Father and that by His death and resurrection, He took your sins for Eternity. Romans 5, 8 says, "*but God demonstrates His own love toward us, that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us*". Thirdly, confess your sins, repent of your sins and turn around. Repentance means turning around. It means ceasing to do what you now realize is wrong. 1 John 1, 9 says, "*if we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. For confess your faith that Jesus Christ is Lord, that you believe this and receive His salvation and invite Him to dwell in your heart.*"

Romans 10, 9 and 10 says, "*If you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you will be saved. For with the heart one believes unto righteousness and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.*" Give thanks to God for your salvation, pray and cry out to God and give thanks to Him for saving you. Six, work out your salvation by the Spirit of God. Philippians 2 v 12 says, "*Therefore My beloved, as you've always obeyed, not as in My presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.*" Salvation is a process. You are saved the moment you pray the sinners prayer, the prayer of salvation, and invite the Lord Jesus Christ to come into your heart and be Lord of your life, but salvation is also process where your mind is renewed, and you come to have a personal and deep relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. It is your choice how far you go in that relationship. He desires a wonderful, deep and an intimate relationship with you, but it is your choice whether you will do what is necessary to come to that place through reading your Bible, praying, seeking counsel, seeking guidance.

You should be water baptized at the first possible opportunity. Matthew 3, 6 says, "*And we are baptized by Him in the Jordan, confessing their sins.*" I encourage you to ask the Lord to lead you to somebody who has some knowledge or the basic ordinance of water baptism, who can water baptize you or lead you to a Church, where they can water baptize you. There's no reason why you cannot be water baptized today, as a symbolic cleansing and washing of your sins. In fact, the minute you have prayed the sinner's pray, it would be preferable for you to be water baptized. Choose to be obedient to the Word of God, accept the Bible in its original Hebrew as given by the Spirit of God and choose to live your life according to that. 1 John 5, 3 says, "*For this is the love of God that we keep His Commandments and His Commandments are not burdensome.*" I encourage you to read the Word of God daily, and to put into practice everything that you encounter as a principle which I believe will

bear fruit in your life. I would encourage you to make an effort right now after you've prayed this prayer.

Start reading your Bible from the book of John through to the book of Revelation, and then make a discipline of reading the New Testament from Matthew to Revelation at least 2, 3, 4 times a year and read the Old Testament from Genesis to Malachi at least once a year. I would encourage you to do that, using different translations. Ask God to lead you to the Church where He wants you to be at this time, where they will teach you, they will guide you, they will pray for you, they will help you to walk in the fullness of what God has called you to be. Be aware that God may move you from Church to Church over time to teach you new things, and you should not be reluctant to do this. The service of God is a personal choice. It's a wonderful choice and if you will step out by faith today and pray the sinners prayer and follow Him, you will reap a rich harvest, if that is your desire to be found faithful on the day of judgment.

Should you have listened to this and have decided that you are now ready to make Jesus Christ the Lord of your life, I would ask you to pray the following prayer with me in Jesus' name.

Father, I come to you in the name of Jesus and I confess that I'm a sinner. I confess that I don't have a personal knowledge of the Lord Jesus Christ, and I recognize that without Jesus, if I were to die right now, I will spend Eternity in hell and not with You. I confess that I have sinned, and I repent of those sins and I turn around. I choose to turn my back on sin and to serve God. I confess that Jesus Christ came to Earth as a man, that He was crucified, that He died and was buried and that He was resurrected on the third day and that He sits on the right hand of the Father. I confess by faith that He died to take all of my sins, and I thank You Jesus for taking my sin and I give You my sin right now in Jesus' name. I confess by faith that Jesus Christ is King of kings and Lord of Lords, and I choose now Lord Jesus to make You the Lord of my life. I invite You to come and dwell in my heart. I invite You to take charge of my life. I invite You to start leading, guiding and directing me, and I give You my life and everything that I have, and I commit myself to serving You now Lord Jesus.

I thank You that You've heard me, and I thank You that You have now come to live in me, and I thank You for saving me. I thank You that I'm now a child of the most high God. I thank You that I am now a servant of the Most High God and that You will lead me and guide me into the paths that You want me to walk. I ask You Lord to lead me to the Church where You want me to be. I ask You in the name of Jesus to bring the people that You want in my life, into my life by Your Spirit, and to remove the people that You don't want in my life, by Your Spirit in Jesus' name. I ask You to close all the doors in my life that You do not want opened, that no man may open them, and I ask You to open every door in my life that You want opened and that no man they close it in Jesus' name. Father I ask You to teach me to be led by Your Spirit. I ask You to open my eyes, to have a revelation of the Word of God. I ask You to give me a hunger for the Word of God and for Your Spirit. I ask You to teach me to pray in Jesus' name. I thank You father. Thank You Jesus for saving me. I declare that I am a child of God and I praise You and I worship You, and I glorify Your holy name. I thank You for changing me and saving me and delivering me in Jesus' name. Amen.

Now that you've prayed that prayer and you're born again into the body of Christ, realize that the Christian walk is a journey. The Apostle Paul likens it to a marathon race. You need guidance, you need assistance. If you have no one to help you pray and ask the Holy Spirit of God to come into your life and to help you, if you need to contact somebody, contact any of the major ministries. If you're not sure who to contact, contact this ministry through the address, telephone and email details that were supplied earlier. May the Lord bless you and keep you, and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth. Amen.



---

## **Section 2:**

# **Judgment in this Life**

### **Introduction**

This is the introduction to the set of tapes entitled "Judgement in this life," incorporated into the suite of tapes "God's plan for healing marriage in the seventh millennium." These set of tapes were recorded by this Ministry about a year ago as an initial set of 10 tapes with two additional tapes added recently derived from the developments at the Foundation for Living Ministry.

The basic content of the set of tapes is a comprehensive analysis of the scriptural basis whereby Satan gains foothold to attack us in this life and the catalogue of aspects which open the door for Satan to gain legal right in the judgement will of God to kill, steal and destroy in our lives in the process of accusing the brethren and executing judgement against us for our sin. It is incorporated into the suite of tapes at this point in order to lay a solid foundation for the teachings on marriage to assist listeners to understand how absolutely essential it is for a Christian to walk in holiness and sanctification, to walk in quick repentance, to walk in the love of God and put the Word of God and the Commandments of God first in one's life in order to minimise the extent which Satan is able to use legal means to attack us. With that background and with the revelation of the coming tribulation out of the first set of tapes, it is my hope that you will be in a place having listened to this series on judgement to have a good understanding of how the Devil attacks you and then as you walk down the road of coming to greater and greater revelation in the area of marriage seeing your marriage healed, you will be able to better understand what the Devil is doing to understanding that since marriage is such a fundamentally important truth and that Satan has fought so hard for so long to steal marriage the way God intended it to be.

He is not going to give up on your marriage without a fight. He is going to use whatever legal means he can to distract you from putting these teachings into effect and from coming into a place where there really is Heaven on Earth in your marriage, particularly if he has had you in a situation where your marriage has been less than fulfilling where there perhaps has been talk of divorce, whether there has been regular argument, etc. Satan knows that as you start walking through these teachings, his hold on your life is going to be substantially diminished and therefore he is likely to pull out all the stops to seek to prevent that from happening. With these teachings behind you and dealing with obvious sin that the Holy Spirit reveals to us as you listen to this series of tapes, I truly believe that the Lord will enable you to stand strong with the onslaught that Satan will bring against you.

And equally, as we move into great tribulation, the sin in our lives is the basis whereby Satan is going to obtain judgement against us and kill, steal, destroy, persecute, do whatever he can find to do against those who truly are committed to serving the Lord God. So with that background, I encourage you to listen to the series on judgement before moving into the series on marriage purely in order to lay a solid foundation. This is not to say that you could not start listening to this series on marriage concurrently with or before the series on judgement but I was very impressed with the Lord this morning as I was finalising this pack of teaching tapes that it should be in this sequence that people

should lay a foundation of a revelation of the coming tribulation and the tribulation that is at hand and revelation of judgement which is the mechanism through which Satan brings tribulation and from there going into dealing with the issues of marriage understanding the full significance and the impact of adopting and scriptural practices in the area of marriage and other areas of our lives. So with that in mind, I pray that you will be blessed and benefit from what is contained in this particular subset of the teaching tapes.

May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, King of Kings and Lord of Lords. Amen.

## 02 01 Judgment in this Life

Morning on the subject of Judgement in this Life. You can turn to 1 Peter 4:17, and I am reading from the New King James unless I indicate otherwise. 1 Peter 4:17 says: *"For the time has come for judgment to begin at the house of God; and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the gospel of God? Now 'If the righteous one is scarcely saved, where will the ungodly and the sinner appear?' Therefore let those who suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to Him in doing good, as to a faithful Creator."* If we go on then to, what I would like to do then is to read from the book, *"The Final Quest"* by Rick Joyner. There is a report of this series of five visions by Joyner, experienced by Joyner and during this progression of visions, Joyner sees himself ascending the Mountain of God. He sees the demonic battle that is taking place in the world at the moment and he sees into the spirit realm. He sees large numbers of Christians taken prisoner by the enemy, by Demons and fallen Angels and placed in considerable bondage and fighting amongst one another. He subsequently climbs to the top of the mountain and experiences pure worship such as he has never known before and he experiences a particular change in the situation when he reaches Galatians 2:20, which is crucified with Christ and reaches a place where he is no longer conscious of self and subsequently given the mantle of humility which allows him to seek more clearly what is going on.

He subsequently goes into one of the rooms in Heaven and from there he finds himself in the judgement hall in Heaven and having gone through a very taxing progression of meetings with people who have previously died, he comes before the Judgement Seat of Christ and in the process of the dialogue that takes in place between Joyner and the Lord Jesus Christ, he reports the following conversation in response to the Lord Jesus asking Joyner whether you want to sit on one of the high thrones in Heaven with Christ for eternity. In page 118 Joyner responds: There was no way that I could answer "yes" to the Lord's question if I considered myself worthy to sit here. I was not worthy to sit in the company of any who were there. I knew I had been given the opportunity to run for the greatest prize in heaven or earth, and I had failed. I was desperate, but there was still one hope. Even though most of my life had been a failure, I knew that I was here before I had finished my life on earth. When I confessed that I was not worthy, He asked: *"But do you want this seat?"*

*"I do with all of my heart,"* I responded. The Lord Jesus then looked at the galleries and said, *"Those empty seats could have been filled in any generation. I gave the invitation to sit here to everyone who has called upon My name. They are still available. Now the last battle has come, and many who are last shall be first. These seats will be filled before the battle is over. Those who will sit here you will know by two things: they will wear the mantle of humility, and they will have My likeness. You now have the mantle. If you can keep it and do not lose it in the battle, when you return you will also have My likeness. Then you will be worthy to sit with these, because I will have made you worthy. All*

*authority and power has been given to Me, and I alone can wield it. You will prevail, and you will be trusted with My authority only when you have come to fully abide in Me. Now turn and look at My household."*

I turned and looked back in the direction I had come from. From before His throne I could see the entire room. The spectacle was beyond any earthly comparison for its glory. Millions filled the ranks. Each individual in the lowest rank was more awesome than an army, and I knew had more power. It was far beyond my capacity to absorb such a panorama of glory. Even so, I could see the only a very small portion of the great room was occupied.

I then looked back at the Lord and was astonished to see tears in His eyes. He had wiped the tears away from every eye here, but His own. As a tear ran down His cheek he caught it in His hand. He then offered it to me.

*"This is My cup. Will you drink it with Me?"*

There was no way that I could refuse Him. As the Lord continued to look at Me I began to feel His great love. Even as foul as I was He still loved me. As undeserving as I was He wanted me to be close to Him. Then He said: *"I love all of these with a love that you cannot now understand. I also love all who are supposed to be here but did not come. I have left the ninety nine to go after the one who was lost. My shepherds would not leave the one to go after the ninety nine who are still lost. I came to save the lost. Will you share My heart to go to save the lost? Will you help to fill this room? Will you help to fill these thrones, and every other seat in this hall? Will you take up this quest to bring joy to heaven, to Me and to My Father? This judgment is for My own household, and My own house is not full. The last battle will not be over until My house is full. Only then will it be time for us to redeem the earth, and remove the evil from My creation."*

So we see that the emptiness of Heaven and the emptiness of the thrones in Heaven is related back to the judgement. We have also seen that based on that report, 99% of all people who have called on the Lord who could have been there are not in fact in Heaven. I really believe that we have to see that as a very, very sobering warning to the Body of Christ today. We are so prone to assume that just because we obeyed a decision for Christ that this all going to be planned early. In the same book on page 106, during the judgement process and Joyner is meeting various people who he either knew off during his life or he actually met or people who had died before his life and in the meetings and the conversations that take place, he is coming to realise how little he actually knows about the Kingdom of God and how many mistakes he has made and how much sin there is in his life, even though he has been serving Lord permanently for something like 25 years and published numerous books which are widely considered to be highly anointed and highly prophetic. Page 106 Joyner makes the remark: How could all of those who have not been given the grace of this experience have any hope at all I asked. I heard a new voice, *"What you are experiencing here has been given you on Earth. Every relationship, every encounter with another person could teach you what you are learning here if you will keep that cloak of humility on and learn to always keep your attention fixed on his glory. You are given this experience now because you will write the vision and those who read it will understand it. Many will then be able to carry the glory and the power that they must carry into the last battle."*

I was amazed to recognise this man as a contemporary of mine and I did not know that he had died. He goes on later to say that this man had become so proud at the end of his life that he was doing the Lord's prophets harming the disciples of others to the point that the Lord had to take him away early to humble him. That again the message there is that we can learn on Earth. The challenge is to

understand how we learn on Earth and what mechanisms the Lord has provided for us to learn on Earth. Just by way of what I consider to be another salutary warning on page 94, page 95, he had a discussion with a man that he refers as the great reformer. He does not identify the man but it is apparent that this is a man who lived quite some time before Joyner and is widely regarded as a great reformer and in that conversation it transpires that this man was taken to Heaven and sits in Heaven today amongst the foolish virgins, those who only just made it into Heaven in relative terms, sitting in outer darkness in Heaven.

*"As he talked, his words were striking me deeply. I, too, was guilty of everything that he was relenting of. Many young men and women who I had brushed off as not being important enough for my time were now passing through my mind. How desperately I wanted to return now and gather them together! This grief that I began to feel was even worse than I had felt about wasting time. I had wasted people! Now many of these were prisoners of the enemy, wounded and captured during the battle on the mountain. This whole battle was for people, and yet people were often regarded as the least important."*

In another discussion with regard to Paul in which it is said that if Paul have not learnt in his life that the magnitude of his sinfulness he would not be sitting today on one of the greatest thrones in Heaven. So we see a whole panoply of information that should lead us to very carefully examine our hearts and to very carefully examine our understanding of the Word of God. And when I am seeking to develop in this teaching is to share my understanding in terms of some of the things that I perceive the Word of God shows us in dealing with this life and in a sense correlating what we experience in day-to-day living with what Joyner reports in 'The Final Quest' in what appears in the word and my personal life experience and seeking to serve the Lord and finding the many things that did not seem to work as I expected. We go to 1 Peter 5:8, the word says *"Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour."* And I want to stress the word 'may devour.' It is permissive. In other words, Satan cannot devour just because he feels like devouring. He must have permission to devour and by implication, he must have some basis on which to gain permission to devour. Verse 9 says, *"Resist him, steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same sufferings are experienced by your brotherhood in the world."* So we are clearly told to resist the devil and to resist him in such a way that he may not devour us.

If we go back a couple of verses, verse 6 says, *"Therefore humble yourselves under the mighty hand of God, that He may exalt you in due time, casting all your care upon Him, for He cares for you."* Again, we see that He does not exact us when we feel like being exalted. He exalts us when the exaltation is dear that more significantly verse 5 says, *"Likewise you younger people, submit yourselves to your elders. Yes, all of you be submissive to one another, and be clothed with humility, for God resists the proud,*

*But gives grace to the humble,"* which is quoting Proverbs 3:34. So we see the same thread of humility versus pride encapsulated in these verses of Scripture which sum up a lot of the message that Joyner has for us that if we are proud, Satan will recreate havoc in our lives. So let's try and understand a little bit more about what it is that may cause the devil to be able to devour in our lives. We turn to John 10:10, the Scripture says and this is Jesus speaking, *"The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly. I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep."* Then we see that pertaining to the passage in 'The Final Quest' that I read a moments ago where the Lord is saying that he laid down his life for the sheep. He went after those that were lost and yet in the church today, this somehow seems uncommon with anybody who considers himself to be in a position of leadership lays

down their life in a way that is particularly noticeable. But the key part of this verse that the thief does not come except to steal and to kill and to destroy and the thief that has been referred to there is Satan. And he is coming to kill, steal and destroy those for whom he has obtained permission. We will go back to the verse which says *"Seeking him whom he may devour."*

If we go then to the Book of Revelation, chapter 12, and we seek to understand the process whereby Satan may gain permission to kill, steal, and destroy in our lives. We turn to Revelation 12:10, *"Then I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, 'Now salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren, who accused them before our God day and night, has been cast down.'"* It is important to see there first of all that Satan is referred to as the accuser of the brethren that is confirmed in verse 9, which says *"So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him."* So it will seem from that verse given Revelation refers to the end of the age that as it is today, Satan is still before the Throne of God and he is still accusing the brethren which is every believer night and day and it would appear that the accusation may have something to do with this issue of Satan claiming permission to devour those whom he has permitted or whom he may devour.

If we consider John 6:70, there is a footnote in Lamb's translation of the Bible, from the Aramaic which says that Satan is one who causes to slide to slip or to miss the mark and sometimes I think we lose sight of who and what Satan is if we recognise that his objective in life is to cause us to slide or to slip or to miss the mark. In other words, to cause us to backslide to miss the mark and not to reach our high calling, not to reach what God has called us to do. Perhaps it reduces the mystique roundabout Satan. Again, what I am seeking to do is to understand how he goes about doing that. If we turn to Book of Job chapter 1, we begin to see the picture developing of this accuser of the brethren who is before the Throne of God night and day seeking whom he may devour. Job 1:6, *"Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan also came among them. And the Lord said to Satan, 'From where do you come?' So Satan answered the Lord and said, 'From going to and fro on the earth, and from walking back and forth on it.' Then the Lord said to Satan, 'Have you considered My servant Job, that there is none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil?' So Satan answered the Lord and said, 'Does Job fear God for nothing? Have You not made a hedge around him, around his household, and around all that he has on every side? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his possessions have increased in the land. But now, stretch out Your hand and touch all that he has, and he will surely curse You to Your face!'"*

*And the Lord said to Satan, 'Behold, all that he has is in your power; only do not lay a hand on his person.' So Satan went out from the presence of the Lord."* And in the verses that follow, we see that all of Job's possessions are taken away and destroyed that his sons and daughters are killed by great one and that everything that he has, is taken from him barring his wife and himself, and he is not harmed in any way. Then it continues in chapter 2 and again Satan is before the Throne of God and in verse 3, *"Then the Lord said to Satan, 'Have you considered My servant Job, that there is none like him on the earth, a blameless and upright man, one who fears God and shuns evil? And still he holds fast to his integrity, although you incited Me against him, to destroy him without cause.' So Satan answered the Lord and said, 'Skin for skin! Yes, all that a man has he will give for his life. But stretch out Your hand now, and touch his bone and his flesh, and he will surely curse You to Your face!' And the Lord said to Satan, 'Behold, he is in your hand, but spare his life.' So Satan went out from the presence of the Lord, and struck Job with painful boils from the sole of his foot to the crown of his head. And he took for himself a potsherd with which to scrape himself while he sat in the midst of the ashes. Then*

*his wife said to him, 'Do you still hold fast to your integrity? Curse God and die!' But he said to her, 'You speak as one of the foolish women speaks. Shall we indeed accept good from God, and shall we not accept adversity?' In all this Job did not sin with his lips."*

So we see a situation here in terms of which we clearly see Satan coming before the Throne of God. We clearly see a dialogue taking place and we clearly see Satan making certain assertions and requesting that certain things are done and we see God acceding to certain of those requests. The impression one gets from reading those verses of Job is of a capricious and God who in response to provocation from Satan will simply allow Satan to do whatever he feels like doing in a person's life as some form of a test. If that is the case then one is faced with some difficulty in understanding how to live the Christian walk. But if we turn to Job 3:25, we see what I certainly consider to be the pivotal verse in understanding what happened to Job. And it says, *"For the thing I greatly feared has come upon me, and what I dreaded has happened to me. I am not at ease, nor am I quiet; I have no rest, for trouble comes."* We see earlier on in Job 1:5 that his sons and daughters were inclined to have significant parties which went on for some time, feasts which went on for days. In Chapter 1 Verse 5 it says, *"So it was, when the days of feasting had run their course, that Job would send and sanctify them, and he would rise early in the morning and offer burnt offerings according to the number of them all. For Job said, 'It may be that my sons have sinned and cursed God in their hearts.' Thus Job did regularly."*

What is important about that particular verse is that Job did it because his sons may have sinned, not because they had sinned. So we see the manifestation of the fear. He did not have complete confidence in what the situation was. He was taking almost enormous precautionary measures in saying, *"Well, maybe my children have sinned, so I better sacrifice for them."* Instead of trusting God to shame if they had sinned and responding to the sin and confessing it. If we start getting into a situation where we are apologising for things that our children may have done when we do not know whether they have done it, I think that that is indicative of the fear that he refers to in chapter 3 in verse 25. Now, there is a verse in Scripture which says that without faith it is impossible to please God and elsewhere it says that God has not given us the spirit of fear but a spirit of love, power, and a solemn mind, and therefore we see that fear is not the same as faith. It has been taught quite widely and I believe that is in fact true is that faith is the opposite of fear. I cannot have faith and have fear at the same time. If I have faith in God, I will not fear and Scripture repeatedly tells us not to fear. Again, I have had it taught and it does seem to be correct that fear is in fact faith in the devil. So once we have fear, that means that in a certain area, we do not have faith in God. If we do not have faith in God, that is sin. It is not pleasing to God and furthermore it is fear in the devil and on the face of this particular Scripture, according to my understanding, it very clearly indicates that if we have fear, we have faith in the devil and that grants Satan a legal right to do what we fear.

So we see here that notwithstanding the fact that Job was righteous before God, he had on the face of it at least one sin in his life and that was that he had fear and that fear was fulfilled in the same way that if we have faith, the faith comes to pass if we have fear, that which we fear will come to pass. If we begin to understand that even though it is not explicitly mentioned in Job and it seems to me that many of these deeper things about the Word of God are not explicitly revealed possibly because they may have been removed from early manuscripts because Satan was not just prepared to have those things continue or because the Lord knew that if they were made explicit, they would be rejected or the documents would be destroyed. So for whatever reason, the Lord has chosen to obscure these things, but if one follows a process of systematic deductive reason, I believe that one has to conclude that Verse 3 Chapter 25 is the key to the basis of how Satan gained the right to attack Job, taken in

the context of 1 Peter 5:8. If we then turn to Lamentations, Chapter 3:38, *"Is it not from the mouth of the Most High That woe and well-being proceed? Why should a living man complain, a man for the punishment of his sins? Let us search out and examine our ways, and turn back to the Lord; Let us lift our hearts and hands to God in heaven. We have transgressed and rebelled; You have not pardoned. You have covered Yourself with anger and pursued us; You have slain and not pitied. You have covered Yourself with a cloud, that prayer should not pass through. You have made us an offscouring and refuse in the midst of the peoples."*

So here we see that punishment for sins comes from God or the judgement which leads to the punishment at the very least comes from God and it obtains from the sin that we have in our lives from the transgression against the Word of God. If we turn then to 1 John 2:1-2, we read, *"My little children, these things I write to you, so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an Advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world."* So we see that Jesus is our advocate with the Father. If we take all of these verses together and put together the jigsaw puzzle which I believe the Lord has given us in these Scriptures, we see God the Father sitting on the Throne of Judgement, we see Satan coming before the Throne of Judgement as the accuser of the brethren, the prosecutor if you like in modern legal parlance, the individual who brings the charges and demands a sentence, we see Jesus before the Throne of God or on the right hand of God, as the advocate pleading on our behalf, pleading in our defence and pleading for remission of the sentence or for the sentence to be waived or for us to receive forgiveness and then we see ourselves effectively in the dock before God being judged and Satan is bringing our sin before the Throne of God in a very rigorous legal basis. He is standing there effectively, one can almost perhaps imagine him standing there with the Bible in his hand and pointing at a specific verse or series of verses in Scripture which the person being tried has transgressed and it seems to me that in dealing with such a situation, an advocate can only plead on the basis of the evidence and if the evidence is such that the accused is in fact guilty and just advocate cannot plead against the guilt has to acknowledge the guilt and the only defence that is left in him is to plead for a remission of sentence or a reduction of sentence or extend in circumstances and I think we come to understand that and we begin to understand why Jesus died on the cross for us to receive forgiveness of sins, because once we confess our sins, he is faithful and just forgive us and so the minute we realise we sin if we immediately go on our knees before God and confess that we have sinned and we repent of that sin, we confess that it is wrong and we receive the forgiveness that Jesus brought for us on the cross, then that sin is washed away and if Satan then comes before the throne, it would seem that the advocate would then say that person has confessed and I paid the price in full. If we do not confess our sins, then it would seem to me that we do not have the covering of the blood of Jesus with regard to that sin. That sin is open, it is exposed. We are guilty because we have not paid the price and we have not taken the step of confessing the sin, repenting of the sin, and in that process, transferring the sin under the blood and receiving forgiveness and receiving grace.

It also would seem that in the same process that grace extends to incorporate on the one hand that the level of the judgement and the level of the sentence and whether in fact we found guilty is a function of our maturity in Christ. A newly born believer who does not know the world, does not know the ways of God, it seems that there are many things that I seem to envisage Jesus standing before the throne and saying to the Father, I urge you to extend grace to this individual at this time because he does not have the knowledge and he is a child in Christ, in much the same way that if a 3-year-old child takes hundred rand note off a table and he goes and puts it in the piggy bank or whatever, we will explain to him gently that it is wrong and just take it back from him and maybe just smack to his hand, but if a 40-year-old man does a similar thing in a business situation, we would expect him to

receive a disciplinary hearing possibly to be dispersed possibly even for criminal charges to be placed against him depending on the sum of money involved. As I understand it is a form of grace as we mature in Christ, the grace is in a sense real black and at some point we are called to account for our lives fully without hiding behind the sacrifice that Jesus made and I think that is part of growing in Christ.

And we then see a situation where if we are not conscious of our sins, if we are not seeking God to reveal our sins, if we are not confessing and repenting our sins and receiving forgiveness when we make those sins, we open the door to Satan to go before the Throne of God and one then begins to envisage a situation where there is sin in one's life and Satan goes before the Throne of God, God considers the case, Jesus is unable to argue that the sin is not there, the sin is manifestly there and Jesus is unable to argue or is unable to extend his blood to cover the sin because there has been no confession and no repentance and no receiving of forgiveness and he is also unable to argue extenuating circumstances because the person has been born again for some years. They have plenty of time to read the scriptures, that have plenty of time to understand what the Scriptures say and they show no interest in dealing with the sin or understanding that what is happening in their lives is a consequence of sin and at that point, it would seem that the Father will then grant Satan permission to devour or to kill and steal and destroy in that person's life. So one can envisage him saying touch their finances but do not touch their bodies and one can envisage him at a later stage in the person's spiritual development saying he might touch his body but do not take his life and it would seem that one can perhaps even argue that why people who are relatively young in the Lord tend to possibly obtain and keep healing but may go through a lot of financial and personal loss in other areas and that in some way those people who are very mature in the Lord seem to suffer more with affections and one hears reports from time to time that people who regarded as great men or women of God, who have infirmities that they are just not able to be healed from even though they are laying hands on people and those people have been healed and it would seem that following this chain of thought, what happens there is that as they mature and perhaps deal with other areas in their lives, God then wants them to deal with things which are much more personal and which gives Satan the right to attack their health and so forth.

I really believe that we have to look at each and every instance whether it is illness, whether it is problems with cars, whether it is problems with finances or anything else. We need to seek the Lord to find out where the sin maybe. It does appear that one could draw a conclusion that may be there are certain Scriptures which say that trials and tribulations arise in any event but if we consider the scriptures which deal with the various instances where people were plotting to kill Jesus. For example, when he spoke in the synagogue of Nazareth and they took him to the top of the mountain to throw him off the mountain and it says that Jesus walked through the crowd because it was not their time, it really does seem that if there is absolutely no sin, Satan is unable to touch that person without God's expressed permission in exceptional circumstances. But it does seem to me that it is inconceivable that there is a single person on Earth who is without sin, therefore there is always an opportunity for Satan to attack that person. In Timothy it is Paul who refers to himself as the chief of sinners and in the interview with Joyner in 'The Final Quest' Paul makes the point that at the end of his life, he saw himself as the chief of sinners because there was so much that he knew to do that he did not do and so much that he knew not to do that he did do.

As we come to revelation of sin as anything which is not in the perfect will of God as we come to revelation of understanding that if we do not do what the Word of God tells us to do that is sin and it potentially opens the door for attack and conversely if we do anything that we know that the Word of



God says we should not do that also potentially opens the door to attack. Again, I believe that one should not interpret this in a legalistic sense. One has to recognise that that is the practical reality of the spiritual dispensation under which we currently operate. Satan is the God of this world. He is the lord of this world. He is the king of this world. He is free to do what he likes on this world, except with regard to Christians and Jews, those people who have committed their lives to God and serve God and where they have come under the protection and therefore Satan requires some form of permission in order to deal with that. I think a lot of people will have a lot of difficulty with this teaching. A lot of people will say, "Well, what hope have I got?" And the hope that we have is that we have the hope in the blood of Jesus. We have the hope in the sacrifice of Jesus and if we are aware of our sinful natures, if we are aware that our righteousness is filthy rags in the sight of God, and that Jesus Christ is our righteousness. If we continuously stand on the Scripture that Jesus Christ as our righteousness, not as an excuser or a cop out to dealing with the sin in our life, but as a spiritual reality and if we constantly cry out to God to show us the sin in our lives to deliver us from that sin to show us what is required to deliver us from that sin, over time, we will draw closer to God.

If we see any trial or any situation which there is killing, stealing, or destroying in our lives, be it in our finances, be it in our health, be it in our families or whatever, if we immediately become sensitive to the fact that that can only be happening if Satan has permission to do it and he can only get permission if he has gone before the Throne of God, if the advocate has had to admit that the sin exists, if the advocate has to say that there is no repentance and there is no confession and therefore the sin is not covered by the blood. If the advocate has to say that the level of maturity of the believers is not at a level where grace can legitimately or reasonably be extended to them, and if the advocate has to admit that the person is not seeking to deal with sin in their lives and therefore there is no good basis on which the judge should not grant the prosecutor his petition in terms of judgement and sentence. If we can come to understand that, then we can understand that all that is required in the event of any form of attack in our lives is to immediately examine ourselves in the Word of God to immediately go before the Throne of God and to ask the Lord to show us exactly what it is and what we need to do. In my own experience that can very frequently give rise to having to deal with legacy issues, legacy sin, things arising out of adultery, fornication, lying, deception in one's lives before coming to salvation or going back into previous generations down the blood line. Many blood line curses will pass down ten generations.

And none of those things are simply just summarily washed away when we come to salvation as far as I can determine. Some of them, may be, but many of them are just covered for an interval by grace until we have the opportunity to come to the point where we can actually deal with it. But if we not prepared to deal with the blood line issues, if we are not prepared to deal with the sin of our forefathers and to confess it and repent, those sins of the forefathers which have brought curses on the blood line will continue to manifest themselves in our lives. I believe a very classic example of that particular principle which is I believe is starting to manifest in the church now, we see increasing numbers of people saying by the Holy Spirit that God requires the Christian church to confess and repent of the sins that have been committed against the Jewish people in the name of Jesus Christ. I had to do that in Israel in 1995 at two conferences. I read various articles which report other people saying the same thing themselves by the name of Christ have in fact touched the Lord's anointed the Jewish people and done them harm. I believe that is heaped up massive wrath collectively on the Body of Christ for everyone who does not come to a revelation that that is sin in the Body of Christ and that sin must be confessed and repented of by every individual that calls himself by the name of Christ, otherwise it would be passed down through the Body of Christ and the body of the church.

I think there are many other instances like that that we have to examine ourselves. But the positive side of that is that it provides us with an understanding for what is going on. The document that I have written entitled 'Poverty in the Church of Jesus Christ' is a diagnostic document, which just lists dozens of different aspect which I have identified as indications of symptoms of different types of sin and just in broad terms how to deal with it. If one prays about that and deals with it, certainly in my own life I have seen algebraic solution in that area. I think the last thought that comes to mind is people are inclined to see a teaching like this as indicating that it is too hard to be a Christian, and I believe we really have to bring this back to our life experience. We are called Children of God and that is a metaphor, parable if you like, but a metaphor that God has given us that we may better understand that one dimension of being Children of God.

We are also servants of God and that brings in another dimension to which there are some parallels in that metaphor. We are also brethren of Christ that we need to understand that the nature of our relationship [inaudible 00:49:14] is incredibly complex and in a sense multidimensional. He is omnipotent, He is omnipresent, He is omniscient. He knows everything. He is everywhere at all times and He can do all things. Our human understanding is totally incapable of even beginning to comprehend God and Jesus and the Holy Spirit and to differentiate between them and to understand the way He works, and for that matter to understand the way Satan works in our lives. If we can just roll back to this very simple metaphor of being children of God, then we need to recognise that the day we are born again, we are like a baby that has just come into the world that is incapable of protecting itself and therefore God extends extreme grace to us in the same way that would happen with the baby, but when that baby is a year old, and is calling around and starting to pull things off table, eventually it has to learn that if it pulls the corner of the tablecloth, the tablecloth will come off and fall on it and it will get hurt and it will probably get a hard hit. When it is a couple of years old and it is toddling around and it taking things it should not take, it needs to learn that it will get disciplined and when it gets to school it will receive more extensive discipline and it will discover everything that it could do at home is no longer permitted to do. When it is in the first rugby team, it will find out that mother is not there to protect it when 180 pound lock or somebody is tackling him and he is going to get hurt.

By the time he has gone on to the army, his parents are able to do very little for him and when he is a reconnaissance commander dropped behind enemy lines, he is pretty much on his own. He need to understand that as we grow in Christ, as we progress in Christ, we move from being that newborn baby wrapped in soft linen cloths protected from everything around us to if we are sincere about following our calling in Christ that we will eventually find ourselves as effectively the reconnaissance commander behind enemy lines in this world which is ridden with evil and with Satan's work and we will find ourselves at a point having to stand on our own two feet having to give account for our actions and if we make mistakes, we will have to pay the price. If a reconnaissance commander fails to maintain his rifle and it jams at the critical incident, he will not be able to win that engagement. At worst, he may be killed, injured, taken captive and brutally tortured or one of those, and therefore we need to understand that as time goes on, as we grow in Christ, we have to accept more and more accountability.

I think really enclosing, there are two prayers that come out of 'The Final Quest' that Joyner mentions which I think are really, really critical to walk in Christ in these days and the first of those is Father, show me the level of my present deception and what to do about that deception and lead me into more truth, recognising that all truth is a journey. Not one of us will reach all truth until we have lived this life and we been judged and found worthy to spend eternity in Heaven and if we do not reach

that point, one would assume that we will never ever know all truth. The second prayer is Father, in the name of Jesus I ask you to judge me severely and correct me harshly that I may serve you more perfectly and the essence of that is that unless we receive judgement in this life, we will be judged at the end of our lives on the day of our judgement and we will pay the price for all our sin on that day.

So we should actually welcome the opportunity to be judged in this life. We should welcome the opportunity to experience Satan's killing, stealing, and destroying in our lives as a diagnostic that our lives are not where God wants them to be and we should respond instantly to any incident like that by going before the Throne of God and asking Him to show us the sin and diligently seeking to find the sin and how to deal with the sin in order to be cleansed in order to get a remission of sentence, in order to bring that sin under the blood of Jesus and the sacrifice of the cross. If we are not prepared to do that, we should not be surprised to find that our lives on Earth are pretty miserable. We should also not be surprised to find that at the end of our lives, we come to the Throne of Judgement and we find that perhaps we find ourselves amongst the foolish virgins, we find ourselves amongst those who are cast into outer darkness with the weeping and wailing and gnashing of teeth or even in extreme cases we find ourselves amongst those who in fact have lost their salvation, and are given their part in the lake that burns with fire and sulphur which is the second death which is spoken about in Revelation 21:8, so I think imposing the key point is we need to seek holiness and sanctification. We need to see anything that goes wrong in our lives as an indicator that there is sin and that if we deal with the sin, we will walk in the full blessing and provision of Almighty God. But if we do not deal with the sin, we will continue to experience distraction in our lives.

*"Father in the name of Jesus we pray that that which has been spoken in this teaching that is of you Lord will reside in the hearts of those who have heard it or read it and I pray Lord that if whatsoever in what I have said here is in error, is incorrect in any way not of you Lord, I ask you just to blow it away as chaff before a wind, but only that which is pure and of you will remain in the hearts of the hearers of this message, and I pray that you will help them to discern and put into effect that which applies in their lives, in Jesus name."*

Recorded on Saturday, November 13, 1999.

## **02 02 Responding to Developments in the Church**

I want to follow on today from 1 Peter 4:17 again, where we were last weekend, last Saturday. 1 Peter 4:17: *"For the time has come for judgment to begin at the house of God; and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the gospel of God? Now 'If the righteous one is scarcely saved, Where will the ungodly and the sinner appear?' Therefore let those who suffer according to the will of God commit their souls to Him in doing good, as to a faithful Creator."* We went into some detail in the last teaching with regard to what is meant by the judgement and how it appears that the judgement actually manifests in the life of believers today in the sense of Satan identifying our sin according to the Word of God, going before the Throne of God, the Judgement Seat of God as the prosecutor of the accuser bringing charges against us before the Throne of God, God the Father sitting in judgement and Jesus Christ, the son seated at the right hand of the father as our advocate pleading our case, forced in many instances to admit that we are sinning and that we have not confessed our sin and have not repented and therefore we are guilty as charged, but in some instances, pleading that the grace be granted to us on the basis of spiritual immaturity or lack of knowledge, but as we mature in Christ what could be visualised as a sort of rolling back of grace in the sense of maturing

children being required to take more and more responsibility for their actions. And so ultimately as we mature in Christ finding that for the same sin in a later date in our lives, we may face a harsher judgement because we should know better and we should have dealt with that sin in our lives.

This is part of the process of growing in Christ. Today I want to talk a little bit about the way that that actually manifests in the life of believers and particularly how we should respond to it and what I envisage is that over the next few weeks, I will do a series of teachings which will address some of the things that are actually happening in the church today, what the scriptural basis of those things are and how we should be preparing ourselves for those developments, how we should be responding to the developments that we now already be aware of and also where that will lead us ultimately in terms of great revival and perhaps even the second coming of the Lord Jesus Christ, whether that is in a few years or in a thousand years. So we will develop that thinking in the weeks ahead.

I want to turn to 1 Timothy 4:1-3 chapter for and dressings 1 to 3, and in my Bible, the heading for this section is *"The Great Apostasy"* in the New King James translation. That is not part of the Scripture, it is just the heading that man has applied to this Scripture and it says: *"Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron, forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth."* We particularly concentrate on the first two verses there, we see reference to some departing from the faith and giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of Demons, the King James says doctrines of devils, speaking lies and hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron and all of that relates to heretical doctrines and demonic teachings and demonic manifestations, the other Scriptures will lead us to conclude that there will be a wide range of deception and demonic manifestation, counterfeit miracles, etc. I do not propose to go into that aspect today. God willing, in the next week or two, we will address those issues. But what is really important here is to recognise that in association with judgement beginning in the house of the Lord, we should anticipate great apostasy in the church.

One could go into a lengthy historical analysis and in fact identify that apostasy began within a few hundred years of the death of Jesus Christ and by the Council of Trent in 312 AD, there was already a great departure from pure doctrine and that in the ensuing centuries as the Roman church became stronger, the teachings of the church deviated more and more from Scripture and what I anticipate is in the months ahead in the teachings that follow this, we will go into a variety of these doctrines of Demons, many of which are still being taught in the church of the Lord Jesus Christ as bring Scripture today. I again reiterate I do not want to go into detail on these issues today. I want to lay a foundation in terms of how we should be responding to them.

Many of the people who listen to this teaching or read the transcription, I anticipate all have observed a variety of manifestations in the church. They are likely to be aware of teachings which they just are unable to reconcile with what appears in their Bible, questions that they have asked and answers that they have obtained from the Holy Spirit, which just do not accord with what they are being told by a well-recognised men and women of God, manifestations in churches of allegations of gold dust falling from Heaven, people receiving gold fillings and other things, which do not seem to make any real logical sense with Scripture in terms of what the blessing is associated with gold filling or amalgam or something being converted to gold, particularly when reports indicate that some of these fillings are not of good quality. So there is a lot of discussion, there is a lot of questions being asked about what is happening in the church. A lot of people are very unsettled and rightly so and discussing these things

and talking about these things and there is an increasing tendency for people to speak out against these things.

Really what I want to deal with today is what guidance the Scripture give us in dealing with a situation where somebody is teaching heresy or whether a demonic manifestation. The tendency, the natural reaction is to run forth and to warn people of the danger, naming the name of the leader or the pastor or whoever is associated with that teaching or that manifestation, seeing videos of television broadcasts where specific individuals are publicly named where their footage is shown of manifestations and their congregations things that they have said and these things are debated and condemned in public forum. It is my prayer that through this teaching today you will come to realise that the people who are doing that are in fact themselves falling into a situation of sin which will bring about judgement in their own lives and it is my fervent prayer out of this teaching that you will begin to realise that we have to respond differently to developments of this nature and the church, we have historically being lead to believe that the world will have us believe.

I will ask you to turn with me now to 1 Samuel 15:10-35 and I want to take you through a process throughout the balance of 1 Samuel to demonstrate to you the basic outline being that at a fairly early stage in his reign as king, Saul was rejected as king because of his repeated rebellion and disobedience to the Word of the Lord through Samuel that this brought about demonic oppression presumably as a consequence of this judgement that we talked about last week. It brought about a situation in which having rejected Saul as king, God through Samuel selected David, anointed David as King. David found favour with Saul, served Saul for a number of years. Eventually Saul thought to kill David, David fled to the wilderness and was an outlaw in the wilderness for some years, during which he had several opportunities to kill Saul, but elected not to touch the Lord's anointed and ultimately, having consulted a witch or a medium about the future because God would no longer speak to him, Saul eventually died in battle and sometime later David was made king. But we see a substantial period of time elapsing between Saul being rejected as King and David being anointed as King and David actually assuming the throne. I am not clear what the period of time was but I am under the impression that it was a good few years and during which David conducted himself in a way that was pleasing to God and according to Scripture and from which I believe we can learn many lessons. So the beginning of what I want to address this morning addresses that.

So we go to 1 Samuel 15:10, *"Now the word of the Lord came to Samuel, saying, 'I greatly regret that I have set up Saul as king, for he has turned back from following Me, and has not performed My commandments.' And it grieved Samuel, and he cried out to the Lord all night. So when Samuel rose early in the morning to meet Saul, it was told Samuel, saying, 'Saul went to Carmel, and indeed, he set up a monument for himself; and he has gone on around, passed by, and gone down to Gilgal.' Then Samuel went to Saul, and Saul said to him, 'Blessed are you of the Lord! I have performed the commandment of the Lord.'*

*But Samuel said, 'What then is this bleating of the sheep in my ears, and the lowing of the oxen which I hear?' And Saul said, 'They have brought them from the Amalekites; for the people spared the best of the sheep and the oxen, to sacrifice to the Lord your God; and the rest we have utterly destroyed.'"* There is a lengthy teaching that one can develop just out of that passage in terms of Saul erecting a monument to himself for him blaming the people for his failure to obey the Word of God which said he should utterly destroy everything to do with Amaleke and also the manner in which he refers to God as the Lord your God as rather than Lord my God. I do not propose to address that but it is just symptomatic of the manner in which Saul was backsliding from what the Lord had called him to do.

If we turn to verse 22: *"So Samuel said: 'Has the Lord as great delight in burnt offerings and sacrifices, As in obeying the voice of the Lord? Behold, to obey is better than sacrifice, And to heed than the fat of rams. For rebellion is as the sin of witchcraft, And stubbornness is as iniquity and idolatry. Because you have rejected the word of the Lord, He also has rejected you from being king.'"* And we see the reference there to witchcraft manifesting itself throughout the rest of Saul's life culminating in 1 Samuel 28:6-25 where Saul consults a medium. Saul apparently repents of this point, and recognises that he fear the people but we see in verse 26 that it is too late. *"But Samuel said to Saul, 'I will not return with you, for you have rejected the word of the Lord, and the Lord has rejected you from being king over Israel.' And as Samuel turned around to go away, Saul seized the edge of his robe, and it tore. So Samuel said to him, 'The Lord has torn the kingdom of Israel from you today, and has given it to a neighbour of yours, who is better than you. And also the Strength of Israel will not lie nor relent. For He is not a man, that He should relent.' Then he said, 'I have sinned; yet honour me now, please, before the elders of my people and before Israel, and return with me, that I may worship the Lord your God.' So Samuel turned back after Saul, and Saul worshiped the Lord."* Then we see that Samuel then kills Agag, the king of the Amalekites.

We carry on to chapter 16, *"Now the Lord said to Samuel, 'How long will you mourn for Saul, seeing I have rejected him from reigning over Israel? Fill your horn with oil, and go; I am sending you to Jesse the Bethlehemite. For I have provided Myself a king among his sons.'"* And we see then how Samuel goes to Jesse's family and eventually they identify that David who has not even been seen fit to call to the assembly is in fact the one that God has called to be anointed and so we see in verse 12, *"So he sent and brought him in. Now he was ruddy, with bright eyes, and good-looking. And the Lord said, 'Arise, anoint him; for this is the one!'"* Then Samuel took the horn of oil and anointed him in the midst of his brothers; and the Spirit of the Lord came upon David from that day forward. So Samuel arose and went to Ramah." And again, there are many teachings about God looking on the heart and not on the outward appearance and David was the man after God's own heart, the statement which is made right at the beginning of David's appearance in the Book of Samuel in which it is reiterated in the teachings in the book of Acts, from which we must conclude that notwithstanding some things which did go wrong in David's life, throughout his life David was a man after God's own heart. We should take note of that and note that those who preach against some of the things that David did and condemn and judged David may well be conducting themselves contrary to what the Word of God says regarding these matters as I have to make visible in this particular teaching.

We carry on in verse 14 and we see that the heading in New King James is *"A Distressing Spirit Troubles Saul"* and it says in verse 14: *"But the Spirit of the Lord departed from Saul, and a distressing spirit from the Lord troubled him."* I had a light from a teaching that I heard some years ago which says that this is not a correct translation but it actually means that an evil spirit that God permitted to come upon Saul troubled him and that reinforces the teaching of last week. One envisages there a situation in which part of the judgement for Saul's disobedience was demonic oppression. That certainly appears to be a very prevalent form of judgement that is being experienced in the Body of Christ today that by virtue of unrepented sin many, many Christians are demonised. In many cases they do not even know the sin that lead to the demonization because of false teachings or because of sin in previous generations or incidents in childhood which because of ignorance were not understood to have given rise to a situation where demonization could take place.

We see there that Saul's servants identified the need for somebody to play soothing music. They identified that David is anointed of God as a musician. They go and they sent to Jesse and request that David come and we see in verse 23: *"And so it was, whenever the spirit from God was upon Saul, that*

*David would take a harp and play it with his hand. Then Saul would become refreshed and well, and the distressing spirit would depart from him."* In chapter 17, we read about the whole episode of David and Goliath, how David was sent to visit his brothers as they were in the camp of Saul fighting the Philistines and Goliath had been defying them for some time and eventually David says in verse 26: *"For who is this uncircumcised Philistine, that he should defy the armies of the living God?"* And he was taken before Saul and we see in verse 37: *"Moreover David said, 'The Lord, who delivered me from the paw of the lion and from the paw of the bear, He will deliver me from the hand of this Philistine.' And Saul said to David, 'Go, and the Lord be with you!'"* And we see David's faith in the covenant that he has with the Almighty God and David goes out eventually just clad in his shepherd's clothes with his shepherd's stuff and sling and he picks up five stones and we read in verse 49: *"Then David put his hand in his bag and took out a stone; and he slung it and struck the Philistine in his forehead, so that the stone sank into his forehead, and he fell on his face to the earth."* Logically a stone thrown from a sling is unlikely to sink into the forehead of a three metre tall giant with a helmet on and so again, it would seem that we should conclude that God brought a miracle there in ensuring that stone that was slung by David utterly killed Goliath. So we see that David is now acknowledged as a mighty warrior but Saul is still king we also see that Saul does not recognise David as the same young man who played music to him sometime previously.

We carry on in chapter 18, the heading in this translation is *"Saul Resents David"* and we read in verse 7: *"So the women sang as they danced, and said: 'Saul has slain his thousands, And David his ten thousands.' Then Saul was very angry, and the saying displeased him; and he said, 'They have ascribed to David ten thousands, and to me they have ascribed only thousands. Now what more can he have but the kingdom?' So Saul eyed David from that day forward. And it happened on the next day that the distressing spirit from God came upon Saul, and he prophesied inside the house. So David played music with his hand, as at other times; but there was a spear in Saul's hand. And Saul cast the spear, for he said, 'I will pin David to the wall!' But David escaped his presence twice."*

So we see that notwithstanding the fact that Saul has been rejected by God as king for some time, he still is king and secondly we see that notwithstanding the fact that David has been anointed as King, he is still not in the throne, holding the throne and while David is widely recognised as a mighty warrior and could quite conceivably have taken the throne by force, David is content to serve Saul even when Saul tries to kill him and to do nothing to bring to reality that which God has already promised him and that is to be King of Israel and I think there is an enormous lesson there for us to learn in terms of not seeking to cause God's promises to come to pass in our lives in our own strength and to recognise that even if God has rejected a man from a particular position in which he has anointed him, it is not for other men who are aware of that to do anything to bring that to pass. It is up to God having rejected Saul to remove Saul from the throne at the time that elects. We carry on and if we carry on to chapter 24 and I just want to touch on this and I am going to come back but it is important that one sees this in context. In chapter 24, David has an opportunity to kill Saul and yet he does not do so and in verse 10 he says: *"I will not stretch out my hand against my lord (Saul), for he is the Lord's anointed."* And we carry on and we come through to chapter 28. In chapter 26 that David has a second opportunity to kill Saul, which he does not do and in chapter 26:9: *"But David said to Abishai, 'Do not destroy him; for who can stretch out his hand against the Lord's anointed, and be guiltless?'"* In chapter 28 we see Saul consulting the medium and in verse 6: *"And when Saul inquired of the Lord, the Lord did not answer him, either by dreams or by Urim or by the prophets. Then Saul said to his servants, 'Find me a woman who is a medium, that I may go to her and inquire of her.' And his servants said to him, 'In fact, there is a woman who is a medium at En Dor. So Saul disguised himself and put on other clothes, and*

*he went, and two men with him; and they came to the woman by night.' And he said, 'Please conduct a séance for me, and bring up for me the one I shall name to you.'"*

We see in the next verse that Saul had at one stage cut off and killed all the medium and the spiritists. So this woman is reluctant to accede but ultimately she calls up Samuel and in verse 16: *"Then Samuel said: 'So why do you ask me, seeing the Lord has departed from you and has become your enemy? And the Lord has done for Himself as He spoke by me. For the Lord has torn the kingdom out of your hand and given it to your neighbour, David. Because you did not obey the voice of the Lord nor execute His fierce wrath upon Amalek, therefore the Lord has done this thing to you this day. Moreover the Lord will also deliver Israel with you into the hand of the Philistines. And tomorrow you and your sons will be with me. The Lord will also deliver the army of Israel into the hand of the Philistines.'"*

So we see that the final execution of judgement on Saul is delayed for seemingly many years and finally we see that in chapter 31 Saul goes to battle against the Philistines and in verse 3: *"The battle became fierce against Saul. The archers hit him, and he was severely wounded by the archers. Then Saul said to his armorbearer, 'Draw your sword, and thrust me through with it, lest these uncircumcised men come and thrust me through and abuse me.' But his armorbearer would not, for he was greatly afraid. Therefore Saul took a sword and fell on it. And when his armorbearer saw that Saul was dead, he also fell on his sword, and died with him. So Saul, his three sons, his armorbearer, and all his men died together that same day.*

*And when the men of Israel who were on the other side of the valley, and those who were on the other side of the Jordan, saw that the men of Israel had fled and that Saul and his sons were dead, they forsook the cities and fled; and the Philistines came and dwelt in them."* And subsequently in 2 Samuel we read about David's reign as king having been made king first by Judah and then by the rest of Israel. But we see a substantial period of time elapsed between Saul being rejected as King and David being anointed as king in a very short space of time in 1 Samuel 15 and 16. Before that actual prophecy is fulfilled and comes to pass in 2 Samuel with the death of Saul in 1 Samuel 30, again I want to make the point that throughout this period, David had opportunities to give effect to that prophecy himself at all times he was faithful as a servant of Saul. He fled rather than have conflict with Saul. He never once is reported as saying that reminding Saul that God has rejected Saul and that God has anointed David as king. David simply worked passionately and just takes defensive action where necessary to survive.

If we can go back now to 1 Samuel 24, in verse 1 we read: *"Now it happened, when Saul had returned from following the Philistines, that it was told him, saying, 'Take note! David is in the Wilderness of En Gedi.' Then Saul took three thousand chosen men from all Israel, and went to seek David and his men on the Rocks of the Wild Goats. So he came to the sheepfolds by the road, where there was a cave; and Saul went in to attend to his needs. (David and his men were staying in the recesses of the cave.) Then the men of David said to him, 'This is the day of which the Lord said to you, 'Behold, I will deliver your enemy into your hand, that you may do to him as it seems good to you.' And David arose and secretly cut off a corner of Saul's robe. Now it happened afterward that David's heart troubled him because he had cut Saul's robe. And he said to his men, 'The Lord forbid that I should do this thing to my master, the Lord's anointed, to stretch out my hand against him, seeing he is the anointed of the Lord.' So David restrained his servants with these words, and did not allow them to rise against Saul. And Saul got up from the cave and went on his way.*

*David also arose afterward, went out of the cave, and called out to Saul, saying, 'My lord the king!' And when Saul looked behind him, David stooped with his face to the earth, and bowed down. And*



*David said to Saul: 'Why do you listen to the words of men who say, 'Indeed David seeks your harm'? Look, this day your eyes have seen that the Lord delivered you today into my hand in the cave, and someone urged me to kill you. But my eye spared you, and I said, 'I will not stretch out my hand against my lord, for he is the Lord's anointed.' Moreover, my father, see! Yes, see the corner of your robe in my hand! For in that I cut off the corner of your robe, and did not kill you, know and see that there is neither evil nor rebellion in my hand, and I have not sinned against you. Yet you hunt my life to take it. Let the Lord judge between you and me, and let the Lord avenge me on you. But my hand shall not be against you. As the proverb of the ancients says, 'Wickedness proceeds from the wicked.' But my hand shall not be against you. After whom has the king of Israel come out? Whom do you pursue? A dead dog? A flea? Therefore let the Lord be judge, and judge between you and me, and see and plead my case, and deliver me out of your hand.'*

*So it was, when David had finished speaking these words to Saul, that Saul said, 'Is this your voice, my son David?' And Saul lifted up his voice and wept. Then he said to David: 'You are more righteous than I; for you have rewarded me with good, whereas I have rewarded you with evil. And you have shown this day how you have dealt well with me; for when the Lord delivered me into your hand, you did not kill me. For if a man finds his enemy, will he let him get away safely? Therefore may the Lord reward you with good for what you have done to me this day. And now I know indeed that you shall surely be king, and that the kingdom of Israel shall be established in your hand. Therefore swear now to me by the Lord that you will not cut off my descendants after me, and that you will not destroy my name from my father's house.' So David swore to Saul. And Saul went home, but David and his men went up to the stronghold."*

So we see something which in terms of the way I think most people today would have reacted to that situation which really requires our attention. We see that the servants of David saw that it was a miracle the way Saul came into the cave in a way that they could kill him. They immediately assumed that that was an opportunity for David to kill Saul, but David was absolutely adamant that he should honour the word of the Lord, the Scripture which says that you should touch not the Lord's anointed and so he simply takes an action, which in its own way is miraculous that he could come up behind Saul in a cave and actually cut his garment with a sword without Saul being aware of it as a means of demonstrating his innocence and that even then David's heart is grieved that he should even have cut Saul's robe and so he does absolutely nothing other than to say that the Lord judge between you and me and to leave the judgement in the hand of God and to [inaudible 0:33:37] that he will not touch his family.

The message that I really want to stress out of that is that it seems very clear from this passage of Scripture that where we become aware of a man of God or a woman of God who may have a well-known and well-respected ministry, who falls into error whether it is minor error or major error, who may be even turns away from God, it is not for us in our own strength to speak against that man to do any harm to that man or to speak against that ministry. We should be aware of it and we should flee from that evil and not condemn the evil and not participate in the evil, but we should not set out to bring about the fall of that man or that ministry. We should leave it to God to do in His time.

I think we can also conclude from these passages of Scripture that even though God had rejected Saul, it took considerably more sin on Saul's part before judgement was actually executed on Saul in the fullness of the prophecy that had been spoken against him. We have to accept that there is much that we do not really understand and that we cannot see in the natural concerning men of God who seem to turn away from serving God, whether they have been rejected by God or whether they can still come to repentance. It is not for us to determine less prophetically or apostolically. We are sent to

advise that person and even in that case, it is not for us to do anything further about it to bring about that full. If we go to chapter 26, we see virtually a carbon copy in principle of the previous instance. David comes to Saul's camp. Saul and all his people are sleeping. David walks right into the middle of the camp and in 1 Samuel 26:8: *"Then Abishai said to David, 'God has delivered your enemy into your hand this day. Now therefore, please, let me strike him at once with the spear, right to the earth; and I will not have to strike him a second time!' But David said to Abishai, 'Do not destroy him; for who can stretch out his hand against the Lord's anointed, and be guiltless?' David said furthermore, 'As the Lord lives, the Lord shall strike him, or his day shall come to die, or he shall go out to battle and perish. The Lord forbid that I should stretch out my hand against the Lord's anointed. But please, take now the spear and the jug of water that are by his head, and let us go.'"*

So we see an absolute reverence on the part of David for that Scripture which says *"Touch not the Lord's anointed."* Even though from that passage we see quite clearly that David knows that God has rejected Saul as king but he is at peace leaving that judgement to the Lord and all he seeks to do is to protect his own life by again demonstrating to Saul that he has no intention of killing Saul. And yet David does not feel safe to trust Saul and we thus conclude that David was well aware of the fact that Saul was demonized, that Saul had sacrificed his integrity and was in fact serving Satan and yet David still refused point-blank to do anything to harm Saul. So I really believe that one of the critical lessons that we need to learn out of this is that we should not in any way speak against or do anything against any child of God that in our opinion is sin or error, other than where it is absolutely the Will of God to speak directly to that person.

I want to carry on and I want to touch on some points in a document that I read some time ago, which is called some thoughts on dealing with current developments in the world and the church and it deals with some other principles which I had identified prior to really getting a revelation of the passage that I have just taught on, but it develops the same principle and I just want to pick up some headlines out of that document. That document is available should anybody want to obtain a copy. In Ephesians 5:1-17, I just want to pick out a few headlines, it says: *"Therefore be imitators of God as dear children. And walk in love, as Christ also has loved us and given Himself for us, an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweet-smelling aroma. But fornication and all uncleanness or covetousness, let it not even be named among you, as is fitting for saints; neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor coarse jesting, which are not fitting, but rather giving of thanks. For this you know, that no fornicator, unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and God. Let no one deceive you with empty words, for because of these things the wrath of God comes upon the sons of disobedience. Therefore do not be partakers with them."*

*For you were once darkness, but now you are light in the Lord. Walk as children of light (for the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness, righteousness, and truth), finding out what is acceptable to the Lord. And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather expose them. For it is shameful even to speak of those things which are done by them in secret. But all things that are exposed are made manifest by the light, for whatever makes manifest is light. Therefore He says: 'Awake, you who sleep, Arise from the dead, And Christ will give you light.' See then that you walk circumspectly, not as fools but as wise, redeeming the time, because the days are evil. Therefore do not be unwise, but understand what the will of the Lord is."*

So in this passage we see that we cautioned that certain unrighteous things should not even be named among you. We are also cautioned that it is shameful even to speak of those things which are done by them in secret. But then on the other hand in verse 11 we are advised to expose the unfruitful works of darkness. So there appears to be a certain degree of tension or contradiction. At best it appears

that we have a responsibility to make others aware of information concerning certain occurrences which have importance to other believers, but at the same time, it appears that we are cautioned to avoid discussing these things at all. As best I can determine, it appears that an appropriate interpretation of this passage might be that we should make certain limited and critical information available to others who do not have that knowledge and only to the extent necessary to inform them in order that they may take responsibility for their own spiritual welfare. Thereafter it would seem that we should refrain from all further discussion of these topics.

It seems to me particularly in the light of what I have taught in the last few minutes based on the life of Saul and David that there is a very, very clear distinction here between making public the fact that there are manifestations taking place in terms of false doctrine and demonic manifestation but that we should scrupulously refrain from naming names when naming the ministries who identify people who may at some point in time be prisoners of Satan and in bondage to false doctrine. Thus we need to concentrate where we are aware of false doctrine not of criticising and condemning the false doctrine, but of preaching the truth and where there are manifestations which we truly believe not to be of God. It would seem that we have an obligation to state that these manifestations are taking place but at the same time, that we should not dwell on them, we should not go into detail, we should not discuss them in depth, so should just register the fact that they are happening.

If we look also at Luke 8:16-18 *"No one, when he has lit a lamp, covers it with a vessel or puts it under a bed, but sets it on a lampstand, that those who enter may see the light. For nothing is secret that will not be revealed, nor anything hidden that will not be known and come to light. Therefore take heed how you hear. For whoever has, to him more will be given; and whoever does not have, even what he seems to have will be taken from him."* That Scripture seems to show us quite clearly that God will make those things which are secret known to those who need to know what is going on, but again, the point is that we should use such information responsibly.

Ecclesiastes 12:13-14 states: *"Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God and keep His commandments, For this is man's all. For God will bring every work into judgment, Including every secret thing, Whether good or evil."* Again, we see that God will bring every work into judgement, not man. We need to tie this into other scriptures which tell us not to judge lest we also are judged. Proverbs 25:8-10 states: *"Do not go hastily to court; For what will you do in the end, When your neighbour has put you to shame? Debate your case with your neighbour, And do not disclose the secret to another; Lest he who hears it expose your shame, And your reputation be ruined."* This passage appears to caution us against taking up any matter publicly, against conducting some form of trial such as has taken place in a number of occasions on television. We are expressly warned to debate our case with our neighbour. Can there be any doubt that if God does in fact bring another man's sin to light, then He requires you take up the matter privately with that man. If he refuses to hear you, it does not appear to be any particular basis for publicity. If we look at Deuteronomy 29:29: *"The secret things belong to the Lord our God, but those things which are revealed belong to us and to our children forever, that we may do all the words of this law."*

That Scripture refers specifically to the secrets of God being revealed to His people. It is available whether this applies to the secrets of the evil one. Certainly it is important information that must be made available within the Body of Christ, that information about what Satan is doing, but just as military intelligence is not publicly debated and is quietly analysed to the extent necessary to formulate a plan of attack, such information should surely not be broadcast such that the enemy can formulate new campaign plans. It occurs to me that if we look at the subjects which are currently under discussion in this series of teachings, much of what I am teaching here is derived from inference

of Scripture, is not explicitly dealt with. And it really does seem to me that the approach that God has adopted in the way he has designed Scripture is that the things which are necessary for us to understand the way that the enemy works are embedded in Scripture for those who have revelation by the Holy Spirit that they are not explicitly taught. In that fashion, it would seem that the scriptures are being preserved and are being made available without it being explicit what they are teaching and yet as we are lead into all truth by the Holy Spirit, we are lead into further truth by the Holy Spirit, we increasingly come to understand what the Scriptures are revealing about what is going on behind the scenes, what the enemy is doing and what God is doing. Out of this we can come to better understand the battle that we are involved in.

With certain limit, strategic information should be circumspectly disclosed as the Lord leads, but with the ongoing discussion of this information is to be avoided and that we should avoid naming the names of our brethren or others. It seems to me that we should never lose sight of the fact that the Lord is in command and that He is the commander-in-chief. We should never attempt to act on his behalf in the areas where he is much more competent to act. He has said that He will reveal the secrets. Surely we should leave that up to Him. Again, I refer you back to the passages that we read in 1 Samuel where we see that throughout the years that David was hunted and persecuted by Saul, David always left it in the hand of God to judge Saul and to make David king. And again, I cannot stress enough how important it seems to me that we should refrain from seeking to bring about judgement in the lives of others or speaking against them.

Surely if we really want desire to see Romans 8:14 manifest in our lives, for as many as are lead by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God. We will concentrate all our attention on seeking to become spirit lead by the spirit of God and then we will not need large amounts of published information for He will show us what we need to know. I can just extend this into the area of tale bearing, judging what I would refer to as specs in eyes, there are many Scriptures relating to that. Leviticus 19:16: *"You shall not go about as a talebearer."* Proverbs 11:12-13 says: *"He who is devoid of wisdom despises his neighbour,*

*But a man of understanding holds his peace. A talebearer reveals secrets, But he who is of a faithful spirit conceals a matter."* So we see a very clear scriptural injunction there, but it is not for us to go about talking about what is wrong in other people's lives to condemn them. Proverbs 18:8: *"The words of a talebearer are like tasty trifles, And they go down into the inmost body."* So we see it is very seductive to listen to tale bearing and stories and to actually observe them. Proverbs 20:19 says: *"He who goes about as a talebearer reveals secrets; Therefore do not associate with one who flatters with his lips."*

There are other Scriptures, Proverbs 26:17-26, but it really is important that we recognise that if we report sin [inaudible 0:50:27] third party whether they believe in writing that report will persists even if the next person who has sinned comes to a revelation of their sin, falls on their knees before God and abject and heartfelt repentance, receives forgiveness and sees his whole life turned around by God in an instant. If one of the spirits, reports of earlier sin, those reports will persists long after repentance and in the process, potentially cause many to sin and even to reject what God subsequently may choose to sovereignly do through that man or woman. In such cases, we may well find our words and opposition to God for the rest of our lives and find ourselves judged accordingly.

1 John 5:16 says: *"If anyone sees his brother sinning a sin which does not lead to death, he will ask, and He will give him life for those who commit sin not leading to death."* So very clearly if God shows us that a brother is sinning a sin that does not lead to death, we are to pray for them and God will give

that man life. Surely if we are all to make a point of praying and fasting for the deliverance of any brother whom we see in sin or error, instead of broadcasting that to the world or gossiping about it, we would see many more men and women of God restored to their calling without the losses that are currently taking place. Again, Galatians 6:1-5 says: *"Brethren, if a man is overtaken in any trespass, you who are spiritual restore such a one in a spirit of gentleness, considering yourself lest you also be tempted. Bear one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ. For if anyone thinks himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceives himself. But let each one examine his own work, and then he will have rejoicing in himself alone, and not in another. For each one shall bear his own load."*

Again, the message is very clear. We should take one another's burdens. We should help those who are overtaken by trespass. We should not think of ourselves to be something. We stand by the grace of God, but we have accomplished for good in our lives is by His spirit and His grace. We are unworthy of any reward or recognition. Truly, we should see ourselves as unprofitable servants as Luke 17 says. So likewise you, when you have done all those things which you are commanded, say we are unprofitable servants. We have done what was our duty to do. And perhaps the most important principle that we need to understand is to understand the full ramifications of what Paul said in 1 Timothy 1:15-16: *"This is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief. However, for this reason I obtained mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might show all longsuffering, as a pattern to those who are going to believe on Him for everlasting life."*

Paul says this right at the end of his life having in the early days of his writing, considering himself as being not the least of the apostles to being the least of the saints to bring the chief of sinners and we read also it is reported by Joyner in the book *"The Final Quest"* that Paul confirms that right at the end of his life, he came to realise just how sinful he was and how little he did what God had called him to do and how frequently he did what was contrary to the Word of God. As we see ourselves in this light, we should cease to be concerned for others to know about our brother's sin and increasingly see the [inaudible 0:54:10] for the grace go by. As we come to this place, surely the only thing that matters to us is the welfare of our brother. Surely we will pray and fast and intercede. We will seek the face of God for the right opportunity to approach the person concerned and for guidance on how to present the information at our disposal in a scriptural fashion that will set them free. If we dare to assume any responsibility at all, it will be to protect our brother from his sin, to stand in the gap and to seek his deliverance. And increasingly I am coming to understand just how much God wants us to understand if we see sin in another, but He has shown us that for us to do something about it. If He shows us that somebody is oppressed demonically, the only reason He shows us that so that we can do something about it. Not so that we can judge them or shun them or speak ill of them, but that we can help them.

Matthew 18:15-17 reinforces this case of specific sin against himself. *"Moreover if your brother sins against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone. If he hears you, you have gained your brother. But if he will not hear, take with you one or two more, that 'by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.' And if he refuses to hear them, tell it to the church. But if he refuses even to hear the church, let him be to you like a heathen and a tax collector."* How frequently has our conduct played a pivotal role when our brother sin against us? How frequently do we find miscommunication and misunderstanding at the root of disagreement? How much more will that apply with regard to a brother who we hardly know or about whom we see a video clip, hear of a verbal report, read a document, or see something that he has written that we do not agree with? Have we considered a situation of a person who genuinely sins against us and will not repent? We are instructed to treat him like a heathen and a tax collector. Many who call themselves by the name of

Christ take this as a licence to look down and despise the person concerned to speak evil of them and to shun them. However in the real world we are called by God to be courteous and to love our neighbours as ourselves even if they are not spiritually our brethren. We have to keep in mind Jesus' words in Luke 10:25-37, the story of a good Samaritan and we see that in response to the question who is my neighbour, Jesus says he who showed mercy on him is the neighbour. There can be no doubt from that that Jesus explicitly told us to treat all men as our neighbour. Taken in this context, the Scripture referring to treating neighbours as sellers or tax collectors and heathen does not mean that we should fraternise and socialise with them. Or even that we should indulge in idle conversation but it would certainly seem to indicate that we should always demonstrate the love of God to them no matter what they do.

Matthew 5:44 says: *"But I say to you, love your enemies, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, and pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you."* If we are told to do these things for those who are our personal enemies, how much more should we do these things for those we hardly know who love God but have fallen into Satan's hands. For all of these things, Luke 17:1-5 warns us that offenses will come. It says: *"It is impossible that no offenses should come, but woe to him through whom they do come! It would be better for him if a millstone were hung around his neck, and he were thrown into the sea, than that he should offend one of these little ones."* That passage is not cause for prideful condemnation of those through which offences come. It is caused with prayer and fasting and humble petition to Almighty God that your brother or sister be afforded the opportunity to repent and turn around.

In considering these things, it is also vital that we keep in mind that Isaiah 4:6 says my people are destroyed for lack of knowledge. If we recognise that people all around us and quite possibly ourselves are being destroyed for lack of knowledge and we come to understand how vulnerable each one of us is that none of us has anything approaching the understanding and wisdom of our Lord that we see through it [inaudible 0:58:58] that we will only gain the real understanding of the extreme level of own ignorance and sinfulness when we see him face-to-face. Surely whenever we see a brother or sister fall into some sin of which we have knowledge, we should cry out, *"Lord show me my error and my sin."* At the same time, we must keep in mind Luke 6:35-37 which cautions us to love our enemies and to judge not lest we are judged and condemn not lest we are condemned and forgive that we may be forgiven. Matthew 7:1-5: *"Judge not, that you be not judged. For with what judgment you judge, you will be judged; and with the measure you use, it will be measured back to you. And why do you look at the speck in your brother's eye, but do not consider the plank in your own eye? Or how can you say to your brother, 'Let me remove the speck from your eye'; and look, a plank is in your own eye? Hypocrite! First remove the plank from your own eye, and then you will see clearly to remove the speck from your brother's eye."*

Surely this Scripture should leave us in no doubt, we can any assist our brother to remove the speck from their own eyes if the plank is first being removed from our own eyes. If we are honest with ourselves and consider the revelations that God has given us over the years we will recognise how confident we were of our own freedom from error prior to the discovery of newly recognised sin and error. We are engaged in the like journey to become more like Jesus as we draw closer to him, sin that previously seemed irrelevant or was not even visible to us suddenly looms like a titanic iceberg right in front of us and we start to see our sin and our own righteousness as God sees it. Having experienced this even once, how can we ever again condemn a brother because we think that we can see something clearly that they cannot see at all. Brothers and sisters, such things ought not to be so.

Finally, Romans 14:4 sums it up as follows: *"Who are you to judge another's servant? To his own master he stands or falls. Indeed, he will be made to stand, for God is able to make him stand."*

In conclusion, I really pray that this has begun to open up a greater awareness of how God views these things. In summary, and I am speaking to myself as much as to my readers, it seems to me that in the event of realising that there is something wrong and exposing the works of darkness, it is not for us to dwell on them and to preach on them. It is for us to preach the Word of God to seek to become holy, to seek to know our own sin and our own deception and seek to be free of it and to recognise that Jesus died that we do not have to bear the consequences of our sin that we must recognise our sin and confess it to Almighty God, repent of it, and receive our forgiveness if we are not to give Satan massive footholds in our lives. If we draw close to God in this way, we truly may walk unharmed from the fiery furnace or the lion's den, but if we focus on Satan and what he is doing in the world, we will fall into his nest and may not even survive.

In cases where we discern error or sin in the Body of Christ and people that we hardly know, I think we should accept that if God shows us the error that we may fast and pray for them that we approach them privately and personally at the time that God appoints and do whatever else God ordains that we may be an instrument for honouring and deliverance. It is not for us to broadcast their sin and their error to others or to publish it on paper, the radio, TV or the internet. Rather we should seek a revelation of the level of our own sin and deception and seek to have planks removed from our own eyes. Then we should stand back and get out of the way so that God can do what He chooses in response to our spirit led prayers. If we have not done this, the chances are that we are the one with a greater sin and that we should be going to our brother and confessing our sin and tale bearing, repenting and asking for His forgiveness. In the case of sin against you personally, it is clear that we should go to him, the person who has sinned against us privately as scripture dictates and if we cannot resolve our differences, to walk away quietly to forgive and leave it to God or to get on what has God has called us to do and not to slander our brother or tell others about his sin against us.

Finally, as I was completing the documents to which I have been referring, Lord placed the following in my heart. Above all else, fix your gaze on Jesus, look for in his wonderful face and recognise how infinitely far you are from being even vaguely like him. Stop concerning yourself with fixing up the world, except where he has clearly called you to speak on a particular topic, at a particular time and place and to particular people and get on with seeking to know him more nearly and see him more clearly day by day. Seek a revelation of the verse which says there are many led by the spirit of God, these are sons of God. Sacrifice all that you have that you may possess this treasure and this deep secret of the most high God. Seek to know His ways to be His friend to come into the secret place of the most high. Do whatever it takes for you to return to your first love, to know Him through His word, to come into His presence and to know His gentle guiding hand and His favour and every single area of your life, every single moment, of every single day. There is no sacrifice so great that it should inhibit any one of us from seeking after this. That is what eternity is about. Why not seek it in this life? It has very, very, very few of us come anywhere close to this on a consistent basis. This truly is to love the Lord, your God with all your heart, all your soul and all your mind and all your strength and to love your neighbour as yourself. There is no other way. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, King of Kings and Lord of Lords, saviour of the world.

## 02 03 Judgment in this Life -- God's Objective -- Revival

This morning I am going to continue with this series on judgement begins in the house of the Lord and the implications of the judgement and over the next few weeks, God willing, I hope to talk more about the actual manifestations of the judgement in the world today, what the scriptures have to say about that, and also how we respond to the judgement, how we draw closer to God and how we become more holy and sanctified. However, before I go into that, I would like to spend some time today talking about what is God's objective, what is God seeking to accomplish in us through tribulation, through judgement in the house of the Lord in this age and where is He taking us.

If I can just refer you to three passages of Scripture, 1 Peter 4:12-14: *"Beloved, do not think it strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened to you; but rejoice to the extent that you partake of Christ's sufferings, that when His glory is revealed, you may also be glad with exceeding joy. If you are reproached for the name of Christ, blessed are you, for the Spirit of glory and of God rests upon you. On their part He is blasphemed, but on your part He is glorified."* So again we see a reference here to a trial and the indications are that it is a fiery trial and to an extent that we will partake of Christ's sufferings, that his glory may be revealed in us. And it seems to me that the part of the trial which is not directly related to partaking of Christ's sufferings relates to the judgement in the house of the Lord that we spoke about last Saturday as distinct from the portion of the trial which is opposition and persecution for the name of Christ. But it does seem to me that in some fashion the manner in which we respond to the persecution and the nature of the trial will be dependent on the sin in our lives at that time. If we can go to John 5:19-24: *"Then Jesus answered and said to them, 'Most assuredly, I say to you, the Son can do nothing of Himself, but what He sees the Father do; for whatever He does, the Son also does in like manner. For the Father loves the Son, and shows Him all things that He Himself does; and He will show Him greater works than these, that you may marvel. For as the Father raises the dead and gives life to them, even so the Son gives life to whom He will. For the Father judges no one, but has committed all judgment to the Son, that all should honour the Son just as they honour the Father. He who does not honour the Son does not honour the Father who sent Him. Most assuredly, I say to you, he who hears My word and believes in Him who sent Me has everlasting life, and shall not come into judgment, but has passed from death into life.'"*

We see a reference there in verse 20 that God will do greater works than those that Jesus had demonstrated to his disciples and elsewhere in Scripture we find the passage where Jesus says that his disciples will do greater works than he did, because he goes to be with his Father. And it seems to me that some things have to happen before the Body of Christ does greater works than Jesus did. It certainly does not seem to me that overall around the world we are seeing Christians walking in the fullness of the anointing of Jesus as he walked the Earth and we are certainly not seeing much in the way of the dead being raised and consistent miracles of the nature that Jesus performed. We certainly are seeing such manifestations in limited cases in certain ministries, but even in those ministries it would seem that they are not doing greater works than Jesus.

In the same passage we see reference that judgement has been committed to the son and yet in other passages we see the son as the advocate. So we find some intellectual challenges in understanding exactly what the word is saying here with regard to judgement. In the last verse that I quoted, verse 24, we see that he says he who hears my word and believes in Him who sent me has everlasting life and shall not come into judgement that is passed from death into life. Again, there are teachings which seem to build on that verse of Scripture to suggest that believers are beyond judgement but elsewhere in Scripture we find reference to judgement beginning in the house of the Lord and this whole issue



of judgement is an area where it certainly seems to me that there is enormous complexity in terms of our limited understanding of what the judgement of God is about and it seems there may be a judgement which leads to death as distinct from a judgement of those who are passed into the kingdom of God. But again, that is not really the essence of the message that I have this morning. I just want to demonstrate that the glory and the judgement are closely associated with one another.

We turn to 1 Peter 1:6-19 we find it says: *"In this you greatly rejoice, though now for a little while, if need be, you have been grieved by various trials, that the genuineness of your faith, being much more precious than gold that perishes, though it is tested by fire, may be found to praise, honour, and glory at the revelation of Jesus Christ, whom having not seen you love. Though now you do not see Him, yet believing, you rejoice with joy inexpressible and full of glory, receiving the end of your faith—the salvation of your souls. Of this salvation the prophets have inquired and searched carefully, who prophesied of the grace that would come to you, searching what, or what manner of time, the Spirit of Christ who was in them was indicating when He testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow. To them it was revealed that, not to themselves, but to us they were ministering the things which now have been reported to you through those who have preached the gospel to you by the Holy Spirit sent from heaven—things which angels desire to look into.*

*Therefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and rest your hope fully upon the grace that is to be brought to you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; as obedient children, not conforming yourselves to the former lusts, as in your ignorance; but as He who called you is holy, you also be holy in all your conduct, because it is written, 'Be holy, for I am holy.' And if you call on the Father, who without partiality judges according to each one's work, conduct yourselves throughout the time of your stay here in fear; knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot."*

We clearly see in verse 17 that the Father judges without partiality according to our works and what we have done and therefore we should conduct ourselves in fear of the judgement, recognising that we are redeemed for our sin by the blood of Christ. Earlier on we see that after the sufferings of Christ that glories would follow and then we see earlier in verse 7 that the genuineness of your faith being much more precious than gold that perishes that is tested by fire they be found to praise, honour, and glory at the revelation of Jesus Christ. If we accept the revelation of Jesus Christ in his fullness not yet taken place, then it would seem that the testing by fire is something that it could be argued that we are currently experiencing to a greater or lesser extent. It would seem that this is the fire that burns out the flesh, burns out the dross in our lives that we may be found to praise, honour, and glory at the revelation of Jesus Christ that we may overcome to the end.

Out of these passages, there is some indication of a correlation between judgement and the blessings of God and I now want to take this further and just develop the thinking around that. The teaching that I am going to give here is based on some notes that I made after reading a book entitled *"The world aflame, guidance from the greatest revival yet and the greater one to come"* by Rick Joyner published by Whitaker House in 1993 and there is a summary of these notes available. What I am seeking to demonstrate is that there is a close correlation between the coming judgement and revival and quite possibly that revival is the greatest revival that there will ever be. It is a revival that will usher millions of souls into the Kingdom of God. It is a revival in which the believers will indeed do greater works than Jesus did during his time on Earth. In all of this, there is a close interrelationship which certainly seems to me to be demonstrated quite convincingly by this book. So the balance of my teaching today is going to make very little reference to Scripture. It is going to draw on what seems

to me to be a very anointed document produced by Joyner. This teaching needs to be taken in conjunction with those which God willing, will follow and those which are preceded it in order to see the context and the scriptural basis of what is being taught today.

I purchase the book very shortly after writing a document on 2 Thessalonians 2:7, when he who now restrains is taken out of the way, which God willing, will be the basis of my teaching in the next couple of weeks and that paints a picture of great tribulation to come and great judgement to come. But then on reading the *"World Aflame"* I really found that there was a vivid expectation and grounds for a great hope that amongst all the distraction and the prophecies of tribulation and doom, there is also a basis for enormous hope that the birth of a massive outpouring of the Holy Spirit leading to revival and restoration on a magnitude such as man has never experienced was near at hand. It seems to me that as much as we would like to be specific about the dates and times that relate to the fulfilment of these prophecies, we will all be waiting expectantly until such time as it happens, but it does seem that there are grounds for it to happen sooner rather than later.

The book describes at length the progression of events immediately before and during the Welsh revival. There are accounts of thousands streaming into towns where the revival was breaking out of men and women broken by the revelation of this and coming to the cross to gratefully receive the salvation. There are reports of spontaneous prayer meetings and praise and worship in the streets and the coal mine, factories, offices, and homes. Meetings frequently started hours before advertised time as people gather to be sure of a place in the hall and the spirit moved in his [inaudible 0:13:36]. Meetings that started in the early evening regularly went on to well after midnight, often to early morning, only to be taken up new meetings.

People spontaneously marched downtowns and then the entire town came to salvation. The spirit moved with such power that entire meetings were conducted slowly at the leading of the Holy Spirit and thousands of people saying the same hymn that [inaudible 0:14:02] sometimes singing songs that have never been sung before. On occasion, entire town cease to trade for several days at a time the spirit moved with power. Jails were empty and policemen had nothing to do. The pubs and gambling houses closed their doors or become houses of prayer and football heroes were so busy preaching the gospel that matches were cancelled. The football stadiums were empty. Blind ponies were unable to take direction from their handlers since their only language that the ponies knew were cursing and suddenly their handlers ceased to curse. The schoolteacher was laid to the Lord by the four-year-olds who put up their hands and simply asked with all sincerity, miss do you love Jesus? Much of the preaching and praise and worship was led by youngsters in their teens. It was a time of incredible power and grace and the entire nation came to know Jesus Christ as real and powerful.

From Wales the flames of revival spread around the world to every corner of the globe. [inaudible 0:15:02] revival was ignited by spark from Wales. It is a profoundly moving and powerful account of God moving sovereign in His way, in His time using totally yielded vessels who offered him unquestioning obedience. What follows I have endeavoured to extract those components of the message which seem to me to be important in understanding how we can avoid obstructing revival and if possible, align ourselves more fully with the will of God in order to facilitate the coming of revival. In this message as I have said, I am not going to quote the Scripture, but my objective is simply to encourage you to seek God with all your heart, with all your soul, with all your mind and with all your strength to assist in giving birth to that which seems to me is at the very portal of the Earth waiting to break at any time.

Now is the time for greater awareness of the coming tribulation and of the current spiritual turmoil in the church, but it is also a time of travail in the spirit as God gives birth to that outpouring of His spirit, which is necessary for His plans to be finally accomplished on Earth. That outpouring may start tomorrow. It may take years, but I have no doubt that now is the time for us to enter into travail for the delivery of this new gift from God.

In the teaching that follows, I will simply cite extracts and headlines out of the book in order to really just demonstrate what to me seems to be some critical issues that we need to take into account as we seek God for revival on this Earth. I am just going to take the extracts as I have documented them without very much comment and I would urge anyone listening to this tape to take the trouble to try and get hold of the book if at all possible.

One of the key thoughts that come out of the outset is that it is profanity to seek glory at God's expense. We must give God all the glory and seek no glory for ourselves. We should have a healthy fear of man's planning as it frequently gets in God's way. We should recognise that the [inaudible 0:17:28] the spirit blazes he chooses and it is not for us to plan ahead for revival. God's true servants know we are not to speak, when to be silent, and let God move and let God speak. I was incredibly touched and moved with regard to the role of the children. God used the children. He even used four year olds to lead people to Christ and we must become like little children in order to be used by God in revival. My heart at the time might develop an intense burden that we must seek revival for the sake of the children who have brought into a world of such corruption and distraction. For their sake if none other, I would urge everyone to cry out and to seek revival.

We must learn to carry the arc of God's presence correctly and reverently and know that it is only after agonising intercession that power comes. It was mentioned that the book *"With Christ in the School of Prayer"* by Andrew Murray had a profound impact on Even Roberts, the person that was used by God to start this revival. The fire of the revival was started by the words: I love Jesus with all my heart spoken by [inaudible 0:18:55]. It is important to realise that Roberts had been faithfully seeking God for 13 years before revival broke out. And immediately after it broke out, the cry became: Bend me Lord. It seems to me that we have to set aside all our preconceived notions and allow God to use us as He would before revival will come.

There were immediate setbacks to this small beginning but they persevered and then came the breakthrough and with that an intense burden to cast off sin. At the outset of the revival, Roberts was preaching four great tenants. Firstly, all sin must be confessed to God and repented off. The church has to be cleansed. The Lord's bride would be without spots so there will be no room for compromise with sin. If there is anything in our lives about which there is even doubt as to whether it is good or evil, then cast it off. Secondly, there must be no pride between the believer and God, therefore forgive. Thirdly, we must obey the holy spirit, do what the spirit prompts you to do. Prompt [inaudible 0:20:13] and questioning obedience to the spirit is required if we are to be used by Him. Fourthly, there must be public confession of Christ to save you. This is not just a one-time incident after our salvation experience or baptism. For the Christian, it is a way of life. Roberts kept prophesying until the lights came on. But a vital element of the message was that revival depended on the acceptance of one messenger. It is suggested that many revivals have failed because God's church did not accept the messenger that God sent and therefore revival was never born. It is suggested that if Roberts had not been accepted in his home church when he did things contrary to tradition, there would have been no revival.

We are cautioned to bless those that God sent whether we like them or not. A point is made that Paul was born to defend his recognition by God as an apostle. It is not for a man to decide whether a man is a prophet or an apostle if God anointed that man, we see the Prophet in the name of a Prophet, [inaudible 0:21:31] the Body of Christ is a terrible form of spiritual pride. At the same time, there is a fine balance between wrong men, exalting men and receiving them properly. We are not supposed to humble others. We are told to humble ourselves. God will humble others. When Robert's mother grieved the Holy Spirit, he did not comfort her. He sought to help her to repent, which we often in this age went to seek to comfort people who have sinned, rather than to help them to repent. In the loops of the revival, God told Roberts to withdraw and not speak to anyone. God's ways are not our ways. During the week that he withdrew he made the following notes. One, do everything that the Lord commands, do not strike the rock as Moses did. Two, bring even the smallest things to God in prayer before you act. Do not make a pact with the Gibeonites as Joshua did. Three, total obedience. Four, give God the glory. It seems to me that those are four critical talents that any believer should take to heart.

To note that the spiritual realm is much greater than the natural realm and yet we focus all our attention on the natural. In the revival, the son, Jesus, was lifted up. People have been taught to death. They need to experience Jesus and their revival is about people experiencing Jesus. We need to experience Jesus. We need to become aware of our need to experience Jesus and to seek him. The cross was the centre of the revival as it indicated by the following recorded prayer of Eben Roberts, which captures succinctly the central emphasis of elevation of the revivalists, evangelists.

Lord Jesus, help us now through the Holy Spirit to come face to face with the Cross. Whatever the hindrance may be, we commit the service to Thee. Put us all under the Blood, Oh, Lord, place the Blood on all our past up to this moment. We thank Thee for the Blood. In the name of Jesus Christ, bind the devil this moment. We point to the cross of Christ. It is our cross and we take it.

Reveal the Cross through the Name of Jesus. Oh, open the Heavens. Descend upon us now. Tear open our hearts; give us such a sight of Calvary that our hearts may be broken. Oh Lord, descend now; open our hearts to receive the heart that bled for us. If we are to be fools - make us fools for Thee. Take us, spirit, soul and body. We are thine. Thou hast purchased us. Reveal the Cross for the sake of Jesus - the Cross that is to conquer the world. Place us under the Blood. Forbid that we should think of what men may say of us. Oh speak - speak - speak. Lord Jesus. Thy Words are 'wine indeed': Oh reveal the Cross, beloved Jesus - the Cross in its glory.

Reign in every heart for the sake of Jesus. Lord, do Thou help us to see the dying Saviour. Enable us to see Him conquering the hosts of darkness. Claim victory for Thy Son, now Lord. He is worthy to have the victory. Thou art the all-powerful god. Oh, claim victory. We shall give all the glory to Thy Name. No one else has the right to the glory but Thee. Take it, Lord. Glorify Thy Son in this meeting. Oh, Holy Spirit - do Thy work through us and in us now! Speak Thy Word in power for Thy Name's sake. Amen - and Amen!

Love, sufferings, death, and resurrection of Jesus were the theme of every meeting, every ceremony, every prayer and became of passion of every heart. People were not being converted to a new doctrine, a denomination of personality or even the new movement, they were converted to Jesus. Being born again means a profound comprehension of [inaudible 0:25:28] condition. In this revival, a nation was born again. At the same time, the workers must pace themselves and learn to rest. It is vital that we equip the workers before the revival. There will not be time to equip them once it comes.

As [inaudible 0:25:46] was sparked from Wales, Jesus continues to be born in stables. When we embellish the gospel, we destroy its power. On the other hand, a holy desperation precedes new beginnings. Most of the great revivals in the world have come before judgement. Revival has preceded major wars. There was revival in the USA before each of their civil wars. The Welsh revival preceded the First World War. By extension it would appear that if we are truly about to see judgement poured out upon the Earth, as I have taught in the last few weeks and will teach in the next few weeks, God willing, we will see the glory of the Lord poured out first. In this case, those who are anticipating rupture before tribulation may in fact be anticipating revival before tribulation.

Revival starts with searching out sin in oneself, not in others. We must give what is born back to God. Holy desperation births, revival. Desperation because of sin. Revival also leads to restoration of truth. It is vital that we become conscious of the fact that there is massive error and deception, heresy preached through most if not all, church of Jesus Christ today. And therefore with revival will come a restoration of truth. Greatly it is revival have seldom endeared more than five years, some have only lasted for one. Revival renews existing churches and restores lost truths.

The trouble with the Welsh revival began as soon as people started to resort to form. It is important that we recognise that Jesus honoured the old order but at the same time, the old order must not dictate the shape and the form of revival. We should seek the recovery of truth without discord, but at the same time we must recognise that Satan will oppose the recovery of truth. We must bend to the will of God, but first we must intercede for intimacy with him. True revival is born out of love for the Lord. There is a distinction between prayer for judgement and prayer for revival and we need to know that difference. God is moved far more by relationship than by form. The Lord gives his people space to make mistakes. If we walk by faith, we are seldom absolutely sure. Again, I believe that that is a fundamental principle that we need to understand. Just walk by faith, not by sight. We cannot walk by rules. We have to walk by the spirit and the more we walk by the spirit, the more people will be offended by people who do things which are not conventional or traditional. We need to respect God efficiently to allow Him to move as He sees fit and we need to give His people space to make mistakes.

We need to accept that we will make mistakes and we need to be willing to make mistakes in order to serve God more faithfully. It certainly seems to me that it is better to go out by faith and make a mistake than to do nothing because we are afraid of making mistakes.

The book goes at some length into the issues surrounding idealism versus revelation. It makes the point that idealism can kill revival. At the end of the day, the man singularly appointed by God remains accountable for the revival that has been sparked through him for which he was the instrument. It is alleged that the Welsh revival died prematurely because Roberts listened to an idealistic woman who said that he was becoming too prominent and therefore he completely withdrew from sight and involvement. If that report is correct, then he broke one of his fundamental principles of taking everything to God and pray first and he allowed Satan to use criticism to kill the newborn child because its earthly Father had raised it to a point where it could stand alone.

How easily we permit our intellect and respect for persons to get in the way of questioning obedience and application that the very revelation that God has given us personally. It is important that we recognise that criticism and accusation is one of the enemies for most weapons. It is also important to recognise that the apostles and elders did not gain influence by exposing darkness, but by manifesting light. For that reason, we must hold fast to that which is good. We should also not try and uproot the trees prematurely. We should recognise that love is passionate. Emotions do reveal us, but

they should not control us. The difference between spiritual pioneers and spiritual settlers is distinct. The church needs both. Those who will break new ground and those who will look after the ground that has been broken. We need to prepare for our revival. We need to cast our crowns, our own ideas and objectives down before the throne of God. God does not anoint the vision. True unity requires that all doctrinal differences must ultimately be removed. This requires the removal of all the false doctrines and heresies which are rife in the church today. Those who have truth must share it. But God will water the seed and nurture its growth. We cannot force it.

Questions should be the most free and live people on Earth. And yet on the other hand, control is one of the greatest enemies of revival. Satan uses intellectual truths to control. God gave us freedom of choice. We have a choice whether to obey or not. Worship must enable our hearts to touch God's heart. We have the capacity to choose and that means from time to time we will make mistakes. The Holy Spirit through and with the Bible, not man or the Bible without the Holy Spirit is our teacher.

We must live by every word that precedes present tense out of the mouth of God, and the Word of God requires radical obedience, uncompromising, unquestioning obedience. We cannot compromise believer's freedom to disagree on non-core issues. And we must recognise the freedom to do what is not specifically banned. God wants us to use our own judgement, not to indulge in pharisaism and tell people what they cannot do based on our personal prejudice.

The book makes a telling case for relating the current teachings of hermeneutics and pharisaism. The sum of the Word of God is truth and we must be very careful about building doctrines on individual Scriptures. True Christianity promotes extraordinary liberty for the personal quest for God's truth. At the same time, a spiritual man does not need a contract and a carnal man cannot keep one. Another point which to me is absolutely vital out of this particular report and which I believe to be totally scriptural, the Lord made it easy for His disciples to leave and difficult for them to stay but it is vital that the church today comes to learn that. We need to be led by the law of love. We need to recognise that which is highly esteemed by men is the testable in the Sight of God. We must go to the field to do the work that God has called us to do despite the fact that the field is full of tears. We must join together in harvest and in tribulation that we should flee to the love when men try to exalt us.

We must recognise that increasing chaos and revival are coming, but not yet the rapture and we should build on Jesus. I was profoundly moved by this book, so much of what was written confirmed my own thoughts and amplified them enormously. It seems clear to me from this that we are even further to go before we truly know how to be lead by the spirit of God every moment of every day and everything that we do. It also seems clear to me that very few men can assist us in such a quest. We must present to God as never before. We must travail as never before. We must ask to know Jesus heart on every matter. We must grieve when he grieves, rejoice when he rejoices, and experience his wrath when that is appropriate. We must not lean to our own understanding and we must spend far more time in his word than ever before. We must ask him to show us our sin and we must recognise that our flesh may be polluted by demonic influences, which must be identified and cast out. We must ask for and receive with joy the crucifixion of our flesh on a daily basis and we must fix our eyes on Jesus as never before.

May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you. In the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, King of Kings and Lord of Lords, saviour of the world.

## 02 04 Manifestations of Judgment -- Lying Wonders, etc

Today I am going to carry on with the series on judgement in the house of the Lord and the manifestation of that judgement. Two weeks ago we talked about the principles of judgement in this life for believers and last week we talked about the end consequence of the process that is currently underway, which was revival throughout the world. Today I want to talk about some of the manifestations of the judgement that is taking place and some of the science that are associated with that and the Scripture that I would like to base my teaching on is in 2 Thessalonians chapter 2 starting at verse 7: *"For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming. The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness."*

So the coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan. It does seem that the lawless one is quite possibly a human being, it may be even the beast, but it is also at the instigation of Satan. It seems to me that in interpreting the scriptures we have to be very, very careful about applying our personal perception of what the interpretation of the Scripture actually signifies. And really what I want to concentrate on today is that the coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, in other words, Satan will be working with all power, science, and lying wonders and all unrighteous deception among those who perish because they did not receive the love of the truth. And a large part of the teachings that God willing will be presented in the months ahead revolve around issues surrounding the science and lying wonders and more particularly the issues of truth and if you like at the other side, the question of demonic heretical teachings, false doctrines, in the church of Jesus Christ. But in addressing the current subject in terms of the coming judgement in the church on the Earth, the judgement which it seems in many respects is already underway and in terms of the fulfilment of certain end-time prophecies where it is debatable whether one can take an absolute view on whether the Scriptures are being fulfilled absolutely today or whether there will be greater fulfilment in the days to come. But certainly my personal impression is that as we discussed a couple of weeks ago that there has been a release of the forces of Satan on the Earth which is greater than there has been in any other generation and that release of the forces of Satan is in consequence of the unrighteous conduct of the Body of Christ over the last 2000 years of the apostasy of the falling away starting a few hundred years after crucifixion of Christ.

The wide range of heretical teachings that are being practised and where we are now slowly seeing the restoration of truth but where why many Christians believe that all truth is being restored, the reality is that even if we take a simple example, such as the fact that Sabbath is in reality Saturday, not Sunday, even that truth is not being restored corporately to the Body of Christ and there are numerous other areas which God willing, will be addressed in the weeks and the months ahead.

What I want to touch on today is some of the specific instances which are being reported, I am not going to go into a lot of detail. And particularly in the light of what I taught last week in terms of dealing with the developments in the church. I am not going to name the names of any individuals. I believe it is not for us to go around passing judgement on people and labelling them on the basis of second or third hand reports, but the objective of my teaching today or the message today is simply to sensitise

you to some of the issues that are occurring at the moment and to ask you to consider the possibility that these things are the fulfilment of the scriptures in terms of lying wonders, in terms of apostasy, in terms of doctrines of Demons and so forth.

There are two main threads to that which I want to share today. The first is in terms of developments in the church in the Body of Christ and the second is in terms of developments in the world around us and how those interact. I do not want to go into a lot of detail particularly with regard to the issues in the church, I believe it is for each believer to observe and to discern what is going on. But just a few headlines of things that are being reported, we are observing in visits that we have made to various congregations that increasingly messages are being delivered which we have great difficulty in correlating to our understanding the Word of God that appear to use Scriptures out of context and which certainly in our view are in many cases very, very wrong doctrine. We are seeing many instances where individual well-known church leaders locally and internationally are being praised and lifted up from the pulpit and esteemed and revered to the level which it seems to us is taking glory from God and giving glory to human beings, which is not scriptural. There are messages being preached which continue to seek to persuade Christians that they will be so-called rapture before there is any trial or any tribulation as you all have gathered from the message a couple of weeks ago. My understanding is that that is not the case and God willing, next week I will be teaching in more detail based on 2 Thessalonians 2:7 to develop an understanding of why I believe that it is scriptural that the Body of Christ will go through massive judgement, massive persecution, massive tribulation, before the Lord returns and certainly that borrowing perhaps some really, really righteous individuals who may be taken out of the world before the tribulation and even that I consider to be unlikely. The Body of Christ will endure massive persecution of a magnitude that they have never experienced before.

Some years ago I was in the Holocaust Museum in Jerusalem and the Lord very clearly said to me that the magnitude of the persecution and the torture and just the absolute horror of what was done to the Jewish people by the Nazis in the Second World War is a shadow of what the church will experience in the years ahead and I will address that later on in this teaching, but the point here is that many are teaching that Christians do not have to fear that they should have a good time because they are going to be out of here any day now and that there are videos which present situations where Christian aircraft pilots vaporise out of the aircraft leaving the aircraft to crash where people just disappear in the midst of conversations and there is no understanding in the world of what has happened.

I have great difficulty in seeing that Scripture indicates that is going to happen. Yes, they say that we will be called up to be with the Lord in the air but that is at the final end of the age, not before this tribulation. Again, I will address that in more detail in due course. There are many other teachings in terms of the saying that people once are saved are always saved. There is very little reference to telling people that they should work out their salvation with fear and trembling that they need to live righteous lives, that they should eliminate sin in their lives, that they should seek to draw closer to God. The message seems to be that once one has made a decision for Christ, one is absolved from further responsibility to draw close to God. Whereas it seems to me there is a very clear series of Scriptures which indicate that amongst others in Hebrews 6 that people can lose their salvation and if we look at the report in *"The Final Quest"* we see clearly also as I discussed a few weeks ago that the throne in heaven is far emptier than it should have been and therefore we must conclude that millions of souls have gone to hell and from there the words that are spoken by the Lord Jesus and in that series of visions which seems clear that there are many who could have been there who had the truth and who did not make it. And the fact that many of the people who are interviewed by Joyner are only led by the grace of God, even though they had powerful ministries is further indication that many,



many Christians, many who have called on the name of Christ are not in Heaven today because they have not come to the end.

Certainly on the other hand there are scriptures which indicate, and again, Joyner's vision indicates that even if a Christian does not do the Will of God that they constantly trust God for their salvation, they may make it to Heaven but with weeping and wailing and gnashing of teeth and that they will be cast into the outer darkness in Heaven to the very outermost limits of Heaven and that only they will be saved but there will be no works, there will be no credit in their account for them to do anything else but to scrap into Heaven by the Grace of God. Again, there are many teachings which fail to my way of thinking to make people aware of the fact that there is an intense obligation to seek Christ and to seek God and to draw closer to God and certainly we have found it increasingly distressing to listen to messages of this and other natures.

Certainly there does seem to be an upsurge in that form of false teaching in the Body of Christ revival now. We have also observed that praise and worship tends to focus more and more in many congregations on me and I and what we seem to think a song that seems to be fairly popular at the moment. It says, *"Jesus do know how much I love you"* and since Jesus knows all of our thoughts and all of our hearts, it seems to me that is not a song which lifts up the name of Jesus. It is not a song that praises him. That is a very carnal, very self-centred song. There seems to be an increase in that type of praise and worship, rather than lifting up the name of God and giving Him all the honour and all the glory, for that is the only way that we will come into His courts and enter His gates.

There are reports, we have not seen them personally, but we have heard a number of reports of a variety of what certainly to us seemed to be counterfeit miracles. Gold dust allegedly being rained on people's heads, people having amalgam or some of the fillings converted to gold. We found that very difficult to understand how that would be of God. If God is going to bless somebody financially, He is hardly going to rain gold dust on them. It is not something which is financially negotiable. It is not something that they can turn into many in a convenient way and there are numerous reports over the years of people who are living by faith being blessed financially by the Lord in innumerable different ways where gold dust just does not seem to be scriptural to us.

Likewise, the reports of fillings being turned to gold actually happens as I understand is that an amalgam filling is more stable and a more hygienic filling in the sense that it contains certain elements which prevent corrosion on the interface between the tooth and the filling and that the natural factor that gold filling while it may be ostentatious and has some status associated with it is a technically inferior filling to an amalgam filling. Therefore again, that does not seem to make senses as to why the Lord would convert another filling to a gold filling. There are reports that dentists had to remove those fillings and replace them because they have not proved to stable and therefore it does seem to us that it is a counterfeit miracle. It seems to be very carnal that does not improve even if the gold filling is stable. It is difficult to understand how that will improve the quality of life of the believer other than from a status or ego point of view and we knew well that God is not concerned with that sort of thing. Therefore it seems to be a pointless and an impractical miracle and therefore it does not seem to us that it brings glory to God.

Moving on from this, we are also aware of a variety of reports of manifestations in the Body of Christ which certainly from our perspective seem to be demonic. There are video footage doing the rounds of a very well know, very well-respected American best preacher who has been in the ministry for decades ministering at a convention and coming down from the pulpit and hissing would seem to be the best way to describe towards people in the front of the congregation and these people slouching

in their chairs and slithering off their chairs, seemingly almost arriving like snakes and those manifestations as best as we understand it are fairly typical of the manifestations that are associated with some of the far Eastern serpentine demonic spirits, the Leviathan spirit and the kundalini spirit and other spirits which have a serpentine origin which manifests physically in the oppressed people's bodies as serpentine, snake like behaviour, hissing, sticking out the tongue, flicking in and out, bodies riving and slithering on the floor. The particular video in which we have seen that footage is put up by another major ministry in the United States which seeks to condemn that behaviour and say that it is not of God and I believe that they are quite correct that it is not of God, but I believe that as you would gather from the teaching last week that it is not scriptural for them to be naming those ministries for them to be showing video footage of those individuals. We do not know if shortly after the time when that video footage was shot whether that person perhaps came to recognition that they were in error, may be was delivered and has continued with the Ministry of God and by speaking against them in that way, one is almost certainly touching the Lord's anointed and doing them harm. And in that process, doing oneself harm and opening the door for the devil to bring spirits of pride, etc., on us.

So it is important that we recognise that that snake like manifestation is not of God and that it is demonic that if we see that manifesting in a meeting we should flee from it. We should not stay there to see what is going on. If we are called apostolically or prophetically to speak correction to the party concerned, we should do that privately, one on one, according to Scripture, not in public, not on television. If we call to make other people aware of the fact that it is a counterfeit miracle that it is demonic, we should do it without naming ministries, without naming names, without showing photographs of the people that are manifesting it. Seemingly at the same meeting, there is a footage of another well-known internationally respected Christian leader performing gestures with his body which have a very strong sexual connotation in conjunction with other men in the group, creating an impression of simulated homosexual intercourse. Again, it is important to understand that behaviour is ungodly. It is not of God. It is almost certainly a demonic manifestation. The party concerned may well not even be conscious of the fact that he is caught up in that. Somehow he has been taken prisoner by the enemy as described so graphically in *"The Final Quest."* The behaviour is not right. The party needs to be prayed for. He needs Ministry. He needs deliverance, but it is not for us to judge or condemn him. It is just to recognise that that was happening is not of God and if appropriate to minister the person privately and if that is not one's calling, to intercede for them or simply to walk away and to keep praying for them. But not to get involved in touching the Lord's anointed and tearing down ministries.

The other video footage of supposed spiritual drunkenness in another congregation elsewhere in the world where the person concerned is slouched over the pulpit in a slurred voice saying that the Angels are pouring out wine. Again, this certainly does not appear to be any basis in which God would cause people to behave in that fashion and one must conclude that is also deception, that it is also demonic. Again, those people need to be prayed for. The cracks of a message with regard to all of these issues is firstly we must understand that in every situation like that it is demonic, it is false, it is sent to trap individuals. We should also understand that the enemies are only going to prevail in those areas where there is sin in a person's life. It gives the enemy a foothold. We should also understand that will only happen if that situation or a situation has been brought before the Judgement Seat of Christ and if a sentence has been passed at the request of the accuser or the prosecutor and God has granted permission for that oppression, deception, whatever to take place, again, this is not to say that that person is to be judged. They have been judged. Judgement has been passed and judgement is demonic oppression in some shape or form.

It is for us to see, A, to avoid falling into the same trap and to avoid judging, B, to minister where appropriate, C, to pray as the Lord leads for those people. The critical thing to realise at this time is there is great deception and that this is all a manifestation of the judgement that is taking place. Those people who have sin in their lives are being judged in the house of the Lord in this age and it is for each one of us to look but for the grace of God guide and to earnestly seek God to show us what is wrong in our own lives. The appropriate prayer there would be *"Father, in the name of Jesus I ask you to show me the level of my present deception and to show me how to deal with it."* Another prayer which I believe is vital in this age for every believers, *"Father, in the name of Jesus, I ask you to judge me severely, correct me harshly that I may serve you more perfectly, in Jesus name."*

If we truly are seeking to serve God in this age, we must put ourselves before the Judgement Seat of Christ, we must bring ourselves to judgement. We must judge ourselves and we must recognise that we are not able so much as to judge ourselves, let alone to judge others and therefore we should come before the Judgement Seat of Christ and voluntarily bring ourselves to judgement and ask God to judge us severely and harshly and correct us if we truly wish to serve God to the end of this age and to overcome to the end.

If I turn to the happenings in the world and this is a progressive extension of the message over the last few weeks, there are many reports that there are allegedly as many as 45 concentration camps that have been built in remote places in the United States. There are allegations of a computer system in the United States planned to program to issue once of arrest of as many as a million people in the United States, including many high-profile Christian leaders. There are reports of two concentration camps in South Africa, one in the Eastern Cape and one in the East strand, another one in the Eastern Cape, alleged to extend to 11 stories underground, alleged to include electric [inaudible 0:25:08] and gas chambers and incinerators capable of killing and burning 3000 bodies a day. The allegations around that there is a global conspiracy which aims to destroy at least 2 billion people on the planet in the next few years, people who are regarded as being ideologically religiously or otherwise undesirable, a shadow of the whole programmes with Hitler just on a much larger scale and on a national scale as part of a global cleansing, as part of the new world order.

Again, it would be very, very difficult to substantiate these as being absolutely but it is alleged that there are books, that there are people in high-profile positions in the United Nations and elsewhere, which are alleged to have these agendas and this is why the concentration camps are being built and there is reason to believe that the Christians and the Jews will be a primary focus of that in the sense that clearly anything of that nature has to be Satanic of origin and therefore the objective will be to destroy all those who are serving the Lord Jesus Christ in any shape or form or close to serving the Lord Jesus Christ. It would seem that and this may be something that we will get into in subsequent weeks, but it would seem that a careful reading of Scripture would indicate that firstly it is very clear that Satan and his cohorts will be thrown into the pit for 1000 years and then ultimately they will be consigned to hell for eternity and it would seem reasonable to conclude that from Satan's perspective, the only way that he can prevent this happening is if he can destroy every single believer on this Earth so that if there is no human being who is serving the Lord Jesus Christ at the date at which Satan is due to be thrown into the pit, then Satan will have been victorious.

Consequently it seems perfectly reasonable to conclude that Satan must have an agenda to seek to destroy every Christian. Any unbeliever who has spoken the Word of God will be quite certain that Satan will not succeed but we should be prepared for the fact that we are going to face persecution, we are going to face tribulation. Those who have given Satan any legal right to attack them will almost certainly be cast into concentration camps, persecuted otherwise in some shape or form and that

Satan will do everything he can to get those people to backslide to blaspheme to renounce the salvation and go to hell. It is absolutely vital in this age that we prepare ourselves for these things and that we seek to draw close to God and that we seek to be judged before that time comes. It does seem to me and I believe this quite profoundly that if we deal with the sin in our lives beforehand and if we are found righteous before God such that Satan is not enable to come before the Throne of Judgement and obtain any judgement against us, we will be able to walk unharmed through the coming trial and tribulation and persecution in the way that Daniel was cast into the lion's den and the mouth of the lion was stopped in the way that Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego were cast into the fiery furnace and that they walked around and Jesus joined them in the fire and they came out and the people who threw them into the fire were killed and they came out and they close did not even smell of smoke and were not even cinched. I believe that those were righteous men who had gone before the Throne of Grace continually seeking to deal with all sin in their lives and we can only hope to be found worth to escape such persecution if we have dealt with the sin in our lives and I believe that every Christian today should be seeking to be in that place. We should be seeking to be given a place where we can be used to perform miracles in the name of Christ and lead people to salvation.

We should be seeking to walk out of the gas chamber untouched and lead all the operatives in that concentration camps to salvation. We should be looking to be instruments of revival and salvation under the conditions of the worst possible conditions of repression and torture and all that that is associated with it. And we should encounter all trial when we fall into various trials and temptations. If we look up more broadly at the worldly situation, there is a document available on the so-called Y2K computer problem. To simply put, there is absolutely no technical reason for the Y2K computer problem. It is either gross negligence or it is deliberate forethought. There are various reports of programmers who 40 years ago foresaw the problem and were told not to fix it in US military and government software and major computer corporations around the world to a very simple technical problem, the reasons that are given for existence have no logical pragmatics substance to them, that is addressed in this document on Y2K.

It does appear that the whole Y2K computer thing is massive hype as part of a systematic plan to bring about uncertainty. Our suggestions that if 10% of the banks in the United States collapses as a result of the so-called Y2K bug, the world economy will collapse. Those of you who have any knowledge of computers will know that it is not difficult to create a situation where a computer appears to collapse and to blind that on anything you like. There are indications that part of this world conspiracy the New World order has a view that they should bring about the collapse of the world economy that they should eliminate the value of all existing currencies and that they should then issue a new currency and that currency would be either completely electronic form and which seemingly be associated with microchips implanted in the wrist or the forehead of individuals. If one turns to the Scriptures in Revelation which refer to the mark of the beast, most translations say that it is on the wrist or on the forehead. The King James version which I believe to be the correct vision says that it will be in the wrist or in the forehead.

Consequently it seems plausible to postulate a collapse of the world economy resulting from supposedly a Y2K or similar related computer so-called bug leading to a situation in which people are required to receive this microchips. Other reports suggest that the microchips can be tracked by satellite and further reports suggest that the microchips are capable of being controlled by satellite in such a way that either extremely aggressive or extremely submissive behaviour can be brought about in the bodies of people who have those microchips implanted in them. As far as I understand it, it is perfectly technically possible for this to happen today and as I understand that this fairly widespread

introduction of those microchips taking place on a pilot basis in the United States right now. So it is conceivable that we are heading into the era of marked beast at a rapid pace.

Other reports indicate that there will be certain ceremonies on the fifth of the new millennium, [inaudible 0:33:55] for example, a primitive [inaudible 0:33:56] where a certain people who are allegedly world leaders, who are allegedly members of Satanic orders, secret societies, will allegedly issue in the millennial reign of Lucifer of Satan. There are reports of other meetings in other places of the world with similar objectives. In all of these cases, it is very difficult to determine with absolute certainty whether in fact this is true, whether there are emotional reports by people who are looking for the fulfilment of prophecy. I believe each one of us must take their own view on whether this is valid or not and respond accordingly, but it is clear to me that it is not right for us to go around Satan hunting, devil hunting, witch hunting, whatever you want to call it, we should be taking lesson from these developments and we should be seeking to draw closer to God. We should be seeking to hear his voice more clearly. We should be seeking to be [inaudible 0:35:10] for honour and not for dishonour. We should be seeking to be cleansed of all unrighteousness and we should be seeking to be ready for whatever comes our way. We should be seeking to be in a place that no matter what the torture, no matter what the persecution our faith will carry us through our relationship with the Holy Spirit and the anointing on our lives will be such that we will be able to face that persecution and count all joy that we will not turn to the left or the right, that we will not backslide, that we will not deny the Lord, that we will not blaspheme, that we will go however far we have to go that we will count it a privilege to be martyred for the name of the Lord Jesus Christ and for the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ.

I pray that those who listen to this message or read this message will be challenged to draw closer to God. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in Jesus name. Amen.

## **02 05 Rapture to Escape coming Judgment? -- Prepare for Tribulation**

Today I am going to carry on with the series on judgement and coming tribulation. I have made the point in a number of occasions in the previous weeks that Scripture says that judgement begins in the house of the Lord. I suggested that judgement has in fact already commenced in the house of the Lord. I have suggested that the judgement is currently manifesting in the form of a spiritual tribulation, but that it will be followed with a physical tribulation in the years to come. There seemed to be grounds to believe that the Scripture is indicating that that may be quite imminent. What I would like to do today is to headline some thoughts on the Scripture in 2 Thessalonians 2:7 which says *"Only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way."* This teaching is in response to another teaching which I have difficulty correlating with Scripture in which it seems to me it is quite possibly not the correct interpretation of this passage of Scripture and what I will seek to do is to present, what seems to me to be the correct interpretation of the Scripture or more or less the correct interpretation and front that to work through some of the implications of what these scriptures mean to us in these days. There is a fairly extensive document of over 50 pages which sets out in more detail the message that I am going to give this morning.

If we turn to 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7 in the New King James it says, *"And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed in his own time. For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way."* The teaching has prompted me to do the research, which gave rise to what I am about to share with you. It goes as follows: That he

who now restrains is the Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit dwells in born-again believers and that the holy spirit is restraining Satan through the born-again believers and therefore when he who now restrains is taken out of the way signifies that when the Holy Spirit is taken out of the way, the born-again believers will be taken away. In other words, the so-called rapture will take place. And since the restraining must be removed before the tribulation can occur, the rapture will take place before the tribulation. I think you already see from the teachings of the past few weeks that I would question whether that is in fact the correct interpretation of that passage of Scripture. But before I do that, we need to ask ourselves why is any such interpretation be the one that I have just presented or the one that I am about to present of any interest to anybody and for that matter, why should you can sin yourself with the teaching that I am in the process of giving today.

The first point is that if that interpretation is correct, then those who are truly born-again can expect to escape the tribulation and if this interpretation is incorrect, then they can expect to have to endure the tribulation and should be preparing themselves against the eventuality that tribulation could come in shortly. I truly believe that if someone believes that they will escape the tribulation, they may well prepare themselves differently to if they believe that they will have to endure the tribulation and in considering this, let's consider first of all 2 Peter 1:20-21 which says: *"Knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation, for prophecy never came by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit."* So it is only interpretation of Scripture which is God's interpretation, in which case [inaudible 0:05:09].

Furthermore we see in Matthew 23:8-13 Jesus said, *"But you, do not be called 'Rabbi'; for One is your Teacher, the Christ, and you are all brethren. Do not call anyone on earth your father; for One is your Father, He who is in heaven. And do not be called teachers; for One is your Teacher, the Christ."* Verse 13, *"But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you shut up the kingdom of heaven against men; for you neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in."* So it is quite clear that we should rely on the spirit of truth to lead us into all truths. In John 14:15-31 Jesus says, *"If you love Me, keep My commandments. And I will pray the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that He may abide with you forever—the Spirit of truth."* In verse 26 he says, *"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all things that I said to you."* Here we see that Jesus refers to the spirit of truth and the Holy Spirit as being a helper whom he will send to teach us all things.

So we are clearly not meant to rely on men to interpret Scripture and for that reason whatever I may share with you in these teachings, as I believe of God it is your responsibility to discern that which I say which is of God and that which may be error or worse. Each one of us is human, each one of us is a vessel of clay and we are filled with flaws as the Lord perfects us. And so while I am not sure what I may say it may be of God, it may be things that creep in which are not of God and it is up to each person who listens to this teaching or reads the transcript to discern whether what I am saying is correct. Having said that I must also say that I truly believe that what is being taught is of God.

So also take account of 1 Timothy 4:1-3 which says *"Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron."* So the Scripture I have touched on before and I have touched on some of the things that are happening in the church which are believed to be doctrines of Demons given by deceiving spirits and again, if my interpretation with the interpretation that was just presented in this teaching is more or less accurate then the other teaching to which I referred will appear to be a doctrines of Demons since it clearly is warning believers of a different set of circumstances and in my opinion could give rise to a situation in which believers are

less than diligent in seeking God and seeking to become holy and sanctified and set apart to His service in a manner which will allow them to be cast into the fire and emerge unscathed or to be cast into the limestone and emerge unscathed. If we are not of that place of holiness and sanctification, if we are being judged for the wrong and the sin in our lives, we can expect the tribulation to be much more difficult to overcome through.

If I go to the whole passage of 2 Thessalonians 2:1-12, it states, *"Now, brethren, concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our gathering together to Him, we ask you, not to be soon shaken in mind or troubled, either by spirit or by word or by letter, as if from us, as though the day of Christ had come. Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition, who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God."*

*Do you not remember that when I was still with you I told you these things? And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed in his own time. For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way. And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming. The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness."*

So we see in verses 10 to 12 that those people who believe the lie or conversely who did not receive the love of the truth may be condemned. This is an agreement with the scripture cited before. Could it be that those who refer to hear are those who believe the lie about the coming of the lawless one. In other words, those who speak falsely about the circumstances and science associated with coming of the lawless one would certainly see that this is possible. If we consider also Proverbs 21:28 as translated in the New International Version it states, *"A false witness will perish, and whoever listens to him will be destroyed forever."* Revelation 21:8 states *"All liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death."*

There are various other Scriptures which indicate that the preaching or teaching of false doctrine or lies will lead to the destruction of those who utter such teachings as well as those who listen to and presumably accept such teachings. Accordingly there would seem to be good grounds to test this teaching carefully before we accept it.

The next question that I would like to consider is whether it is possible that this teaching could be incorrect. Let us now consider whether on superficial inspection there are grounds to consider the possibility that some elements of this teaching but the restrain is the Holy Spirit that is removal, involves the removal of believers and therefore the believers will be raptured before the anti-Christ is revealed and the tribulation occurs could be incorrect.

If we look again at 2 Thessalonians 2:1-12 we see first of all in verse 1 concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our gathering together to him in verse 3.2, *"For that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition."* Verse 4: *"So that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God."* Verse 7: *"Only He who now restrains"*

*will do so until He is taken out of the way." Verse 8: "And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming."*

If we look at the six points that I have just highlighted out of that passage, we see that Paul is indeed writing concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our gathering together to him. In other words, Paul is writing about the rapture the gathering together Jesus select to meet him in the clouds. We see also verse 3 that he states that that day referencing the day referred to in verse 1 that gathering together of his elect to him. In other words, the rapture will not come unless the falling away comes first and the man of sin is revealed. It will appear clear that the anti-Christ must be revealed before the rapture. Verse 4 continues to define the anti-Christ and states further *"So that he sits as God in the Temple of God showing himself that he is God."* It would appear that this is referring to the appearing of the anti-Christ in the Temple of God, which is very widely accepted as being three and a half years after the start of the tribulation.

There are more scriptures on this which I will talk about in due course. The Scripture goes on to state that only he who now restrains will do so until he is taken out of the way. The implication is clear that he who now restrains will do so until he is taken out of the way. Closing the emphasis on until it would appear that it is possible that the taking out of the way would be a precursor to the lawless one sitting in the Temple of God. This could mean immediately before the appearing in the temple, where it could mean that the restraining ceases sometime earlier. For example, this might take place three and a half years earlier. It does not appear to be a definitive indication in the Scripture of this being an event that takes place instantaneously prior to the appearing of the lawless one in the Temple.

The next verse goes on to state *"Then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming."* The revealing of the lawless one certainly follows the taking out of the way of him who restrains that is indicated subsequently that seems to be grounds to consider that the saints will be persecuted after the revealing of the lawless one. Again, this appears to call the interpretation into question. Therefore it appears on a relatively superficial inspection of the passage of Scripture from which the phrase *"When he restrains is taken out of the way"* comes that the interpretation of [inaudible 0:15:09] may be incorrect to a greater or lesser extent. So it would appear that there are valid grounds to further investigate this interpretation.

We then look at the timing of the tribulation in support of what I have said. Let's look first of all at Daniel 7:24-27, *"The ten horns are ten kings Who shall arise from this kingdom. And another shall rise after them; He shall be different from the first ones, And shall subdue three kings."* In verse 25: *"Then the saints shall be given into his hand for a time and times and half a time. 'But the court shall be seated,*

*And they shall take away his dominion, To consume and destroy it forever. Then the kingdom and dominion, And the greatness of the kingdoms under the whole heaven, Shall be given to the people, the saints of the Most High. His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, And all dominions shall serve and obey Him.'" Apologies, I skipped the first half of verse 25, which says: "He shall speak pompous words against the Most High, Shall persecute the saints of the Most High, And shall intend to change times and law. Then the saints shall be given into his hand For a time and times and half a time."*

The phrase *"time and times and half a time"* is reasonably widely interpreted as being a year plus two years plus half a year, i.e. three and a half years and this in turn is interpreted as being the first half of



the tribulation. This in turn is considered to correspond with the anti-Christ sitting in the temple of God as I mentioned a minute ago.

If you look at Daniel 12:9-13: *"And he said, 'Go your way, Daniel, for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end. Many shall be purified, made white, and refined, but the wicked shall do wickedly; and none of the wicked shall understand, but the wise shall understand. And from the time that the daily sacrifice is taken away, and the abomination of desolation is set up, there shall be one thousand two hundred and ninety days. Blessed is he who waits, and comes to the one thousand three hundred and thirty-five days. But you, go your way till the end; for you shall rest, and will arise to your inheritance at the end of the days.'"* It has been suggested that the abomination of desolation may also correspond to the Antichrist sitting in the Temple of God as in 2 Thessalonians 2:4 in which it will appear that those who wait to this time will be blessed and there would be a period of 1290 days after that time, a period of 43 months or slightly over 2.5 years, however, there is also a period of 1335 days, which is approximately 44 and a half months. It is not clear what the distinction is between these periods in this message and it does not seem to be material to the issues raised in this teaching. This in turn then appears to correlate with Daniel 9:26-27: *"And after the sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off, but not for Himself; And the people of the prince who is to come Shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. The end of it shall be with a flood, And till the end of the war desolations are determined. Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate."*

This suggests that the one who makes desolate shall appear on the wing of abomination in the middle of seven weeks being interpreted as being after three and a half years. This again seems to correlate with the Antichrist sitting in the Temple of God in 2 Thessalonians 2:4. If we look at Revelation 13:1-18, just picking up a few key verses, in verse 5 referring to the Dragon which is Satan or the Antichrist *"And he was given a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies, and he was given authority to continue for forty-two months."* In verse 7: *"It was granted to him to make war with the saints and to overcome them."* So we see that the beast was authority to continue for 42 months, which is also three and a half years and seemingly widely considered to correspond to either the same period of three and a half years or the period of three and a half years following the period of the anti-Christ in the temple of God. Either way, there is a clear reference to a period of intense manifestation of evil with evident physical persecution and tribulation and this persecution takes the form of war with the saints in which he, the Antichrist overcomes them. It is certainly a period of intense persecution and tribulation in the saints, and this must surely takes place before they gather together to Jesus in the air.

Revelation 14:9-13 takes this further: *"If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives his mark on his forehead or on his hand, he himself shall also drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out full strength into the cup of His indignation. He shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb."* Verse 12: *"Here is the patience of the saints; here are those who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus. Then I heard a voice from heaven saying to me, Write: 'Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord from now on.' 'Yes,' says the Spirit, 'that they may rest from their labours, and their works follow them.'"* This passage seems to make it quite clear that the mark of the beast will be associated with this period and that the saints are required to be patient in keeping the Commandments of God and the faith of Jesus and that they will be blessed if they die in the Lord from now on. Presumably if they are to worship the beast, it must have appeared it would also seem that in order for them to worship the beast, he would be in

the temple so that they would indeed believe that he is God. It seems to be quite clear that the saints must endure through this period and that a particular blessing awaits those who died during this period without renouncing their faith. It therefore seems that there are grounds to question the interpretation and to consider that the rapture would not take place before the tribulation.

Just as the messiah, the word worship in the phrase if anyone worships the beast and his image and received his mark on his forehead or on his hand in Revelation 14:9 is the word [inaudible 0:21:48] which Strong's defines as meaning to kiss like a dog licking his master's hand to fond or crouch literally or figuratively prostrate oneself in homage to do reverence or to adore. [inaudible 0:22:06] defines it as to kiss the hand to award one in token of reverence among the oriental especially the [inaudible 0:22:13] to fall upon the knees and touch the ground of the forehead as an expression of profound reverence. In the New Testament by kneeling or prostration to do homage to one or make obeisance whether in order to express respect or to make supplication used to homage shown to men and beings of superior rank to the Jewish high priests, to God, to Christ, to heavenly beings, to Demons, which would not necessarily be inapplicable to the gestures which would be necessary to bring a microchip implanted in the hand or forehead into contact with the scanning device, an automatic teller machine for example.

Let us consider who or what is the restrainer. The line of thought set out initially states that the restrain is the Holy Spirit. How do we know this? If we look at 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7 we see: *"And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed in his own time. For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way."* The interpretation is that the restrain is the Holy Spirit. However, verse 6 refers to what is restraining. Since we understand the Holy Spirit to be a person, one might expect to read who. On the other hand, in verse 7 the word 'He' capitalised to indicate God is used in the King James version. Let us examine some other translations. In the New American Standard Version, which usually capitalises words referring to God including the word 'he' 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7 refers to 'he' in lower case. But the rest of the translation is similar to the New King James. So the translators of the New American Standard were not that confident that that 'he' referred to God, in the King James Version which does not capitalise 'he' we see that verse 6 says: *"And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time. For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way."*

Here the word in verse 6 is again 'what' but the restraining is not translated withholdeth and in verse 7 the restrain is translated letteth. In the RSV and the NIV 'what' is used in verse 6 and verse 7 and the NIV translates restrains as hold back. It does seem that there may be some grounds to enquire whether the 'what' of verse 6 and the 'he' of verse 7 really is the Holy Spirit. There does not seem to be any doubt as to the action that takes place. The word translated restrain, letteth, withholdeth is [inaudible 0:25:07], which relates to holding out and in the document that I referred to, all the words containing that particular word [inaudible 0:25:20] are listed but it will be apparent that there are wide variety of translations of that word.

The phrase that he be taken is translated from the word [inaudible 0:25:34] which is Strong's 1096 and that does not seem to indicate specifically that that could be God. In document referred to, there is a whole range of analysis of the original Greek. So it appears there is nothing in the original Greek which attempts to associate that which restrains directly with the Holy Spirit. In fact, on casual inspection it would appear that nowhere else in Scripture it is the word so translated in any manner that is associated with this Holy Spirit, or for that matter with he. In so far as I am not knowledgeable in Greek and I therefore recognise the possibility that I may have missed something it does seem to

me that there are grounds to suggest that the words what and he at best do not definitively donate God or the Holy Spirit and the worst may indicate some rather creative interpretation based on the preconceived idea what the passage is seeking to convey.

Either way, this does not seem to be a particularly strong basis to suggest that the restrain is the Holy Spirit or the Holy Spirit had believed this. Again, the restrain does refer to God or the Holy Spirit. Let us consider some other Scriptures where the English word restrain or its derivative appears to relate to God. Isaiah 48:9 states: *"For My name's sake I will defer My anger, And for My praise I will restrain it from you, So that I do not cut you off."* God restraining his anger in this verse would certainly be consistent with the saints of 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7. It may even be that it is this very restraint which is to be removed in terms of 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7. Isaiah 63:1: *"Look down from heaven, And see from Your habitation, holy and glorious. Where are Your zeal and Your strength, The yearning of Your heart and Your mercies toward me? Are they restrained?"* Here the idea is of God restraining or holding his zeal, his strength, the yearning of his heart, his mercy. This is the reverse of the previous verse. He is restraining himself from helping his people but the implication would seem to be congruent with 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7. Isaiah 64:12: *"Will You restrain Yourself because of these things, O Lord? Will You hold Your peace, and afflict us very severely?"* The idea here is again of God restraining himself thus affecting his people very severely.

This is the reverse of the interpretation of 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7 which suggests the removal of restraint exposes God's people to affliction. In this case, the idea is one of God restraining himself from preventing the affliction. We see other verses in Scripture which give us similar interpretations. So we have a number of verses where the concept of restrain applies to God restraining things to achieve particular ends. In Isaiah 48:9 in particular it would seem to be consistent with 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7 relating to God no longer restraining his anger against the sin in the world, and in the process, permitting the full magnitude of sin to be revealed to those whose eyes are opened. 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7 therefore appears to relate to Isaiah 48:1-22, which goes in some detail I won't read today to the possibility that God is going to execute judgement on Israel if we just select a few verses from Isaiah 48:1: *"Hear this, O house of Jacob, Who are called by the name of Israel, And have come forth from the wellsprings of Judah; Who swear by the name of the Lord, And make mention of the God of Israel, But not in truth or in righteousness. For they call themselves after the holy city, And lean on the God of Israel; The Lord of hosts is His name: 'I have declared the former things from the beginning; They went forth from My mouth, and I caused them to hear it. Suddenly I did them, and they came to pass. Because I knew that you were obstinate, And your neck was an iron sinew, And your brow bronze, Even from the beginning I have declared it to you; Before it came to pass I proclaimed it to you, Lest you should say, 'My idol has done them, And my carved image and my moulded image Have commanded them.'"*

It certainly would seem that the Scripture has the potential to apply to the age in which we live and specifically to the period in that which 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7 refer. In fact, is it not possible that the passage in 2 Thessalonians is actually referring to those who call themselves by the name of Christ who have done wickedly and sinned persistently and who have permitted the spirit of the Antichrist to take up residents in the Temple of God, which is the body of the born-again believer. 1 Corinthians 6:15-20 states and specifically verse 19: *"Or do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and you are not your own?"* Surely this Scripture demonstrates that notwithstanding the fact that the Holy Spirit is indwelling within the Temple of our bodies, is it possible for us to defile that temple by joining it to a harlot. Surely the history of the first and second Temples clearly shows that idols of Demons who were brought guiding to the Holy Spirit

and the temple before the Spirit of God left. Jesus has said that he will never leave us or forsake us. Hebrews 13:5 says: *"Let your conduct be without covetousness; be content with such things as you have. For He Himself has said, 'I will never leave you nor forsake you.'"*

Surely then his spirit will not leave us until we commit that sin which results in us losing our salvation and returning from eternal life to eternal death, and there is indeed such sin as set out in Hebrews 6:1-8 and specifically 4-6: *"For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted the heavenly gift, and have become partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, if they fall away, to renew them again to repentance, since they crucify again for themselves the Son of God, and put Him to an open shame."* Hebrews 10:26-27 says: *"For if we sin wilfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and fiery indignation which will devour the adversaries."*

1 John 5:16 says: *"There is sin leading to death."* 1 Peter 4:12 says: *"Beloved, do not think it strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened to you."* In verse 17: *"For the time has come for judgment to begin at the house of God; and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the gospel of God? If the righteous one is scarcely saved, Where will the ungodly and the sinner appear?"* This passage refers to the fiery trial which is to try you. Could this in fact not be referring to the tribulation that has been described in other Scriptures reference previously. Clearly the Scripture indicates that the judgement will begin at the house of God. It is not the very tribulation to which is referred above possibly the culmination of the judgement referred to in verse 17. This verse also makes it sound the righteous one is scarcely saved. Accordingly, how can we presume to believe that those who are righteous will be spared the tribulation and be raptured before things get really right? Let us now consider the question if the restrainer is indeed God, must the restrainer be the Holy Spirit. I have already suggested that while the interpretation, which triggered this teaching suggests the restrainer the Holy Spirit, I have already suggested that the text itself offers no basis to conclude that the restrainer is in fact God or the spirit of God or the Holy Spirit. However, in the previous section I have suggested that it is quite possible that the Lord God might indeed be restraining his anger and judgement until at no point in time this judgement might well in fact begin with those who call themselves by the name of Christ. And might even be directed primarily towards them. It seems however that there is nothing in a specific text to even remotely connect the restrainer of 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7 with the Holy Spirit. It would seem that the assumption in the interpretation in section 1 is that God moves only by the Holy Spirit on the Earth.

Following is a number of scriptures which contain the word '*split*' capitalised in the King James Version by the translators to indicate an association with God. Matthew 10:20, spirit of your Father, Matthew 12:28, cast out Demons by the spirit of God, John 14:17, the spirit of truth, Acts 5:9, the spirit of the Lord, Acts 19:2, did you receive the Holy Spirit when you believed, 1 Corinthians 12:3, therefore I make known to you that no one is speaking by the spirit of God caused Jesus a curse and that no one can say that Jesus is Lord, except by the Holy Spirit. This passage is spirit of God and the Holy Spirit in the context of two distinct spiritual issues, not necessarily the same spirit of God. Romans 1:4: *"And declared to be the Son of God with power according to the Spirit of holiness."* Romans 8:2: *"The Spirit of life."* Romans 8:9 again refers to the spirit of God and the spirit of Christ. Verse 11 refers to the spirit of him who raised Jesus from the dead. Verse 14 says: *"For as many or as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God."* This passage seems to suggest that it is the spirit of Christ that makes a believer born-again, not the Holy Spirit. There are other Scriptures that follow, which appear to support this. Hebrews 10:29 refers to the spirit of grace. Galatians 4:6 says: *"And because you are*

*sons, God has sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying out, 'Abba, Father!' Therefore you are no longer a slave but a son, and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ."*

Philippians 1:19: *"For I know that this will turn out for my deliverance through your prayer and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ."* 1 Peter 1:11 says: *"Searching what, or what manner of time, the Spirit of Christ who was in them was indicating when He testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ and the glories that would follow."* Interestingly this refers to the spirit of Christ indwelling so-called Old Testament prophets. 1 Peter 4:14 says: *"If you are reproached for the name of Christ, blessed are you, for the Spirit of glory and of God rests upon you."* 1 John 4:6 refers to the spirit of truth and the spirit of error. 1 John 4:1-5 says: *"By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God."* This passage clearly refers to every spirit. Does this not suggest that there is more than one spirit that is of God? Could this not mean that there is more than one spirit of God? Revelation 19:10 refers to the spirit of prophecy. Revelation 4:5 says: *"And from the throne proceeded lightnings, thunderings, and voices. Seven lamps of fire were burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of God."* Revelation 5:6 also refers to the seven spirits of God. Revelation 1:4-5 refers to the seven spirits who are before his throne and refers to Jesus Christ distinctly separately. Here three references to the seven spirits of God, clearly in addition to the Father and Jesus Christ his son, it is unclear whether the Holy Spirit is one of the seven spirits or in addition to them. However, it could seem that this is not particularly relevant to this discussion.

In the document that referred to, I cite further references in support of this. It is surprise there to say that there appears to be more than enough scriptural evidence to suggest that even if the restrain is the spirit of God, it is not necessarily the holy spirit and there is in any even absolutely no basis to suggest that the believer would be raptured if that particular spirit of God were to be withdrawn from the Earth. Let us now consider why God would remove his people before the tribulation. The train of thought presented at the opening of this teaching suggests that would remove His chosen people by the rising to meet Jesus in the crowns rapture in order to spare them the suffering of the great tribulation. The terms applicable are defined in Matthew 24:21-33. Just reading selected verses: *"For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world until this time, no, nor ever shall be."* Verse 29: *"Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other."*

It seems absolutely clear that the great tribulation will proceed the gathering together of his elect rapture. It would seem that this passage of Scripture on its own should be sufficient to fit the interpretation presented earlier but hopefully this serves to provide a clear basis for the use of the term tribulation in the concept of a rapture being a gathering of the elect. However may qualify for that exalted term to join the Lord Jesus Christ in the clouds. There are a few other passages of Scripture which seem to have particularly relevance to this topic. Genesis 6:1-14, but if we look specifically at verse 5 and verse 8, *"Then the Lord saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord."* In Genesis 7:11-24 referring to the start of the flood, *"On the very same day Noah and Noah's sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth, and Noah's wife and the three wives of his sons with them, entered the ark. And all flesh died."* On the very same day that God destroyed all life on Earth, God entered the ark. In addition, Noah had to labour by faith for a considerable length of time to construct

the ark, presumably in a situation of some hardship and ridicule. There is certainly no basis to presume that God will deliver those who overcome to the end, other and at the last minute.

Likewise, the Lord only remove Lot in his family from sudden moments before He destroyed the city. The Angels said in Genesis 19:15: *"Lest you be consumed in the punishment of the city."* Verse 22: *"Hurry, escape there. For I cannot do anything until you arrive there."* In verse 26 we read: *"But his wife looked back behind him, and she became a pillar of salt."* Clearly his family were removed at the very last instant before destruction came, not before the full magnitude of the sin had been accomplished. At the same time, there is indication that a truly righteous man can dwell in the midst of spiritual turmoil and distraction and would be protected by the Grace of God. This passage certainly does not give grounds to believe that a rapture will take place until the very last minute. In similar fashion, the Israelites were in bondage in Israel for many years before God removed them. And they would require to endure the first of the plagues with the Egyptians. 2 Peter 1:13 to 2:22 provides further insight in this topic.

2 Peter 2:2: *"And many will follow their destructive ways, because of whom the way of truth will be blasphemed. By covetousness they will exploit you with deceptive words. For if God did not spare the angels who sinned, but cast them down to hell and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved for judgment; and did not spare the ancient world, but saved Noah, one of eight people, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood on the world of the ungodly; and turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes, condemned them to destruction, making them an example to those who afterward would live ungodly; and delivered righteous Lot, who was oppressed by the filthy conduct of the wicked for that righteous man, dwelling among them, tormented his righteous soul from day to day by seeing and hearing their lawless deeds, then the Lord knows how to deliver the godly out of temptations and to reserve the unjust under punishment for the day of judgment."* Verse 20: *"For if, after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and overcome, the latter end is worse for them than the beginning."* Here we clearly see that believers will return to their sin and lead others astray as well.

We also see referencing to Noah, Lot and others as a clear type of the end-time believer who endures to the end. Can there be any doubt that we must each endure much testing and persecution to refine us that we may endure to the end unless we have already sanctified ourselves and sought righteousness earnestly before the tribulation begins in earnest. God protected Daniel from the lions and Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego from the fiery furnace because they refused to bow the knee to Nebuchadnezzar idol. Surely, this is a type of a beast of revelation and surely God will not deliver us from the text. James 1:2-3 states: *"My brethren, count it all joy when you fall into various trials, knowing that the testing of your faith produces patience."* If we are told to count it all joy, why would God deliver us. Surely there can be no doubt that God has no intention of intervening to prevent His people having to go through the tribulation. He wishes to afford us the opportunity to store up treasure in Heaven to compensate for all our carnality and disobedience in this life, rather than permitting us to suffer in hell for eternity because of our ignorance and unwillingness to learn from His word and upright for insistence on our own private interpretations of His word. And even if we do not suffer in hell for eternity, we may well have a part in the second death and we may well find that we have not overcome and that we are not rewarded as we would have in the life to come.

Consider Genesis 5:23-24 states concerning Enoch: *"So all the days of Enoch were three hundred and sixty-five years. And Enoch walked with God; and he was not, for God took him."* Hebrews 11:5-7 states concerning Enoch: *"By faith Enoch was taken away so that he did not see death, 'and was not found,*

*because God had taken him,' for before he was taken he had this testimony, that he pleased God."* Jude 1:14-15 states concerning Enoch: *"Now Enoch, the seventh from Adam, prophesied about these men also, saying, 'Behold, the Lord comes with ten thousands of His saints, to execute judgment on all, to convict all who are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have committed in an ungodly way, and of all the harsh things which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him.'"*

Surely this has relevance today. It is suggested that by certain teachers that the fact that Enoch was translated before the flood and that he was apparently very righteous and a man of great faith indicates that the rapture will take place before the tribulation. However the Living Torah modern Jewish translation of the Five Books of Moses by rabbi Aryeh Kaplan Published by Moznaim publishing corporation in New York and Jerusalem presents a graphic and type two entitled from Adam to Moses on page 23 of the book from which the following is extracted. The fable is presented in the document but of significant that Enoch was translated in the year 987 after the birth of Adam whereas the [inaudible 0:47:57] died in the year 1658 which is the year of the flood and so we see that there is a gap of about 700 years between the time of Enoch's translation and the flood, therefore Enoch was not translated to escape the flood because of his righteousness.

If Enoch had not been translated, he would have been 1036 years old at the time of the flood. So we see that this teaching does not appear to be logical based on a good analysis what appears to be a reliable analysis of the date of the flood and the date of Enoch's translation. So there appear to be no reasonable basis to suggest that Enoch offers a precedent to those hoping to escape tribulation. I now like to pose the question has the restrainer already been removed? There are a number of scriptural analysis which indicate that certain events will happen 3000 years after the founding of Jerusalem by David, 2000 years after the birth of Jesus Christ in Bethlehem of Judah. [inaudible 0:49:14] in the Julian calendar you may not be aware that it appears fairly conclusive that this date was the great day of the feast of Tabernacles, which was Friday, October 4, 1996. The basis of this interpretation is outside the scope of this discourse and it is not material to conclusions reached here. However, given that no visible event happened on that date and that certain aspects of interpretation of prophecy were [inaudible 0:49:42] this does not necessarily mean that something did not happen in the spirit on that date. You might [inaudible 0:49:48] and ponder and pray over the question, was the restrainer removed on October 4, 1996? I do not have an answer to this. What I can say since late 1996 I have seen great apostasy in the church. There are numerous reports of levels of demonic activity and word manifestations in the church which I talked about last week and diverse other things which certainly could lead one to consider the possibility that we are already in the midst of the events we were told in 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7 and the verses that follow.

If that is in fact the case, there are serious grounds to get serious with God and to seek holiness at all costs. So in conclusion, I find no basis to suggest that the restrainer referred to in 2 Thessalonians 2:6-7 is the Holy Spirit or that the removal of the restraining involves the removal of believers and therefore the believers will be raptured before the Antichrist is revealed and the tribulation occurs. To the contrary, many scriptures are offered which suggest that it is entirely to be expected that the believers are expected to endure the great tribulation. There are grounds to suggest that in fact the great tribulation is all about judgement of the church in order to produce a spotless bride and we should look forward to the tribulation with expectant hearts and great joy at the privilege of being granted the opportunity to die for him if necessary. Thus we may bring glory to his name and in so doing spread the gospel of peace to the entire world.

As I was completing the first draft of the document which I have referred, the Lord led the following on my heart which I conveyed as it came to me. Matthew 13:41-43 states: *"The Son of Man will send*

*out His angels, and they will gather out of His kingdom all things that offend, and those who practice lawlessness, and will cast them into the furnace of fire. There will be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. He who has ears to hear, let him hear!"* Indeed, let him who has ears to hear, hear. This is a time to prepare yourself to separate yourself from the things of the world, to cease watching what the world is doing and start watching what God is doing, to lay aside those things that so easily beset you and to press on toward the goal which is our high calling in Christ Jesus.

Read your Bible and pray and read your Bible again. This is not the time to study what men have written. It is time to nourish your spirit to capacity with the living word of God, which is spirit and life to you. Recognise that the time is not far off when you may not have a Bible or praise music. You may soon be rotting in a concentration camp, inadequately fed, and inadequately clothed under brutal oppression and violence because you have chosen not to bow the knee to Satan. That would not be a good time to realise that you have not spent the time in the word of God, in prayer, in praise, and in worship that you should have. Set aside your television, your newspaper, your social engagements, your unchaste sports and your sporting engagements. Devote every moment that you can to seeking God. Seek to be led by His spirit every second of every minute, every minute of every hour, every hour of every day, every day of every week, every week of every month and every month of every year until the Lord Jesus returns.

Seek not to think a thought, utter a word, spend a cent, or execute an action that is not the thought word, sent or action that He has ordained for you at that instant. Seek a revelation of your current deception. Set aside your petty notion of how you would like to think God is and seek to know Him through His word. Set aside your false doctrines and private interpretations and those that are trumpeted from the pulpit. Your pastor will not save you when you face judgement. You must make up your own mind about those difficult Scriptures which you have avoided making a decision on all these years.

Remember those first years of your salvation when you wrestled with Scriptures that you did not understand and then caved in to the pressure of your pastors and peer opinions. Now is the time to brush those false doctrines off and get on your knees and repent for placing the opinions of men above the word of the living God. Repent now before you face judgement for your wilful sin. Seek a heartfelt revelation of Paul's words in 1 Timothy 1:15: *"This is a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I am chief."* If Paul near the end of his life could see himself as the chief of sinners, how much more should we? Now is the time to recognise sin for what it is. An abomination in the sight of an uncompromising righteous God but also something for which Jesus Christ has paid the price in full. However, if you do not recognise your sin, if you do not acknowledge your sin, if you do not take your sin to him and confess it and receive his forgiveness and turn from your wickedness, he will not forcibly remove it from you and you will be judged for that sin.

This is the end of the age. You can choose to continue to play games with God or you can get serious about looking at yourself in the mirror of His word and seeking His cleansing blood to deliver you from all your iniquity. You do have a choice but you do not have much time.

May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, King of Kings and Lord of Lords, and Saviour of the world. Amen.



## 02 06 The Financial Stewardship Responsibilities of those who Give

Before I begin today's teaching, I just want to make the point that I will use the word Yahweh rather than the Lord throughout this teaching. This is in response to some communications that I have had with various people and the brief review of the book entitled 'The Sacred Name' published by Qadesh La Yahweh Press, which is available on the internet at [http://yahweh.org/PDF\\_index1.html](http://yahweh.org/PDF_index1.html). The essence of this teaching is that the correct English [inaudible 0:00:56] of the Hebrew word that is typically reflected as the LORD, in the King James and other translations is in fact Yahweh. Initially I was a little bit sceptical of this but on brief inspection in the internet electronic Bible, I discovered that there were literally hundreds of scriptures in the Old Testament where the word is reflected as Yahweh in Strong's and related interlinear text and that has led me to conclude that while I do not fully understand how to apply or how to use the proper name of God the father, Yahweh correctly that I should start by faith to use that the correct term.

The word God in fact is apparently the name of a German pagan God and Jehovah is in fact apparently also some hybrid Anglicisation of the correct word, whereas Yahweh which is also typically translated the LORD or the Lord God, which is Yahweh is in fact God the Father's proper name. So in the same way that my name is James, His name is Yahweh and the respectful way to refer to Him would be either Father or Yahweh, although it is presumably not wrong to refer to Him as Lord as He is our Lord, but to refer to Him as God as His name as distinct from His designation or His title would seem to be incorrect. As I said, I do not really fully understand how to draw the distinction between when we should refer to Him as Father Yahweh and Lord, but I am seeking to learn and in order to do that I have chose in this teaching to endeavour to make use of the name Yahweh wherever possible. I should note that there is also a similar teaching with relative to the correct translation of Jesus as Yahooshua, however I have not gained enough insight to believe that I can start to use that name in general teaching or conversation without being concerned that I would be inadvertently showing disrespect to the name of Jesus. So when I refer to the Lord Jesus Christ at this stage I will continue to make use of the conventional English translation of Jesus.

The teaching today is entitled - *"Some thoughts on the financial stewardship of believers"* referencing the Scripture who then is at faithful and wise steward whom his master will make relay over his household. The essence of the teaching regards the responsibilities and in a sense scriptural rights of people who so financially into ministries and it is in the context of a specific Scripture which the Lord gave me a few days ago which I really believe is a serious challenge to all Christians who have been crying out to God to help them financially.

By way of background, for a number of years prior to the date of this teaching, we found ourselves periodically in a financial wilderness. Yahweh has always provided our needs and ensure that there was food on the table but sometimes there was great lack in all other areas and in the natural we faced financial ruin on several occasions. As we sought Him for guidance, He spoke to us repeatedly about sin in our lives, ranging from unforgiveness and disharmony in our marriage to pride to bloodline curses, to ungodly One Flesh ties, vows, and a wide variety of other issues. As we dealt with these sins, repented and received forgiveness and turned around, we see periods of blessing and then again Satan would come in to kill, steal, and destroy in our lives.

Most recently we have experienced the season of material prosperity, which has exceeded anything we have ever known, but we still sit with the legacy of death. As I had been seeking Yahweh about this, He has been again been dealing with me about sin and error in our own lives. After this experience I have to say to anyone who listens to this teaching, if your prayers are not being answered, if there is

financial, spiritual, or physical that is healing lack in your family or your personal life, there is only one place to look and that is sin in your own life which is giving Satan a foothold to attack you. In this process, we have learnt about many of the things which contribute to financial lack in the lives of Christians. These are documented in summary in a discourse on poverty in the church of Jesus Christ which is available. Subsequent to writing this discourse we have come to better understand the judgement process that applies to the church in this day and started to understand how it takes effect in the life of a believer. Believers are either sanctified by this process or will remain afflicted or they fall away. A series of teachings on this subject is also available.

On the morning of January 5, 2000, I was impressed by the following extract from Joshua 7:10-11: *"So Yahweh said to Joshua: 'Get up! Why do you lie thus on your face? Israel has sinned, and they have also transgressed My covenant which I commanded them. For they have even taken some of the accursed things, and have both stolen and deceived; and they have also put it among their own stuff.'"* The distinct impression that I had was that Yahweh was saying to me that many of His people are metaphorically lying on their face on the Earth crying out to God for help and He is saying *"Get up. Why do you lie thus on your face. You have sinned and you have also transgressed by covenant which I commanded you."*

I had myself been metaphorically lying on my face and crying out to Him a few weeks earlier until I recognised that what was happening had to be related to sin in my life and started thanking Him by faith by showing me what it was so that I could repent. He had as always answered that prayer and was still answering that prayer and things were starting to come right. It seems to me that He will always answer when one asks Him to reveal sin in our lives that we may repent.

This revelation tied into some notes I made a week earlier while reading the book *"The surpassing greatness of His power"* by Rick Joyner, pages 55 and 56. These notes related to the tithes and offerings which we have been led to give into many different ministries in the past few years. I quote the notes as I recorded it. When one contributes financially to a ministry, one does so first out of obedience to God's word with respect to tithes and offerings. Hopefully giving is directed by the Holy Spirit. But one should presumably also have a hope that one is storing up treasures in Heaven by participating in the fruits of that ministry. In this case, surely as stewards of the finances of our Father in Heaven has given us and has invested against an internal treasure in the Kingdom of Heaven, there is some reasonable basis in terms of which we should at least be extended the courtesy of a hearing should we become concerned that the direction of the ministry concerned is not in accordance with the word or will of God. In other words, if we become concerned that a message is not scriptural, we are entitled to a hearing. And if we are not granted a hearing or the ministry drifts further into error, we have a responsibility to serve elsewhere.

Christians teach constantly about sowing and reaping and many ministries are very willing to hand down offering baskets, preach messages on sowing, or publish newsletters or other documents which contain banking details or other subtle or not so subtle messages to assist or encourage people to give. Others are more direct in their request for funds. In the process usage is made of many scriptures to support these teachings. These teachings are generally sound, but they generally fail to address both sides of the coin. They speak of the blessings that will accrue to the believer who saves in good soul that they ignore the lack of blessings or even curses that may accrue in the event of saying into [inaudible 0:10:23]. Proverbs 24:30-31 states: *"I went by the field of the lazy man, And by the vineyard of the man devoid of understanding; And there it was, all overgrown with thorns; Its surface was covered with nettles; Its stone wall was broken down."* Surely, if one sows seed in such a field, in a ministry which has become lazy or which lacks understanding in an area which is permitted, the

ministry could become unfruitful or it is filled with strife and division where it is in financial lack because of sin, one cannot expect a crop.

Many churches speak of partnership but they ignore the secular reality that partners constantly interact, assist one another to work together to improve the business. By implication of Ministry, which refers to others as partners when they contribute financially and suggest that by being partners they will be partners in the eternal rewards for the fruit of that ministry should be willing to treat those people as partners even if they disagree with the directional message. Partners should listen to one another and work together to improve things for the Kingdom of God in accordance with the Word of God, not man's interpretation. At the same time, partners in a business that fails owing to the area of malpractice of one partner or suffer financially from that failure. In other words, partners in a ministry that is not producing fruit will share in the lack of fruit and starve spiritually and find they have no treasure in Heaven as a result of their partnership. Partners in a Ministry, which is producing bad fruit will surely find that they have a part in that fruit.

[inaudible 0:12:10] of many examples. It seems to me that if a ministry is not producing good spiritual fruit, if they strife and discord, if there is constant lack to do the work that the partners agree that God has called the ministry to do, those who are giving to that Ministry should realise that there is something wrong. As partners in that Ministry, they have a responsibility to communicate to those who are running the Ministry full-time that they are concerned and to seek to work with them to rectify the problems. Generally, it has been my understanding that sin or error in the Ministry or in the lives of the full-time ministers or in the lives of the partners will almost always be at the root of these problems and will require to be addressed. If they are not, the Ministry will never turn around. In principle it would seem likely that spiritual problems will result firstly from the public life and teachings of the Ministry where the private lives of the ministers and that it will be partners who will be the first to really notice what is going on. If those who are running the Ministry cannot accept the concerns of their partners, then they are sinning against those partners by taking their finances and failing to ensure that the Ministry produces good fruit in the Kingdom of God.

This is an extremely difficult subject and one on which I do not have much experience. Other than that I have almost universally experienced that where one seeks to suggest that correction is required in a Ministry to which one has made material financial contributions, it is almost invariably rejected. In the process, some ministries resort to increasingly carnal and worldly techniques to improve the financial situation resorting to advertising, stronger [inaudible 0:13:58] to give and even psychological manipulation and guilt sinning which borders on witchcraft. This must be measured against Luke 12:42-53. To summarise certain passages, *"The Lord said, 'Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his master will make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of food in due season? Blessed is that servant whom his master will find so doing when he comes. Truly, I say to you that he will make him ruler over all that he has. But if that servant says in his heart, 'My master is delaying his coming,' and begins to beat the male and female servants, and to eat and drink and be drunk, the master of that servant will come on a day when he is not looking for him, and at an hour when he is not aware, and will cut him in two and appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that servant who knew his master's will, and did not prepare himself or do according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. But he who did not know, yet committed things deserving of stripes, shall be beaten with few. For everyone to whom much is given, from him much will be required; and to whom much has been committed, of him they will ask the more. I came to send fire on the earth, and how I wish it were already kindled!'"* It was Jesus speaking.

The Scripture can be applied in two ways. Firstly, the full-time minister who attacks those under his care including those who are partners will surely fall into the category of a bad steward who will incur his Lord's wrath. However, the person whose ministry is financial, in other words, he has been called by God to serve bountifully into the works of the Kingdom of God out of the abundance that God has provided him must surely understand that he is called to be a steward of God's finances. Psalm 24:1 states: *"The earth is the Lord's, and all its fullness, The world and those who dwell therein."* Clearly all the finances that we have are provided by God in which case, surely a man who sows his seed in an unfertile field or in a field which is producing bad fruit must also be called to account for failing to properly invest his master's finances.

Consider Matthew 25:14-30: *"For the kingdom of heaven is like a man travelling to a far country, who called his own servants and delivered his goods to them. And to one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one, to each according to his own ability; and immediately he went on a journey. Then he who had received the five talents went and traded with them, and made another five talents. And likewise he who had received two gained two more also. But he who had received one went and dug in the ground, and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of those servants came and settled accounts with them. So he who had received five talents came and brought five other talents, saying, 'Lord, you delivered to me five talents; look, I have gained five more talents besides them.' His lord said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful servant; you were faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things. Enter into the joy of your lord.' He also who had received two talents came and said, 'Lord, you delivered to me two talents; look, I have gained two more talents besides them.' His lord said to him, 'Well done, good and faithful servant; you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things. Enter into the joy of your lord.'*

*Then he who had received the one talent came and said, 'Lord, I knew you to be a hard man, reaping where you have not sown, and gathering where you have not scattered seed. And I was afraid, and went and hid your talent in the ground. Look, there you have what is yours.' But his lord answered and said to him, 'You wicked and lazy servant, you knew that I reap where I have not sown, and gather where I have not scattered seed. So you ought to have deposited my money with the bankers, and at my coming I would have received back my own with interest. So take the talent from him, and give it to him who has ten talents.'*

*For to everyone who has, more will be given, and he will have abundance; but from him who does not have, even what he has will be taken away. And cast the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness. There will be weeping and gnashing of teeth."*

Surely if the servant who hid his Lord's money is called wicked and lazy, how much more harshly shall a servant be judged who cannot even return his talent on the day of reckoning. Surely this Scripture alone challenges every Christian who tithes to take a more active role in assessing the direction of the church or congregation, which he supports financially and if he discerns possible error or sin in the Ministry, a minister, or the partners of congregation to seek to speak direction or correction to the leadership. If he is correct, then the leaders who are sinning against him, if they fail to give him a hearing, if they fail to accept and act on his input or if he is in error, they are also sinning if they fail to make a real effort in love to assist and to see that error.

In this case, Matthew 18:15-17 is quite clear. *"Moreover if your brother sins against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone. If he hears you, you have gained your brother. But if he will not hear, take with you one or two more, that 'by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may*

*be established.' And if he refuses to hear them, tell it to the church. But if he refuses even to hear the church, let him be to you like a heathen and a tax collector."*

It therefore appears that there are reasonable grounds for a person who gives financially to a Ministry to expect to be granted a fair hearing if he has concern. If his input is rejected, he has reasonable grounds and probably a scriptural responsibility to the Kingdom of God to leave that congregation or at the least to save his finances elsewhere. [inaudible 0:20:33] that an individual should be allowed to use his finances to manipulate the Ministry. If the leadership is truly trusting God for their provision, they should never permit the possible loss of revenue to influence them but they should respect the prerogative that those who contribute financially to withdraw if they are concerned without in any way rejecting it.

It truly seems to me that if these principles were applied to the church today, there would be far fewer cases of ministries falling into serious error and far fewer cases of ministries in serious financial lack. I appeal to all those who read this to recognise the joint obligation of those who partner with a Ministry financially to contribute spiritually and in terms of direction and correction as well and to encourage those who administer those finances to respect the responsibility of their financial partners to make such input. Both sides must recognise the differences of interpretation can arise and should not permit these to become a source of rank hold or discount. Partners who are genuine concerns which are not acknowledged or not accommodated should feel free to leave. Likewise, leaders who genuinely cannot agree with the input of a partner and truly believe that their position is scriptural and according to the Will of God should feel free not to act on the input of their partners and should be willing to let them leave. After all, if one is truly in the Will of God and without major hindering sin in one's life, and Philippians 4:19 clearly states: *"And my God shall supply all your need according to His riches in glory by Christ Jesus."*

I urge all of those who listen to this teaching to give this very careful consideration. Pastors and other full-time ministers whose financial needs are not being met should ask themselves why and should seek the assistance of their partners, particularly any who are prospering by the hand of God, not because they are in league with the enemy in finances, to distinguish the corrections that are required. In particular, they should open their hearts to genuine concerns and criticisms raised by their partners. There is no substitute for crying out to God to show us our sin and how to deal with it and it is certainly no substitute for heartfelt repentance. At the same time, those who give should accept the responsibility to raise their concerns through the scriptural procedures outlined in Matthew 18 above and if their concerns are not acknowledged and acted on, they should accept that if they truly believe that their issue is in line with the word and the will of God, they should withdraw their finances and seek another field in which to sow.

May Yahweh bless you and keep you. May Yahweh make His face to shine upon you, and be gracious to you. May Yahweh looked at this countenance upon you and give you peace. In Jesus name, amen.

## **02 07 Poverty in the Church of Jesus Christ**

This morning's teaching is a continuation of the series that I have been teaching on Judgement. It deals specifically with some of the factors which I found are relevant from the point of view of diagnosing what it is that needs to be dealt with in one's life where judgement is coming into effect. The teaching that I would give today is based on the book or discourse - Poverty in the church of Jesus Christ - a

discourse on contributory factors based on personal experience, subtitled towards holiness and sanctification, circumcision of the heart and growth in Christ, which was produced several years ago and which addresses a variety of issues without going into detailed Scripture. Before I go into that document, I would just like to draw your attention to a Scripture which really struck me very forcibly a couple of days ago. It is Proverbs 16:7 and I am reading from the Amplified Bible: *"When a man's ways please the Lord, He makes even his enemies to be at peace with him."* To me that is an absolutely incredible Scripture. Firstly that if we are truly living lives that are pleasing to Yahweh or to the Lord, we will see that even our enemies are at peace with us.

I really believe that builds on what I said some time ago with regard to the coming tribulation. Taking Proverbs 16:7 as a point of absolutely fundamental Scripture in that regard what we see is that even in the midst of total turmoil and tribulation, if our way is truly pleasing to Yahweh, even our enemies will be at peace with us. Surely, we must interpret that as meaning that in such tribulation the enemy will be absolutely unable to touch us and therefore will be unable to kill, steal, or destroy in our lives even in the most terrible persecution. On the other hand, I would suggest to you that in the spirit of today's teaching, we should also draw the conclusion that if our enemies are not at peace with us, then our ways are not fully pleasing to Yahweh. I think that is also an incredibly important truth to understand the two concepts are so vitally interrelated. If one's enemies are at peace with us, then surely that must be a miraculous sign that our ways are truly pleasing to Yahweh. That is not to say that if our enemies are at peace with us at some point in time that everything that we do and think will always be pleasing to Yahweh. It just means that at a point in time our life has reached a situation where Yahweh is sufficiently pleased with our lives to grant us peace with our enemies. Clearly, that is not a time to sit back on our laurels. It is the time to further seek holiness and sanctification. It is a time to cry out once more: *"Father in the name of Jesus I ask you to judge me severely and correct me harshly that I may serve you more perfectly. I ask you to show me the level of my present deception and I ask you to show me what action you require of me in order to deliver me from that deception in Jesus name."*

I really believe that as we do that, as we press in, as we cry out, we will come into that place if we truly desire our ways are pleasing to the Lord. And we will begin to discern that when we see that even our most rabid enemies are at peace with us. Surely, there can be few other dramatic or signs as dramatic as coming to a place where even one's enemies are at peace with one. Certainly, if our heart's desire is to please the Lord, which surely everyone of us should desire above all things to bring joy to the Father and saviour and the Holy Spirit in the way we conduct our lives. And surely we should desire that above all things because we love Him and because we desire to bring Him joy, not because we want our enemies to be at peace with us but just as certainly the fact that our enemies are at peace with us must come to be a diagnostic aid to determine when we are coming to a place of pleasing God. Again, I must stress, I am not saying that once one reaches a place where one's enemies are at peace with one that you have pleased God for eternity. No, surely, one has reached a place where momentarily God is well pleased with us. But as you will see in this teaching almost certainly He will be seeking for you to draw closer to Him and to deal with other issues in this life.

The Christian walk is a lifetime growing closer to God, seeking to please Him where we are in terms of our current knowledge and experience of Him and His word, constantly to recognise that what is acceptable and pleasing in His sight, when we are just being born again is not necessarily going to be acceptable to Him, 5, 10, 15, 20 years later, when we will have decades to study His word on a daily basis to spend time in His presence on a daily basis and to had Him search our hearts and to cleanse

our hearts. So I must stress what I am preaching about and teaching about today is a journey in Christ. It is not a destination. It is a diagnostic.

So I would like now to turn to the document - "*Poverty in the church of Jesus Christ*" and as I do so, I am essentially going to read from that document and seek to highlight and perhaps amplify some of the aspects which are addressed in that document. I should mention that the information and the experiences on which the book was based took place over a number of years. The book was written in mid 1998 and since then I continued to find that I have to revisit the principles that are set out in this book, some of them have become more real to me since I wrote them, some of them I have discovered greater dimensions in terms of what it actually means to apply some the principles that are set out in the book and sometimes I see very much as Joyner describes in 'The Final Quest' instances where I diagnosed the right things but for the wrong reasons. Sole endeavour to highlight some of these things as I go through the book but in essence I am going to follow the content of the book, that is my intention, God willing.

In the preface to the book I quote Deuteronomy 15:5-6 from the Living Torah which is a modern Jewish translation and these verses read: *"This however will be to only if you obey the word of God, your Lord carefully keeping this entire mandate that I (Moses) am prescribing to you today. Your Lord will then bless you as He promised you so that you will extend credit to many nations but you will not need any credit for yourselves. You will less dominate many nations but none will dominate you."* The key phrase in these two verses of Scripture in the context of these teachings are only if you obey the word of God, your Lord. I cannot stress enough to those who are listening to this tape that there is so many blessings in the word of God but all of them are conditional on us obeying the Word of God. We do not have the latitude to unilaterally and arbitrarily decide which portions of the Word of God we will choose to honour and obey and which we will choose to ignore and discard. Which promises we will choose to plan and which Commandments we will choose to ignore.

We must keep the entire mandate that Yahweh our Lord God has given us in so far as we are able at any point in our lives and insofar as we are aware of those Commandments but we must constantly, constantly be conscious of the fact that there is so much more of His word that we do not know, that we do not understand and that we do not apply in our lives that when things go wrong, we must constantly examine ourselves in the Word of God in that mirror that He has given us that is His word to see why it is that is wrong. We must cease blaming and looking to others as the cause of our problems, we must cease looking to identify people who have cursed us and we must see the curses that we have brought upon ourselves through our disobedience to the Commandments of God. I would really encourage anybody listening to this tape today, if there is anything in your life, which is not going according to your understanding of the Word of God, if you are not walking in the fullness of His blessing, if you have financial lack, if you have lack in the area of health, if you are unable to get to your healing or to keep your healing even though you have a revelation of the healing power of the Lord Jesus Christ. If there is any area in your life where you have been standing on the promises of God and those promises are not materialising in your life, that you believe really at heart that those promises are few, then this teaching I truly believe is for you. Examine your heart. I have to say to you in all circumstances, it is almost 100% certain that there is something wrong in your life, that there is sin, deception or error or something in your life that is opening the door to the enemy to kill, steal, and destroy.

I have taught on the underlying technical scriptural principles whereby this happens in previous teachings and I would encourage you to listen to those if you have not listened to them. Today I am going to talk about the diagnostic factors and the issues roundabout how what I have just said applies

in the life of every believer and I really pray that you will receive that in Jesus' name. The background to this particular teaching was laid on March 5, 1998, when Yahweh really laid it on my heart to prepare a series of discourses on various topics for discussion purposes and to inform people. After I started preparing the teaching on poverty, I listened to a series of teachings by Kenneth Copeland on the hesed, that is Hebrew, or agape, Greek, love of God, that is the covenant made by blood. Through that teaching I came to realise that much of what is contained in this teaching directly relates to what I am coming to understand as a process of circumcision of the heart, which I understand to be the journey that Yahweh leads us through in order to make us more like Jesus. This is a vast subject on its own and certainly not one that I hope to canvass comprehensively in this teaching. I am only seeking to address one aspect of which poverty is a useful diagnostic. I have also found many of these issues addressed directly or indirectly in Rick Joyner's book 'The Final Quest' which used an immensely sobering revelation of what the church is facing right now and I would really encourage you if you have not read the 'The Final Quest' to do so as soon as possible.

I certainly hope that this teaching will assist those of you who are truly seeking to plan the mountain of God, because many of the issues that are raised in this teaching today and over the weeks that follow and in the book on poverty are factors which can cause you to fall from any level on the mountain of God as described so graphically in 'The Final Quest.' At the same time, I must say to you that while I am persuaded that what I am teaching on series of God, I do not claim that all that I say is prophetic. Only as best as I can discern, it sums up what God has been showing me. I accept the possibility this teaching will be incomplete in places or may not be entirely accurately reflect what God is actually saying and I welcome the opportunity to discuss these teachings with any sincere believer who is committed to discerning the true will of God with regard to the issues that are canvassed in this teaching, and God willing, in the weeks that follow.

Another verse of Scripture or passage of Scripture which sums up what I am talking about today, again from the Living Torah entitled or under the heading - *"Following God's way"* and quoting from Deuteronomy 10:12-21: *"And now, Israel, what does God want of you, only that you remain in all of God your Lord so that you will follow all his paths and love him, serving God your Lord with all your heart and will all your soul. You must keep Moses' Commandments and decrease I and prescribing for you today, so that God will be yours, the Heaven, the Heaven of Heaven, the Earth and everything in it all belong to God. Still it was only that your ancestors that God developed a closeness. He loved them and therefore chose you their descendants from among all nations just as the situation is today. Remove the barriers from your heart and do not remain so stubborn anymore. God, your Lord is the ultimate supreme being and the highest possible authority. He is the great Mighty and awesome God who does not give special consideration or take bribes. He brings justice to the orphan and widow and loves the foreigner, granting him food and clothing. You must also show love toward the foreigner since you were foreigners in the land of Egypt. Remain in awe of God, serve him, cling to him and swear by his name. He is your praise and your God, the one who did for you, his great and awesome deeds that you saw with your very eyes."*

Surely as we read that we must remember that Yahweh God is the same yesterday, today and forever and that is much as that passage of Scripture applied to the Israelites who have come out of Egypt, they apply to the Christian today who has come out of the world of which is a type. In presenting this presenting and that which follows today and God willing, in the next few weeks, I think it is important to give you some indication of what I had in mind in preparing this as to how I would suggest that you utilise what is presented here. This teaching is not intended to be an authoritative reference work. It intended to be in a sense a conversation with you sharing thoughts and experiences as they come to



mind, rather than presenting some form of structured problem solving methodology or form of teaching. For this reason I will present thoughts largely as they originally occurred. It is almost certain and that was important in my life is not necessarily important in yours and vice versa and that the order of importance will also differ.

I am also not going to present this teaching with copious Scripture references. [inaudible 0:18:41] done that, this teaching would be many times longer and would not provide as I currently hope it will a relatively concise report of an enormous number of diverse and sometimes seemingly unconnected thoughts, all of which I believe have some bearing on assisting you to walk in the fullness of God's blessings, the blessings of obedience to God our Father, our Lord and saviour Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit. If you are currently under a financial attack, I suggest that you pray the prayer that follows and dip into these tapes as the spirit leads you or first time around, listen from beginning to end so that you provide the Holy Spirit with seed from which He can begin to teach you. By virtue of these objectives, there will never be enough information in this teaching to answer all your questions. That is not the intention. Jesus through his Holy Spirit is the only teacher that you can truly rely on as you identify sections of this teaching that awaken your interest or quickened your attention, pray about them in faith. Trust God to reveal to you what you need to know through His word, through books, teaching tapes, videos, TV and radio programmes, teaching of church as they may lead you to prophets, teachers and other believers who He may bring across your path. Be diligent to seek the truth. Be constantly in His word and in fellowship with other believers. Be always alert for His leading to buy a book or tape, listen to a radio programme, visit a church, help or talk to a stranger or do anything else that is concrete to your routine that will lead you to a source of knowledge.

Remember that only God knows your thoughts. So do not keep talking about what He is showing you and as far as possible never tell anyone your questions. Satan's cohorts, those Demons and Angels infest the atmosphere and those around you and are constantly listening for useful information to use against you. Pray silently within your heart believing in faith that He hears you and that He will answer your questions. If the answer rattles your paradigm and does not seem as they could possibly be of God, ask Him in faith for confirmation. He loves you and He wants to set you free. He has great patience and He recognises our difficulty in hearing and believing Him. If you walk in faith without doubting, He will lead you to the truth, you need to set you free. Be prepared for a challenging and exciting ride. Recognise that God is no respecter of persons and no respecter of our traditions and doctrines. Expect Him to show you things that you will have great difficulty accepting. Expect Him to require you to do things and deal with things which are sometimes very challenging and uncomfortable. If you truly want to serve Him, and you truly want to walk in His will and His blessings, then I encourage you to take up the challenge by faith. Hold on to your hat and enjoy the ride and His blessings.

I would like to pray with you a prayer to start with. As I said, this teaching is not intended to be rigorous. It is intended to open up a treasure chest of topics for you to pray and seek God about in order to determine what is applicable to your life today in order to get the breakthrough that God currently has planned for you. Different parts will apply at different times. Some may never apply. Some you may revisit again and again. Others may not be covered in this document. As you learn to trust God to lead you into the truth, you need day by day, you will find that the walk becomes spiritually easier or ride may become more demanding in terms of what you can see in the natural. Ultimately it is all part of learning to be spirit-lead that you may one day just be termed to be a true son of God. The following prayer is offered to assist you to get started. Trust God to lead you in prayer day by day, pray in faith without doubting and He will answer you. Let us pray.

Father God I come to you in the name of Jesus. I thank you that you know the parts of this teaching that apply to me and that are correct for me. I thank you that as I start to listen you will quicken my spirit that which is immediately relevant and that you will conceal from me that which is chaff or of no relevance right now. I thank you that as you open this document to me, you will teach me what to pray and you will give me utterance in my spirit in order that I may pray your will over my life. I thank you that as I bring sections, concepts and thoughts before you and lay my questions at your holy throne, you will answer me. I ask you in the name of Jesus to speak to me through your word, to lead me to the passages that apply to me and that will answer my questions. I thank you that your word contains all the answers that I will ever need to live my life according to your will and to achieve the breakthrough that you purposed for me at this time. I thank you that you will speak to me through books, teaching, tapes and videos, apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors and preachers, teachers, and other people whom you will bring across my path. I thank you that you will lead me wherever I need to go receive the answers to my questions and that your Holy Spirit is with me always to lead me into whole truth. Help me Father to hear your voice clearly and close my ears and eyes to all that is not of you.

Satan, I bind you and your cohorts from blinding or confusing me and receiving anything that God has provided for me in this document in Jesus name. I thank you Father that your angels are encamped around me to protect me and to keep the enemy from interfering in my studies and I ask you to cover me and my family and all that I earn with the blood of Jesus from the top of our heads to the soles of our feet. I thank you Father that your word states that was a born-again believer and have a mind of Christ. I thank you for leading me to victory, in Jesus name. Amen.

In this first teaching, I intend to share with you various thoughts to provide a background to this teaching and some concepts which a prayer will help you to accept and to follow and to apply the teachings that will follow on subsequent tapes. At the time of writing the original document and still very much today, the majority of Christians that I know are under financial attack at a level that many consider to be unprecedented. Rick Joyner in his book, 'The Final Quest' which I read for the first time after producing the first draft of the document presents a graphic account based on a series of five visions as to why this is the case. And I would really suggest that if you have not read 'The Final Quest' it is something that you really need to read as a matter of urgency in order to better understand the current spiritual age. The teaching that follows seeks to contribute something to equipping the saints with a better understanding of the practical spiritual issues that are currently confronting most of the church.

To place this teaching in context, it is perhaps important that I mention that I am a civil engineer and analyst by training with strong grounding in mathematics, science and applied problem-solving. Yahweh has blessed me with a mind that constantly seeks to understand the underlying fundamentals in any situation whether physical or spiritual. I have learnt to use the gifts that I have developed in dealing with physical problems to deal with spiritual issues as well. Having served Yahweh in a tradition church in my youth and turned away because of religion and other factors in my early 20s, I had been radically saved from the very brink of death literally in my late 30s. I found myself faced with a major intellectual problem in accepting that the Bible was the living word of God. Having heard the voice of God and having experienced the presence of power of God enough to have complete certainty that He was real, by faith, I chose to accept the Bible as the word of God and embarked on a voyage of discovery, sometimes into uncharted or little-known spiritual waters.

As I sought to serve Yahweh and experience the fullness of His blessings in my life, certain of the Scripture that says that God is not a man that He should lie, I repeatedly found that the Bible did not

seem to work in many areas of my life. For example, while I experienced an Acts 2 encounter with the Holy Spirit and walked in divine health, my finances continued to deteriorate and other areas of my life were under constant attack. Without a thought, I started to apply the engineering and military analysis and problem-solving techniques that I apply in my professional career as a management consultant and strategist to my spiritual walk and progressively found myself seeking God for answers to more and more obscure questions. As I did so, Yahweh started to present me with answers which increasingly caused me to evaluate the current teachings of the church in a variety of areas. Some of these issues rattled my paradigm despite the fact that in secular terms, my personality is one that thrives on paradigm shifting. There certainly rattled a paradigm of people around me.

Sometimes this was a consequence of my only seeing part of the picture or not hearing Yahweh clearly. Other times, the Holy Spirit forced me to confront truths, some of which have apparently been lost to the church since the first Catholics [inaudible 0:30:09] in about 315 AD. I do not present any of what I have said above as best. My intention is simply to position and contextualise what I am about to say with a view to appealing to you, the listener to consider the possibility that there may be a paradigm in your spiritual walk that is outside the realms of what you have previously considered to be the only valid understanding and interpretation. In doing this I will endeavour to avoid criticising what others believe. My hope is that I will build on truths that others have in order to draw out more of the truth as we all sincerely seek to draw closer to God, to be more like Jesus and to seek all truth.

Joyner in the 'The Final Quest' published in 1996 at the end of his description of his fourth vision, in which he was caught up into the third heaven and experienced the judgement of Christ, reports Jesus as saying: *"Obey me and hasten the day of my coming."* He further reports that as he was escorted away from the presence of Jesus by a company of angels, the leader of the Angels stated: *"Now that he has stood, he will not sit again until the last battle is over."* He has been seated until the time when his enemies are to be put under his feet. The time has now come. The legions of Angels that have been standing since the light of his passion has now been released upon the Earth. The hoards of hell have also been released. This is the time for which all of creation has been waiting. The great mystery of God will soon be finished. We will now fight until the end. We will fight with you and with your brethren.

It is vital that you recognise that a dramatic change in the spiritual state of the world took place sometime around 1995 or '96. Your paradigm of Christianity over your lifetime before this is no longer necessarily as relevant as it was before. The level of the scriptural onslaught and all dedicated believers has intensified greatly. This teaching is based on experience gained largely in the period from 1994 to 1998, during the period that this dramatic change was taking place. Accordingly, the interpretation offered in the teachings that follow should be evaluated on this basis.

Disclaimer: The teachings that follow, I am going to address a lot of issues which my experience tells me many people find controversial and very difficult to accept. I have even found that people become offended by the suggestion that there is sin in their lives that they have to deal with. Please understand that it is not my intention to offend you with anything that I say in these teachings. If you are offended I would really ask you to forgive me. I fully realise that if you are offended, you will have difficulty changing your paradigm. My objective is to lay a foundation that I believe will assist you to reassess certain issues that may be having a profound negative influence in your life. Please set aside anything that offends you and pray over it as you seek to extract what may be wheat and not chaff for you in this teaching.

Let me also stress that I do not claim that this teaching is comprehensive. You may have unique issues and challenges in your life that no person other than the Holy Spirit as the living God can assist you with. In all things, please look to Jesus and not to men. At this stage, I do not intend to present endless scriptural references. I have many notes and could add many Scriptures and other references if required to back up much of what I have to say. In other cases, I have much anecdotal evidence based on personal experience. Right now, I am not seeking to sell you anything. I am seeking to raise issues for consideration and hopefully discussion leading to prayerful action in the expectation that where something applies to a particular situation, the Holy Spirit will quicken this to your attention and show you how to respond. I look forward to receiving any comments that you may have and to discussing these teachings with you should you want to do that. If you have this tape, you should have contact details. You can contact me at [James@End-Time-Issues.org.za](mailto:James@End-Time-Issues.org.za) on the internet. Or you can contact me on telephone numbers, South Africa local code 832516644 and I would be very happy to hear from you.

This teaching is seeking to address oppressing question, why is there so much lack and financial attack in the Body of Christ. The Word of God tells us that it is the Will of God for us to prosper and be in health. Numerous other scriptures tell us of the blessings of God and yet looking around we constantly see a large proportion of the church limping from one financial crisis to another. I have been there myself. I stood on the promises of God as my business started with the blessing of the Holy Spirit, named by God, with a cross and a logo put there by him with a vision to be a vehicle for evangelism to the business community around the world, slipped into total insolvency and closed its door. By the same time, I lost every material thing that I possessed and lost a custody battle for my children despite prophecies to the contrary. Repeatedly my cries had been *"Why Lord? Show me what is wrong in my life, show me what to pray, show me what has to change. Reveal the root cause of the problem. Send prophets and teachings across my path."* Yahweh has been faithful and He has given me numerous answers. On several occasions, we have experienced major breakthroughs and then had them turnaround again and on each occasion we proceeded to learn more.

Each time however, there has been an increasing assurance that Yahweh (God) is in control and that He will not allow us to be tested more than we can endure. It has in fact become comforting to know that He loves us so much that He wants to get the dross out of our lives before He really blesses us in order that we can serve Him fully, effectively, and faithfully in abundance. And will not end up like a camel trying to pass through the eye of a needle and thus be found wanting on the day of judgement.

In the sections that will follow, I will seek to discuss the various aspects that I have had to deal with over a period of about five years. I will present them more or less in the order that I had to confront them and as they came to mind while writing the document on poverty, not because I think there is anything special about that order, but because of this time now that the order readily presents itself. Other strength thing that in every case, the order is likely to be different. I am trying to create a structure that seems right to me or start to give prior to the point of entry. As you listened to these teachings, please constantly ask the Holy Spirit to reveal to you that which applies to you now and do not concern yourself with things that may apply in the future. At the same time, many of these issues are items that your flesh may really not wish to respond to. So I would counsel you not to bypass issues lightly.

Law embrace how I understand it. I fully expect that as you listen to what follows, you will be inclined to accuse me of legalism and say what about grace? I would like to offer you very briefly in my understanding of how law and grace affect what follows. Firstly, let me say categorically that I do not believe that grace in any way constitutes a licence for sloppy, undisciplined, disobedient and sinful

behaviour. Our Lord and saviour Jesus Christ knew no sin and was obedient to the death of the cross. I do not think that he took our sins upon him in order that we might adopt a casual attitude to sin. I also do not think that it is a coincidence that discipline and disciple have the same root. Insofar as we are ignorant to the word of God, I am firmly persuaded that God extends grace to us so that we may not carry a burden that exceeds our spiritual and physical maturity. The word says that we will not be tested beyond our capacity to endure. However, in the same way that newly born baby cannot endure much environment, mental deprivation that a battle hardened supremely fit soldier can survive under the most arduous conditions. Grace is extended to us as newly-born creatures in Christ, but other time we are expected to mature to become battle hardened Christian soldiers able to look after ourselves.

By implication it seems that in a sense grace is less comprehensive as we mature and much of what I have to say reflects what I perceive to be in my own life, a progressive requirement from Yahweh that I accept increasing responsibility for the consequences of my own actions. Whether this is in fact a reduction in grace or whether there is some other spiritual principle or term that applies, I am currently uncertain, but I do believe that the basic concept is spiritually valid as we grow in grace. At the same time, I always remember that God's grace is sufficient for us whether we are in the furnace or at the well. At the same time, Satan, the accuser of the brethren who is before the throne of God night and day is the ultimate legalist and I would refer you to the teaching I gave some weeks ago on the details of how I understand that Satan's accusations before the throne of God takes place.

To recap, as I understand it, Satan works according to a clearly defined set of rules which are made visible to us throughout the Bible in the form of Commandments, principles, and guidelines as well as through parables and metaphors. Through religion and legalism, Satan has very effectively clouded our understanding of much of how he works. To me, the first few chapters of Job, together with the verse in Ephesians 4 that cautions us to give no foothold to the devil, summarises what we are dealing with. As I understand it, Satan and his cohorts constantly scan the Earth, seeking believers whom they can accuse before the throne of God. Since there are twice as many holy Angels as fallen Angels it appears that Satan concentrates his efforts on those Christians who are on fire and making a difference, rather than those who are lukewarm or discouraged in showing their signs of resistance, where he identifies any form of sin or foothold in the life of a believer or a group of believers. He then goes before the throne of God and demands his legal right to attack the individual, congregation, or family concerned. It appears that on occasion by the grace of God in recognition of our frailty and limitation, God refuses Satan's requests. I am not sure of this. On other occasions where God and his mercy considers the proposed trial to be within the ability of the believer to endure, He permits the trial to take place in order to test us, mature us, strengthen us, and draw us closer to him, so that He can demonstrate His love and His power. This process can result in believers stumbling and falling away, and not completing the race, particularly if they do not comprehend exactly what was going on in the spiritual realm.

Thus we see that as we mature in Christ, we are tested with regard to sins and footholds, etc., that were covered by grace when we were less mature in Christ. In this process, we either fall back, fall away, backslide and extreme cases, forsake the faith or we press in closer to the Holy Spirit, seek the face of Jesus and cry out to enter into the throne room of God. As we do this, we find ourselves examining ourselves in the mirror of the word and becoming increasingly aware of aspects of our lives which are displeasing to God and which give Satan footholds in our lives. If we understand that this is the process that we are undergoing, we can pray appropriately and act appropriately with the result that we may hope to press through the trials more rapidly and thus press on to the next trial with greatest spiritual growth and is the case if every time we spend days, weeks, months or years being

offended with God, railing against Him, demanding that He honours His words and many other pitfalls that Christians fall into while in the process of losing many of the blessings that they already have. An image of this process that I received was that of a baby Christian in the thick cotton wool cocoon with God slowly peeling away the layers of cotton wool and exposing them to the world as they grew. Eventually, God intends that they stand fully exposed to the onslaught of the enemy as mature fully equipped believers. Many do not seem to ever reach that point.

The military metaphor. As Christians we talk regularly about spiritual warfare and make numerous other references to warfare, the battle being soldiers for Christ, etc. I wonder how many Christians actually consider what they are saying. As a retired Lieutenant-Colonel in the South African citizen force, I would like to elaborate on my understanding of how this applies to the preceding discussion on law and grace. In doing this, I would like to trace the life developments of a soldier. If we start with pregnancy, then an unborn child is in its mother's womb it is totally protected from the outside world. All the knocks and tribulations of the world affect the mother, not the child. The father is hardly involved other than by protecting the mother. In infancy immediately after birth, the child is forced to deal with possible diseases and infection, climatic factors and the like to the extent that the mother cannot totally shield it. As a toddler, the mother has to stand back and watch the child fall as it learns to walk and learns other lessons. The mother still shields the child as much as possible. In preschool years, the child becomes increasingly adventurous and starts to take more risks. It is exposed to more danger, but the parents together seek to limit its exposure to what they perceive is reasonable based on their own life experience. Here we begin to see divergent views in different cultures.

In all out war, the parents and particularly the mother will make enormous sacrifices to protect the child. In primary school, the child is still largely naive and has great confidence in its parents' ability to supply all its needs. It takes very little responsibility for the consequences of its actions and the parents have obliged to rescue it from these consequences on occasion. Sometimes from situations that they would never have dreamed that their child will get into. Now the child is a minor, the parents are legally liable for certain actions of the child. Now the child, particularly if it is a boy, it begins to participate in sports, the parents must stand on the sidelines and watch. Even if the child faces quite serious danger of injury, boys tend to go out and take physical risks which can sometimes be life-threatening. The parents increasingly have to pray rather than to intervene physically.

In secondary school, the process continues. Boys start increasingly to participate in relatively dangerous activities and sports. Occasionally a boy in the school or in nearby school maybe critically, even permanently, or fatally injured as a result of a rugby injury or other activity. If the son is called up for military service, his parents are also obliged to stand back almost entirely. There is almost nothing that they can do to safeguard their son, other than to pray and to hope that the lessons and principles that he has learned as a child will be effectively applied. They may not see their son for weeks or months at a time and may hear from him infrequently. He is now in the hands of his instructors and leaders and is heavily dependent on their competence. Nevertheless, he is still supervised to a large extent and is taught to obey orders without thinking. He is taught discipline, develops physical fitness and other skills that he did not really have before. He is being developed into a fighting man who is capable of killing or being killed. If the son goes on to be called to active service, he faces a situation with the slightest lack of discipline, failure to instantly obey orders or to follow laid down drills either by himself or his fellows can cause him to be wounded, taken prisoner or killed. His parents do not know where he is and can only pray. They cannot even observe from a distance and give guidance. He is an adult, largely dependent on his training in order to survive.

Nevertheless, his senior officers and non-commissioned officers still monitor him closely, take responsibility for any decisions and give him clear-cut orders within the limitations of his training. Generally he will not be displayed in situations for which his training has not equipped him. If the son goes on to volunteer for the reconnaissance commandos, he is taught to kill with his bare hands, to survive for the land for weeks at a time and is generally trained to be almost entirely responsible for his own survival and the success of his missions. Once fully trained, he can be parachute dropped behind enemy lines, often in the most arduous terrain. One false move may cost him his freedom or his life. He is at risk of being exposed or betrayed on every side, he does not know who he can trust or what the next minute will bring. If he does not scrupulously adhere to his drills, he is not rigorous in his navigation and does not his rendezvous precisely on time, he is unlikely to return from his mission. At best, he will be taken prisoner with the chance to escape one day. At worst, he will be tortured and brutally murdered. In this situation, his superior officers can do very little to help him unless he is able to radio for aerial support and his parents were quite likely not know whether he is on a mission or not. He is totally dependent on his God if he knows him and his own ability and discipline.

If your son succeeds in his military career, he will eventually be promoted through the ranks to command first a section of platoon, then a troop of squadron and then a regiment. As a regimental commander he will be increasingly removed from the battle. He will be more concerned with the overall deployment and command and control of the troops under his command unless directly involved in the battle. But he will take his orders on major issues from his superiors and his regiment will nearly always be deployed as part of the multidisciplinary combat team to attack and hold a particular objective. He will generally have no say in the setting of objectives, although he may be involved in the command council that sets those objectives. His focus is primarily tactical in terms of achieving the objective set for his regiment. By the time he achieves the rank of regimental commander, he is likely to be at the very least in his late 20s or early 30s with significant experience under his belt. He will be in command of about 500 to 700 men and millions of dollars of equipment and machinery, depending on the nature of the regiment that he commands. On the ground, he will have considerable autonomy of action and will be evaluated on the results that he delivers. In a full-scale war situation, the officer who demonstrates proven ability to motivate and lead his men to correctly assess the enemy and respond accordingly to take calculated risks, which payoff without unnecessary loss of life and generally effective leadership in every sense will rise rapidly through the ranks.

Typically he will be a man who pays scant regard to the privileges of rank. He will spend time on the ground with every soldier from time to time, will know his subordinates by name and something about them and will never send them into a situation that is not prepared to go himself. Wherever possible, he will be on the ground with his troops leading them into battle. While accepting the inevitability of casualties, he will constantly evaluate his conduct to determine whether he should have acted differently and will personally make every effort to visit wounded soldiers or contact their next of kin. He understands that if his soldiers trust him, he can move mountains. Such an officer will very rapidly rise above all god officers who rest on their laurels, rely on the doctrines of previous wars or insist in following the procedures taught on the officer's course with no regard to the changes in the enemies doctrine and conduct. A man who allows his troops to sustain unnecessary casualties or defeats will if not killed in battle, be rapidly removed from his command.

If he continues to succeed he will progressively be promoted to command a brigade, a division and finally an army corps and possibly even an entire army. With each promotion, he will become

responsible for more and more men and will become increasingly involved in taking critical strategic decisions. His ability to lead the overall theatre [inaudible 0:54:22] troops and the enemy and every other item of intelligence that he receives and order to take decisions which will give rise to victory with minimum casualties will become increasingly critical. He becomes increasingly responsible for identifying particular military intelligence needs. His margin for error will progressively decrease as the size of the forces that he is required to deploy in battle increases. Incompetence or foolish error will be tolerated less and less by his superiors and subordinates. His is a very lonely position as a general officer commanding. At all times, his ability to motivate all around him and to carry them with him and his ability to delegate and build and maintain a team under the most arduous conditions will determine his success or failure. Visibility can mean the difference between whole country as being swallowed up by the enemy and spectacular victory. In most cases shortly before or after promotion to level of regimental commander, the man will either attend university or a military academy to obtain the equivalent of a three-year bachelor's degree. In a case of a full-time war situation, where there is no time for this, he will nevertheless attend a short staff course to develop his understanding of strategic issues and certain other critical military expertise.

In some cases, a three-year civilian university degree may be accepted as an alternative to the course of the military academy. The objective of the course is as much to develop intellectual problem solving and analytical skills as it is to offer in-depth training and military strategy and other academic aspects of military life, which are more bearing in a peacetime army than in the rigorous of all-out war.

If we consider this outline of personal growth in a combat soldier, I hope that you will see that there is a parallel with the process that I outlined previously. The soldiers in God's Army if we are truly sold out to Christ, we have whether we realise it or not volunteered for service at the very least in the heat of the conventional battle. If not as reconnaissance commandos, we cannot hide behind pastors and teachers and cry out to God every five minutes to dry our eyes. You must fight the good fight making full use of the weapons and armour of our disposal. Crying out to God for aerial rescue if the situation gets totally out of hand. As we mature, we must accept our responsibility to lead regiments and armies. In particular, we must accept our calling to lead from the front, to constantly gather intelligence about what the enemy is doing. Read the signs of the times and motivate and deploy the forces under our direction effectively. Unnecessary casualties cannot be tolerated. The level of falling away and the level of injury that can be found in seemingly every church around the world could not be tolerated in any army. The heads of the leaders would roll. Until the church realises that even one casualty within a congregation is an indictment of the leadership of that congregation, Satan will continue to hold the church in financial and physical bondage and backsliding.

I truly believe that God is training many of those who will hear this teaching to be deployed as reconnaissance commandos in these last days. He is training them to place their trusting God and His word alone and not to look to their own understanding. He is requiring that they stop depending on others and stand alone in their total dependence on Him. He is looking to them to be instantly obedient and never to question orders given by the Holy Spirit. To apply the rules laid down in the Bible, to understand every nuance of the enemy's movements in order to anticipate attack from wherever it may come, to wield the sword of the spirit effectively and precisely in every situation. Sharpening the sword morning, noon, and night and after every encounter with the enemy. If he drops his guard even for a moment to allow disobedience or other sin to enter his life for even an instant. The enemy will be there to take him prisoner, torture him or kill him.

The process set out in the previous section is as best I currently understand it, the process and military training that God is using, He progressively permits us to engage the enemy in more and more direct



combat with less and less direct support and protection. Those who will miss it will find themselves wounded by Demons, taken prisoner in false doctrines and deception, when extreme cases falling away and losing their salvation. Soldiers in such situations know that they must be able to trust every single fellow combatant with his life. No soldier can cover his back as well as his front. He is totally reliant on the other men and his team to protect him. If one gets struck by the enemy, he is totally reliant on his fellows to save him. If one is ill-disciplined or disobedient, the whole team is at risk. All know that they dare not fight amongst themselves no matter how much they might dislike one another or disagree while relaxing back at base. They cannot allow even the slightest amount of division. If they do, it may well cause them all to die. Christian soldiers for the most part have yet to learn this lesson.

The role of the apostle is in essence comparable to that of the general officer as outlined above. Many years of refining, taking the lead in battle, identifying intelligence needs, giving direction to hundreds or thousands or even hundreds of thousands through prophets, evangelists, pastors, and teachers, delivering rebuke and correction to any soldier of any other rank that God wants corrected. The service of pastors and teachers on the other hand, is more directly associated with a small group of soldiers on the ground. As such their role and functions are probably more comparable to that of non-commissioned officers, that is, it is primarily a tactical utilisation. If after many successful missions and numerous medals and recommendations, the commander becomes proud, self-confident, careless, ill-disciplined or rebellious, he is likely to be taken captive or killed. The same applies to the Christian. No matter how much God has used you, no matter what mighty works have been done through you, the moment you fail to sharpen the sword of the spirit, allow your armour to slip, disobey or question the Holy Spirit, start selling or rebelling in other ways, the enemy will immediately pounce to kill, steal, and destroy. The visions reported by Joyner graphically illustrate how mature believers allow pride, self-confidence and other sins to cause them to fall and be taken captive or killed.

Fortunately we serve a merciful God and many are saved by Him from spiritual death by His intervention, even sometimes to the extent of premature death. Seek first the Kingdom of God and all these things shall be added unto you. And listen to these teachings, recognise that financial and material prosperity is not the primary benefit of being a Christian. Jesus said to seek first the Kingdom of God. In other words, seek to know Him, His will, to do His will, to know Him, to please Him and to serve Him. In doing this, you will set yourself free from bandages and footholds and material and physical blessings will in due course will be added on to you. Therefore, financial and material lack is a useful indicator and the means whereby God can correct our sin and direct us. If you are listening to this teaching primarily because you are seeking financial and material well-being but is not seeking God as your first priority, then you are unlikely to find much of value in these teachings. A word of caution, seeing footholds in others. As you listen to these teachings, you are quite likely to find that you see much of what is written here is relevant to people you know. Firstly, do not become proud. God resists the proud. Secondly, do not feel self-justified. Thirdly, do not condemn them or judge them and lest you are also judged. Pray for them and if you can truly speak to them with love and compassion and God has clearly told you to speak to them. So speak to them. Generally God shows us weaknesses and sin in others, so we will examine ourselves more closely and so that we can pray for them. The more I learn the ways of God, the more I realised that He seldom needs my help to point out their sin to them. Even in my capacity as a prophet of God, He only sends me to others to point out their sin as a last resort and then in very specific ways. I am increasingly realising that there is a particular gifting required to communicate to someone on a sensitive issue like sin in a way that it does not cause them to stumble but in fact assist them to see their sin and turn around.

Is Satan really stupid? I have heard it said by several preachers that Satan is stupid and does not learn. Does that verse exist in the Bible? Any army that underestimates its foes are asking to be defeated. Has the church underestimated theirs? The level of falling away, financial bondage, lack of health, strife, etc., which suggest that currently Satan is anything but defeated. He is intimately weaker than God and yet he is keeping millions if not billions out of the kingdom and keeping the rest in bondage and survival. The nearly empty throne near God seen by Joyner in his vision graphically portrays the extent which Satan is currently victorious. It seems reasonable to assume that when God created Adam, Satan knew as little or less about Adam and the rules of warfare as Adam did. I doubt that God made a point of educating Satan. In this case, we must assume that as much as the people of Israel and the church have been learning what is required to truly serve God with all our hearts, all our minds and all our strength. So Satan has been learning how to cause us to fail.

Based on the depiction of Satan coming before God's throne giving in Job and the reference of Satan as the accuser of the brethren in Revelation, Satan has been coming before the throne of God at least since the time of Adam and probably a lot longer. At the very least, Satan has been before the throne of God accusing the brethren for about six thousand years. That is a lot of time to learn and even longer time if he has learnt nothing. It seems reasonable to conclude that Satan has at the very least observed that there are certain accusations that he is able to bring against certain classes of believer, but are regularly successful and that there are others which meet with less success. Likewise he has probably observed that there are certain accusations that he cannot bring against someone who has just made a commitment but others such as perhaps pride that will be almost universally successful if brought against a believer of some years' journey. After all, God resists the [inaudible 1:05:58] hardly likely to block Satan from using pride as a foothold. If this is the case, we should for our own God, conclude that Satan knows a lot more than we do about the subject under discussion and that he is probably learning more rapidly than most of us.

Sanctification and holiness: The process that I outlined above could also be termed a journey towards sanctification and holiness where the journey is well demonstrated by the book of pilgrims progress which is also available on video. As I understand it, sanctification is a process of making clean of removing those aspects in our lives that are not pleasing to God that cause us to sin to put a distance between ourselves and God. I say this not in a judgemental way, but simply from a deep personal recognition that I am not the person that God wants me to be, that I do not have a depth of relationship with Him that others have, which the Bible shows me is possible and that as I speak, I may have been closer to Him in the past. In a similar vein, holiness is a separation from the things of this world as ruled by the God of this world, Satan, allied with a cleaving unto God who is the ultimate expression of holiness. I am not sure exactly what the distinction is but I am certain that as we sanctify ourselves and set ourselves apart for His service, we draw closer to His holiness. In saying this, I must stress that I am not talking of a work's programme but I am referring to a spirit-led process which progressively draws us closer to our Lord and our saviour Jesus Christ.

Jesus said that we will do the same and greater works than he did, but many are even close to doing the same work, let alone greater works. The non-Christian means little Christ-like ones, which was first given to the believers of the Antioch. Then few of those who claim the title Christian in fact demonstrate Christ likeness. The journey towards sanctification and holiness therefore is also journey toward Christ-likeness, which is a comprehensive expression of meekness, gentleness, humility, compassion, lack of self, intimacy with the Holy Spirit, deep-rooted implantation of the word of God, and assurance of the covenant rights of the believer to a point where the person concerned indeed

performs the same works than Jesus did and greater works, the lame walks, the blind see, the dead raised and so forth.

Blood covenant: We have a covenant, cupped with the blood of Jesus Christ as he hang on the cross of Calvary. As I have understood the teaching on hesed referred to previously by Kenneth Copeland, the old covenant was cut with Abraham when God walked in the blood of the animals in Genesis 15 and with Abraham in Genesis 17. When Abraham circumcised himself and all the males in his family in service, recognising that Abraham and the men with him were mature adults, there is a certain type here of those of us who come to know the Lord Jesus Christ after we have grown up in the world.

Circumcision of the heart: If we understand that circumcision involves the cutting of flesh from probably the most sensitive organ of the male anatomy, we begin to understand that it was very painful. If we understand that Abraham and the men with him circumcised themselves without aesthetic using Flint knives and not surgical steel scalpels, we begin to consider the magnitude of the pain that they probably experienced. If we take account of the fact that healing of the wound must have taken at least a week or two and that the formation of a scab on the organ concerned is likely to be extremely uncomfortable, if not downright painful, we gain an understanding that circumcision is not something to be undertaken lightly and that once undertaken, these are lasting impression. We then recognise that circumcision is the cutting away of something that is not necessary not useful, then I suggest that the circumcision of the heart referred to under the new covenant should take on a whole new meaning. In a sense, much of what is written about here, relates to that circumcision of the heart. Accordingly, we should not be surprised that this cutting away at times painful and requires a determination to proceed that is not frequently adequately presented to those who make a first-time confession of Jesus Christ as Lord and saviour.

If we recognise the extreme agony that Jesus endured on the cross for us voluntarily and with complete foreknowledge, we should find this progressive non-physical process of circumcision much less difficult to accept. The cup that Jesus drank, many of us read the reference in the Gospel of John and elsewhere to the cup that Jesus drank and gratefully prophase that he has taken all our sins and that he knew no sin became sin for us but few have any comprehension of the enormity of what Jesus did for us. It can be presented as follows: Consider the worst possible sin that you know of, something that you could not being to consider yourself committing. Consider how repelled you are by the thought of anyone committing such a sin. Weigh that repulsion up against all the sins that you have in fact committed in your life and consider how much more repulsive that sin must have been for Jesus who knew no sin. Finally, consider that Jesus not only took that sin on himself at Calvary, but he took on himself the unmentionable atrocities of the concentration camps of the Second World War, the abominations of the dark ages, the acts of Satanic worship and witchcraft, which are perpetrated even today and ever other sin that has ever been committed and will ever be committed.

It makes you think, does not it? I truly believe that as we gain an increasing revelation of the magnitude of what Jesus has done for us, we will increasingly desire to become like him and we will also find it far easier to count all joy when we fall into various trials. Such a revelation becomes far easier to desire to understand what is taught in the sessions that follow and to determine how it applies in our own lives. The pain of circumcision of our hearts also becomes easier to bear with joy. This teaching does not contain all truth. I have already stated that I do not claim to have all truths. I feel a need to stress this point as follows: In our daily life, we seldom encounters somebody who obtains 100% for tests and exams. I have certainly never encountered somebody who has obtained a 100% in every single test and exam that they have written. Not one of us have 100% all truth. Only the Father, the son, and the Holy Spirit are all truth. In fact, Gaussian statistics indicate that on any subject, we will have the

so-called Gaussian distribution of knowledge. In other words, there will be some who know absolutely nothing, zero percent, and there might be some who know all there is to know, but I think that is unlikely. The rest of the people will be distributed between these two extremes with levels of knowledge that follow some sort of Bell-shaped curve. Simply put, we all have gaps and errors in our knowledge. In other terms, an expert can be viewed as someone who is right more often than they are wrong and someone who is right 80% of the time is probably a genius. In other terms, most of us would be well satisfied if our child obtained 60% aggregate at the end of their school careers and would be thrilled if they obtain 75%. It is highly unlikely that we would send them back to school until they obtain 100%.

After all, what they do learn at school is a minute fraction of all the knowledge in the world and no one will ever know it all. What this translates to in the context of this teaching as well as our Christian walk is that no man knows everything. Undoubtedly you will find aspects of this teaching that you disagree with and it is quite possible that you will be correct, either because I have missed something, because I have over simplified or for any other reason. The challenge to you is to find the truth that this teaching contains that you lack and to ignore anything that may be incorrect. The challenge for me is to hear you when you offer me corrections and suggestions for improvement and to pray over them and modify my teaching as appropriate. However, if you are offended by something that I teach, or that you know to be incorrect and reject the entire teaching, you may lose out on some revelation that is vital to you. Conversely, if you blindly accept this teaching as being 100% correct, you may go over truth that you already have. I stress that it is my understanding that each one of us is accountable for dividing the word of God correctly and that we should seek the truth from whatever source God and His wisdom makes available to us.

Trust no man but God. More too often we become disciples of one or other preacher, teacher or pastor. We will attach ourselves to a particular congregation and agree to submit to their leadership. In the process, if we are not very careful, we come to rely on the council of men in preference to the council of the Holy Spirit and the Word of God. Each one of us is accountable to God for our actions and if He speaks to us through His word or by His spirit, it is up to us to discern that this is truly God speaking to us and to act on what He says to us even if men do not agree. In my journey to date, I have encountered a number of situations where I was told by pastors and others that I was missing it only an error. In one case, I had to revisit the same issue year after year for three years, each time crying out to God for guidance, each time receiving the same answer, each time being told by pastors and elders that it was my flesh for the devil and could not possibly be God. Eventually I obeyed the Holy Spirit instead of man and saw immediate breakthrough. Remember the word says, submit to God, resist the devil. The Bible is full of reports of men of God who refused to submit to man in order to obey God and yet today, many pastors demand that we submitted to them in areas where there is no basis for them to set themselves up as rulers.

Remember that if you are in a position of leadership, the word tells you not to lord it over your flock. If you choose to obey men rather than God that is rebellion, which the Bible says is as a sin of witchcraft. Refer to Saul in 1 Samuel 15 and others in Scripture. Rebelling against the word of God, either in His word, the Bible, through spirit directly to you, or through His apostles and prophets then they are anointed as best souls through whom God speaks, [inaudible 1:17:29] lead to a rejection by God. Hebrews 6:6 warns us against crucifying Jesus Christ again. We are in age where God is rejecting those who submit to men instead of Him.

Once saved, always saved. Verses work out your salvation with fear and trembling. There is a widely held doctrine that once you confess with your mouth and believe with your heart that Jesus Christ is

Lord, it does not matter what you do thereafter. You will sit with Christ on his throne for eternity. This teaching ignores numerous Scripture that warn you to work out your salvation with fear and trembling, exhort you to run the race to the end, cautioned that your name can be blotted out of the book of life and encourage you to overcome to the end. The book of the revelation of Jesus Christ alone contains numerous warnings. Hebrews 6:6 contains another. The Bible is full of words of caution. There is no doubt in my mind that only a select remnant will in fact rule and reign for a thousand years with Jesus. If this is the case, then much of what this teaching contains takes on a much greater significance. If you doubt this interpretation, I encourage you to pray sincerely about it and study your Bible with this specific topic in mind. As a point of departure, consider whether Jesus would have endured what he did on the cross in order to permit us to adopt and approach our Christian walk in which we have appropriate promises while ignoring Commandments with regard to obedience, etc. Please carefully consider all that follows in this light.

Read the back of the book 'We Win.' A statement which one hears from the pulpit and elsewhere from time to time is along the lines. Read the back of the book 'We Win,' referring to the final victory described in the book of the revelation of Jesus Christ. Keep in mind that the back of the book also refers to names being blotted out from the book of life and those who endure to the end amongst other warnings, while our desire should be to be among those who rule and reign with Christ. We should take careful note of the conditions of obedience and other constraints that are set out clearly throughout the Bible. If Paul was concerned that he might not finish the race, how much more should each of us be concerned. Complacency is certainly one of the footholds that Satan is seeking to use to destroy the children of God.

Poverty is an indicator and not a measure. Before I write further I must clearly position my thinking with regard to poverty and why I believe that the Lord led me to use poverty as a pivotal focus for this teaching, as well as why I believe that there is currently so much poverty in the church. It is important to recognise that Jesus did not guarantee that we would or be abundantly materially rich in this life. He commanded us to store up treasures in Heaven, not on Earth. He also stated that it is easier for a camel to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God. Incidentally, Lamb's translation suggests that the correct translation there is that it is easier for a rope to pass through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter the kingdom of God. We are also told that the rich young ruler to sell all that he has and give to the poor. We read throughout the Scriptures of anointed men of God who has spent much of their lives in apparent lack. John the Baptist would certainly seem to be one. It depends on [inaudible 1:21:15] are your favourite [inaudible 1:21:16] or not and how we measure contentment with godliness against. For example a madman of the Gadarenes. God surely supplied all of John's needs. These Scriptures indicate to me that while God desires us to prosper and be in health, He does not desire this at the expense of our immortal souls. I am persuaded that the tests and trials with regard to finances are designed to bring us to a point where we are able to handle material prosperity without affecting our relationship with God and our fellow men. Part of this process involves reaching a point where we recognise that all that we have belongs to God and that we are merely custodians of it. We have a responsibility to give as He directs us.

In particular, this requires that those who have their own businesses realise that it is actually God's business and it is their responsibility to take care of the business on His behalf. As with Paul, we required to learn how to be [inaudible 1:22:13] to live in abundance. The prosperity that God chooses to give us on this Earth may be more a function that He is calling on our lives than it is a function of our wants and perceived needs. In other words, if we are called to pastor congregations in areas of

great poverty, but those of us who come from relatively affluent backgrounds consider it to be poverty that constitute God's abundance and blessing in such a community. The measure of prosperity that God considers appropriate to each of our lives may be directly related to the level of prosperity that he considers appropriate to the mission that He has given us.

Accordingly, I want to stress that no matter what you may find presented in this teaching, you should not categorically interpret a situation that you consider to be poverty as necessarily indicating that any of what is taught here applies to you. Do not however likely disregard it either. These principles also apply to health and overall spiritual condition. Conversely there are many who claim to be Christians who are prospering and yet there are clearly areas of their lives that are not right. Again, it appears that in some cases God's grace covers this situation while in others, the person concerned is not doing material damage to the Forces of Darkness and accordingly Satan leaves them alone. Thus I make the decision that financial and material prosperity is no more an indication that you are fully in the will of God and poverty is an indication that you are entirely out of the will of God. If this last statements appear contradictory, it is simply a reflection of my observation that people seem to develop backward arguments to support preconceived scriptural conclusions. There are numerous scientific, mathematics, engineering and other sources and problem-solving logic, etc., which according to my recollection, will more clearly demonstrate the futility of facile argument in order to deduce sustaining of any individual with God who looks at our hearts and we are told not to judge.

Where this teaching is intended to apply is in cases where you have a sure conviction that Yahweh (God) has promised your level of prosperity in which you know you are not walking. This appears to be much of the body of Christ today. Equally many of the points set out in this document probably apply to other areas where the promises of God do not appear to be effective. Ultimately, each of us will stand before Jesus throne and be called to account for our lives totally on our own. If I am in error, I will be called to account for my error and its impact on you and others. If you have accepted my error, you will be called to account for your decision to accept it. In the meanwhile, only you can assess where you stand with God. That is not for me or any other human being to judge. If He speaks to you through one of His apostles or prophets, that is a different matter.

Faith: Nothing in this teaching should be taken as in any way seeking to deny the importance of faith. Without faith, it is impossible to please God and everything that does not come from faith is sin. Romans 14:23. This entire teaching assumes that the reader is aware of the importance of faith. There are excellent teachings on faith by Kenneth Copeland, Kenneth Hegan, Benny Hinn and numerous others. This teaching is not intended to duplicate these teachings and any listener who is not informed of the principles of faith and walking by faith is encouraged to seek such teachings as a priority. This teaching is intended to assist people who have found that their faith does not appear to be working.

The name of Jesus: The name of Jesus Christ is the name above all names. At the name of Jesus Christ, every knee shall bow, every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord. There is immense power in the name of Jesus. Never forget this and never use the name of Jesus lightly, vainly or as a common word. It is the holiest name of all names. I have experienced angels catching my car and hurdled sideways over embankment and gently setting the car down at the foot of the embankment just by crying out Jesus as I lost control of the car. Many others have had similar experiences. Never forget the power of the name of Jesus, never cease to confess the name of Jesus over your life and circumstances, but confess with respect and reverence for who he is.

I set out in the sections that I have taught today to more clearly explain my thinking behind what will God willing, follow in the weeks ahead. This discussion is predicated on the assumption that in order

to develop a rationale argument, it is necessary to make certain assumptions and principles explicit. I hope that I have to a point accomplished this. Since I am certain that there are passages that will prove not to be clear or open to misinterpretation, when there are assumptions that I have made that I have not made explicit, I welcome all comment and suggestion for improvement or correction. I pray that as you listen to these tapes, the spirit of God will speak to you and open your eyes, open the eyes of your understanding to see the truths concerning that which may be oppressing you and holding you financially, health-wise and in any other manner in bondage right now. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you. In Jesus name, amen.

## **02 08 Poverty in the Church Part 2**

Today's teaching is the second part of the teaching on Poverty in the Church of Jesus Christ, which in turn is part of the series on Judgement. In the previous teaching, I have outlined the basic considerations with regard to my understanding of what the scriptures teach us and my own practical experience of the laws of judgement and grace operating in one's life and made use of an analogy relating to the development of an individual from conception through childhood, through military training becoming a general officer commanding in an army. I made the point that the growth of a Christian soldier had many parallels and that consequently we could expect that in the early days of our Christian walk, we would be accorded a large proportion of grace, but as we mature, we would be expected to stand more and more on our own feet, be more and more accountable for our actions, and therefore to be judged more harshly. Accordingly, part of that process was undoubtedly the increased responsibility to ensure that spiritually we are in a place where the blessings of God could in fact manifest in our life.

Again, I see poverty, financial lack, or lack in health, physical lack if you like, or even spiritual lack has been indicative of the process of judgement in our lives indicative of sin in our lives and that consequently it is vital that where there is lack in any of these areas that we examine ourselves in the Word of God and we identify where sin is present. In today's teaching, I am going to seek to address some of the basic principles that I have identified and practiced and again, I will continue in more or less a sequence that these things become important in my life.

I must stress that what I am presenting in this series of teaching is not intended to be some form of recipe book. It is based on my own experience and I am quite certain that there will be different things in lives of others and there will be different priorities. Only God, the Holy Spirit through His word assisted by his holy apostles, prophets, pastors and teachers, can lead you to address the issues that apply to your life right now. Remember also that you are engaged in the long-distance race or journey. Some things that will be mentioned in this teaching and subsequently you may have dealt with years ago, others you may only confront in days to come. Fit these teachings and seek what is weak to you today in Jesus name.

In today's teaching, I will probably revisit many issues which are fundamental to our existing lifestyle in Christ. However, I have found in my own life that these issues sometimes get overlooked and have to be revisited. So I have taken the liberty of mentioning them here for the sake of completeness. Read the word daily. First major revelation that I obtained after attending to the Lord and receiving a fuller revelation of Jesus Christ as Lord and saviour is that the Bible is indeed his word and that my spirit is fed by reading and hearing the word. I have repeatedly found that when I am less diligent in reading the word, things start to go wrong. Based on wise counsel that I received in early stage, I made a real

effort to read psalms and especially proverbs on a regular basis and to read both Old and New Testaments from beginning to end on a continuous basis, getting through the Old Testament about once a year and the New Testament about three or four times a year. As I have mentioned before, I have also made a decision to accept the Bible as the living word of God and ask God by faith to answer all my questions which He has done. I imagine that this has played a pivotal role in bringing me to the point of producing these teachings.

If you are not reading your Bible at least morning and evening virtually every day, I would encourage you to start immediately. God can speak to you through the Bible and also train up your spirit more than you can possibly imagine if you have never read your Bible regularly. If you have let your daily Bible reading slip, you should not be surprised if Satan is having a field day with your finances or other areas of your life.

Translation Issues: Many people find they have difficulty with the Bible. It is important to realise that the Word of God is the original Hebrew or Aramaic text and that in cases there are errors in translation which cancel, distort, or in extreme cases, pervert the Word of God. In recent years, the Lord has increasingly shown me that there are aspects of many translations which are seriously in error. Most translations contains some form of editorial license and all translations that I have encountered have been filtered through the modern interpretation and practice and teachings of the faith, all of which had been coloured by the events of the Dark Ages and falling to apostasy, which started not more than 100 years after Jesus' death. Thus we find that every translation is suspect and contains errors in some area or another, and some errors have been caved through virtually every translation. For example, a close investigation reveals that the phrase "*The Lord*" which occurs well over 6000 times in the Old Testament is in fact a translation of the proper name Yahweh, which is God's true name. So in the same way that my name is James and my title to my wife is her husband, it would very strange if she was constantly to call me husband, instead of James, and accordingly it certainly would appear that it is not correct to refer to our God who has given us His proper name Yahweh as the Lord, which is a very impersonal title as distinction is very personal, proper name.

There are many other instances like that instances where translators have been influenced by their understanding of the modern use of English paragraph and understanding of doctrine and that is a whole topic in its own right. But it is suffice to stay at this state that many of the aspects of the Bible in English, no matter what translation you are reading which do not always makes sense or seem contradictory relates to translation errors. In addition to that, I have recently come across an English translation of the [inaudible 0:09:01], the Aramaic text by George Lanza which makes the assertion that the original New Testament Scriptures were in fact recorded in Aramaic and not in Greek, as is generally thought and generally accepted. That makes complete sense since there is no indication if we investigate further that Jesus spoke Greek or that any of the apostles spoke Greek. In fact, there are keywords even in English translations like Abba (father) which are Aramaic words which are in use in Aramaic speaking parts of the world even today. And that gives us a clue that in fact the New Testament Scriptures were not originally recorded in Greek but were recorded in Aramaic, which is very close to Hebrew and was the tongue spoken by Jesus and accordingly we find errors in the English, which results from errors in the translation to Greek and the translation from Greek to English.

It is vitally important that we understand that we should base our faith and our belief on what Scriptures originally said and therefore we must rely on the Holy Spirit to show us where there are errors and we should not accept a particular English translation or translations as actually being what God said in every situation. In that regard, I have found the Amplified Bible and also the Living Torah series, which is a modern Jewish translation both very helpful in gaining a deeper understanding of



what the scriptures actually say. I mention this here firstly in order that you may take note of it. Secondly, in order that if there are statements or interpretations that I make in this teaching that you do not agree with, you consider the possibility that you had been influenced by an inaccurate translation and therefore investigate other translations. It does seem to me that in extreme cases by quoting a translation that is significantly inaccurate, one could be giving Satan a foothold in one's life.

Discrepancies in Bible: Some people have difficulty with the fact that there are minor inconsistencies between historical accounts, particularly between Kings and Chronicles and within the four Gospels. It is important to realise that certain of the books of the Bible had been given by direct dictation of the Holy Spirit through God's prophets. Other books are historical accounts written after the event of situations in which God moved. Kings and Chronicles and the Gospels together with certain other books fall into this category. As best as I know, the discrepancies refer to a clear, almost exclusively in these books. This does not in any way influence the integrity of the Bible as a whole but wisdom is required to recognise this reality. It is foolishness to argue with someone that the entire Bible, every word of all 66 books is in error, in 2 Samuel 24:1 and 1 Chronicles 21:1 both describe the same incident differently. While it is possible that this may be influenced by translation, there is certainly grounds to admit the possibility that describes who recorded these two historical records may have relied at this point on verbal accounts which had become slightly distorted. To the best of my knowledge, none of these discrepancies has any material impact on any aspect of the Christian and Jewish faiths, which is of material consequence to us.

Apply the Word: Again, a very basic principle. If you do not apply what you read in the Bible in your own life, then there is little point in reading it. Continuous prayerful consideration of the word and its application is vital.

Call no man teacher: Jesus said to call no man teacher and said that he was sending the Holy Spirit to be out teacher. Rely on Him to show you how to interpret and apply His word. Regard teachings as a means of gaining further insight and access to other people's revelation, but understand always your accountability to ensure that what is taught is of God and not of man and people [inaudible 0:13:43]. Also, keep in mind the remarks that I made in the previous teaching about all works of men containing some error.

Error concealed amongst truth: On several occasions, I have heard speakers deliver powerful and anointed messages, but then deviate into their own understanding and sometimes serious error at some point. In several cases, this deviation has been into areas of false doctrine and modern folklore, which on deeper investigation of Scripture reveals to be incorrect. In some cases, these small amounts of error amongst large amounts of truth are potentially spiritually life threatening. Constantly seek the guidance of the Holy Spirit. There is also risk that because that has been so much truth in a message that the entire message is trustingly accepted as truth. Only Jesus has all the truth. Constantly remember the example of the pupil getting 75% at the end of the school career.

Not one draft or title shall pass away: There is a tendency to disregard the Old Testament as well as the Book of Revelation of Jesus Christ as being too difficult. We must trust the Holy Spirit to reveal that which He requires us to know from all books of the Bible. If we do not read all books of the Bible regularly, He cannot speak to us through them. My own experience indicates that it is possible to read a particular book, such as Job half a dozen times before you begin to receive from it and when suddenly you cannot understand why I have never spoke to you before. This is a particularly important statement in the context of this discourse, with Job being an example of a book that contains much

wisdom applicable to the subject matter of this document but which is frequently referred to as being difficult to understand.

The Word of God is incredibly multifaceted: I recently read a Jewish source which refers to the 70 facets of the Torah's jewelled words, suggesting a richness, which very few Christian readers have begun to understand. For begin to appreciate this, we will begin to understand the extent to which every verse of the Bible can potentially contain an answer to a problem that we are experiencing that no one else will know or has ever noticed. The Word of God truly is anew every morning.

Keep slogging through the entire Bible by faith and keep asking God to open it to you. If you choose not to read the entire Bible, that is your prerogative, but you must accept responsibility for any consequences that may result. Equally, if you find the Bible hard going, then I would suggest that you cry out to God in faith and ask Him to open your heart to receive His word. Truly, if we love God, we should not find the Bible such hard going. We should have a hunger to read His word.

Feed your spirit constantly: In addition to reading your Bible daily, feed your spirit at every possible opportunity with audio tapes, teachings, praise and worship and so forth in your car and at your home. Read books, watch videos of teachings, Crusades, etc. at home and listen to praise and worship at every opportunity. I tell you if you have constantly fed your spirit abundantly over a sustained period of time, it is impossible to comprehend the difference that it will make to you. God is the source of all wisdom and understanding. He knows all that you need to know and it is not difficult [inaudible 0:17:39] to grasp. The more time you spend with God, the more He will reveal of what you need to know.

One of the highlights of my spiritual life to date is an occasion when I was physically exhausted to the point that I seriously considered cancelling a one-day management workshop for my most important clients at that time. I had not done any preparation and thought that I was too tired to concentrate effectively for eight hours to the senior level management delegate group. In the event, I prayed in tongues while listening to praise tapes all the way to the client, about a 45-minute drive, and to undertake what I still consider to be the best facilitation that I have ever delivered and in the process completely redefined the workshop procedure and the fashion that has laid the foundation for many major opportunities subsequently. I truly believe that if I had not fed my spirit in preference to adopting the ways of the world, the workshop would have been a failure and I would not have developed the technique referred to.

We serve an awesome God who is far greater than our limited understanding allows us to grasp. I could share numerous other instances with supernatural revelation, I found myself able to contribute constructively in meetings on subjects where in the natural I had no basis to say anything. Based on my understanding of God obtained through prayer and feeding our spirits on the Word of God is far beyond anything that we can gain through the world's ways and teachings. In the past seven years, I have not watched secular television or read newspapers other than briefly on [inaudible 0:19:27] occasions and I have hardly read any secular technical books. What I can say with complete confidence that my level of understanding and my chosen area of expertise and my acceptance as an expert in my field has grown more in that period from previous years when I diligently watched the news, read the papers, and read textbooks. With my name has been listed in Who's Who in the world since 1999 and in Who's Who in science and engineering since 1998, I have to give all the glory to God for this.

Prayer: Spend as much time as possible in prayer, quiet time, etc. with God. Later on I will list some things that I found helpful to pray. Recognise that God is I am. He knows all things. He knows what

you are going through and why. He knows what needs to happen in order for things to change. Ask Him all you need to know. At the same time, prayer is vital. All authority on Earth has been given to man and Yahweh (God) can do nothing unless we exercise our authority and pray things through.

Adam gave all authority on the Earth to Satan and while Jesus has given his authority to his body, the church, we have to wield that authority because Satan still controls a large proportion of the people on the Earth and his Demons and Fallen Angels are constantly seeking to kill, steal, and destroy. I have found over the years that asking God to explain passages of Scripture that I did not understand has always produced results. Asking for signs to guide me provided the signs consistent with His word and He had already spoken to me in depth has also been fruitful. A word of caution, pray for such signs silently in your heart, not aloud, asking that He bring the right people into your life and remove the wrong people from your life can produce some unpleasant surprises but is in my own experience a vital ongoing prayer.

At the same time, God is not amenable to demands, bribes, etc. He is the source of all wisdom and understanding and accordingly you can enter into any discussion with Him that you might enter into with the most reputable professional adviser that you could consider retaining. Do not be afraid to ask Him what to pray, but do not [inaudible 0:22:04] Him, that will not get you any way. You could also be getting into witchcraft. When you are unsure what to pray, pray in tongues. Wherever possible formulate your question on the matter in hand in your own language and then pray in tongues until you feel that you have prayed all you can. Some people call this praying through, referring to a sense of completeness or fulfilment that accompanies a prayer that has been prayed through to completion.

God's people perish for lack of knowledge: The Word of God says that His people perish for lack of knowledge. Much of what this document seeks to achieve is to make readers aware on a headline basis of aspects of spiritual life within their lack knowledge that is causing them to perish. I strongly recommended that where things in this document do not seem to apply to you on first reading, should you subsequently find yourself under attack, read through these notes again. My own experience is that we periodically have to revisit issues which we thought we are dealt with. Other things which over time we thought did not apply to us suddenly have vital relevance months or years later. Small things like honouring God with your tongue, at a very early stage I was strongly impressed by message in which the congregation was challenged to honour God with their time, by being on time for church meetings. That has been with me ever since and I truly believe that this is a small way in which we can show our reverence and respect for God. He has done so much for us.

Renewing your mind: The principle of renewing your minds with the Word of God cannot be overstressed. There are many teachings on the subject, so I do not want to [inaudible 0:24:00] point. My own experience indicates that if you are constantly renewing your mind with the Word of God, constantly spending time in His presence and paying in the spirit at every opportunity, He will take care of the information you need for your daily tasks far more than our understanding what let us to grasp. This may depend on your calling and gifting. But I certainly recommend that you consider carefully. The more you feed your spirit with secular television, secular radio, and newspapers and magazines, the more world reminded you will be. The more you feed your spirit with the Word of God, anointed teachings, praise and worship and the like, the more God minded you will be and the more you will be lead by the Holy Spirit in all that you do.

I urge you to pray about this and earnestly consider it. I found that I can relax far more in the presence of God than at any secular event. I fully expect that should you persevere down the path referred to here, you will find that it is the same for you.

The joy of the Lord is my strength. Eventually if you constantly press in, you can expect to reach the situation where you can truly claim that the joy of the Lord is my strength. At the time that I wrote the document in which this teaching is based, in the natural I was facing financial ruin. But I did not think that I had ever had such settled assurance that Jesus is mine, that I am his, and that he should supply all my needs according to his riches and glory. It was an incredible experience which cannot be properly described unless you have been there yourself. Truly I can say I walked through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil. It is a wonderful relief to experience that peace and joy that pastors all understanding.

Be separate: We are called on to be separate, while at the same time going into all the world to preach the gospel. I have referred previously to limiting exposure to the world through television, video, newspapers, etc. The same applies to the people that you keep company with. Great care is needed in discussing the subject since different people are called by God to have different types of interactions with different sectors of the world community. The fundamental principle that applies is to direct discretionary time to building ourselves up in the Holy Spirit. I am not exposing ourselves to the world system where it is not necessary. This topic has the potential to become a religious dogma and so prayerful consideration is called for. Bearing in mind that in order to complete the race and receive the prize, certain sacrifices are likely to be called for. The question each of us has to address is how we will account for our time when we finally stand before the Throne of God. Forsake not the fellowship of the brethren. My most significant spiritual progress has occurred during periods when I had been attending church twice on Sundays and attending at least one midweek meeting. All evidence that I have encountered supports the view that the more time one spends in fellowship with other believers, particularly corporate prayers and worship, not drinking tea and discussing the rugby, the more one is brought up, the more opportunity there is for God to speak to you through His word and His prophets and teachers.

If you are facing serious challenges, I will encourage you to make every effort to spend as much time as possible in the company of anointed straightforward believers of meetings where God is moving. Not a dead meeting or meetings where demonic manifestations are occurring or with outright error and heresy is being preached as is currently quite prevalent. I would recommend that you pray and ask Yahweh, Lord God to show you where you should be fellowshiping at any time and to move as He leads you. Making the Holy Spirit welcome in your home, your car, and so forth, recognise that the Holy Spirit is as much a person as you or I and that He wants to spend time with you probably more than most of us want to spend time with them. Make your home and car places where He feels welcome. Remove all ungodly artefacts, pictures, music, etc., from your home and if appropriate as we will discuss later, destroy it. For years now I have played praise and worship music on low volume on the CD player in the house day and night and have prayed that Jesus should feel free to rest in my home whether I am there or not. My desire is that he should feel welcome at all times. As one realises what he has done for us, it is only right that we should do all we can to ensure that our dwellings, cars, etc. are places where he can spend time without being troubled by the inequity of the world. The more Jesus is welcomed in your home, the less Satan will feel welcome.

The flesh: There are many teachings on pulling the flesh under. We are all tripped up by our emotions, our intellect, our habits and other factors associated with our bodies. We are enjoined to bring our bodies into submission. Part of this involves willingness to endure discomfort, lack of sleep and other unpleasant things in order to serve God at times. Please note that I am not advocating some form of monastic existence, but there are times when we have to press in no matter how tired we are. There are many testimonies of how people have pressed in and found that their tiredness has subsided as

they draw closer to God. God destroys the flesh, idols, and other things. There are certain times in our lives that God himself will seek to destroy in our lives. Not all discomfort comes from Satan. Although God may use Satan. Sometimes God initiates things in order to bring us to where He wants us. Be careful that you do not find yourself rebuking Satan or condemning other person when God is in fact behind the attack. He loves you so much that He does not want you to continue in certain things.

Sometimes we also pray for things we do not understand the consequences of, and then do not like the outcome. I started praying some years ago for God to take the wrong people out of my life and then found the next few years rather uncomfortable as He systematically removed all the people that He did not want in my life. If you prayed for Him to give you His fire, do not be surprised if the heat is painful.

Water baptism: As I understand it, water baptism is something that we should undertake as soon as possible after we have accepted Jesus Christ as Lord and saviour. I also do not find any Scripture to indicate that this is an option. The washing away of sin and cleansing, etc. associated with water baptism are a vital step towards sanctification and in effect to Christian walk. Incidentally, study of Jewish translations of the Torah revealed that water baptism, immersion in [inaudible 0:31:44] is a fundamental and routine principle of cleansing of any uncleanness. This was given to Moses at Mount Sinai. In other words, the Jews clearly understood what John the Baptist was doing.

Pray in the spirit without ceasing: The gift of tongues, the ability to pray in the spirit is vital and often underestimated. It is possible to pray under your breath and tongues in a meeting on a plane or train or in diverse other situations. It builds up your spirit and refreshes you and allows you to pray the perfect will of God. If you are not constantly praying in the spirit, there is a strong likelihood that you will come under attack.

Foolish and empty words: The word is very specific about empty or vain words. Many so-called jokes and practical jokes are when push comes to shove lives. All lies are from Satan. He is the father of lies. In Revelation 21:8 and other Scriptures clearly indicate that God hates liars. Jokes and practical jokes and particularly those that include distortions of the truth must surely open the door to the enemy.

Negative confession: The power of life and death are in the tongue. If you confess your faith in the word of God, you will energize the angels of Heaven and all-around you will know who you are serving. If you constantly confess the [inaudible 0:33:17] which are contrary to the Word of God, you are likely to energize Satan's cohorts, his fallen angels and Demons. Satan will only know if he is getting through to you by your words or your actions. Only God knows your thoughts in your heart. If you cannot confess your faith, keep quiet. There is however a distinction between making a positive confession and a presumptions confession. Confessing carnal, natural, worldly things which God has not explicitly promised is not faith. It is presumption at best, foolishness and deceit words. Faith is not confessing things to audiences which God never intended to hear them.

Restitution: Restitution is not a concept the church talks about much these days. We prefer to believe that when we are born again, all things pass away, not just in terms of salvation but also in terms of a much broader spectrum. I find no Scripture to substantiate this and my own experiences proved conclusively to me that claiming salvation, pleading the blood of Christ and repenting to God does not relieve us of our responsibility to make right with people when we have wronged, whether before or after making a decision to accept Jesus Christ as our personal saviour.

Restitution as I have encountered it has included amongst other things. Face to face and telephonic repentance of wrong actions and words including a man who at one stage had threatened to kill me because of the wrong I had done him. He would have been scripturally justified in doing so by the way, this thing that I have committed carries the penalty of death in Scripture. I even had to contact him three times before he would speak to me and each time he had it clear that he never wanted to hear my name again. If the Holy Spirit would not let me go, eventually much anger bitten us and hurt was released. God was not interested in my comfort. He is interested in the well-being of the person I had wronged. I have also experienced the requirement to make written repentance and ask Him for forgiveness to people who would not speak to me. I have experienced instances where I was required by God to return items that I had borrowed from an institution which was not using them, and probably did not want them. In fact, they probably would have given them to me if I had asked, but I did not. God let me know that even though the incidence had happened nearly 20 years previously, He still wanted me to make right and not anonymously either, but in His mercy He made a way. He showed me that He could not protect my house against thieves for as long as I had stolen goods in my house. No matter how small a value the items.

Offering financial recompense to a person that I had grievously wronged in order to make good long-term and ongoing financial loss that had resulted from major sin in my life was another instance. The offer was rejected and the first cheque returned, so I did not have to pay, but I had reached the point where I was prepared to trust God and make the sacrifice because I was still convicted. For as long as we have not made right and restored what we have caused others to lose or have taken from them, in other words, make restitution, no manner how small or how great the restitution required. Satan can go before the Throne of God and claim his legal right to attack us. While the grace and mercy of God may extend to those issues that we truly can do nothing about and perhaps those that God does not bring to our attention. He expects a much more sincere effort from us to identify these issues and deal with them head on and with integrity that many Christian seem willing to make.

We only hear God within the limitations of our paradigm. That has been my own experience and my observation but if we cannot conceive that God would say a particular thing, we have great difficulty hearing Him. And others tend to label what we hear as being from the Devil. Once you start praying go God to show you the reasons why you are having the problems you are experiencing, expect the unexpected. Expect Him to open up passages of Scripture that you have never heard taught on or which contradict teachings you have heard. Be prepared to ask for signs and confirmation. Be prepared to have Him lead you to buy books, tapes, and other materials in out of the way places. Be prepared to have unlikely characters seem to cross your path, not all of them are necessarily Christians and some of whom may be quite unsavoury. We read it throughout Scripture, so do not be surprised if He does it in your life. Recognise that if you have been told that restitution is Old Testament and God tells you to make restitution, then you will have difficulty believing that God is speaking to you. Those around you will probably have even greater difficulty. By way of example, if you have been raised to know the colour white is being called black and God tells us that this colour is actually white, you will have great difficulty recognising that God is speaking to you or that a prophet is hearing God. This example more clearly demonstrates a paradigm problem that the church has with doctrine.

There are far more cases in our current understanding than we realise of things that we consider to be white that are actually black and vice versa. Recognise that you alone are accountable for your walk and asking to break your preconceived ideas in order to receive what He is saying to you. If it does not make sense, ask for signs that will clearly show you that God is speaking to you and above all, be prepared for surprises and rejection by those who are not as flexible as you. If God gives you a

revelation, do not [inaudible 0:39:30] it out and share it prematurely. Others may not be as excited as you are. There is a saying in the world, if you do things the way you have always done them, you will get the result you have always obtained. If you ask God for advice or help over and about telling you to do things you have not done previously, He may well tell you to do things you did not believe He can tell you to do.

Consider the life of David as a good example. Throughout history, God has done things He has never done before and may never do again. For example, a virgin birth, Noah's ark, the slaying of Goliath, etc. Remember we are at war and therefore part of the advantage is for God to constantly change the ways He does things on a day-to-day technical level in order to outwit Satan and catch Him by surprise. [inaudible 0:40:22] rely heavily on surprise in doing the unexpected and outrageous to outwit heavier enemies. Since Satan has occupation of the Earth and we therefore are in a very real way behind enemy lines, this seems to be the way God often operates.

Obey God and not man: In my own experience of restitution and other matter, I reached the point where I knew with complete certainty that my heart was [inaudible 0:40:50] before God on the issue concerned and that He wanted me to take certain action. When I was unsure of the way to go about it and when I consulted friends and pastors on more than one occasion, I found myself subject, not just to criticism, but to intense verbal abuse. On one matter, I waited over two years. As a result I had reached such a desperate financial situation that I had no alternative but to make situation by faith and saw immediate turnaround. The Bible is full of people who paid a heavy price for listening to men and not obeying God.

Obedience in finances: Obedience with small things for me was an important point at a fairly early stage. If we ignore the Holy Spirit when He speaks to us to help a beggar, a hitchhiker where others of His children who had fallen on hard times, how can we reasonably expect Him to help us avoid a similar fate. My experience of disobedience or more accurately disobedience ranges from suffering serious financial loss because I did not listen to the leading of the Holy Spirit to having to walk several kilometres because the taxi I had ordered did not arrive. Instead of taking the taxi that God had already sent, to having to drive a distance of about 50 km round-trip on several occasions in order to try and meet someone that God had told me to give a prophetic word to when I first met Him.

Kenneth Hegan and others reports instances where God told them to give small sums of money to others when that was all the money they had. And subsequently having God use them mightily and told them that He could not have used them if they had been obedient in this area. Kenneth Hegan's booklet "*obedience in finances*" is as far as I am concerned a must read. In my experience, I have my most dramatic encounter with the Holy Spirit after God had repeatedly tested me in areas of obedience in giving the [inaudible 0:43:00] to beggars on the side of the road and then tested me in giving a word of encouragement to a pastor in a church where I was unknown. Scripturally, total obedience is a prerequisite for walking fully in the blessings of God.

Obedience in His word and His spirit: I have touched on the question of obedience in various aspects. I cannot stress enough that disobedience in any area open the gate wide for Satan to attack us and that no price in terms of condemnation by men should be sufficient to dissuade us from doing God's will. He requires obedience even unto death. The Bible is full of martyrs and it ends with martyrs. Are you prepared to follow your saviour even unto the death of the cross?

Seek the presence of God: There is a distinct difference between prayer and even quiet times and actively seeking to come into the presence of God. This is not necessarily a prerequisite for prosperity,

but I think that unless you are very conscious of the need to be constantly in the presence of God, prosperity may destroy you. In the age in which we now find ourselves financial blessings may be limited if we are not actively seeking to be in His presence and to do His will at all times.

Adultery and fornication: The Bible is full of injunctions against adultery and fornication and yet the church as a whole has lost an understanding of what adultery and fornication actually are. This is a complex subject and a minefield of religious doctrine as most current teachings in this regard are at best incomplete if not seriously inaccurate. I am currently in the process of completing a separate discourse on marriage, adultery, divorce and all the related issues, but I will seek to address the basics here.

First, it is important to understand that Deuteronomy 22 lays down very specific tests to determine virginity and ordains death for any woman who is found not to be a virgin on her wedding night. The marriage covenant is a blood covenant cut in the flesh, hymen of the virgin bride. But physical death may be unlikely a new death. Spiritual death that ultimately accompanies [inaudible 0:45:22] adultery and fornication remains very clear in Revelation 21:8. Note that repentance means we do not return to your sin not that you keep sinning and keep repenting. The spiritual states of women as I understand is more as follows. A maiden: A virgin girl under marriageable age. A virgin: A girl of marriageable age. Most authorities agree that this is twelve and a half year in scriptural terms who has not had sexual intercourse. A wife: A woman who has been legitimately betrothed and married to a man and engages with sexual intercourse with him.

Marriage is the process of cleaving in Genesis 2:24 which includes the cutting of a blood covenant. There is no such thing as sex before marriage. A widow: A wife whose husband has died. Scriptural references to widows seem to include divorcees but only those who have been divorced in accordance with the scriptural grounds set out by Jesus, which effectively amount to spiritual betrayal. Ideally in the case of a divorced woman, all spiritual ties with her former spouse should be broken. So the spiritual state is the same as that of a widow. A divorced woman who has not been divorced on scriptural grounds becomes an adulteress if she has intercourse with another man. An adulteress is a wife who has had sexual intercourse with a man or men other than her husband. Adultery brings [inaudible 0:46:57] married to another man, she must refrain from intercourse with any man other than that legitimate husband, failing which she will commit adultery repeatedly and the sin then becomes woeful. If she had effectively been put away by her previous husband for scripturally sound reasons, she will appear to be free to remarry once she has truly repented. If not, she is currently in [inaudible 0:47:32] and makes God clearly speaks in her situation. Since there are certain aspects of doctrine in the modern church surrounding scriptures to do with Exodus 21:10 and others, which cloud the issue. This issue is addressed in detail in the book what the Bible really says about marriage, divorce, adultery, etc., which is on course of preparation.

A harlot is any woman who has had sexual intercourse with more than one man with the exception of a widow who is remarried and a divorced woman who is divorced on scriptural basis. Given that secular statistics suggests that only about 5% of women in the world are virgins on their legal wedding night, the indications are that there are many women who have inadvertently become harlots. It is important to understand that virginity and sexual intercourse are the criteria for determining harlotry and adultery, not a piece of paper issued by the state or the church.

Any woman who is listening to this teaching who has at any time had sexual intercourse with more than one man during her life and any man who has had intercourse with such a woman should take particular account of the sections that follow. Any man who takes the virginity of a virgin of the house of Israel, in other words, a believing woman should pay particular attention to his responsibilities in



terms of Scripture and if he has abandoned such a woman should take account of his responsibilities and the possible impact that this may have in terms of giving Satan foothold in his life. Note also what Paul says in Corinthians about joining the Temple of the Holy Spirit to a harlot. I would urge any man or woman who has joined themselves to more than one member of the opposite sex to preferably consider the situation, seek counsel, and seek guidance from the Holy Spirit. From my own experience, you are wide open to attack. Pray and ask God to bring you into contact with a person who can effectively advise you and minister to you. There is great ignorance on this topic and many will dismiss what is written here is not being of God, I assure you that the principles are from God. Similarly, homosexuality brings about a whole spectrum of curses, which in many respects are every bit as bad and if not worse, the most associated with harlotry and adultery.

The One Flesh Bond: Examination of Genesis 2:24 which relates to the formation of the One Flesh Bond between husband and wife results in the wife becoming bone of the husband's bones and flesh of his flesh. On reference to scriptures which references passage reveal that the One Flesh Bond is an unbreakable spiritual bond, granted by God in order to bind husband and wife together. As the bond intensifies through repeated sexual encounters, so will love also intensify if both parties give themselves to one another in accordance with Scripture. Corinthians and another passages clearly revealed that multiple One Flesh Bonds can coexist. The gospels clearly indicate that the One Flesh Bond cannot be broken by man. My own experience indicates that the One Flesh Bond can only be broken in cases where the bond is illegitimate in the Sight of God, when the party concerned comes to the throne of grace in true repentance and truly desires to have the bond broken and where there is prayer and agreement. Just praying any old prayer does not work.

For as long as one has One Flesh Bonds with past sexual partners where they are heterosexual or male-male, one is caught up in the spiritual spider web, causes confusion, conflict, and torment, and which opens the door wide for Satan to attack you. Paul says that fornication is a sin against your own body and as you gain an appreciation for the strength of the One Flesh Bond, you will understand why. As noted previously, I am in the course of completing a comprehensive book on the subject. In the interim my advice to you is the risk applies to you in anyway. Seek counsel from someone who really knows the subject. In my experience, there are not many. Again, pray for God to bring you into contact with someone who can help you and seek clear confirmation that the person concerned has been sent by God.

Lust in the heart: Jesus warned that if a man looked at a woman in lust that he was committing adultery with her in his heart. The world would have you believe that fantasy is okay. It is not. Indications are that spiritual interaction can occur and this can impair the level of intimacy with your wife or husband, resulting in a breakdown of sexual intimacy and of agreement.

Agreement between husband and wife: Scripture states that a house divided against itself cannot stand. There is also passage of Scripture that states that if husband and wife are not in agreement or in harmony, then your prayers will be hindered. From my own experience, the Scripture applies to all One Flesh unions. Consider therefore the situation of you as a man have One Flesh Bonds with several women, who in turn each have One Flesh Bonds with several men and you realise that you have One Flesh Bonds with other men. An abomination in the Sight of God, but also spiritual spiders web that will cause your prayers to be hindered indefinitely. It is highly unlikely that if you have One Flesh Bonds with people you have long since lost contact with, that there will be an agreement with you regarding anything of significance in your life, and consequently your prayers will be constantly hindered. From personal experience, until these One Flesh Bonds are severed by the grace and mercy of God through prayer and agreement in the name of Jesus, your prayers on diverse fronts will be seriously hindered,

other than to the extent that God in His wisdom and mercy extends grace to you during the spiritual infancy. I should also stress that petition to break One Flesh Bond is not mostly granted only if you have fulfilled all the requirements mentioned previously.

The Jezebel factor: Disagreement between husband and wife often results from what is best termed as Jezebel factor. The Jezebel spirit is a particular Demon that oppresses many. It is one of the spirits behind woman's liberation and other aspects of women seeking to dominate men contrary to Scripture. Because it attacks the very model of the church submitted as a bride to our Lord Jesus Christ, it is a fertile area for Satan's attack. A manipulative Christian can control her husband by disagreeing with him behind his back and thereby cause business to fail. When he comes into agreement with her or she wants to create the impression that she is behind him, things suddenly turn around.

Much of the church [inaudible 0:54:51] to a point where God-fearing husbands are counselled that it is their responsibility to come into agreement with their rebellious wives, [inaudible 0:55:00] being counselled that they have a scriptural responsibility to submit to their husbands. Husbands are even prevented from ministering when their wives refuse to come into agreement with them. Clearly I am not referring here to husbands who are continuously in rebellion and out of the will of God. Those who turn to Satan [inaudible 0:55:21] those who are unsaved.

Divorce: As with marriage, true divorce is not as it is widely considered to be. As indicated previously, marriage and sexual union give rise to an unbreakable One Flesh Bond. Jesus indicates quite clearly in Matthew 5, Matthew 19 and elsewhere that divorce for any reason other than fornication or faithfulness or that is pornea, gives rise to adultery. It is important to understand that the word used in Matthew 5 is pornea, which relates not only to sexual immorality but the spiritual unfaithfulness as in betrayal. From personal experience in my own life and in the lives of several other Christians that I know, God only sanctions divorce when all grace to the sinning party has been exhausted and when the party who has been betrayed is at the absolute limit of their physical and emotional resources and cannot continue.

Again, this is a complex subject that is addressed in more detail in the book referred to previously. It is especially important to understand that you stand alone in this matter. Your decision to divorce is a decision that has been taken between you and God. You cannot stand in the counsel of any human being, although they can assist you to understand the scriptural considerations. The scriptural penalty of being declared an adulterer or an adulteress before the Throne of God on the Day of Judgement is far too great for any person other than yourself to take responsibility for the decision.

Likewise, any decision that you may take to marry a woman who claims to be divorced is of such eternal import that you must take that decision between you and God. Only he can reveal to you whether he has truly released the other party to marry again. If you find yourself already in a remarriage situation when you hear this, it is up to you to discern the Will of God. I am unable to express a categorical opinion other than to state that I believe that there are certain circumstances where God may require a woman to return to her original husband. I am aware of other circumstances, including my own where God has blessed the divorce and remarriage of both parties.

Note that a number of Jesus comments on divorce apply to casual putting away of a wife because she is not pleasing to her husband or who desires another wife instead, I believe that this is the divorce that God hates. That divorce where one person's partner has totally betrayed the other and shows no signs of coming to repentance as evaluated by God, not by man. This also seemingly applies where one partner has repeatedly refused salvation and is attacking the other spouse to a point that is

threatening their well-being or their own salvation or spiritual growth will prevent them from fulfilling their calling, that is between each person and God and no third-party dare judge.

**Pride versus humility:** The Bible is full of warnings and injunctions against pride. Certainly in my own experience, it has been the most pernicious sin constantly creeping in various forms. I would almost go so far as to suggest that if you have been experiencing the blessings of God and suddenly things start to go wrong, check pride first. Pride in my experience manifests in diverse ways, starting with worldly pride and arrogance, [inaudible 0:59:06] to spiritual and religious pride.

**Vanity:** The spirit of vanity is the spirit of the false prophet, etc. Each attack seems to doctrine new nuance and creep up on one unaware. Certainly, in my own experience, one cannot afford to disregard a comment from any quarter that you are proud, it is likely to be some truth in it. I have seen pride manifest in a great diversity of ways. There is a form of pride that creeps up on people who are very meek and humble in many ways. But who starts to manifest pride in very obscure areas of their lives. The moment that we start looking down on others believing that we are God's gift to humanity, pronouncing opinions on King David or otherwise hearing ourselves up as God and judging others. Pride can take hold very rapidly. Almost certainly Satan jumps on pride and since God hates pride so much He probably gives Satan a pretty generous leeway to take us apart if we start to become pride.

The consequences of sin can take time to manifest. As with things in the natural cause and effect can be some way apart. If things start to go wrong, this can sometimes be attributed to sin committed months or years previously. It will appear that mostly God extends a period of grace in which we can repent or else it is simply a case that the previous blessings take time to attenuate because of their momentum. In these circumstances, a few new trials may be added in order to encourage us to deal not only with current and old sin, but also to deal with issues that are previously been covered by grace. For this reason, we should constantly be praying to God to help us to stay on track and to show us areas of sin in our lives. The blessings of obedience also can take time to manifest. In the same vein, once one starts repenting and dealing with the sin, the consequences of sin seem to gather momentum and it generally takes time for the situation to turn around.

Sin is a luxury we cannot afford. Sustained sin is something that will cause immeasurable harm in our lives and to those around us. Yet so many Christians seem to keep being lured into the same traps, time after time. God willing, I will continue this teaching in the weeks ahead and next week I hope to address issues such as Demons in the Temple of God and deliverance. It is my prayer that as you listen to these tapes, you gain a deeper understanding of factors which may be seriously affecting your Christian walk and keeping you from walking in the fullness of God's blessings, which undoubtedly great and wonderful to those who truly commit and dedicate their lives to serving Him. May the Lord bless you and keep you. May the Lord make His face to shine upon and bless you in all that you do, in Jesus name.

## **02 09 Poverty in the Church Part 3**

Today's teaching is a continuation of the teaching of the last two weeks on the subject of Poverty in the Church of Jesus Christ. Last week I discussed a variety of factors under the heading - Basic Principles, all of which relate to how sin manifests in our lives, provides foothold to the enemy to kill, steal, and destroy in our lives and what I consider from my own experience to be basic principles both in terms of avoiding and overcoming these issues and highlighting certain factors which do give the

enemy particular opportunity to attack. Today I will continue with the same subject what I term Basic Principles that recognise that much of what I have to say here is not what is taught generally in the church and in some cases is contrary to what is taught in the church. I really pray that as you listen to what I have to say today, you will put aside your prejudices and your preconceived ideas and whatever you may have heard previously and lay all that is taught today and in subsequent teachings, God willing, before Yahweh (God) the Father in the name of Jesus, Yahooshua, the son to determine what the truth really is. Please accept that if you are in financial lack, if your finances are perpetually short, if you are suffering theft and mechanical breakdown and loss of income and just one thing after another in your life, it must result from something in your life that you know of or do not know of, that you have done or are doing or that your fathers have done that is giving the Devil place to kill, to steal, to destroy in your life.

The promises of God are Ya and Amen, He has promised to bless you. He has promised to supply all your needs according to His riches and glory through Christ Jesus. There is no lack in the Kingdom of God. So if you are suffering lack today as you listen to this tape, please take to heart this series of teachings on Judgement and particularly the series on Poverty that I am busy with at the moment. I do not plan to have all truths; only Jesus has all truth. I do not claim that every single item that I teach today will be absolutely exactly one hundred percent scriptural and according to the mind of God and the will of God and the word of God, but I do believe based on much experience and much analysis that the vast majority of what I have said in the last few weeks and what I will say today and God willing, in the weeks ahead is a reasonably accurate practical reflection of how these things manifest in our lives and how to deal with them. So I would encourage you to listen to this tape and listen particularly for those things which the Holy Spirit quickens to your heart as factors that you can deal with right now to make a practical difference in your life as you progress towards holiness and sanctification and being set apart for the service of the Lord Jesus Christ.

The next subject that I want to address is Demons in the Temple of God and deliverance. One of the more controversial discoveries in the journey that I am after a fashion chronicling here was the discovery that I was seriously demonised. Most Christians have some Demons that have not been dealt with. Over the years, Yahooshua (the Lord) has brought me into contact with a variety of books and tapes on the subject and more recently into contact with a number of prophetic deliverance ministries. In my case, after listening to Satan in a big way on and off for a substantial part of 40 years, different Demons were still being identified and cast out of me, six years after I first became aware of deliverance. If you are not aware that Christians can be oppressed, not possessed by Demons, I recommended the book *"In the name of Satan"* by Bob Larson for series of firsthand encounters of Demons on Christians. Remember that Jesus Ministry was almost entirely to the people of Israel, the believers of his day. There are scriptures which clearly indicate that believers can receive a different spirit. Teachings by Benny Hinn, Mary Garrison and many others address this subject. Personal experience and experience of many that I know has confirmed that demonisation of believers is a reality. Pride, lust, perversion, [inaudible 0:05:55], lying, religion, poverty, controlled jealousy and competition, heaviness including depression and a great diversity of other factors can be demonic.

More extreme spirits, such as Pharaoh, Jezebel and similar spirits may also be associated with principalities and powers. It appears that the physical idols in the Old Testament are a type and shadow of Demons in the New Testament. Given that our bodies are the Temples of the Holy Spirit in the New Testament, the progressive introduction of idols into the Temple in Jerusalem, culminating in their introduction into the holy of holies indicates the manner in which Demons can impregnate a

believer. Bear in mind that at the time the idols were introduced into the holy of holies, the spirit of God left the Temple in Jerusalem.

Demonic oppression may give rise to persistent sin resulting in strongholds in the believer's life which are impossible to eliminate without deliverance. Deliverance in turn requires adequate acknowledge, assurance of the believer's authority in Christ, knowledge of the effective application of the blood of Jesus and the ministering of deliverance. Prophetic gifting is almost essential in dealing with demonic oppression. In order to obtain guidance from the Holy Spirit in terms of the sequence of deliverance, strong men, gate keepers and other Demons that do not necessarily manifest directly as well as to identify causes and other factors that have given the Demons a legal right to enter and remain. It is not my intention to write a detailed explanation of Demons and deliverance in this discourse, only to raise your awareness to the possibility that you might be demonised to a point and therefore to sensitise you to the possibility of seeking deliverance ministry as a means of speedily and effectively dealing with certain aspects of your life, which may be oppressed. I would encourage you as you listen to this teaching to be aware of the probability that you are demonised. I do not say this in any means, in any way to be judgemental or ugly towards you. I simply make it is a statement of fact.

The church over the last 2,000 years has gone through massive apostasy. The prevalence of demonic activity in the Body of Christ today is phenomenal. The lack of knowledge that we have is alarming. Speaking from my own experience and I share this with you simply to sensitise you to the magnitude of the problem. Some years after I wrote the document on which this teaching is based and having reached a place where I had gone through several periods of deliverance and truly believe that I was not completely set free, I found that I was by no means free and more subtle demonic manifestations were again becoming prevalent in my life. At that point, the Lord brought another deliverance ministry across our path and about a year ago, I found myself undergoing three intense sessions of deliverance during which time, according to what I believe the Lord showed me, approximately 500 different Demons, roots of oppression, bloodline curses, and other issues were dealt with. At the end of that process, I found the things that I had taken for granted is being absolutely central to my personality had changed fundamentally, and I gained a whole new perspective on what it is to become more Christ-like, to grow in Christ, to become more like the Lord Jesus Christ.

Notwithstanding that experience I subsequently came to recognise that there was still demonic strongmen present that the Lord in his mercy had seen fit not to deliver me off at that point because I was not spiritually in the right place for the remaining demonic oppression to be dealt with. As with any form of healing, deliverance is progressive. It does not all take place at one time and feeling of one's spirit, one's emotions, one's mind and one's body is generally required after an intense period of deliverance. That healing takes place by the Holy Spirit through our seeking of God in praise and worship and in diverse ways that I would not address here. The point of my story, however, is that one who has been aware of deliverance for currently of the order of six years, I still find myself after a number of sessions of self deliverance, deliverance by a number of different counsellors that the situation where even last week I ministered deliverance to myself with regard to a number of Demons that I have been aware of for periods of in excess of six months and I am still aware of further Demons of which I need to be delivered and I am currently planning to attend a seminar on deliverance where God willing, which I truly believe he is and by faith, I will delivered of those which I remain of which I am currently aware. So I would truly encourage my listeners right now, in the name of Jesus, do not be offended, do not allow Satan to offend you at the thought that you might have some Demons. Do not regard what I am saying here lightly. It is almost certainly pivotal to continuing to grow in Christ and dealing with the issues which are the subject of these teachings.

While many Christians are offended at the suggestion that they might be demonised, it is important to recognise that Satan or [inaudible 0:12:39] is the Lord of the flies and Demons are in a spiritual sense little different to flies, mosquitoes, ticks, and other insects and parasites that can harass us or be picked up in certain environments, in the same way that a mosquito alighting on your skin and sucking blood does not indicate anything wrong with you. A Demon alighting on your flesh and triggering certain behaviour does not necessarily indicate anything spiritually wrong with you. Demons are opportunistic, they will alight on you and make suggestions to your spirit, which if you act on them could cause you to sin, thus giving them a legal right to remain and establish a stronger foothold on you. Over time, using similar tactics, Demons can bring in more and stronger Demons until in extreme cases, rebellion against God occurs to a point where no salvation is possible.

In most cases from what I can establish, demonisation gives rise to sins in limited areas, which results in oppression and defeat in certain aspects of the believer's life. This is a critical aspect of the spiritual warfare that we are engaged in that is very little understood even by those who have considerable knowledge and experience. God is now revealing much of the knowledge that has been lost over the generations. My experience suggests that if a person does not believe that they could have a Demon or Demons, or if they do not genuinely and seriously wish to be set free, deliverance is unlikely to be affected. Testimonies of those who can see this spirit realm indicate that Demons may only move a few feet away from the person on whom they have been resident and may return almost immediately if there is doubt, unbelief, and uncertainty or if the person instructing them to leave is unsure of their authority or has themselves certain sins that we [inaudible 0:14:36] on their own lives. In some cases, Demons do not move at all. If the legal basis on which a Demon has gained a right to enter a body has not been dealt with at its roots, and entirely removed by confession and repentance, restitution, cutting off, etc., there is no legal right for the person ministering deliverance to command the Demon to leave. As such, it can be expected that when ministering deliverance prophetically, God will only reveal those Demons for which there is a legal right to demand removal at that time.

The fact that deliverance has been ministered prophetically does not guarantee that a person is entirely free. There may be co-issues to be dealt with beyond the scope of knowledge and experience of the person ministering deliverance to counsel on, or beyond the level of spiritual maturity of the person being ministered to in order to enforce the [inaudible 0:15:30] reinfestation which will be seven times worse. It would seem that [inaudible 0:15:36] ministry of deliverance on whom Demons are bound and instructed to leave when they have a legal right to remain could result in the person ministering, granting the enemy a legal right to attack them. In most cases, deliverance is a process that has been likened peeling off of onion skin. There is a limit to what one person can stand in a single session of deliverance ministry and spiritual, physical and emotional healing may be required before the next session of ministering in order that the person is not left vulnerable to reinfestation. Jesus warned us that Demons will return and seek to introduce a much greater infestation. We must guard against this through reading the word, time spent in prayer, praying in the spirit, time and fellowship, sanctifying our homes, keeping from sin, etc.

If you have been struggling for years to put your flesh under on a particular issue without success, deliverance may well be the answer and you should consult an experienced deliverance minister as soon as possible. If you not know of such a person, ask Yahweh to bring you into contact with the person of His choosing and expect Him to lead you. This may take time.

Prophetic deliverance may also address issues such as curses, spiritual shekels, damaged spiritual armour and a variety of other aspects which will not be discerned in any other way. Jesus has not left us ill equipped to deal with demonic infestation but Satan has very effectively undermined the

church's ability to deal with these issues through religion and widespread lies that are propagated in the church. A cursed thing in your possession, allied to demonic oppression of the bodies, minds, and emotions of believers is demonic infestation of our homes, places of work, etc. Experience indicates that demons can take up residence in a house or other physical location as a consequence of sin committed in that location. Accordingly a second-hand house or even a plot of land may have demons on it which need to be cast out. In addition to this, any artefact which has demonic significance can give demons a right to enter your house or attack you personally.

I once ministered to a Christian family whose house had been burgled and was informed by the Holy Spirit that their daughter had been given a satanic symbol, an ankh six months previously and that Yahweh could not protect the daughter or her possession while this was in her possession. Books and idols on mythology, art books with photographs or drawings with Egyptian, Babylonian, Greek, Roman, Indian, and other gods, pagan temples, etc., can all give demons legal right of access. Certain Persian carpets, African wood carvings, voodoo masks, amulets, etc. also give that. Emblems of the freemasons and other secret societies and satanic cults and items containing marks of demonic or satanic significance all give Satan a right to attack you. Many modern children's toys, games, etc. contain satanic emblems. Trolls have demonic significance. I have ministered deliverance to a strong believer who backslid for five years into alcohol strong drugs and other sin. After he was given a fire screen with the face of a [inaudible 0:19:03], a demonic figure on it.

It is important to realise that demons gain access to our lives not on the basis of conscious sin, but on a strictly legal basis. Thus a child who has absolutely no knowledge of what is going on can be demonised by transgressing their spiritual law that gives a particular Demon a right to enter. Likewise, a strong Christian can become heavily oppressed by Demons which gain a legal right by ownership of an artefact given innocently as a gift. Particular care should be taken concerning the purchase of many artefacts and toys that have been sold over the counter in all sorts of shops.

Physical idols: A word of caution, if you are facing financial ruin and you are striving to keep your house, your car or other possessions, it could well be that they have become idols and things may not turn around until you let them go. In such circumstances, shouting at God and lecturing Him on what His word says and demanding that He let you keep your house or car is tantamount to witchcraft and total rebellion. He may well require that at the very least you place these items on the altar of sacrifice and to consent to his well-being done. If you have gone too far, you may well have to lose everything and start again. Remember the issue is to store up treasure in Heaven, not on Earth. God is not interested in assisting you to store up treasure on Earth, but the expense of your immortal self.

Much has been preached about houses and cars and similar items becoming idols in our lives. At one time I reached a point in which certain things in my life was subconsciously becoming more important in my life than God and I was looking to them as my source instead of God. At a point, God had to be remove those things from my life. Material things which become idols in the lives of believers will give rise to attack. Anything which causes you to disobey God or take your eyes off God is an idol. It is also possible for people to become idols. The apostle or pastor who demands obedience contrary to the word of God or the leading of the Holy Spirit are two of the most prevalent in my experience. The Word of God says submit to God, resist the devil and he will flee from you. Submission to a wife or pastor who is in rebellion causes you to become yoked to them and to set them up as an idol over your complete submission to Almighty God. In the case of a wife who is commanded by Scripture to submit to her husband, it is my understanding that where that man is clearly in rebellion against the Word of God and is requiring submission in terms of ungodly actions, the wife is required to resist and not to submit in such cases. As an example, a man who required his Christian wife to have sexual

intercourse with another man, that wife would be required by the Word of God to resist as I understand it to the full limits of her capability out of reverence for the Word of God, even if that required that she was martyred as a consequence of her obedience to the Word of God.

We have to understand the distinctions between godly submission and ungodly submission in this life. Godly submission may require us to do things which are very, very contrary to the ways of this world and which may be extremely painful and may cost us our lives. Ungodly submission will open our lives to the attack of the enemy in all sorts of different ways.

The spirit of stupor, eyes that do not see and ears that do not hear. Romans 11:8 refers to spirit of stupor, eyes that do not see and ears that do not hear. This came upon the children of Israel as a result of their disobedience and appears to be widespread in the church. This is a very specific Demon but I mention it because in my own experience, it causes people not to obtain revelation when reading the Word of God and also confuses what they see and hear in the spirit realm. If you are having difficulty receiving from the Word of God or find that you seem not to be hearing the same things when messages are preached in church or reading the same things in books that are recommended to you on spiritual matters, I suggest that you take authority over a spirit of stupor, but not before you have dealt with any areas of known disobedience in your life.

Christian ownership of a business: A business will be affected by its own spiritual state. My own experience indicates that if the owner or owners of a business are Christian and they will be the principal individuals to benefit if the business prospers, this will give Satan a legal right to attack the entire business. It does appear that believers working for the company who do not give Satan any basis to attack them will be taken care of. However, in certain cases in my experience this can lead to an equal yoking and God may then take you out of the business in order to bless you. Staying in a business just because the owner is a Christian is carnal and not necessarily God's will. If you remain in the business, it is unlikely that you will prosper when you are unequally yoked. Please take what I have written here as something to be prayed over with care. I am not telling you to resign from your job, I am suggesting that you should pray over the business and be attentive to the possibility of God telling you to move.

Unequal yoking: The Bible tells us not to be unequally yoked. This applies not only to business, it can also apply to friendships, marriage, and in some cases to churches. Unequal yoking can give rise to a situation where Satan has a legal right to attack you because you are in stand with a person that Satan has a legal right to attack. I do not have great experience with this but have encountered a number of associations where God has taken business partners and staff out of my life for this reason. This does not mean that they are bad and you are good or vice versa. It simply means that God has decided at that point in time that the yoke is too heavy on one party and should be removed. Never judge another Christian because God took you out of their business to accompany their church or their fellowship. Never lose sight of the possibility that God took you out because you were the problem.

What is yoke? A yoke is something that transfers the strength of an ox to the plough cart that he is dragging. The spiritual yoke can transfer the spiritual load of bondage from one person to another. An example would be a case where a person has entered into a financial partnership with someone who has footholds in their lives. Such a case, where one person is living a righteous life and the other not, but both will benefit from any business income or profit. The legal right that Satan has to attack one person's finances means that either both people are blessed or none. In my experience, neither person will be blessed through that partnership until both have dealt with the footholds in their lives, where



the one with sin in their life has left the business. The same applies to covenant partnerships in ministries and even regular giving to a ministry that is out of the will of God.

Loose talk and boasting: Contrary to the name [inaudible 0:27:01] school of thought, it has been my experience that while involved in the scriptural warfare that we are engaged in, loose talk can open the door for Satan to attack in areas where he would not otherwise have had the opportunity. I once had a situation in which I obtained agreement with the third-party miraculously and by the hand of God. Before the final manifestation of the agreement was achieved and before it was committed to writing, I made the mistake of boasting to my [inaudible 0:27:31] that God was about to give me victory contrary to the lawyer's expectation in a mistaken belief that this will provide a testimony for the lawyer's salvation. Weeks later I learned that within minutes of me making that statement, a person kilometres away who had no cause to contact a third-party found them and talk to mention a nagging on the agreement. I believe that a Demon or Fallen Angel was following me, overheard the conversation, and nullified the relevant principality. The [inaudible 0:28:03] and initiated through a demonised third party.

We are in a war situation, particularly in certain areas of spiritual warfare. Do not discuss what is going on with anyone other than your closest confidence and then only as the Holy Spirit gives you release and as far as this is necessary for intercessory prayer coverage with similar aspects in support of your warfare. In such cases, only disclose the bare essential so that they are better able to follow the leading of the Holy Spirit in their prayers. After the victory will be time enough to share your testimony.

Realise also that while the natural person may be entirely on your side, and may be carrying Demons that are opposed to you. On one occasion, I received a prophetic word that Satan was obtaining information to use against us through someone we trusted who was confiding in his wife whom he trusted. We stopped sharing with the person concerned almost immediately and saw a change in spiritual circumstances I do not believe that the wife was actively betraying us, although she may be praying against us. But she was oppressed by Demons who are picking up all that was said. Those Demons were, I believe, communicating that they have overheard to other agents of Satan who took action against us. In similar vein, when discussing matters of critical spiritual importance and warfare, we have founded appropriate to take action to cleanse the environment where we are talking, be it in a car, or a room of a house or an office simply by praying in the name of Jesus, Yahooshua the Messiah and binding any Demon or fallen Angel in the room or the vehicle and commanding them to leave and go to the pit in Jesus name, binding any Demon or fallen Angel that maybe able to hear the conversation and stopping their ears and binding them from communicating anything that they may overhear. Asking the Father in the name of the son to send His Angels to encamp around us to protect us that no agent of Satan may hear the discussion, praying in the name of Yahooshua that all the parties to the conversation be covered with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet and asking the Lord in the name of Jesus to cover the walls, the floors, the ceilings, the roofs, the doors, the windows, the window frames, the door posts, and the lintels of the place where we are with the blood of Jesus, in Jesus name in order that Satan may by no means take knowledge of what is discussed.

It is important to understand that Satan cannot read minds. While Satan very effectively plants thoughts in our minds by way of Demons whispering in our spiritually ears. He cannot read our minds or hearts. Various scriptures clearly confirm that only God knows the secrets of our hearts and our thoughts. Accordingly, it is important that you do not discuss certain things in atmospheres where Demons, Fallen Angels or other Satanic cohorts may be present. If possible, discuss such things directly with your heavenly Father by talking to the Holy Spirit silently in your heart. Where it is necessary to

discuss such things where you have to pray aloud in agreement, first apply the blood of blood to your soles from the top of your heads to the soles of your feet and then to the room and building where you are and in addition bind all Demons, Fallen Angels and cohorts and command them to leave the room and the building. Thank God for His angels and request that He send Angels to encamp around you to prevent any enemy agent listening in.

As mentioned previously, limit your discussion to those whom you can trust, not to discuss what you have revealed in confidence and then only discuss what is necessary in order to obtain guidance, counsel, prayer, support, or whatever need as equation to meeting. Forgiveness equals cancellation of debt. It is widely recognised that unforgiveness will blight your seed. If you are harbouring unforgiveness toward anyone, this is fertile ground for Satan to attack you. Forgiveness is not just an act of the will. It is also an act of faith. You have to choose to forgive and then ask God in the name of Jesus to assist you to forgive and to forget. If you find that you have not forgotten and you have not forgiven, if you keep thinking or talking about it and telling others or warning them, then you have not forgiven. There are a number of good teachings on unforgiveness. First apply this to your prayer and ask God to bring you into contact with a person who can help you or to bring books, tapes, or other materials across your path from which you can obtain guidance. Refer to the section earlier, on the cup that Jesus drank to gain a better understanding of how to forgive. If Jesus could forgive those who crucified him and drink the cup of all our sins, it is a small thing to forgive those who have harmed us. No matter how terrible their actions appear to us, judgement is God's, not yours.

By holding unforgiveness you put yourself in God's place and therefore stand in the way of His judgement to the person involved should He deem it necessary. Remember also that the person concerned has given Satan a significant foothold in their life. Therefore love your enemies and pray for those who spitefully use you. Forgiveness is therefore a cancellation of the debt, you remember it no more.

The straight path and the narrow gate: We regularly make reference colloquially to the straight and narrow referring to the passage in Scripture where Jesus warns us the way is straight and the gate is narrow and few are there that enter thereby. For you the straight path has been just that in dense jungle if you are not concentrating on your directions and attacks are coming from both sides, it is easy to wander off the path. Anything that looks like a shortcut or an easier route is not. A straight line is always the shortest distance between two points. The video of the book problems progressed demonstrates this graphically. In the prophetic word delivered recently to an apostle, God described His path as a knife edge where the slightest slip would lead to disaster. As we mature and are used on more dangerous mission, a spiritual balance becomes more and more critical. Likewise the gate is narrow. Only one person can pass through it at a time. Should you enter your stand on your own at the judgement seat of Christ and the called to account for your entire life, at that point only you can give account. You cannot turn to your pastor, an elder, counsellor, friend or spouse to advise you or assist you. You will be judged according to the decisions that you made in your life including the advice from others which you chose to accept that was against the word or the will of God. Where God spoke to you the excuse that your pastor told you that that could not possibly be God would not hold water. Certainly not after you have been serving God for a while.

As an example, the argument that God has not spoken to you about observing the Sabbath will not wash. His word is quite explicit. Remember that God's Sabbath is Saturday and not Sunday. He has never changed that. Discern the Lord's body correctly. Paul warns that many are second, some have died because they failed to discern the body of the Lord in the communion elements. Do not treat the

Lord so politely or frivolously. Seek to understand the full meaning of the blood covenant and the significance of the bread and wine as types of his body and blood.

Tithing: Obedience in finances is an absolutely critical component of receiving God's financial blessings. If you are robbing God in tithes and offerings, He cannot bless you, not only in finances, but He cannot rebuke the devourer, Satan for your sake. If you are not tithing a full 10% off the top before attacks, then you might as well not read any further. It is highly unlikely that you will be blessed financially. If there is no seed, there can be no harvest. There are numerous good teachings on the subject. If you late tithing, you are required to bring an additional 20%. There are no expenses that are permissible deductions against the tithe in terms of your personal income. It appears that business expenses are a legitimate cost before determining the tithe if you have your own business but I do not find explicit Scripture to confirm this.

Equally, if we consider Scripture, requirement was that the tithe of all the seed and the flock was brought not before a portion of seed has been set aside for planting the next year. God has certainly challenged me to give in the first 10% off the top of my business income before salaries, etc. The only exception is value-added tax which is money you collect on behalf of the government which accordingly never belongs to you. You are simply the agent of the government. Careful reading of the Scripture indicates that there is a second tithe, so tithing on grace business revenue and personal drawings from your own business may well be scriptural as may be a double tithe in your salary. I am not advancing this as a doctrine, but I would suggest that you pray about it and act as the Lord leads.

Infertile soil: Please recognise that the parable of the sower clearly indicates that there is barren ground and fertile ground into which you can sow or tithe or give your offerings. There are plenty of teachings which indicate that if you are not being fed by pastor, the ground is probably not fertile and God may lead you elsewhere. If God has revealed doctrinal error in a congregation, the soil may well be barren for your seed. Only move as God leads but recognise that He kept the children of Israel moving regularly during [inaudible 0:38:55] in the wilderness and do not be intimidated. He may also tell you to remain in the congregation for a while and observe but to tithe elsewhere. If He speaks to you that is not necessary a message for anyone else and you should only share that information if you are absolutely sure that the Lord is leading you to do that. I would refer you to an earlier teaching in the series in terms of dealing with error in the church. It is vital that we are careful not to touch the Lord's anointed and to do His prophets harm.

Beating the sheep: There is an almost universal tendency in the church today to beat the sheep. That is to have someone stand up and deliver a message on giving and then send round the offering basket. In Jesus day, the money was discretely placed in the treasury, a large chest in the Temple. There is no indication that Jesus has ever said that tithes and offering should be collected in any other way. Do not be intimidated to give because it is demanded of you. Give as God leads you and if that is not in the offering basket, that is His prerogative, after all it is His money. There are many prophetic ministers and others who do not have big congregations, but who are busy ministering day in and day out to people who come to them and they would even give them even the smallest offering. Some are destitute because the people who come to them for ministry do not consider the possibility that God might want them to give some of their tithes to the minister concerned who never asks for money, as opposed to the church where they fellowship every Sunday, which demands their money on a regular basis but has not been able to offer the ministry that the [inaudible 0:40:48] profit as an example has provided.

The current church building is not the Temple in Jerusalem. It is the Temple of the body of the individual believer and therefore it is not correct to say that we should bring our tithes to the house of God referring to a specific congregation or building. Every single member of the body of Christ constitutes part of the Temple of the Holy Spirit and therefore it is entirely appropriate for God to direct us to sow our tithes wherever He sees fit whether that is to an individual or to a large ministry.

Tithing as the Lord leads: A tithing portfolio. According to my understanding and experience, tithing involves giving God's money where God wants it, but it appears that Yahweh will often want His tithes brought to the congregation where you are a member. Increasingly this is not always the case. We have been led by the Holy Spirit to give tithes to pastors and poor communities, to evangelists, prophets and apostles, even sometimes to individuals in need. This should not be taken as a licence to give where you want, but it is an injunction to caution you that Yahweh may instruct you to give your tithes somewhere other than where religion and tradition would have you give it.

In some cases, where elders of a congregation have not been allocating God's funds as He want them to be allocated, we have been lead to give directly to the pastor. In other cases, we have been led to purchase specific items in order to avoid the church elders misallocating the funds. Wisdom and prayerful seeking of Yahweh is necessary on this point.

From the above you will note that I am firmly persuaded that God does not necessarily require that you bring all your tithes and offerings to one congregation. For years I did this and in the space of about two years brought about 40,000 rand to one congregation, which I eventually learned had been counselling me from several false doctrines for the entire period when my marriage and my business went downhill. By the time I realised this, my marriage had broken down irrevocably and I subsequently lost my business. Today we tithe as the Lord leads taking care only to make commitments for periods of time that the Lord clearly leads us. Thus we avoid becoming financially yoked on fruitful ground. Over the past years we have been led to develop what I as a former investment consultant would call a tithing portfolio. We have become covenant partners with a number of major international ministries and allocate a fixed available portion of our tithes to these ministries. By doing this I believe that we assist God to give greater direction to His servants.

The congregation, which is assured of regular income because the congregants feel morally compelled to bring all their tithes and offerings is financially securing the way that a congregation, which trusts God to speak to the individual congregants in a weekly basis to meet the needs of the ministries is not, but the latter congregations is in a much safer position for God to gently nudge them back onto the straightway than one that has beaten a congregante into giving them into them alone. I would ask you to also consider an earlier teaching in this series dealing with the financial stewardship of believers, which addresses the subject in considerably more detail.

I believe that God is currently challenging all those in full-time ministry and all leaders of congregation to place an offering chest near the door and stop beating the sheep and start believing God to meet their needs. By all means, [inaudible 0:44:43] tithing from time to time and accept prophetic word if God wants to reinforce it but cease to preach five or ten minutes at every main meeting to get people to give. Apart from anything else, if you are not assisting congregants to deal with the other issues set out in this document, they are going to continue to battle financially; in the world, they call that fraud.

Begging: The reverse of giving is receiving. Many people claim to live by faith. They make a point of telling people that they are living by faith and they mention their financial difficulties. That is not living by faith, that is begging or manipulation. If God is your provider, he knows all your needs and there is

therefore no need to tell people of them. If your needs are not being met as a consequence of one or more of the factors discussed in this document, telling people will not assist you unless you are willing to have them point out spiritual problems that they may be able to see. Tell God of your need and He will tell others. There is a fine line between being honest with people who have come to know that your situation and telling them because you want them to assist you financially. Only the Holy Spirit can guide you. If you are truly living by faith, rejoice. God knows your needs and He will provide exactly what you need. You may have to make certain adjustments if He does not regard your needs as being in line with His will, but He will provide all that you need.

Any person in ministry who produces any document inviting people to give in to their ministry should be aware that God is able to instruct any persons to give in to their ministry. It is almost axiomatic that every ministry needs finance. Therefore you do not have to tell people. Any form of inviting people to give has a high risk of becoming begging, particularly if there is something in your ministry that is giving Satan a foothold to attack your finances. In this case, you may be causing others to become yoked to your foothold by inviting them to give or to become covenant partners with your ministry.

Sowing and reaping, naming your seed: Again, there are many teachings that indicate [inaudible 0:46:54]. Reaping naming your seed. Again, there are many teachings that indicate that you should name your seed when you bring your tithes and offerings to any place that God has instructed you. Name the seed whether it would be financial, deliverance, a specific blessing or whatever. I refer you to these teachings if you need more guidance. [inaudible 0:47:26] has a particularly challenging and stimulating testimony about [inaudible 0:47:31] seed. Again, I must stress, if you have not dealt with the sin in your life and the areas which are causing the devil to steal from you, naming your seed and claiming and fanning. The blessing is a total waste of time and effort and a waste of God's money.

No private interpretation: The word of God is not subject to any private interpretation. If you get what to you is a new revelation, seek the face of God and request confirmation through prophets, teachings, etc. until you are absolutely certain that you are hearing God. Recognise the church history over the past 2,000 years as being characterised by apostasy and false doctrine and there are still numerous areas of doctrine in the church. If this was not so, there would not be hundreds of denominations or planning they have the truth. At the same time, recognise that just because, as I was once told, 15,000 men of God around the world will all agree on a particular interpretation does not mean that they are correct. For centuries tithing, tongues, healing, water baptism, etc., etc., etc. were corrupted or discarded. The entire church around the world barring a few stalwarts agreed that these things have passed away, that does not mean that they were right. Just that Satan was and is having a field day with gullible believers who are not prepared to turn to their Bible and seek the guidance of the Holy Spirit as to the truth. Others, when the truth is revealed to them, they are not prepared to stand up for the truth. The days of persecution and martyrdom have not passed. The church will still crucify many prophets who hear God and turn away from the private interpretation of God's word. Those prophets should take comfort that they are storing up treasure in Heaven if they submit to God and resist the devil instead of submitting to the devil.

Remember the church of the day crucified Jesus and stoned Him to death. If you accept and believe a false doctrine, even if it is together with 15,000 pastors, that does not mean that in some strange democratic way that Satan is not going to claim his legal right to attack you or that you will be judged at the end of the age.

Dying to self refiner's fire: Self discipline is an unpopular concept in the world and in the church today. As you progress in the walk that is touched on in this document, sooner or later God is going to start

crucifying your flesh in a serious way. The way that you are likely to find extremely uncomfortable and painful as someone has said, the living sacrifice can feel every cut of the knife, every lick of the flames. In this hour, God is starting to refine His church in an unprecedented way. Many are crying out to God to send the fire, unaware that the fire that they are likely to receive will burn the dross out of them. Until you reach a point where like Jesus, you can be flagellated, tortured and crucified and then as you breath your last, so Father forgive them for they know not what they do, until someone can abuse you to your face or betray you and you can instantly forgive them and be more concerned about their spiritual welfare and about your loss, you are not dead to self. I have little doubt that this is a lifelong battle. Crucify yourself daily. If you do not, your flesh will constantly come between you and the Holy Spirit and you will never walk in the fullness of God's promises and His blessings.

Unkept and broken vows and promises: At the current age, people have completely lost sight of the power of words. Life and death are in the power of the tongue. Promises and vows that you have not kept or have broken provide fruitful ground for Satan to attack you. As I understand it, where you can still fulfil the promise or vow and it is not against the Word of God, you should fulfil it. If you cannot, you should make restitution. If you can do neither, you should repent and broken this in humility and ask God to forgive you for rash promises and then renounce those vows or promises.

If you have made ungodly vows or promises, particularly before you accepted Jesus Christ as Lord and saviour, you must renounce them and cut them off. You may need prophetic help to identify them and cut them off. In any event, you should ask the Lord to show you all vows and promises which should be cut off. We have a separate document or a teaching on the subject of dealing with broken vows. If you would like a copy, please contact us.

Soul false prayers: Words have power. Prayers prayed against in the name of Jesus by well-meaning believers who think you are in error when you are not can still have a force and can afford Satan a legal right to attack you, as well as attacking the person praying the prayer. Some churches have intercession meetings and it is common to hear people praying about people's situations with their understanding. Often these prayers are totally contrary to God's will in the situation or God does not act on these prayers. The spiritual force of a number of people praying or agreeing in that way is significant. If you are aware of any situation in your life, as it has been misinterpreted by certain believers, possibly as a result of false witness or false doctrine, it is advisable to cut off such soul false prayers from time to time.

Recognise at the same time that if you are completely without sin, those prayers will have no effect in your life. However, if you are not totally sanctified and holy, in other words, if you are not totally like Jesus, it is quite possible that those prayers will open doors into strongholds in your life that Satan will then legally use.

Prayer against God's will: Be aware that if you pray according to your understanding and contrary to God's will, Satan will almost certainly know that you are praying against the will of God and could easily use that situation to claim a legal right to attack you. Thus by praying out of God's will, particularly where third parties concerned and even more so with the third as an apostle, prophet or other person strongly anointed of God, you may be opening yourself to serious attack. If you truly feel God and want to serve Him with all your heart, mind, soul and strength, you should refrain from praying against others in your own understanding. Pray for others only what you would truly have them pray for you in similar circumstances. Remember what you sow is what you reap.

Bloodline curses: Little understood subject in much of the church today is bloodline curses. There appear to be a relatively small number of believers and even fewer congregations who are aware of this aspect. More likely that virtually every person in the world today will have curses on their bloodline. These curses can be relatively minor or can be major. On one account that I have read which is related to a woman as best I recall had her life dedicated to Satan to be taken on her 21st birthday by way of a witchcraft entered into her by her ancestors who dedicated the first female of the eleventh, I think, generation to Satan. As her birthday approached, she tried to throw herself off a suspension bridge. Fortunately she was taken to a believer with an Exorcism Ministry and during the exorcism, the Demon that are being detailed to follow the bloodline and kill her disclosed where his legal right had come from. If your bloodline has been involved in Freemasonry or any other secret society or cult, there are almost certainly be curses on your bloodline. You can cut these off by prayer to the Father in the name of Jesus. There are few books on the subject and there are deliverance ministries around. Pray and ask God to bring you into contact with the teachings and people who can help you.

When dealing with curses of secret societies, I believe that God recently showed me that certain societies, particularly the Freemasons, Knights, [inaudible 0:56:46], certain witches covens and Satanic groups and others keep registers of members whose families have left the cult and regularly curse them. Recently I was led while praying prophetically for an individual to command those curses to return one thousand fold on the agents of Satan praying them. I am not advocating this as routine practice but it has relevance where you are quite certain by which I mean prophetically that such curses are being renewed from time to time. Such cases I have also asked God in the name of Jesus to cover the entries and the registers with the blood of Jesus and thus obliterate them. I further asked Him to close up the lines and the page so the name of the bloodline concerned is forever removed.

Modern curses: Curses are still very much a way of life. Only today we do not realise that curses are real. Cursing and [inaudible 0:57:46] are common on television, which is another reason not to watch. But anything negative spoken over you by a third party whom you have provoked in any way will affect you. A curse without cause cannot alight according to some translations of scriptures, but on another translation of the same passage in Proverbs indicate that a curse without cause can be driven away. In other words, it can alight but if it has no cause, it will not remain if you resist it. But it is important that no matter what the correct translation of that Scripture is, that you should not readily assume that you have not done anything to cause someone to legitimately in Satan's terms, curse you. While bloodline curses can be cut off once and for all modern curses, a curse that is spoken of registers a secret society to keep coming. Clearly, if by your current actions, you are giving people legitimate reason to curse you, you must examine yourself in the mirror of the Word of God and choose to change your behaviour.

If you are being cursed by agents of Satan, including believers who are demonised, you will have to cut off those curses by praying in the name of Jesus. If you have really become active for the Kingdom of God, indications are that witches covens around the world obtain the names of people such as you from various sources and regularly pray Satanic prayers, cursing the people that have been identified. Remember, Satan copies and perverts everything that God does. So as much as you can pray blessings of other people, Satan's servants can pray curses. It is advisable to cut curses off regularly should the Holy Spirit give you an indication to do so. In certain cases you can command curses to return but you should be extremely careful about this. And only do it if you have clear guidance from the Holy Spirit to do it. It appears that certain agents of Satan once they realised that their curses are returning on their own heads will cease cursing you.

By way of an example that you may understand that these are issues that are not to be trifled off or taken lightly. Sometime ago, we were advised prophetically that certain specific individuals were cursing us on a regular basis. Prophet ministering to us commanded the curses to return three fold. Within weeks, two individuals were in hospital, one was in intensive care for several weeks and recovered a changed man. The other died several months later, having had dreams of snakes and all sorts of abominations. That is a measure of the power of the curses that they had spoken over us. It is a measure of the power that was returned against them by prophetic prayer and agreement with the will of God, in the name of Jesus. This power is not to be used unwisely or irresponsibly in our own understanding. In that case, you would be likely to open yourself wide open to attack.

Witches covens and other satanic groups: We generally have an impression of witches in black pointed hats with black cats and riding broomsticks. Today, most people do not believe that witches exist. They do and they are plenty around. Those that have been revealed to me by the Holy Spirit are generally often been extremely well dressed and often very attractive young woman with nothing that can be seen with the natural eye to disclose their true identity. All those that the Lord has shown me have been in churches. In all cases, they have been there to pray against the congregation or its leaders or a particular person or to introduce particular demonic spirits. In one case, the week after the Lord showed me three witches in a congregation, a senior pastor fell in a dramatic way. In another case, as best as I could discern, a witch came into a congregation, having obtained a legal right of entry by the direct rebellion of certain leaders and certain members of the congregation against a prophetic word from God. As best as I could discern, the witch brought with her a Demon, probably a spirit of divination, spirit of vanity, or a familiar spirit, which then caused one of the leaders who was in rebellion to cause supposedly at the leading of the Holy Spirit and reach out to pray for a member of the congregation who was desperately ill. Having performed a word, danced around the person concerned, the witch left. Three days later, the person concerned wound up in intensive care. We dare not ignore these things and we dare not grant Satan a legal right to infiltrate our meetings.

The need for holiness and sanctification has never been greater. At the same time, there is a real need for each of us to pray protection over ourselves and our congregation, particularly that God will keep agents of Satan out of our meetings and out of our lives. However it is no good praying such prayers if by our actions we are granting Satan all the legal right that he requires. The flesh again, why again. In my own experience having been very conscious of the need to put my flesh under and crucify it daily, I became so engrossed in all the other issues that I cease doing it. I was looking for spiritual answers to every problem and seeing Demons where only the flesh was at work. As a consequence, I went off track in the opposite direction and allowed my flesh to rise up seriously. In this way, the flesh weakens our prayer life, weakens our resolve to read the Word of God, and thus weakens our faith and our ability to resist the devil. In this way, Satan gains new avenues to attack us in areas where we were previously strong. Never lose sight of your flesh as an enemy of the spirit.

Wrong and right actions and right and wrong motives: The visions reported by Rick Joyner in the 'The Final Quest' and 'The Call' make it abundantly clear that often we do the wrong things for the right motives and the right thing for the wrong motives. Unless we are dead to self and totally sold out to be lead by the spirit, this is likely to persist. Probably few people can truly claim to be doing only the right things for the right motives. Recently I have increasingly begun to see how things that I previously thought were right were wrong, but for reasons that had not even occurred to me previously and vice versa. So we see that Jesus can with all humility and integrity declare that he is the son of God and that his witness is true. If he were to have said the same words with an overbearing arrogant manner,



the message would have been totally different. He did it simply to answer the question, not to impress and not to humiliate. His motives were pure.

Wrong thoughts: Thinking the wrong thoughts or as best as I understand it is not known to Satan. The actions that result even from eye movement and facial expression can give Satan's agents and particularly his Demons an indication of what is going on, particularly if they are planting the thoughts. Thoughts can originate from Satan's Demons and should be resisted and rebuked in the name of Jesus. Thoughts of the flesh also result in ungodly behaviour and can also be in conflict without confession. If our hearts are hard or corrupt and going other ways, out of line with the Word of God or the Will of God, He knows that we are not being obedient and this must surely affect our Christian walk.

God willing, I will continue this teaching next week and will continue to discuss concepts and principles which can result in finding ourselves in financially difficult situations. I pray that this message has assisted you in some way to identify those areas of your life where some adjustment is called for. May the Lord bless you and keep you. May Yahweh make His face to shine upon you and give you peace, in Jesus name.

## **02\_10 Poverty in the Church Part 4**

Today's teaching is a continuation of the series on *"Poverty in the Church of Jesus Christ,"* which in turn is part of the series *"Concerning Judgement in the Church Today."* In today's teaching, I will address a variety of other concepts and principles behind what has been taught with a view to equipping you to have a better understanding of the thinking behind this teaching and how it works in practice. The reason for doing this is simply in recognition of the fact that a lot of what is contained in this document and in this teaching is not something that is widely taught and therefore presents challenges to many believers in terms of adjusting their thinking to come to terms with the accountabilities and responsibilities which are inherent in this teaching. The bottom line of this teaching is that if we are not walking in the fullness of the blessings that God has promised us in His word, there is only one place to look and that is at ourselves. To examine ourselves for sin, to examine ourselves for false doctrine, and to repent and turn around and to do things His way.

I have to say that as I say that, that the issue of false doctrine in the church of Jesus Christ today is an area of major concern to me in just about every area of teaching, in just about every congregation that I have visited in the last few years. I have listened to teachings which do not accord with Scripture. The scriptures are used to support arguments which on closer examination cannot stand up to scrutiny and in this section I will touch on a few thoughts regarding the interpretation of Scripture. But I would really encourage you to recognise that as you apply the teachings in this series, as you examine yourself in the word of God, as you go before God and cry out to Him to show you anything that is causing you not to walk in the fullness of His blessings, be prepared to discover that many things that you have believed are scriptural are in fact not scriptural. And that many things that you have believed are not scriptural are in fact scriptural. It is a time of major change in challenging the church. It is a time of judgement and I truly believe that unless you set aside all your preconceived notions of what the Bible says and bring your heart and your mind and your soul and your body into total alignment with the word of God, you are likely to experience judgement in this life such as being experienced by few of any generations before us. I would therefore encourage you to diligently seek the truth.

I will also suggest to you that if you currently perceive yourself to be walking in the fullness of the blessings of God to be prospering financially to examine your heart and to examine your life against the word of God and to really satisfy yourself that prosperity is truly fully a consequence of the blessings of God, or whether in fact it is because you have compromised in some areas of your life. Just by way of example, the Word of God clearly teaches us that wives should submit to their husbands, that husbands are the head of the family, and that if a husband and wife are not in agreement, their prayers will be hindered and the house will be divided. I have to say to you that if a husband capitulates on being the head of the house in order to get out of strife and division with his wife and to come into agreement with his wife, your house may not be divided, and you may even experience financial blessing as a consequence of that lack of division but the hard reality is that you will not be walking in the fullness of the blessings that God has intended for your marriage because you cannot experience the fullness of marriage where the wife is in fact dominating the husband by her insistence and not coming into agreement on key scriptural issues.

So I would encourage every person who listens to this teaching to diligently examine themselves, to listen to what is presented in the tapes that have preceded this and in this tape and establish exactly those areas of their life that may need adjustment. Father I ask in the name of Jesus that you will open their eyes and their ears of all who listen to this teaching to know your will in their lives and to understand how they apply and that you will open their hearts to act on what they receive from these teachings that is of you Lord and you will blow away anything that is contrary to your word or that is error or that has come from my own understanding and is not according to your word, in Jesus name.

In the previous sections I have devoted a lot of attention primarily to the actions and spiritual principles which in my experience are directly contributed to Satan being able to attack finances and hinder blessings. In this teaching, I will seek to set out some general principles which seem to be relevant to the topic at hand. Before I do that, perhaps I should explain why I see things the way that I do. While preparing the document on which this teaching is based and recording the steady stream of thoughts that have come my way extending into another discourse on being led by the spirit, a discourse on marriage and divorce and discussion of the challenges associated with certain passages such as Isaiah 4:1 together with Exodus 21:10 and a discourse on church governance, I found myself repeatedly faced with the question of why I think the way I do and why I would seek to prepare these documents, all of which seemingly address spiritual issues from a perspective that I have not encountered to any real extent in material that I have been able to obtain and much of which seems to be a catalogue of aspects of church doctrine which to a greater or lesser extent did not seem quite correct. This is not to say that I have more truth than others or that all that is presented here is hundred percent correct. Simply that I seem to look at things and what many seem to view as an unusual way and a way that many seem to find strange and threatening.

It is incumbent on me to state that I faced the same challenge in my business as a management consultant. I seem to see things differently. This has led me publishing widely on the reasons why 70% of major corporations are dissatisfied with their information technology investment, the real issues in information technology. From this base I have delivered presentations in Britain, Europe, and the Middle East to various conferences and seminars, including the British Strategic Planning Society and the British Computer Society. This in turn has resulted in my being listed in the [inaudible 0:08:06] Who's Who in the science and engineering since 1998 and Who's Who in the world from 1999, a publication which contains names of any 40,000 people from all walks of life around the world. Apart from being a testimony to the goodness and greatness of the God we serve, since I truly do not think that I did anything to warrant this recognition and the recognition came with absolutely no effort on

my effort, it does seem to suggest that the analytical processes and knowledge and experience base, which God has developed in me throughout my life have equipped me to think differently about intractable problems.

Perhaps at this point, I should also note that more or less since the time of my confirmation in a traditional church at the age of about 13, I prayed daily, a very simple prayer, *"God give me wisdom and understanding, in Jesus name."* For many years the prayer that I prayed almost on a rep basis every night was a very simple prayer asking for blessings on myself and my family and that God would grant me wisdom and understanding. It does seem to me that that simple prayer has had some impact on the way that I think about the scriptures, walking the spirit-led life, the subject that are addressed in this discourse and the work that I do in my career on a daily basis.

In a sense I suppose that the society suggests that this teaching could alternatively be titled, the reasons why 70% of believers are not walking in divine prosperity, the real issues in Christian financial blessing. But the only real question being whether to 70% or 90% or some other quantum that reflects the correct proportion of believers to which this statement applies. I would try and answer this question by way of a parable. A man was stricken with polio during his youth so that his foot was slightly deformed. When a great war came upon the world, he was determined to fight evil. So he sought to sign up with the army. Because of his deformity he could never become an officer. As a sergeant in the transport corps, he repeatedly criticised his superior officers for their lack of discipline and failure to provide the necessary leadership. History eventually confirmed that officers at that time were so bound by their traditions that his criticism was justified. Eventually in a great battle, he and hundreds of thousands of others were taken prisoner. After many months of hardship, he and some friends escaped and were on the run for several months. Eventually while running from enemy soldiers one of the party fell and injured himself. Rather than desert his friend, the man and his colleagues returned and allowed themselves to be taken prisoner once more. Later, the war turned against the enemy and the victorious allies were advancing. The man and thousands of others were being marched away from the advancing front. He escaped and was one of the first to reach freedom.

Some years later, the man had a son and as the son grew up, his Father shared his war stories with him. The son became an avid reader of history concerning the war in which his father fought and read repeatedly how the incompetence of the generals and their failure to understand the enemy had caused millions of casualties which could have been avoided. Eventually the son grew up and was conscripted into the army. His father's advice to him was *"Son, if you are going to be killed, make sure it is as a result of your own orders."* Despite repeated rejection because of his tribe the son eventually became the commander of a regiment. In that position he systematically re-examined the way of doing things and led his unit in his own way. This culminated in his regiment being commanded as one of the two best to serve in a certain future operations in one year and setting a new international record for night assault river crossing the following year. The man in the story is my father. As a consequence of this background, I have always looked at things differently and particularly when things are not working as well as they should. I have always gone back to basics and not being afraid to hold the current generals accountable. I hope that this helps you to understand this teaching better.

Paradigm filters: The paradigm is an example or pattern according to the concise Oxford dictionary. In the parable above, the paradigm of the generals at the start of the war led to defeat in most major battles and millions of casualties on the battlefield. Eventually on the brink of defeat, a generation of generals filled in the new way of war, developed a new paradigm and turned defeat into victory. The paradigm acts as a filter through which all information is passed. If it does not fit our paradigm, we have great difficulty in understanding or receiving the information. For example, the Swiss watch

industry was nearly wiped out because when they were offered the first electronic watch, they could not see any use for it and it was developed by the Americans and Japanese. In the same way, if your religious paradigm cannot conceive that God could say us certain things, then you will never believe that God is speaking to you. You may well not hear Him and if you do, you may well end up rebuking Satan.

Currently, the church has in place numerous paradigm, or if you like, doctrinal filters which prevent them hearing God on various issues. Many of these issues are amongst those contained in this document and those which follow. As an example, Scripture clearly states that on the seventh day God rested and repeatedly states that the Sabbath is the last day of the week. We all know that Sunday is the first day of the week but virtually all Christians have been raised to regard Sunday as the Sabbath. Until you learn that Sunday is the pagan day for worshipping the sun and that Sunday worship was only introduced about 300 years after the death of Christ, because the gentile church wanted to distance itself from its Jewish roots, you cannot conceive that God could be telling you to return to worshipping on His Sabbath.

The diffusion of knowledge: The ideas typically originate with one or two people and are then disseminated more widely by way of publication, teaching, etc. Depending on the quality-control applied to the distribution process, these thoughts can either be enhanced or they can be contaminated. If there is an agent particularly committed to contaminating them, in this case, Satan, it is relatively easy to contaminate knowledge. At the time of Moses, God communicated to Moses. Moses recorded some of what God told him and communicated verbally to the people many other things. Initially the diffusion of knowledge was in one direction and was precise. As time move on, this knowledge was being passed backwards and forwards and the firsthand account was lost. Over the centuries, the people of Israel descended into apostasy and then exile. The truth was retained on parchment and the rest passed down by word of mouth and other documents. By Jesus' time, there was no firsthand knowledge and all was head knowledge rather than heart. Holy Spirit inspired knowledge other than a few prophets. In all likelihood, religious and other Demons were prevalent. Hence the chief priest describes and the Pharisees could not recognise Jesus for who he was. In the same way, Jesus' initial communication was direct to the apostles and through them to the church. The authority of the initial apostles and therefore the elders in Jerusalem was beyond question.

As the knowledge spread more widely, as the original apostles died, and as persecution and a simulation diluted the quality of the information, apostasy and dispersion followed. Today with the second coming of Jesus possibly imminent, we again have a situation where much of the understanding of Scripture has been lost and were paradigm filters of the accepted way of doing things corrupt our understanding of Scripture. People rationalise and explain verses of Scripture that do not fit their paradigm, turn this into a doctrine and then criticise and attack those who differ with them. Religious and other Demons are prevalent. The question is: Are the leaders, the elders in the church today able to clearly distinguish what is of God and what is not? From own experience, I have to say, by no means all the time and regrettably when it comes to areas of doctrinal difference as seem as in Jesus time unable to rationally consider the facts and go before God to seek the truth.

The critical difference between today and AD 33: In considering the question of the diffusion of knowledge and where we currently find ourselves with regard to church leadership, submission, and other contentious issues, it is important that we recognise the following. Firstly, in Jesus and apostles today, most communication was word of mouth. Two, the copying of a document by scribe was time-consuming and therefore costly. There were not that many scribes who had the necessary training to accurately and reliably duplicate documents. Even The Torah, the books of Moses was only available

in limited quantities. Three, as the apostles took the gospel around the world, they relied heavily on their personal knowledge and experience initially at least. The written gospels of Mark, Matthew, Luke and John were not written. The letters written by Paul and others also frequently went to one congregation, although they were subsequently copied and distributed more widely. Four, in most congregations at best, there was probably only one written record and in most cases only an oral account of Jesus' life and teachings and the teachings of the apostles and disciples.

Five, people relied heavily on the Holy Spirit and when there was disagreement, the obvious recourse was to the elders, those who had the most knowledge and experience and to the extent available to written documents. Today, every believer has effectively equal access to all the written record of significance together with innumerable study aids, etc. Jesus injunction to call no man teacher is far more realisable today than it was 1950 years ago, all have equal access to the Holy Spirit and therefore the possibility of personal revelation. In addition, since in the Dark Ages the church fell into effectively total Apostasy and even the most fundamental truths were hidden from view. The church is still recovering from this.

Regrettably, most Christians and positions of authority have decided to take titles for themselves and to position themselves as rulers and judges. They are no longer required to be the custodians of knowledge, nor can they be, now more than ever before, they must become shepherds in the mould of the great shepherd. The primary concern should be the care of the sheep and the recovery of the lost sheep.

Obey God rather than man: Act 5:29. Developing the previous thoughts experience shows that there are an increasing number of people who are hearing God clearly on matters that bring them into conflict with the church. In particular, people are told to submit to elders who lorded over the flock, despite Scripture which clearly tells them not to. People insist on assigning the title pastor to men despite Jesus' clear instruction to call no man rabbi, or teacher or lord. Elders and leaders who are supposed to be shepherds of the sheep, and remember that sheep are dumb animals. Insist on demanding submission from prophets and others who claim to have heard God and in the process, offer Satan massive footholds in their lives and congregations. Regrettably, once more we find ourselves in the shoes of Peter who was forced to [inaudible 0:20:38] in Jerusalem. We must obey God rather than man. This produces the same responses today as then, only in a more subtle fashion. Again, we must do what God has told us to do, failing which Satan will be given a major foothold in our lives. Please understand that I am not advocating rebellion. I am only stating that if you are certain that God has spoken to you, do not let any man convince you to submit to him rather than God.

The Ten Commandments: Somehow it appears that the Ten Commandments have gone out of fashion. You hardly ever hear them quoted, certainly not in charismatic circles and even when they are quoted in other church, they are read off pat and I wonder if anyone ever gives serious consideration to them, or even really seriously considers what they mean. But as best I understand it, these are most of the words that God spoke to a public audience at Mount Sinai and then personally wrote on the stone tablets for Moses. Nothing else in the history of man has been directly audibly spoken by God with such a display of His power or written by Him in person, dare we ignore them. For the record, here they are, quoted from the Living Torah and modern Jewish translation, Deuteronomy 5:1: *"And Moses summoned all Israel, and said to them: 'Listen Israel to the rules and laws that I am publicly declaring to you today. Learn them and safeguard them so that you will be able to keep them. God, your Lord, made a covenant with you. It is not with your ancestors that God made this covenant but with us.'"*

The first two Commandments: I am God your Lord who brought you out of Egypt from the place of slavery. Do not have any other gods before me. Do not represent such gods by statute or picture of anything in the Heaven above, on the Earth below, or in the water below the land. Do not bow down to such gods and do not worship them. I, God your Lord, and God who demands exclusive worship. Where my enemies are concerned, I keep in mind, the sin of the fathers, for their descendants for three and four generations, but to those who love me and keep my Commandments, I show love for thousands of generation. The third commandment: Do not take the name of God your Lord in vain. God will not allow the person who takes His name in vain to go unpunished.

The fourth commandment: Observe the Sabbath to keep it holy as God your Lord commanded you. You can work during the six-week days and do all your tasks, but Saturday is the Sabbath to God your Lord. So do not do anything that constitutes work. This includes you, your son, your daughter, your male and female slave or servant, your ox, your donkey, your other animals and the foreigner who is in your gates. Your male and female slaves will then be able to rest, just as you do. You must remember that you were slaves in Egypt when God your Lord brought you out with a strong hand and an outstretched arm. It is for this reason that God your Lord has commanded you to keep the Sabbath.

The fifth commandment: Honour your Father and mother as God your Lord commanded you. You will then live long and have it well on the land that God your Lord is giving you. The sixth commandment: Do not commit murder. The seventh commandment: Do not commit adultery. The eighth commandment: Do not steal. The ninth commandment: Dealing with false witness and lying. Do not testify as a prejudiced witness against your neighbour. The tenth commandment: Lust. Do not desire your neighbour's wife. Do not desire your neighbour's house, his field, his male or female slave or servant, his ox, his donkey, or anything else that belongs to your neighbour.

God also gave Moses the following creed. Deuteronomy 6:4: *"Listen Israel, God is our Lord. God is one. Love God your Lord with all your heart with all your soul and with all your mind. These words which I am commanding you today must remain in your heart. Teach them to your children, speak of them when you are at home, when travelling on the road, when you lie down and when you get up. Bind these words as the sign on your hand and it can be emblem in the centre of your head. Write them on parchments affixed to the doorpost of your houses and gates."*

The question that each one of us has to critically ask ourselves is *"Can I truly say that I am observing or conscientiously seeking to observe all the above?"* At the very least, unless you belong to a very small minority you are not observing the fourth commandment with regard to God Sabbath on Saturday. God is withdrawing grace on this sin and more and more Christians are hearing Him require of them that they honour and obey this command. On this fellowship, we hold meetings at our house every Saturday morning.

A new commandment: Love one another. In John 13, Jesus said, *"A new commandment I give to you that you love one another, even as I have loved you that you also love one another. By this all men will know that you are my disciple if you have love for one another."* That quote is from the New American Standard version. I am not sure that any of us really fully understand what this means. Jesus loved us so much that he forgave us even as he was tortured to death on the cross. I do not think that there are many Christians who have reached this point yet. Without this love Satan will have a field day attacking us.

Preconditions to the promises of God: Charismatic Christians in particular love to quote the promises of God, my God shall supply all your or my needs, according to His riches and glory through Christ

Jesus and many others. Most ignore the fact that all of God's promises or blessings are conditional on our obedience to His word. If you rebel against God, you will reap distraction just as surely as if you obey God, you will reap blessings. Until the church develops a healthy reverence or fear of God and the consequences of disobedience, men will continue to think that they can do things their way and have God bless them. I have yet to experience this. I have experienced that God has extended grace to me and blessed me abundantly where there were certain things still wrong in my life. As set out in my explanation in previous teaching on law and grace and how I understand it, I think that this is entirely understandable. What I found to my cost was that having being blessed and thus concluding that I was now okay with God and that He finished with dealing with me, I completely missed the point that it is now out to me to continue with the process and to prevent backsliding.

On more than one occasion, I presumptuously became too busy prospering, to spend as much time in the word in prayer and in church as before. Inevitably, the worse came off and I find myself worse off financially before God started blessing me. Largely because it took me time to realise that the will had come off and even longer to turn myself around spiritually and start hearing God clearly enough to understand what to do. As an example, these conditions are set out in what the Jews refer to as the yoke of the commandments as follows. Deuteronomy 11 starting at verse 13, *"If you are careful to pay heed to my commandments which I am prescribing to you today and if you love God your lord with all your heart and soul, then God has made this promise, will grant the fall and spring rains in your land at their proper time so that you will have an ample harvest of grain or wine. I will grant foliage in your fields for your animals and you will eat and be satisfied. Be careful that your heart not be tempted to go astray and worship other gods bowing down to them. God's anger will then be directed against you. And He will lock up the sky so that there will not be any rain. The land will not give crops and you will rapidly vanish from the good land that God has given you. Place these words of mine on your heart and soul, bind them as a sign on your arm and let them be an insignia in the centre of your head. Teach your children to speak of them when you are at home, when travelling on the road, when you lie down and when you get up. Write them on parchments affixed to the doorpost of your houses and gates. If you do this, you and your children will long endure on the land that God brought your ancestors, promising that He would give it to them as long as the Heavens were above the Earth."*

Folks, it is easy to believe that you got it made when the blessings start to flow. It is another thing to really get right with God. It appears that not many people are anywhere near that point. It also appears that even really anointed men of God who have certain areas of doctrine wrong are still under a covering of grace. It has to be that way. Only Jesus has all the truth. I somehow doubt that there is anyone on Earth today who is anywhere near to being as perfect as Jesus.

Love God and obey His Commandments: The Bible also says that to love God is to obey His Commandments and His Commandments are not onerous. It is important to understand that nothing that is taught in this teaching is a legality. All are principles, which if you love God, you will seek to obey His Commandments because you love Him. You will then find that His spirit in you will make it much easier to obey His Commandments.

But about Jesus? In considering all that has been written here thus far surely you have said is cannot be so, they crucified Jesus, did they not? But Jesus himself said that he could have called legions of Angels. Elsewhere it is said that Jesus prayed for the cup to passing by, we know that despite temptation Jesus never sinned and therefore never gave Satan a foothold. Accordingly we must conclude that Jesus was crucified only with the expressed consent of the Father and of himself. We must also conclude that it is possible for Satan to attack us even if there is no foothold. Presumably in certain specific instances where the Father wishes to teach us something, whether any of us will ever

get to a point where Satan has such a total lack of foothold, that the Father has to permit the attack despite the absence the absence of a legal right as something that does not seem worth speculating on.

God's love: God's love is robust, not namby-pamby, not liberal, not permissive, not limp-wristed. It is firm, directed at salvation after a long race. His love took Jesus to the cross. Until we recognise this, we will continue to deal gently with sin and seek to solve problems in our own strength throughout carnal compassion and in the process help our brethren to remain in bondage. Until we have learned to walk in God and such lack of self-awareness that we can communicate correction from God without any putdown and without being offended when we are put down we will not understand how God's love works.

Recently I began to experience a new depth in this area, what was shown me is simply that since but I have recently experience is so far beyond what I thought I had to go, it seems obvious that I have even further to go now than I thought I had. I initially wrote what I have just said several years ago, and I have to say to you today that that is just as valid today as it was then. The revelation that I have of His grace and the cleansing process and the robustness of God's love today is much greater than it was when I wrote that and even so today I must say to you that I conceive the journey as even longer than I thought it was.

Becoming like Christ: Becoming like Jesus is a lifelong journey, not something to be undertaken lightly. And not something that will ever be completed in this life. God is uncompromisingly righteous and He expects us to seek to be the same. Modern church appears to conduct itself most of the time as like God winks at sin. If someone suggest that there may be an error of doctrine or an error of conduct, the first thing that happens more often than not that the flesh rises up and the messengers attacked. If we truly believe that God was uncompromisingly righteous and that He the same of us, we would be filled with reverent fear of God and His judgement and would eagerly seek to hear what the other party had to say in the hope that we could eliminate footholds in our lives and become more like Jesus. Uncompromisingly righteous means that He is righteous and He does not even know how to entertain the thought of compromise. If He is that way, we must always be willing to change our position in order to come closer to His position. He will never change His position.

God uses strong language to describe sin. As much as the modern church likes to see God as a soft lovey-dovey sort of God, that does not fit the passages in the Bible that talk about God's views on sin and rebellion. He talks of spearing out of His mouth. His wrath being kindled, etc., etc. It seems that He only expresses Himself this way when He has afforded a person congregation, city, nation, etc., numerous opportunities to repent and spoken to them gently and then firmly. But He does speak strongly against sin. Recently He told me to tell a congregation that He was sick and tired of them coming late to His meetings. I was subsequently corrected by the pastor who told me that God did not speak that way and that I have allowed my flesh to rise up. May be they were correct, but as best I can discern, God is still saying to me that He is sick and tired of people coming late to meetings and then expecting Him to work miracles on their behalf. If God is sick and tired, I guess, Satan is overjoyed at the number of footholds that are being created. If you are not sure about the issue of strong language, look at Mayhem, verses 1, 2, and 3 for example.

Planks in eyes: Jesus warned us to remove the plank from our own eyes before attending to the speck in our brother's eyes. The more one lives with the Scripture, the more difficult it becomes to apply. We seem to see so clearly the false of others and to be so blind to our own faults. Many times God sends others across our paths and shows us their faults, not so that we can correct them, but so that



we can see ourselves in them. If we can get to a point where every time we see something apparently wrong with someone else, we go before God and ask Him to show us how that applies to us, we will all improve. Bear in mind, as far as I can read the word, there is very little that says that I have to go and correct someone else and if they ask my help, it is a lot to tell me to examine myself. Since Satan probably contributed substantially to putting the plank in our eyes and the speck in our brother's eyes, he is likely to use any hypocrisy on our part to good effect.

Offence equals crime: Criminal is often called an offender and their offence is a crime. We use the word offended so [inaudible 0:37:07] and take offence so easily. The very word indicates that it is a sin to be offended and to cause offence. As someone who is offended by an action that is truly from God and offered in love is sinning. Likewise, a person who by their ugly behaviour and sin causes another to adopt the same behaviour or causes them to take offence is also sinning. Again, this gives rise to footholds for Satan.

Put your hand to what you find to do. Many times believers stand on the Word of God for miracle but do not do everything that they can to find a job, no matter how menial. They seem to assume that God is bound to give them the job they want rather than the job that He has chosen for them. Likewise if God is moving you into a completely different career direction, He may have to move you there through some rather indirect channels. Subject to prayerful consideration, if you are seeking work and are unemployed or seeking to find new business opportunities, rather than striving, you should put your hand to whatever you find to do. Praying constantly for God to show you if you are doing the wrong thing and to turn you back to the correct path if you are mistaken. The more you humble yourself and pray, the more you will confess to God your abject inability to stay on His path for more than a few minutes in your own strength. And the more you will rely on His guidance to keep you on track. As you learn to pray this way, you can expect to become more spirit-led, and probably encounter much more opposition from Satan as He recognises that you are finding your way truly into the will of God. At the end of this teaching I will present a number of prayers around this topic.

Diligence: Diligence is an extension of the flesh issue. We need to be diligent in our work, diligent in our reading of the word, diligent in our prayers, diligent in our praise and worship, and above all, diligent in seeking the will of our Father in Heaven. If you are not being diligent, you are opening yourself wide for attack.

Good stewardship: Prudence versus extravagance. It is reasonable to assume that God will not bless you if you are extravagant and carnal with His money. Until you have a revelation that every cent belongs to God and that it is not yours to do with as you please, it is unlikely that He will bless you. If you have 20 outfits in the wardrobe and you are crying out for additional finance, He is unlikely to approve of you buying more clothes. On the contrary, He may require you to sell some clothes or give them to the poor. If you do that, you may in fact find that you can balance your budget without extra income. You can hardly claim to be a good steward until you are utilising His money the way He wants you to, not the way you want to. Again, footholds seem to flow from wasteful living. Striving after wealth is futile. Strive for holiness and right standing with God.

Servanthood: Jesus made a point at the last supper of speaking about servanthood. If we truly seeking to serve Him and serve His body, we should find it increasingly difficult to order others about. If we are truly His servants, then it is much easier for Him to protect us and if we are trying to be our own lords and to lord over Him.

**Talebearing:** Talebearing is an issue that almost everyone I know is guilty of. We like to talk about what others have done. We like to talk about what we have done and in talking, we like to pass judgement on others and make sure that others know what is wrong. That is sin and sin is a foothold. Do not do it. There is another teaching available which deals with this subject in much more detail and presents scriptures with regret to dealing with reports of sin and error in the church.

**Translations of the Bible:** Previous reference has been made to reading the word of God regularly. It is important to recognise that if you are not reading the Testament in the original Hebrew and the Old Testament in Hebrew or Aramaic, you are reading a translation. It is also important to understand that Greek is not the original language of the so-called New Testament Scriptures. The New Testament scriptures were originally recorded in Aramaic, which was the language of Jesus and the language of the apostles in Israel in Jesus day. Subsequently, they were translated into Greek. There is a translation of the Bible by George Lamser based on the Aramaic text referred to as the [inaudible 0:42:10] which has been preserved east of Israel, in the lands east of Jerusalem throughout the last 2000 years.

Keep in mind that when you are reading a translation, the translation is not what God said to His prophet who wrote down the original text. It is what the translator says that the prophets wrote down. In some cases, there is a critical distinction. In the King James Version, it states that the mark of the beast in the wrist or in the forehead. All other translations state that it is on. Taking account of reports of proposals to inject microchips under the skin of the wrist or forehead in the next few weeks, the question of end verses on becomes one of the most critical of translation facing the church today. There are numerous other issues some of which have given rise to whole doctrines which hinge on the translation or interpretation of the translation of one or two words. It is therefore vital to be selective with regard to the translation that you read. There is strong reasons to believe that while the New International Version and certain other mainstream translations are easy to read, King James version and the Amplified Bible are suggested by many to be the two more accurate translation when it comes to matters of substance.

Keep in mind that the first time that the Bible was translated, there was limited scope for understanding to corrupt the translation. With more recent translations there has been greater scope for the understanding of the translators to correct the translation. Pray and ask God to show you which translation He wants you to read. It will likely depend on where you are in your walk with Him. The Living Torah, modern Jewish translation of much of the Old Testament is in my experience is furthermore more lucid and anointed translation of the Old Testament available. Particularly again, in the area of messianic prophecy, there are aspects of those translations that are questionable. The answer is to read different translations each time or at least every few times you read the Bible, from Genesis to Revelation that way you avoid becoming bound to one translation.

**Commentaries and teachings:** Many people seem to place great reliance on commentaries and teachings. While these are good for additional understanding and amplification, great care must be exercised. I refer you to the comments made in a previous teaching in this series concerning error concealed among truth to give you an indication of the risk what that approach contains. Every work of man is imperfect. Some are more imperfect than others. There are books which have chapters which are quite possibly prophetic and other chapters which are the work of the flesh or even demonic inspiration. There are some commentaries with certain passages may contain wonderful revelation, but adjacent passages may be completely incorrect. This simply reflects the fallen and imperfect state of man and that none of us are truly yielded to the Holy Spirit to the point that we have the mind of Christ uppermost in our consciousness at all times.

It is not reason to reject the author of His work. Simply we must sieve the wheat from the chaff and once complete, we should move on. Never lose sight of the fact that Holy Spirit is the spirit of Jesus and the spirit of prophecy. He wrote the Bible and he can explain it to you. Learn to pray and ask questions. Do not be afraid to ask him any question you would ask any human teacher or book and ask him the questions that you would not even ask them. He wants to lead you into all truth. It is your choice whether you will let him. The minute that you set your sights on a man or a book or any other human source instead of the Holy Spirit, you are entering into idolatry. Beware that is a minefield of opportunity for Satan to find footholds in your life.

Satan seeks your particular areas of weakness. If you have a particular weakness, be it lust, greed, fear, or anything else, Satan knows about it and no matter how successfully you have overcome and being delivered from that weakness, he will keep attacking us and tempting you with a view to sucking you back into that particular pit. For this reason, no other man's testimony or experience will be precisely what you need. You must permit God to guide you to run your race the way that is right for you. This might be better than not running at all, but at the end of the day, there is a good chance that they will teach you their footholds while failing to help you overcome yours. Satan concentrates his efforts on those who are most afflicted for the kingdom of God. In other words, doing Satan the most harm. Many people seem to think that if Satan is not troubling them, they are walking in victory. On the contrary, it seems that if you are not troubling Satan, he will not trouble you. But if you are not troubling Satan, then it is almost certain that you are not doing anything meaningful for the kingdom of God. Remember that the indications are that Satan only has one-third of the Angels. Therefore his Angels are outnumbered two to one. He has all the Demons but we have the Holy Spirit and the Spirit of God and God is omnipresent and omniscient. That is, He is everywhere at the same time and He knows everything. Satan and his Demons can only be in one place at a time. They can move and communicate very rapidly, but nevertheless, they can only be in one place at one time, that is to say one specific Demon can only be in one person at one time and one specific fallen angel can only be misleading or destroying in the life of one person at one time.

They are therefore seriously outnumbered and were not for the fact that Satan has got of this world as legal authority on the Earth granted him by Adam, he could not win the day-to-day battles. He is therefore vitally dependent on footholds to grant him his urge, hence the emphasis of this teaching. At the same time, if he is going to be really effectively attack anyone, he has to pick his targets carefully, so that he can mobilise his forces effectively. If there are people out there really striking blows for the kingdom of God, it does not make sense for Satan to go and harass some born-again believer who never goes out of doors, never prays or reads the word and just watches secular television. That believer will fall [inaudible 0:49:10] with minimum effort. Satan has mobilised all his forces to tackle those who are really doing him damage. After all, he has read the back of a book and he knows the fate that is in store for him if he does not prevent certain things from happening.

For example, the longer he can prevent the gospel being preached to all world, the more time he gets. To counter his attacks on us, it is vital that we become as holy and sanctified as possible while at the same time learning to use our armour and the weapons of our warfare, the gifts of the spirit, etc. as effectively as possible. For what I have taught in this series, it is my sincere prayer that you will realise that in long-term it is far easier to eliminate the footholds in our lives and reach a place of holiness and sanctification in Christ where Satan's ability to touch us is as restricted as possible. In this position, we can be devastating the effect for God. The challenge is to reach that position, not in our own strength but by the spirit.

Perseverance: Sometimes it appears that Satan is permitted to keep up the attack to the very end in order that God may teach us the most, strengthen our faith the most through the experience and prepare us better for the next round. Perseverance is a vital element of the Christian walk, but should not be confused with the fatalistic hanging in there, which denies our responsibility to examine ourselves and to work at our salvation, etc. God never changes. He is same yesterday, today and forever. So much has been said in the Christian church about things being different in the New Covenant and the Old, where there is no scriptural basis to say so. The question of the Saturday versus Sunday Sabbath is a case in point. There is absolutely no scriptural basis to assert that Jesus changed the Sabbath day to Sunday. On the contrary, he observed the Saturday Sabbath throughout his life and so did his disciples. Paul would notify many people in the synagogue on Sunday when he debated on the Sabbath. Yet, you will find in many commentaries on why Christians are the only people who worship on Sunday. With respect, God is the same yesterday, today, and forever. His Sabbath is the last day of the week, Saturday and He never told us to worship on a Sunday. It is the Christians who are confused and deluded, not the Jews. We make Christianity foolish in the eyes of the Jews who will be called to account for putting that stumbling block in the way of their salvation, a massive foothold in the church today.

Opposition of the saints is opposing God: The Scripture touched not mine anointed and do my prophets no harm is used from time to time in the church to justify why a member has been disciplined. Unfortunately, it is frequently applied against prophets and others whom God uses to speak correction to leaders who are in error or rebellion. Somehow they come to believe that they have the monopoly on anointing. It is important that we all recognise that the Scripture is an injunction that applies in both directions and applies to taking the action in the flesh, not to speaking a word of correction or rebuke prophetically. I am amazed at the number of Christians who take it upon themselves to judge King David, in the process making critical statements about his character and the perceptions of his weaknesses. I really believe that since the Lord says that David was a man after God's own heart, we should really be careful about doing this. It appears to me that this opens the door wide for Satan to climb in and attack us. Not to mention that it is probably indicative of a spiritual pride. It is highly unlikely that there are many, if any men on this Earth today who walk as closely and successfully as David did with God, particularly in a position of secular leadership.

Recognise also that while he was on the run from Saul, David on several occasions quoted the Scripture about touching not the Lord's anointed. We see a classic examples there of David anointed by God to become king of Israel. Saul anointed my God to his King of Israel but rejected by God, clinging to the kingship and yet David does nothing to gain the kingship. He simply flees from Saul and pleads his innocence. And yet, on two occasions when God affords David the opportunity to slay Saul, David simply performs an act in one case cutting off a corner of Saul's robe and in the second case, [inaudible 0:54:06] a water bottle from his side to demonstrate convincingly to Saul that he has no desire to attack and kill Saul. And in both cases, he cites the Scripture to touch not the Lord's anointed. Thus we must see clearly that if we have been anointed by God, and another person who has been anointed by God and even if they fall into the greatest possible error beyond anything that we can conceive ourselves doing, we have no right to criticise them or to attack them. We can pray for them. We can intercede for them. We can remove ourselves from their presence, but by no means should we speak out against them, tell others about this so-called sin or anyway touch them. A previous teaching in this series addresses this topic in much more detail.

Tax: Jesus said reign down to Caesar the things that ceases. I have encountered churches whose elders have embarked on schemes to avoid attacks which turn into evasion. Praying certain expenses on the

pastor's behalf and treating them as salary for salary determination but not declaring them for tax purposes as robbing Caesar. Whether a pastor brings tithes in full amount or not, surely that must open the door for the devil. Likewise any scheme that is tax evasion rather than tax avoidance is a sin. Ignorance does not prevent legal entry by Satan. Ignorance of the law may excuse us a maximum that applies particularly when dealing with Satan. But it does appear that God extends grace to protect us in our infancy. There should be no doubt in your mind after these teachings that Satan will use every legal opportunity that he has to attack you whether you are aware of that foothold or not. The whole object of this teaching is to alert you to possible footholds that could expose you to attack. Please realise that these teachings are by no means comprehensive. God willing, more issues will be touched on in subsequent series.

Extreme tests before abundance: From many testimonies that I have heard of modern day great men of God and from consideration of Scripture, it appears that great tests and trials of considerable duration precede real abundance in Christ. We must be refined by the fire and matured and prepared before we can be blessed. Otherwise, the blessings will destroy us. I remain convinced that the financial blessings of God that any person can receive will be commensurate with the calling. As a person called to minister to business executives may require an upmarket house and car and a [inaudible 0:57:04] balance sheet. This will be entirely inappropriate for a small community pastor in an impoverished community. The size of the treasure on Earth is no reflection of God's relative love and favour for the two individuals. It is much more difficult for the wealthy person to enter the kingdom than for a poor person. The refining process should therefore be more stringent before financial blessings of great magnitude are poured out.

The power of the blood of Jesus: Never lose sight of the power of the blood of Jesus. Apply the blood to yourself and your family from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet and to your house, walls, floors, roof, ceiling doors, windows, doorposts, window frames and lintels and your entire property and all you own. Thank the Lord that His Angels encamp around those who fear Him to protect them and give thanks at all times for your salvation. Keep the enemy out of your camp.

Praise and worship: I have not really touched on praise and worship but continuous praise and worship in your life is essential. Enter His gates with Thanksgiving, his courts with praise. You will only really grow close to God if you can praise Him and worship Him with every fibre of your being with absolutely no inhibitions as long as you are led by the spirit. If you love Him with all that you are, you will give Him all that you can in praise and worship.

What is hindering? Elsewhere, reference has been made to hindering spirits. Work of hindering spirits in the financial realm is characterised for example by orders which constantly seem imminent for a business, but which are always delayed and eventually cancelled or awarded to others or downscaled. The existence of One Flesh Bonds is far as I know the source of legal entry of hindering spirits. This originates either from One Flesh Bonds with sexual partners who are not the marriage partner or as a result of division and disagreement between marriage partners.

Opposed script: The curse of the law and grace. Since writing the first draft of the document on which this teaching is based, I spent much time in the Scriptures, prayer and other reading. The challenge of trying to clearly enunciate what I understand remains with me. I am acutely aware of my inadequacies and communicating much in this document which many will find controversial and unpalatable. By implication, this document retains many Christians to confrontation with many issues in their lives which they have been taught or miraculously dealt with at the cross. Am I denying the resurrection of power of the cross? Certainly not. On a recent date, I retreat and made the following notes after

reading in Deuteronomy 28 about the curses, Revelation 22:3 about there being no more curse at the end of the age not today, and other passages which clearly indicate to me that many of the curses of the Old Testament are still in force today as indicated in this teaching.

If this is the case, then what about Jesus becoming a curse for us? A partial interpretation is offered by the following interpretation of Galatians 2:17-21. The key seems to be verse 18: *"If I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor."* The implication is that if I continue in sin, I become a transgressor and the law regains a foothold in my life insofar as Satan gains a legal right to attack me. But I have the Holy Spirit and Jesus sacrificed to return for that sin if I confess and repent. This is as opposed to animal sacrifices at a remote altar, at a remote temple, that I could have best visit a few times a year or even less frequently under the Mosaic covenant. Thus the temple at Jerusalem could be destroyed. Animal sacrifice ended and the officiation of the priests at the Temple ended as a consequence of Jesus' sacrifice, once and for all because the Temple is now within me. Jesus is sacrificed once and for all and he is my high priest, thus transforming the law into grace whereby God deals with me personally in the process of refining me towards holiness and sanctification. But insofar as my sin transgresses the grace that God has extended to me, I make myself a transgressor and therefore vulnerable to the curse of the law.

Ephesians 4:18-32 lists much that is relevant to this teaching. It is on verse 27 nor give trace or foothold to the devil, that the core thesis of this teaching is based. This passage warrants careful study at this time as you listen to this teaching. I hope that this clarifies what I have endeavoured to communicate throughout this teaching. I fully appreciate that what I am addressing here is incredibly complex and that I do not have all the answers, I sought to communicate it as effectively as possible on my understanding based on real life observations and experience of what has worked and what has not, together with a large amount of prayer, Bible study and other research. If my choice of words to subscribe the scriptural basis of what I have presented is not entirely accurate, I would value your suggestions. However, please do not permit this to distract you from extracting what is of importance to you out of this document.

There is still much that I can write on this topic, but increasingly this relates to the challenge of becoming truly spirit-led. God willing, I hope in due course to produce a further teaching which addresses this subject in a similar format to this.

In conclusion, I have sought to set out some principles which from my experiencing seem important to the topic. My prayer is that as you read through these points, the Holy Spirit will lead you to those factors that apply in your life right now. For there it is up to you to work out your salvation, healing and deliverance with fear and trembling. Pray and ask the Lord to lead you to relevant scriptures, teachings, books, tapes, etc. Ask Him to lead you to people who can help you, speak to you through apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, teachers, and other believers. You are also welcome to contact me. I cannot guarantee that I can help you, but God willing, we will try. I can be contacted on South Africa international dialling code 27, dialling code in South Africa 83 from outside the country or else 083-251-6644. That is my cellular phone. Or Johannesburg in South Africa, 011-791-2327. Fax 791-5004. Email: [Jamesr@infodoor.co.za](mailto:Jamesr@infodoor.co.za).

In the final part of this teaching, I will set out some prayers that I found helpful in walking the road that I have touched on in this teaching. Some prayers that have worked for me. I hope that from the comments made throughout this teaching as well as the guidelines for using the teaching provided at the beginning, you will realise that I truly believe that the only way that you will be delivered from bondage is through what I would call *"diagnostic prayer."* That is, accept that God wants to bless you,

accept that His word is true and accept that He has said that he will answer every prayer prayed in accordance with His will and in faith without doubting in the name of Jesus. If this is the case, then the only possible reason for you to be in lack, sickness, or any other form of bondage must lie with you. That is not a criticism, it is a statement of fact and is in fact I believe a statement that should fill you with hope and joy.

If you are all that stands between you and deliverance, then you are no longer dependent on any third-party. God can and will deliver you as soon as you have dealt with whatever it is that is giving Satan a foothold. Certainly God may use other people to assist you but even if you are the only person in the room on a desert island and you have your Bible and are filled with the Holy Spirit, that is all that you will ever need for your deliverance. Nevertheless, somehow most people do not seem to know how to pray diagnostic prayers. To me as an engineer, scientist, analyst and military commander, diagnostic prayers are simply the spiritual equivalent of the reasonable questions that anyone facing a problem in the world would ask in order to solve the problem.

Diagnostic prayers are prayers prayed in faith believing that God will answer in which you ask God to help you and discover what is wrong and why you are not walking in His blessings whatever the blessing may be. In other words, ask God questions and if you do not understand the answer, ask more questions and keep on asking questions about the answers until all aspects of the problem have been dealt with and you have the victory. Clearly when an answer requires action, whether it be restitution, repentance or any other form of action, you will need to take that action, however much of it may not be to your liking. Equally the answer you receive is not necessarily going to be the same answer that someone else would obtain and therefore they are not necessarily going to be able to assist you to act on it. After all it is your personal sin. However, if you pray thoughtfully, if you listen attentively, if you observe carefully what goes on around you, you will begin to understand where God is leading you. As you gain understanding, you will progressively pray more incisively until you have prayed through to the solution.

Remember always to pray in the spirit without ceasing. You could also pray defensive and protective prayers. As you begin to understand how totally incompetent you are in your own strength to achieve anything in the spiritual realm, you will also begin to pray prayers which grant God permission to operate more and more deeply in your life. As you do so, you are likely to begin to diet yourself and become increasingly Holy Spirit led.

The prayers that follow are a direct transcription of the lists that I have developed over several years, which I have from time to time prayed over myself. They are not offered as some form of recipe, simply as a list that has helped me and which I believe if you pray them sincerely and with faith will help you. All prayers are prayed to the Father in the name of Jesus and I will therefore not state that explicitly necessarily with every prayer. Please note that I do not claim that every prayer is scriptural or entirely within the best will of God. This is simply a list of prayers that I have prayed.

Nothing that follows should be construed suggesting that you should abdicate your responsibility to hear God and to act on what He says to you. No matter what the wording may suggest to you or must be prayed as a humble petition, not an arrogant demanding or avoiding of responsibility. If you do not like the wording, you are free to change them. If you have suggestions, I would welcome hearing from you. I will simply utter each prayer and you may pray them with me or change some as you see fit.

Father God in Jesus name I ask you to please show me any unforgiveness, bitterness, offence, error, unrighteousness, or other sins that I need to repent of and anything else that will keep me from

hearing you or fellowshiping with you. Please bring to my attention the sins that I am currently are unaware of and forgive me even the sins that I do not know about or I am unaware of, in Jesus name.

Create in me a clean heart. Pray Psalm 50:1 over yourself regularly. Pray Psalm 119 over yourself regularly. Father I ask you to speak to me through apostles, prophets, evangelists, pastors, teachers books, tapes, or in any other way to show me things that I am not hearing you clearly on or things that I need to know, in Jesus name. Father God in the name of Jesus, send apostles and prophets to me for correction or direction as necessary. Keep me from false prophets, lying, false vanity, religious proud and antichrist spirits and all other demonic influence, in Jesus name.

Father God in the name of Jesus, crucify myself, selfishness, self-righteousness, self-centredness and all other forms of self that I may become Christ-centred and let my flesh die daily. Grant me a revelation to truly see myself as the chief of sinners as Paul did in Jesus name. Father in the name of Jesus, help me to discipline myself daily to read your word and pray continually and in tongues and to be in your presence all the time in Jesus name. Father God in the name of Jesus make me critically aware of anything that is hindering my prayer life, reading of the word or hearing you. Help me to keep from backsliding again in Jesus name. Father God help me to put you first in everything and help me to keep from becoming too busy from you in Jesus name. Father God help me to seek first the Kingdom of God and your righteousness and to do the things that you have called me to do as my only priority in Jesus name.

Father I thank you in the name of Jesus that you will bring the right people into my life and take and keep the wrong people out of my life. I thank you that you will provide all my needs, both physical and financial in Jesus name. That last prayer I would suggest to you is one of the most significant prayers that I have prayed in my life. In the years that followed praying that prayer I experienced enormous turmoil as the Lord showed me what was in the hearts of various people around me that I truly trusted and relied on but without praying prayers like that we are likely to spend our lives constantly being misdirected and doing things which are not pleasing to God.

Father God in the name of Jesus I apply the blood of Jesus to my wife and my children and myself from the top of our heads to the soles of our feet. I apply the blood of Jesus to the house, the walls, the floors, the roofs, the ceilings, the doors, windows, the window frames, the doorposts and the lintels, to cars, to property and all that we own, in Jesus name. I ask you to help me to be continually conscious of self and confessing the power of the blood of Jesus in Jesus name. Father God guide me to take care of my body, your temple in Jesus name. Father God guide me to be a good husband and father and worker in Jesus name.

Father God give me wisdom and understanding and lead me in all that I do in Jesus name. Father, teach me to pray in Jesus name. Father make me more like Jesus day by day, in Jesus name. Father show me your priorities every day, in Jesus name. Guide my every step, every minute of every day. Let me do only your will every second of every minute of every hour of every day of every week of every month of every year for the rest of my life. Father let me acknowledge you and Jesus before men at all times in every way in Jesus name. Father, guide my business and all those who work for it, grant them wisdom and understanding in all things and help them to work as a team and come to know you more in Jesus name. Father, thank you for abundant finances and that you take us out of debt in Jesus name. Father, guide our rulers that we may and our land may have peace in Jesus name.

Father I thank you that I put on and constantly wear the whole armour of God. I wear the belt of truth and the breastplate of integrity, moral rectitude and right standing with God. My feet is [inaudible]



1:14:18] with the firm foot of stability of the gospel of peace lifting up over all the shield of saving faith upon which I can quench all the flaming missiles of the evil one. I wear the helmet of salvation and carry the sword that the spirit wields, that is the Word of God. I thank you that you help me to pray at all times and on every occasion in the spirit and to keep alert and strong, in Jesus name.

Read Ephesians regularly and pray the appropriate passages. Father I ask you in the name of Jesus to help me to keep from self confidence, pride and other carnal or demonic influence and show me immediately any Demons tends to attach itself to me or my family, in Jesus name. Father I ask you to show me all demonic bondage that I am currently in, all Demons that are presently oppressing my flesh and I ask you to show me what is necessary to get rid of them. I ask you in the name of Jesus to bring me into contact with people and teachings that will bring me to a place of complete deliverance, in Jesus name. Father I ask you in the name of Jesus to show me what else I should pray in Jesus name. Father I ask you to remind me to ask you before I do anything that will take time, cost money, or impact anyone anything, your work or your kingdom. Help me to do your will and not mine, in Jesus name. Father I ask you to lead me not into temptation, in Jesus name.

Pray the so-called Lord's prayer or pattern prayer on a regular basis. Thy Father, who art in heaven, hallowed be thy name, thy kingdom come, thy will be done on Earth as it is in Heaven. Give us this day our daily bread and forgive us our trespasses as we forgive them that trespass against us. Lead us not into temptation but deliver us from evil from thy is the glory, the power and the kingdom for ever and ever, amen.

Use that outline that Jesus gave us as a basis for your prayers but amplify and extend the concept of each step of the way as you pray. Father help me to speak your word with boldness in every situation in Jesus name. Read Romans 8 regularly, especially with regard to Jesus Christ as our unrighteousness. Father help me to remember that in 1 Timothy 1:15 Paul referred to himself as the chief of all sinners. Help me to see myself as the chief of all sinners, in Jesus name. A prayer which Rick Joyner reports in his book 'The Final Quest' which to me is profoundly important is quite simply: Father in the name of Jesus I ask you to judge me severely and correct me harshly that I may serve you more perfectly, in Jesus name. Also, Father I ask you to show me the level of my present deception in the name of Jesus and I ask you to show me what you require of me to deal with the deception in my life in Jesus name. Father I ask you to give me a teachable heart and a teachable spirit that I will respond immediately to new truth that you reveal to me in Jesus name.

These prayers are by no means a definitive list. They are certainly prayers that have been helpful to me. I have certainly seen answers to these prayers in my life as I have grown in Christ. I would encourage you to pray these prayers or pray similar to them and whatever other prayers that the Holy Spirit of God leads you to pray on an ongoing and continual basis as you press in and seek to know Him more nearly and see Him more clearly day by day. Please realise also that much of what is requested in those prayers will take time to manifest in one's life. In some cases, we may need considerable spiritual preparation before we can receive those things. In all cases, I will not allow my flesh to stand in the way.

Understand that when you ask God to take people that He does not want out of your life, there is a distinct possibility that He is going to remove people from your life that you do not expect Him to remove. Understand also that it is likely to be difficult and painful because Satan is going to manifest in those situations in ways that you quite possibly have never previously experienced. In the years that followed after I first prayed for the Lord to take people He did not want out of my life, He systematically removed one of my business partners and I gave my staff, a man, my wife in the process

of revealing massive treachery and betrayal in a number of instances. However, to live a life in which such demonically inspired treachery and dishonesty is constantly going on behind one's back, is a life in which one cannot walk in the fullness of the blessings of God and accordingly I would encourage you to pray that prayer with great sincerity at the same time being aware that you will almost certainly encounter demonic manifestation in the lives of people around you, such as you have probably not expected.

In conclusion, with regard to the prayers that I have just prayed with you, I still wrestle with the question of whether some or all of them should be prayed in the process of thanking God from granting the prayers as opposed to petitioning Him. In some cases I think it will be presumptuous to pray all of those differently, but I am unsure and I would encourage each of my listeners to seek God and to pray as they see fit and as they feel led. I sincerely pray that you have found this teaching series to be of some help. I welcome your comments and suggestions, particularly of significant omissions and serious errors. At the same time, I appeal to you to focus on what is good in this document, rather than on that is wrong with it. None of us is perfect and I increasingly realise how imperfect I am. While correction is important, if we become too focused on correcting others, we miss out on what God is seeking you to do in our own lives and we are primarily responsible for our own lives. At the same time, pride very quickly gains a foothold. If you are constantly seeing people's errors, errors in books, etc., and are telling them what is wrong, you are very sure that God has told you to speak to them if not pride has probably become established. Rather keep quiet and pray for them.

God bless you. I pray that you will take a few steps closer to Jesus and to victory in your life as a result of what is being taught in this series. May the Lord bless you and keep you. May the Lord make His face to shine upon you, in the name of Jesus, amen.

## **02 11 Spiritual Warfare Prayers Preparing for the Coming Judgment**

In the Judgement series, Judgement in this Life. It was recorded on the 20th of December, the year 2000, as an add-on to the series in response to a set of spiritual warfare prayers which I felt impressed for the Lord to prepare for the Foundation for Living, Christian Fellowship in Pretoria last week. It has become apparent to me that with the level of onslaught that is taking place on the church today and the level of judgement that is coming on the church today that it is absolutely vital that Christians start praying effective spiritual warfare prayers, specifically directed at the realisation that we are now at the end of the age and that Satan and his cohorts will be consigned to the pit, the Abyss for a thousand years at the end of this period. The tape that I prepared for FFL would be included in this tape in full and then I will provide further information for your reference at the end of that recording. Before I do that, let me share a little bit more of a context with you. My background is civil engineering and I have some experience in mining engineering as well. And when the Lord first led me to start praying in the fashion that is included on this tape, I had a vision in terms of the manner in which ore bodies, deep ore bodies, particularly diamond pipes are mined, and I will endeavour just to give you a verbal picture of what that entails.

Here we are talking about an ore body, which is extremely deep and extremely massive and the problem associated with that is that you cannot go down from the surface indefinitely, otherwise the size of the pit becomes unmanageable and in particularly with a diamond pipe you are dealing with relatively soft ground at the middle and very hard rock around it. So what is generally done is that they come in from underneath the ore body. They drill in tunnels with drives and they then draw three-

dimensional fan of blast holes up into the roof of the drive. They pack those with explosives, they detonate them and a portion of the roof then collapses into the drive and they go in with equipments, sometimes remote controlled loaders and they laid out the ore body. Once they have cleared out the void, they go in and they blast the next component. Slowly what happens is what is initially a very small hole in the roof out of which not very much ore comes, gets bigger and bigger and the whole cascades upwards until in some cases it may actually reach the surface of the opencast mine which then collapses into the whole and there is a whole all the way to the surface which may in some instances extends thousands of feet.

Now, the metaphor that the Lord showed me in that vision is that currently we sit on ground level under a massive oppressive blanket of principalities, powers, thrones, and dominions. My understanding is that the principalities are the relatively small demonic groups and groups of angels serving Satan, very close to the ground which are operating over particular families, particular communities, particular churches, particular areas of political endeavour, such as education, nightclubs, etc. Above them are the powers which are more far-reaching, above them are thrones, and above them are the dominions, each of which is a hierarchy. I am not absolutely sure of the exact progression of that. So please do not take that as an absolutely definitive statement of fact, but the reality is that there is this hierarchy and on top of all of this sits Satan. So Satan gives his commands to the dominions under him. They give their commands to the thrones under them. They give their commands to the powers under them and they give their commands to the principalities under them and the principalities they give their commands to the individual junior or lower ranking Angels and Demons who are the ones who actually generally manipulate and controls human beings on this Earth, be that believers or unbelievers. It is important to understand that the majority of Satan's efforts are directed at believers. He is just exercising enough influence over unbelievers to keep them coming to salvation but as long as he can keep them coming to salvation they are no real threat to him, recognise that it is generally believed that Satan took one-third of the Angels with him when he fell from heaven, which means that Satan's Angels are outnumbered 2:1. On the other hand, Satan has seemingly billions of Demons but the Demons are in a sense outweighed by the Spirit of God in whom we live and move and have our being and who pervades the entire universe, outweighed by the spirit of Jesus in the heart of every born-again believer and outweighed by the Holy Spirit in the hearts of the believers who have received the baptism of the Holy Spirit. But in each case recognise God is gentle, God is kind, God does not go against our will, God gave mankind in the form of Adam dominion over the Earth, Jesus came to gain the authority to cast Satan out and he gave that authority to men. Men have to exercise that authority until the great day when Satan and his cohorts are cast into the pit. So God will be aware of what is going on. He can tell you what to pray. He can tell you what to pray in the spirit. He can speak through prophets and reveal the principalities and powers, thrones and dominions, but we have to pray in order to tear them down.

To go back to the mining analogy, basically recognising that any congregation, which is at a specific geographic location where God has placed them as being placed there for purpose. I have seen progressively over the last few years that God tends to place congregations directly under pivot points in principalities, powers, thrones, or dominions, and if we can tear down and create a clear Heaven above that point, it weakens the principalities and powers around it. In other cases, it seems to me where they may be great darkness God may put a ring of churches around that area or a ring of people playing around that area and if they can pray a clear circle around that place, then the principalities and powers within that circle can be torn down. So it is important to see that each person who listens to this tape, each congregation has a responsibility before God to operate consistently and effectively in praying the prayers which are contained on this tape, in Jesus name. And so basically if you start

today praying over your house and binding and tearing down the principalities, powers, thrones, and dominions that are operating over your house, it is like that ore body, it is like that first little fan-shaped drilling that I spoke about, and depending on how strong you are in your faith, how confident you are in your priority, the magnitude of the anointing that you are walking under today, you will start firing little shots into the darkness above you dwell and as you pray and you pray out into the broader space above your house, you would tear down and tear down. And so every time you pray, you bring down and weaken a few more of Demons and Angels that are operating over your property until eventually if you are diligent, if you walk in the full revelation of the authority of the Lord Jesus Christ, you will come to a place where God will grant you an open Heaven.

I have on two occasions praying these prayers had the Lord shown me an open Heaven. In one case, it was quite a major opening above a particular ministry and the skies opened and we knew that our prayers were going through for a season. But understand that when that happens, Satan immediately comes to kill, steal, and destroy. He will launch a serious attack on that ministry. He will try and bring division what have you and sadly in that particular case, he brought rebellion, witchcraft, and various other sin into that congregation like a flood and it fell apart within weeks.

In another instance I saw what was initially a shaft of gold light, like a size of a lamppost and then we prayed again the following week, it opened to the diameter of a tunnel that a man could have passed through. So if we are diligent, we will pray through and we will create a hole in the demonic darkness above a particular location, be it a congregation, be it above a dwelling place of family and if we keep praying, we will slowly break more and more of those things into that hole and they will be cast out. As we pray, as we pray by faith, if we keep an agreement and we keep resisting what the devil is doing, we will eventually collectively around the world, the people who are praying this prayer will come to a place where sometime and the indications are maybe three years, it may be about seven years, Satan and his cohorts will be cast into the pit for a thousand years. So I encourage you, please listen to this teaching. When it is not a teaching, just please listen to the prayers, pray along with them. The first couple of times, you may need to have the tape playing and pray in agreement, but ask the Holy Spirit to implant the basic principles of this prayer in your heart and start praying them over every situation, in Jesus name.

I will just record the tape that was done for a particular ministry in a particular location. When you listen to it, just pause at that point and put in the name of your congregation, the name of your pastor and pray further with the tape.

This tape was prepared on the 9th of December, the year 2000, and it contains a series of prayers for the congregation of Foundation For Living Church in Pretoria North to pray over Pretoria North and the country. The context of this prayer is that the Lord has indicated that there is a particular Demonic principality that is operating over the geographic location where we are meeting and that in order for the Lord's purposes to be accomplished in Pretoria North and in fact in the country of South Africa and the world, it is necessary for this principality and power to be broken at this stage. In order to break it, it is necessary that as a congregation collectively and individually, we offer up a concerted prayer on a regular basis and intercession against this principality. In order to equip the members of the congregation for this warfare, I have prepared this tape, which includes some Scriptures setting out the basis of what is contained in this tape and then a series of prayers which I would ask you to pray and agree when you listen to the tape and to pray that on a regular basis in Jesus name.

Few Scriptures, 2 Corinthians 10:3-6: *"For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh. For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds,*

*casting down arguments and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ, and being ready to punish all disobedience when your obedience is fulfilled."* So we see that the war in which we are engaged is not a carnal fleshly war, it is a spiritual war and that the weapons of our warfare are also not physical than mighty in God for pulling down strongholds, casting down of arguments and casting down every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ. We are going to be focusing our attention on pulling down strongholds over the Paul and the immediate vicinity over Pretoria North, over Pretoria, over South Africa, over Africa and over the world. 1 Timothy 2:17-19: *"Now to the King eternal, immortal, invisible, to God who alone is wise, be honour and glory forever and ever. Amen. This charge I commit to you, son Timothy, according to the prophecies previously made concerning you, that by them you may wage the good warfare, having faith and a good conscience, which some having rejected, concerning the faith have suffered shipwreck."* And so we see that it is scriptural for us to wage warfare. It is necessary that we have faith in the good conscience, which means that we examine ourselves before God and deal with anything in our hearts, any sin that God requires us to deal with at this time. You should examine yourself carefully and see part of this process of being to seek holiness and sanctification in your own life which would equip you to be more effective as an intercessor for the congregation for the area and for the world. To intercede and wage warfare against Satan without going before God first and searching your heart and not seeking to make right with God and to deal with sin is something that you should be wary of doing.

Ephesians 6:10-18: *"Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord and in the power of His might. Put on the whole armour of God, that you may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places. Therefore take up the whole armour of God, that you may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand."*

*Stand therefore, having girded your waist with truth, having put on the breastplate of righteousness, and having shod your feet with the preparation of the gospel of peace; above all, taking the shield of faith with which you will be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked one. And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God; praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, being watchful to this end with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints."*

Romans 8:35-39: *"Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written:*

*'For Your sake we are killed all day long;*

*We are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.'*

*Yet in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him who loved us. For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor principalities nor powers, nor things present nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord."*

We see from the passage in Ephesians that the armour is truth and righteousness and salvation, faith, and we see that in fighting this warfare, there will be tribulation, distress, persecution and so forth.

But that we are not dealing with things of this life, we are dealing with things of the life to come and that at the end of the day, we are obedient and we do what God has called us to do, nothing will separate us from the love of God. Colossians 1:16: *"For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers. All things were created through Him and for Him."* And we see here that there are four levels of angelic rulership over the Earth, thrones, dominions, principalities and powers and there are two categories of these. There is those that are serving God and there are those that are serving Satan. We will be praying in a few moments to tear down the principalities, powers, thrones, and dominions that are operating over the areas that we are dealing with.

To put this in a broader context, Revelation 20:1-3: *"Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years; and he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years were finished. But after these things he must be released for a little while."*

So we see that at the end of the age, Satan and as I understand it, that includes all his cohorts, Demons and fallen Angels will be cast into the pit for a thousand years and then the kingdom of righteousness will come on the Earth for the millennium reign of Christ on Earth. As we have seen in the teachings over the last two months or so, the time of tribulation is at hand. The fulfilment in Matthew 24 in that area is at hand and therefore we understand that it is the time when Satan will be cast into the pit for a thousand years is fast approaching, but we also understand that God has given the authority over the Earth to mankind. Mankind sinned and gave that authority to Satan. Jesus came and died on the cross and he took that authority back and we read in Scripture that Jesus says that all authority in Heaven and Earth was given on to him and he then charged us to go forth and to do the work that he was sending us to do. So only men and God speaking through men by His Holy Spirit have the authority to take authority over Satan and cast him into the pit. Therefore for Satan to be cast into the pit for a thousand years, it is necessary for us as believers to join an agreement to tear down the principalities, powers, thrones and dominions that are operating over this world and cast them into the pit and to ask the Father to send His mighty warring angels to give effect to our prayer in order that victory may be achieved, that Satan may be cast into the pit, and that peace may come upon the Earth in the spiritual realm.

So with that context I am going to go through a series of prayers based on the Scriptures that I have just read to you and I would ask you to listen prayerfully and to pray along with the tape to very least to align your heart with what is being said and to agree with it and I would ask you to do this on a regular basis in the days ahead. We have a very serious responsibility on this congregation to intercede for this particular location where God has seen fit to situate our meeting place and it is important that we recognise that as was mentioned on the 3rd of December, there are a large number of congregations on the same city block and in the immediate vicinity and the fact that God has found it necessary to establish another congregation on the same piece of territory indicates that the spiritual warfare that is required in that area is not being seen through to completion and therefore we are called to pick up the battle wherever it may be at this moment in time and to take it and see it through to completion and we are required to overcome to the end. So I would ask you to pray with me. Firstly, based on Ephesians 6:10-18. We will put on the whole armour of God and I will just pray through that. We will then ask the Father in the name of the son to cover ourselves and the congregation and the leadership and so forth with the blood of Jesus so that we are safe from demonic attack and we will

then systematically tear down the principalities, powers, thrones, and dominions that are operating over the area and over the country and over the world.

It is important to understand that there is a force of prayer which has to be generated. We read that in Daniel, that Daniel prayed and interceded and fasted for three weeks before the Angel was able to get through to him and in the interim was warring with the Prince of Persia. So again, it is scriptural to understand that we cannot just pray a prayer like this once against the massive principalities and powers of darkness that are operating over this world and expect them all to be cast into the pit. We have to raise up a concerted voice of intercession in harmony and unity to tear these things down and we must do that for as long as the Lord requires us to do it and my understanding is we must keep praying these prayers until we know that Satan has been cast into the pit for a thousand years and my understanding of that is that is something of the order of three and three and a half years in the future. So we need to start praying this, we need to start praying it over the meeting place. We need to start praying this prayer over our individual homes [inaudible 0:23:53] Lord to pray more or less as I am about to pray for something of the order of nearly two years now and the picture that we have is that as each congregation prays continually into the darkness over the Earth, they slowly are rolling back the darkness. They are pulling down the principalities and powers immediately over the geographic location where they are and it is like opening out a dome of light over that location and slowly as more and more is pulled into the opening that we create, the whole of Satan's kingdom will crumble and as more and more people around the world pray this basic prayer on a consistent basis, these little domes of light over the places of pray focus will get bigger and they will start to join together and eventually we will see the darkness rolling back and eventually at the end, the entire kingdom of Satan will collapse and be cast into the pit.

So it is important that we should run and not go weary and that we should keep interceding in this even if the Lord moves you on to another congregation, it is important that you keep praying this prayer not only for the [inaudible 0:25:07] and the location where we are currently situated but for your house where you live, any new congregation the Lord my take you to, He will require you when He does move you to share this teaching and this information with them if they are not aware of it and to pray it over that area. And so this truth needs to be spread out now across the world so that more and more believers can start systematically tearing these things down.

Father we come to you in the name of Jesus and we put on the whole armour of God that we may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil for we do not wrestle against flesh and blood but against principalities, powers, and the rulers of darkness of this age, against the spiritual house of wickedness in the heavenly places. Father we commit today in the name of Jesus to come against these things on a consistent basis and to tear them down over the [inaudible 0:26:08] in Pretoria North and over our country and over the world in Jesus name. Therefore, Father in the name of Jesus, we take up the whole armour of God that we may be able to withstand in the evil day and having done all to stand. We guard our waists with the belt of truth, having put on and we put on the breastplate of righteousness. We put on the shoes which are the preparation of the gospel of peace and we take the shield of faith with which we will be able to quench all the fiery doubts of the wicked one. We take the helmet of salvation and we put it on our heads and we take of the sword of the spirit, which is the word of God. Father we ask you in the name of Jesus to strengthen truth in our lives, to strengthen the preparation of the gospel of peace in our lives, to strengthen righteousness and holiness and sanctification in our lives to give us a revelation that Jesus Christ is unrighteousness. Father to strengthen our faith to nourish our faith and that our faith may grow, to implant and to establish the truth of salvation in our lives, that helmet will protect our thoughts and everything that we do. We

ask you father in the name of Jesus to anoint us to read your word. We ask you to open your word to us, such as we have never seen it open before. We ask you to engraft and implant in our hearts the truth of your word and the scriptures that we need to know and to have written on the tablet of our heart for the purpose of what you have called us to do for this warfare.

Father we ask you to teach us to use the sword of the spirit, the word of God, in every situation to cut through the darkness of this present age. And Father we ask you in the name of Jesus by your Holy Spirit to give us utterance in prayer at all times and without ceasing to pray by the spirit that we may be watchful with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints for the deliverance of this world from the powers of Satan, in Jesus name. Father I ask you now in the name of Jesus and I would ask each one of you to as you pray just to put in the names of your own family and to see your family covered by the blood of Jesus. It is important that you understand that the blood of Jesus is the sign and the mark of the covenant that we have with God. The blood of Jesus was shed at the cross voluntarily by Jesus Christ to purchase our redemption and it is that blood that has given us the right and the authority to use Jesus' name. It is that blood that protects us and shields us from the works of the enemy and it is up to us to claim the blood and to plead the blood over every situation in order that we may be safe to conduct this warfare. Father we come to you now in the name of Jesus and we plead the blood over our families, over our congregation, the leadership, over every believer in Pretoria North, over the [inaudible 0:29:58] property in the name of Jesus. Father I just thank you now in the name of Jesus that you cover every member of my immediate and extended family with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet.

I thank you that you cover Neil Dryer and Lewis and their family with the blood of Jesus from the top of their head to the soles of their feet, Father, their children and their grandchildren, all cousins, uncles and aunts, nephews and nieces covered with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet. Father I ask you to cover the entire congregation of Foundation for Living Church and their families and relatives with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet in Jesus name. Father I ask you to cover every believer in Pretoria North with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet. I ask you to cover every believer in South Africa with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet. I ask you to cover every believer in this planet with the blood of Jesus from the top of their heads to the soles of their feet in Jesus name. I ask you to cover the [inaudible 0:31:07] in Pretoria North, [inaudible 0:31:11] with the blood of Jesus, the walls, the floors, the ceiling, the roof, the doors, the windows, the window frames, the doorposts, and the lintels covered with the blood of Jesus.

I ask you Father to cover the entire [inaudible 0:31:23] property with the blood of Jesus in Jesus name. Father we thank you that the blood of Jesus is against Satan and we plead the blood over all of these things and we thank you for the blood, we thank you for this safekeeping of the blood. We thank you for the blood covenant. We have with you Father cut in the flesh of Jesus with the blood flowing down the cross on to the mercy seat and we thank you for mighty deliverance. We thank you that we come before you not trusting in our own unrighteousness, but in Jesus Christ who is our righteousness. We thank you that we come before you in the authority of the name of Jesus, the name above all names, the name at which every knee shall bow, every tongue confess that Jesus Christ is Lord. Father we thank you that as believers brought with the blood, covered with the blood, we have the authority to come against these principalities, powers, thrones, and dominions and tear them down in Jesus name.

Father, we thank you that Jesus is coming soon. We thank you that peace is coming on the Earth soon. We thank you that soon this world will be free of Satan and his Demons and fallen Angels in the name of Jesus. We praise you for that Father. We glorify your holy name. We worship you Lord and God,



Saviour and King. Father we ask you to bring the people that you want into the FFL congregation in Jesus name and we ask you to take anybody that you do not want out. We ask you to open doors that no man may close and close doors that no men may open. We pray Father that you will keep any agent of Satan, any witch or warlock Satanist or any other servant of Satan from coming into that meeting place, coming into that congregation in Jesus name.

[Foreign language 0:33:16]. We praise you Jesus. We praise you Father. We praise your holy name. We worship you Lord and God, Saviour and King. [Foreign language 0:33:33]. Have I not called you just the Lord, I have called every one of you to assist the Lord. I have established you and I have planted you in this place for a season to do the work that I have called you to do. Therefore be bold and very courageous says the Lord. Step out now and tear down my enemies. Tear them down and cast them into the pit for I am coming soon says the Lord. But victory must be one, all my enemies must be put as a footstool under my feet and I have called you and I have established you and I have anointed you and I have anointed you to do the work. You are the soldiers in my army. You are the soldiers whose spiritual authority is required to deliver and set this world free and take back all that the enemy has stolen. So be bold and very courageous. That ends the Word of the Lord.

Father we come to you in the name of Jesus and we just come in unity and harmony and agreement to take authority over the principalities, powers, thrones, and dominions that are operating over this world and to tear them down and cast them into the pit for a thousand years, in Jesus name. I come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over the South African [inaudible 0:35:11] in the block north of station street, bounded on the west by Jack Hindon street and on the east by UFS road in Pretoria North. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over that hall. In the name of Jesus we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years in Jesus name. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over that property in the name of Jesus. We bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years in the name of Yahooshua. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over that city block in the name of Jesus. We bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years in Jesus name.

We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over the immediate suburban area of the [inaudible 0:36:09] in the name of Jesus. We bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years in the name of Yahooshua. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over Pretoria North in the name of Yahooshua. We bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years in Jesus name. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over the city of Pretoria and in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over the province of [inaudible 0:36:48] and in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years in Jesus name. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over the [inaudible 0:37:01] province and in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years in Jesus name. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over the Republic of South Africa and in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years in Jesus name.

We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over Southern Africa in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into the pit for a

thousand years in Jesus name. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over the continent of Africa. In the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over the planet Earth and in the name of Yahooshua, we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years in Jesus name.

Satan we come against you in the Jesus and we declare that the word of God states that on the appointed day, the Father will send one of His mighty warring Angels to bind you and chain you and cast you into the pit for a thousand years. Father, we thank you now in the name of Jesus that that day is close at hand. We thank you Father in the name of Jesus that you will send your mighty warring Angels to bind Satan, to chain him and to cast him into the bottom of pit for a thousand years in Jesus name. Father, we ask in the name of Jesus that you will send your mighty warring Angels to bind and tear down every principality, power, throne, and dominion that we have named and cast them into the pit for a thousand years in Jesus name. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over Neil Dreyer and in the name of Jesus, we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years. Father in the name of Jesus, we speak now that everything that is holding back Neil Dreyer's ministry as an apostle to reach out and touch the nations is torn down and broken down now. Father, we thank you that you anointed him and you have called him to go forth to the nations as you have appointed and we thank you Father that you release him and that you open every door that needs to be opened and close every door that needs to be closed in Jesus name.

We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over the Dreyer family and in the name of Jesus we bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years. We come against every principality, power, throne, and dominion that is operating over the Dreyer family residence in the name of Jesus. We bind you, we tear you down, and we cast you into the pit for a thousand years in Jesus name. Father we praise you, we worship you, we glorify your holy name. Father, we thank you for mighty deliverance in our congregation in the area of Pretoria North and in the world at large. Father, we thank you that the day is coming when we will no longer be harassed and persecuted by Satan. The day is coming when peace will come on Earth in Jesus name. And we praise you for that, we glorify you for that, we give you all the honour and all the glory. We thank you father that you have given us the opportunity to intercede for this world to be your servants and we ask you Father to help us to be faithful to the end to overcome to the end, not to grow weary and to give up. Father it is our desire to be found to be faithful servants at the end of this age and for that reason we ask you to judge us severely and correct us harshly that we may serve you more perfectly.

We ask you Father in the name of Jesus to reveal the level of our present deception and what you require of us to do about it. We ask you Father to show us everything in our lives that you want us to deal with, everything that you want us to change that we may come to a place of holiness and sanctification that we may be vessels for honour in your house in Jesus name. And we worship you and we praise you and we glorify your holy name in Jesus some.

Some further points arising out of the prayer that has just been prayed. [inaudible 0:41:18] was in fact about three and a half years ago that we started praying this particular prayer. More or less shortly after Tabernacles in the year 1996, for which there is scriptural indication that that is the beginning of the tribulation. There is increasing evidence that the tribulation has in fact commenced if we have eyes to see. It is spiritual tribulation which it appears will move into a physical tribulation in the days ahead. I said this to you by the spirit and not according to some rigorous pharisaic interpretation of

Scripture. We must be aware of the fact that when Jesus came, very few people on the Earth knew that he had come and those who were best qualified to determine that he had come in fact did not recognise him and in fact the very people who should have been best qualified to receive Jesus when he came, crucified him. Accordingly, please be aware that you are called by God to hear by His spirit. You are called by God to discern by His spirit what the truth and the signs of the times are. It is not for you to rely on the interpretations of Scripture of any other man. They are useful in so far that there are many who are saying that somewhere between Tabernacles 1996 and Tabernacles of Passover 2004 represents the day at which something will happen. Many are talking about a rapture before tribulation, but it is dealt with earlier in the series, there is absolutely no scriptural basis for rapture before tribulation. The church must be judged first. God is righteous, His word says that judgement begins in the House of the Lord. He cannot judge the world until He has fully righteously judged the church and there is so much wrong in the church today that great judgement is heaped up for the church.

Many of us have been undergoing intense refining, intense chastisement, and intense tribulation in the spiritual realm, financial lack, health and other areas of the last few years. Those with discernment are aware of it. I believe that we are about to move in to a phase where it is going to become much more physical. It is perhaps relevant to note that on the Passover even the 1999 my wife and I found ourselves by the Lord's leading alone in a small twin-engine aeroplane flying over the centre of Washington DC and we were impressed by the Spirit of God to pray more or less the prayers that are on this tape. In other words, we prayed over the President of the United States, over the White House, over the Pentagon and progressively over Washington, over the State of British Columbia where Washington is situated, over the eastern seaboard of the United States, over the United States as a whole and over the world binding and tearing down the principalities, powers, thrones, and dominions. We intercede most Tuesday evenings and as the Lord leads, frequently find ourselves binding, tearing down the principalities, powers, thrones, and dominions over specific world leaders, over specific world institutions such as United Nations, such as the World Banking System, such as the Government of the United States, Government of the United Kingdom, in particular the Swiss Banking System, the Vatican, the Pope and various other principalities or various other earthly situations over which principalities and powers are operating, over the Temple Mount in Jerusalem, Jerusalem as a whole, Israel as a geographic entity and the people of Israel, around the world. Over the body of Christ, over education, and over the government of this country.

It is important that you do not just slavishly pray just what has been prayed on this tape over your particular house or your particular congregation, but that you pray it as the Lord leads of other congregations. We pray that prayer over a number of congregations and specific church leaders around the world. You need to pray as the Lord leads. Together He will raise up an absolute barrage of prayer in this whole thing. It is also important as I said earlier on in this tape, Satan is outnumbered, his Angels are outnumbered as we understand it, at least 2:1. We read in Genesis that before the flood the sons of God, Satan's Angels as I understand it, came to Earth and had sexual intercourse with women. They fathered children by women and we read in, I think in Titus and in Jude and in 2 Peter that those Angels have been reserved in chains for the Day of Judgement. So it appears that many of Satan's Angels were used by Satan to try and corrupt the bloodline of Adam in order that they would not be a pure bloodline through which the Messiah could be born. It seems that one of the main reasons for the flood was that Noah and perhaps some of his sons were the only remaining pure bloodline on the Earth that had not been contaminated with the bloodline of Satanic Angels and that that was a factor in why God had to destroy the Earth.

It appears that all of those Angels are cast into jail or are reserved in chains until the Day of Judgement and therefore it appears that Satan may have significantly less than the full quota of Angels that fell with him. It is almost certain that has caused him to be very cautious in the manner in which he deploys those Angels, but however, if we are not [inaudible 0:46:58] years before Satan is to cast into the pit. We must be certain that he is going to put up a massive final fight. It is important also to understand that the final authority on the Earth still rests with human beings. Jesus regained that authority from Satan for mankind, but we have to exercise it. It is my understanding of Scripture that if there is not a single born-again believer who has a revelation of their authority in Christ, is not filled with the Holy Spirit on the day that Satan is appointed to be cast into the pit for a thousand years, the hands of God will be tied. He requires a man or men to pray on that day to cast Satan into the pit. And if there is no man who is filled with the spirit of God, has the anointing, has the knowledge to cast Satan into the pit on that day, Satan does not have to go and Satan will have the victory.

So Satan, if you can understand it, Satan is a convict on the run. He is outnumbered. He is therefore going to behave as a murderer in that situation will behave. He will shoot indiscriminately and seek to destroy as many people as he can because his perverted mindset will tell him that if he can destroy all of those who are arranged against him before the day that he is scheduled to go to jail, he does not have to go. So please expect that in the days ahead, Satan is going to come against everybody who is called by the name of Christ in an absolute flood. The teachings of this series are absolutely critical to preparing yourself. He is going to seek at the very least take down as many people as he can, cause them to lose their salvation. I heard a day or so ago talking to somebody, the level of backsliding of mature men and women of God in the church at this stage is becoming absolutely appalling. Recent instance of a man whose wife had opposed him repeatedly in terms of doing what God had called him to do had a vision recently in which the Lord showed a rotting corpse in his bed which was his wife that his wife had lost the salvation and was spiritually dead. I have experience in my own case with my first wife rebelling against the word of God for something like three or four years, spoken to her personally by the spirit of God until eventually Jesus appeared to her in a vision and once more, asked her to do what he told her to do. She refused. It was a consequence of treachery towards me over 25 years, he turned and walked away from her in that vision and rejected as his child and a few weeks later, the Lord took me out of that marriage in a supernatural way.

People are falling daily. If you are not strong in the Lord today, I urge you above all things to seek Him as a vital necessity. You have no hope in what is to come unless you are strong in the Lord. If you start to fall away, then in the years that are coming there will be no opportunity for recovery. We are coming out of the age of grace and we are moving into an age of judgement very, very rapidly. You have to clean up your act. We are moving I believe, we have gone through a lot of spiritual persecution and that I believe is the first three and a half years spoken of by Daniel. I believe that we are now in the second three and a half years, I believe that any day now we are going to see an increase in physical persecution. It has come to my notice in the last few months of believers in the United States who believe certain aspects of critical doctrine with regard to marriage who are putting that into practice, they are being persecuted, they are being monitored by Federal Agencies, they are being handed, their neighbours are being told to have no dealings with him. Their phones are possibly being tapped, they are finding it harder and harder to find jobs. There is massive persecution. I think the figure is something like 50,000 martyrs a month in Asia, India, Tibet, places like that. All hell is breaking loose on Earth. It may not have broken loose visibly in your neighbourhood but it is coming. There is talk of something like 50 concentration camps in the United States of America with computers programmed with warrants of arrest of all Christians who are known to have a strong influence on the people around them.

There are reports of other concentration camps elsewhere in the world, two in South Africa, each allegedly with a capacity to gas and incinerate 3,000 people a day together with electric guillotine. We have no hard evidence of this but spiritually I have to say to you, it is becoming more and more probable that this is at the very door. I was in Israel in 1996 in the Holocaust Museum and the spirit of God said to me very clearly, this is nothing compared to what the church is about to go through and in that museum I was looking at pictures of thousands of emaciated Jews stripped naked, men, women, and children in front of bulldozed trenches, being machine-gunned down, being herded into cattle trucks, being herded into gas chambers, being bulldozed out of those gas chambers like rotting carcasses and cast them to the ovens, being subject to the most frightful medical experiments. There are rumours of global policies directed at reducing the world's population to about 500 million people, that means destroying something like 4 or 5 billion people, I am not sure of the exact numbers. There are all sorts of indications that the days that are coming are going to be the most terrible on Earth and it is important that you do not look to the things that are seen there, just a manifestation of what is taking place so heavily. We are coming to a place where Satan is going to pull out all the stops. We are coming to a place where Satan may again send his Angels to seduce women to take them away from God, particularly where those women are in a particular situation to influence powerful men of God.

It is vital that women accept the need for recovering. Unmarried Christian women are coming into an age where they are at terrible risk of being seduced and taken away and taken apart by Satan. Isaiah 4:1 shows us clearly that in this age there will be seven times more women than men in the body of Christ. The implication of that is that a Christian woman looking for a husband today has to be extremely careful. There are not enough men to go around and in terms of current church doctrine, those women are being laid into adultery, they are being lead into adultery, they are being into marrying outside the faith. They have to come to a revelation of what the word of God says about the situation. They need to study and pray about verses like Exodus 21:10 and see the implication that that has in their lives. The church as a whole needs to realise its responsibility to ensure that all women come under a godly covering. We have produced or in the process of completing a set of 55, approximately 55 teaching tapes on marriage, called *"Understanding God's Way in Marriage."* It is a three-volume set. The first volume deals with the scriptural basis in terms of what God intends marriage to be. The second is entitled *"Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage"* and it deals with the scriptural principles about coming to a place of experiencing the fullness of what marriage is intended to be, walking in perfect harmony, becoming a formidable spiritual force for the deliverance of this world and the third volume deals with practical aspects of applying the teachings.

If you have any problems in your marriage, if you are an unmarried woman, if you are concerned about the level of divorce, there is something like 60% to 70% of all Christian marriages today end in divorce and remarriage, the vast majority of those are not divorces in the sight of God. They are adultery. There are men of God in the last couple of years. I have ministered to one man, married a woman, divorced in the sight of the church, within six months he was bankrupt because he was living in adultery. Reported recently another man, apparently a gentleman of God, married a lovely divorced Christian woman, within six months he was dead, by the Word of God he was living in adultery. This is an age where judgement is coming on the church, judgement is going to come on those who are divorced in the sight of the world, but not in the sight of God and are therefore living in adultery. If you may be in that situation, if you are a woman and you have had sexual intercourse with more than one man, you may be on the point of facing massive judgement. You need to get these tapes, you need to get in touch with us. You desperately need to sort things out. If you are a man who has taken the virginity of more than one woman, you need to understand that you have awesome responsibilities in the sight of God towards every woman whose virginity you have taken. You need to

get these tapes and find out what is going on. If you have had intercourse with more than one woman, if she was not a virgin, you need to understand the significance of that. If you are living in marriage in terms of a civil contract, in terms of an ecclesiastical church marriage and the woman that you are living with was not a virgin at the time that you met her, you may well be living in adultery. You need to get clear on what is going on. There is a series of tapes in these teachings which deals with resolving One Flesh Bonds, establishing what your situation is before God, you need to do what you need to do in order to get your marriage sanctified and made holy if there is a scriptural basis that is acceptable to the court of Heaven for that to happen. Otherwise you need to terminate your adulterous relationship, even though the church may call it marriage.

These are harsh things but there are harsh times. If you do not deal with your sin now, the day is coming where you will find yourself exposed to the most terrible harassment physically, emotionally and spiritually and if you have sin in your life, you will not overcome to the end. You will find yourself at the very least with the part in the Lake of Fire of sulphur and brimstone and if you are not careful, you may well find yourself in hell for eternity. I cannot under stress it, it is time for us to sanctify ourselves and make ourselves holy. There is no more time to play games with sin. There is no more time for us to rely on the teachings of men to determine whether we are in sin or not. The word of God clearly tells us to call no man rabbi, no man teacher. We are to rely on the word of God and the spirit of God to lead us into all truth.

The teachings that are prepared by this Ministry will assist you to do that, but I urge you to seek God as a vital necessity and every sin that you find do what the spirit of God tells you to do no matter how difficult it is using the series of tapes as a frame of reference, listen to this entire series of tapes. God willing, in the days to come, we will produce more teachings around this. If you are a man who has had sex with more than one woman or a woman who has had sex with more than one man, if you are a man and woman living in marriage and the woman concerned was not a virgin at the time that marriage was consummated, you need to get the series of tapes on marriage. If your marriage is not everything God intended it to be, you need to get the series of tapes on marriage from this Ministry.

To reiterate, we are moving into a period where Satan is going to pull out all the stops he is going to use even the smallest sin in our lives to seek to utterly destroy us. A marriage where man and woman are not in harmony, where the wife is not in submission, God cannot protect you. Satan will destroy you. To give you a little bit more context, I want to read you a passage from the book called [inaudible 0:59:32]. It is a story of a young Russian man [inaudible 0:59:36] who came to salvation after a miraculous escape from Russia. But let me just read to you a passage from that.

The book that I have was published in Afrikaans translated by Mrs. [inaudible 0:59:53] and published by [inaudible 0:59:55], PO Box 132, South Africa. There was a book published in English. I do not have the reference. It was published by Marshall Morgan and Scott. The passage that I am about to read is an extract which we translated back from the Afrikaans into the English. It is entitled "*Extracts from Sergai: Two women who changed a destiny.*" The first section I have entitled a beautiful 18-year-old who would not forsake her saviour and the second from pages 167 to 173 of this book. We raced down the street and jumped out of a pickup van before it had time to come to a halt. We rushed to the front door and forced it open. To our amazement, the room was full of young people. We had uncovered a secret youth meeting caught everyone by surprise. We started work immediately, grabbed them, hit them, kicked them and punched them. The context of this is a time in Russia, Sergai has grown up as an orphan. His parents were Christians. They were murdered shortly after the Second World War. He grew up with a very brutal life. He became the leader of the Communist Youth League in the naval base where he was sent for military training, and as such he was co-opted by the KGB to intimidate

believers who were seen to be the greatest threat to communism because they would not submit to the core doctrines of communism and we see here the sort of the demonically-inspired persecution that can face believers. This group is a group of young men in their early 20s, extremely fit, extremely strong who went from place to place at the instruction of the police and the KGB breaking up private church meetings.

There he is, grab him, I shouted as I pointed in the direction of the 23-year-old leader. Some of my team grabbed him and others used some of the other believers as punch bags. I glanced around the room and could hardly believe my eyes. There she was again, the same beautiful girl. Only three nights ago, she had been badly hurt and abused at the other gathering and here she was again. This was the first time I could have a good look at her. She was more beautiful than I could recall. A rarely beautiful girl with locks of long blonde hair, big blue eyes and a beautiful complexion. She was one of the most beautiful girls I had ever seen. Victor had also spotted her and called out *"She is back. Look here guys, she is back."* *"Well,"* I replied, *"It does not look as if we did a good enough job at the last time Victor, you did not teach her the lesson she needed to learn. Now it is my turn."* I lifted her and threw her face down on the table. Two of us stripped her naked. One of us held her down while I started striking her with my flat hand as hard as I possibly could. Again and again I struck her until my hand started to burn from the pain. Blisters started forming on her skin. I continued striking her until pieces of bloody flesh stuck to my hand. She groaned and bravely fought not to cry. To do this, she bit her lower lip until blood was pouring down her chin.

At last she gave up and started crying. At that stage I was so exhausted that I was unable to lift my arm to strike her even one more time and her body was a massive raw flesh. I pushed her off the table, and she collapsed on the floor in a heap. I left her there and looked around. Young believers were lying all over the room. There was no reason to prolong the task as we had already had the leader. *"We have our man,"* I called. *"Get the names of all these people and let's get out of here."* When we arrived back at the police station, Nicky Forov was at the front door, smiling broadly. *"Well, my children,"* he said, *"That was quick."* *"Here is your man,"* I said and pushed the 23-year-old to Nicky Forov. He was immediately taken downstairs for questioning. In the meantime, I looked at the names of other youngsters. I could understand how old foolish people could believe these things, people that were mixed up with religion before the coming of communism years. But young people who believed in God that was one too much for me. These were people of my age, my generation. I was astounded that that one girl had undoubtedly learned her lesson. I teased Victor again, *"You did not do it right old boy, but I had taught her a lesson tonight. We will not see beautiful again."*

The following day when I reported back to the police station, I walked in while Nicky Forov was busy questioning the young leader from the night before. I listened in amazement the Nicky Forov's technique of interrogation. Swapping between brutal breaking down and sudden softness, he used both hard and soft tactics to confuse the young unbeliever. He was doing what he enjoyed most - trapping a man. *"Do you believe in God?"* *"Yes."* *"Tell me are you stupid, insane or just plain mad?"* The young unbeliever replied, *"Well sir, you will not be able to understand why I believe what I believe, because what I believe is something that is very hard to explain. I believe in God because he lives and because he lives within my heart."* Nicky Forov exploded with anger. *"Why do you say that I cannot understand? Do you think I am stupid? I have also read this book."* He pointed to the confiscated Bible. *"Do you think I cannot read?"* The young man was brutally beaten the previous night and had to endure further abuse in the prison cell. But responded firmly, *"You may be able to read, but you need eyes to see and ears to hear and a heart to understand what the spirit of God is saying in His book."* I listened in total amazement, totally caught up by this. Nothing made the least seen to me.

*"If you only read to attack" the young man continued, "You will never know what it really says. Only God can open your eyes so that you can understand what we believe and why we are willing to pay any price for our faith."* Nicky Forov interrupted, *"I must admit there are certain things I do not understand."* The young man answered, *"Well sir, you have answered your own question. You do not understand because your eyes are closed to the truth. If you open your heart to God, your eyes will open to understand His word, then it will become just as real to you as it is to me and these other young people. Why do not you open your heart to God? He will change your life and..."* "Keep quiet," Nicky Forov nearly exploded. *"Do not preach to me you fool or I will change your life forever."* He called the guards and the young man was taken to the cell. He was later sent to a punishment camp for a number of years. I had attended many such interrogations but they never made any sense to me. These believers never lose courage I thought. They even try and convert the peace. Nicky Forov returned. *"These people are mad,"* he said and I totally agreed with him.

I was interested to find out more about Natasha Sudnova because the youth league was responsible for young people. We keep a file on everyone in the district. We know exactly who they are, where they grew up, went to school, everything. I went through Natasha's file. She was born in the [inaudible 1:07:00] region of Ukraine in a small village with the name of [inaudible 1:07:03]. Her parents were workers on a collective and very poor. To seek a better place in life, Natasha left the region when she was small and came to live with her uncle in [inaudible 1:07:13]. She had attended the schools there and completed her education at the maximum [inaudible 1:07:19] school number four. After that at 18 years of age she became a proofreader at the [inaudible 1:07:25] newspaper. When I went through her report, I was stunned to find that she was a member of the [inaudible 1:07:32], a Communist youth league in the school and had done well. The report clearly showed what had happened. When she left school, she fell into the hands of the believers and soon became one herself. A perfect example of how the believers took people prisoner in their poisonous web. I then went to the offices of the newspaper and inquired about her. *"She is an outstanding worker,"* one of her seniors said. *"We have never had any problem, she is friendly, reliable and honest and outstanding worker."* That sort of report had always confused me. With other workers, we had problems with drunkenness, theft, laziness and incompetence. But whenever I had to complete a peace report and the life of a believer, the answer was always *"outstanding worker"* or *"very reliable"* or *"never drunk."* One thing about these believers that I found out they were earnest and hard-working. I wondered a lot about this but it was not my job to wonder. It was my job to take action.

*"Why do you want to know?"* They asked me. We have on two occasions found her in secret meetings of the underground churches. She is a believer. They were aghast. The workers looked at one another. It was as if they had just been told she was a leper or a mass murderer. *"Well,"* one said, *"Now that you mention it,"* and then there came a stream of complaints. Suddenly they had many bad things to say about her. I left a message in her office to report to me at the police station at a fixed time. I knew this would frighten her and that was my objective. She entered my office half hesitant and sat down in the chair across the desk. I could see she was afraid. Such a beautiful person and here she was sitting in my office with her head hanging and just staring at the floor. I asked her why she was a believer. *"What must I be?"* She asked. *"An alcoholic? A prostitute? And then did you find anything wrong in my work report?"* *"No, I did not,"* I had to admit. *"Why do you have an objection to my personal beliefs? Am I harming anyone?"* *"No, but somewhere you went wrong and you mixed up with people who are great danger to our country."* I then quickly preached to her and warned her of great trouble if she continued. At last I realised that this was not producing any fruit. Again, I warned that this would be recorded on her file and that she should not be found in the company of believers again.



Notwithstanding her initial fear, she began to explain to me why she believed in God. I thought that the assault together with the interview at the police station would cause her to come to her senses that Natasha [inaudible 1:09:58] would not cause us any problems again, but she was a remarkable girl. While we were talking, I became aware of the deep marks on her lower lip, which she bit herself while I was beating her. *"What a pity,"* I thought, *"That cut spoiled an otherwise perfect face. If only we could have met under different circumstances I could really be interested in a girl like her."* As soon as I had obtained all the information from her and completed my lecture, I dismissed her summarily. This is part of the intimidation programme and I congratulated myself with my own conduct.

About a week later, we were called to the police station for action against a secret church. I went through the routine procedures of street map investigation to locate the address. This gathering was a house in [inaudible 1:10:43] street. On this occasion, there were only six of us in the paddy wagon. Alexander [inaudible 1:10:49] and myself. When we reached the place, I set guards and located the street and then we stormed in and swung our truncheon wildly. The well-mannered, confused believers began running around and trying to shield themselves against the rain of blows. The meeting room was very small and with eight believers and six of us that was chock full. There was much noise and much shouting and crying. *"This one will take very long"* I thought and then I saw something familiar. I could not believe it, here she was again, Natasha Sutnova. Some of my men also spotted her. Alex moved towards her, hate in his eyes and his truncheon lifted above his head. Then something happened which I would never have thought that I would see. Without warning, Victor jumped between Natasha and Alex and looked at Alex. *"Out of my way,"* shouted Alex. Victor did not move. He lifted his truncheon and threateningly said, *"I am telling you Alex, leave her alone. Nobody touches her."* I listened in disbelief, unbelievable that Victor, one of my cruellest men was busy protecting one of the believers. *"Stand back,"* he ordered Alex, *"Stand back or I am ready for you."* He was shielding Natasha who was lying on the floor. Angrily Alex cried out, *"You want her for yourself."* *"No,"* Victor shouted back. *"She has something that not one of us has. Nobody touch her. Nobody."* I had to break it up quickly. Alex's wild temper would result in a fight. *"Listen Alex,"* I said and pointed to another believer who was attempting to escape. *"Catch him."* His attention distracted. Alex chased off to the man. I sighed with relief.

Victor was still standing with his arms outstretched protecting Natasha, looking around him, challenging anyone to dare touch her. Natasha stood behind him and did not understand what was happening. This was not the sort of treatment she expected from our group. I nodded my head to her indicating that she should leave. She turned and ran. I looked on approvingly. For one of the few times in life, I was deeply moved. It was like the time when my friend Sasha died. Natasha had something. She had been abused in a hideous fashion and beaten. She had been warned and threatened. She had suffered unbelievably but here she was again, even tough old Victor was touched by it, and had seen it. She had something that we did not have. I wanted to run after her to find out what it was. I wanted to talk to her but she was gone. This heroic believer girl had suffered so much through us, touched me in one or other manner and also made me think.

Shortly afterwards Natasha left the province and returned to her place of birth. The gossip and mockery by her co-workers got too much for her. I sent her personal file to the Communist Youth League in her home town and gave them a detailed report on her life as a believer. I was strangely hurt that she was gone. For the first time I felt that the believers were perhaps not the fools and enemies that we thought they were. Natasha had toppled all my ideas about the believers.

Before I read the next extract, I urge you to consider the possibility that no matter where you live, this level of oppression and victimisation may not be more than a few years away. Are you prepared to

stand for your faith like Natasha stood? Not to forsake the gathering together of the brethren no matter what it costs you. Are you prepared to witness for your faith as that young man did knowing that he would spend many years in unbelievable hardship in a prison camp? Are you prepared to testify for Jesus even though you have bitten through your lip and blood is running down your chin and your back has been beaten to a pulp and you have been stripped naked and humiliated? Are you prepared to overcome to the Day of Judgement? If you are, if that is your heart's desire to do whatever you have to do to be crucified with Christ, I urge you to give serious attention to everything that is contained in this series of teachings on Judgement and to go before God daily to judge you severely and correct you harshly that you may serve Him more perfectly. To be quick to listen, quick to repeat whenever you become aware of sin in Jesus name.

The second extract from Sergai that I would like to read to you comes from Page 197 to 198 and I have headed it *"The elderly woman who prayed for the one about to beat her."* This is another raid, it is a few weeks later. At the door we stopped for a moment, my men awaiting my signal. Suddenly I shouted *"Now."* The raid had started. The door was unlocked, obvious that they were not expecting us and we burst in. As the spy had said there were 15 or 16 believers present, all pressed tightly together in the small space. We had trapped them in the middle of prayer. [inaudible 1:16:13] grabbed a Bible from a believer and tore to pieces. One of the women called out *"Why? Why are you doing this?"* It was a heartbroken deep cry that irritated Vladimis, so he hit her right in the face. It was a professional well-aimed blow that would flatten any man, what more to say, a small, frail woman. She fell backwards against the other believers and collapsed on the floor her face bloodied. Screams cut through the air as my men went to work. I pressed the lever on my truncheon and set it at its shortest, so it was more usable in that small room. Truncheons and fists were already at work and the cries of the believers were enough to burst your eardrums. Some was screaming out of fear and others from pain. I saw an old lady near the wall, fear on her face, her lips quivering in prayer. As a consequence of the noise I could not hear what she was saying but had prayer angered me. I took a few paces forward and lifted my truncheon to strike her. She saw me ready to strike and prayed out loud. I hesitated for a moment, more out of curiosity than anything else.

While my arm was in the air ready to bring my truncheon on her defenceless head, I heard her words, *"God forgive this young man. Show him the true way. Open his eyes and help him. Forgive him dear Father."* I was astounded. Why did she not pray for help for herself? She was the one about to be struck. I was furious that she, an unknown woman, was praying for me, Sergai [inaudible 1:17:39], leader of the Communist Youth League. In a fit of rage, I gripped my truncheon more tightly and prepared to bring it down on her head. I was going to strike with all my strength enough to kill if necessary, I began to swing. Then a most peculiar thing happened. I could not explain it. Someone or something gripped my wrist and pushed it back. I was astonished. It really hurt. It was not my imagination. It was a real pressure on my wrist until it hurt. I thought it might be another believer and turned around to hit them, but there was no one. I looked again, no one could have gripped my arm and yet I had felt it. It was still sore. Shocked I stood still. I felt the blood rise to my head and I became warm while fear spread over me. This was beyond my comprehension. It was confusing, unreal, and then I forgot everything. I dropped my truncheon and ran outside with a warm blushing feeling in my face and blood throbbing in my head. Tears began streaming down my cheeks. Since the age of four, I had only cried once that I could remember. Even during those brutal beatings of uncle [inaudible 1:18:41] in the orphanage, I had never cried. I was too tough to cry, so I thought I swore that nobody would ever make me cry. Tears were a sign of weakness. But now as I was running away from that nightmare scene, I cried. Real tears were streaming down my cheeks. I was confused and lost things that I did not understand were busy happening to me.

I ran and walked and then ran again and could not remember anything. Hours passed, I could not remember anything except the running and the crying. I did not know how long I walked to where I was but when I came to myself, it was already dark. Slowly I found my way back to the police station. It was about 9 PM at night. I had hardly entered the room when Nick Forov exploded, *"Where have you been [inaudible 1:19:25]?"* It was more of a challenge than a question. *"I just had to think things over,"* I replied and I have decided to stop doing this type of job. Subsequently [inaudible 1:19:37] was granted furlough. He went on a mission with a spy ship off the coast of the United States and Canada on the Pacific Coast, offshore of Vancouver. He jumped ship with a makeshift life jacket in the middle of a major storm 5 miles off Vancouver. He was washed back to the ship once. He has tried to swim ashore again, he was washed up on rocks. Eventually he cried out to God to save him and he found himself unconscious with no recollection of how he got there on the beach. He came to salvation, and he started preaching the gospel and telling people around the United States and Canada what was going on in Russia. Eventually he was assassinated by the KGB, but the truth was out and this book was possible.

I urge you to consider no matter where you live, particularly if you live in countries like the United States, Britain, Australia, South Africa does not really matter. There is a strong possibility that before your life is over, you will face persecution of the magnitude described in these two stories. Will you forsake your saviour or will you remain true to Him? Will you suffer and take up the cross the way Jesus did? If that is your heart's desire, please understand holiness and sanctification are of paramount importance. If you want to be in the place of the old lady who when that man came to beat her could only think to pray for her enemy and received supernatural protection, you need to do what needs to be done in the spirit realm now.

Satan cannot cause a man to be beat you, to lock you up, or anything else if there is no sin in your life. If you desire to be like Daniel and to have the mouths of the lion shut up by God's Angel when you crossed Him, if you desire to walk in the furnace like Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego, you must sanctify yourself. You must make fervent prayer for the revelation of sin a daily occurrence. You must with all your heart and all your mind and your soul and all your strength turn to the Father in the name of the son and petition him daily to show you the sin that needs to be dealt with. Do not allow Satan to persuade you that you are free of sin. At the end of his life, Apostle Paul called himself the chief of sinners. We dare not become complacent about the things that we know to do that we have not done and things that we are not to do that we have done on a daily basis. Every second you spend out of the perfect will of God in sin and if you believe things that have been taught to you by men concerning the Sabbath, concerning Christmas and Easter, concerning so many things, concerning virginity, adultery, fornication, marriage, now is the time to seek the truth with all your heart and all your mind and all your soul and all your strength in Jesus name.

Father I ask that if there is anything in this teaching that is not according to your perfect will that you will blow it away and that it will find no root in the hearts of the hearers in Jesus name. I ask Father that everything that is according to your will and your word will find deep root in the hearts of the hearers and be established in their hearts in Jesus name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, King of Kings and Lord of Lords, saviour of the world, in Jesus name. Amen.

Message has been recorded by a church without walls and Ministry of End Time Issue Ministries, PO Box 898, Randpark Ridge, Randburg 2156, Republic of South Africa. We can be contacted by email at [James@EndTimeIssues.org.za](mailto:James@EndTimeIssues.org.za). Our phone numbers, international dialling code normally 0027 but this may vary from country to country, the 27 is standard. Our land line, 0027-11791-2327 or when South

Africa 011-791-2327. My mobile number 0027-83251-6644 and in South Africa, 083-251-6644. Our fax number internationally 0027-11791-5004 and locally 011-791-5004. All materials produced by this Ministry are available at no cost to those who require them, irrespective of financial means. At the same time, donations and offerings are clearly welcome to support the work.

Please feel free to copy any of our materials in part or in full as the Lord leads you understanding that the manner in which you utilise these materials and the manner in which you cite them and quote them is for your account on the Day of Judgement. So we would ask you to use the materials widely, but please feel free to copy them however you see fit and to share these truths with anybody as the Lord leads. I would urge those of you who receive copies of these tapes at no charge that once you have listened to them that you consider passing them on and blessing others with them. Our hearts' desires that they should not become artefacts sitting on a bookshelf and gathering dust but the Word of God contained in these teachings should be spread as far and as widely as possible.

Should you be lead by the Lord to sow into this Ministry, our bank account is End Time Issue Ministries, the account number is 0427527805. The branch is the Standard Bank of South Africa, Randburg Branch and the branch code is 018005. If in listening to these messages you have realised that you do not have a personal serving relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ and that if you were to die right now you would not spend eternity in Heaven with Him, I would urge you to accept Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour and to pray the prayer of salvation.

The steps to salvation are as follows: Firstly admit and recognise that you are a sinner. Romans 3:23 says *"All have sinned and fallen short of the glory of God."* Secondly, accept and believe that Jesus Christ is the son of God, that he came to Earth as a man, that he was crucified and died on the cross, that on the third day he rose again and is now seated at the right-hand of the father and that by his death and resurrection, he took your sins for eternity. Romans 5:8 says: *"But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us."* Thirdly, confess your sins, repent of your sins, and turn around. Repentance means turning around. It remains ceasing to do what you now realise is wrong. 1 John 1:9 says: *"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."* Four, confess your faith that Jesus Christ is Lord, that you believe this, and receive his salvation and invite him to dwell in your heart. Romans 10:9-10 says: *"If you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you will be saved. For with the heart one believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation."* Give thanks to God for your salvation. Pray and cry out to God and give thanks to Him for saving you.

Sixthly, work out your salvation by the Spirit of God. Philippians 2:12 says: *"Therefore, my beloved, as you have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling."* Salvation is a process. You are saved the moment you pray the sinner's prayer, the prayer of salvation and invite the Lord Jesus Christ to come into your heart and be Lord of your life. But salvation is also a process whereby your mind is renewed and you come to have a personal and deep relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. It is your choice how far you go in that relationship. He desires a wonderful and a deep and an intimate relationship with you, but it is your choice whether you will do what is necessary to come to that place through reading your Bible, praying, seeking counsel, seeking guidance. You should be water baptised at the first possible opportunity. Matthew 3:6 says: *"And were baptized by him in the Jordan, confessing their sins."* I encourage you to ask the Lord to lead you to somebody who has some knowledge of the basic ordinance of water baptism who can water baptise you or to lead you to a church where they can water baptise you. There is no reason why you cannot be water baptised today as a symbolic cleansing

and washing of your sins. In fact, the minute you pray the sinner's prayer, it would be preferable for you to be water baptised. Choose to be obedient to the Word of God, accept the Bible in its original Hebrew as given by the Spirit of God and choose to live your life according to that.

1 John 5:3 says: *"For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments. And His commandments are not burdensome."* I encourage you to read the Word of God daily and to put into practice everything that you encounter as a principle which I believe will bear fruit in your life. I would encourage you to make an effort right now after you prayed this prayer, start reading your Bible from the Book of John through to the Book of Revelation and then make a discipline of reading the New Testament from Matthew to Revelation at least two, three, four times a year and read the Old Testament from Genesis to Malachi at least once a year and I would encourage you to do that using different translations.

Ask God to lead you to the church where He wants you to be at this time where they will teach you, they will guide you, they will pray for you, and they will help you to walk in the fullness of what God has called you to be. Be aware that God may move you from church to church over time to teach you new things and you should not be reluctant to do this. The service of God is a personal choice. It is a wonderful choice and if you will step out by faith today and pray the sinner's prayer and follow Him, you will reap a rich harvest if that is your desire to be found faithful on the Day of Judgement. Should you have listened to this and have decided that you are now ready to make Jesus Christ the Lord of your life, I would ask you to pray the following prayer with me in Jesus name. *"Father I come to you in the name of Jesus and I confess that I am a sinner. I confess that I do not have a personal knowledge of the Lord Jesus Christ and I recognise that without Jesus if I were to die right now, I will spend eternity in hell and not with you. I confess that I have sinned and I repent of those sins and I turn around, I choose to turn my back on sin and to serve God. I confess that Jesus Christ came to Earth as a man, that he was crucified, that he died and was buried and that he was resurrected on the third day and that he sits on the right hand of the Father. I confess by faith that he died to take all of my sins and I thank you Jesus for taking my sin and I give you my sin right now in Jesus name. I confess by faith that Jesus Christ is King of Kings and Lord of Lords and I choose now Lord Jesus to make you the Lord of my life. I invite you to come and dwell in my heart. I invite you to take charge of my [inaudible 1:34:08]."*

## 02 12 Words + {Prophetic Words + Mark of the beast}

This is tape #12 in the series *"Judgement in this Life."* It was added to this series some months after recording of the basic series. The message was recorded on the 17th of December, the year 2000 at Foundation for Living Church, immediately after the core message on the previous tape regarding *"Spiritual Warfare"* was prepared and in the meeting after the praise and worship was completed, there was a strong prophetic flow and the move of the spirit in terms of the praise and worship. That was followed by a series of prophetic words and was followed by a teaching on the power of words which confirms certain things that had been said in the prophecies and which had been said in this tape series, which was followed by a further elaboration from myself in terms of certain things that the Lord had been saying to me that morning regarding the coming judgement and the coming tribulation. This entire message taken together the prophetic praise and worship, the prophetic words, the message itself, and then the additional information at the end of it collectively represents a very strong indication by the Spirit of God through his prophets that judgement is now being poured out on the church of Jesus Christ that we must as a matter of extreme urgency seek God with all our hearts, minds, souls and bodies, stop playing games and flirting with the world and flirting with the things of

the devil and seek to serve God totally that great judgement and great tribulation is about to be poured on the Earth and that we should be prepared and a strong indication that the Mark of the Beast is in fact not a physical mark, it is a state of mind and a state of being in terms of whether one is prepared to align one's thoughts and one's contracts with the Word of God or whether one will remain silent and compromise the Word of God and compromise the testimony of Lord Jesus Christ.

I believe that the Lord has called me to add this into the end of the judgement series in order to present a complete picture with regard to judgement. The previous tapes deal with the leading to where we are in history now. I urge you to listen to the balance of this tape prayerfully and give it to a most serious consideration in Jesus name. Amen.

[Prayer Song 0:02:36 - 0:03:34]

I want you to do more than that. Go to one another and tell one another that, will you do that? Just go and find out. [Background conversation 0:03:48]. You better come and give me one of those squeezes too, otherwise you will be in trouble. We love you darling. We love you. Praise the Lord. Praise Yah, praise Yah. Love you this morning. [Background conversation 0:04:32]. Amen, amen, amen. Love you Lord. Love you Lord. And Jesus Christ. And Jesus Christ. And Jesus. Praise your lovely name. Worship you. Exalt you Jesus. Magnify your name and adore you.

[Prayer Song 0:05:42 - 0:09:48].

We bless you. We worship you. We adore you. We magnify your lovely name. We thank you O God that you open our eyes that we may behold the glory of the Lord, that we may understand who it is that we are dealing with. Lord, we thank you. You are the son of the living God and you came and touched our lives. You came and saw these men. We weren't looking for you and you found us when we didn't want you Lord. O God, we worship you and we magnify your name for such grace we have never encountered. Lord, we know that grace was what made it possible for us to find you Lord. O God because you were looking for us long before that time. Blessed be your holy name because you have been so good, so merciful, so kind. Thank you Lord, thank you. You did for us what no one else could do. You made us into new people, O Lord, changed us in an instant of time by your divine grace. We bless you and exalt you O God. We magnify your lovely name, praise the Lord. O my soul and all that is within me. Blessed be his name. Halleluiah. Halleluiah. We worship thee, praise His name.

[Prayer Song 0:11:19 - 0:11:32]. We thank you Lord. We worship thee and we adore thee.

[Prayer Song 0:11:43 - 0:14:00]. [Background conversation 0:14:00 - 0:16:00]

What shall it be, says the Lord. If I move in a brand new direction, shall I first consult with you? Shall I ask you the way that I must go? Shall I seek advice from the sons of men whose breath is in their nostrils or shall it be that man shall seek my face and seek me for the direction that I go for I say to you I blessed the direction in which I go and those that walk with me in that direction shall naturally be blessed? There shall be a pool out of the blessings of the Lord on every side for I say to you at this time even in the history of the world it is more vital than ever before says the Lord. Even for my own to take hold of my word and do according to what I said. It is vital that you understand what is written for I say that I not say on to the [inaudible 0:16:50] long ago that ye do earn not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God. I say to you in this time it is vital that my knowing should understand what it is that I have spoken what I have said so that they might be directed and governed by it. And that it might be a compass around them said the Lord, that which keeps and that which blesses I say to you. I abide you within my word for by the word so man be judged. By the word shall they be assessed I

say to you even by the word which I have given. Therefore stand by it for it is a precious lamp on to your feet that you should not stumble, that you might walk in the light of not be in the dark that you might understand for I say to you that there may be in the world lean to the wisdom of the man, walk in darkness and they do not understand that I say blessed are your ears while they hear and your eyes what they see for there is understanding in the hearing and seeing of the word. Know that I blessed says the Lord and that I use it for my glory.

[0:18:41]

And once you lift the eyes of men from of the Earth from which they came. What shall it be that lifts their eyes to the heavens and the things that I have in store for them, that my word it shall be as a ladder says the Lord that ye shall walk up on and as he claim what my word says, so my word becomes powerful within your life and I say to you things begin to flow through you that were not before because you understand and you are walking in the light and I say to you my word is a director, my word is a director from my throne and in workers within the sons of men and within their hearts that they may know that the way of the world is not the way of my God and the wisdom of the world is not the wisdom of the goal word of my Lord, and they may understand that here is wisdom even in this word that I have given, therefore say I on to take the word for He will lift your eyes even to those goals that are before and those things that must be accomplished from my word must find fulfilment I say on to thee. The things that I promised must find fulfilment and I say to you that the generation that is, is a generation that is seeing the end times and seeing the things that are coming upon the face of the Earth, that generation leads the word of God to understand the direction that I am going in and the direction of the history of the world is going in, it is in my word, it is recorded I say on to you. Therefore take heed on to it as the light that shines in a dark place and walk in the light thereof that you do not stumble, so shall you walk with me and know this, I shall walk with you even in the light of that word that I have given. Jesus. Jesus. We worship thee. We bless thy name. Oh God. We exalt thee and magnify thy name. Jesus.

[0:30:36]

Lord, in Jesus name, we come before you as a congregation. We saw Lord, [inaudible 0:30:43] our life. Here we are. We say Lord, we understand that there is no alternative to God, no feasible alternative to God. Your will is paramount. Your word is definitive. We need to hold to that word with everything that is within us, O God. In Jesus name, strengthen every person here this morning, anointed by the holy ghost O God we pray that O Lord we will see things in a different way even as the spirit of God reveals the will of God that each one of us. The Lord that ministries here that we need to be carried out, pray in Jesus name that the [inaudible 0:31:24] sitting in the backseat is passed, that the [inaudible 0:31:27] of sitting forward to do the work of the Lord has come. For Lord if we have the urgency of the spirit upon us, then Lord we will understand and we will know within ourselves now that the pace is quickened O God and the time is short.

We are asking in Jesus name to guide and to direct and we give you all the glory and the praise and the honour. Thank you Lord, in Jesus name. Amen. We bless the Lord and magnify His name for His goodness and His mercy. It is so good to see everyone of you and to share with you on this lovely occasion these things that are happening around us. We praise God. He has got a word prepared for us. Our brother Dutch is going to bring the word for us this morning that God has laid on his heart. Are you ready? Are you ready? Amen. Praise the Lord. God bless you my brother.

Questions start off. When last? Could any of us proclaim the word, not to the nations, to our neighbour? I think few of us realise the power of words. In the secular society we use them to transfer knowledge, ideas. It is the basis of our communication. And as kids we chanted sticks and bones can break my bones, but words can never hurt me. It could not be more wrong, because that is so wrong. We have this movement in the world today against physical violence. Now me personally I believe a good [inaudible 0:33:16] behind the ears is the best psychology for a child that is getting out of way. But you know, on the surface it is commendable. We are not allowed to chastise our children. A child may not be canned. I think just recently I have read about children who have taken their parents to court because they gave them [inaudible 0:33:40]. People who use violence are supposed to be barbaric but I think that physical bully is no worse than the verbal bully.

In all the hysterical fulminating against violence we have gotten the colloquial damage that words can do. We do not see it as damaging because the fix are not immediately visible, but they slowly manifest themselves like a cancer damage and the damage is often worse than a violent act. How many lives have been destroyed by parents and teachers with careless words to young people? We call them stupid, dumb, and we go to street children who do not have nice clothes, parents who do not have a nice [inaudible 0:34:32] and make fun of them. And we do not realise that deep wounds we make in the psyche of those people. In Matthew 5:22 we read, *"But I say to you that everyone who continues to be angry with his brother or harbours malice (enmity of heart) against him shall be liable to and unable to escape the punishment imposed by the court; and whoever speaks contemptuously and insultingly to his brother shall be liable to and unable to escape the punishment imposed by the Sanhedrin, and whoever says, You cursed fool! [You empty-headed idiot!] shall be liable to and unable to escape the hell (Gehenna) of fire."* I think all of us at someone seemed the helpless predicament of the verbally inefficient being criticised by the verbally proficient. Words that cut the flesh from ourselves, words that destroy the spirit that lay waste to our hopes and dreams and permanently damage the delicate fabric of our personalities. So also it can be used to lift people up, to raise them above the circumstances and see the glorious vision of God. I believe that one of the greatest things in life today is to see life as it is and not that it should be. We should see the glory of God in everything. We should see His [inaudible 0:36:25] of purpose in anything that happens to our lives and I just recently have begun to experience this. We had a terrible two weeks, my wife and I, all sorts of calamities of [inaudible 0:36:38], strangely enough, not once was I worried, not once was I concerned and people could not understand that I was so laid back but you see, I know who is on my side.

We should manifest this love of God in our lives, in our actions. We should see the potential of people and not their circumstances. We should act believing that we can and are making a difference. We should be boldly declaring who and what we are and most of all we call ourselves Christians, we must be careful not to [inaudible 0:37:19] the good name of Jesus Christ by what we do and what we say and all too often we fall down on that. It has been said that the pen is mightier than the sword and that is very true. It is true because words give the birth to every deed that has ever been committed. If you look the great things that happened in life and the bad things that have happened in life in history, all started in the imagination that are articulated with a word. They have changed lives, forced people to get involved in noble deeds, given people [inaudible 0:37:53] and compassion. Words are the stimulus that launch dreams, destinies and noble causes. Words are the weft and woof of everything that is good or bad in our society. The Bible often talks about words and names that are important. Just as an example, Abram became Abraham which means father of many. God saw it is so important that He changed his name and that word, just the word Abraham meant so much. It was the word of God that created the universe and all that is in it and He created out of nothing with words.



In Genesis 1:3 we read *"And God said, Let there be light; and there was light."* Words, He just spoke them. In the beginning was a word and the word was of God and the word was God, John 1:1. Hebrews 11:3: *"By faith we understand that the worlds [during the successive ages] were framed (fashioned, put in order, and equipped for their intended purpose) by the word of God, so that what we see was not made out of things which are visible."* Our words are either destructive or creative. They have an effect on everybody around us and on ourselves. Careless words can be so damaging. Modern doctors and psychologists only now beginning to understand what the Bible has been talking about for 2,000 years, how important words are. In James 3:2 we read: *"For we all often stumble and fall and offend in many things. And if anyone does not offend in speech [never says the wrong things], he is a fully developed character and a perfect man, able to control his whole body and to curb his entire nature."* Words are the causes of our blessings and our curses. Words are the causes of people to be broken down and people to be lifted up. Words are the start of great things.

A mature person is one who is able to control his words. This of course does not justify those who find it easy to say nothing, who parade their lack of purpose or opinion as being the strong silent type. You have met them I am sure, I am thinking about this, but they do not say a thing because they do just put their foot in it. Our life reflects what is our mind or imagination. That is why all our actions and work starts in our mind and they come through in the word. Our thoughts and words are also influenced by our association, negative or positive. They are good, they are either on God's business or in Satan's business and understand this, there is no middle ground. You cannot just withdraw. It is this or that. This is manifested and influenced by our marriages, what we say, how we say, when we say it. Just to give you an idea, you look at your wife and you say to her, *"My dear, when I look into your face, time stands still. I could only say you have a face that stops the clock."* I do not know which one will get me anyway but what I am trying to say is the way you use the words is very important. Unless we protect ourselves with a word and allow the Holy Spirit to strengthen us, count our words, sparingly use them, otherwise we will get into a lot of trouble. Words are so easily uttered, so insignificant, sometimes they can have a catastrophic effect and consequences physically and emotionally beyond anything we can think and I would like to just relate one silly little episode. During the Second World War, the Americans have dropped the first bomb, I think it was Hiroshima. They then sent an ultimatum to the Japanese High Command and they said, *"Surrender."* The Japanese wrote back and they used the word called Mashimutsu. What it means in Japanese is *"No. Maybe."* When the American translators got this, they looked at this message, we know the Japs means *"No."* One of their colleagues said, *"It could be maybe."* And for that one word, the second bomb was dropped at Nagasaki. Over hundred thousand people died just of the wrong understanding of that word.

Just recently in South Africa, there was a young couple that went on a murder spree. I think they murdered something like five people. When the young lady was asked, *"Why did you do it?"* She said, *"He told me he loved me."* That word was so important to her that she became a criminal, murdered people just to get that from him. Our words come from our heart and divulge the very paint of our thinking. They also reflect the power of the person who is speaking them. I think we have all experienced that. Many time people say something and we forget about it. The Romans in Matthew 8:8 understood the power of the word and the person who is speaking when he told Jesus just to speak and my servant will get well. He understood that. We must remember that when we speak we should be speaking in the power of God Jesus and the Holy Spirit. We should not just use words so idly.

In Proverbs 18:21 reads: *"Death and life are in the power of the tongue."* And we can commit suicide with this thing. We can do it and I think I have done it many times. In Romans 8:37: *"Yet amid all these things we are more than conquerors and gain a surpassing victory through Him Who loved us."* In Mark 11:23: *"For assuredly, I say to you, whoever says to this mountain, 'Be removed and be cast into the sea,' and does not doubt in his heart, but believes that those things he says will be done, he will have whatever he says."* When we speak, we must have a clear objective and this is so important. We must just not idly talk, babble. Think, count your words, use them purposely. When we just think for a moment, when we read the Bible and we try to interpret it, we look at the words that are used. Changes have been made in the course of Christianity by some men seeing the true meaning of those words and the whole thing changes. Where the word is all or they or you or us make such a difference. Many prayers I believe go astray today because we muddle in the words we use. We just sort of go on and get it over with, which shows it clearly, like someone shooting at a target and point your words directly and clearly on what you want. It also speaks what is in line with the Word of God or just talk.

In Psalm 19:14 we read: *"Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart be acceptable in Your sight, O Lord, my strength and my Redeemer."* Let the words of my mouth and the meditation of my heart be acceptable in thy sight O Lord. I think if of us have thought of that little verse before we open our mouths, we would not talk so much, because we begin to think of just what are we saying. We must learn to use the words and that word for the purpose that God Almighty intended. We are supposed to speak about our fantastic God and how many of us do. We are admonished to rejoice in the Lord and pray without ceasing and yet whenever I have spoken about this, I have met resistance because I am told you cannot do that at work, you cannot do it, it is like we have to take this word and just set aside little times for it. Sunday is the two hours we spend. At night that one hour we spend in the quiet time in the morning and the rest of the time we got to jump to the world. Paul said at many times, *"I will speak in and out of season. People keep telling me you have to find an opportunity."* That's not what the Bible says. I am simple and I am pretty stupid. So I just go what it says and we have to learn that. We have to learn to understand because so often we interpret to certain means. All what happens is we go and attend it. We only look at this one aspect of the Bible. We must be calmly influenced in our environment. I want to describe it. We must be an antiseptic in our environment. We must be the symbol of truth. We must be the leaders in thought and action and the word of truth. And most importantly, we need to know our Lord intimately and do articulate who and what He is. I have heard on talk shows and when you listen you see some of these TV shows in America, let me say you something. When one of our people a Christian meets a Satanist or an atheist, they eat us for breakfast. They wipe the floor with us, why, because we do not know our Lord properly. We have not read enough about Him, we have not taught enough about Him. We are not ready for it because they make fools of us. And they use catch phrases, we struggle, we do not know what to do.

We must defend Jesus at all times without [inaudible 0:49:42]. In Matthew 12:26, *"But I say to you that for every idle word, men may speak. They will give account of it on the Day of Judgement."* It frightens the [inaudible 0:50:15] idle words that I have spoken. We always talk about the last words that a person has. They are normally very important. Dying words, before the person dies they say something. I just want to give you Jesus Christ as a reminder. Matthew 28:19-20: *"Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age."* I ask you a metaphorical question, when last did we do it? I think last time I preached out I said you must not take too serious what I say because normally I am preaching to myself and I ask myself that question, when last did I do that. When we look at a church, the environment of a church we find...you get the people who do the manual work and those that go

out and do the evangelising and you get the preacher. Now the funny thing is, we expect the preacher's fate to carry us through. When we go on to some new project we want to do something, the faith of the congregation are with the preacher. We expect his faith to carry us through. And then you get the people who are very happy to do the busy work, and wash the floors, wash the dishes, bake the cakes, but do not ask me to talk to a stranger about Jesus. You know what I am talking about? Do not ask me. That is not barbaric but it is barbaric. It is everybody's job. Because we are too busy, we run off and we work at the bizarre, now we are doing something good or we collecting for something but you have to speak to people about it, otherwise we are wasting our time. They must fear and know. The word, that word that is in this wonderful book, it has got we have spoken to everybody around us. I think you all know the power of that word. The lives have changed.

It is vital that these things like the bizarre, the feeding schemes, there is not a question about it. They are vital to the church, but not at the expense of preaching the word. People will often offer to do all the manual work as long as [inaudible 0:53:22]. We have to learn to do the practical things that Jesus did. To tell people about God, to live your sermon without fear, to walk with your feet on the ground, to pray continually and most of all and this is a warning to us. Pentecostal churches, we must be very careful that our exuberance does not become any hindrance to other people. I have been in a situation where I invited somebody to a church, he vowed never to go there again, it was crazy. The [inaudible 0:54:02] exuberance does not chase people away. In shortest [inaudible 0:54:07] we must become all things to all people so that we can spread the Word of God. And just a little aside, when we believe, all of us here are believers and we must ask ourselves this question and I think this is key to what I have been speaking about this morning, why do we believe and if we look at it we will find we got it from our parents. We went to church when we were kids, it is our environment. We lived in a small town. Everybody went to church, everybody believed. We got it from our society, our environment. Now these are the things that cause us to believe, but which is faith, it is not good enough. It is not good enough, because we have to look at our reason for believing. Our reason and there we talk about internalising the Word of God and experiencing the changes in our lives in our thinking. The supernatural experience of the Holy Spirit, the intimacy with Jesus Christ and the word. When the reason is in place, when the reason is there, it is not just what we exert from other people, but it is a deep seated reason. We know now why we can then may be [inaudible 0:55:42]. Revelation 12:11: *"And they have overcome (conquered) him by means of the blood of the Lamb and by the utterance of their testimony, for they did not love and cling to life even when faced with death [holding their lives cheap till they had to die for their witnessing]."* I just ask how many of us here would be in that position and die for our witnessing. It is a question we must ask ourselves over and over and over. We cannot pay lip services to God. It has got to be meaningful and it must be something that comes from the heart, life changing. Amen.

Now may the Grace of God, the grace of Jesus Christ, the love of God and the fellowship of the Holy Spirit be with you now and forever more. Amen. O Father, Lord God Almighty, we have gathered here this morning to the Lord as sinners, acknowledging that you are our God, our Father and our Creator and we are but your creatures who humble ourselves in humility and worship and praise you. Amen.

We rejoice in the Lord and magnify His name for His goodness and His mercy. We have heard what our brothers have been saying this morning, vital message. I want to say to you that we have been speaking to you for some time now about the tape ministry, these cassettes. My brother James has made this beautiful album here. Take a look at it, there are all those sermons in there. These are for distribution.

These tapes are eight tapes, [inaudible 0:58:17] Lord told us to come and bring this tape recording. The title the Lord gave me is "*The coming tribulation.*" [inaudible 0:58:30]. There is no charge for them. The only requirement is that the Word of God [inaudible 0:58:39] prophetic word this morning and [inaudible 0:58:44]. This has been prepared specifically with the mind to giving to other Christian leaders. The only reason it is free is to spread the gospel. [inaudible 0:59:18]. There are two other tapes there. The message that [inaudible 0:59:28]. There are about 10 copies of that tape and the idea is that you can take that and [inaudible 0:59:46]. You are free to make as many copies of all of these tapes that you want to. For those of you who do not touch a full set of tapes [inaudible 1:00:17]. There are a number of copies of last week's message [inaudible 1:00:34] copies of that as well for any of the other Samuel friends that are here. This city block is under a major demonic satanic [inaudible 1:00:52]. The fulcrum of Satanist power over this entire geographic area is settled above this area, this geographic area. That is why there are so many churches here, if the church has not been diligent in tearing down those principalities and power. [inaudible 1:01:20] nearly two and a half years. I got some experience in mining engineering and if you go and combine all ore body like a diamond [inaudible 1:01:33]. So on this tape there are about 10 copies of this [inaudible 1:01:45] spiritual warfare over Pretoria North. I would encourage each family to take this tape, listen to it, pray in agreement with it till you [inaudible 1:01:55] context of the prayer and then start praying that prayer every night when you [inaudible 1:01:59]. So [inaudible 1:02:00] over this geographic location and secondly over Neil and his ministry, and thirdly over your house for your family and your property and basically it is like that diamond pipe, it is [inaudible 1:02:14] into the spirit realm and slowly carrying this thing down. The more we tear down, the more the individual families have individual congregation who overlap until eventually Satan cohorts can be cast into the pit for a thousand years. If I just take one more minute, I will add, very interesting in terms of Dutch's message today. My brother moves out from the States and he was very...my ministry is called End Time Issues and he gets email from me from time to time. He said to me yesterday, I really need to sit down with you and hear in more detail what your interpretation of Scripture in that area. So we took him to the airport this morning and I was expounding my understanding of where we are at and what have you and I think [inaudible 1:03:03] he said what about the Mark of the Beast? And we have been hearing about microchips and what have you and I have been wrestling with this. It did [inaudible 1:03:10] coming back from the airport. What I am seeing more and more and Neil touched on this the other day that you are not even going to be able to tell people that they are sinners. I have been ministering over the internet to people in the States as being persecuted in a serious fashion for [inaudible 1:03:33]. They have the FBI monitoring them. They are basically getting into a place where they are completely in bondage. [inaudible 1:03:43]. That I am a committed Christian, it is important to me, that does not affect my work in the sense of the quality of the work that I have been doing. They want to meet with me on Saturday. We observe Saturday as Sabbath. I said I am sorry I do not work on Saturday and they never came back. The point there is what we are moving into. I am almost [inaudible 1:04:19] Dutch's message this morning, I am almost a hundred percent certain, the Mark of the Beast is on the forehead and it is on the hand. What do you do with the hand. You communicate contractually the word that come through your mouth, that come out of your mouth. I think that the Mark of the Beast is actually whether you are willing to speak the Word of God and acknowledge Jesus Christ in any situation. If you will not, if you will bow to Satan, if you will bow to the world and deny your faith, that you are prepared to teach, why? I could have had that job, I was [inaudible 1:05:03] with million rand a year as a chief executive of 25 companies. All I have to do was take that paragon to the bottom of my TV and [inaudible 1:05:17] on that subject when I spoke of that first. And that is more and more the case. If we are prepared to compromise, we are expecting the Mark of the Beast. If we are not prepared to compromise, if we are willing to put on our TV, to put on our company lead ahead if we have behind companies, Jesus Christ is Lord.

The Word of God says, if you will acknowledge me before men, I will acknowledge you before the [inaudible 1:05:43]. But if you will not do that, if you will keep quiet, if the road can't see that you are any different to the rest of them, and they discover by accident after knowing for three years that you are a Christian, you are accepting I think the Mark of the Beast. You are silencing what is in your heart, [inaudible 1:06:03] from coming out of your mouth and you are not writing this [inaudible 1:06:07]. There is more and more situation becoming for example, it is getting more and more [inaudible 1:06:15] in the United States. For example, there is [inaudible 1:06:19] they want to remove any teaching with regard to morality in secondary education in schools. In other words, they now want to teach sex in schools as a subject that you practice and they want to remove all reference to abstinence or anything else. It is just another biological subject, it is a bodily function that you perform with whoever you think fine performing. And the reason they want to remove it is because they claim it is religion. And the constitution [inaudible 1:06:50] religion. And the thing that has struck me is [inaudible 1:06:55] teacher in the United States a Christian, you are either going to have to when you apply for a job, say I am sorry, I cannot compromise on that. That is fornication and adultery. I cannot teach sex education without telling people about adultery and fornication, which means they will probably not get a job. And the thing that struck me this morning is if you do not have a job, you can buy. So if you are not prepared to compromise with the world, if you are prepared to say I cannot teach sex education without morality, I cannot do this, I cannot do that, I cannot be in business in my own account without acknowledging Jesus Christ as Lord. If you do that, you are going to find it harder and harder to get a job, to keep a job, to be in business. But if you compromise, I think, you might just be accepting the Mark of the Beast and we need to understand that. Tribulation is upon us. Judgement is upon us. We cannot [inaudible 1:07:59] anymore. I just shared this with you. I am sorry for holding this, but I am really overflowing at the moment.

[inaudible 1:08:13] who was an alcoholic all his life, he came home blind drunk, he got to a point where he was so demonised that Ingrid and the children set behind locked doors for three months before God finally took her out of that marriage. She got custodian [inaudible 1:08:35] the bloodline was so strong, influence was strong, he was getting all his father's Demons, they were manifesting, it was becoming more rebellion, it was becoming absolutely inseparable. And in June-July this year we were getting [inaudible 1:08:53]. Father we cannot handle it anymore. Whatever we do, however we pray, he is just going down the same path. [inaudible 1:09:04]. That was beginning of August-September. [inaudible 1:09:18]. I am so blessed. I am bubbling over. I got to give the glory to God. [inaudible 1:09:49] it does not matter how bad [inaudible 1:09:54] children, your staff, whatever. God is able but we have to pray right. We have not because we ask not and we ask [inaudible 1:10:05]. We have to pray the will of God, we got to stop telling God the answer to our problems. All we say is Father we do not know what to do and the minute we stop telling God what to do and the child [inaudible 1:10:19]. He has been doing absolute miracles in our own lives. Amen. [inaudible 1:10:33] we ministered to him, we went back. The Lord took me all the way to Pretoria [inaudible 1:10:46]. Come back to the Lord. [inaudible 1:10:52] I am sharing this because [inaudible 1:10:59]. At the age of 5, mother divorced his father. He has a whole bunch [inaudible 1:11:13]. At the age of 8, she remarried [inaudible 1:11:23] you are a thief, you are a liar, you are this, you are that. And yesterday I was ministering to him and he said to me, you know, James [inaudible 1:11:36] at least a hundred times. [inaudible 1:11:40] remain with Jesus. You are not a liar. [inaudible 1:11:48] and the change in that man's life just with that revelation and [inaudible 1:11:54] and last month I went through [inaudible 1:12:00] like I have never experienced it. You cannot be so [inaudible 1:12:07] so good that we have to understand the power of mercy. That guy surely have a lot to go through. He is drunken, he is addicted to [inaudible 1:12:20], lovely gentle guy. [inaudible 1:12:33] entire life has been absolutely distorted and destroyed for all those years [inaudible 1:12:41]. We have to understand. Amen.

[inaudible 1:12:52]

[1:15:02]

From the message that is being presented, I pray that you will see the magnitude of confirmation of the current status of the church, the current status of the world. Tribulation and judgement are at hand. The church is about to be judged in a way that is beyond anything that we can comprehend. I remind you of something that I have mentioned previously. I was in the Holocaust Museum in Jerusalem in 1996. The Lord had arranged me to travel there on business and I had a day to spare and I went on a bus to the Holocaust Museum and as I was looking at these pictures of thousands of emaciated Jewish men, women, and children stripped naked and being mowed down by machine guns and bulldozed into trenches in gas chambers, being subject to terrible torture, mutilation for medical experiments and all sorts of horrendous things, pictures of ghettos, pictures of people starving, pictures of people being brutally assaulted. The Lord said to me this is a pale shadow of what is about to come on the church. To the day I still do not know how much of what is about to happen will be physical and how much will be spiritual. I am increasingly persuaded that much of what is happening and what is going to happen will happen in the spirit realm and if we look for it to happen in the natural realm, we may be seriously mistaken. I say again, Jesus the Messiah came and the very people who had most reason to be expecting his coming through the prophecies of Daniel and others, those who had access, most access to the word of God were the ones who crucified him. The high priests, scribes, Pharisees, the lawyers crucified the Lord of Glory because they were looking for God to act in a manifest way according to their understanding, according to their paradigm and he moved differently and they missed God.

I sincerely urge you, Jesus ushered in a spiritual covenant. Everything that happens in the New Testament is primarily spiritual in nature. Whatever happens in the Old Testament was primarily physical in nature. God uses metaphor, parable throughout Scripture, but particularly in the New Testament. When we read about the goat stampeding over the world in Daniel, that is not any physical goat, it is a king or a kingdom that was Greece, which was manifested in Alexander the Great, but Alexander himself did not stampede over the world, his armies did. So it has a spiritual connotation. If we look for the beast to be a man that is clearly identifiable as the beast, we are probably missing the point. The beast is a spiritual state. It is a carnal earthly brutal state associated with Satan. We seen at the end of Revelation that the beast, Satan is cast into the pit. It is a spiritual state.

There is every evidence that the Antichrist is powerfully active in the world today, anti the anointing, anti the anointed one, and his anointing and the demonic activity is all anti the anointing. There is every reason to my understanding of what the Spirit of God is saying after the events of the last couple of days, which have given rise to the recording of this tape and the message which was given on Sunday, the prophecies and everything else to conclude that the Mark of the Beast is not a physical mark, it is a spiritual mark, it is a state of mind, a state of being. It is something in which we choose not to acknowledge the Lord Jesus Christ before men in order to keep our jobs, in order to be able to buy and sell. The day that you compromise your faith in order to buy or sell, I submit to you, you are accepting the Mark of the Beast. If you have done that I suggest that you repent now as a matter of urgency, that you confess it as sin and you turn from your wicked ways. I suggest that if that means that you have to resign your job, if that means you have to take a stand with your employer regarding stuff that you know to be immoral, if you are a teacher and you are teaching a course which permits or encourages children to believe that they can have free sex, sex outside of marriage, anything like that, you need to take a stand and if it costs you your job, well then God will reward you. He will protect you. He is your provider, not your employer. If you have put some aspect of Scripture into

place in your life, such as the observance of the true Sabbath, such as the observance of your responsibility, if you are a man in terms of marriage, it is time for you to understand that you cannot do that secretly. You cannot conceal the Word of God in your life and expect God to protect you or defend you. You have to be committed to God, you dare not contractually or verbally deny Jesus Christ. The probability is if you do that you will be spiritually marked as having bowed the knee to the beast. And I say again, if you are doing it, if you have done it, it is time to repent and turn around in Jesus name.

Father I pray that anything on this tape, which is not according to your will and according to your word that you will blow it away by your spirit and it will find no root in the hearts of the hearers. I thank you that everything that is according to your will and according to your word will be implanted and engrafted in their hearts that it will be watered and nourished by your spirit that it will grow and produce abundant fruit to the glory of your kingdom, in Jesus name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, King of Kings and Lord of Lords. Amen.

Community church is a Pentecostal church that believes the gospel is the most important message for this and any other generation. I was therefore surprised to read a poster put out by the male and godly newspaper that the day of the Christian church is numbered. I do not believe that there is any power that can annul what Christ alone could do and that this message of redemption must be to the end of the Earth. To this end, we are producing these tapes for distribution free of charge. If this one has been a blessing for you, please assist us by passing it on. We thank you for your cooperation. God bless you.

I you have listened to this tape and it has made an impact upon your life and you realise your need, may I pray for you that Jesus Christ might enter your life and bring about the changes that are necessary. In Jesus name, pray that God will move by His spirit upon your life that your whole future shall be coloured by the fact that Jesus is alive and that he is alive and triumphant in your life. May God bless you and use you for His glory. We need every mouth, we need every effort to bring the message across for those that stand in desperate need. God bless you. Amen.

Foundation for Living community church meets at the South African [inaudible 1:23:27] hall, Jack Linden Street, Pretoria North. It is pastored by Neil Dryer, an apostle of God, who can be contacted on 012-808-1650. Meetings are every Sunday at 9:30 in the morning at the [inaudible 1:23:49] hall. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this Ministry, our banking account details are as follows: Account name: NJ Dreyer, Bank: First National Bank. Branch: Silverton. Account number: 51030119874. Branch code: 25084500. You are free to copy these tapes without restriction and to distribute them as widely as you feel led. Please remember only that each of us is called to account on the Day of Judgement for what we do with the Word of God. Should you require additional copies of this tape, please contact me James Robertson on Johannesburg, that is 011-791-2327 or cellphone 0832516644 or fax 011-791-5004 or email [Jamesr@infodoor.co.za](mailto:Jamesr@infodoor.co.za) and we will make arrangements to get copies of this tape to you.

May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Lord of Lords and King of Kings. Amen.

This message has been recorded by a church without walls, a ministry of End Time Issue Ministries, PO Box 898, Randpark Ridge, Randburg 2156, Republic of South Africa. We can be contacted by email at [James@end-time-issues.org.za](mailto:James@end-time-issues.org.za). Our phone numbers, international dialling code normally 0027 but

this may vary from country to country, the 27 is standard. Our landline, 0027-11791-2327 or in South Africa, 011-791-2327. My mobile number 0027832516644 and in South Africa, 083-251-6644. Our fax number internationally 0027-11791-5004 and locally 011-791-5004. All materials produced by this ministry are available at no cost to those who require them, irrespective of financial means. At the same time, donations and offerings are clearly welcome to support the work. Please feel free to copy any of our materials in part or in full as the Lord leads you understanding that the manner in which you utilise these materials and the manner in which you cite them and quote them is for your account on the Day of Judgement. So we would ask you to use the materials widely but please feel free to copy them however you see fit and to share these truths with anybody as the Lord leads.

I would urge those of you who receive copies of these tapes at no charge that once you have listened to them that you consider passing them on and blessing others with them. Our hearts' desire is that they should not become artefacts sitting on a bookshelf and gathering dust but the word of God contained in these teachings should be spread as far and as widely as possible. Should you be led by the Lord to sow into this Ministry, our bank account is End Time Issue Ministries. The account number is 0427527805. The branch is the Standard Bank of South Africa, Randburg Branch and the branch code is 018005.

If in listening to these messages you have realised that you do not have a personal serving relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ and that if you were to die right now you would not spend eternity in Heaven with him, I would urge you to accept Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour and to pray the prayer of salvation. These steps to salvation are as follows. Firstly, admit and recognise that you are a sinner. Romans 3:23: *"For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God."* Secondly, accept and believe that Jesus Christ is the son of God, that he came to Earth as a man, that He was crucified and died on the cross and that on the third day He rose again. He is now seated at the right hand of the Father. And that by His death and resurrection he took your sins for Eternity. Romans 5:8 says *"But God demonstrates His own love toward us but while we were still sinners, Christ died for us."*

Thirdly, confess your sins, repent of your sins and turn around. Repentance means turning around. It means ceasing to do what you now realise is wrong. 1 John 1:9 says, *"If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just forgives us our sins, to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."*

Four, confess your faith that Jesus Christ is Lord that you believe this, and receive His salvation and invite Him to dwell in your heart. Romans 10, 9 and 10 says, *"If you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you will be saved. For with the heart one believes into righteousness and with the mouth confession is made and to salvation. Give thanks to God for your salvation. Pray and cry out to God and give thanks to Him for saving you."*

Sixthly, work out your salvation by the Spirit of God. Philippians 2:12 says *"Therefore, My beloved as you have always obeyed, not only in My presence, but now much more in My absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling."* Salvation is a process. You are saved the moment you pray the sinner's prayer, the prayer of Salvation and invite the Lord Jesus Christ to come into your heart and be the Lord of your life. The salvation is also a process whereby your mind is renewed, and you come to have a personal and deep relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. It is your choice how far you go in that relationship. He desires a wonderful, and a deep and an intimate relationship with you but it is your choice whether you will do what is necessary to come to that place through reading your Bible, praying, seeking counsel and seeking guidance.



You should be Water Baptised at the first possible opportunity, Mathew 3:6 says *"And we are baptised by Him in the Jordan and confessing his sins."* Encourage you to ask the Lord to lead you to somebody who has some knowledge of the basic ordinance of Water Baptism who can Water Baptise you or to lead you to a Church where they can Water Baptise you. There is no reason why you cannot be Water Baptised today as a symbolic cleansing and washing of your sins. In fact, the minute you pray, the sinner's prayer, it would be preferable for you to be Water Baptised.

Choose to be obedient to the Word of God, accept the Bible in its original Hebrew as given by the Spirit of God and choose to live your life according to that. 1 John 5:3 says *"For this is the love of God, that we keep His Commandments. His Commandments are not burdensome."* I encourage you to read the Word of God daily and to put into practice everything that you encounter, as a principle which I believe will bear fruit in your life, I would encourage you to make an effort right now after you have prayed this prayer, to start reading your Bible from the Book of John through to the Book of Revelation and then make a discipline of reading the New Testament from Matthew to Revelation, at least two, three, four times a year and read the Old Testament from Genesis to Malachi at least once a year. And I would encourage you to do that using different translations.

Ask God to lead you to the church where He wants you to be at this time where they will teach you, they will guide you, they will pray for you, and they will help you to walk in the fullness of what God has called you to be. Be aware that He may move you. God may move you from Church to Church over time to teach you new things and you should not be reluctant to do this. The service of God is a personal choice.

---

This page is intentionally kept blank.

---

## Section 3:

# The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery

### Introduction

This is the introduction to Volume 1 of the Marriage teachings in the suite of tapes entitled '*God's plan for healing marriage in the 7th millennium.*' Volume 1 of the 3-volume set on marriages entitled, '*The Scriptural definition of marriage, divorce and adultery.*' It defines a 20 teaching, or 20-tape set of a comprehensive analysis of what the Scriptures have to say about the subjects relating to marriage, divorce, adultery and related topics.

In total, the suite provides a solid, robust and comprehensive Scriptural basis for understanding what the Word of God truly says about marriage, understanding how God intends marriage to be and understanding how God intended marriage to work. It provides a robust statement that God created marriage to work between any man and any woman provided they are both believers.

It provides a basis for understanding the power and the potential of marriage as God created it to be. It also provides a foundation on which the rest of these teachings is built. Volume 2 in the marriage suite is entitled, '*Towards Heaven on Earth in marriage.*' It provides a whole lot of Scriptural and Spiritual principles with regards to bringing about the necessary change to experience Heaven on Earth in your marriage and to have your marriage heal no matter what the state of that marriage is.

Volume 3 in this series is entitled, '*Practical application of marriage teachings.*' It talks about a variety of specific aspects required to put these teachings into practice in the lives of believers, no matter what background they or their marriage comes from.

This set of tapes, as I said, is a comprehensive Scriptural doctrinal analysis of what the Word of God really says. I need to stress that it contains a lot of information that you're going to find controversial [inaudible 00:02:19] and might challenge you. It has taken me many years to get to a place where I can come before you confidently and say this is what the Word of God says. I come to you in the capacity of an Apostle and Prophet of God, and I appeal to you to listen carefully and attentively to what is recorded on these tapes. The bulk of the message is given by the Spirit of God, recognising our humanity, our frailty, and our propensity to mess up from time to time.

They may be the [inaudible 00:02:52] I ask you to forgive me for that. But at the same time, I declare before the Throne of God right now that the bulk of what is contained in these teachings, everything that is of substance, has been subjected to the most careful and rigorous scrutiny, measurement against the word of God, debate and argument with the Spirit of God, asking for confirmation and confirmation, until I can come before you to say with confidence that these are the facts that are giving rise to the 70% odd failure rate of marriages in the Christian church today that are giving rise to fornication and adultery on a global scale of a magnitude that is beyond comprehension as one comes to grasp it and understand it.

Therefore, I urge you to listen attentively to what the Spirit of God is saying through these tapes. At the same time, I must say to you, please follow the sequence of these tapes. Start at the beginning and go on to the end. Each tape builds on the foundation of the first tape, it builds on the Word of God in such a way that God-willing you'll be able at each tape the way to accept the truths that are revealed as the teachings unfold.

The teachings comprise of a suite of iterative approaches to the truths which God is revealing. I have now seen the picture in the light that it is presented in these teachings. This was before I did the teachings that unfolded at the leading of the Holy Spirit and the Spirit of God on a daily basis that have appeared for about 3 months. When I started these tapes and recorded the first one, I expected to record 6 tapes, but it grew to 10 tapes, 20 tapes, 43 tapes, 55 tapes and then it ended up with the supplementation of the various other tapes which make up the series at about 94-95 tapes.

Only as this came to completion this very morning of the day that I am recording this message on December 27, 2000, did I fully see how the Lord had pulled all of this together to provide a set of tapes which, with complete certainty, provide the answer to just about anything that can be wrong with just about any marriage in the Christian faith.

This set of tapes, even though it's a large number, represents God's plan for healing your marriage and making your marriage Heaven on Earth if you choose to step out in faith, listen to these tapes diligently, and systematically put into practice what is contained in them. You will get your miracle. But recognise that it has taken a long time for you to learn all this, that has brought you to a place where your marriage is not necessarily the way God intended it to be. It's going to take some time and some effort to get it to the place where God intends it to be.

With that, I pray that you will be blessed and that you will find these tapes will accomplish that which God has appointed for your life at this time. In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, Amen.

## **03 01 Foundation Concepts - the Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery**

In the series of teachings,, I am going to talk at length on the subject, *'The Scriptural Definition of Marriage'* or what the Scriptures really say about marriage, putting our way of divorce, adultery, and the relationships between men and women as a type of our relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. In this first teaching today, I am going to lay a foundation for the teachings that will follow in the days ahead. In the next teaching, I will get into specific elements of doctrine. Do you desire to see the Power of God manifest in this world? Is your desire for Godly marriages in the Body of Christ, rather than escalating marital strife to vision and putting away your divorce? Would you like to see a Church in which men are equipped and empowered to be the men God created them to be? And women are empowered and equipped to be the women God created them to be, and both are fulfilled in their respective roles.

### **Husband and Wife United**

Would you like to see husband and wife united as Jesus and His Father are united? Would you like to see the Body of Christ united as never before? As I was completing the first draft of the book on which this teaching is based, I was given an article entitled *'Wow, so that's how Jesus loves me!'* which was

published in the October 1990 issue of 'Joy' magazine. That article states that marriage is meant by God to be a prophetic sign and wonder to the world, and confirms many of the points in this teaching regarding marriage as a type of our relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ.

It also confirms some of what is taught in this series on marriage traditions. I will read an extract from that article to lay the foundation. 'Joy' magazine can be contacted at [joymag@iafrica.com](mailto:joymag@iafrica.com). The article was written by John and Helen Gardner. It gives a wonderful summary of why the subject of this teaching is so important. I quote, *"The Lord began speaking to us recently about marriage and giving us some understanding of why so many marriages are in a mess or out of order and even why so few Christian marriages aren't what they could be. Daily we seem to hear of people suffering the most terrible abuse, unhappiness and fear within marriages and hear of more and more Christian marriages ending in the cataclysmic of divorce. Something that God purposed to be one of his greatest sources of joy and blessing to people, often ends up as a curse and misery. The Lord began to reveal that the reason why marriages are under such incredible attack is because of what He meant it to be."*

You see, God purposed marriage to be a prophetic sign and a wonder. If the enemy so often succeeds in making it a laughing stock instead of a prophetic signpost that points the way to something much deeper. Ephesians 5:21-33 says *"Submit to one another out of reverence for Christ. Wives, submit to your husbands as to the Lord, for the husband is the head of the wife as Christ is the head of the Church, His body of which he is the Saviour."* As the Church submits to Christ, so also wives should submit to their husband and everything. Husbands love your wives, just as Christ loved the Church and gave himself up for her to make her Holy, cleansing her by the washing of water through the words and to present her to himself as a radiant Church without stain, wrinkle or any other blemish, but Holy and blameless.

In this way, husbands ought to love their wives as their own body. He who loves his wife, loves himself. After all no one ever hated his own body, but he feeds it just as Christ does the Church, for we are members of His body. For this reason, a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife and the two will become one space. This is a profound mystery but I am talking about Christ and the Church. However, each one of you also must love his wife as he loves himself and the wife must respect her husband.

## **Mystery**

Paul says this is a great or profound mystery he is speaking about. The only other great or profound mystery is found in 1 Timothy 3:16 *"And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness: God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of Angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory."*

Whenever Scriptures speak of a mystery, there is something that can only be understood in divine revelation. How much more so a great mystery. However, these mysteries are something God wants us to understand because if we don't, the enemy will run riot in that of ignorance in our lives. So, Paul is saying, *"When I'm talking about marriage, I'm talking about Christ and the Church."* He is saying that every time you look at a Christian marriage, you should be able to say *"Aha, so that's how Jesus loves His Church and that's how we as the Church should respond to Him."*

Marriage was made by God to be His sign that shows the world how much Jesus loves His Church. And how many of us can say that we've seen even a handful of marriages in our lifetimes that have been this? Marriage is where you look at the way the husband loves his wife and you can say, *"Wow, that's*

*how Jesus loves me as part of His Church."* Or you look at the wife and able to say *"Yes, I see now. I understand now, how I as a Christian, need to submit to Jesus and love."* Because this man and this woman had painted a prophetic picture for you, you now have a greater understanding of this great mystery, that you begin to see why Satan hates marriage, and especially Christian marriages with such a passion, he will do everything within his part to pervert, make a mockery of and destroy marriages. Every time he does that, he is not just causing misery in the lives of the people concerned, he is also destroying and pulling down something that God purposed to be a prophetic signpost.

When there are problems in a marriage, you are not just dealing with difficult people, you are dealing with all the hordes of Hell trying their utmost to make a mockery of a prophetic statement that God wanted to make. Those who are in difficult marriage situations or who have areas of their marriage that are out of order, this way get to this truth. It's not just that you and your spouse cannot get along with each other, it's also because you have powerful Demonic forces working against your marriage becoming a prophetic sign and statement.

You need to start pulling down those Demonic strongholds of your relationship, not just in your spouse but strongholds in you and over your relationship that cause both of you to react and allow friction and division to rush in. Every area of marriage was purposed to be a prophetic sign. If you want to understand what idolatry does to the heart of God, then look at what sexual infidelity does to a marriage. If you want to gain a clearer understanding of what it does to God when we have other gods, or other things that elicit our love and devotion, then look at what adultery does to a marriage. It's a prophetic sign.

### **Lust**

You will often find in a marriage the same extremes as you find in the Church. Lust in marriage is the same as spiritual lust or sensuousness in the Church. The same as just binging and going overboard on grace with no boundaries. Then, at the other end of this card, you get rigidity in marriages which is the same as legalism and the religious Spirit in the Church called hard truth with no love. You often get these two forces at work in the same marriages, just as you get them at work in the Church and they are both just as destructive.

Lust in a marriage and lust sensuousness in the Church were just as destructive as fidelity in marriage and legalism in the Church. You also find rebellion in the action against God's order and authority are a problem in both marriage and in the Church, just as you also get domination, manipulation and control, both in marriage and the Church. We have got to start working up to what marriage is meant to be.

People get married so lightly without really understanding what they are doing. Few people who go into marriage realise that they are entering into something that is meant to be a blood covenant. This is why virginity is so important. God's purpose for marriage was that on the wedding night the marriage covenant will be sealed with blood. Again, this is a prophetic picture of Jesus' blood covenant with us. Yet how many marriages are that today.

### **Marriage is a Blood Covenant**

God purposed marriage to be a blood covenant and it is often believed that if you have two people entering into marriage as virgins and with an understanding of the awesomeness and sacredness of what they are doing on their wedding night, then God will honour that covenant and protect that

marriage supernaturally. If those getting married are not virgins, they at least need to have an understanding of this awesome covenant relationship they are entering into.

God cannot fully bless, anoint and rebuke the desirers in many marriages today, because they were never established on the foundation of covenant. People went through all the man-made rituals of the wedding ceremony but never entered into a true covenant with each other. If you look at the wedding ceremony today, much of what goes on has its roots in the occult. The article continues to outline why the statement is made, touching on references to luck, horseshoes, confetti and so forth. It then outlines some of the scriptural courses of action leading to the trifle and continues to state that after the trifle and I quote again *"The young Jewish bridegroom would make the following speech as he was leaving, 'In My Father's house are many room; if it were not so, I would have told you. I am going there to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come back and take you to be with Me; that you also may be where I am.'"*

Does that sound familiar to you? Our Lord Jesus spoke those same words to us in John 14:2-3, from the time that the [inaudible 00:10:53] was ratified, the young woman was consecrated [inaudible 00:10:58] set-apart to her husband. That's how we as Christians should be. She had been bought at a price and her body is no longer her own. 1 Corinthians 6:20 says, *"You are bought with a price, therefore honour God with your body."* 1 Corinthians 7:23 says, *"You are bought at a price, do not become slaves of men."* She must spend her time preparing to live as a wife and mother. Her days are waiting for her wedding spent how to please her husband. Meanwhile the young man who returned to his father's home and the chaddar went under construction.

### **After the Wedding Ceremony**

The room is provided with every comfort as they will retire here for a whole week following their wedding ceremony. We say the 7-day period in Genesis 29:22-28, Laban says finish this daughter's bridal week, then we will give you the younger one also in return for another 7 years' of work. And Jacob did say, you finish the week with Lee and then Laban gave him his daughter Rachel, to be his wife. And read Judges 14:10 to 18:2, the young man, if asked when the day of his wedding would be, replied no man knows except my father. In Israel the father had to be satisfied that every preparation had been made by his son before he gave him permission to go and get his bride.

Jesus spake these same words of his wedding day. The groom secured two close friends to a system and secured his bride during the actual ceremony. These two are known as the friends of the bridegroom. They function as the two witnesses required for a Jewish wedding. One of them was to assist the bride and to lead her to the ceremony, while the other was stationed with the groom. He performed a special task when the couple retired into the chadar after the ceremony. The article then continues to present the ceremony in some detail and entitlements into revelation. This is Chapter 19, Verse 6 to 9. Then I heard what sounded like a great multitude, like the roar, the rushing waters and like peals of thunder, shouting hallelujah, for our Lord God Almighty reigns. Let us rejoice and be glad and give Him glory for the wedding of the land has come and his bride has made herself ready. Fine linen, bright and clean was given her to wear. Fine linen stands for the right fact of the Saint. Then the Angel said to me, "Right, blessed are those who are invited to the wedding supper of the land and these are the true words of God.

If you begin to understand the enormity of what we are touching on here, you need to start looking at marriage through new eyes. Even as the first trump or shofar announced the betrothal, so the last trump and now it's the wedding. Today, when the shofar is blown in churches, we are reminded that

we have the trust and there is a wedding feast to come. In solemn 45, we are brought to the Biblical portrayal of not only the wedding of the Messiah but also his Coronation. The guests are assembled, and gifts are distributed. Isaiah 61:10 to 62:05 shows the glory of the bride and groom [inaudible 00:14:09] all their wedding finery. *"For he has clothed me with garments of salvation and arrayed me in a robe of his righteousness, as a bridegroom adorns his head like a priest, and as a bride adorns herself with her jewels."* The nations will see your righteousness and all Kings your glory. You shall be called by a new name which the mouth of the Lord shall designate. You will be a crown of splendour in the Lord's hand, a royal diadem in the hand of God. No longer will they call you Deserted, or name your land Desolate. But you will be called Hephzibah, and your land Beulah; for the LORD will take to lighten you and your land will be married. As a young man marries a maiden, so will your sons marry you; and just as a bridegroom rejoices over his bride, so will your God rejoice over you. [inaudible 00:14:57].

Before the wedding, the groom requires three days to prepare. We know that one day is 1000 days to the Lord, and just as with breaking out the three days of the death and resurrection of Jesus. We know that the Jewish method of measuring days is different to ours. So we are on the brink of the third millennium, the third day. The third is almost upon us. Our bridegroom has been preparing himself for three days. He is fully prepared and fully expecting longing to be with his bride. The marriage [inaudible 00:15:29] could be any day now. No one knows the exact day, except the father. The third day is upon us and the bridegroom is fully prepared, but are we?

God wants to release us out of much and into much when it comes to our understanding of marriage. He wants to pull down and smash man-made myths and perceptions of marriage. He wants us to throw out all the [inaudible 00:15:52] and bold and beautiful junk and begin to come into a biblical understanding of what marriage is all about. He wants to pull down Demonic strongholds over existing and past and future marriages, strongholds of lust and frigidity, strongholds that have been established because the enemy has done everything in his power to make a mockery of God's prophetic purposes.

Some of you are sitting in marriages for things over you. Some of you are divorced and are still bound by hurts [inaudible 00:16:19], others are sitting on the things that keep you from being released into marriage because of fear and Demonic preparation. There are some to him God would say, I have kept you from marriage, you fought and kicked and got angry because you never got married but it's been my grace that has kept you and protected you from entering into something that would just be a pale weak, wishy-washy counterfeit what I have really purposed for you. And as those strongholds come down, you will begin to find marriages restored and unsafe, and partners coming to the Lord. Good marriage will become even better as they are elevated into the realm of becoming prophetic statements, becoming a sign and a wonder that people will look at and say, *"So that's how Jesus loves His betroth."* So that's how we as the Church should submit and respond to Jesus.

The article closes with the following prayer, *"Father in Jesus' name, forgive me for taking marriage so lightly. Forgive me for my perverted and wrong understandings of what marriage is meant to be. And father, as You forgive me, pray that You will deliver me from every stronghold that is over my life in the area of marriage. Strongholds that have come down through the generations as well as strongholds [inaudible 00:17:30] to become established through my own fears and sin. Lord, I ask You to give me a revelation in my heart of Your purpose, for marriage so that my marriage or future marriage would become the prophetic sign and wonder to the world that You purpose it to be. I ask You do this in the precious and powerful name of Jesus through the power of your Holy Spirit."*



That is the end of the extract from the article 'Wow, so that's how Jesus loves me.' And it provides a powerful foundation for the teachings in the weeks ahead. In this series of teachings which are based on the book of the same name, 'The scriptural definition of marriage,' I will present, God-willing, a wealth of Scripture which will show you how the Body of Christ can overcome marital strife and separation, putting away, commonly referred to as divorce, and learn to live together in unity in a manner which will give power to the gospel, such as we cannot currently imagine.

In order to do this, it is necessary that we understand what scripture really says about marriage, divorce, putting away, adultery and other matters which impact this objective. This teaching seeks to present scriptural topics in the framework intended to assist you to evaluate and decide for yourself the extent to which that contained in this teaching, indeed lays the foundation for this objective. Do you desire at the time of your judgement not to find yourself to be a Pharisee and to have been opposing God? Acts 5:34-40, in the process of listening to these teachings, you will discover false teachings which are literally responsible for the eternal damnation of millions, if not billions of souls. You will have the opportunity for the Holy Spirit and not truths which are of immense importance to the end-time church and to the age which is to come.

## **Divorce**

You will also have many opportunities to be offended, but I urge you not to stumble on the rock of offence which is Christ, for the truth [inaudible 00:19:36], 1 Peter 2:8. In early 1995, I became greatly concerned about the high level of what is generally referred to as divorce and the Church and the Lord Jesus Christ. I was particularly troubled by the number of hurting and abandoned women and I started to seek God for another reason. Since then He has been exercising my faith and my understanding with regard to what is contained in His word on the subject of marriage and related subjects. He has also shown me that most of what we today refer to as divorce, is in fact, according to Scripture putting away separation from a spouse for unscriptural reasons. He has also shown me that the principle factor behind the high level of putting away in the Church and the world is a series of wrong beliefs which affect many areas of Church teaching.

We are one body in Christ. As a starting point consider the 2 Corinthians 11:2 states, "I am jealous for you, with a Godly jealousy. For I betrothed you to one husband, but I might present you as a chaste virgin to Christ." Who is the 'you' referred to here? Surely it is all those who have accepted Jesus Christ as Lord. Romans 12:4-5 states, *"For as we have many members in one body, but all members do have not the same function. So, we, being many, are one body in Christ, and individually members of one another."*

Marriage is a type of our relationship with Jesus. Consider also Ephesians 5:25-33 as read earlier, in particular verse 33, *"This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church."* As we saw in the extract from 'Wow, that's how Jesus loves me' these verses together clearly establish a very close and intimate relationship between marriage, between men and women, and the marriage between Jesus Christ and His Church. Surely while his bride is so [inaudible 00:21:40] with putting away divorce and we do not even know how to live together in harmony as man and wife, we can never approach being a bride without spot or wrinkle or any such thing Holy and without blemish.

When the world sees true Christian unity, they will believe that the Father sent Jesus. John 17:20-22 states, *"I do not pray for these alone but also for those who will believe in me through their word that they all maybe one as You Father are in me and I knew that they also may be one in us that the world may believe that You sent me. And the glory which You gave me I have given them that they may be*

*one just as we are one.*" Does this not clearly state that the world will believe that Jesus Christ was sent by God, the Father, when we all are one? Does this not indicate that unity in the Church is a prerequisite to preaching the Gospel with view of power and effect?

### **Forbidding Marriage**

We are warned of doctrines of Demons forbidding to marry. 1 Timothy 4:1-2 further states, *"Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of Demons, speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron, forbidding to marry."* Given that there appeared to be reasonable grant to belief that we are indeed in the latter times, and that also ask ourselves what the relevance is of doctrines of Demons forbidding to marry and whether it has any relevance to the level of putting away divorce in the Church. I have no doubt that it does, and in these teachings, we will present Scriptures and support of this argument. These conclusions are presented only after many hours of prayer and Holy Spirit guided research and much persecution and personal loss, which have brought me to a point of sincere and utter conviction for what is presented in the teachings that follow. It's an accurate reflection of the Word and will of God on this matter and is based on our understanding today.

### **Preparing for Judgement**

I fully appreciate that most listeners will find this teaching extremely challenging and many may well be offended and rejected. For this reason, I will endeavour to make maximum use of Scripture and minimum use of my own interpretation. We must each prepare to be judged. Each of us will be judged according to the revelation knowledge of the Word of God that was available to us and what we did with it. James 3:1 states, *"Not many of you should become teachers, knowing that we shall receive restricted judgement."* Accordingly, I urge you not to discard what is written here but to carefully take note and seek the guidance of the Holy Spirit. Should you require further information, please do not hesitate to contact me.

Why should you consider this interpretation? You may ask why you should listen to these teachings and why you should analyse the interpretation presented herein. If this interpretation is correct, then those who were teaching in other doctrine are causing many to sin and many others to be turned away from Jesus Christ. If this is so, then surely they can expect to find much blood on their hands when they stand before the judgement seat of Christ.

Romans 14:10 states that why do you judge your brother, or why do you show content for your brother for we shall all stand before the judgement seat of Christ. It's my earnest desire not to find myself in such position and I am certain that most listeners will have the same desire.

### **Keeping His Commandments**

Many believers are currently taken prisoner by the enemy. The book, *'The Final Quest'* by Rick Joyner, which reports a series of visions in which the author was taken up into the Heaven, clearly shows that many in the body of Christ are currently the prisoners of the enemy. This is graphically confirmed in a further vision reported by Joyner in his sequel, *'The call.'* If we love God, we will keep His Commandments. 1 John 2: 1-5 states, *"My little children, these things I write to you so that you may not sin and if anyone sins, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous, and He Himself is the propitiation for our sins and not for ours only, but also for the whole world."*

Now by this we know that we know Him. If we keep His Commandments, he who says I know Him and does not keep His Commandments is a liar and the truth is not in him. But whoever keeps his word, truly the love of God is perfected in him, and by this we know that we are in Him. 1 John 5:3 states, *"For this is the love of God, that we keep His Commandments. And His Commandments are not burdensome."* Can there be any doubt that if we love God, we will seek to keep His Commandments and that if we do not keep His Commandments, we are not in Him.

God is uncompromisingly righteous and we may not add to or take anything away from them. Deuteronomy 4:2 states, *"You shall not add to the Word which I command you, nor take anything from it, that you may keep the Commandments of the LORD your God which I command you."* Deuteronomy 4:7-8 states, *"For what great nation is there that has a god so near to it as the LORD our God is to us, for whatever reason we may call upon Him? And what great nation is there that has such statutes and righteous judgements as are all in this law which I set before you this day."* Surely if God's statutes and judgements are righteous we would not want to add to or take away from them, surely he knows far better than we do how things were created to be.

### **The Holy Spirit is a Teacher**

If you truly agree with this, I urge you to listen on, no matter how difficult you may find some of the sections that follow. The Holy Spirit is the teacher. Consider also 2 Peter 1:20-21 *"Knowing this first that no property of Scripture is of any private interpretation. For prophecy never came by the will of man but Holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit."* Clearly no Scripture is open to private interpretation by men no matter how many men may agree. It is only the interpretation of Scripture which is God's interpretation which carries any weight. Furthermore, in Matthew 23:8-13 Jesus himself states, *"But you do not be called 'Rabbi' for one is your teacher, the Christ and your all brethren. Do not call anyone on Earth your father, for one is your Father, He who is in Heaven and do not be called teachers for one is your teacher, the Christ that he who is greatest among you shall be your servant and whoever exalts himself will be humbled and he who humbles himself, will be exalted but word to you scribes and Pharisees hypocrites for you shut up the kingdom of Heaven against men for then you go in yourselves nor do you allow those who are entering to go in."* It is quite clear that no man on Earth is to be given a title which suggests that he is a teacher. The teacher is the Spirit of truth.

1 John 14:15-17 Jesus states, *"If you love Me, keep My Commandments and I will pray to the Father and he will give you another helper that he may abide with you forever."* The Spirit of truth in the world cannot receive because it neither sees him nor knows him, but you know him for he dwells with you and will be in you. Verse 25-26, *"These things I have spoken to you while being present with you, but the help of the Holy Spirit and the Father will send him in My name he will teach you all things that bring to our remembrance, all things that I said to you."* Jesus refers here to the Spirit of truth and also to the Holy Spirit as being a helper whom He will send to those who love him and states that this helper will teach you all things.

Clearly, we are not to rely on men to interpret Scripture. They may share with us with what they believe God has shown them, but we are each accountable for determining whether that interpretation is of God or not. Remember the Mosaic covenant, the old covenant provided for Priests, Levites, and judges to interpret the law, they were anointed with the Spirit of God. This is demonstrated in Number 11:24 and 25, *"So Moses went out and told the people the words of the Lord and he gathered the seventy men of the elders with the people and faced them around the tabernacle. Then the Lord came down in the cloud and spoke to him and took some of the Spirit that was upon him"*

*and placed the same upon the seventy elders and it happened when the Spirit rested on them, that they prophesied, although they never did so again."*

Verse 29, *"And Moses said to him that was Joshua, are you jealous for my sake? I owe that all the Lord's people were prophets and the Lord will put his Spirit upon them."* With the coming of the new covenant which was to be taken to the Gentiles it would no longer be practical to retain the temple service and the Priest. Accordingly, God unfolded the next step of this plan of redemption and gave his Holy Spirit to dwell in every born-again believer in order to teach them. Since we have been privileged to receive greater and more previous gifts, under the old covenant, we must be that much more diligent to ensure that we rely on the Holy Spirit to interpret the Word of God for us.

The fate of false witnesses and lies, Proverbs 30:5-6 states, *"Every word of God is pure; He is a shield to those who put their trust in Him. Do not add to His words lest He rebukes you and you be found a liar."* Proverbs 21:28 in the New International Version states, *"A false witness will perish and whoever listens to him will be destroyed forever."* Revelation 21:8 states, *"But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death."*

There are various other scriptures which indicate that the preaching or teaching of false doctrine or liars will lead to a harsh judgment against those who utter such teachings, as well as those who accept such teachings. Accordingly they would seem to be good grounds to test all teachings carefully before we accept them. Adultery sends people to hell. Consider also Proverbs 7:27 referring to adultery states *"Her house is the way to hell, descending to the chambers of death."* Surely if adultery can send a person to hell, we should be careful what this scriptural definition of adultery actually is. We should also be diligent not to define something as adultery, when it is not, or to define something as not being adultery, when it is.

As you listen to the teachings that follow, you will find a number of instances where current Church doctrine is doing both of these things. I urge all listeners to take careful account to what is taught here in the light of these Scriptures. The shame of the Church and empty thrones prepare you for judgment.

### **The Final Quest**

In the book, *'The Final Quest,'* Joyner reports a number of incidents during his experience in the judgement Hall of Heaven, which have profoundly influenced the thinking of every Christian who reads that book. The three passages that follow seem to be of cardinal importance. The Church is without judges and therefore covered with shame. In pages 128 to 129, the Lord Jesus is reported as saying, *"There is a freedom that comes when you perceive truth. But whoever I set as free indeed, the freedom of My presence is greater than main truth. You have experienced liberation in My presence, but there is yet much more for you to understand about My judgements. When I judge, I am not seeking to condemn or to justify but to bring forth righteousness. Righteousness is only found in union with Me. That is the righteous judgement bringing men into unity with Me. My Church is now closed with shame because you do not have judges. He does not have judges because he does not know Me as the judge. I will now raise up judges for My people who know My judgement. I will not just decide between people or issues, but to make things right which is to bring them into agreement with Me. When I appeared to Joshua, the captain of the host, I declared that I was for neither him, nor his enemies. I never come to take sides and [inaudible 00:34:51] is to take over, not to take sides. I appeared as the captain of the host before Israel could enter his promised land. The church is now*

about to enter her promised land and I am again about to appear as the captain of the host. When I do, I will remove all who have been forcing my people to take sides against their brothers.

My justice does not take sides in human conflicts, even those who are my own people. What I was doing through Israel I was doing for the enemies too, not against them. It is only because you see from the earthly temporal perspective that you do not see My justice. You may see My justice to walk in My authority because righteousness and justice are the foundation of My Throne. I have imputed righteousness to the people I have chosen, but like Israel in the wilderness even the greatest saints of the Church age have only aligned themselves with My ways a small part of the time or with a small part of their minds and hearts. I am not for them or against the enemies, but I am coming to use My people to save the enemies. I love all men and desire for all to be saved.

I could not help thinking of the great battle that we had fought on the mountain. We did win many of our own brethren as we fought against the evil controlling them. There was still many of them in the camp of the enemy, either being used by him or kept as his prisoners. I started to wonder that the next battle would be against our own brothers again. But Lord was watching me ponder all of this and he continued, "Until the last battle is over, they will always be some of our brothers who are being used by the enemy, but that is not why I am telling you this now. I am telling you this to help you see how the enemy gets into your own heart and mind and how he uses you even now you still do not see everything the way that I do. This is common with My people. At this time, even My greatest leaders are seldom in harmony with Me. Many are doing good works but very few are doing what I have called them to do. This is the result of divisions among you. I am not coming to take sides with any one group, but I am calling for those who have come over to My side."

This extract clearly indicates that there are currently few, or any Christians who are really in the Will of God. It also clearly indicates that the Church is not walking in justice and integrity until we become acutely aware of the coming judgement and measure ourselves, against what the Word of God tells us, and awaits us on the Day of Judgement. Few will be concerned about the possibility that their doctrine is false. As you listen to these teachings, I urge you to become judgement-minded. It is likely that you will find much in these teachings to offend you. However, I truly believe that most of what is presented herein is an accurate reflection of the Word of God and the Will of God. Accordingly, I urge you to examine yourself closely in the mirror of the Word any time you are offended by what is contained in these teachings.

The ministry and the message of the modern Church is hardly recognised by the early apostles. On the pages 135 to 136 of the 'Final Quest,' Joyner reports in an interview with the apostle Paul, then he continued, "There are two more things that we attain in our time that will be lost very quickly by the Church and they have not yet been recovered. You must recover them." "What are they?" I inquired, feeling that what he was about to say was more than just an addendum to what he had already said. "You must recover the ministry and the message," he said emphatically. I looked at the Lord, and He nodded His affirmation, adding, "It is right that Paul should say this to you. Until this time he has been the most faithful with both of these." "Please explain," I implored Paul. "All right," he replied. "Except for a few small places in the world where there are great persecutions or difficulties now, we can hardly recognise either the ministry or the message that is being preached today. Therefore, the church is now but a phantom of what it was even in our time, and we were far from all we were called to be. When we served, being in ministry was the greatest sacrifice that one could make, and this reflected the message of the greatest sacrifice that was made—the cross.

## The Cross

The cross is the power of God, and it is the centre of all we are called to live by. You have so little power to transform the minds and hearts of the disciples now because you do not live, and do not preach, the cross. Therefore, we have difficulty seeing much difference between the disciples and the heathen. That is not the Gospel or the salvation with which we were entrusted. You must return to the cross." With those words, he squeezed my shoulders like a father, and then returned to his seat. I felt like I had received both an incredible blessing and a profound rebuke.

In this extract we clearly see that the ministry and the message of the Church have far moved from those of the early Church. While I do not mean to suggest that the message of this teaching is central to bringing the Church back to where she belongs, I believe that it is a critical component of what must be addressed before the Church can serve God as He has called them to serve. From personal experience I must also warn you that spreading the truth contained in this book are likely to bring intense persecution. In the light of the above passage I would encourage you to recognise that the very occurrence of persecution, with regards to these truths, serves to indicate how important they are and therefore how much energy Satan has expended and continues to expend to prevent publication and teaching of these truths.

Many Thrones in Heaven are currently empty. They could have been filled by any generation having progressed through the judgement experience, and yet many people whom He had understood to be prominent men of God, yet who are in the lowest rank in Heaven. Joyner finds himself standing before the Lord Jesus Christ. The Lord then looked at the galleries and said, "Those empty seats could have been filled in any generation. I gave the invitation to sit here to anyone who has called upon My name. They are still available. Now the last battle has come. Many who are last, shall be first. These seats will be filled before the battle is over. Those who will sit here will be known by two things. They will wear the mantle of humility and they will have My likeness. You now have the mantle if you can keep that and do not lose that in the battle. When you return you will also have My likeness, then you will be worthy to sit with these because I would have made you worthy. All authority and power have been given to Me and I alone can wield it. You will prevail, and you will be trusted with My authority only when you have come to fully abide in Me. Now, turn and look at my household."

I turned and looked back in the direction I had come from. From before His throne I could see the entire room. The spectacle was beyond any comparison in its glory. Millions fill the ranks. Each individual in the lowest rank was more awesome than an army and had more power. It was far beyond my capacity to absorb such a panorama of glory. Even so, I could see that only a very small portion of the great room was occupied. I looked back at the Lord and was astonished to see tears in His eyes. He had wiped the tears away from every eye here, except His own. Then a tear ran down His cheek. He caught it in His hand and then He offered to me. "This is My cup. Will you drink it with Me?" There was no way that I could refuse Him. As the Lord continued to look at me I began to feel His great love. Even as foul as I was He still loved me. As undeserving as I was, He wanted me to be close to Him.

Then He said: "I love all of these with the love that you cannot now understand. I also love all who are supposed to be here but did not come. I have left the ninety nine to go after the one who was lost. My shepherds would not leave the one to go after the ninety nine who are still lost. I came to save the lost. Will you share My heart to go to save the lost? Will you help to fill this room? Will you help to fill these Thrones, and every other seat in this hall? Will you take up this quest to bring joy to Heaven, to Me and to My Father? This judgment is for My own household, and My own house is not full. The last

battle will not be over until My house is full. Only then will it be time for us to redeem the earth and remove the evil from My creation. If you drink My cup you will love the lost the way that I loved them."

From this passage, it is clear that the Thrones in Heaven are largely unoccupied and even the Throne room in Heaven is largely empty. In other words, billions of souls who might have spent Eternity in Heaven with Christ, are burning in hell for Eternity. I truly believe that the heresies and false teachings exposed in these teachings account for a large percentage of the souls who are not in Heaven today. Accordingly, I urge you, if you desire to have a Lord's heart for the lost, earnestly examine what is taught here and challenge yourself to take the truth and broadcast it to the world. I have no doubt that God requires this of everyone who hears this teaching.

At the same time, many are heaping up wrath for themselves in the Day of Judgement by teaching these heresies, despite having more access to the written Word of God than any generation that has ever lived. I implore you, as you listen further consider well what is taught in this series, and prayerfully consider what you should do before you respond to whatever offence Satan may bring your way.

There are many more women in higher office in Heaven than men. In the last paragraph on page 117 of *'The Final Quest'* referring to the High Thrones in Heaven, Joyner states, "However, it seemed that faithful, praying women and mothers occupied more thrones than any other single group." In the first paragraph on page 23 referring to those in the forefront of the battle against the enemy, Joyner states "To my further surprise, the great majority of these soldiers were women and children." This confirms the point that has developed in the subsequent teaching regarding Isaiah 4:1 "There are many more women than men in the Body of Christ today, and this is God's intention. It is time that the Church comes to understand how this impacts apparent imbalance is to be accommodated in marriage in a manner that is in accordance with the Word of God and the Will of God." This book seeks to develop the understanding of what this entails.

A word of clarification: Nothing in this teaching is intended to understate the deliverance purchased for mankind through Jesus sacrifice at Calvary. Sadly, the knowledge of the Word of God in the modern Church, as we have seen in the extracts from *'The Final Quest'* is not nearly what it should be. Accordingly, my experience is seeking to share the truths in this teaching with other believers. When you think that in some way this teaching is seeking to dilute what Jesus did at Calvary, I would like to make it quite clear that this is not the case. The knowledge of the Church is diverged so far from the truth of Scripture that are paradigm results in things which are entirely scriptural [inaudible 00:46:55] and things which are entirely unscriptural being regarded as scriptural. As you listen to this teaching, you will find numerous instances of this phenomenon. As you encounter such instances, I urge you not to be offended, but rather to examine your personal knowledge and experience when closely examined in the light of what is written here in fact, corroborate what is written, and likewise the extent to which you have over the years compromised your understanding in deference to the doctrines of men whom you thought were more knowledgeable than you.

Let me sum up. Jesus Christ is the Son of God, incarnate through the Virgin Mary. He was crucified at Calvary. He died and was buried. On the third day He rose again and sits on the right hand of the Father in Heaven. He appeared physically to his disciples, repeatedly over a period of 40 days after His resurrection. He will judge the living and the dead. He will return together as Church to Him and to rule the world. Through His sacrifice on the cross, He purchased for us salvation and eternal life for those who believe in their hearts and confess with their mouth that Jesus Christ is Lord, healing for our bodies, deliverance from the works of Satan and his Demons on Earth. Jesus Christ is King of Kings

and Lord of Lords. He is the Alpha and the Omega. He is the Word of God. There is no other name given by which men can be saved.

Jesus Christ made a great and terrible sacrifice on the cross for our redemption. He went to the cross not to purchase licentiousness and laxity but to purchase the spiritual wherewithal for us to become Priests to God and to serve Him faithfully and to become sons and servants of God. He expects us to lay down our lives and take up the cross and follow him daily. This teaching is about some of the requirements for doing this in order to prepare His Church for His return. If you love Him and reverently fear Him, you will not turn to the left or the right from discerning the truths contained in this teaching and you will put them into practice in your life and preach them from the mountaintops.

The word of encouragement for those who may be convicted of sin by the teachings that follow: There are many teachings that follow that will convict many listeners of sin in their lives. If you are convicted of sin, remember above all things, 1 John 1:7-10, *"But if we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ, His Son cleanses us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. But if we say we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us."* Above all things as you become aware of your sin, give no heed to any lies that Satan may tell you. Turn your eyes upon Jesus, look forward in His wonderful face, confess your sins, repent of your sins, ask for and receive His forgiveness purchased for you at Calvary and receive your deliverance.

If you do not have a personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ or are not born-again, please contact me or your nearest Church for assistance. If you are uncertain how to receive salvation, to reconnect your life to the Lord, to receive forgiveness for your sins, to receive deliverance from certain consequences of sexual sin, please contact me on telephone, South Africa, 0027117912327 or 0027832516644, or email me on [James@EndTimeIssueMinistries.org.za](mailto:James@EndTimeIssueMinistries.org.za). Above all, do not let the knowledge of any sin, no matter how desperate the revelation which may follow from listening to these teachings get you down. The more sin you repent of in this life, the more pleasing your life will be to your precious Saviour and His Father and the less judgement you will face in the life to come.

See all revelation of sin in your life as a wonderful opportunity to please Him. After all, He died on the cross to take your sins. Do not slight Him by refusing to give it to Him. He is waiting with open arms to receive your burdens. Right now, His word to you is in Matthew 11:28-30 *"Come to me, all you who labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you, and learn from Me, for I am gentle and lowly in heart, and you will find rest for your souls. For My yoke is easy, and My burden is light."*

Remember also that Jesus said in John 10:10 *"The thief does not come, except to steal and to kill and to destroy. I have come that they may have life and they have it more abundantly."* Above all things, the message in this series is about abundant living for those who have been oppressed by heretical doctrines and deliverance from bondage to the sin resulting from these heresies. I encourage you to listen expectantly and see what the Lord will do.

In summary, some of the key points in this teaching: The Church has lost all recognition of the importance of virginity. Deuteronomy 22:20-21 states *"But if the thing is true, and evidences of virginity are not found for the young woman, then they shall bring out the young woman to the door of her father's house, and the men of her city shall stone her to death with stones, because she has done a disgraceful thing in Israel to play the harlot in her father's house. So you shall put away the evil*



*from among you.*" This passage of Scripture clearly identifies that a woman must be a virgin when she gets married. If she is not, she is a harlot. The Church incorrectly defines adultery and causes millions to fall. 1 Corinthians 6:9 states *"Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the kingdom of God? Do not be deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites."* An adulterer is anyone who has had sex with a woman whose virginity has been taken by another man and who is not a widow or scripturally divorced.

There are far more women than men in the Church. God intended them to have believing husbands. Isaiah 4:1 referring to the Church in these days' states, and in that day, seven women shall take hold of one man saying, *"We will eat our own food and wear our own apparel, only let us be called by your name; take away our reproach."* In other words, there will be seven times more women than men in the Church. This is being fulfilled before our eyes in many congregations. Hundreds of thousands of Christian women are desperately seeking material Christian husbands who are unmarried and are not finding them. The lives of hundreds of thousands, if not millions of Christian women are made a misery because they cannot find a godly husband. Many fall into sin or backslide.

There are many other topics which will be addressed that follow in the weeks ahead. But God has a much better plan. God's vision for marriage in these last days is a pattern and a type of the wonderful lives those who overcome to the end will live with Christ for Eternity, a life filled with love, peace and joy, a life in which men and women are truly fulfilled as the men and women that God has called them to be. A life in which the world will see Christ and whole families and come flocking to the light. Life in which every Christian family will be a spiritual powerhouse, able to do greater works than Jesus did as stated in John 14:12, "Most surely, I say to you, he who believes in Me, and the works that I do, greater works than these he will do, because I go to My Father." Please listen to the teachings that follow and see what treasure is contained for you today in the Word of God. I do not have all the answers, but the Holy Spirit does, and if we trust Him and walk by faith, He will lead those who desire into all truth on these issues. God bless you. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you. I hope that by the Grace of God, you will be able to listen to the teachings that follow in the weeks ahead, amen.

## **03 02 How Scripture Defines the Marriage Covenant**

Good day. Father, we just come to You in the name of Jesus. We ask that You speak through me by Your Spirit today that You make me a yielded vessel. Father, I ask that whatever I utter today will be pleasing to You, yes, with Your heart. I ask You Father that if I say anything that is not of You that You will blow it away and that it will find no root in the people who hear this message. And I ask You Lord that whatever is a view that will implant in the hearts, that it will find root and bear much fruit to the glory of Your name. In Jesus name, amen.

### **Scriptural definition of Marriage**

Today, I am going to continue with the teaching that I began last week on the scriptural definition of marriage. Last week we talked about the foundation principles. We talked about marriage being a prophetic statement. We read in some detail from the article *'Wow, so that's how much Jesus loves me'* and we established the foundation that in order to understand the things of God and the covenant of God we need to understand that marriage and the marriage covenant and because of the prophetic parallel between the marriage between Jesus Christ and his church and the marriage between men

and woman, Satan had expended enormous energy in destroying marriage and bringing it about the levels of divorce and fornication that prevail in the world today.

The series of teachings is directed at establishing a very solid scriptural foundation. It is directed at getting down to the absolute nuts and bolts of what Scripture tells us about marriage, in order for us to learn to walk in the fullness of marriage, and in the process of learning to walk in the fullness of marriage, that we may come to the place where we understand the fullness of our relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ, with God the Father, and the Holy Spirit. So, I would ask you to listen intently, to follow your Bibles, and to see exactly what the Word of God is showing us concerning marriage.

This series will go on for some time and in subsequent teachings, I will address issues of what exactly is adultery, what does the Word of God really say about divorce or one flesh bond, and a variety of other topics, as the Lord leads to build a complete picture which will enable you to walk in the fullness of the marriage that God has appointed for you. I pray that you will just receive what the Holy Spirit has for you today in Jesus name.

So, let us go now and access exactly what the scriptural definition of marriage and the marriage covenant is. As a starting point, let us just look at one aspect of how Jesus identified marriage when He walked the Earth. Let us consider the report of the Sadducees question to Jesus concerning the woman who was married to each seven brothers in sequence, as presented in Matthew 22:23-33. I'm going to start reading Matthew verse 23. "That same day the Sadducees, who say there is no resurrection, came to Him (Jesus) and asked Him saying 'Teacher, Moses said that if a man dies having no children, his brother must marry his wife and raise up offspring for his brother. Now, there were with us seven brothers. The first died off after he had married, and having no offspring, left his wife to his brother. Likewise, the second, also the third even to the seventh. Last of all, the woman died also, therefore in the resurrection, whose wife of the seven she be for they all had her?'" Jesus answered and said to them, *"You are mistaken not knowing the Scriptures, nor the power of God. For in the resurrection they neither marry nor given in marriage but are like Angels of God in Heaven. Concerning the resurrection of the dead have you not read what was spoken to you by God saying, 'I'm the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac and the God of Jacob.' God is not the God of the dead, but of the living."* And when the multitudes heard this, they were astonished at His teaching.

The same incident is reported in the Book of Mark, chapter 12, verses 18 to 27. Just to read verse 25 where Jesus says, *"For when they rise from the dead, they neither marry nor are given in marriage that are like Angels in Heaven."* The same incident is again reported in the Book of Luke, chapter 20, verse 27 to 40. This is 34 and 35, *"Jesus answered and said to them, the sons of this age marry and are given in marriage, but those who are counted worthy to obtain that age and there is a resurrection from the dead, neither marry nor are given in marriage."*

### **Gospel Marriages**

We thus have three Gospels confirming that marriage does not occur in Heaven. This is a very powerful confirmation of this principle through three witnesses. But what exactly does this mean? Let us now consider the story of the beggar and the rich man, which is presented in the Book of Luke, chapter 16, verses 19 to 31. Jesus is speaking, and he says, "There was a certain rich man who was clothed in purple and fine linen and fed sumptuously every day. But there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, full of sores, who was laid at his gate, desiring to be fed with crumbs which fell from the rich man's table. Moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores. So, it was that the beggar died and was carried by the Angels to Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died and was buried. Being tormented in Hades,

he lifted up his eyes and saw Abraham far off and Lazarus in his bosom. Then he cried and said Father Abraham, have mercy on me and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue for I am tormented in this flame.

But Abraham said, *"Son, remember that in your lifetime you received your good things, and likewise Lazarus, evil things. But now he is comforted, and you are tormented. And besides all of this between us and you there is a great [inaudible 00:06:30] so that those who want to pass from here to you cannot, nor can those from there pass to us."* Then he said, *"I beg you therefore Father that You send him to my father's house for I have five brothers that he may testify to them that they also come to this place of torment."*

Abraham said to him "They have Moses and the prophets let them hear them." And he said, *"No father Abraham, but if one goes to them from the dead, they will repent, but he said to him if they do not hear Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded though one rise from the dead."* So, we see a complete dialogue between the deceased rich man and Abraham with Lazarus, the deceased beggar present. It's absolutely apparent that the rich man could recognise Lazarus and that a dialogue was possible. So clearly in Heaven people recognised those they knew in this life. In fact, it's even possible for people in Hell to recognise and speak to people in Heaven.

### **The Final Quest**

Clearly, since the knowledge of the person continues, the relationship continues, and this was confirmed in great detail in the visions reported in the book 'The Final Quest' by Rick Joyner and I quote from page 103, the second last paragraph. This vision reports a progression in the judgement realm in Heaven, in which Joyner has scored up into Heaven and speaks to a number of people in Heaven. He has just completed a discussion with a man who he describes as a great reformer and that man's wife and established that things were not as they seem to be on the Earth. He is now speaking to the wife and he writes as follows. "Wanting to simply prolong our conversation, I asked the next question that came to my mind. Is it difficult for you and your husband to be here together? She replies "Not at all. All of the relationships that you have on Earth are continued here and they are all purified by the judgement and by the fact that they are now spiritual, just as we are now in our spirit. The more that you are forgiven, the more you love. After we forgave each other, we loved each other more. Now a relationship is continuing in much greater depth and richness because we are joined as the salvation. As deep as the winds went that we afflicted upon each other, the love was able to go when we were healed. We could have experienced this on Earth, but we did not learn forgiveness in time. If we had learnt forgiveness, the competition that entered our relationship and side-tracked our life would not have been able to take root in us. If you truly love you will be truly forgiven. The harder it is for you to forgive, the further you are from true love. Forgiveness is essential where you will stumble, and in many ways will stray from the course chosen for you."

So here we see very clearly that the woman concerned remained in a relationship with her husband in Heaven. They continue to know all that is applied to their relationship while they were on the Earth, and their relationship became much deeper and much more profound, while they were in Heaven. As a side comment, it's important to note that they say that we can experience all that they were experiencing in Heaven on Earth. And from that we see again, a powerful confirmation that God's intention for marriage is an incredibly sublime relationship which is beyond anything that anybody on this Earth can imagine right now. It's really with this in mind that this series of teaching is seeking to lay a foundation which is directed at establishing marriage as an incredibly powerful and incredibly profound prophetic statement of God's love for the Church.

## Lazarus

Let's go back to the instance of Lazarus. We see, confirmed by Joyner's vision, that Jesus was not saying that the seven brothers would not recognise the woman who had been wife to each of them when they got to Heaven, which is a possible interpretation. So clearly those seven brothers would all recognise that woman and from the passage that we have just read, each of them would remember the relationship that they had with her. That relationship would become deeper and every aspect of their relationship with her would become deeper. Yet Jesus says that they will not marry or be given in marriage in Heaven. So, what do we see? We see the only thing that is different, the thing that is profoundly lacking in Heaven is that there is no sexual intercourse between the men and the woman. And clearly sexual intercourse is something that is given in this life, given in this age and it is marriage.

So, Jesus is saying in that passage that there is no sexual intercourse, and there is no marriage in Heaven. But every other aspect of the relationship continues in Heaven and from that we need to draw a conclusion which strongly suggests that the fundamental component of what makes a marriage is in fact sexual intercourse between husband and wife. So, let's go into other Scriptures and seek to establish whether this is in fact the case. [inaudible 00:12:08] to Deuteronomy chapter 22, verses 13 to 21. I'm going to address the question of virginity and what is marriage. Let's read from Deuteronomy 22:13. I am reading from the New King James version, *"If any man takes a wife and goes into her and detests her and charges her with shameful conduct and brings a bad name on her and says 'I took this woman, and when I came to her, I found she was not a virgin,' then the father and mother of the young woman shall take and bring out the evidence of the young woman's virginity to the elders of the city of the gate, and the young woman's father shall say to the elders 'I gave my daughter to this man as wife and he detests her. Now he has charged her with shameful conduct saying, I found your daughter was not a virgin. And yet these are the evidences of my daughter's virginity. And they shall spread the cloth before the elders of the city. Then the elders of that city shall take that man and punish him, and they shall fine him 100 shekels of silver and give them to the father of the young woman, because he has brought a bad name on a virgin of Israel, and she shall be his wife and he cannot divorce her all these days. But if the thing is true and evidences of virginity are not found for the young woman, then they shall bring out the young woman to the door of her father's house and the men of his city shall stone her to death with stones, because she has done a disgraceful thing in Israel to play the harlot in her father's house. So, you shall put away the evil from the [inaudible 00:13:45]."*

## Adultery

Deuteronomy 22:14 states, *"And give occasion of speech against her, charging her with adultery and bring an evil name upon her and say I took this woman, and when I lay with her, I found her not a virgin."* This translation clearly equates the lack of virginity with evidence of adultery. Deuteronomy 22:14 in the New International Version states, *"And slanders her and gives her a bad name saying, I married this woman, but when I approached her, I did not find proof of her virginity."* This translation more clearly indicates that the man approached the young woman to consummate the marriage, but presumably on inspection found her not to be a virgin. Deuteronomy 22:19 in the King James version states, *"And they shall immerse him in hundred shekels of silver and give them onto the father of the damsel because he had brought up an evil name upon a virgin of Israel and she shall be his wife. He may not put her away all his days."*

Consider Deuteronomy 22:28-29, in the King James version, *"If a man finds a damsel that is a virgin, which is not the trust, and lays hold on her and lays with her and they be found, then the man that lays with her shall give unto the damsel's father 50 shekels of silver and she should be his wife, because he*

*has humbled her, he may not put her away all his days."* Supplementing this in Exodus 22:16 and 17 we find *"If a man entices a virgin who is not betrothed and lies with her, he shall surely pay the bride price for her to be his wife. If a father utterly refuses to give him to her, he shall pay money, according to the bride price of virgins."*

## **Virginity**

I will present some Scriptures and interpretation based on Deuteronomy 22:13-21 together with the subsequent Scriptures and then corroborate it with further Scriptures. Most of the Scriptures referring to virginity are listed in the appendix to the book *'the scriptural definition of marriage'* and they are very extensive. God-willing, a more detailed interpretation of Deuteronomy 22:28-29, and Exodus 22:16-17 under the title *'one-night stands'* will be presented in a later teaching.

So, we see virginity is a prerequisite for Godly marriage and the Scriptures give rise to the following comments. One, the evidence of a woman's virginity is without doubt a cloth used to collect the bloodshed from the young woman's hymen when she was penetrated in sexual intercourse for the first time. Two, I do not believe that there is any disagreement with the word virgin in the context of a woman. It refers to women who have never had sexual intercourse and in scriptural terms whose hymen is intact. Three, it is equally clear that the man who accuses his bride of not being a virgin after he approaches her, is married to her, and this marriage cannot be dissolved if he has brought a false accusation.

But finally, four, if this accusation is correct, then the young woman is defined by the word of God as a harlot and is sentenced to die immediately. Fifthly, if a man takes a virgin forcibly, he is responsible for her for life. He may never put her away or divorce her. And sixthly, if a man entices a virgin and lies with her, the father may refuse to commit her to marry the man when the father first hears about it. But if the father does not refuse to permit her to marry, then they are considered to be married.

In a subsequent teaching God-willing, we will consider the passage of Scripture in Judges 21:20-23 where wives are taken to Benjamin in terms of this principle. If the father does not permit the girl to marry, it would appear that Deuteronomy 22:13-21, which we read a few moments ago, prohibits her from ever remarrying. Virginity is sacred. The following interpretation can be derived from this. Virginity is sacred and holy. It is not negotiable in the sight of God. A woman who is not a virgin is only eligible to marry if she is a widow or divorced on scripturally acceptable grounds as identified in Matthew 5:31-32, Matthew 19:3-10, and Mark 10:2-12, where Jesus makes it quite clear that there are certain specific conditions under which sexual union with the scripturally divorced woman is not adultery. God-willing, the subsequent teaching will address the subject of divorce in detail.

Thirdly, a woman who is a harlot or adulterous is only eligible to marry if she has come to salvation or she has come to true repentance of her sin and deliverance from her sin. She must be divorced in the side of God from the man who took her virginity and any man to whom she may have been technically or legally married in the sight of the world. Such a woman should only be married by a man who is absolutely certain that God has released her from marriage. A few asides regarding virginity. There are some side issues necessary to fully understand the Scripture and therefore to avoid misinterpreting it in the current age. Firstly, the virgin referred to in this passage of Scripture was typically approximately 12-1/2 years old and was on the point of commencing menstruation or had only just commenced. This is confirmed in the Talmud and other sources.

The Talmud Steinsaltz edition volume 9, Tractate Ketubot part 3, published by Random House, New York, in pages 1 to 13, repeatedly defines a virgin as being a girl between the age of 12 and 12-1/2 years, corresponding to the point at which a girl allegedly attains sexual maturity and is regarded as an adult woman. Accordingly, the physical factors which give rise to perforation of the hymen in older virgins would not have been experienced. Note that so-called child brides are still common in the Middle East until recently. I've met a woman of Lebanese descent whose parents' generation frequently married brides in the age group 12 to 15.

I mentioned this, not with a view to stimulating controversy about the acceptable age of a girl of marriage, but to overcome any difficulty that modern listeners may have with the Scripture based on the tendency for modern, athletically active young women to damage their hymens before marriage. It is important to understand that it is spiritual folly to marry a woman with a damaged hymen and this one is absolutely certain that God declared her free to marry. Failing this, the man will be committing adultery.

It would appear that witnesses were present at the active declaration, otherwise there could not have been any evidence as the man and woman would not be permitted to give evidence scripturally. Certainly, it would seem that the father must have been present in order to be able to testify with regard to the evidence of virginity in Deuteronomy 22:16. If he was not present, surely, any cloth with blood on it would suffice as evidence. Thirdly, to the best of my knowledge the hymen, like the foreskin, serves no known biological purpose of material significance. It only serves as a warning to the bridegroom to the effect that if the seal is broken, do not marry. We must therefore ask the question why did God create woman with a hymen and surely, the only answer can be to warn the bridegroom of impending spiritual danger if it is damaged or absent.

## Conclusions

Some critical conclusions. Sexual intercourse with a virgin is marriage, and a woman was created from the beginning to have only one husband. The critical conclusions that can be derived from the Scriptures are firstly, since God created woman to lose her virginity only once, she was only intended to marry once, and therefore to only marry one man. In other words, biblical marriage is sexual intercourse with a virgin. Secondly, God ordained women to be this way from Creation, not after the fall of Adam and Eve. There is no Scripture to indicate that after the fall, God re-engineered Eve and added the hymen as an afterthought. Thirdly, therefore we must conclude that whatever acceptable sexual state God foresaw for women at creation, as measured by this unique seal of virginity, must still surely prevail in our fallen state, although God did introduce divorce for certain critical cases of spiritual or sexual fornication or treachery.

Virginity has some caveats. The preceding discussion on virginity is intended to highlight the importance of virginity in the side of God. At the same time, current social practice presents us with a situation in which women typically marry at an age considerably older than 12-1/2 years, use tampons and participate in activities which give rise to a greatly increased likelihood of the hymen being innocently perforated before marriage. This introduces some serious complexity in the life of any God-fearing man since it is apparent that adultery is a very serious sin, which leads to the guilty parties having a part in the lake of fire and brimstone if not repented off. Consequently, a man faced with the prospect of consummating a marriage with a woman with a perforated hymen would be well advised to earnestly seek the Lord for absolutely unambiguous confirmation that God will permit him to marry her and that he will not be committing adultery.

I am also advised that in older women, where the hymen is intact, it may become tight with a result that great pain is experienced in first intercourse, but the hymen does not tear, and no blood is shed. However, in such an instance, there should be little, or no doubt that the woman is a virgin.

### **Marriage Covenant**

What is the marriage covenant? I think it is generally accepted within the Church that marriage is a covenant relationship. However, there are diverse explanations of the nature and form of this covenant and how it comes into existence. Let us now seek to understand the true scriptural marriage covenant. Covenant requires the shedding of blood. Hebrews 9:18-20 states, *"Therefore not even the first covenant was dedicated without blood, for when Moses had spoken every precept or all the people according to the law, he took the blood of calves and goats with water, scarlet wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book itself and all the people saying 'this is the blood of the covenant which God has commanded you.'"* Clearly, the covenant cannot be dedicated without blood. Covenants required cleaving, splitting, and cutting of some living creature.

Referring to Genesis 15:4-21, we read concerning Abraham or Abram at that stage, *"And behold the word of the Lord came to him saying this one shall not be your heir, but one who will come from your own body shall be your heir. And then he brought him outside and said, 'look now toward Heaven and count the stars if you are able to number them' and He said to him 'so shall your descendants be.' And he believed in the Lord and he accounted to Him for righteousness. Then He said to him, 'I am the Lord who brought you out of Ur of the Chaldeans to give you this land to inherit it.' And he said, 'Lord God, how shall I know that I will inherit it?' So, he said to him, 'bring me a three-year-old heifer, a three-year-old female goat, a three-year-old ram, a turtle, dove, and a young pigeon.' Then he brought all this to Him and cut them into two down the middle and placed each piece opposite the other, but he did not cut the bird in two. And when the vultures came down on the carcasses, Abram drove them away. Now, when the sun was going down, a deep sleep fell upon Abram and behold, horror and great darkness fell upon him. Then He said to Abram 'know certainly that your descendants will be stranger than a man that is not there and will serve them and they will afflict them four hundred years. And also, the nation whom they serve, I will judge. Afterward they shall come out with great positions. Now as for you, you shall go to your father in peace. You shall be buried at a good old age, but in the fourth generation they shall return here for the iniquity of the emirates is not yet complete. And it came to pass when the sun went down, and it was dark, but behold, there appeared a smoking oven and burning torch that passed between those pieces.'*

*On the same day, the Lord made a covenant with Abram saying 'your descendants I have given this land from the river of Egypt the great river, the river Euphrates, the Kenites, the Kenizzites, the Kadmonites, the Hittites, the Perizzites, and the Rephaim. The Amorites, the Canaanites, the Girgashites, and the Jebusites.'"*

This is the passage, and specifically verse 6 where Abram believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness as referred to in Galatians 3:6. In Romans 4:9-12 we read, *"Does this blessedness then come upon the circumcised only or upon the uncircumcised also. For we say that faith was accounted to Abraham for righteousness, how then was it accounted? While he was circumcised or uncircumcised, not while circumcised but while uncircumcised and he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had while still uncircumcised, that he might be the father of all those who believe though they are uncircumcised. The righteousness might be imputed to them also. And the father of circumcision to those who not only are of the circumcision, but he also walks in the steps of the faith which your father Abraham had while still uncircumcised."*

## Covenants

In this passage, there appears to be a clear-cut relation between the covenant under which Christians now walk and the covenant that God cut with Abram in Genesis 15:4-21, which we have just read. However, there is another principle contained in Genesis 15 and specifically in verse 10, *"Then he brought all this to him and cut them in two down the middle and placed each piece opposite the other."* In verse 17 we read, *"A smoking oven, a burning torch that passed between those pieces."* The smoking oven and burning torch are widely regarded as being manifestations of God since verse 18 states that on the same day, the Lord made a covenant with Abram. So, it would appear that God passed between the halves of the animals in making the covenant.

Is there a confirmation of this interpretation in Scripture? Jeremiah 34:18 states *"I will give the men who have transgressed my covenant, who have not performed the words of the covenant which they made before me, when they cut the calf in two and passed between the parts of it."* It appears clear in this verse that the covenant made with God by the Princes of Judah and others referred to in the subsequent verses, involve cutting across in two and parting between the parts of it. Essentially the same actions that we see in Genesis 15:10-18, however, there is more to it. The Living Torah, a modern Jewish translation by Rabbi Aryeh Kaplan, published by Moznaim Publishing Corporation, New York in Jerusalem translates Genesis 15:10 as follows, *"Abram brought all this for him, he split them in half and placed one half opposite the other."* Here we see the word translated, cut in the new King James Version translated split.

The footnote to Genesis 15:10 in the Living Torah states *"Split them. This was a way of making a covenant."* Rachid is cited as the authority on this. Indeed, the words [inaudible 00:30:19] covenant, and [inaudible 00:30:21] split appear to be closely related. It symbolised just as the two halves of the animal were really one, so it is with the two people making the covenant. Moreover, just as one side cannot live without the other, so the two cannot live without each other. It was also seen as a malediction. Anyone violating the oath would be torn asunder like the animals. In this one night we begin to see the deeper meaning embodied in Deuteronomy 22:13-30 regarding virginity.

Firstly, the covenant is made by splitting or cutting some living thing and shedding blood. Two, people who make a blood covenant become one, and cannot live without one another. Three, a person who breaks a covenant is to be put to death. This is confirmed by a variety of independent sources who studied the blood covenant in Scripture, and also in Pagan practice. I refer you particularly to teachings by Kenneth Copeland on "Covenant Made by Blood: Hesed - Agape," ISBN 0-88114-790-7, published by Kenneth Copeland Ministries.

## Adam and Eve

The Oxford English Dictionary defines 'split' as *'break forcibly, be broken into parts, especially, longitudinally or with the grain or plane of cleavage.'* Consider also the physical reality of a 'meat cleaver' as something that cleaves or cuts into the meat. The marriage covenant is cut when a man cleaves into his virgin wife. Bringing this together, Genesis 2:21-25, in the King James Translation states, *"And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept, and He took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof. And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made He a woman, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, 'This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh. She shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore, shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife and they shall be one flesh.' And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed."*



Thus, we see the man cleaving or splitting his wife, forcibly breaking apart her hymen on the plane of cleavage, shedding blood. He then proceeds to '*walk*' or '*pass between*' the two halves completing the covenant act.

The imagery is vivid and powerful. If we put aside our prudery for a moment and wonder at the physical appearance of the external female sexual organ, we should be even further amazed at the imagery which our God has encapsulated in what superficially is an organ whose structure and design makes no earthly sense. It is not intended to; it faithfully recreates the two halves of the covenant animal, even to the hair covering the animal. Surely, we must conclude that God knew the end from the beginning and designed woman to be symbolic of His covenant with Man.

Taking it further, He symbolically recreates the cutting of the covenant every time a wife who truly loves her husband and gives herself totally to him and experiences sexual orgasm coupled with a flood of blood into the labia minora. How can we conclude, other than that, the sexual act is the most sublimely Holy representation of the act of covenant? How can we be, other than appalled, at how this symbolism has been lost and distorted?

The sexual act is an act of such enormous spiritual significance; is it any wonder that Satan has expended the energy that he has to deceive us for so long? How can we, for a moment, suggest that there is another purpose for virginity?

### **Cleaving**

As in the side, many Christians today believe that the word '*cleave*' means '*adhered to*', and some translations use that in interpretation. But I would ask you to consider for a moment, that if you would speak to a geologist about the plane of cleavage in a gemstone or rock, he would tell you clearly, it's about splitting. If you were to go to any meat market and speak to any butcher about a meat cleaver and how he used it, he would tell you that he uses it to cut or cleave the meat. Secular media refer to a woman's cleavage as being the gap between her breasts. And so, it goes, the word '*cleavage*' is used extensively in every area of our lives to signify splitting or cleaving. If you would go into a hardware store and ask an assistant to give you something with which to cleave wood, he would not give you a tube of glue, he would give you an axe with which to cleave the wood. Cleaving speaks of splitting, it does not speak of gluing or sticking, and we are seriously in error when we think Genesis 2:24 tells us that a man will stick to his wife. It tells us clearly that a man will cleave or cut into his wife. It speaks clearly and unambiguously about sexual intercourse.

So, we see the female sexual organ is the symbol of the marriage covenant. Clearly every time a covenant minded man sees his wife's sexual organ, he is instinctively reminded of his covenant with her. Clearly it is an abomination for any other man to have sight of the outward symbol of that covenant, let alone to penetrate it, thus breaking the covenant.

Should we not ask ourselves whether it is possible that the heart of man seeks for this covenant purity with woman and, because of the wrong teaching of this age, turns to pornography and lust as the only substitute that offers any recognition of a deep desire for covenant? Surely the symbolic portrayal of the female sexual organ, aroused and provocatively displayed in the form of the blood red '*heart*' used on valentine's day cards, to say '*I love you*', and as a seemingly innocuous symbol of love throughout our society, represents one of the most effective devices that Satan has used to distract us totally from the true meaning of the love that God intended to exist between man and woman. Do you realise that every time you see a red heart symbol as used on cards and any number of devices in the world, Satan

is tricking you subliminally to contemplate a woman's most private and most Holy part, in a very real sense, the door to her heart? As you realise that, I pray that you will come to recognise how fundamentally important this teaching is and how appallingly the world, by Satan's influence, and with the blessing of the Church has allowed this truth to be corrupted and lost.

Remember also that 1 Corinthians 12:23-24 states, *"And those members of the body which we think to be less honourable, on these we bestow greater honour and our unrepresentable parts have greater modesty, but our presentable parts have no need. But God composed the body, having given greater honour to that part which lacks it."* So again, we see that the greatest honour is given to the unrepresentable parts, the hidden, the concealed parts.

### **Christian Covenant and Marriage Covenant**

The close correlation between the Christian covenant and the marriage covenant goes further. We read last week Ephesians 5:22-33. Just to recap, in the King James Version, verse 22, *"Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the Church and He is the saviour of the body."* Verse 28, *"So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the Church. For we are members of His (Jesus) body, of His flesh, and of His bones. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined or cleaved unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church. Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reveres her husband."*

Surely here we see one of the most perfect examples of God's infinite attention to detail, His wonder and His majesty. We see the blood covenant between Christ and His bride, the Church, neatly tied in to the blood covenant between a man and his wife, both demonstrated symbolically by the covenant cut by walking between the halves of the animal that has been 'cleaved.'

If I return for a moment to the three points made earlier, one, the covenant is made by splitting or cutting some living thing and shedding blood, 1) Between man and man - an animal. 2) Between man and woman - the hymen of the woman. 3) Between man and God - the precious Blood of our Lord and Saviour, Jesus Christ of Nazareth, shed on the cross at Calvary by the crown of thorns, the lashes, the nails and the spear, all of which cleaved into His flesh.

Two, people who make a blood covenant become one and cannot live without one another. 1) Between man and man - spiritual curses come into effect, something which our generation is woefully ignorant of, but that is a subject for another discourse. 2) Between man and woman - the one flesh bond, a powerful spiritual bond which literally unites and ties them together *'until death do us part.'* 3) Between man and God - the born-again reality, a powerful spiritual force in which the Spirit of Jesus comes to live within the Temple of the Believer who believes in their heart and confesses with their mouth that Jesus Christ is Lord.

Thirdly, a person who breaks covenant is to be put to death: 1) Between man and man, long since lost. Numbers 30:2 states: *"If a man vows a vow to the LORD or swears an oath to bind himself by some agreement, he shall not break his word; he shall do according to all that proceeds out of his mouth."*

Today a man's word is seldom his bond. Yet there are still potentially eternal consequences since Revelation 21:8 is quite clear that *'all liars'* will have their part in the lake of fire and brimstone.

2) Between man and woman, long since lost in the natural but spiritual death still results from unrepented adultery. Today adultery hardly seems to be regarded as a serious sin, even in the Church. Many preach that it is easily repented of. In reality, the covenant bond can only be broken by the death of one spouse unless God, in His mercy, and in response to humble petition in the name of Jesus, cuts the tie. But He will only do this as a consequence of persistent treachery on the part of one spouse. God-willingly, this will be the subject of a later teaching. But the offender who does not repent in this life will have their part in the lake of fire and brimstone.

3) Between man and God, the penalty remains eternal separation from God - real death. Nothing has changed even though modern man and the church make light of this. People are breaking covenants with God all the time and turning their backs on Him to go to Hell. They just do not realize it. The deception that it is not serious for people to break their word and for people to commit adultery has given rise to a far worse deception, that it is acceptable to betray and disobey God.

I sincerely hope that by now you will have begun to realise just how deep and how serious the subject of this teaching is. Millions, if not billions of souls are in Hell and many others are on their way as a consequence of man's heresies in this area.

### **The Bible on Marriage**

Why does the Bible seem to give so little direct guidance on marriage? In another dimension, Ephesians 5:31-32, which states that a man *"Shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the Church"* answers another question. That of why, if marriage is so important, does God seemingly give so little direct guidance in the Bible on marriage? The answer must surely be contained in the above verses coupled to 2 Corinthians 11:2-3 which states: "For I am jealous for you with godly jealousy. For I have betrothed you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ. But I fear, lest somehow, as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, so your minds may be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ."

There are other scriptures which relate the Holy virgin, prepared for the coming of her husband, to the Church of the Lord Jesus Christ including Ephesians 5:27 above. This thought is well developed in the article *'Wow! So that's how Jesus loves me!'* which was discussed last week. Note that at the same time the use of the metaphor of the *'bride of Christ'* is an allegory, metaphor or parable, in a sense that we become married to Jesus the instant that we pray the prayer of salvation and His Spirit comes to dwell within us. Thus, we are at the same time, both married and betrothed to Jesus in a way that is perhaps difficult for many to grasp.

The same thought is carried through into 2 Peter 3:14: *"Therefore, beloved, looking forward to these things, be diligent to be found by Him in peace, without spot and blameless."* Can there be any doubt that the entire Bible, from Genesis to Revelation, traces the marriage of Jesus Christ to His bride, culminating with the wedding feast described in Revelation 19:9? *"Then he said to me, 'Blessed are those who are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb!' And he said to me, 'These are the true sayings of God.'"*

### **Love**

Understanding God's covenant love as it applies to marriage, as we come to terms with the understanding of the correlation between marriage and the new birth in Christ developed above, we can begin to see the richness of the instruction that God gives us with regards to marriage throughout the Bible. Thus, when Jesus says He will never leave us or forsake us in Hebrews 13:5, we must accept

that this applies to us as such between a husband and wife. When God defines us a [inaudible 00:45:50] covenant keeping love in 1 Corinthians 13:1-10 *"Though I speak with the tongues of men and of Angels, but have not loved, I have become sounding brass, or a clinging cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy and understand all mysteries and all knowledge and though I have all faith, so that I could move mountains, but have not loved, I am nothing. And I bestow all my goods to feed the poor and now I give my body to be burned, but have not loved, it profits me nothing. Love suffers long and is kind. Love does not envy. Love does not parade itself, is not puffed up, does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, does not provoke, thinks no evil, does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth. Bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things."*

But where there are prophecies, they will fail. Where there are tongues, they will cease. Where there is knowledge, it will vanish away. For we know in part and we prophesise in part, but when that which is perfect has come and that which is in part, will be done away.

Surely, we must recognise that this is a love that God refers to in Ephesians 5:23-23 cited previously. The fuller definition is offered in [inaudible 00:47:16] dictionary with regards to love. It seems notable to me that there is not a single reference to relations between husband and wife in that entire passage. Do we truly believe that the Bible offers no material commentary on the love between a husband and wife? Surely not. Surely, we must accept that love between a husband and wife is an [inaudible 00:47:37] of the love between Christ and his bride of which I am sure both you and I hope to be members. Therefore, we must surely accept that the entire Bible contains guidance on marriage.

Above all, [inaudible 00:47:52] surely, we must accept that. Christian love, whether exercised towards the brethren or toward men generally is not an impulse from the feelings. It does not always run with a natural inclination. Nor does it spend itself only upon those for whom some affinity is discovered. Love seeks the welfare of all, Romans 15:2, and works no ill to any, 13:8-10. Love seeks opportunity to do good to all men.

Furthermore, quoting again from [inaudible 00:48:23], love can be known only from the actions it prompts. God's love is seen in the gift of His Son, 1 John 4:9-10, but obviously this is not the love of complacency or affection, that is, it was not drawn out by the Excellency of its object, Romans 5:8. *"It was an exercise of the Divine will in deliberate choice made without assignable cause save that which lies in the nature of God himself."* Refer Deuteronomy 7:7-8, *"Christian love has God for its primary object and expresses itself, first of all, in implicit obedience to his commandments."* John 14, 15, 21, 23, chapter 15:10, 1 John 2:5 and 5:3, and 2 John 6. Self-world that is self-pleasing is the negation of love to God. Surely, we must conclude that God is quite specific in what he considers to be love in the context of a husband and wife. It is not an impulse, it is a choice. It seeks the welfare of the spouse according to the Word and will of God, not its own welfare, nor the welfare of the spouse is determined by their opinion of what is best for them. It is determined by the principles set out in 1 Corinthians 13:4-8 *"Love suffers long, is kind, does not envy, does not parade itself, is not puffed up, does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love never fails."*

Love is a series of choices with regard to an approach to the relationship which is totally devoid of any consideration of self. As the Agape Love of God is applied in the marriage relationship as a choice of lifestyle, romantic love follows, not the reverse. If this were the love practised between husband and wife, putting away, or divorce in the Church would be dramatically reduced.

In conclusion, the Word of God is absolutely unambiguously clear that the act of sexual intercourse is the act of marriage and the act of covenant. All vows, ceremonies, and traditions that men may choose to apply have no relevance unless coupled with sexual intercourse with a virgin bride, and they have no standing in the sight of God when the woman is not a widow, or a divorced woman who has been expressly released by the judge of all the Earth to remarry. Everything else is adultery and as we saw in the teaching last week, adulterers will not inherit the Kingdom of God. By the same token, sexual intercourse between husband and wife must be seen as the most divinely, Holy, and significant element of marriage. Is it any wonder that marriage in the world today is in the state that it is? Conversely, with this revelation, with this understanding of the incredible significance of the act of sexual intercourse between husband and wife as the definitive element of marriage, one can begin to walk the road that God has called us to walk in marriage to experience the divine joy, love and pleasure that He has for us in Godly marriage on this Earth and in this life.

It is my prayer that this teaching and the teachings that God-willing will follow in the weeks ahead will continue to build on this foundation and to assist you to see exactly what it is that God has purposed marriage to be, and to see exactly how you should deal with situations of adultery and divorce, which may have impacted on your life. This will bring you to a place where you and your spouse can walk in the fullness of the marriage that God has called you to walk in, to reach out and touch others prophetically through the example of your marriage, as was portrayed so graphically in the teaching last week from the gardeners. I pray that you will take this message and that you will ask the Lord to write it on the tablet of your heart and imprint it and deal with the things that you need to deal with. I also pray that as you listen to this teaching, you will come to realise that in many cases you believe things which are not according to scripture. You may have taught them if you are in a leadership position and you may have applied them in your life.

If that is the case, and if you need to pray, or if you need counselling, please feel free to contact us in South Africa. The international code is 0027. Dialling code in South Africa - 117912327. Alternatively, 0027832516644, or alternatively you can email me on [James@EndTimeIssueMinistries.org.za](mailto:James@EndTimeIssueMinistries.org.za). We will be happy and blessed to be able to assist you with other material, with prayer, with counselling and guidance as to how you should address things in your life that may not be right as a consequence of understanding this teaching. If you do not have a personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ at this time, if you have been trapped in sexual sin or if your experience of sexuality has led you to conclude that what the Church teaches is so wrong that you cannot possibly accept the yoke the Christianity, I would ask you to seek the Lord Jesus Christ now with all your heart, with all your mind, with all your soul.

### **Final Prayer**

And if that is the case and if you have come to repentance, I would ask you just to pray with me firstly if you don't have a relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. Secondly, I will pray for those who perhaps have a revelation that what they have been teaching is not according to the will of God. Father, we come to you in the name of Jesus and I will just ask anybody who is listening to this tape and who has never prayed the prayer of salvation, who has never invited the Lord Jesus Christ to come into their hearts and to receive lessons and to forgive them, just pray with me as I pray. *"Father I come to You in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, and I confess my sin, I confess that I am a sinner, but I recognise today that the Lord Jesus Christ went to the cross to die for me, to take my sin that I might dwell in Heaven for eternity and that my sins might be forgiven. And I confess my sin and I thank You now that You forgive my sin and I ask You Lord Jesus to come and dwell in my heart, to sit on the throne of my heart, to be my Lord and my King and my Saviour and to take control of my life, and to take over my*

*life, and to lead me, and guide me into the truth that You have for me. I thank You for saving me, I thank You for delivering me and I thank You that You are now my God, and my King and I am now Your child and that You will take care of me, that You will answer my questions, that You will show me where I should fellowship and that You will lead me to a place where I can grow in Christ."*

I would ask anybody who has just prayed that prayer for the first time either to contact us or alternatively to ask the Lord to lead you to a Church nearby where they will be able to help you. But if at any time you encounter something that you are not clear of and you need help, please feel free to contact us. For those of you who have listened to this and realise that what you have been teaching about marriage, about the marriage covenant, is fundamentally flawed, which is the case for most people in the Church today, I would ask you to examine your heart against the Word of God, and if you see that truly what you have been teaching is not correct and that it has potentially caused people to stumble, I would ask you just to pray this prayer of repentance with me right now, in Jesus name.

"Father, I come to You in the name of Jesus and I see that marriage is a covenant cut through the act of sexual intercourse between a man and a virgin bride. I confess that what I have believed and what I have taught is not in accordance with the truth that is contained in Your Word and I confess that heresy in that deception albeit for you as sin in Jesus name. Father, I thank You that if I confess my sins in repentance and turn around, You're faithful and just to forgive my sin and I come to You now Lord in the name of Jesus, I lay my sin before You. I confess it is sin and I repent at my sin and I turn around and I ask You to forgive me. I thank You by faith, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ that You have forgiven me and that I step forward and go forth from this place now by faith in Jesus name, cleansed and washed by the blood of the Lamb of all my sin. Father, I thank You that You will open my eyes as I read Your Word to see the full truth that is inherent in what I have heard today and to apply it in my own life, and in the teachings that I give to others in Jesus' name. And Father, I thank You that You will show me that we, as a consequence of my wrong beliefs and my wrong teachings, I have gone out to others and I have performed marriages, I have given council, which is contrary to Your Word in this area and that You will show me what action You require of me to make restitution, to make right and to heal whatever sin has come to play in the lives of others, a consequence of my account. I understand and I recognise that those who have acted on my council, their blood is upon my hands and Father, it is my desire today to be cleansed of that blood, it is my desire today to go forth and to do good and to do the work that You have called me to do by faith, to set the people who I have placed in bondage, through my false beliefs and my false teachings free in Jesus' name.

And I thank You Lord that it's not by might, it's not by power, it's by Your Spirit that this will be accomplished. I thank You that You will teach me and You will guide me and You will lead me to do what You require of me in the days ahead in Jesus' name.

I pray that as you go forth, the Lord God will make His face to shine upon you, that He will bless you and prosper you and bring you into a deeper and greater understanding of His mercy and His grace, and of the truth of His word in the area of marriage and in every area of your life, in Jesus' name. And if we can help you in any way at End Time Issue Ministries, we look forward to hearing from you, in Jesus' name.

## 03 03 The One Flesh Bond and Submission

Greetings in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ! Let us pray. "Father, we come to You in the name of Jesus, we dedicate this time to Your Word and seek a deeper understanding of Your Word and Your plan for us, in Jesus' name. Father, I ask You that You will speak through me in the time ahead and that You will guide my thoughts and my speech that which I utter will be pleasing to You and achieve the purpose for which You have sent it. Father, should I utter anything in my own understanding, or my own strength that is contrary to Your Word or Your will, I ask you to seal it up and blow it away and that it will not find root as we hear it. But that which is of You Father, I ask You to imprint on their hearts, I ask You to water it by Your Spirit, by Your Word that it may find fruit, find root and bear fruit exceedingly, abundantly beyond all that they can ask or imagine. In Jesus' name, amen.

Today, I am going to continue the teaching on marriage that I have been giving over the last couple of weeks. Today, in particular, I am going to address the question of '*One Flesh Bond*' and the relationship between husband and wife, with particular emphasis on submission. God-willing in the weeks ahead, I will address other facets of this topic. In order to present this teaching, which addresses additional subjects and topics which for the most part, go beyond anything that I have taught in the Church or read as being taught by the Church in this age, it's perhaps relevant that I place these comments in context. The revelation that I am going to share with you today is born out of 7-1/2 years of seeking God around some of these topics and particularly borne out of some very hard and very difficult personal experiences. So that which I am about to say to you is not said lightly. It is said with a very, very deep conviction that after much prayer, fasting, agonising, crying out loud over the last 7-1/2 years, that what I'm about to share with you is truly the Word of God and is truly a revelation by the Spirit of God.

### My Testimony

Let me share a little bit of my testimony in order to help you understand the depth of the experience on which this teaching is based. I accepted Jesus Christ as Lord in the traditional Church at the age of 13. I am now 47 in a few weeks' time, and served to a point in my late teens and early 20's. I subsequently backslid through intellectualism, through wrong teaching, through offensive hypocrisy in the Church and through a total inability to accept that the Bible could possibly be true and certainly that it could not possibly be the Word of God. Eventually, in a marriage that was not working, I sought solace in the arms of another man's wife and in the early '90s for two years embarked on an affair, which in worldly terms was dramatic and fulfilling and intense sexually. At the end of the two years, the secret was revealed, and everything was broken open, having embarked on a relationship which both parties agreed was purely for sexual gratification, and in which the word '*love*' was never mentioned. We induced ourselves to believe that by engaging in extramarital sexual intercourse, we were in fact acting in the best interest of our respective spouses to save our respective marriages, and we suddenly found the relationship doesn't end.

At that point, as the two of us went our separate ways, I suddenly discovered that I was desperately in love with this woman and that it is as though some part of me was being wrenched out of me in the most forceful and terrible way. Totally broken, I found myself one night, in a hotel, contemplating suicide, having spent the entire night reviewing my life, and concluding that as a former military commander, a professional engineer, an academic with a doctorate, with significant academic recognition and achievement and professional achievement, my life was a complete mess and I had no hope. The following morning God spoke to me and told me to phone a business associate who had '*something you need.*' I phoned him. He received me with compassion and he led me back to the

Saviour with a profound revelation that Jesus Christ had indeed died to take my sins upon Him that if I would repent and confess my sin, He would cover me with His blood and that He would give me a new start.

In the weeks that followed, I was water baptised. I threw myself into the service of the Lord. I threw myself into His world. I threw myself into counsel, anything else that I could find that would help me to get my life and my marriage back on track. However, I still found things going wrong. After many months of anguish, searching, praying and seeking counsel I reached a place of utter despair and at that moment, the Lord started to speak to me through Scripture and through teachings about the '*One Flesh Bond*.' After six weeks of absolute agony, torment and vainly seeking to savour what I had now discovered to be a near telepathic bond with my former mistress, God in his mercy again intervened and through the prayer of agreement in humble and contrite submission, the bond was broken. It was as though I had been stretched in the middle of a giant bungee rope that was pulling me apart spiritually, and as the bond was broken by the Grace of God in response to my prayer, it was like the one rope snapped, and I snapped back together and found myself whole for the first time in three and a half years. I will share with you in a moment the scriptural basis of what I have just said, and I will share with you briefly the impact that it has on the Church today. However, as much as my flesh desired to think that the matter was now behind me and as much as the Church told me that the matter was behind me, it was not to be.

The years that followed, I discovered solid ties that had to be renounced. I discovered an engrafting of bloodlines that had to be severed. I discovered familiar Spirits attached to me and my former mistress, which continued to bring things to my remembrance and to draw us back towards one another. I discovered Demonic transfer had taken place bringing me into a place of Demonic closeness which had to be bound and cut out. I discovered deep grief which had to be healed and even then, after much further ministry, after deep and abject confession of my sin, after heartfelt renunciation of vows and promises that were ungodly and could not and should not be kept, I still found my heart yearning for the woman who had been such an important part of those two years.

Finally, the Lord led me to 1 Corinthians 13:8 "*Love never fails.*" And at that point, I realised that when we speak so glibly of making love as the sexual act, we are in fact building a spiritual legacy which cannot fail and cannot cease, and because it is love and because love is of God, love that is misplaced cannot be renounced, and it cannot be removed. And out of that came a revelation of just how incredibly damaging sexual fornication is for the human spirit and the human psyche. Even though with much revelation we can be set free of so much of the consequences, we cannot set free misplaced love and we are left to apply that love in a godly way, to intercede for the loved one to find the Lord Jesus Christ and to serve Him and to achieve the high calling to intercede for their marriage and their children, and to renounce all claim against that person no matter how much a portion of the heart that is reserved for them for the balance of this life, he yearns for their company.

So, the message that I have for you today is a message of profound importance to any man or any woman who is currently tempted to engage in any extramarital sexual relationship. It is a message of profound importance to any man or any woman who has ever sexually joined themselves to a person with whom they are not currently living as husband or wife. In the weeks ahead, God-willing, I will go more in depth with many of the aspects of what I have touched on, but today, let me concentrate on building the scriptural basis for what I have just shared with you, and from that, draw in certain critical conclusions based on the dramatic revelation which I have received in the area of the relationship between a husband and wife in the last 24 hours.



## One Flesh Bond

Let me take you briefly through an understanding from Scripture of the *'one flesh bond.'* Referring to Genesis 2:24 in the Amplified Bible, we find the Scripture says, *"Therefore, a man shall leave his father and his mother, and shall become united and cleave to his wife and they shall become one flesh."* We discussed at some length last week, the fact that the word *'cleave'* in this verse clearly refers to sexual intercourse and it refers to the cutting of covenant between a man and his virgin bride. The repeated act of sexual intercourse has ongoing covenant significance.

Matthew 19:5-6 in the Amplified Bible provides us with the key to understand the significance of the One Flesh Bond. Jesus is speaking, and He said, *"For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and shall be united."* In the Amplified Bible that word *'joined inseparably'* to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh, which means they are no longer two, but one flesh. What they forgot - as joined together, let not man put asunder or separate. It is particularly important to note the amplification *'joined inseparably'* in the above passage. This is the key that opened my understanding to the condition that I was in many years ago, and ultimately provided the key to the spiritual breakthrough that saw the One Flesh Bond savoured and my spiritual integrity restored.

If one takes that together with the phrase, *'let not man put asunder'*, we start to see the full extent of the One Flesh Bond as an unbreakable spiritual bond, granted by God in order to bind husband and wife together. As the bond intensifies through repeated sexual encounters, so will love also intensify if both parties give themselves to one another in accordance of Scripture. 1 Corinthians 6 clearly reveals that multiple One Flesh Bonds can coexist. Matthew 19:5-6 clearly indicates that the One Flesh Bond cannot be broken by man. To quote 1 Corinthians 6:15-20 *"Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ like the members of a harlot?"* Certainly not. Do you not know that he who has joined to a harlot's body with her, the two shall become one flesh? But he who is joined to the Lord is one Spirit with Him. Flee sexual immorality. Every sin that a man does is outside the body but he who commit sexual immorality sins against his own body. Would you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God? You are not your own for you are bought at a price. Therefore, glorify God in your body and in your Spirit which you have got. Here we see confirmation that many men can become one flesh with a harlot, and that a man can become one flesh with more than one woman. We also see the direct correspondence between the sexual act between husband and virgin wife, and the new birth resulting in the born-again believers becoming one Spirit with the Lord Jesus Christ. We also see that becoming one results from sex and not from marriage vows and we see no indication that it is a transitory, or reversible state.

## Husbands and Wives

If we take this further and reconsider the Scriptures which indicate that the husband is the head of the wife, Ephesians 5:23-24 states *"For the husband is the head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the Church and He is the Saviour of the body. Therefore, just as the Church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything."* And I stress everything, and I will pick up on that, God-willing, in a few minutes in this teaching. 1 Corinthians 11:3 says *"But I want you to know that the head of every man is Christ, the head of woman is man, and the head of Christ is God, the Father."* And it goes on in the following verses in 1 Corinthians 11, to develop that in considerably more detail. Ultimately these passages which relate to the husband being the head of the wife are based and founded on Genesis 3:13-16. Following the fall, following Adam and Eve's sin of eating the fruit on the insistence of a serpent, we read *"And the Lord God said to the woman 'What is this you have done?'"*

*The woman said, 'The serpent deceived me, and I ate.' So, the Lord God said to the serpent because you have done this, you are cursed more than all cattle and more than every beast of the field. On your belly you shall go and you shall eat dust all the days of your life. And I will put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed. He shall bruise your head and you shall bruise his heel. To the woman He said, 'I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception. In pain you shall bring forth children and your desire shall be for your husband and he shall rule over you.'"*

This is a profoundly important passage of scripture because it lays the foundation for the relationship between man and woman for the balance of this age. In particular, we see a Commandment or a statement that the woman's desire shall be for her husband. From that we draw clearly that there is absolutely no basis on which a woman may ever say that she no longer loves her husband. More significantly in the context of this teaching we see that the Word of God says that the husband will rule over the wife. This is a passage of scripture which is not frequently cited in the modern Church and one which [inaudible 00:19:58] Christians would find highly unpalatable. But it represents one of the critical keys to understanding the magnitude and the frequency of divorce and broken marriage in the body of Christ today.

And through this, we also understand the significance and the correlation and a close correlation between these Commandments and these statements of spiritual fact and the fall of man and the threat to Satan of the woman's seed bruising Satan's head. If we consider for a moment the consequences of ungodly or unfulfilled One Flesh Bonds, we see from the passage in Corinthians a moment ago that it is perfectly possible for a human being to have multiple One Flesh Bonds. Basically the One Flesh Bond is an inevitable consequence of sexual intercourse. At the moment of ejaculation not only is a physical ejaculate emitted but a spiritual ejaculate as well. The difference being that while the physical passes away, unless it gives rise to a child, the spiritual endures for the balance of the existence of those two human beings. In the Spirit I have seen it as being an infinitely elastic spiritual web which extends from the heart of the man from his Spirit to the heart, the Spirit of the woman and which ties those two people together for the rest of their lives, even if they only have intercourse once.

We see that for as long as a person has One Flesh Bonds with past sexual partners, whether heterosexual or male-male, that person is caught up in a spiritual spider's web which causes confusion, conflict, and pain which opens the doorway for Satan to attack that person. This is shown diagrammatically in the hardcopy of this teaching, which is available from this ministry should you want it. Basically, the consequences of spiritual spider's web of men joined to other woman and through those women joined to other men, who are joined to other women, who are joined to other men, on an infinite basis, viewed from the spiritual perspective, viewed from the Father's perspective, and from the Lord Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit's perspective, what this represents is absolute spiritual dislocation. I've seen, in the Spirit that a complete morass of absolutely indeterminate and indiscriminate bonds which cross each other, which intercept each other, which bring about a state of total spiritual confusion and with that, one gains an understanding of why fornication is such a desperately spiritually dangerous state and why it is such an abomination in the sight of God, and why the Word of God is so explicit about adulterers, rapists and homosexuals being put to death.

The only way the One Flesh Bond can come to end certainly under the Old Covenant was by putting to death the offenders. Failing which, we end up with a situation where a woman who engages in fornication, links her husband to the man that she is fornicating with, and thereby links her husband to every other human being that is linked to the man with whom she is fornicating. Therefore, when one joins oneself to a harlot, one is committing an absolutely appalling act of discrimination and

violence to one's own Spirit. In generally accepted worldly terms, the term '*polygamy*', which is many men having sexual intercourse with many women in the same group, that describes the state of wholesale fornication. This is distinct from '*polygamy*' which relates to one man having more than one wife and '*polyandry*' which relates to a woman having more than one man, which again the latter is also an abomination in the sight of God and expressly defined as adultery in the Word of God.

To place this in context, it is important to understand that arbitrary divorce and remarriage brings about a similar state because unless there is an absolutely clear cut Scriptural basis for divorce, there is absolutely no basis for the severance of a One Flesh Bond. Therefore, we understand, or we begin to understand why the Word of God speaks so strongly against putting away and divorce. In the case where a man and a woman separate and remarry again, the existing One Flesh Bond remains, and the situation becomes compounded. Just before Passover in the year 2000, I received a series of prophetic words which were published, and the entire suite is available as a digest document. In that, the Lord lead me to see progressively that the level of divorce and fornication within the Body of Christ had resulted in a situation where every single member of the body of Christ, who had ever been joined sexually even once to a member of the same, or opposite sex with him they were not currently living in a marital relationship and with a person to whom they had joined themselves to had in turn joined themselves to one other person with whom they were not living in marriage would find themselves by a simple mathematical extension joined to every single person on this planet who has not lived in a strictly scriptural sexual context for their entire existence.

The net effect of that, as you begin to see the picture that was shown to me at Passover this year, is that since there are so many members of the Body of Christ who find themselves in that situation of divorce, remarriage and occasional sexual dalliance, which has been supposedly dealt with, but only to the extent of repentance and not to the extent of having cut-off One Flesh Bonds. I stress again, One Flesh Bonds are not sole ties. Those of you who are listening to this, who have fallen into the trap of fornication, who have repented of the sin and had somebody pray with you for sole ties, I have to say to you that it is almost certain that the One Flesh Bond is still in existence unless you came to salvation under an extremely powerful anointing with a very dramatic salvation, in which case the Lord in His mercy may sever the One Flesh Bond for you. If those have not been done, and if that was not the case, that One Flesh Bond is still in existence and it is absolutely vital. I will lead you in a prayer at the end of this teaching to enable you to sever those ties.

### **Breaking the One Flesh Bond**

In terms of breaking One Flesh Bond, the bond cannot be broken by man. We have seen in Scripture in Matthew 19:6 that *"The Word of God says that which God has joined together, let not men put asunder."* Now, as I have researched and investigated the Scriptures and from my own experience, what I have discovered is that the true meaning of Matthew 19:6 is not that man should not put asunder. In other words, it's not a legal requirement, it is a statement of spiritual fact. It simply says man is unable to put it asunder. Believe me, I tried. I cried out, I wept, I spoke in all sorts of ways and I assure you that it remained until the day that I came to a place of complete broken, humble petition in agreement and went before the Throne of Grace and said, Father in the name of Jesus, I confess my sin, I know that you have forgiven my sin, but I have this One Flesh Bond and I understand that the Word of God says that I have no basis to ask you to sever it because the Word of God says that it cannot be severed by man. And therefore, I come to you in the name of Jesus and I ask you in humble petition to have mercy on me and to cut the One Flesh Bond. And the moment that I prayed that prayer in agreement with a second person, that bond was instantaneously severed, and I was set free.

So I want to say to you today that if you have been involved in any sexual intercourse with any person who is not currently your husband or wife, there is hope for you. But that hope lies firstly in a profound revelation that whatever you did that was sinful, must be repented of and secondly, willingness to come in humble petition before Almighty God and ask Him in His grace and His mercy to set you free. As I said, I will pray that prayer with you at the end of this teaching. What I have to say to you also, is that prayer will only be granted and in fact should only be prayed if you are absolutely certain that you are released from that person. In other words, what I am saying to you is if as a man, you took the virginity of a girl many years ago, you may find that in the sight of God, God considers you yet to be married to her. We administered in a case of a woman whose virginity was taken in her mid-teens and who, over 30 years later found herself confronted with a situation where God had taken her out of a 20-year marriage in which children had been born, where she had married a man who was other than the man who had taken her virginity. The Lord had brought by a series of developments of the man who took her virginity, who is now a believer, back into her life and the Lord showed her while we were ministering to her that the Lord regarded this man who took her virginity 30 years previously as being her lawful husband in the sight of God.

So we are dealing with things which are profoundly deep and profoundly challenging and are not subject to the whim of man. They are not subject to our willingness to twist the Word of God. The Word of God is quite clear. The taking of a woman's virginity is the act of cutting covenant with that woman and once the covenant is cut, that woman is married to that man. Whether it's a one-night stand, whether it's a rape situation, whether it's a seduction situation, it doesn't matter what the circumstances are. And it is only in the grace and the will of God that He will determine whether that woman and man are free to sever the One Flesh Bond that came into existence with that act of taking virginity or not. There is no one principle that we have found, and we have to say to you that if you are in that situation where at some point as a virgin woman you joined yourself to a man who is not now your husband or vice versa, you will have to seek God yourself before you should even dream of praying for that bond to be broken.

God-willing, we will probably teach in more depth the issues surrounding divorce, surrounding the scriptural basis on which one has the right to come before the Throne of God and break off these ties. What I can say to you with some certainty is that other than the instance of the taking of virginity, those One Flesh Bonds may have come into place. Subsequently, in other words, if you are in a situation of cutting off covenant with a virgin, or as a virgin, and subsequently your other sexual partners between that event and the person with whom you are now living as husband or wife, the intervening relationships have all placed you in the category in the sight of God as being an adulterer, adulterous or a fornicator. Consequently, all of those other One Flesh Bonds are scripturally wrong and you have a basis with repentance and confession of sin to come before the Throne of God to have them cut off. At this point in time, I am not aware of any instance where there is a scriptural basis to indicate otherwise, unless there were very distinct circumstances that you may be aware of, and where you may have a check in your Spirit about a certain situation.

The implication of this also is that you may have been living with somebody for 10, 20, 30 years but because of fornication before that union, you may not strictly be married in the sight of God, no matter what was prayed of you in Church, no matter what pieces of paper you have and no matter what vows you took. My understanding here again is that if you are both believers and if you are serving God, the probability is that the Lord will extend mercy and grace to you and set you free from the commitment that came into existence with the taking of virginity. However, I cannot guarantee you right now that

that will be the case and that would be a case requiring very distinct prophetic ministry in order to ensure the validity of your right to petition the Father in order to set you free.

### **Love or Lust**

I want to speak now a little bit on why the One Flesh Bond does not require love or lust in order to be formed. I touched on that earlier in the context of my testimony and I want to come back to it now in the context of 1 Corinthians 13:1-8. If you turn with me there and read with me, *"Though I speak with the tongues of men and of Angels, but have not love, I have become a sounding brass or a clanging cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and though I have all faith, so that I could move mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, but have not love, it profits me nothing. Love suffers long and is kind; love does not envy; love does not parade itself, is not puffed up; does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love never fails. But whether there are prophecies, they will fail; whether there are tongues, they will cease; whether there is knowledge, it will vanish away."* And if we look at the full scope of verse 8, we see that when that Scripture says that love never fails, it says that in the context that tongues will cease, and knowledge will vanish away.

So, we see that love is an eternal thing and because it is so good and because it is the essence of God, once love has come into existence, it cannot pass away. The only way that love can come to an end from my own experience is through continual treachery. I might add at this point that subsequently, after several years of crying out to God for my marriage to be healed of the things that were wrong before I ever resorted to adultery, the Lord showed me treachery of magnitude which ultimately permitted me to divorce. And in that particular instance when I divorced, when I prayed the prayer of divorce, when I cut off the One Flesh Bond, when I cut off and renounced my marriage vows, when I cut off the soul ties and dealt with other things, the release was instantaneous because in that case, as a consequence of ongoing treachery, love had been destroyed.

### **Divorce**

Love can only be destroyed by a wilful act of, I would almost call it, arson. For a person who is loved, to destroy the love within the one who loves them, requires ongoing wilful and desperate disobedience and rebellion over a protracted period until it comes to a place where love can no longer be sustained, because of the magnitude of the treachery, and that is tragic. That ties in to the scriptural basis of divorce. Divorce is not something that happens because you have just found somebody you think is more attractive. Divorce is not something that happens because for some reason, a woman no longer desires her husband, or whatever the case may be. Divorce is something that happens after you have done everything in your power to save your marriage, after you prayed and interceded. God decides if the magnitude of the treachery is so irreversible that He will take you out. As far as I can determine the only basis on which God would permit you to divorce is when your spouse has reached a point of such apostasy that they are destined for hell with no chance of turning back. That probably represents less than 1% of all divorces that take place in the world today.

So, I would encourage you if you are divorced, and I am not trying to bring condemnation upon you, but it is important that you understand that you may find yourself in a situation resultant on false teaching and false doctrine which has placed you in a potentially invidious spiritual situation. The things that I am teaching today are not things that are subject to whim. These are the hard spiritual

realities of what the Word of God actually says about your situation. It's no good ignoring them and it's no good running from them. They will not go away. They have to be confronted and they have to be dealt with in accordance with the Word of God. We are fortunate under the New Covenant that we have the Holy Spirit within us. We have the prophetic and other ministries readily available to us, but in order for you to deal with whatever situation you may be becoming aware of as I teach, I would strongly encourage you to get in touch with us, to receive ministry from us directly, or to be put in touch with others who may be able to help you obtain other documents and publications from this ministry, which may help you.

Coming back to the passage from Corinthians, we see that love is epitomised by some very simple but very profound behaviour, that it's long-suffering, that it's kind, that it does not envy, that it does not parade itself, that it is not puffed up, that it does not behave rudely, it does not seek its own, does not provoke, thinks no evil, does not rejoice in iniquity but rejoices in the truth. Love bares all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Basically, if you are in a relationship which contained even some of those components, then love exists and love will grow. And the more of those components that are available in the relationship to which I referred, the adulterous relationship, many of those elements were present. There was great kindness. There was great long-suffering and there were many other things. The consequence of that was with the composite of that and intense, passionate desire and sexual lovemaking. Love was built to a profound height and could not just be summarily destroyed when the necessary consequence of the sin became manifested and separation was called for. It's a deeply grievous thing to God. It's a deeply grievous thing to your soul to find yourself in love with somebody that you cannot spend the rest of your life with.

### **Is Love a precondition for Marriage?**

So, the One Flesh Bond is an incredibly powerful spiritual force that Yahweh has given mankind to bind the husband and wife. The man who takes a wife and has regular intercourse with her, both giving themselves to the other without restraint or qualification, will find that love will grow and become more intense with a tighter point where they can't live without one another and they will feel incomplete when separated. This is the One Flesh Bond, an example of the power of love and Yahweh's wisdom. The marriage consummated without love but entered with a total commitment on the part of both parties, not to withhold anything and to consider only the other party, will become a marriage of intense love. Thus we see that love is not a prerequisite for marriage. Marriage is a wholehearted commitment to give all that is scriptural to the spouse, and marriage is a prerequisite for true love in marriage. In fact, it seems to me that so-called love between a man and a woman before marriage is never true marital love as Yahweh intended it. In fact, it is little better than lust. You will not find a single passage of Scripture which indicates that any form of desire or love is necessary between a man and a woman as a precondition for marriage. On the contrary, you will find that Samson lusted or loved. If you research the underlying Hebrew you will find that the word that is used to describe his desire for the Timnite woman and for Delilah is a word that speaks of lust, not of Godly agape love.

There is no Scripture which relates specifically to love being a precondition for marriage, even in the case of Jacob and Rachel. There is nothing to indicate that the intense attraction and desire that Jacob had for Rachel was necessarily Godly or a requirement for that marriage. He found her highly attractive and he chose to do what was required in order to pay the bride a price to take her as his wife. The intense desire and what he felt for her after seven years of being close to her, not being able to consummate the marriage was a natural consequence, which will happen with the attraction of any man for any woman. But it is not prerequisite for marriage. [inaudible 00:44:36] lust had not been present we would not see in the Scriptures the prejudicial attitude that he had to Leah associated with

the deception of Laban in placing Leah in the marital bed. We need to recognise that love, as we call it in the world today, which in fact is lust, is not a prerequisite for marriage and certainly not for successful marriage. In fact, I have to say to you that God intended marriage to work between any man and any woman who consummate marriage. It does not matter what background they come from, it doesn't matter whether they knew each other for five minutes before the act of consummation or not. The principle is that if they apply these principles of God's Word, that marriage will succeed. It will grow strong, love will blossom, and they will flourish and prosper because they are walking in the Word and in the sight of God. If they get married for lust, and for the wrong reasons, and they just spend their time in lust, strife and division they will never have a good marriage. Therefore, most of what you were taught in marriage counselling misses the mark completely.

I should just add that the One Flesh Bond creates a spiritual underpinning for the husband and welds to his Spirit, the second spirit or more than a second spirit that can provide him with the spiritual underpinning that is necessary to accomplish that which God has called him to do. It's important also to recognise as previously stated that One Flesh in marriage corresponds to One Body in Christ. This has been touched in the last teaching and earlier in this teaching, referring to Ephesians 5:31 and 32, which again cites Genesis 2:24, in the context of the relationship between Christ and the Church, and for the sake of completeness, I will just read those verses, *"Therefore, a man shall leave his father and his mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh."* This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church. We must surely conclude that the One Flesh Bond between husband and wife has tremendous spiritual significance.

Consider also Romans 12:4 and 5, *"For as we have many members in one body, but all the members do have not the same function, so we, being many, are one body in Christ."* 1 Corinthians 10:17 *"For we, though many are one bread and one body for we all partake of that one bread."* 1 Corinthians 12:11-31 contains a number of similar verses. I will just highlight a few of them. Verse 12, *"For as the body is one and has many members, but all the members of that one body, being many, are one body, so also is Christ."* 19 and 20, *"And if they were all one member, where would the body be? But now indeed there are many members yet one body."* 26 and 27, *"And if one member suffers, all the members suffer with it. If one member is honoured, all the members rejoice with it. Now you are the body of Christ and members individually."* And with that, you see again the cross reference in the sense that if the wife suffers, the husband suffers. If the husband suffers, the wife suffers. In the same way that if a member of the body of Christ suffers, the whole body suffers and the Lord Jesus Christ suffers.

### **Agape Love**

It is highly significant that this last passage leads immediately into 1 Corinthians 13, described in detail as the agape love of God and also the agape love of brothers in Christ, and significantly in the context of this discussion, the agape love of husband and wife. The Scripture makes it very clear that God, in His wisdom created people different, formed different functions in the body of Christ and this too has a significance in the area of marriage which I will address, God-willing, in a future teaching.

Rottenness in the bones and contention. Proverbs 12:4 reads an excellent wife is the crown of her husband, but she who causes shame is like rottenness in his bones. To understand the Scripture consider Genesis 2:23 and 24 *"And Adam said, this is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh. She shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore, a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined or cleaved to his wife, and they shall become one flesh."* We therefore see that through the One Flesh Bond the wife becomes bone of the husband's bone and flesh of the husband's flesh. That is the meaning of the One Flesh Bond. It is a spiritual bonding together of man and wife,

which is so intense and so powerful that she literally, in a spiritual sense becomes part of his body. She becomes bone of his bone and flesh of his flesh. She is no longer two, they are no longer two, but one. Accordingly, a wife who causes shame brings about a sensation in the man's physical body which can be likened to rotting in his bones.

I have experienced this with a wife who is in strife and division with her husband. It is like something that is rotten and pulling apart. God created man to walk in unity with his wife. A wife who does not walk in unity will have a negative effect on her husband. Conversely, a wife who lives in harmony and unity with her husband will brighten him up and he will achieve great exploits for his God in such a situation and will also accomplish much more for his family. Clearly, this requires that the husband is seeking to serve God faithfully that even if he is not the wife's unity is prerequisite. There are many Scriptures which deal with the subject of a house divided against itself cannot stand, tend to walk together and they still be agreed. And that again, God willing, will be the subject of a subsequent teaching.

Consider also Proverbs 21:9, *"It is better to dwell in a corner of a housetop than in a house shared with a contentious woman or wife."* Proverbs 25:23 and 24, *"The north wind brings forth rain, and a backbiting tongue an angry countenance. It is better to dwell in a corner of a housetop than in a house shared with a contentious woman or wife."* It's important to note that the word translated 'woman' in most English translations is in fact the Hebrew word for 'woman' or 'wife'. It is probably correct to assume that the translation in these cases in fact refers to 'wife' because it is unlikely that a man would be dwelling in a house with a woman who is not his wife. Proverbs 27:15-16 says, *"A continual dripping on a very rainy day and a contentious woman or wife are alike. He who would restrain her, restrains the wind, and grasps oil with his right hand."*

So we clearly see the implications of a woman who dishonours her husband and brings shame to him or a wife who is contentious and argumentative. We have a very clear basis to say that Scripture says that wife, if you are argumentative and contentious with your husband, you will bring about a condition in his Spirit, and in his flesh, which is analogous and feels like rottenness in his bones. In other words, you are going to bring about a situation in which your husband does not want to be in the same room with you, he is not going to want to be in the same house with you. He would prefer to be in the wilderness or he would prefer to live on a corner of the rooftop than to be with you. So, if you are a contentious and a fault-finding wife, the Word of God is quite clear, you have no one but yourself to blame for the fact that your husband does not want to be at home with you and does not enjoy your company, because you are making his life miserable and you are bringing about a state of spiritual dislocation which is an abomination in the sight of God. This requires you to turn around, repent, and to seek your husband and God's forgiveness in order to dwell with him in unity and harmony.

This is brought to home more forcibly in 1 Peter, chapter 3, verses 1 and 2, *"Wives, likewise, be submissive to your own husbands that even if some do not obey the Word, they without a Word, may be won by the conduct of their wives when they observed your chaste conduct accompanied by fear."* There can be no doubt that God does not intend a wife to harass or nag her husband, but requires her to submit to him, love him, and pray for him if he does get out of the will of God willing to error. And the whole passage that is a continuation of what I have just read goes into this much more detail, and I will touch on that in a bit more detail in a moment.



## Submission

I want to talk now about the subject of submission and headship. I want to do that specifically in terms of a number of three-day fasts I have been on in recent weeks, part of which are being directed specifically at seeking the Lord, to understand what's required for husband and wife to walk in perfect unity, perfect harmony, a hundred percent of the time. I will share with you in a moment a series of things which to me profoundly indicate A) How significant it is and B) How easy it is for a husband and wife to walk in unity at all times provided they do so by putting the Word of God first in their lives. And they do it by faith and not by strength and provided in particular, the wife is prepared to exercise self-discipline in order to ensure that she makes a quality decision to serve God faithfully and that the only way she can serve God is by applying the Word of God to her marriage and to her husband. I am not saying that there are not certain things that the husband has to do as well, but today I want to emphasise that through the One Flesh Bond, through what the Word of God says to submission, any woman is in a position to have a profound influence on her husband if she will apply the principles that I am talking about today.

Going back to Ephesians 5:23-24, we see the husband as head of the wife as also Christ is head of the Church and He is the Saviour of the body. Therefore, just as the Church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything. People, I want you to dwell on that word '*everything*.' It doesn't say wives, submit to your husbands when your husband is in the will of God. It doesn't say wives, submit to your husbands when he is bringing home the finances that you consider necessary. It doesn't say wives, submit to your husbands as long as he does not have a stronger anointing on his life than you do. It doesn't say wives, submit to your husbands only when you perceive that he is doing right. It says wives, submit to your husbands in everything. There are no exclusions. It is absolutely unambiguous and it ties in with earlier verses that we have read during this teaching, which also make the same point. You are responsible for going wherever your husband goes and asks you to accompany him, and I speak in spiritual terms as well as physical.

Consider also 1 Corinthians 11:3-15, I am not going to read the whole thing. I just want to pick up verse 3, "*But I want you to know, that the head of every man is Christ, the head of woman is man; and the head of Christ is God.*" The analogy, the hierarchy of order, the hierarchy of authority is unambiguously and clearly start-up. There is no uncertainty. If you feel uncomfortable with what I am sharing with you right now, please, I ask you to hear me through this teaching and I ask you to understand that if you are feeling uncomfortable with what the Word of God is saying to you, the fact that it does not agree with what you may have heard the Church teaching, or it doesn't agree with what you yourself may have been preaching and teaching, does not alter the fact that this is what the Word of God says. God knows better than we do in our limited understanding how He intended marriage to work. And I speak in headlines in the remaining few minutes of this teaching to develop the broad understanding of what I am saying and God-willing, in the weeks ahead this teaching will flesh out certain other key points that arise out of this.

Again, going back to Ephesians 5:22 "*Wives, submit to your husbands as the Lord.*" Colossians 3:18, "*Wives, submit to your own husbands, as is fitting in the Lord.*" Compare that also to James 4:7, "*Therefore, submit to God, resist the Devil, and he will flee from you.*" So, you see that submission is a prerequisite for resisting the devil. You can't resist God and submit to the Devil. You're required to submit to God and resist the Devil. If you are going to submit to God, then if you are a woman you must submit to your husband, because God is the head of Jesus and Jesus is the head of the husband and your husband is your head. Therefore, in order to submit to God, you have to submit to your husband, because God has told you to submit to your husband. If your husband is not in submission

to God, that's your husband's problem, not your problem. It is quite clear that because he is your head, if the head sent the body into pit, it's the head's fault for taking the body into the pit, it's not for the foot to think about going in different ways to where the head tells it. If every organ in the body did its own thing, you wouldn't get out of bed in the morning.

I want to refer you particularly to 1 Peter chapter 2, verse 1 through to chapter 3, verse 18. I am not going to read the whole thing in this teaching, but I would ask you to go and read it, and meditate on it because it contains an enormous revelation about what the Word of God actually says to you as a wife in particular about marriage. I am not saying that there are not things here that apply to the husband. I want to stress that the husband is brought under requirement by the same scriptures to live a Godly life. What I want to show you in the verses that I am about to read to you is that it does not matter what your husband does, you are told to submit to him. So, let's just go through this passage if I get 1 Peter 2 starting verse 13, *"Therefore, submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the King, as supreme; or unto governors, as to those who are sent by him for the punishment of evil doers and for the praise of those who do good, for this is the will of God that by doing good you may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men."*

In verse 18, *"Servants, be submissive to your masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the harsh. For this is commendable, if because of conscience toward God one endures grief, suffering wrongfully. For what credit is it if, when you are beaten for your faults, you take it patiently? But when you do good and suffer, if you take it patiently, this is commendable before God. For to this you were called, because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that you should follow His steps. Who committed no sin, nor was deceit found in His mouth; for when He was reviled, did not revile in return; when He suffered, He did not threaten, but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously; who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we, having died to sins, might live for righteousness—by whose stripes you were healed. For you were like sheep going astray, but have now returned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls. Wives, likewise, be submissive to your own husbands, that even if some do not obey the Word, they, without a Word, may be won by the conduct of their wives, when they observe your chaste conduct accompanied by fear. Do not let your adornment be merely outward—arranging the hair, wearing gold, or putting on fine apparel—rather let it be the hidden person of the heart, with the incorruptible beauty of a gentle and quiet spirit, which is very precious in the sight of God. For in this manner, in former times, the Holy women who trusted in God also adorned themselves, being submissive to their own husbands, as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord, whose daughters you are if you do good and are not afraid with any terror."*

And so, it continues, but the point I want my listeners to please catch up here. We see in chapter 2 that people or Christians are told to suffer patiently when treated unjustly. That is correlated with Jesus Christ who had committed no sin, who had absolutely every basis to call down ten legions of Angels to deliver him, yet He went before the high priests, before Pontius Pilate, before Herod and He was ridiculed, He was beaten, the Crown of Thorns were placed on His head. He was flogged with cat o' nine tails, His blood was pulled out of His truss and He was subjected to the most humiliating and cruel death that man has just about ever devised, crucifixion on the cross, and yet He took it and He did not complain. He did not argue. He went as a lamb to the slaughter. Wives you are told likewise to be submissive to your own husbands. Jesus Christ redeemed the world by His obedience to His head, His father, and He went to the cross. Wives you can redeem your husbands if you will do likewise, calling to the Commandment of God.

So, we see clearly that the wife is called to submit to her husband in all things, even if he is harsh or unjust or ill. But I will say again, draw your attention to that passage of Scripture which specifically

indicates that the Holy woman who trusted in God. So, God is not unjust. God is not asking you, as a wife to suffer and subject yourself to an unjust, harsh or an evil husband just because he is awkward. He is saying, *"Put your trust in Me and I will be your shield and I will protect you and I will guide you, and I will hear your intercession of your husband and I will do whatever is necessary. But in your own strength, wife, you can do nothing, because you are not created to handle the strength to do anything except create rottenness in the bones of your husband."* But understand also that because you are one flesh with your husband and there are Scriptures which say this in Ephesians and elsewhere, is that the husband will experience discomfort if he treats you badly because you are bone of his bone and flesh of his flesh. If he beats you he is going to feel that within his body. If he speaks to you harshly he is going to feel that within his body. If you do not provoke him, if you walk in humble submission, it will become progressively more and more difficult for him to harm you because you will come progressively into the protection of God and you are at liberty to say Father in the name of Jesus, that Your will be done.

"Father, I thank you that your Word says that your Angels came around us who fear You to protect them. I thank you that Your words say that no weapon formed against me shall prosper"...There are numerous other prayers that you can pray of yourself without directing them to your husband and I submit to you that if you do that in humble submission to the Word of God and submission to your husband, the day will come if you walk by faith and not your own understanding where, if your husband continues to deal unjustly with you, the Angel of the Lord, or an Angel of the Lord will intervene and supernaturally protect you and bring your husband to repent. But God can only intervene in your situation if you allow Him to intervene and He will not intervene if you are in rebellion and disobedience to your word.

### **Keeping God's Commandments**

Yesterday I saw a profoundly significant thing in this context. I was listening to a teaching by Creflo Dollar and he referenced 1 John 5:2-6, "By this we know that we love the children of God when we love God and keep His Commandments. For this is the love of God that we keep His Commandments, and His Commandments are not burdensome. Whatever is borne of God overcomes the world and this is the victory that has overcome the world, our faith. Who is he who becomes the world, but he who believes that Jesus is the Son of God? This is he who came by water and blood, Jesus Christ, not only by water but by water and blood and it is the Spirit who bears witness, because the Spirit is truth. So, we see there that a wife who submits to God and obeys the Commandments of God will overcome the world and will overcome the situation in which she finds herself and will be granted the victory through faith by her love for God. And how does she love God? She keeps His Commandments. And how does she keep His Commandments? She submits to her husband. And Creflo Dollar made the point which I think is profoundly important to every Christian. Our obedience to God is a direct measure of our love of God. If we cannot submit to the Word of God, if we do not obey the Word of God and the Spirit of God, we cannot say that we love God. It is not for us to declare our love for God as an absolute opinion of our love of God. It is for us to demonstrate our love of God by our obedience to His Commandments.

If we are not obedient to His Commandments, we cannot say that we love God. It is absolute hypocrisy to declare on one hand I am a Christian and I love Jesus with all my heart and then to walk out in self-will and rebel against the Word of God. You cannot claim, wife, to be truly loving of God if you are not in submission to your husband. And if we take the next step, we have to conclude that a wife's obedience to her husband is a measure of her love of her husband. A wife who is continually arguing, debating, finding fault, criticising, going her own way relative to her husband, cannot claim that she

loves her husband. It is an absolute contradiction of terms to say that you love your husband when you are in permanent rebellion and argumentation with him. The Word of God is quite clear, if you love your husband, submit to Him. And if you submit to Him, you are demonstrating your love for Him. Otherwise you may have lust, you may have an intellectual thing that you call love, but you do not have the love of God directed in your heart towards your husband. If you did, you would obey the Word of God and you would obey and keep His Commandments and therefore you would submit to your husband. But I need to stress to you that this submission is not some weak nammy hammy rollover and play dead submission. It requires strength.

I refer you to Proverbs 31:10-31, which refers to a virtuous wife. *"Surely this woman is a woman of character. She is a woman of strength."* In fact, verse 17 says, *"She guards herself with strength and strengthens her arms."* Verse 16, *"She considers a field and buys it; from her profit she plants a vineyard."* Verse 15, *"She also rises while it is yet night and provides food for her household and a portion for her maid servant."* Verse 14, *"She is like the merchant ship; she brings her food from afar."* Verse 13, *"She seeks wool and flax, and willingly works with her hands."* Verse 12, *"She does her husband good, and not evil, all the days of her life."* Verse 11, *"The heart of her husband safely trusts her, so he will have no lack of gain."* Now, we see that the husband's gain is directly bound up with the virtuousness of his wife. The verses that I have just read in reverse order now build the case to demonstrate that a husband cannot prosper unless his wife is virtuous and exercises herself diligently, in the conduct of the business of the husband, and the business of the family, and the provision and so it goes on. We see a whole string of things which bring honour to her husband. Those requirements are character, a woman of diligence, a woman of inner strength, a woman that her husband can depend on and rely on to get on and do what is necessary to run his household. We see very clearly from this passage of Scripture that it is not the husband's job either to run the household or to tell the wife how to run the household. It's the wife's job to get on and run it, that's what God created her for. She is his helpmeet.

### **Serving God**

The man is called to serve God and do what God has called him to do. He cannot do that if his wife is constantly nagging him to do things around the house and to be her helpmeet. Then I want to say to you again, it takes a strong person to submit like that. God is not calling women to do be weak nammy pammy people who are trodden over. He is calling women to be strength at their husbands' arm to walk hand-in-hand with their husband to do the work God has called them to do, in support of their husband. A good military commander is a man who was a good subordinate. In other words, a subordinate is a man who subordinates his will to the will of his commanding officer, recognising that it is more important for the military unit, be it a regiment, be it an army, be it a platoon, to go forward in unity with one leader than all go in different directions, because they all had different opinions. One of the most fundamental elements of basic training in any army is to teach the new recruits that it is not for him to take decisions and act contrary to the commands given to him by his superior officers and non-commissioned officers. If the officer says fire, everybody fires. If the officer says stop, everybody stops. If he says advance, they all advance. If he says retreat, they all retreat. There is no way that any army in this world will ever win a battle unless that principle is applied. There is no way that any marriage or any family unit in the world will ever make any impact for the Word of God and the Work of God, and the Calling of God on their lives, unless they apply the same principle. Therefore, if the husband says we go forward, they go forward. If the husband says we wait, we wait. If the husband says we retreat, we retreat. If the husband says we will serve God in this way, they serve God in that way.

If the husband falls into apostasy and gets off on a tangent and goes off down a side journey, then his wife goes with him. She may intercede, she may say, *"Lord, I am not sure that this is right, it does not look right to me, or what he is doing is clearly contrary to the Word of God, I ask you to intervene, I ask you to open the doors that you want to open and then may close, I ask you to close the doors that you want to close and none may open. I ask you to bring the people you want into my husband's life and take the people you do not want, out. I ask you to move Lord and guide us and bring my husband back onto the right path if he is on the wrong path."* But you are not called to judge, you are not called to direct your husband. You are called to be a watchman, you are called to say to him, *"My dear, my love, I think that this might be wrong, or what you are about to do or what you have just done clearly is contrary to the Word of God. Please reconsider. I am concerned for you."* But then submit. If he tells you to do something that's absolutely ungodly, tell him that it is absolutely ungodly, but then submit. How can I say that?

### **Abraham and Sarah**

Well, let me refer you to two passages of Scripture. Turn with me, if you will, to Genesis chapter 12, verses 10 to 20. I am sure you are familiar with the story, Abraham and Sarah, his wife, go down into Egypt. Sarah is beautiful. She is his half-sister. Abram says to tell them you are my sister and not my wife lest they kill me for you. She goes down. Pharaoh's people see her. They say that she is beautiful. She is Abraham's sister. They take her into his harem and in verse 17, we read that the Lord played Pharaoh. It starts with great plagues because of Sarah, Abraham's wife. And I just want you to turn back with me while we do this to 1 Peter 3:6, *"As Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord whose daughters you are, if you do good and are not afraid with any terror."*

So, we see here in Genesis 12:17 that Sarai (Sarah) went into Pharaoh's harem because her husband instructed her to say that she was his sister. So she participated in the lie in obedience. She went into his harem, but God intervened, and God protected her, and we read in 17 because of Sarai, Abraham's wife. Now you can read that two ways. You can say that God played Pharaoh because of his sin towards Sarai, but you can also read it as God played Pharaoh that Pharaoh would not sin with Sarai and that Sarai would not sin. In other words, I would submit to you based on what I believe the Lord has shown me on the subject that you can read there with safety that Sarai knew that what she was doing was not right. She prayed in her heart before the Lord and said "Father," presumably not in the name of Jesus, because we are dealing Old Covenant but she prayed to Yahweh and she said *"Yahweh, I am in submission to my husband. I know that what he is asking me do is not right. I do not want to commit adultery, but I must do what my husband has told me to do"* and because of her humble submission, she placed herself in a position where God could intervene and deliver her.

If we turn to Genesis 20:1-18, people make all sorts of judgments on Abraham but that is not the point. We see a repeat instance in the Palestine lands with Abimelek, King of Gerar who again took Sarah. This has now taken place between the time that God appeared to Abraham and changed his name from Abram to Abraham and Sarai to Sarah, but essentially the same thing happened. Sarah is taken into Abimelek's harem to become his wife, but again we read in verse 18 *"For the Lord had closed up all the rooms of the house of Abimelek because of Sarah, Abraham's wife."* Now we can either say that because of the sin, as in the case of Pharaoh or we can also say it was because Sarah had prayed. I would submit to you it is both. I would submit to you again that any wife who, in submission, is called by her husband to do something which she knows as sin, given that the Word of God tells her to submit to her husband in everything and having protested quietly and in submission to her husband and said *"Please, my love, don't ask me to do this, it's contrary to the Word of God."* If he insists and she goes

forward having prayed in her heart and saying *"Father, in the name of Jesus, You know my heart, You know I do not want to do this thing, because if I do it, my husband will be sinning."*

Wives, it's important that you understand because your husband is your head, if you submit to him and you do what the Word of God tells you to do, submit to him in everything and you then go forward and do something that he instructs you to do which is sin in contrary to the Word of God, the sin is not going to fall on you. The sin is your husband's sin. He will be judged for that sin, you will not, provided you have at least taken the measure of warning him that you believe he might be in error. But once you have said to him, *"My love, I really do not feel comfortable with this, either it's categorically contrary to the Word of God,"* which would be of the case with Sarah and Abraham or *"My spirit does not witness this, I think this could be wrong."* And he says to you *"Submit, do what I tell you to do."* You have warned him, you have fulfilled your responsibility as a watchman in terms of [inaudible 01:21:10] and the blood will be on his hands. So whatever sin he calls you to commit, the blood will be on his hands, not on your hands because you have accepted his headship, you have done what your head told you to do.

### Prayer

I truly pray that this teaching has given you a new perspective on the One Flesh Bond and a new perspective on submission in marriage. There is much more that I could talk on, but time is running out and God-willing, as I say, in the weeks ahead, I will address this in more detail. For the sake of those who may not have heard this teaching before and who may find that they have become aware of One Flesh Bond, I will lead you through a simple pray. I would ask you to get somebody to pray in agreement with you. Before you pray this prayer from the tape in a matter-of-fact please satisfy yourself before God, that you have a Holy and righteous basis to pray this prayer. Do not just pray it because you want to cut off a One Flesh Bond with a girl that you took her virginity 30 years ago, and you are now feeling uncomfortable, and you know that she is still down the road and that she is miserable and is still in love with you and that she has never married.

I want to tell you, right now, God is likely saying to you *"Go and make right with her."* He is unlikely to cut the One Flesh Bond and you may bring judgement on yourself by having the temerity to pray this prayer in that situation. There are many other situations where God will almost undoubtedly answer your prayer, particularly with regards to things which pertain to items before you came to salvation or things relating to it. It is a complex subject and not one to be tackled lightly. This Ministry is available to help you. For those of you who can identify clear cut things, if you were in fornication and adultery, if you are in prostitution, if you use prostitutes or whatever the case may be and provided you come to true repentance, you are at liberty to pray this prayer with me and deal with it.

What I have to say to you with my understanding and my experience is that you must deal with each instance, one at a time by name. Don't go and pray this prayer in a group sitting with people you don't know. The person that needs to agree with you and pray needs to be a person of the same gender as yourself, somebody you can rely on. It needs to be prayed privately and with sincerity. You may need to spend some time after listening to this tape, making a list, praying into that list and preparing your heart. The first step is confession of sin, repentance from that sin, request for forgiveness, receive forgiveness and then humble petition before the Throne of Grace for this thing to be broken. Likewise, soul ties must be renounced. Likewise, any vows or promises must be renounced or cut off, but that is the subject of another teaching, which God-willing, will be dealt with in the weeks ahead. Right now, I just want to deal with the One Flesh Bond.

When you have done the homework that I have spoken about and done the necessary preparation, please pray with me the following prayer. *"Father, I come to you in the name of Jesus and I confess that I have committed adultery or fornication with,"* mention the name of the person and you need to pray this with regard to each person, or you need to pray out the list of people here and *"I confess that this is sin and I recognise my sin and I declare my sin before You now in the name of Jesus and I repent of my sin. I turn around and I turn away from my sin and I ask You to forgive me now in Jesus' name. I thank you Father in the name of Jesus, that Your word says that if I confess my sins, you're faithful and just to forgive my sins and therefore, by faith I receive that forgiveness now in Jesus' name, and I worship and adore You and I glorify Your Holy name and I thank You for forgiving my sin, in Jesus' name."*

*Father, I declare and acknowledge that as a consequence of that sin I have One Flesh Bonds with the people that I have just mentioned and I recognise and I acknowledge that Your Word indicates that I have no basis on which to renounce those One Flesh Bonds or to cut those One Flesh Bonds, or even to ask You to cut those One Flesh Bonds. And therefore, Holy Father, in the name of Jesus, I come to You in humble submission. I acknowledge the consequence of my sin, I acknowledge that my Spirit is spread abroad with all the people that I have just mentioned. I acknowledge that my Spirit is pulled asunder and ruined by the spiritual spider's web that attaches me to these people who are no longer part of my life, and I declare that and I acknowledge that is an abomination in Your sight and I come to You now Father in the name of Jesus and I ask You humbly to extend mercy and grace to me in Jesus' name and to cut the One Flesh Bonds"* and again, please name each person, one at a time quietly, reverently before God and receive by faith that which He has for you. Once you finish the list, just continue praying with me. *"I thank You Father that You heard me and I thank You that Your word says that whatsoever two agree on Earth will be done in Heaven and by faith I thank you the One Flesh Bonds have been broken."*

I stress again listeners, please do not have the presumption to pray that prayer with regard to a sexual situation that you do not have complete certainty that you have a reasonable basis to presume on the mercy and the grace of God for deliverance. If you find yourself in a situation where perhaps you are in prostitution, perhaps you regularly may have used prostitutes, perhaps you were in the habit of excessive use of alcohol or drugs and participating in sexual activity when you are not fully aware of what was going on, then I would suggest you make a list as best as you can of names where you have names. Where you can't remember names, make a list of incidents, for example, at Grand Hotel, 25th of November 1995. Put down whatever you can just to act as a trigger point and then when you pray say *"Father, I ask You to cut the One Flesh Bond with the man I had sex with in the Grand Hotel about five years ago and so on, and so forth."*

In so far, as you have been involved in flagrant and extended fornication or prostitution and you have absolutely no way whereby you can remember the names, or even the details of every person you joined yourself to, be they male or female, I would encourage you just to come before the throne and say *"Father, there are so many, You know who they are and I don't. I just ask You in the name of Jesus to cut the One Flesh Bonds with all of them, in Jesus' name."* And I believe He will answer you, provided you come to Him with a humble and a contrite heart and by faith. You have no basis to do it on any other way. I would also like to deal with another issue. Something that's become very apparent to me recently, but because of the strong Pagan influence on the marriage ceremony and the whole approach to marriage that I touched on in the teachings of the preceding two weeks, there are certain things that need to be dealt with in terms of the vast majority of Christian marriages.

Firstly, because the Church today does not recognise the full magnitude of headship and submission that I have just taught on today, women grow up thinking that they have to be their own woman, thinking that they have to be independent. Furthermore, because women generally marry at a much older age than God had intended and applied throughout history until the last century or so, women have become much more autonomous, much more Independent, much more intent on standing on their own feet, making their decisions. Unless they renounce that autonomy and accept their husband's headship as an explicit act of faith, and an explicit conscious decision of their wills, things remain in force in this Spirit realm, which makes it extremely difficult for the average woman today, be she a believer or an unbeliever to actually submit to her husband according to what I have been teaching today. So, I am going to deal with a couple of issues, I am going to lead you first of all through a prayer which wives should pray with their husbands to accept the headship of the wife.

Secondly, I am going to lead you through a prayer which the husband should pray with his wife to extend his covering to her. The subject of covering in its own right is quite complex and an extensive subject which God-willing, will also form a part of another teaching. And then finally, the wife must renounce her own strength and accept her husband's strength and commit herself by faith to submit to her husband. I am going to pray three prayers and I would ask you to pray with me as appropriate. The first is a prayer for a wife to accept the headship of her husband. Just pray after me. *"Father, I come to You in the name of Jesus and I confess that up until now I had not fully accepted the headship of my husband and I have not fully understood the requirement of Scripture with regards to submission and headship. In the name of Jesus, I confess that I have sinned against You and against Heaven, and against my husband, and I confess that sin now and I repent of that sin in Jesus' name. Father, I ask You to forgive me and I thank You by faith for the forgiveness that You grant to me through the Cross of Calvary and the Blood of the Lamb. I thank You for that now in Jesus' name."* Address now to your husband by name, just mention his name where I say 'husband.'

*"Husband, I come before you in the name of Jesus and I declare that the Word of God requires me to accept you as my head and requires me to submit to you. Husband in the name of Jesus, I now declare that you are my head. I renounce my own strength and I accept your strength. Husband in the name of Jesus, I renounced my right to take contradictory views and opinions to yours to find fault with you [inaudible 01:33:27] and in the name of Jesus, I now declare before all the Angels of Heaven and all the hordes of hell that I have renounced my own strength, that I have accepted the headship of my husband and that I have made a choice to subordinate my will to his, to submit to him, to desire him as the Word of God requires me to desire him, to be a helpmeet to him as the Word of God requires me to be a helpmeet to him, to honour him and respect him as my lord and as my head as the Word of God requires. Father, I thank You that by faith, You will change my heart, and You will teach me how to walk in what I have just prayed, and I thank You in Jesus' name for the revelation. I thank You in Jesus' name for the breakthrough and I declare my intention to walk in harmony and unity with my husband for the rest of our time together on Earth, in Jesus' name. I thank You Father for Your mercy and Your grace. Thank You for Your deliverance and I thank You for healing my marriage now, in Jesus' name."*

You may find, wives, that you have put in place all sorts of inner vows. You may have chosen to make yourself sexually unattractive to your husband. You may have done all sorts of things, which have actually had physical consequences. You may have put on weight, you may have developed hormonal conditions, you may have developed other conditions which have been detrimentally affecting your relationship with your husband and detrimentally affecting your health and your ability to what has God has called you to be or to do. In certain cases, you may even find that you have been unable to



get healed of certain physical ailments as a consequence of your rebellion and your [inaudible 01:35:32] to your husband. So the prayer that you have just prayed is a point of departure. You will need to go before God and ask Him to guide you. I would encourage you to think seriously about going on a three-day fast in order to deal with the consequences of the change that is required and as I said, God-willing, in the weeks ahead, there will be other teachings around the subject.

I have actually dealt with the third prayer that I said I would pray and the prayer that I have just prayed so there is only [inaudible 01:36:02]. These prayers are to be prayed by the husband in the presence of the wife. Where I use the word 'wife' please substitute the name of your wife. Husband, please pray with me, *"Father, I come to You in the name of Jesus and I confess that I have not walked in the fullness of my headship towards my wife. I have not fully extended my covering towards her as Scripture requires and I ask You now Lord in the name of Jesus, to guide us and to change our hearts in Jesus' name. And wife, in the name of Jesus, I now extend my covering to you. I now extend my headship to you. I declare my intention to follow the Lord Jesus Christ with all my heart, and all my mind, and all my soul, and all my strength in Jesus' name. I declare my intention to seek to be as Jesus Christ to you and as Jesus Christ is to the Church. I declare my intention to seek to follow the Word of God to the best of my ability and I declare my intention to seek the guidance of the Spirit of God in every situation."*

*I accept that I will stumble, and I will make errors and I accept full responsibility for all sin in this family that is consequent on decisions that I take. I release you now in the name of Jesus from all responsibility in the event that you have warned me of a check in your Spirit or a word from God for scriptural basis to indicate to me that I have taken a wrong turning or a wrong action or a wrong decision. And once you have done that, I accept that the blood will be on my hands and I identify you before the Throne of Judgement, this day from the consequences of your submission to me. And in the name of Jesus, Father I ask You to place the yoke of authority in marriage upon my shoulders where it belongs, to remove it from my wife and to place it on my shoulders. And wife, I accept your declaration of allegiance, your declaration of submission, and I receive it now in Jesus' name. And I declare by faith that we go forward from this point on in perfect harmony, in perfect unity. I declare that we will go the road that God has called us to go. We will seek to follow the Lord our God, with all our hearts, with all our minds, with all our soul, and all our strength as one body united before God, in Jesus name."*

And again, husbands there is much more that you need to deal with. You need to seek to become like Christ. You need to seek to come to a place where your love for your wife is so profound that everything just falls into place. Your behaviour in that regard is not a prerequisite for the wife, nor is the wife's submission a prerequisite for your seeking to become like Jesus. You will both miss it, you will both fall from time to time. That does not give you an excuse for wrong conduct on the other hand, and certainly your wife's acceptance of your covering does not represent a license for you to indulge yourself in any sin of any shape or form, because at the end of the day whatever sin you lead her into as of now having heard and prayed this prayer will clearly and squarely sit on your shoulders on the Day of Judgement.

So, I ask you to recognise that a profoundly significant change has taken place in your marriage as a consequence of the two prayers that you have prayed. I would encourage you over the weeks ahead to seriously and earnestly seek the will and Word of God in your life and that you would encourage your husband, as wife, also to seriously consider a three-day fast in order to deal with issues which the Lord may show you. I would encourage you both to recognise that you may well need to undertake a three-day fast together on a regular basis and I would encourage that to be not only a food fast, but also sexual fast, over a period of time directed at coming fully to the place where God wants you to be and studying the Scriptures. As I said, God-willing, there will be further teachings.

One last point on that, and it will also be the subject of further teaching in due course, God-willing, and that is, as a consequence of the stuff that you have now renounced, there should also be a change in your attitude to sexual intercourse within marriage. Sex is the most profoundly beautiful gift that God has given to mankind on this Earth, that is a shadow and type of joy that we will experience in Heaven and that was touched on in some measure in the teachings of the two previous weeks. There is much that you may well find that you have to deal with in your attitude to sex in the marriage, and again, until you deal with that, until the wife gives herself without reserve to her husband and the husband gives himself without reserve to his wife as is laid down in Scripture, you will find that there are still barriers. I would encourage you to start praying into that, start asking the Lord to show you how your current norms of sexual practice will need to change in order to develop the full strength of the One Flesh Bond. Because, by now I hope that you will be beginning to realise that marriage is profoundly founded on the act of sexual lovemaking between husband and wife, and that if that is not right, the marriage as a whole will be fatally flawed. So, in the name of Jesus, I encourage you to search your hearts in every area of your marriage and seek change in Jesus name.

With that, I would like to close. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you in Jesus' name. Father, I thank You that as we go forth from this teaching, You will etch on the hearts of everyone who hears it, every truth that is of You. I thank You Lord that if I have uttered any word or expressed any concept or made any statement which in any way is not of You, that You will bind it and blow it away in Jesus' name. But all what is of You I thank you Father, will take root in the hearts of those who have heard it and that it will blossom and bring forth fruit and abundance to the glory of Your kingdom. In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, amen.

## 03 04 Love

Today I am going to continue with a series of teachings on marriage. I am particularly going to talk more on the role of the husband and supplying a covering to his wife. However, before I do this, I would like to recap the teachings of the last few weeks. A few weeks ago in the first teaching of this series, we saw very clearly that marriage is a prophetic statement that is provided to give us guidance in our relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. We saw particularly in Ephesians 5:31-32, *"For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh. This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church."* Those two verses are absolutely pivotal in our understanding of marriage as a prophetic statement, that we see the intense parallel between the wonderful relationship that God intended a husband and wife to have, and the wonderful relationship that He intends us to have with the Lord Jesus Christ.

## Marriage

When we fully understand and apply what God intends marriage to be, we can understand what God intends our relationship with Jesus to be. We saw also that there are many wrong teachings in the Church which are giving rise to the extremely high level of divorce, with over two-thirds of Christian marriages reported to be ending in divorce. And consequently, a higher level of adultery and fornication in the Church, which results in the body of the Lord Jesus Christ being joined to the world and in fact being joined to which warlock Satan is, etc. It's very apparent from all of this that before the Lord Jesus Christ returns, the Church must seek to become a spotless bride and in order to become a spotless bride, the Church must deal with the deception and the wrong teachings that we are dealing with in this series.

We saw also that the Word of God clearly says that no adulterous will enter the kingdom of God and therefore the truth must be told as currently, as you will see in the subsequent teaching on adultery. There are enormous numbers of people in the body of Christ today who are unwittingly committing adultery and are not in a place to receive forgiveness because of ongoing unrepented sin.

### **Marriage Covenant**

In the second teaching two weeks ago, we addressed the subject of the marriage covenant and we saw that the marriage covenant is clearly the act of sexual intercourse with a virgin. In the process of researching the Scriptures and expanding the Scriptures, we saw that the Word of God in Genesis 2:24 which refers to a man cleaving into his wife clearly refers to the act of sexual intercourse, and that consequently, the act of sexual intercourse is in fact the act of marriage. We further saw that there is no ceremony or rite with any officiating Priest or any other person regarding marriage, as it is practised in the Church today. In fact, more detailed study reveals that the marriage ceremony as it is practiced by the Church today is in fact more than a Pagan rite coming out of Roman times.

Having recognised that sexual intercourse with a virgin is in fact the act of marriage, it then became apparent that sexual intercourse with a woman who is not a virgin is adultery. That will lead to a part in the lake of fire and brimstone except in those specific cases we got a husband and a woman to divorce. And therefore it is absolutely vital that every person on this Earth comes to a clear revelation of exactly what marriage is and is not, and what adultery is and is not, because as I said previously, there are an enormous number of men and women today who truly believe that they are in marriages that are acceptable in the sight of God, yet according to Jesus teaching in Matthew 5 and Matthew 19 they are living in adultery and there may be no course out of that adultery, except to dissolve the marriage and return to the spouses they were originally married to. This is an extremely difficult teaching and one which requires enormous prayer and enormous searching in the Word of God, in which God-willing, in the weeks ahead, I will be able to expand to a level where you would be able to grasp the full magnitude of what is required and also to understand God's marvellous plan for redeeming marriage in this age. We also stressed in that teaching that those who are teaching that are contrary regarding marriage and either regarding it as being a ceremony or a vow taken in churches distinct from the act of sexual intercourse or teaching people that they can get divorced on various grounds which have no foundation in scripture, need to repent of their sins because at this stage and many men and women of God by heaping up judgement for themselves on the day of judgement. Likewise, we saw that those who have married contrary to Scripture need to urgently seek guidance regarding their current state.

### **Submission and Covering**

In the third teaching last week, we went more in depth into the subject of covering and particularly into the subject of submission and we saw in Ephesians 5:23-24 that the Word of God says very clearly that *"The husband is the head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the Church and He is the Saviour of the body. Therefore, just as the Church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything."* We went at some length into that passage of Scripture and we noted that it requires a wife to submit to her husband in everything, not just in those things which are lawful, scriptural, or in the will of God, all that she likes, all that she wants to do, but in fact in everything. We saw that this is an extremely challenging Scripture which requires considerable revelation to see how positive it is since the feminist world would have us believe that this is discriminatory when in fact it is empowering. God-willing, these principles will be presented in more detail in the teachings that follow.

We then saw in 1 Peter chapters 2 and 3, an extensive teaching on the responsibility of Christians generally to be submissive to their masters, their rulers and so forth. And we saw that we were specifically enjoined to following Christ's footsteps in that He had suffered for us, leaving us an example where He was reviled. He did not revile in return when He suffered, He did not threaten, but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously. So, we see that Jesus is held up as an example to us as a man who was entirely righteous, who had absolutely no sin, yet He was falsely accused, falsely convicted, and falsely crucified, and yet He didn't revile, He didn't argue, and we are enjoined as Christians to follow that example. More specifically in 1 Peter 3:1, the chapter starts, *"Wives, likewise be submissive to your own husbands, even if some do not obey the word without a word, maybe one by the conduct of their wives."* And what we saw there is that wives are told to submit to their husbands as Jesus submitted to the high Priests and the Pharisees when they crucified Him. In other words, a wife should submit to her husband in absolutely everything. She should not argue with him. She should not revile him. She should not fight with him.

Again, an extremely difficult Scripture in terms of our current understanding, but it's important to note that chapter is also referring to believing wives and believing husbands because it says that even if some do not obey the Word, they without the Word, may be one by the conduct of their wives. In other words, that verse is indicating to us that a woman who truly submits to her husband, or when her husband [inaudible 00:08:42] from his sin by her conduct, not arguing with him and not [inaudible 00:08:46] with him. Verse 2 goes on *"When they observe your chaste conduct accompanied by fear."* And in verse 6 we read, *"As Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord: whose daughters ye are, if you do good, and are not afraid with any terror."* And so, we see that even a husband is cruel, unjust, or beats his wife. 1 Peter 3:1 clearly indicates that wife is still required to submit to her husband and that by submitting to her husband in that way she may bring him to repentance.

Referring to 1 Peter 3:6 we saw that Sarah is cited as an example of a godly woman and we saw that Sarah obeyed Abraham, even when it required her to misrepresent a marital status and place herself in a position where she could be committing adultery with Pharaoh and Abimelek. We went into some detail in the Scriptures which deal with those two instances. The first where Abraham and Sarah went into Egypt and Sarah was taken into Pharaoh's harem. The Lord struck Pharaoh and his court. The second instance where Sarah was taken into Abimelek's harem, again the Lord struck Abimelek's court. From this we concluded that a wife was required to submit to her husband even if it involved her sinning. But we observe that since by submitting to her husband in everything a Scripture required, the sin would then be upon her husband and not on her. We concluded that there was presumably an obligation on her to at least advise him that he was requiring her to sin and therefore bringing sin upon his own head.

We concluded from the verses we have stated that God intervened in both these cases. Sarah, in a case where a God-fearing wife submitted to her husband when he required her to sin, and God would protect her. Assumption is that she advised her husband that she will be sinning, because of her love of God, reverence for the Word of God and love of her husband, but she will nevertheless submit and do what her husband requires of her. It appears that under such circumstances, a truly God-fearing woman can hope for the Lord to move in this situation as He did to Sarah to protect her. And if we read further, in 1 Peter 3, we see that the Scriptures clearly indicates that God will act. For example, 1 Peter 3:12 says *"For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers: but the face of the Lord is against those who do evil. And who is he who will harm you if you become followers of what is good."* Again, it's clear from the Scriptures that the Word of God is saying

that a wife who truly submits to her husband and in obedience to the Word of God, will fall under divine protection.

We further saw in the same teaching that just as our obedience to the Word of God and the Spirit of God is a measure of our love of God, a wife's obedience to her husband is a measure of her love for her husband. We further considered Proverbs 31 which clearly indicates that a Godly submissive wife is in fact a strong entrepreneurial wife, which at first glance in terms of modern context, would seem to be a complete contradiction in terms. This is explained by referring to the military example where military experience indicates that the best military commanders are those who are being the best subordinates. In other words, self-discipline is sufficiently great, that they are willing and able to subordinate their will to the will of their commanding officer. We noted that in battle, a soldier who disobeys commands puts not only his own life, but that of his fellow soldiers at risk. Likewise, in spiritual warfare, a wife who is not in complete submission to her husband places her family at risk of enemy attack. And therefore it requires a woman with strong self will and strong self discipline to submit to her husband in all things and to accept his headship.

### **Watchmen**

We further noted in [inaudible 00:13:05] which refer to watchman, clearly provide a basis to conclude that every wife has a responsibility to warn her husband of spiritual danger whether she sees this with her natural eye in the Spirit, by the Spirit of God, or by the Word of God. However, when she has given the warning, if her husband chooses to ignore the warning, the blood will be on his hands and his wife is therefore indemnified.

We concluded by praying for wives to take their husbands' covering and for husbands to extend their covering to their wives. This on the basis that modern teaching has brought about a situation in which it is not a given that a woman automatically renounces whatever she may have put in place in terms of so false prayers, inner vows, other active decisions or passive decisions to be master of her own destiny, which is the prevalent teaching in the world today. We also led husbands in prayer to accept overall responsibility for their wives, and in particular to accept that if they sinned and took their wives into sin, they accepted full responsibility and indemnified their wives and accepted that the blood would be on their hands.

I would now like to take this teaching further and in doing so I would like to note that [inaudible 00:14:26] going down the journey of understanding and applying these principles in our own lives even as we teach them. And therefore I expect that even in the weeks ahead, our depth of revelation in this area will continue to grow at an exploding rate as it has been doing in the last few weeks.

Even since the last teaching, a number of specific instances have given us a greater understanding of what this teaching means in practice. And from this it is becoming increasingly apparent to me why Scripture [inaudible 00:14:58] to marry in the faith. 1 Corinthians 7:39 says "A wife is bound by law as long as her husband lives. But if her husband dies, she is at liberty to be married to whom she wishes, only in the Lord." Clearly, if a husband is not in the Lord, Satan can use him to abuse and mistreat his wife. And if a wife is not in the Lord, Satan can use her to undermine her husband and to cripple him spiritually. Accordingly, it is clear that a woman should marry a man who is a material believer and one whom she is willing to submit to. Conversely, a man should marry a woman who is clearly willing to submit to him. The theme of this indicates that her husband should be significantly older than his wife. These are principles which cannot be stressed enough. The tendency of the modern age is to marry based on so-called , which is generally lust as was mentioned in earlier teachings. There is no

basis in Scripture to infer that it is necessary for a man and woman, even to admit one another before marriage as we saw in the case of Isaac and Rebecca and equally there is no basis for there to be any material attraction between a man and a woman before marriage.

### **One Flesh Bond**

God created marriage to work. He has provided us with incredibly powerful spiritual bones as in the One Flesh Bond which we discussed in some length in previous teaching. And these forces are quite sufficient for the marriage to be successful, provided these principles that are being taught in this series are applied. That requires that the wife is a God-fearing wife who submits to her husband and that the husband seeks to become like Jesus. But we have seen in the teachings with regards to submission that in actual fact, there is no basis for a wife to seek divorce, even if her husband is not fearing God. In contrast to this, we are aware of a number of instances where the Lord has permitted divorce, but in general this seems to only happen after many years, by which I mean, 10 or 20 years and interceding for a husband who is out of the will of God. In those cases, it may be that divorce is only permitted for the sake of the children when the husband tends to complete apostasy and becomes heavily demonised and starts to serve Satan.

What we have potentially seen is that it is the Lord's will that we come into absolute total harmony. Even the smallest disharmony or disunity can be used by the enemy. Clearly, this is a progressive process, but ultimately if a man and woman are one flesh, if they are completely united in one, there is no potential for them to differ even on the smallest points simply because they see themselves as being one and not two people. This applies particularly in terms of areas of sexual intimacy and just the day-to-day relationship between a husband and his wife. God intends them to be absolutely close, absolutely one, to see things together in the Spirit with one vision. Clearly this is not something that happens overnight. It requires a definite and dedicated intention and commitment to come into this place and prayer and fasting to get to that situation.

### **Agape Love**

What's also become apparent to us is that the only way that this can become real in the case of a couple is to the agape love of God, and that is the love of the husband for his wife and the love of the wife for her husband. There are many scriptures which tell husbands to love their wives. Ephesians 5:33 enjoins the husband to love his wife and there are many other scriptures that do the same. For example, Colossians 3:19 "Husbands, love your wives and do not be bitter to them." So, in many cases where the Word of God refers to a wife submitting to her husband, we find the corollary to that of husbands to love their wives. Clearly a husband who does not love his wife and is not as Jesus would be towards his wife makes it extremely difficult for his wife to walk in full submission. But the lesson that we learned in terms of the teaching on submission last week, is that the fact that the husband is not walking as Jesus walked and is no excuse for the wife not to seek to walk as Jesus would have walked towards her husband. Each of us is accountable. The husband will be accountable on the Day of Judgement for whether he did all in his ability by the Spirit to walk as Jesus walked. His wife will be judged according to her submission and her willingness to lay down her life to serve her husband.

The first scriptures bring what I just said about love into sharp focus in Proverbs 10:12. It says, "Hatred stirs up strife, but love covers all sins." Therefore, we take that particular verse and apply that to the current subject of marriage, and what it appears to indicate is that love between a husband and wife will cover a multitude of sins in the marriage, and a couple that are walking in profound agape God-given love, not in the lust of the world, will be profoundly blessed. 1 John 4:18 says, "There is no fear

in love. But perfect love drives out fear, because fear involves torment, but he who fears is not made perfect in love." Again, we see perfect love casts out fear. In a situation in marriage where there is fear on the part of the wife with regards to anything, is an indication that love is not being perfected in either her or her husband. 1 John 4:16 says, "And we have known and believed the love that God has for us. God is love, and he who abides in love abides in God, and God in him." By extension, as we said earlier out of Ephesians 5:32, we can draw the conclusion that all the Scriptures which relate to our love for Jesus and His love for us apply equally to a wife's love for her husband and the husband's love for the wife. And so we see that a wife who abides in love towards her husband will abide in her husband, and her husband will abide in her and that is the level of intensity, intimate oneness that I believe that God is calling us to aspire to and to seek forth by faith in the spirit.

### **Love is from God**

1 John 4:7-8 says, "Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and everyone who loves is born of God, and knows God. He who does not love does not know God, for God is love." Again, we are talking about the profound agape love of God that is described so eloquently in 1 Corinthians 13, which is tolerant in long-suffering. This requires that both husband and wife potentially rethink their attitude to one another in a significant fashion. Chapter 1 verses 5-8 we see this, "but also for this very reason giving all diligence, add to your faith, virtue, to virtue knowledge, to knowledge self-control, to self-control perseverance, to perseverance godliness, to brotherly kindness, and to brotherly kindness love. For these things are yours in abound, you will be neither barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ."

Again, we see a series of verses and concepts which, taken together, have a profound impact in terms of our relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore in terms of our relationships between husband and wife, and in particular if one takes that same passage and applies it to a wife giving all diligence, adding to faith virtue, to virtue knowledge, to knowledge self-control, to self-control perseverance, to perseverance godliness, to godliness brotherly kindness, and to brotherly kindness love, we can begin to imagine the nature of the relationship that there will be between husband and wife. 1 Peter 4:8 says, "Above all things, have fervent love for one another, for love will cover a multitude of sins." That is again citing the diverse seen in Proverbs that I quoted a moment ago, Proverbs 10-12.

### **Love in Marriage**

I cannot underplay and I cannot stress sufficiently the importance of love in marriage, but I say again, this is not carnal lust born out of appearances, it's not based on what the object of one's love looks like, how attractive they are sexually [inaudible 00:24:41] any moment of time what they wear, how they dress. It's very profound love which comes into being through the act of making love through laying down one another's lives, or the laying down of lives for one another and just completely losing sight of self and seeing the marriage, the husband and wife as being completely joined to one another, and not seeing any basis to draw distinction between the two of them. I referred earlier, and I'd just like to go back to 1 Peter 3:8-17 which follows on directly after the passage where wives are told to be submissive to their husbands in the same way that Jesus was submissive to the high Priests and the Pharisees. This says, *"Finally, all of you be of one mind, having compassion for one another; love as brothers, be tender-hearted, be courteous; not returning evil for evil or reviling for reviling, but on the contrary, blessing, knowing that you were called to this, that you may inherit a blessing."* We see that clearly in marriage there should not be a trading of insults or a trading of abuse. *"For he who would love life and see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips from speaking deceit. Let*

*him turn away from evil and do good; let him seek peace and pursue it. For the eyes of the Lord are on the righteous, and His ears are open to their prayers; but the face of the Lord is against those who do evil. And who is he who will harm you if you become followers of what is good? But even if you should suffer for righteousness' sake, you are blessed. And do not be afraid of their threats, nor be troubled. But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts, and always be ready to give a defence to everyone who asks you a reason for the hope that is in you, with meekness and fear; having a good conscience, that when they defame you as evildoers, those who revile your good conduct in Christ may be ashamed. For it is better, if it is the will of God, to suffer for doing good than for doing evil."*

So, we see bracketing and closing off the passage about the submission of wives, a confirmation that any wife who sanctifies herself towards the Lord God and submits to her husband will fall under the Lord's protection. And even if for some reason that protection is not evident in her life, it is better for her to suffer from doing good, that is submitting to her husband, than doing evil which would be to fight with him and to argue with him. We saw again, in the teachings last week, the extent to which a wife who strife's with her husband and argues with her husband is condemned by the Word of God. It is stated that it is better in such a case for man to dwell in the corner of a rooftop than to dwell in the house with a wife who is contentious and faultfinding.

### **Definition of Love**

1 Corinthians 13:1-13 provides a profound definition of love, which is touched on last week, but just a few points, starting at verse 4. *"Love suffers long and is kind. Love does not envy, love does not parade itself, is not puffed up, it does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil, does not rejoice in iniquity but rejoices in the truth. Bares all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things, love never fails."* And so, we see again that if that love is applied in marriage, husband for wife and wife for husband, so much of what we see is wrong in marriage today will just simply disappear. If there is no defending of self, if there is no arguing on the basis of self-centredness, if there is no withholding on the basis of things which self does not want to do, or say and that the only requirement is to do the will of God in the marriage and to walk in unity and harmony, love will overcome the multitude of sins.

Romans 13:8-10 says, *"Owe no one anything, except to love one another, for he who loves another has fulfilled the law. For the Commandments, you shall not commit adultery, you shall not murder, you shall not steal, you shall not bear false witness, you shall not covet. And if there is any other Commandment summed up in the same, namely 'You shall love your neighbour as yourself.' Love does no wrong to a neighbour; therefore, love is the fulfilment of the law."* Again, we see drawing all of this together so wonderfully that where the Word of God commits a husband to love his wife and a wife to love her husband, that is the fulfilment of the law. So, a wife that is in submission to her husband and is loving her husband is fulfilling the law. In such a circumstance it seems to me that it will be extremely difficult for even a reprobate husband to take his wife into serious sin and deception. To me these passages demonstrate in a profound way the enormous power,( perhaps not quite the right word), but I am going to use it for the purposes of what I am about to say. God has given a wife enormous power over her husband, but that power is the power of the cross. It's a power of a life sacrificed for the Word of God and the Will of God in submission to her husband. And the Word of God is quite clear that the things of God [inaudible 00:30:28] to the world. And therefore, as much as it may seem foolish for a wife to submit to her husband even if he is in major sin, we see the example of the Lord Jesus Christ himself demonstrate that submission, weakness and humility are the most powerful things on this Earth. The Love of God is more powerful than anything that seeks to bring destruction, anything that seeks to serve Satan. Satan does not understand love, and the profound



love between husband and wife is the most fundamentally powerful force that there is to protect a marriage.

### **Lovemaking**

Romans 8:33-39 *"Who shall bring any charge against God's elect? It is God who justifies. Who is he who condemns? That is Christ who died and furthermore, He is also risen. Who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes interceding for us. Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, 'For your sake we are being killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.' In all these things we are more than conquerors through Him who loved us. For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor Angels nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord."* And again, I would like to bring this back to the love between a husband and a wife as I explained a couple of weeks ago. The Word of God is quite clear. As a man cleaves into his wife as they repeatedly give themselves to one another in sexual lovemaking, they are literally making love, they are creating love and the more there is harmony, the more there is unity, the more they give totally to one another in sexual pleasure and every aspect of their marriage, the greater the strength of that love will become until it becomes an absolutely massive force which is unbreakable. As we have seen this is capable of conquering in every dimension.

### **The Power of love**

So, we see that as a man comes to love his wife, it is impossible for that love to be end, and likewise as a wife loves her husband with the agape love of God, it is impossible for that love to end. Therefore, any couple that seek to get divorced on the basis of, I don't love him anymore, or, I don't love her anymore, are completely in error and completely deceived. There is absolutely no ways that God has intended divorce or marriage to end because there is no love. There is only no love if there is bitterness and strife, and a failure to submit. A wife who submits to her husband, no matter what the cost will bring about a profound love that will certainly lead her husband back from wherever he may be. The power of love is beyond anything that we can comprehend. John 15:12-14 says, *"This is my Commandment, that you love one another as I have loved you. Greater love has no one than this, than to lay down one's life for his Friends. You are my Friends if you do whatever I command you."*

Again, if you bring this into the context of marriage, greater love has no wife than to lay down her life for her husband and greater love has no husband than to lay down his life for his wife. And today I am not just referring to physical death by some act of heroism or substitution in martyrdom or something like that. I am referring to the laying down of one's life in prayer, in intercession, in fasting, in serving. Just generally doing all that you can to love one another as the Lord Jesus Christ has loved us. And if we do that, then Jesus says that we will be His Friends, because that is His Commandment.

We cannot hide behind self-centredness and selfishness in order to excuse the lack of submission on the part of your wife or a lack of love on the part of a husband. These Scriptures and many others provide a powerful indication of how love between husband and wife is intended to be. I would encourage you to take a concordance and research the Scriptures that deal with love if you got them electronically on computer. There is an enormous number. I just pulled out a few on which I have just been speaking, but there are many, many others. If you get a profound revelation that Ephesians 5 is clearly saying to us, that the love between Christ and his Church, and the love between husband and wife is directly comparable, and you get to understand that we are Commanded husband, to love wife,

and wife, to love husband, that every one of these Scriptures provide us with a direct teaching on what that love should be, you will begin to understand that the magnitude and the wonder of what God has created marriage to be.

I'd just like to touch on a few other points before I close. It's important to understand, those listening to this teaching may be wondering why I place so much emphasis on submission. Part of the reason for that is simply that the submission of a wife to her husband is something that has largely been lost in my observation. In the teachings of the Church today we see feminist [inaudible 00:36:18] teachings which effectively, if you cut through the niceties of what is taught, the wrong application of Scripture effectively tells her husband to submit to his wife. And it's therefore important to restore the balance in this series of teachings that I want to show you just briefly that God has provided some very powerful counterbalances to deal with the situation of a husband who is not serving God as he should.

### **Abuse**

There are others, and some of them I touched on in the previous teachings. Consider for a moment Ephesians 5:28-33 *"So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. For no one has ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the Church, for we are members of His body, of His flesh, of His bones. For this reason, a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh. This is in fact mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church. Nevertheless, let each one of you in particular so love his own wife as himself, and let the wife see that she respects her husband."*

So, let's go back to the verse which says, for no one ever hated his own flesh but nourishes and cherishes it just as the Lord does of the Church. We saw previously that in Genesis, the wife becomes bone of the husband's bones and flesh of the husband's flesh, and this is not some abstract, satiric concept. It's very profound and it's a very real thing in a situation where a husband is spiritually sensitive. He, as we saw last week, experiences sensation which is similar to rottenness in his bones if his wife strife's and is contentious with him. If we take that further we see that since a wife is one flesh with her husband anything that he does to hurt her emotionally, scripturally, or physically will also harm himself in a similar fashion because she is bone of his bone and flesh of his flesh. In other words, a husband that physically abuses or beats his wife is physically abusing or beating his own body and he will experience that in greater or lesser measure. I think it's a measure of the total ignorance of the Church today in these matters but nobody is addressing the subject.

The reality is that a man who beats his wife will experience distress and because he doesn't know the truth. We have situations which men keep beating their wives on the basis that they claim that their wives are hurting them. So, we see, because of the deception, a completely terrible spiral of destruction where the more he beats his wife, the more it hurts him, and the more he accuses her of hurting him. And these are factors which are so deep that I don't think that I even begin to understand the full significance of what I have just said to you. But if we can come to understand that any man who physically, emotionally or spiritually abuses his wife in any way is going to cause distress in himself. He should not be surprised in the least if misusing his wife or abusing his wife causes him to feel the sensation of rottenness in his bones, to feel dislocated in joint because he is. If he is not loving his wife as Christ loves the Church, then he is bringing about spiritual distress to his own body. And accordingly, the best way for him to stop that distress is for him to stop hurting or abusing his wife.

And so, we see one aspect of the powerful counterbalance that God in his infinite wisdom has provided against the man abusing a wife who is in complete submission to him. Clearly the counterpoint to this

is a woman who lawfully puts self above submission to her husband and rebellion against him, will bring herself into the situation that we saw in Proverbs which relate to a man married to such a woman who is better off in the wilderness, or on the corner of a housetop.

## Covering

I have mentioned that a man covers his wife and I am going to just touch on a few points today, and God-willing next week, I will carry on with this teaching. It's important to understand that a husband provides his spiritual covering for his wife. I saw this yesterday as a man holding a large and very solid umbrella. That umbrella is in fact the Lord Jesus Christ who is the man's covering. In the vision I saw that as long as the woman stayed in complete submission to her husband, she stayed under the umbrella or covering that was sheltering them. All forces of hell were raining down, demonic attacks in the family unit but they were being deflected by the covering. While she was under this covering, the wife was at peace and [inaudible 00:41:17] securing in her husband. As soon as she started to strife with her husband, she [inaudible 00:41:21] he could no longer hold up the umbrella and she exposed herself to the enemies' attack because she stayed out from under her husband's covering.

At this time, the Lord brought to remembrance to elderly widows that we know. All of them as best as we can discern had been in submission and desire for her husband throughout their husband. The [inaudible 00:41:42] husband [inaudible 00:41:44] shortly before his death that she was a strong old woman who would not listen to him. The first woman is still vibrant, strong, and self confident. The latter woman is worn down apparently by all the burden that she has brought on by failing to walk in submission to her husband. Again, this vision of the covering is profoundly important in this day. Women who seek to be their own woman within marriage and not place their husband first, not to submit to them, not to walk in harmony with them bring themselves into a place where they carry an enormous burden of Satanic and Demonic attack. They break down their family, and again, there are Scriptures which say that a wife who is foolish with [inaudible 00:42:33] and it's really important that we understand the extent which a woman who is in submission and in obedience to her husband will turn them to success of her husband and therefore the success of her family, in converse to a wife who strives with her husband will weaken and break him down unless of course the husband chooses to get into submission with her. And I have to say to you, just about everything that I have heard or taught on marriage in the last few years, having gone through a marriage, which eventually broke down and then remarrying, virtually everything that I have encountered on the subject of marriage has, by implication required the husband to come into submission with his wife if she is not in submission with him. It's ungodly, it's unscriptural, and it places an enormous and unfair burden on the wife that will ultimately destroy her spiritually.

[inaudible 00:43:37] demonstrate the principle of covering by the example of Job. If you would like to turn to Job chapter 1, I am reading from verse 9, *"So Satan answered the Lord and said, 'Does Job fear God for nothing? Have you not made a hedge around him, around his household, and around all that he has, on every side? You have blessed the work of his hands, and his possessions have increased in the land. But now stretch out your hand and touch all that he has, and he will surely curse you to your face.'"* I want you to note particularly that phrase *'touch all that he has.'* *"And the Lord said to Satan, 'Behold, all that he has is in your power and you do not lay a hand on his person.'* *So, Satan went out from the presence of the Lord."* And again, in verse 12, I want you to see that the Lord said to Satan *'behold, all that he has is in your power.'* So, anything that Job had was in Satan's power.

I read from verse 13, *"Now there was a day when his sons and daughters were eating and drinking wine in their oldest brother's house, and a Messenger came to Job and said, 'The oxen were ploughing*

*and the donkeys feeding beside them, and the Sabeans fell upon them and took them and struck down the Servants with the edge of the sword, and I alone have escaped to tell you.' While he was still speaking, another came and said, 'The fire of God fell from Heaven and burned up the sheep and the Servants and consumed them, and I alone have escaped to tell you.' While he was still speaking, another also came and said, 'The Chaldeans formed three groups and made a raid on the camels and took them and struck down the Servants with the edge of the sword, and I alone have escaped to tell you.' While he was still speaking, another also came and said, 'Your sons and daughters were eating and drinking wine in their oldest brother's house, and suddenly a great wind came from across the wilderness and struck the four corners of the house, and it fell on the young people, and they are dead, and I alone have escaped to tell you.' Then Job arose and pulled his robe and shaved his head and he fell on the ground and worshiped. And he said, 'Naked I came from my mother's womb, and naked shall I return there. The Lord gave, and the Lord has taken away; blessed be the name of the Lord.' In all this Job did not sin or charge God with wrong."*

It's really important that you see that literally Satan takes all that Job had. There is handful of three or four Servants who escaped to come and tell him that all that he had, had been destroyed or taken away. His children were destroyed, his flocks and his camels were all taken. His Servants were all destroyed. If we carry on in Job 2, reading from verse 6, "And the Lord then said to Satan, 'Behold, he is in your hand; only spare his life.' So Satan went out from the presence of the Lord and struck Job with painful boils from the sole of his foot to the crown of his head. And he took for himself a piece of broken pottery with which to scrape himself while he sat in the midst of the ashes. Then his wife said to him, 'Do you still hold fast your integrity? Curse God and die.' But he said to her, 'You speak as one of the foolish women would speak. Shall we receive good from God, and shall we not receive evil?'"

What I ask you to notice is that his wife through all of this was untouched. So God had said to Satan in verse 12 of chapter 1, "Behold, all that he has is in your power and you do not lay a hand on his person." Even after, in Job 2:6, "*Behold, he is in your hand, but spare his life.*" We see that Job's wife was completely untouched. So, we must assume that Job's wife was in full submission to him, not withstanding her seemingly angry [inaudible 00:47:46] Why he didn't curse God. But in all the distraction that took place, Satan was unable to touch Job's wife. And I believe that is a remarkable example of what is meant by the covering of a man for his wife. And I really would encourage those people who are listening to this teaching to recognise that the covering that God provides to a God-fearing woman, who is in submission to her husband is profound and powerful [inaudible 00:48:23] in a situation such as Job's where absolutely everything is destroyed, where lightning falls, where raiders come, where there is absolute destruction, where the individual concerned, the husband is grievously affected in his body with boils and desperately ill. His wife comes through absolutely unscathed and untouched in her person. And to me that is an absolutely wonderful demonstration of God's provision for a God-fearing woman who is in submission to her husband.

Next week I will provide a much more detailed teaching on the subject of covering and provide you with more Scriptures on the subject. [inaudible 00:49:05] a few further thoughts, one of the things that I have seen in the last week that the Lord has been showing me very clearly is that the husband bears the brunt of any attack by the enemy when his house is divided, even if his wife is in lawful disobedience. And we see that in Job's case again, notwithstanding where his wife may have been spiritually, Job bore the brunt of the attack. But in any situation where there is division in a house, where there is hindrance, the husband is the person who is responsible for that house. He is accountable before God, and when Satan attacks that house, he will attack first and foremost the

husband. The wife will come under attack where there are very specific instances where her sin is very personal, in which case she will experience very personal affliction.

So, instances where a wife is guilty of certain sin which her husband may not be aware of, sin which particularly affects her, and she may experience distress in her body. She may experience illness. She may experience a lack of three things which are important to her husband. So, a situation in which a wife in particular is experiencing such things, would be indicative of personal sin that she needs to deal with that's distinct from the sin of the household. But ultimately the husband is responsible if his house is divided or for that matter, if his wife is in sin and therefore he will bear the brunt of Satan's attacks in many, many case.

Bear in mind what I have just said. That's also becoming increasingly apparent to me why many men have affairs with their secretaries. A good secretary must be in submission to her boss and respect and esteem him. If his wife is not in submission, does not esteem and respect him, the husband becomes very vulnerable to a woman who is doing this. Conversely, a secretary whose husband abuses and treats her with dishonour, will find herself drawn to an employer who treats her with respect and honours her as a capable trustworthy and submissive employee. The conclusion of that, in such situation where her husband who finds himself in an affair with a secretary, the wife should first of all examine herself. If she is not in submission, if she is not meeting her husband's needs, and not being the wife that the Scriptures require her to be, she has to ask herself to what extent she is responsible for the situation. Equally it's important to understand that Exodus 21, the first two verses makes it quite clear that it was God's intention for a man to be married to the woman who works closely with him. But that is a separate teaching.

Time does not permit to continue today. This is an extremely deep and complex subject, but God-willing, we will be able to bring further understanding in the weeks ahead. Father in the name of Jesus, I just bring this teaching before You in the name of Jesus and I ask You, by Your spirit to blow away and utterly destroy anything that has been said by me that is [inaudible 00:52:19], but that which is of You Lord, I give You the honour, I give You the glory and I ask You Father in the name of Jesus to etch it deeply on the hearts of everybody who listens to this tape. And as they listen, to give them the revelation of the wonder and the beauty of marriage as You intended it to be and that they may walk in the fullness of what You have appointed for Godly marriage within the body of Christ. I thank You Father that You will raise up, stand up for people who laid down their lives to serve You in the fullness of what You have appointed marriage to be, in Jesus' name.

I would ask anybody who is listening to this tape who does not have a personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ and who has perhaps been caused to stumble, by the fact of their observation of marriage is such that they cannot believe that God is real or that the Bible is what it claims to be, to seriously consider now turning around. The Lord Jesus Christ wants to save you. His words [inaudible 00:53:29] open up to me I will come and I will serve with you. If you don't have a personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ, I would encourage you right now just to kneel before Him and to pray after me. *"Father, I come to You in the name of Jesus and I confess that I don't have a personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. I realise [inaudible 00:53:57] bring me to salvation. I ask You Jesus now to come and dwell in my life, to come and dwell in my heart, to take control. I bow my knee to You Lord Jesus. I call You Lord for You are Lord of Lords and King of Kings and I thank You Lord for saving me in Jesus' name."*

If you had just prayed that prayer I would encourage you to contact this ministry, or alternatively to find any local church where they teach the principles of salvation and being born-again where you can

[inaudible 00:54:35] and where you can be water-baptised and walk in the fullness God has called you to be. Father, in the name of Jesus I ask You to bless and prosper all who listen to this teaching. In Jesus' name, amen.

### **03 05 The Husband as Covering but the Wife Builds the House**

Continuation of the series on marriage. The subject is 'The Husband as a Covering to the Wife, but the Wife Builds the House.' The tape includes some of the prayers and worship, which immediately preceded the teaching in order to provide a spiritual context on which the teaching is founded. For those who want to listen directly to the teaching, the present worship is about 20 minutes long, so the teaching begins about halfway through the tape. [00:18:11]

#### **Ruth**

October 14, 2000. This teaching is a continuation of the series on marriage. The title of the teaching this morning is 'The Husband as a Covering to the Wife, but the Wife Builds the House.' Ruth 3:9 records, "And he said, 'Who are you?' So she uttered, 'I am Ruth, your maidservant. Take your maidservant under your wing for you are a close relative.'" In the Amplified, we read, "Spread your wing of protection over your maidservant for your next of kin." The context of this verse is one of Ruth, the Moabite woman who had married a Hebrew [inaudible 00:18:55]. Her husband, his father and his brothers all die and Ruth is left a widow with her mother-in-law, Naomi, and returns to Israel with her, declaring that your people shall be my people and your God, my God. This acceptance by Ruth as the God of Israel and the people of Israel thus forsaking her Gentile inheritance is a clear type of any person accepting the Lord Jesus Christ as Saviour and wholeheartedly adopting the Christian faith.

From other verses we gather that Ruth had not made a shallow decision but an uncompromising decision to go all the way. She left her family and native land and adopted and complied with the social practices of her adopted faith and land. In fact, Ruth is so esteemed in the sight of God that she became the mother of Obed, the father of Jesse, the father of David. And her name is explicitly recorded for Eternity in the Genealogy of the Messiah, the Lord Jesus Christ in Matthew 1:15 which says, [inaudible 00:19:58]. And so we see that Ruth is one of the few women who are mentioned by name in the Genealogy of the Lord.

On this basis we must accept that the steps taken by Ruth, a widow, to seek the protection of Boaz [inaudible 00:20:17] are entirely appropriate and correct in the sight of God. She was not being forward when she approached Boaz. She was acting in accordance with laid down scriptural protocol in accordance with Deuteronomy 25:5-10. The interpretation of this verse is very eloquently presented by William Schnoebelen in his book, *'Masonry: Beyond the Light'* and I quote verbatim from pages 230-232. Under the heading 'Headship' he writes, *"Paul teaches that the 'head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man' (I Corinthians 11:3). This is how men and women are created by God. Two other key verses in this passage tell us: But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven...For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man. Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man. For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head because of the Angels.*

## Husbands and Wives

*1 Corinthians 11:5, 8-10, although this is a rather deep passage, it is not too deep that it cannot be interpreted by turning to the Bible itself for help. The first part is clearer. The husband is to be the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the husband. Paul clarifies this principle elsewhere, telling us: For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the Church: and he is the Saviour of the body. Therefore as the Church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything. Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave Himself for it; That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the Word. Ephesians 5:23-26. It is not a question of the husband 'lording it over' the wife as much as it is the husband giving himself up for his wife, laying down his life for her as Jesus did for the Church. This is not a permit for abusive behaviour on the part of husbands in any way, shape or form. The wife must be submissive to the husband, but the husband must be Christ-like in his care and devotion to the wife. He must be the channel through which the Holy Spirit can 'sanctify and cleanse' his wife.*

## To Spread your Covering

*To Spread Your Covering: The last part of the passage quoted above is the most puzzling. What does 'For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head because of the Angels' mean? This verse, and the ones preceding it, have often been interpreted with total literalness, to the extent that women have felt obliged to wear veils or hats to Church. However, the word here is 'power,' which obviously means more than a veil. If we stand aside and let the Bible interpret this passage, it all becomes clear. In Ruth 3:8-9, we find the elegant Hebrew custom to which Paul is referring: And it came to pass at midnight, that the man was afraid, and turned himself: and behold, a woman lay at his feet. And he said, Who art thou? And she answered, I am Ruth thine handmaid: spread therefore thy skirt over thine handmaid: for thou art a near kinsman.*

*Ruth is asking Boaz, her near kinsman, to marry her out of obligation to his dead relation, Mahlon, her former husband. For him to cover her with his skirt was a way of saying he would marry her, taking her under the mantle of his protection, even as we, the Church, are under the mantle of Jesus' protection. When a Godly man marries a woman, he takes 'power' over her because of the Angels. Which Angels are being referred to is unclear. Some say they are not good Angels, but fallen Angels, which might attack or tempt the wife. Others say they are good Angels who are scandalized by seeing a wife out from under the authority of her husband.*

## Fallen Angels

*Although we cannot be certain, I prefer the first explanation, especially since there are two other places in Scripture which seem to indicate that fallen Angels might be very dangerous to unprotected women (Genesis 6:2, Jude 6-7). Thus, it is the duty of a man to provide a spiritual covering for his wife. Why is this? Because it is the way the Lord made the marriage relationship. It is the way men and women are put together. In a good, Christian marriage, the husband is the covering for the wife—her shepherd, her 'lightning rod,' if you will. He takes all the flak for her, even as Jesus did for us. He should be both a unique font of blessing for her and her strong protector from attack, whether spiritual or physical."*

## Covering

I believe that Schnoebelen gives a very concise and very explicit indication of what the concept of covering in Christian marriage is about. I have no doubt that interpretation is substantially correct and I have also independently encountered a teaching by Benny Hinn on the subject of Demons and Devils,

which makes a related point about Genesis 6:2-6. This refers to fallen Angels taking on the human form and having sexual intercourse with women. The inference says that this gave rise to the race of Nephilim. So fallen Angels which are referred to in Jude 1:6, *"And the Angels who did not keep their proper domain but left their own abode is reserved in everlasting chains under darkness for the judgment of the great day."* In 2 Peter 2:4 we read, *"For if God did not spare the Angels when they sinned, but cast them down to hell and deliver them into chains of darkness to be reserved for judgment."* Reading this farther to Genesis 6:1-8 we find that it says, "When man began to multiply on the face of the land and daughters were born to them, the sons of God saw that the daughters of man were beautiful. And they took wives for themselves of all whom they chose. Then the Lord said, 'My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, for he is indeed flesh.'"

We see from that given that many believers accept that the term 'Sons of God' used in a number of Scripture actually refers to the angels, that this passage therefore refers to fallen Angels, marrying or as we have seen in previous teachings, having sexual intercourse with women. [inaudible 00:26:49] Satan realised that the only way that God could regain dominion over the Earth legally was for the Messiah to be born of a woman and by instructing his fallen angels to marry as many women as possible. He could corrupt the bloodlines so completely that it would not be possible for a sinless man to be born of women. The same teaching suggests that Noah and his sons were the only pure bloodline that remained and that was one of the reasons for the flood.

Taking this interpretation further, it is apparent that once an Angel has sinned by having sexual intercourse with a human woman, he is cast into chains for the Day of Judgment as referred to in Jude 6 and 2 Peter 2:4. As a consequence of the actions of Satan's Angels before the flood, Satan's [inaudible 00:27:45] of Angels was seriously diminished and he could not afford to try that over anew again. However, this presumably does not prevent him from trying again at the end of the age, should he conclude that there is benefit to be gained, something I guess could even be a prerequisite for the birth of the Beast of revelation, but that's outside the scope of this teaching.

In this life, we see that the responsibility of Christian men to provide covering to Christian women in these last days becomes a greater significance if we take account of the level of deception that is accepted to accompany the end of the age, and also the level of persecution.

The bottom line must surely be that any unmarried Christian woman, whether a virgin, a widow, or a scripturally legitimately divorced woman, who is earnestly seeking God for a husband has a prerogative to approach man whom God has shown to her and asked him to extend his covering to her. We presume that the only basis for him to refuse to marry her would if he was quite certain that the approach was not of God. This requires a major change in paradigm by all concerned. The Christian woman is entitled to a covering and a Christian man is obliged to provide it if God has allocated the responsibility for that woman to him. Thus we see that the whole concept of a covering is of immense spiritual significance that a woman without a covering is highly vulnerable spiritually, and that the role of the husband in providing this covering is very significant indeed.

## **Building the House**

I want to present a counterpoint to that which builds on teachings of the previous weeks and in particular on something that I saw in Scripture as I was preparing this message. The counterpoint that I want to offer you is that it is the woman who builds the man's house. In 1 Chronicles 17:11-12 we see that says *"And it shall be..."* and this is now speaking to David through one of the Prophets regarding what will come and to the effect that God has told David that David is not to build a house



or a temple for the Lord. *"And it shall be when your days are fulfilled, when you must go to be with your father, that I will set up your seed after you, will be of your sons and I will establish his Kingdom. He shall build me a house and I will establish his throne forever."*

I want you to see that in the context of Proverbs 14:1, which says "The wise women builds her house, but the foolish pulls it down with her hands." And the context of these two passages is that I was impressed to research further the concept of the wise women building her house in Scripture. And in searching Scripture I found that yielding a computer-based concordance, I found no other reference to a man actually building his house, but I found repeated references to men building the Temple of God and referring to that as building God's house. And what I came to realise is that in the same way that human beings are used of God to build the Church, to build the Temple and in a very real sense to build the house of God, so it is the function and the role of the man's wife to build her husband's house.

And in the same way, if through rebellion and disobedience, we disobey the Lord and we bring sin upon ourselves resulting in the extreme cases in the history of Israel of the temple being physically torn down and destroyed, and in the context of the Christian believer seeing the Body of Christ rest asunder divided and even the actual physical body which is the temple of the Holy Spirit, in other words our human bodies being disintegrated to such an extent that ultimately the believer turns away from God or is destroyed in some fashion. We see again, it is the believer which is a shadow and a type of the wife as we have seen in previous teachings who builds or destroys God's house on Earth and from that we clearly see the import of Proverbs 14:1 and I read that verse again because it is absolutely critical to understand the role that God has ordained for women in marriage, *"The wise women builds her house, but the foolish pulls it down with her hands."*

If we take that further in Proverbs 12:4 which we have referred to previously says, *"An excellent wife is the crown of her husband, but she who cause her shame is like rottenness in his bones."* And we built on this at a previous teaching based on Genesis 2:24 and I quote here Mark 10:8-9 which says *"And the two shall become one flesh. So then they are no longer two but one flesh. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate."* From this again, I cannot stress this forcibly enough once they have made love, once they have had sexual intercourse, a man and woman become married, in the sight of God, they are no longer two but one. The wife must see herself as joined inseparably from her husband. She cannot be put asunder from him as we heard in the teaching on One Flesh Bond. Therefore anything that she does, which in any way causes separation between her and her husband strife, disagreement, anything that causes her to behave in a way that is contrary to her husband, brings about the sensation of rottenness in his bones. It is a near physical sensation which comes about in the spirit of a man when his wife is strifing with him when she is being in any way not submissive to him.

And therefore a wife is obliged by Scripture to see herself as completely harmoniously united in one with her husband. He has to see that she does not have the prerogative to hold counterviews to those that he has. I have said before as I believe it is clearly apparent from overall consideration of Scripture that the Lord has also called a wife to be a watchman for her husband so that if she discerns impending danger, be it physical or spiritual, she has a responsibility to inform him. But at the end of the day, it is the husband's job to take the decision. It is not the job of the foot to decide where the body goes. It is the job of the head to decide where the body goes.

In the same way, a wife who sees a need to differentiate herself from her husband in the community to establish her own name and reputation independently of her husband, is dividing her husband's

house and therefore tearing down her house with her hands. It's also important to recognise that if the wife has put herself esteem, if she sees herself as being in any way stupid, foolish, or speaks in a derogatory fashion of herself, she is speaking likewise about her husband because she is one with him. If she will not esteem and lift up and pray and honour and adore her husband as Scripture tells her to, and the passages in Ephesians 5 and 1 Peter 3 that I used last week are particularly interesting if you read them in the Amplified in terms of what they say, the wife should in fact, how she should actually see herself. And maybe we should just turn there quickly.

Let's go through Ephesians 5:22, *"Wives be subject, be submissive, and adapt yourself to own husband as a service to the Lord."* It's important to note the amplification there, *'adapt yourselves.'* In other words, change the way you see things, the way you do things, to conform and submit to your husband. We turn to Ephesians 5:33, *"However, let each men of you without exception love his wife as being in a sense who is very own self and let the wife see that she respects and reverences her husband."* That she notices him, regards him, honours him, prefers him, liberates and esteems him and that she defers to him, praises him and loves and admires him exceedingly. It is an extremely statement of God expects a wife to do in the way she relates to her husband. Notice him, regard him, honour him, prefer him, venerate him, and esteem him, that she defers to him, praises him, and loves and admires him exceedingly.

I would stress on the word *'reverence'* there that is amplified. Some years ago, the Lord led me to a bookshop to buy a Dake reference Bible and that happened just to pick it up and it opened at this particular verse and Dake makes the point that the word *'reverence'* is in Scripture used other than in this particular context only with regard to reverence fear of God and so we see that a wife is expected to have the same reverence for her husband as for God. And if we can just bring the revelation of just how critical that is and if a wife can put into practice those adjectives that I have just read out and perhaps I should just read them again because they really are a profound set of guidelines for the manner in which a wife should address her husband, that she notices him, regards him, honours him, prefers him, venerates, and esteems him and she defers to him, praises him, loves him and admires him exceedingly. And again, because of deferring to him means that she puts aside her will, she puts aside her own opinions and subordinates herself to her husband.

Let us turn now to 1 Peter 3:1, *"In like manner, you married women, be submissive to your own husbands, subordinate yourselves as being secondary to and dependent on them, and adapt yourselves to them, so that even if they do not obey the Word of God, they may be won not by discussion but by the godly lives of their wives."* Again, we see the concept of adaption and we also see the concept that they should not argue, that they should not discuss, that they should adapt and submit. Verse 2, *"When they observe the pure and modest way in which you conduct yourselves together with your reverence for your husband."* You are to feel for him all that reverence includes to respect, to defer to revere him, to honour, esteem, appreciate, praise and in a human sense, to adore him, i.e. to admire, praise, be devoted to deeply love and enjoy your husband. Again, I want to read that amplification of the word *'reverence'* again. With your reverence for your husband. You are to feel for him all that reverence includes to respect, defer, revere him, to honour, esteem, appreciated, praise and in a human sense, to adore him. That is to admire, praise, be devoted to, deeply love and enjoy your husband. There are stresses [inaudible 00:41:03] with elaborate interweaving and knotting of the hair, wearing of jewellery, or change of clothes, verse 4, *"But let it be the inward adorning and beauty of the hidden person of the heart with the incorruptible and unfailing charm of a gentle and peaceful spirit, which is not anxious or in rot up but is very precious in the sight of God."* Verse 5, *"For it was best that the pious women of old who hoped him God were accustomed, in other words, it was the*

*habit to beautify themselves and be submissive to their husbands. Adopting themselves to them and themselves secondary and dependent upon them."* Again, the concept of adaptation.

It was thus that Sarah obeyed Abraham following his guidance and acknowledged him his headship over her calling him lord, master, leader, authority, and you are now her true daughters if you do right and let nothing terrify you with giving way to hysterical fears relating anxieties unnerve you. I just want to carry on a few more verses here, verse 7, *"In the same way, you married men should live considerately with your wives with an intelligent recognition of the marriage relation, allowing the woman as physically the weaker but realising that you are heirs of the grace, God's own merit favour of life, in order that your prayers may not be hindered and cut off."* Otherwise you cannot pray effectively. And this comes back again, if the husband and wife are not in agreement, their prayers will be hindered and we have seen in previous teachings the aspect of two walk together and they will be agreed, a house defined as against a house fall and other Scriptures which clearly show that the vision in a marriage is totally destructive.

But what we see is that the onus on the husband to seek to live a Christ like life, but an enormous onus on the wife to adapt, to submit, to honour, to reverence, to revere, and to adore her husband and this draw us back into what I have said earlier in terms of building your house. It is by this action towards a husband that a wife builds her house and by conducting herself in that fashion. By arguing and striving with her husband, by not honouring him or steaming him, by persisting of going her own way, doing things the way she wants to do them, she brings about division in the house and as we have seen in Proverbs 14:1, she case her house down.

Let's come again to Ephesians 5:28-32, *"So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the church, for we are members of his body of his flesh and of his binds. For this reason, a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh. This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the church."* And again, we keep coming back to this passage because it is so pivotal in understanding marriage. It demonstrates to us so powerfully that the act of sexual intercourse between a man and his virgin bride is directly analogous and comparable to the spiritual act of receiving Jesus Christ as Lord and being born again and having the spirit of Jesus come to dwell within us. We see that it clearly demonstrates to us that everything that Scripture teaches us about our relationship with Christ is a shadow and a type of our relationship between husband and wife. It shows us clearly that if we can understand what is being taught in this series on marriage, we will have a deep, much greater revelation of the relationship that we are called to have the Lord Jesus Christ.

If I can bring it back now to the subject of this teaching to the concept of a wife building her house, it's again important to draw on this statement that the husband is the head of the wife, just as Christ is the head of the church. And likewise, the wife is the body of the husband, just as the church is the body of Christ. Every part of the human body is important. If a person does not have arms, they have great difficulty feeding themselves. If they do not have legs, they have great difficulty in moving from one place to another. If they do not have a tongue or the gift of speech, they have great difficulty communicating. If they are deaf, they have great difficulty in making their way in life when they can't speak to others. If they are blind, they are severely handicapped. Every part of the body is important. And therefore it is absolutely vital for a wife to understand that just because she is the body, just because she doesn't have the authority to [inaudible 00:46:28] means that she is less important.

Her husband has the responsibility of getting direction and instruction from the Lord. The Lord in terms of where the family is going, but it is the wife who is responsible for the house that has to take the husband there. And in the same way, that a brain without [inaudible 00:47:02], without arms, without legs, without anybody can do absolutely nothing. A husband without a wife who is completely supportive of him can do nothing. A wife who is paralysing her husband by trying to be legs going in the opposite direction by trying to be something different by trying to differentiate herself from her husband, totally disempowers and paralyses her husband.

There is a secular story which is a little bit vulgar but it's perhaps of some relevance here. We find that somehow feminism and liberalism has brought about a situation where the God's way of conducting the relationship between husband and wife is in some way viewed as demeaning to the wife and it's somehow the wife must her own woman and stand apart. It is alleged that the Scriptural teachings with regard to marriage and submission, etc., denigrate the wife and disempower the wife and that she has no self sufficiency, she has no purpose, she has no realisation of self, she does not accomplish her true potential. This is clearly, if one has a profound faith in the Word of God, clearly cannot be the case. Because God has created man and woman in the likeness and image of God and the Word of God says that we are fearfully and wonderfully made.

The story which is told in the secular world to demonstrate various things has relevance here. The story something as follows: The organs in the body one day were having a dispute as to which organ in the body was most powerful. The eyes said, *"Well, I am the most powerful because I see where we go."* And in a contest the eye refused to open for some days. All the body was certainly very disadvantaged because it couldn't move around and if it did, it tended to walk into things. But at the end of three days, the body was not doing too badly. When the legs said, *"Well, we are the most powerful organs of the body, look how strong we are, we carry the body wherever it goes."* And so the legs went on strike for three days. And certainly the body was disadvantaged. It couldn't move around, but it was quite able to sit in a chair and read a book and ate food that was put before it and really the body was actually able to relax quite nicely when the legs were doing nothing. And so the story continues that each of the significant organs of the body withheld their service for three days. [inaudible 00:50:05] that the contest was over and some sort of vote was called for when the anus actually spoke out and said, *"I am sorry to trouble you folks, but I am actually the most powerful organ in the body."* The anus closed itself for three days and at the end of three days, the body was feeling ill, it was nauseous, it was in no fit state to do anything. In principle there [inaudible 00:50:35] in Scripture which says that those organs of the body which are least glorious have in fact the greatest honour. And so the fact that [inaudible 00:50:48] suggesting that wives shall draw a direct parallel and what I am saying that there is a tendency for people to totally deny the power and the authority of the wife through submission.

What I am saying there is that they are the things that are least glorious in the body that have, in fact, the greatest influence on the health and the welfare of the body. And therefore a wife should not in any way underestimate the enormous power which God has given her. In fact, I will suggest to you that the wife is the foundation on which the husband's house is built. If she [inaudible 00:51:26] by fear, by pride, by self-centredness or any other self will formal action which is contrary to the Scriptures we read earlier in terms of submission, etc., she will tear down her husband's house and since everything that is her husband's is hers and vice versa since they are one, she will tear down her own house as a passage in Scripture that we have been referring to indicate to recap Proverbs 14:1, *"The wise woman builds her house, but the foolish pulls it down with her hands."*

Once we see that God has given women enormous power over her husband; the power of agreement or disagreement. We said before, it takes a strong woman to submit and subordinate her will to that of her husband. It is an act of choice, it is an act of deliberate submission, a deliberate decision to adapt her will to that of her husband. It cannot be done in fear, it cannot be done in pride, it has to be done by faith, it has to be done putting the Word of God first in her life. We see in Amos 3:3, "Do two walk together, unless they are agreed." A wife has to understand she cannot be part of her husband's life, she cannot play the role that God has appointed and ordained for her unless she walks in agreement with her husband. And we see clearly in the previous teachings that she is required to submit to her husband in everything irrespective of what he does. So the onus to walk in agreement with her husband lies with her.

And by withholding her agreement, we see that the house becomes divided. Luke 11:17, *"But Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said to them, 'Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation and a house divided against a house falls.'"* So we see that a wife who chooses to walk in disagreement and disharmony with her husband who does not obey to her husband, does not adore in every way do what the Scriptures tell her to do is dividing her house. She is bringing her house to desolation. There is no Scripture that I have been able to find anyway that suggests that it is within the husband's power to overcome his wife's rebellion and to make his house stand despite the rebellion of his wife. His wife is the underpinning, she is the pillar and the foundation on which his house is built.

By the same token, it's a foolish man indeed who pursues own godly endeavours and enterprises which his wife will find impossible to agree with even if she manages to submit physically to what he requires of her. And so we see the immense balance that God has created in marriage that if a man totally gets out of the will in an absolutely evidence sense which causes his wife to be absolutely horrified in which she finds difficult or impossible to agree with, therefore bring a situation about which breaks on that matter will cause him to feel disruption in his spirit, it will be cause him to be [inaudible 00:54:53]. But it is God's will for woman to [inaudible 00:54:57] immense power that God has given her to manipulate and control her husband as is the general purchase in the world and in the body of Christ today. It's for the woman to build her house, not to tear it down.

I came across a very interesting Scripture a few days ago, which indicates that a rebellious or adulterous wife weakens her husband. In fact, the Lord says that we crush him when we are unfaithful. In fact, you should just turn with me to Ezekiel 6:7-10. This is one of the many passages in Ezekiel where God through Ezekiel is rebuking the people of Israel. In verse 7 it says, *"And the slain shall fall in your midst, and you shall know that I am the Lord. Yet I will leave a remnant so that you may have some who escape the sword among the nations, when you are scattered through the countries, then those of you who escape will remember me among the nations where they are carried captive, because I (Yahweh) was crushed by their adulterous heart which has departed from me and by their eyes which play the harlot after their idols. They will love themselves the evils which they have committed, and all their abominations. And they shall know that I am the Lord. I have not said in vain that I would bring this calamity upon them."* I want you to focus on that phrase, *'because I (Yahweh) was crushed by their adulterous heart which has departed from me.'* So I would encourage any woman who listens to this teaching to understand that if you deliberately and wilfully refuse to submit to your husband, do not be surprised at the reaction.

If we can bring about a situation in which the Lord God himself says that by our adultery, that by our disobedience we crush Him, how much more can you by your rebellion and disobedience crush your husband. Women you have an awesome responsibility. God has given you enormous power to build up or to destroy your husband, to build up or destroy his ministry, in the same way that God has given

us immense power as the church, the building of Christ, to build up the body, to build up the house of God on Earth which is the church of Jesus Christ or to pull it down and destroy it, and I have to say to you taking account of all that has been taught in this series that the body of Christ is probably guilty today of pulling down the house of God of crushing the Lord Jesus Christ by their rebellion, by their disobedience, by their insistence on hieratical doctrines and also some area including the area of marriage that we are teaching on at the moment. It is high time that the church realises that the division, the delineation, the false doctrines, the refusal to put the Word of God first, the refusal to recognise that if you believe you cannot agree on any area of [inaudible 00:58:16] is a serious problem because they are dividing, they are pulling apart, and tearing asunder the body of Christ, they are pulling down the house of God.

There is only one answer and that is God's answer according to Scripture interpreted with the aid of the Holy Spirit and if two believers reach a point where they cannot agree they should both fall on their face before God and say *"Father, is it I that made sin here and in error and deception."* Yet [inaudible 00:58:44] an absolute idolatry of self and self will that go forward and they held on to their difference of opinion and refuse to bother me to the Word of God and to come to harmony and agreement. And the same comments apply verbatim to a situation in which a wife insists on doing her own thing. It doesn't matter how big or how small it is. If your husband has asked you to do a particular thing in the house and you do not do it on a consistent basis, you are dividing the house. You are tearing your house down. If he has asked you not to do something and you insist on doing it, you are tearing your homes down. And he is powerless to stop you. The only avenue that is opened here which is the [inaudible 00:59:30] which is being taught in the church widely today is the hint of bother me to his wife and to come on to agreement with his wife.

The only other way that a husband can prevent his house from being torn down is to say *'yes dear, no dear, what you want me to do next dear'* and to bend his knee to his wife. But you have to understand wife you may get satisfaction from your husband [inaudible 00:59:59] to you and complying with your wishes and going with your ungodly conduct but both of you will be judged on the Day of Judgement for your ungodly action. I want to [inaudible 01:00:13] and bring you back to passage that we visited a few weeks ago, Proverbs 31:10-31, *"Who can find a virtuous wife? For her price is far above rubies. The heart of her husband safely trusts her, so he shall have no lack of gain. She does good and not evil all the days of her life."* Again, we see that her husband is relying on her, he trusts her and because he can trust her, he will have no lack of gain. But a woman contrary to that is if he cannot trust her, if she does her own thing, if she exerts herself against him, he will have lack. And I continue to see in the body of Christ today men who seek God or find themselves in continual lack will find their houses being brought down and I continue to see and I increasingly reach the conclusion that the reason for this is because their wives are doing their own thing and pulling their house down.

So anybody listening to this is in financial lack, if you continually find that something is going wrong with your finances, if your house is bringing pulled down, wife look in the mirror and ask yourself if you are the problem. Husband, look to yourself but look also to your wife. If you have been crying out and you have been seeking to serve God and to do His will and you cannot understand why things are going the way they are, perhaps your wife needs to adjust her thinking. Perhaps, she needs to make a sincere study of the messages. Perhaps, she needs to go back to 1 Peter 2 in the Amplified and I read that passage again, which says, *"Together with your reverence for your husband; you are to feel for him all that reverence includes: to respect, defer to, revere him—to honour, esteem, appreciate, prize, and, in the human sense, to adore him, that is, to admire, praise, be devoted to, deeply love, and enjoy your husband."* And if you are not doing that wives, it is time that you do because your husband will

not succeed in life, he will not prosper, he will not fulfil the ministry that God has called him to do if you do not do those things. It is in your power to utterly destroy your husband and break down the house or it is in your power to build the house and to have a wonderful and fulfilling life on this Earth. But if you think for a minute that you can do it by following your own self rule, by doing your own thing, by rebelling against your husband and failing to honour him and respect him in the way those teachings and those Scriptures indicate, you will never succeed.

If I can go back to Proverbs 31:23, *"Her husband is known in the gates when he sits among the elders of the land."* It's apparent from the proceeding verses that the wife is in large measure responsible for running the home, running the family business, running the farm, commercial trading and all sorts of things. She is in a position of immense responsibility and immense authority to conducting the affairs of the family. Her husband's responsibility is to play a role in the conduct of the affairs of the community, to sit as an elder in the gate to judge others and to be a source of wisdom and guidance to the community. He can only do that if, going back to verse 11, *"The heart of her husband safely trusts in her, so he will have no lack of gain. She does him good, and not evil, all the days of her life."* He knows that he [inaudible 01:03:51] he means that he can leave all the matters that she is responsible with for [inaudible 01:03:58] responsibly.

Verse 28, *"Her children rise up and call her blessed; her husband also, and he praises her. Many women have done well, but you excel them all. Charm is deceitful, and beauty is passing, but a woman who fears the Lord is to be praised. Give her of the fruit of her hands, and let her works praise her in the gates."* These are remarkable things. The husband is in the gate as an elder and she is praised in the gates by virtue of what she has done. She has created the foundation. She is the pillar on which her husband stands. She is the basis for her husband's ability to stand in the gate and she is acknowledged and praised in the gate because of her submission because of what she has done. [inaudible 01:04:44] means power in this, which we don't even begin to understand in the body of Christ right now.

We see again in verse 30, *"Charm is deceitful, and beauty is passing."* We see the complete falsehood and fallacy of the approach to courtship today in which men look for women who are charming and beautiful, but they do not look to their heart. It is not the outward woman that counts, it is the heart of the woman that counts. It is the woman who fears God, it is the woman who puts the Word of God first, it is the woman who applies the teachings of Scripture to reverence her husband, to feel for him, all that reverence includes to respect, to defer to, revere him, to honour, esteem, appreciate, prize and in the human sense to adore him, that is to admire, praise, be devoted to, deeply love and enjoy her husband. Clearly, she has enormous responsibility and enormous power in the family. She is, by no means, a second rate citizen in the family. She is an equal partner with her husband but she has a job to do and he has a job to do. His job is to seek the leading of God and to set the direction of the family. It is her job to do all that she has called to do in support of them.

And surely, the secular proverb *'Behind every successful man, is a successful woman'* is soundly based on Scripture and takes on a whole new meaning in the context of what I have just taught here. I sincerely pray that in listening to this teaching, you have seen a new dynamic and a new dimension to the subject of marriage between husband and wife and I would hope that every wife who has heard this would examine herself thoughtfully and clinically in the Word of God and make the quality decision to adjust her behaviour using as a benchmark of the passage of 1 Peter 3:2 that I have repeatedly read in this teaching, and that she will see that she has an enormous role to play that she will set herself as a goal to be as the Proverbs 31 Wife that her husband may be praised in the gate and she may be praised in the gate because of what she does.

Father, in the name of Yahooshua I bring this teaching before you I ask that if there is anything that I have uttered is not according to your word and your will, that you will blow it away and that it will find no roots in the hearers. But I ask Father in the name of Yahooshua that every word that has been spoken that is according to your will and your word will be etched on the heart of every person who has heard this teaching. Father, I thank you by faith and the name of the Lord Jesus Christ that you will raise up an army based on what has been taught here today. I thank you that you anoint every woman who has heard this to be a Proverbs 31 Wife to be a wife who builds up and does not tear down her house; a wife who honours and esteems and reverences her husband and is not faultfinding and contentious.

I thank you Lord for husbands who will seek your will with renewed vigour knowing that their wives have taken the decision to change their behaviour that their husbands can focus on the things of God and the calling of God in their lives while their wives take care of the things that God has called them to be responsible for. Father, we thank you for that now in the name of Jesus. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in Jesus name.

### **03 06 Headship - Christ and Church as Pattern for Husband and Wife**

Year 2000. This teaching is on the headship of the husband and the parallel between relationship between Jesus Christ and his Church as a basis for understanding the requirements of the relationship between a husband and his wife. The present worship which preceded the teaching is at the beginning of the tape in order to give a scriptural context to what the Lord was saying to us through the prayers and worship before the teaching began. The teaching begins after about 30 minutes on the tape, that's about two-thirds of the way through the first side of the tape. [00:28:38]

#### **Husband as head of the wife**

Today's teaching is entitled the husband as head of the wife, the family and the house. This teaching is an extension of the series on marriage that I have been giving over the last month or two. It seeks to address the next aspect of what has been taught. In particular, it's important for me at this point to stress that what I am about to teach today is a revelation that has really just been coming to me in the last week or in the last few weeks, as I have been preparing and giving this series, and I have been seeking to live and understand what it is that is being taught. Certainly, what I am about to say today, is a much deeper revelation for me than anything I have ever written, or taught, or understood, even though some of what I am going to say, in fact quite a lot of what I am going to say is contained in the book that I wrote over the 18 months to two years.

But somehow it is taking on a new life I am seeing increasingly, with complexity and the total lack of understanding that we have today in terms of God intended marriage to be. The counterpoint of that of course is that God intended marriage to be something far more wonderful than we have ever appreciated and certainly that you will find in practice virtually anywhere in the world. I have certainly never seen a marriage which conforms to the picture that I have in my Spirit as I preach this message in terms of what I believe the Lord has shown me in the weeks just passed.

Having said that, it's really important to understand therefore that certainly for me, this is breaking new ground and I have no doubt that there will be a lot more to learn, a lot more revelation and a lot more understanding that will be required before all of this really falls into the full glory of what God



intended marriage to be. With that mind, I would also add that in the last couple of messages, I have been led by the Lord to deal very strongly with the issue of submission. And I have understood that emphasis to be a counterbalance to the strong teachings which are very prevalent in the Christian Church these days which I am now too basically saying that the husband should submit to the wife. And I understand that the Lord wanted to place that false teaching in a very sharp contrast with what the Word of God says.

So, we have seen in the recent weeks that Ephesians says that wives should submit to their husbands. 1 Peter 2 and 3 clearly show us that includes wives submitting to their husbands where their husbands are unjust, beat them and treat them in the most appalling manner and not just submitting when they believe that their husbands are in right standing with God. It includes passages which indicate that disobedience and shameful conduct on the part of the wife brings about a Spirit condition similar to rottenness in the bones of the husband, and that foolish wife will tear her house down whereas wives and God-fearing women who esteem and submit to her husband will build up her house.

Having gone through all of that, the question that was foremost in my mind after last Saturday's teaching was Lord, what is my responsibility? And as I prayed into that in the last week, as I have meditated on the Word, I was told at the beginning of the week to buy a book by Dr. Creflo Dollar entitled, *'Lord, teach me how to love: Learning from the Ultimate Example'*. I have not finished reading that yet, but just the portion that I did read brought to great conviction the very little extent to which I know how to love according to God's Word and God's Will for me as a husband, as a servant, an apostle and a prophet.

Just a few key points, something that has become very apparent to me is that the Scriptures talk of Jesus as the head of the husband. I refer you to the whole of Ephesians 5. I am not going to read the whole of Ephesians 5, but perhaps we should just pick up on one or two verses there. It's important to see that the context of wives, submit to your husbands, starting at verse 22 is in the context of moving away from fornication, uncleanness, covetousness, filthiness and foolish talking. It's important to recognise that Ephesians 5:3 speaks of fornication and all uncleanness or covetousness which better not even be named among you as this isn't fitting for saints. And it's interesting perhaps that the English word 'uncleanness' is the same word that's used in Deuteronomy 24:1 to describe the basis on which a man may divorce his wife. But we see that the first part of Ephesians deals with the works of darkness and it rolls straight over in Ephesians 22 to wives, submit to your own husbands as to the Lord, for the husband is the head of the wife as also Christ is head of the Church and He is Saviour of the body. Therefore, just as a Church is subject to Christ, let the wives be to their own husbands in everything.

And we go in the balance of Ephesians 5 as the basis on which this whole teaching has been presented with particular emphasis on verses 31 and 32. *"For this reason, a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife and the two shall become one flesh."* This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ in the Church and in 30 we see again *"For we are members of His (Jesus) Body, of Jesus flesh, of Jesus bones."* So, the intimate correlation between the One Flesh Bond between husband and wife and the new birth experience with the Spirit of God as Spirit of Jesus coming to dwell in us when we are born again in the same way that the Spirit of the husband in a sense comes to dwell in the wife on the consummation of marriage.

And we see again just the scriptural confirmation that the act of sexual intercourse is in fact the act of marriage and the act of the marriage covenant. What I came to realise, as I meditated on last week's teaching is that in a very real sense, these passages that talk about the husband being the head of the

wife indicate that the husband is almost a channel or conduit between the wife and God. I will just refer you also 1 Corinthians 11:3 *"But I want you to know that the head of every man is Christ, the head of woman is man and the head of Christ is God."* So, we see a very distinct hierarchy between God, the father Yahweh, Jesus, the son and man, and then the woman. And 1 Corinthians 11:6-12. I am not going to read the whole passage, but we see that verse 7 says *"For a man ought not to cover his head, since he is the image and glory of God, woman is the glory of man. Man is not from woman, but woman from man. Nor was man created for woman, but woman for man. For this reason, the woman should have a symbol of authority."* And we talked last week on the covering. *Nevertheless, neither is man independent of woman nor woman independent of man for as woman came from man, even so man also comes through woman but all things are from God."*

### **Relationships in the marriage and with God**

And we see the enormous cognitive complexity in this relationship that we are talking about. We have an entire book, the Bible, which has been given to us for instruction with regards to our relationship with God. That entire book, in the same way gives us instruction in the relationship between husband and wife, yet we see that the Scriptures talk about the man being the head of the wife and covering. We see the contrast of man coming through woman and therefore the whole relationship is exceedingly dynamic and multifaceted. It is really important that I stress that at this moment, because this reflects through everything that I am going to say, in the balance of this teaching.

This is not a simple subject, it is not a subject that can be simplified. It is a subject which can only be really realised and received by faith, by the Spirit of God. This is not something that the carnal mind can grasp and if you take what I am going to say in the next half hour or so, [inaudible 00:38:46] you like it, it completely missed the [inaudible 00:38:47] likely to accuse me of all sorts of things that aren't even in my thinking. And I would ask you to really get a revelation of the passages that I have just read to you, particularly Ephesians 5:30-32 and 1 Corinthians 11:7-12, to really recognise that we are talking of shadows and types and patterns and metaphors and parables that are very, very complex.

I am certainly not teaching today on some form of autocratic rule and some sort of subservient slavery. I am talking today about a Spirit lead relationship which is dynamic. It is intense, it is lead by the Spirit of God, it is focused on God and it is not focused on the things of the Earth. It is immensely challenging to the natural mind, but if we would lay down our lives and seek to submit to God, I truly believe that we will experience something of incredible beauty and power.

So, just to come back to what I said a moment ago, the picture that I have, and I believe it's a picture that is summed up in 1 Corinthians 11:3, *"The head of every man is Christ, the head of woman is man, and the head of Christ is God."* So, if we take it from the top down, the father is the head of the Son, the Son is the head of the man, and the man is the head of woman. There is a very definite channel of communication in the Spirit of the definite hierarchy of responsibility and accountability. I deliberately avoid the use of the word *'authority'* because it is so abused and so misunderstood. Authority is a composite of responsibility and accountability. Without accountability and responsibility, there should be no authority. Until we see that the medium or the channel and again, it's important to recognise words like channel and medium have been seized on by spirits to describe the way they communicate with Satan. But it's important to recognise that there are words which describe things which are not well described by the use of other words. So, I am going to use those words occasionally in what I teach today, and subsequently I would ask you to recognise that I am not talking about the medium in the sense of the medium being the Spirits who goes between the Demon and the person who is enquiring of the Demon. I am talking about the medium that is being the medium through which we

communicate. Jesus is the medium through which we communicate with the Father. We speak to the Father in the name of the Son and the wife does certain things in the name of the husband.

But it seems increasingly clear to me that while the wife has had a personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ and with the Father, in some sense that I cannot really describe to you right now, the husband is the channel through which a spiritual fulfilment should come, the medium through which a spiritual fulfilment should come in a sense, I believe, requires great wisdom in application and interpretation. What we also see and it is built to the force specifically in Ephesians 5:30-32 tied back to Genesis 2:24 to Mark 10 and Matthew 5, Matthew 19. Trust as we speak of the body of Christ being his body, his flesh, his bones, we speak of the wife being the flesh and the bones of the husband. We see the Spirit of Christ dwelling in us and we see the spirit of the husband imparted into the wife on the consummation of marriage. And therefore we see that while the Bible appears to say very, very little about woman and the relationship of women to men, certainly most people view the Old Testament as being very sexist and totally ignoring women in many respects. Whereas in fact, the woman is so much part of the husband that everything that speaks of the husband, speaks of the wife as well.

### **Married to God**

Then we see that the ongoing metaphor throughout scripture of humankind being married to God, the Church being married to Christ shows us that everything that God teaches us about the relationship between man and God applies equally to the relationship between wife and husband. If we see the wife as a metaphor of the bride of Christ, the Church and the husband as a representative of Christ on Earth, we begin to understand just how much the Scriptures actually teach us about marriage. This teaching today will use that parallel very extensively. Virtually everything that I am going to say from now on works on the basis of this is what Scripture says, concerning the relationship between Christ and man and from that we deduce that this is what Scripture teaches us concerning the relationship between husband and wife.

I would really encourage you to see evidence that is in Ephesians 5:30, 31 and 32, and in other Scriptures and therefore to recognise just how richly we are taught in Scripture concerning the relationship between husband and wife and also to recognise just how far that departs from current practice and current teaching.

We see that everything that is said in scripture about the wife relative to the husband applies to the husband relative to Jesus. In other words, the husband must submit to Jesus in everything, no matter how much persecution comes as a consequence of his relationship with Jesus. We see also that it will appear that everything said about the wife relative to the husband also applies to the children relative to the wife. I do not want to explore this today. It's just something that struck me as I was writing the notes for this message. We have a progressive hierarchy and the children are told to submit to their parents, and the womb is spiritually the entity that brings a child into the world. She is the entity that has the most direct influence and impact on the upbringing of the children. The wife needs to turn the eyes of the children to the husband, to the father, and through the father to Jesus and through Jesus to the Father in Heaven. I don't want to say more about that now, I may pick up on it in a few places. Just one last point on that point is that I believe we can also say that everything that Scripture teaches us about the relationship between father God Yahweh and Jesus Christ to Son, gives us a basis to understand the relationship that should exist between a father and his children and conversely children and their natural father.

So, just to recap here what I am saying is that Scripture defines the relationship between God and man and this defines the relationship between [inaudible 00:46:41]. We get 1 John 1:1-3, *"That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we looked upon and have touched with our hands, concerning the word of life."* Now, this is John as a disciple of Jesus who walked on the Earth with him, thriving in a sense the relationship that he had with Jesus. *"The life was manifested, and we have seen and bear witness and declare to you that eternal life, which was with the Father and was manifested to us. That which we have seen and heard we declare to you, that you also may have fellowship with us; and truly our fellowship is with the Father and his Son Jesus Christ."* We see the relevance of fellowship between us, with the Father and with Jesus.

Therefore, I believe it's correct to say that God created man for His pleasure and fellowship. We see that in Genesis 3:8-9, the Lord God was walking in the garden and we infer from that it was a common occurrence for the Lord Yahweh to walk in the garden and to talk to Adam as His Friend. From that we draw a conclusion that God created woman for man's pleasure and fellowship. We get out of Genesis 2:18 and the Lord God said *"It is not good that man should be alone. I will make a helper comfortable to him."* And we see other Scriptures which support that interpretation.

### **God created man for pleasure and fellowship**

So, the first conclusion we can draw is that God created man for the pleasure and fellowship with God. Secondly, God created woman for pleasure and fellowship with man. We did see that Jesus sacrificed his life in order to redeem man and it occurs to me that man must sacrifice his life in a spiritual sense in order to redeem woman. We read in Genesis 3 that where God rebuked Adam and Eve after they had eaten the fruit of the devil that He said that man would be the lord and would reign over the woman. I believe that we see in another sense that just Jesus is required to come down to Earth and lead men back to God. So man in a sense must also lead his wife back to Christ. I need to stress this, I am not saying that the woman should not have a deep personal relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. But somehow for us to come into right relationship with God, I just perceived that the Lord was saying to me that man has a role to play there and I would be the first to say to you that I don't fully comprehend the significance of what I have just said to you.

If we turn to Hebrews 4:16, I am just going through a shopping a list of Scriptures as they came to me as I was preparing this message. Hebrews 4:16 says *"Let us therefore come boldly to the Throne of grace that we may obtain mercy and find grace to help in time of need."* The point is that we must come boldly to the Throne of grace. But obviously we do not come in rebellion, we do not come in presumption, we come in humble submission to Almighty God. We come with a contrite and broken heart. By extension, the wife must be able to come boldly to her husband. She mustn't come in subservience. She mustn't come whimpering or crying. She must also not come in presumption and rebellion, but she must have the assurance of her husband's love and her ability to come to him. So, the one sign of that is that the wife must understand that she has the authority of Scripture to come boldly to her husband and her husband must understand that she has that prerogative and he must permit it to exercise that prerogative.

John 4:16-21 deals with the love that God has for us. Verse 19 specifically says *"We love Jesus, because Jesus first loved us."* It was really important that we see that. The implication of that is that the husband first loves his wife. The inherent implication of that is that just as we are still sinners, while we were not serving God, Jesus still loved us. He came down to Earth to deliver us. When a woman is unmarried, and she has no covering, a man will love her before she loves him, and he will reach out to her in her unmarried state and draw her in to his covering.

It's important that we understand that God has created man to have this desire to be united to a woman who is not married. I will talk more of that perhaps in a later teaching. In the following passage in 1 John we see in verse 20, *"If someone says I love God and hates his brother, he is a liar for he who does not love his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not seen?"* This Commandment we have from Him that he who loves God must love his brother also. That's very important in marriage. We have to see that we can't say that we love God if husband and wife do not love one another.

## **Priests**

In Hebrews 7:22-26 we read by so much more Jesus has become surety of a better covenant. Also there were many priests because they were prevented by death from continuing, but he because he continues forever has an unchangeable priesthood. Therefore he is also to serve to the uttermost those who come to God through him since he always loves to make a decision for them. For such a high priest was fitting for us who is Holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners and has become higher than the heavens. So, on one hand we see Jesus there as the frame of reference in terms of what God expects the husband to become. On the other hand, we see that Jesus lives to make intercession for mankind. By implication, the husband must love to make intercession for his wife.

We also see there that Jesus is high Priest and from that we infer that the husband is the priest in the home. In other words, the husband is the person who should take the lead and bring in praise and worship, the reading of scripture, etc. Again, if a wife is [inaudible 00:54:09], there is no reason why she should not be active in these things. But the responsibility is on the husband to be the priest. That's the responsibility of the husband, to bring intercession to the Lord. It is the responsibility of the husband to minister to the Lord and for his wife to support in this. The situation in which the wife starts taking the lead and dictating to the husband, how they should serve the Lord, is going to give rise to spiritual problems.

If we turn in to 1 John 2:1-6 *"My little children, these things I write to you so that you may not sin. And if anyone sins, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous. He himself is the propitiation for our sins, not for ours only but also for the whole world. And by this we know him if we keep His Commandments. He who says, 'I know him' and does not keep His Commandments is a liar, and the truth is not in him, but whoever keeps his word; truly the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we are in him: He who says he abides in Him ought himself also to walk just as Jesus walked."* And so, we see that we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ and by implication the husband in a sense should be the advocate with God on behalf of his wife, on behalf of his family. It ties back into the concept of intercession and high priests. The husband has a very great responsibility to have an intense and intimate relationship with the Spirit of God with the Holy Spirit and the Spirit of Jesus.

In Revelation 19:10, *"Then I fell down at his feet to worship him, but he said to me, 'See that you do not do that! I am your fellow servant and of your brethren who have the testimony of Jesus. Worship God.' For the testimony of Jesus is the Spirit of prophecy."* There are also teachings which suggest that the husband is also the prophet in the home. This is the only Scripture that I found directly that suggests that might be the case, although it seems to make sense that in the first instance of the husband is responsible for hearing from God and speaking the Word of God in direction to the family. Again, this is not saying that the wife cannot hear from the Lord that she may not give confirmation to her husband, that if she hears the Lord more clearly on certain occasions that she should not speak that to her husband. The point is the responsibility of a godly Christian husband is to be the prophet

in the home. It's important that I make this point because I see this happen so much in the Christian Church.

The fact that I am saying to you that the husband should be the priest of the home, it doesn't mean I am declaring him as irrespective of his conduct to be the priest, to be advocate, to be the intercessor, to be the prophet. I am saying that's what he is called to be. He has an accountability before God to walk in those roles. His wife has an accountability before God to intercede and pray and to support him and encourage him to be in those roles. But just as he is the head of the house, and the husband does not mean that he can just say '*I am the priest of the home.*' He has to live, he has to work the role of being the priest of the home. But irrespective of whether he does or he doesn't, his wife is called to submit to him.

In 1 Timothy 6:13-15 we read, "*I urge you in the sight of God, who gives life to all things, and before Christ Jesus, who witnessed the good confession before Pontius Pilate that you keep this Commandment without spot blameless until our Lord Jesus Christ appearing which he will manifest in his own time he who is the blessed and only potentate, the King of Kings and Lord of Lords.*" We see a number of points there. Firstly, we see that we are required to keep the Commandment, to seek to become without spot and blameless until our Lord Jesus Christ's appearing. And as I said in the first teaching in this series on marriage, we truly believe that until we understand what marriage is intended to be between man and woman, and it might take a thousand years quite frankly, we get to a place where it is fully applied throughout the body of Christ, but the body of Christ will not be a spotless bride until marriage is what God intended it to be on the Earth.

We also read that Jesus Christ is King of Kings and Lord of Lords. That's something which we perhaps very flippantly say and declare Jesus as King of Kings and Lord of Lords. But if we understand what a king is and what a Lord is and the authority that they had on the Earth at the time the Scriptures were written, we might perhaps be a little bit more reluctant about happily clapping our hands and calling him King of Kings and Lord of Lords. If we have a revelation of what that means on the Day of Judgement, then we have acknowledged Him for who He is, and we haven't prepared for it.

But again, the extension is in the same way that Jesus is King of Kings and Lord of Lords to mankind, the husband is the King and the Lord in the home. Again, I am not saying that gives him the right to behave like some carnal king or lord, it gives him an onus and a responsibility to conduct himself with dignity, with justice, with integrity as a good king and a good lord should be and King David is perhaps a good example in some respect of what a king and a lord should be.

We read in John 1:29-32 that Jesus is the Lamb of God that takes away the sins of the world and the Spirit of God descended upon him and remained in him. The husband should give up his life to protect his wife. In other words, in situations of danger. It should be the husband who stands in the gap. It should be the husband who risks and if necessary, sacrifices his life either physically or spiritually to protect his wife. That is where this concept of covering must become particularly significant. All of the things that I am talking about up till now being spiritual covering, here I am talking about something which is potentially of not only spiritual, but physical that the husband should be willing to protect his wife and to give his life in protection of his wife. Unlike certain situations in Scripture where a man was threatened with [inaudible 01:00:47] in Benjamin and also in a lot of case in [inaudible 01:00:53] and where they wanted to send out a woman to satisfy the lust of these people. In fact, the husband perhaps should have protected his wife in that situation.

## Praise and Worship God

We are told to praise and to worship God without inhibition and perhaps the most explicit Scripture there is Psalm 150. *"Praise the Lord, praise God in His sanctuary, praise Him in His mighty firmament, praise Him for His mighty act, praise Him according to His excellent greatness, praise Him with the sound of the trumpet, praise Him with the psaltery and harp, praise Him with the timbrel and the dance, praise Him with stringed instruments and flutes, praise Him with loud cymbals, praise Him with clashing cymbals that everything that has breath praise the Lord, praise the Lord."*

Psalm 69:34 says, *"Let heaven and earth praise Him, the seas and everything that moves in them."* Psalm 107:32 says, *"Let them extol Him also in the assembly of the people, and praise Him in the company of the elders."* Psalm 109:30, *"I will praise the Lord with my mouth, yes I will praise among the multitude."* Psalm 148:1-5, *"Praise the Lord! Praise the Lord from the heavens; praise Him in the heights! Praise Him, all His angels; praise Him, all His hosts! Praise Him, sun and moon, praise Him, all you stars of light! Praise Him, you heavens of heavens, and you waters above the heavens! Let them praise the name of the Lord! For He commanded, and they were created."* In all that we see that we are told to praise God without inhibition. Everything that has breath praise the Lord, praise Him at the dance, praise Him with the song, raise your voices, and by extension the wife should adore and praise and make love to her husband without inhibition. The same principle applies. The same parallel applies that wife should be unstinting in her adoration and her praise and her lovemaking to her husband.

Hebrews 13:15, *"Therefore by Him (Jesus) let us continually offer the sacrifice of praise to God, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to His name."* We are told to offer a sacrifice of praise. God is always ready to receive our prayers, our worship, our prayers. The more frequently we offer them, the closer we would draw to Him and the more intimate our relationship will become. By extension, the husband should always be ready to receive the praise, the adoration, the lovemaking and the petitions of his wife and the more she praises and adores him, makes love to him, seeks his guidance, the closer she would draw to him, and the more intimate their relationship will become. I believe what I have just said to you may be the most significant part of this teaching in the sense that there is enormous power to be unlocked in prayers, in the Scriptural realm, and also within marriage.

In 1 Corinthians 13:1-8, we read the characteristics of God's agape love and we said before that this must apply between husband and wife and between wife and husband. *"Though I speak with the tongues of men and of Angels, but have not love, I have become sounding brass or a clanging cymbal."*

*"And I have the gift of prophecy and understand all mysteries and all knowledge and I have all faith, so that I remove mountains but have not loved, I am nothing. And I bestow all my goods to feed the poor and though I give my body to be burned, but have not loved, it profits me nothing. Love suffers long and is kind. Love does not envy. Love does not parade itself, is not puffed up, does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil. Does not rejoice in iniquity but rejoices in the truth. Bares all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love never fails."*

And we have talked about that at some length in the past and it's really, really important that all of us seek to walk in that level of love. I have touched on it previously and it's a point that's made very strongly in Creflo Dollar's book that obedience is a measure of love to God. If we read Galatians 5:13-26, *"For you brethren have been called to liberty. Only do not use liberty as an opportunity for the flesh, but through love serve one another. For all the law is fulfilled in one word: 'Even in this you will love your neighbour as yourself.' But if you bite and devour one another, beware lest you be consumed by one another. But I say, walk in the Spirit, and you shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh. For the flesh lust*

*against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh, and these are contrary to one another, so that you do not do the things that you wish. But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the law. Now the works of the flesh are evident, which are adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lewdness."*

I want to stop there. This is not talking about sexual relationships within marriage. This is talking about sexual relations outside marriage. Adultery and God-willing, there will be a whole teaching on adultery in the next week or two. It deals with the fact of a woman having sexual intercourse with a man who is not her husband, a man having sexual intercourse with a woman who is not his wife, who is not a virgin, and not a widow. Fornication, on a larger scale, and the uncleanness and lewdness all speak of extramarital sexual conduct. Adultery [inaudible 01:06:19], hatred, contention, jealousy, outburst, [inaudible 01:06:24], selfish ambitions, dissension, heresies, envy, murder, drunkenness, reveries, and the like which I tell you beforehand just as I also told you in the time past, that those who practice such things will not inherit the Kingdom of God but the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control, against such there is no law and those who are crucified the flesh with its passions and desires, if we live in the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. Let us not become conceited provoking one another, envying one another.

And again, if we look at the works of the flesh that are described there, there are whole bunch of things which should not be present in marriage: contention, jealousy, outburst, [inaudible 01:07:08], dissension, drunkenness, etc., etc., etc., should not be present in marriage. And we should seek to walk in the love that the Scriptures define. I believe that you would agree with me that we determine the extent to which we receive God's love. God's love is always present. It's there for us to receive. When we were yet sinners, He loved us. Today, if we are believers, we will experience His love to the extent that we choose to put ourselves in a position to receive God's love.

If we never spent time in the Word, if we never spent time in praise and worship, if we never spent time in prayer and we concentrated on the things of the world, we will have no experience of God's love. The more we seek God, the more we read His word, the more we praise Him and worship Him, the more we pray, the more time we spend alone with Him, the closer we get to Him and the greater and the deeper the revelation that we have of His love. And it's the same in the case of the wife. The more that she draws close to her husband, the more she will experience her love.

While I don't want to make too much of a point of this, I think that the fact that the husband is generally always ready to be sexually responsive when approached, is just an outward measure of the spiritual condition that I am talking about here. A wife who approaches her husband, the more she approaches him to make love in a physical but also in a spiritual and an emotional sense, the more she will unlock what is in her husband's heart for her. But if she puts up barriers, if she rejects her husband, if she stands back from her husband, she will never know the depth and the fullness of the love that God has created in her husband's heart to be there for her.

### **Looking to Jesus**

With that, we also need to recognise that the husband must always be looking to Jesus. If we read in Hebrews 12:1-11, *"Therefore, since we are surrounded by so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which so easily ensnares us and let us run with endurance the race that is set before us. Looking on to Jesus the author and finisher of our faith who is for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is sat down at the right hand of the Throne of God. Consider Him who endured such hostility from sinners against himself, lest you become weary and discouraged in your souls. You are not yet resisted to bloodshed strong against sin. And have you*



*forgotten the exhortation that addresses you as sons? 'My son, do not despise the chastening of the Lord, nor be discouraged when you are rebuked by Him.'*

And it goes on to deal more with the chastening of the Lord. But we are exalted in verse 2 to look on to Jesus, the author and finisher of our fate. The husband must always be looking to Jesus and seeking to become like Jesus. And if in a scriptural sense, he turns around and starts looking at his wife and starts seeking to become what his wife wants him to become, and starts being directed by his wife, he has taken his eyes off Jesus. Jesus is the way, the truth and the life, and once he takes his eyes off Jesus, he will take his eyes off the way and then the whole house will stumble and in extreme cases, the house will fall.

In the same way, the wife must in a spiritual sense always be looking to her husband and through her husband looking to Jesus. I am talking about the ultimate that we should be seeking. I am not saying that your husband or wife right now satisfies these criteria. But it is for the husband to seek to be the man that is being described in this teaching, and for the wife to seek to be the woman that is described by this teaching. If each of them reaches out to the subject or to this goal, they will draw closer to experiencing this and it will be the prices of change, challenge and iteration in order to get there.

If we turn to James 4:6-11, *"But He gives more grace. Therefore, he says, 'God resists the proud but gives grace to the humble.' Therefore, submit to God, resist the devil, and he will flee from you."* And we have said previously if the wife will submit to her husband, she is therefore submitting to God, and that will reduce her exposure to the attack of the enemy. If she refuses to submit to her husband, she steps out from the covering of her husband and she is fair going in for the devil to take her apart. *"Draw near to God, and He will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands, you sinners, and purify your hearts, you double-minded. Lament and mourn and weep. Let your laughter be turned to mourning and your joy to gloom. Humble yourselves in the sight of the Lord, and He will lift you up. Do not speak evil of one another, brethren. He who speaks evil of a brother or judges his brother, speaks evil of the law and judges the law. But if you judge the law, you are not a doer of the law but a judge."*

### **Drawing closer to God**

In the first instance, it is important that wives don't judge or speak evil of their husbands and husbands don't judge or speak evil of their wives. But when this draws close to God, the husband must draw closer to God, and as he draws closer to God, he will draw the whole family closer to God. If he tries to draw close to his wife at the expense of his relationship with God, then the result will be destruction. If he draws close to God and his wife draws close to him, then the whole marriage will be successful.

So, the wife, through her prayers, her thoughts, her words, and her actions must be constantly seeking to lift her husband closer to God in a spiritual sense. She should be encouraging him to draw closer to God and never seek to draw him closer to her. She must be the one who seeks to draw closer to her husband and for him to lift her closer to him. But she must never see her position as being the position of her husband or a position that her husband is going to, but she must always see that she must seek to be at her husband's position. If that is not where God wants him, she must intercede energetically for God to raise them both up to where she wants them. She will never get her husband closer to God by first getting closer to God herself and then trying to lift him up to her position.

If she does not feel that her husband is close enough to God, she needs to intercede, she needs to pray, she needs to submit to him, she needs to do everything that enables him to turn his eyes on Jesus. If she is arguing, fighting, and finding fault with him, he will take his eyes off Jesus to look at the

problem. It's like a runner who is running a race and a little dog comes and starts snapping at his heels. He is going to turn and look at the little dog because he is going to be concerned that it's going to hurt him. It might even damage him slightly and he is likely to miss the turning, stumble, and fall. He has taken his eyes off the way. A husband cannot see the way, he cannot focus on Jesus if his wife is constantly snapping at him and then finding fault with him and contending with him as we read in the Scriptures in previous weeks.

If we go to 1 John 5:1-3, *"Whoever believes that Jesus is the Christ is born of God, and everyone who loves the God also loves Him who is begotten of Him. By this we know that we love the children of God, when we love God and keep His Commandments. For this is the love of God, that we keep His Commandments. And His Commandments are not burdensome."* We have spoken of that previously but it's absolutely vital if we love God, we will obey His Commandments. So, wife who loves her, she loves God, must submit to her husband in everything no matter what her husband does.

If a wife does not obey her husband's commandments, whatever he asks or instructs her to do, whether it's just and reasonable, whether it's unreasonable, she will only be demonstrating her love to him in so far as she obeys him. Again, I will make the point, these principles are so absolutely vital because if a Christian woman marries an unbeliever and that man is unjust and treats her harshly, she is still required by Scripture to submit to him, even unto death. So, a woman who marries an unbeliever is literally taking her life in her hands. If she starts speaking against her husband and starts contending against her husband, she will be found wanting on the Day of Judgement because she has not obeyed the Word of the Lord. If she marries an unbeliever and dies a most atrocious death after years of abuse but throughout that she has submitted to her husband, she has loved her husband and prayed for her husband, she will no doubt receive the Crown of Glory on the Day of Judgement because she has obeyed the Commandments of the Lord.

It's really important that we understand in both our relationship with God and a wife's relationship with her husband, delayed obedience is disobedience and incomplete obedience is disobedience. This obedience is not love. We cannot claim to love God if we only do what He tells us to do or His word tells us to do when we feel like it, if we put it off or if we only do part of it. We have to be sold out to God. We have to give Him our all a hundred percent. And a wife must be sold out to her husband and give of herself to him a hundred percent.

I remind you again that the passage in Ezekiel, which to me was profoundly stunning, if I can put it that way, this is now Yahweh the father, Lord God himself speaking through Ezekiel, the prophet in Ezekiel 6:9-10, *"Then those of you who escape will remember me among the nations where they are carried captive, because I (God) was crushed by their adulterous heart which has departed from me and by their eyes which play the harlot after their idols. They will love themselves for the evils which they committed in all their abominations. And they shall know that I am the Lord. I have not said in vain that I would do this calamity upon."* We have to understand that for a wife to rebel against her husband, to be disobedient, to be contentious, presses his heart in the same way that if we are rebellious and disobedient, we will crush the Lord's heart of the father and of the Saviour. If we get a revelation of that, one cannot marvel that we can be so callous towards our God who has given us so much. And also, the Church is so lax in terms of what it teaches regarding marriage and issues of what are called woman's rights and what have you.

I made the point earlier that I would prefer to stay clear of terms like *'authority.'* I would also like to stay clear of terms like *'woman's rights'* or *'men's rights'* or *'anybody's rights.'* It's a case where we have responsibilities, we have accountabilities and with those we may have some authority and

responsibility to act. But a woman has responsibilities. She has accountabilities and in terms of what is required of her and workflows can [inaudible 01:18:54] rights. Recognise also that Jesus loves us unconditionally. He loved us when we were yet sinners. So, the husband must love his wife unconditionally and this is an enormous paradox in terms of what I have just read. So we have a situation where we are saying that the husband must love his wife even though she may be crushing him and bringing about rottenness in his bones.

So, he must still intercede, he must still be the priest of the home. He must still be the prophet, the king and the lord of the home even if his wife is not in submission to him. A point will come where he has done all and there is no more to do and he understood that the Lord may ultimately permit him to divorce. It certainly happened in my case after 25 years. It's not something that God is going to do until the husband has done something that approximates what God is calling him to do in terms of what I have been teaching this morning.

1 Peter 2:21 speaking again of Jesus, *"For to this you have been called, because Christ also suffered for us leaving as an example that you should follow His steps. He committed no sin, neither was deceit found in His mouth. When He was reviled, He did not revile in return; when He suffered, He did not threaten, but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously. He himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we have down to sins, might live for righteousness. By whose stripes we were healed. For you were like sheep going astray but have now returned to the Shepherd and Overseer of your souls."*

We see that Jesus bore our sins and, in a sense, I don't again fully understand exactly what I am about to say to you, but it is becoming more evident to me that in some way the husband bears his wife's sins. If she is under his covering and in submission to him, as we have said already, if she sins in submission to him, he will bear all of his sins. But it seems to me increasingly that we need to understand that in some measure even if the wife is not fully in submission, firstly, the husband is accountable. He is the head of the house. Secondly, he must bear her sins. And I do not exactly understand what I have just said there, but it seems very clearly that the Lord is saying to me, husband bear your wife's sins, accept the consequences and the responsibility to bringing correction in the home, not in an autocratic ruler sort of way, but in love according to the Word of God.

### **Don't give the devil a foothold**

It's important to realise that the next verse in 1 Peter 3 is wives likewise be submissive to your husbands. Ephesians 4:27 says, *"Give no place to the devil."* Give no foothold to the devil. That's important that we understand that we should not give Satan a foothold in our lives. John 10 says, *"The thief does not come to steal and kill and to destroy. I have come, that's Jesus, that they may have life and that they may have it more abundantly."* If we give the devil a foothold in our lives, he will kill, steal, and destroy. Ezekiel 33:12-13 *"Therefore you, a son of man, say to the children of your people, the righteousness of the righteous man shall not deliver him in the day of his transgression, as for the wickedness of the wicked, he shall not fall because of it in the day that he turns from his wickedness, nor shall the righteous not be able to live because of his righteousness in the day that he sins. When I say to the righteous that he shall surely live, but he trusts in his own righteousness and commits inequity, none of his righteous works shall be remembered, but because of the inequity that he has committed he shall die."*

And we see there that if we sin, we give Satan a foothold. Jesus has to watch powerless as we receive the just punishment for our sin unless the Father grants grace at Jesus' petition. Likewise, if a wife sins

and gives Satan a foothold in her life or in her house, the husband has to watch powerless as she receives the just punishment for her sin unless the Father grants grace at the petition of the husband or of Jesus, or in some fashion the husband actually steps in the gap and takes the knock, or the punishment on behalf of his wife because of his love for her. Therefore [inaudible 01:23:22] destroyed for lack of knowledge. I really want to stress that as I wrap up this teaching. The teaching that I have given this morning is a massive departure, certainly in my own experience from current practice in general teaching. It indicates a level of harmony between Jesus and man and man and wife, which is seldom, if ever witnessed on Earth today. I had no doubt that as this becomes a reality in the life of any man and any woman, it will bring about an awesome glory and power founded on the love of God.

I think that this is something which is profoundly worth seeking and striving for and laying down one's life in prayer and in intercession to receive. Remember especially that James 1:17 says, "*Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation or shadow of turning.*" I have no doubt that the fulfilment of this teaching in the life of any husband and wife will take a considerable amount of prayer, dying self, seeking God, and probably many mistakes along the way, but I have absolutely no doubt that this is a very good gift and a very perfect gift from the Father.

I believe that God has given marriage to man and woman for us to understand what it will be like in Heaven. God has intended and this is the point made in that article in *Joy magazine* 'Wow, so that's how Jesus loves me.' God has intended marriage to be a prophetic statement. God has intended for us to have Heaven on Earth in the relationship between husband and wife. It's something that is profoundly worth seeking. It is something that is profoundly worth making a sacrifice for. But it is something that requires that we reject and discard virtually everything that we have heard and taught in Church with regards to the practice of marriage. It requires that we really seek urgently the guidance of the Holy Spirit and that we seek the Scriptures for revelation in this field, and that we prayerfully and humbly walk down this road that the Lord insists to walk down, constantly seeking guidance, realising that we will make mistakes, realising that He will step down, reach down, and pick us up.

Father, in the name of Jesus, I believe what has been taught this morning before you and I ask you in the name of Jesus that if there is anything that I have uttered which is not of You that You will blow it away, that it will find no root and that whatever has been taught that is of You, I ask You that it will find root and that it will be engrafted in the hearts of the hearers and that You will give them the anointing and the wisdom and the discernment to put it into practice. I ask You to [inaudible 01:26:15] hunger in our hearts that no marriage as You intended it to be Father. I ask You to touch our lives powerfully today. We give our lives to You. We give our marriages to You and we ask You transform us to be in the likeness and the image of God. We ask You to transform our marriages that we may experience the joy and the pleasure of Heaven on Earth in our marriages. We ask You to bring us to a place where husband and wife walk in perfect unity, in perfect harmony, where the full glory and power that You intended to be in marriage comes into existence in our lives. We thank You for this, in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and make His face shine upon you. In the name of Jesus, amen.

## **03 07 The Scriptural Definition of Adultery**

This is the second teaching on the 21st of October 2000. The title is the '*Scriptural Definition of Adultery.*' Before I commenced this teaching, somebody who listened to this morning's teaching, has suggested that perhaps impression might have been created that the Scripture permitted a man to

abuse his wife. And I just want to stress that this is absolutely not the case. To the contrary, the implication of the covering and the implication of the husband being the head of the wife means that if the husband causes the wife to sin in any respect, he will be held accountable before God on the Day of Judgement and he will be judged accordingly even in this life.

It's important to understand, and I think I used the example a few weeks ago of the Russian who came to salvation because of a woman who did not in any way resist when he was beating her, and that God will act on behalf of the righteous woman who is in submission to her husband, who is being abused or who has been forced to sin, even though she is aware of the fact that she is sinning. One of the principles in the passage in 1 Peter 3 that I read is that God will fight on the side of those who obey His words. So, a woman who truly submits to her husband in absolutely everything, no matter how badly he treats her, will be protected by God and conversely, the husband will be extremely harshly judged. So contrary to being a licence for the husband to abuse his wife, the husband should understand this is a much more severe injunction and that he should treat his wife with the love that the Word of God requires. If she obeys the Word of God and submits to him and he treats her roughly, harshly or causes her to sin, he will be judged very severely indeed.

Conversely, we should also understand that the Word of God says in James 3:1, *"My brethren, let not many of you become teachers, knowing that we shall receive a stricter judgment."* We see that this supports what I have just said. A husband is required to be a teacher to his wife and therefore if he teaches her wrong, if he leads her into sin, he will be subject to a stricter judgment. Having clarified that point, let us return to the subject of what the Scriptures had to say about adultery. It's really important that we understand that. As you will see with this particular teaching, in the same way that we found that the teaching with regards to marriage is seriously out of line with what the Scriptures actually say and that marriage is the act of sexual intercourse with a virgin or a widow or in certain specific cases, with a divorcee and that will be addressed in a subsequent teaching. We will see here that adultery is converse of that. It is sexual intercourse with any woman who is not either a virgin or a widow or specifically, permitted by God to be divorced.

It's important to see that adultery is the sin which relates to ungodly sexual and spiritual conduct and is used throughout Scripture. I would like to address a number of definitions of adultery in Scriptures starting with Deuteronomy 22:22 which states, *"If a man is found lying with a woman married to a husband, then both of them shall die—the man that lay with the woman, and the woman; so, you shall put away the evil from Israel."* So, there is no doubt about that adultery is evil. It's quite unambiguous in adultery involves a man, marital state unspecified lying with a very specific woman and that is a woman married to her husband and the penalty for adultery is death of guilty parties, and as we saw in one of the earlier teachings, a woman is married to her husband if she has given her virginity to that man.

If we consider the New Testament in Romans 7:1-3, *"Or do you not know, brethren (for I speak to those who know the law), that the law has dominion over a man as long as he lives? For the woman who has a husband is bound by the law to her husband as long as he lives. But if the husband dies, she is released from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband lives, she marries another man, she will be called an adulteress; but if her husband dies, she is free from that law, so that she is no adulteress, though she has married another man."* It's interesting to know, and I was quoting from the New King James. It says, *"She marries another man."* In other words, she has sex. And again, we see the interchangeable use throughout Scripture of the word 'marry' and take and go into words which relate to sexual intercourse. There is no distinction in the Word of God between sexual intercourse with a virgin or a widow, and marriage of the two terms are used interchangeably.

So, again, can there be any uncertainty regarding the definition of adultery? It's clearly a woman who marries another man, or has intercourse with another man while her husband lives. Consider Proverbs 6:23-35, and I am just going to lift out a few verses there 23-29, *"For the Commandment is a lamp and the teaching a light, and the reproofs of discipline are the way of life, to keep you from the evil woman, from the flattering tongue of a seductress. Do not lust after her beauty in your heart, nor let her alert you with her eyelids, for by means of a harlot a man is reduced to a crust of bread, and an adulteress will pray upon his precious life. Can a man take fire to his bosom and his clothes not be burned, can one walk on hot coals and his feet not be seared? So, is he who goes in to his neighbour's wife; whoever touches her shall not be innocent."*

Verse 32-35, *"Whoever commits adultery with a woman lacks understanding; he who does so destroys his own self. Wounds and dishonour he will get, and his disgrace will not be wiped away. For jealousy is a husband's fury, therefore he will not spare in the day of vengeance. He will accept no compensation, nor will he at peace though you give many gifts."* This is also quite clear. Adultery involves going into one's neighbour's wife and jealousy is the husband's fury. There is no such provision regarding a man going into a virgin. There is also no provision of jealousy as a wife's fury. Female jealousy is a satanic counterfeit of the godly jealousy of the husband. And again, we see that a man who commits adultery destroy his own house. This is not something to be trifled with.

Adultery in Proverbs 7:5-27, we find another description of an immoral woman who seduces a young man and I just want to pick up a few verses here, 10, *"And there a woman met him with the attire of a harlot and a crafty heart."* Verses 17-19, she says, *"I have perfumed my bed with myrrh, aloes, and cinnamon. Come, let us take our fill of love till morning; let us delight ourselves with love. For my husband is not at home; he has gone on a long journey."* Verses 22-23, *"Immediately he went after her as an ox goes to the slaughter, or as a stag is caught fast, till an arrow strikes its liver; as a bird hastens to the snare; he did not know that it would cost his life."* Verses 26-27, *"She has cast down many wounded and all who are slain by her were strong men. Her house is the way to hell, descending to the chambers of death."* This woman is clearly an adulteress. She is seeking love with a man other than her husband. Equally clearly the spiritual consequences of adultery are too terrible to contemplate.

References made to an ox to the slaughter, till an arrow striking his liver, a bird hastening to its snare. It's quite clear this one act will cost him his life, that she has slain many strong men and her house is the way to hell. Can there be any doubt that adultery will commit the soul of the offender to hell. Certainly, true repentance, confession of sin, and asking for forgiveness will deliver the soul of the offender who sins unwittingly and comes to a recognition of his sin. But there are many who keep sinning because they cannot keep their sexual drive within the bounds of their present marriages.

Let us look also Proverbs 9:13-18, *"A foolish woman is clamorous, she is simple and knows nothing. For she sits at the door of her house and a seat by the highest places of the city to call to those who pass by, who goes straight on their way, 'Whoever is simple, let him turn in here!' As for him who lacks understanding, she says to him, 'Stolen water is sweet, and bread eaten in secret is pleasant.' But he does not know that the dead are there, that her guests are in the depths of hell."* Can there be any doubt those who partake of adultery and harlotry are committing their souls to hell? How then can the Church dare to define adultery as anything that it is institute doctrines which have necessity or require that adultery is condemned? I will develop this further as we go on in this teaching, but I believe by now you already see that by failing to recognise that marriage is sexual intercourse with a virgin, there are many, many people who are committing adultery in this present age as a consequence of that. People who have girls who have lost their virginity foolishly in their youth and who now married a man who is not the man who took their virginity, in terms of what has been taught in this

series, that is adultery, and those people are committed to hell and this is the truth that is told to them.

Consider Numbers 5:11-14, *"And the Lord spoke to Moses, saying, 'Speak to the children of Israel, and say to them: 'If any man's wife goes astray and behaves unfaithfully toward him, and a man lies with her carnally, and it is hidden from the eyes of her husband, and it is concealed that she has defiled herself, and there was no witness against her, nor was she caught, if the spirit of jealousy comes upon him and he becomes jealous of his wife, who has defiled herself; or if the spirit of jealousy comes upon him and he becomes jealous of his wife, although she has not defiled herself.'"*

It goes on and lays down a spiritual process whereby the Lord will reveal her unfaithfulness through the particular offering and ministry of the Priest. In verse 19, *"And the Priest shall put her under oath, and say to the woman, 'If no man has lain with you, and if you have not gone astray to uncleanness while under your husband's authority,'"* and here again, we see the concept of covering or authority. *"Be free from this water of bitterness that brings the curse."* Verse 20, *"But if you have gone astray while under your husband's authority, and if you have defiled yourself and some man other than your husband has lain with you."*

Again, a very explicit definition of the sin. Verse 27, *"When he has made her drink the water, then it shall be, if she has defiled herself and behaved unfaithfully toward her husband, that the water that brings a curse will enter her and become bitter, and her belly will swell, her thigh will rot, and the woman will become a curse among her people."* Verse 29, *"This is the law of jealousy, when a wife, while under her husband's authority, goes astray and defiles herself."* And so, we see very clearly that the Bible is very explicit in terms of identifying adultery. Again, there is no ambiguity. It's quite clear that it is the woman who goes astray with a man other than her husband.

Consider also Abraham and Abimelech. We looked at that from another perspective in terms of Sarah's obedience and submission to Abraham, even though she lied and misrepresented her marital state to Abimelech. Reading from Genesis, the whole passage from 1 to 18, I am going to read selected verses. You can refer to the previous teaching for more detail or just obviously look it up in your Bible. Verse 2-6, now Abraham said of Sarah, his wife, she is my sister and Abimelech, king of Gerar sent and took Sarah. But God came to Abimelech in a dream by night and said to him *"Indeed, you are a dead man because of the woman whom you have taken for she is a man's wife."* But Abimelech had not come near her and he said, *"Lord, will You slay a righteous nation also? Could he not say to me she is my sister and she, even she herself said he is my brother. In the integrity of my heart, in the innocence of my hands I have done this."* And God said to him in a dream, *"Yes, I know that you did this in the integrity of your heart. For I also withheld you from sinning against me therefore I did not let you touch her."* In verse 9, *"And Abimelech called Abraham and said to him, 'What have you done to us? How have I offended you that you have brought on me and on my kingdom a great sin?'"*

So, we see that adultery is not just [inaudible 00:13:32] sin. It is sin against God and that it is a great sin. Verse 18, *"For the Lord has closed up all the [inaudible 00:13:39] of the house of Abimelech, because of Sarah, Abraham's wife."* So, in this passage we see that adultery is a sin against God that even though Abimelech had done this thing after Abraham and Sarah had deliberately lied to him and Abimelech had acted in God's faith. God still told him that he was a dead man. So, we see that even a man who commits adultery in good faith, because the woman has lied to him, is still condemned to hell. Furthermore, God closed up all the [inaudible 00:14:05] in the house of Abimelech, both of his wife and his female servants thus although Abimelech already had at least one wife. God defined adultery as being the taking of a man's wife and would have executed judgment and even death if he

had actually consummated the relationship or he had not repented. Furthermore, we see that even if a woman lied about her marital state, the man is guilty.

Presumably this applies as much to a woman who lies to the effect that her hymen is perforated in athletics, or through the use of a tampon, or she says her husband is dead, or says that God has permitted her to get divorced. For that matter, she is mistaken in her belief? In one case, we administered to a woman who was seduced under hypnosis when she was in her teens and only had the full situation revealed to her by the Holy Spirit when she was in her 40s. She had been living in adultery in the sight of God for nearly 20 years, while legally married in the eyes of the state and the Church to another man.

Clearly, it is also a sin if a Pastor has said that a woman is free to marry, or a man is free to marry a woman. In such a case, the Pastor will presumably also be found guilty on the Day of Judgement. Can one do other than explain road to this evil and perverse generation. Adultery is not to be taken lightly. It truly is an abomination in the sight of God. And this is confirmed through our Scripture. Surely it condones so-called remarriage, that is actually adultery. It must also wrack as an abomination in the Sight of God. [inaudible 00:15:43] in reality is sin against one's own body.

1 Corinthians 6:13-20 states, *"Food is for the stomach and the stomach for food, but God will destroy both of them. Now the body is not for sexual immorality but for the Lord, and the Lord for the body. And God both raised up the Lord and will also raise us up by His power. Do you not know that your bodies are members of Christ? Shall I then take the members of Christ and make them members of a harlot? Certainly not! Or do you not know that he who is joined to a harlot is one body with her? For 'the two,' He says, 'shall become one flesh.' But he who is joined to the Lord is one Spirit with Him. Flee sexual immorality. Every sin that a man does is outside the body, but he who commits sexual immorality sins against his own body. Or do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and you are not your own? For you were bought at a price; therefore, glorify God in your body and in your spirit, which are God's."*

Clearly sexual union with a harlot or adulteress joins the man's body, the temple of the Holy Spirit to hers. Refer to previous teaching on the One Flesh Bond for more details. How then can the Church permit men and women to remarry when they are not divorced in the Sight of God? To stress, adultery is a sin against God. We see this very clearly in Psalm 51 where David repents of his sin and his adultery with Bathsheba in the murder of her husband as described in 2 Samuel 11 and 12. I just read selected verses. In verse 4 David says, *"Against You, (speaking to God) You only, have I sinned, and done this evil in Your sight—That You may be found just when You speak, and blameless when You judge."* Verse 9-12, *"Hide Your face from my sins, and blot out all my iniquities. Create in me a clean heart, O God, and renew a steadfast spirit within me. Do not cast me away from Your presence, and do not take Your Holy Spirit from me. Restore to me the joy of Your salvation and uphold me by Your generous Spirit."*

That passage of Scripture is perhaps the most powerful example of true repentance in the entire Bible. Clearly, David truly feared that God would cast him away and take his Holy Spirit from David. David also says to restore the joy of His salvation. The Psalm clearly portrays the cry of a desperate man who has known God and knows the magnitude of his sin. At this time, he had approximately 10 wives and 10 concubines in addition to Bathsheba. But God only rebuked him in the case of taking another man's wife. [inaudible 00:18:30] Scriptures containing the word adultery, adulterer, adulteress, fornication, fornicator and harlot are listed in the appendix to the book, *'The Scriptural Definition of Marriage'* which is available from this ministry in order to illustrate just how seriously God views these sins. I would encourage you in any event just to take a few minutes of the concordance and look at some of



the references just to get some indication of just how vile adultery and fornication and harlotry are in the Sight of God and how absolutely abhorrent they are to the righteous and holy God.

[inaudible 00:19:08] Deuteronomy 28, 29, and 30 list the blessings of obedience and curses associated with breaking the mosaic law, the mosaic covenant of the Torah. These curses apply to all those laws which are listed from Deuteronomy, Leviticus, Numbers, Exodus, and Genesis. In other words, they apply to those who add to, or take away from the Commandments of God. They are applied to those who committed adultery and harlotry, etc. In other words, they apply to all those who have taught that sexual intercourse with a woman who is not a virgin is not adultery, and that remarriage after divorce is not adultery, and to all those who wittingly or unwittingly have sinned as a consequence of this heresies. Conservatively, we are talking of millions of people, probably about billions, who have sinned as a consequence of the failure of the Church to teach the truth in this generation regarding virginity and marriage and adultery.

But Jesus became a curse for us I hear you cry. Yes, certainly Jesus became a curse for us but [inaudible 00:20:17] of our sins confessed them before God and asked for in and receive forgiveness. Under the old covenant, the sin offering was put to death on behalf of the sinner. This required the sinner to bring the sacrifice to the temple. Under the new covenant, Jesus became our sacrifice once and for all. But we must still bring our sacrifice of a broken and a contrite heart before the Throne of Grace and ask for forgiveness.

Equally, if we sin wilfully, we crucify Jesus again. Hebrews 6:1-8 states, *"Therefore, leaving the discussion of the elementary principles of Christ, let us go on to perfection, not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith toward God, of the doctrine of baptisms, of laying on of hands, of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. And this we will do if God permits. For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted the heavenly gift, and have become partakers of the Holy Spirit, and have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, if they fall away, to renew them again to repentance, since they crucify again for themselves the Son of God, and put Him to an open shame. For the earth which drinks in the rain that often comes upon it, and bears herbs useful for those by whom it is cultivated, receives blessing from God; but if it bears thorns and briers, it is rejected and near to being cursed, whose end is to be burned."*

How many men and women who call themselves by the name of Christ, who style themselves with titles like Reverent and Pastor contrary to the Word of God, who have access to as many translations of the Bible as they want, as well as access to diverse reference materials, who even publish such materials are crucifying again the son of God and putting him to an open shame? It seems to me that there are far more than most men and women would like to believe. We may well find on the Day of Judgement that God's books tell a different story of many who made God as the pillars of the Church.

Do not forget Matthew 7:21-29 and I read 21 to 23, *"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of Heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in Heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?' And then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!'"* Today, we see many who prophecy, cast out demons, and do wonders in the name of Jesus. But Jesus here declares that He will say to me that He never knew them. Brothers and sisters, this is shattering Scripture, but it is Scripture, nevertheless. As you listen to these teachings, can you say with certainty that you truly know the Lord and do the will of his Father all have you been preaching or practicing [inaudible 00:23:06] and condemning God's children but seeking to

live lives in accordance to Scripture? I urge you to consider carefully what you have taught and applied in this area of doctrine and to determine whether you need to repent and turn from your wicked ways.

Consider Ezekiel 18:30, *"Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, everyone according to his ways," says the Lord God. 'Repent, and turn from all your transgressions, so that iniquity will not be your ruin.'"* Consider also [inaudible 00:23:37] Ezekiel and others prophesied against were similar to the sins of the Church today if we have a [inaudible 00:23:44] better covenant and no doubt we will be judged that much more severely.

Adultery after Jesus came under the new covenant. There seems to be a widely held view that somehow Jesus did away with the penalty for adultery and that adultery is now something that can be confessed and repented of, where after it goes away, so the couple concerned can continue their relationship if they are married in the sight of the Church. This is seemingly based upon John 8:1-11 and I will read a few verses, 3 and 4, *"Then the scribes and Pharisees brought to Him a woman caught in adultery. And when they had set her in the midst, they said to Him, 'Teacher, this woman was caught in adultery, in the very act.'"* I am sure you are familiar with the story. You can read it yourselves. In verse 11, when Jesus asked if anyone has condemned her, *"She said, 'No one, Lord.' And Jesus said to her, 'Neither do I condemn you; go and sin no more.'"*

Clearly Jesus told her to sin no more. Imagine the scene, the woman was caught in the act, but the man was allowed to flee. Historical reports that I have read seemed to suggest that the application of the Scripture relating to stoning for adultery was seldom, if ever practiced in Jesus' day. [inaudible 00:25:00] during Jesus' lifetime and [inaudible 00:25:03] living, not that different from the world today, but perhaps more public was widespread in Roman, Greece, and throughout the so-called civilised world. Accordingly, it would seem that this woman had been living in a situation in which the likelihood of any serious natural consequences for her dalliance were unlikely. Suddenly, she found herself facing death while her lover who was present - he had to be, she was caught in the act - was seemingly permitted to flee and not pursued. Is it not possible that under these circumstances she came to a rapid and sincere repentance and is it not possible that Jesus who knows our thoughts knew that she had truly repented after [inaudible 00:25:41].

The Lord knows the thoughts of man, but they are futile. Matthew 9:4-6 states, *"But Jesus, knowing their thoughts, said, 'Why do you think evil in your hearts?'"* Is it not possible that Jesus was as much grieved by the great hypocrisy of those who are caught in the act and yet did not bring her lover with her to be stoned as Jesus might have been grieved by her sin? Today we construct a doctrine of universal indulgence of fornication from this one incident, particularly when this passage is not included in many scripts. Refer to the footnote in the NIV and other translation. No doubt, true repentance for the broken spirit and the contrite heart brings forgiveness. How can this be achieved when a man has put away or divorced his wife without scriptural grounds? I will address this in much more detail in the later teaching.

Certainly, we can deduce that if a person commits adultery, recognises that it is sin and turns from it asking God for forgiveness, they will receive that forgiveness and they can continue their lives without eternal consequences. But the experience of David referred to previously, clearly demonstrates that David was living under the mosaic covenant as a Prophet. So, can we say that anything significant changed between the old and new covenant? God has always responded with mercy to a broken spirit and a contrite heart.

Nevertheless, in a passage in John 8:11, Jesus clearly tells her to go and sin no more. How then can the Church suggest that a man can marry a divorced woman whose divorce God has not sanctioned? Acknowledge that this is adultery and then tell her and her new husband that if they confess their sin after first intercourse, from then it will be in order. I have heard teachings to this effect. It is not an abomination in the Sight of God. At the same time, we must recognise that despite his sincere and abject repentance, David's family lived under the curse of his actions for generations as portrayed in the '*Books of the Chronicles of the Kings of Judah.*' Only absolutely certain that this curse is cut off by Jesus' sacrifice. I think not.

My own experience presented in an earlier teaching in this series clearly indicates that heartfelt repentance is not enough to cut off the consequences of adultery. It is far more spiritual housekeeping required to cut off the curse and the consequences in this life. The One Flesh Bond must be severed by the Grace of God, some ties must be cut. Ungodly promises and vows must be renounced on both sides and cut off and the parties released. Restitution to the husband and family may be required. Curses spoken against one must be cut off. Demonic day prayers must be closed and familiar Spirits associated with the liaison must be cast out. All demons transferred between the parties must be dealt with.

I can state from painful experience that this will require great soul searching and seeking of God to identify all issues that must be cut off. In my case, this took years. I walked the road of recovery from adultery having been trapped by Satan's lies when I back slipped many years ago. Six years after even, God was still showing me aspects of ignorance and spiritual consequences which were still not finally dealt with.

Revelation 21:8 is quite specific. Sexual immorality leads to a part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone. So, people do not confess their sin and repent in this life. We read in Revelation 21:8 *"But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death."* Other translations state in the King James, '*whoremongers*' and in the Revised Standard Version, '*fornicators*.' The word '*sexually immoral*' in the New King James, '*whoremongers*' in the King James and '*fornicators*' in RSV are all alternative translations of the word pornos, Nestles #4205. In [inaudible 00:29:48] dictionary, this is defined as [inaudible 00:29:50] a man who indulges in unlawful sexual intercourse, fornicator. These words are seemingly closely allied with the word '*pornea*' which is translated fornication in Matthew 5:32 in the King James, *"But I say unto you that whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication (pornea), causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery."* The same word occurs in Matthew 19:9, *"And I say unto you, whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication (Greek: Pornea), and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery."*

Strong defines this word #4202 pornea, from 4203 harlotry including adultery and incest, figuratively idolatry. The scriptural definition of marriage lists all Scriptures which contain the word pornea in order to give you a better understanding of the scope of the word. The word covers both sexual immorality and spiritual unfaithfulness. And I would encourage you to research this in a concordance if you don't have access to the book. I believe the Lord has also shown me that pornea includes continuous spiritual unfaithfulness, idolatry, or betrayal of an extended period by a spouse with refusal to repent or deliberate returning to that sin.

However, based on my own experience, the Lord extends considerable grace to the offending spouse to give them time to come through repentance before permitting divorce. This may relate to a

condition such as a spouse being a psychopath, or an alcoholic person who physically abuses the other spouse, and similar traits associated with intense demonic oppression corresponding to effective spiritual idolatry on the part of the offender. It seems that God's blessing for divorce may only come when the offending spouse has either reached a point where they are beyond redemption or have renounced their salvation.

We must remember that while one is married to such a spouse, one is afforded an opportunity to diet herself and to learn how to become more Christ-like as taught previously. It is probably easier to start [inaudible 00:32:09] in Heaven when in such a marriage than it is in a lukewarm marriage to another believer where you are not making any real effort to serve God. Thus, we see that divorce is only permitted in the event of adultery, sexual abomination, persistence idolatry and betrayal.

Returning to the question of whether Jesus relaxed the law on adultery, we have to ask ourselves if that is the case, why did John, the Baptist die, and I refer you to Mark 6:16-27, again reading selected verses. The context here is that John had been put in jail. Verse 18, for John had said to Herod it is not lawful for you to have your brother's wife. And we go through the whole story where Herod's daughter dances at the feast and Herod makes a foolish oath and in verse 27, we read, *"Immediately the King sent an executioner and commanded his head to be brought. And he went and beheaded him in prison."* The same incident is recorded in Matthew 14:1-12. Can there be any doubt that John opposed adultery with absolute conviction? Surely if the current doctrine had applied, he would just have told Herod to confess his sin and he could carry on living with Herod. Surely if Jesus was in the process of changing the law, he would have sent a message to John to tell him about the change. No. We must accept that the Word of God has not changed with regards to adultery. If John the Baptist was prepared to die rather than compromise, then surely, so should we.

So, we can conclude that a woman who had sex with more than one man while the first is alive is defined as an adulteress and a harlot, except in exceptional circumstances. There cannot be any doubt that adulterers and adulteresses who are referred to elsewhere as harlots and so forth fall into the category of sexually immoral. Accordingly, I have no doubt that we must accept that any person who is an unrepented, who did not know or refused to repent adulterer or adulteress. In other words, any woman who has had sex even once with more than one man over her lifetime other than a widow, a divorcee whom God has released to divorce and to remarry and her as being formally divorced, or a woman who was a harlot and who has come to full and sincere revelation of the sin, confession thereof and repentance and whom God has released to marry.

Any woman who has sex, who is not in one of those categories with a second man, will have their part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone whether they claim to be born again or not. Likewise, any man who has had sex even once with even one such woman, and who has not come to recognition of this sin, or confession of that sin before God and sincere repentance of that sin, will have their part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone.

### **The accountability of Pastors and teachers**

Matthew 23:8-13 states, *"But you, do not be called 'Rabbi'; for One is your Teacher, the Christ, and you are all brethren. Do not call anyone on earth your father; for One is your Father, He who is in Heaven. And do not be called teachers; for One is your Teacher, the Christ. But he who is greatest among you shall be your servant. And whoever exalts himself will be humbled, and he who humbles himself will be exalted. But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you shut up the kingdom of Heaven against men; for you neither go in yourselves, nor do you allow those who are entering to go in."*

Notwithstanding Jesus injunction here to call no man 'Rabbi' or 'Teacher', Christian leaders insist on appropriating the title Pastor, Reverent or father to themselves refer to distinguish [inaudible 00:36:05] Pastor or Teacher and converting that into a title. No one would consider calling themselves bookkeeper Smith and know that bookkeeper is a job description. Likewise, Pastor is a job description. Having set themselves up in this Pastor sadly [inaudible 00:36:23] to lose sight of Jesus' commandment that we should regard ourselves as servants to our brethren.

They may take it upon themselves to pronounce issues of doctrine to decide whether a couple of suitable marriage material or not, to decide whether a divorce is sanctioned by God, to decide whether a woman who is not a virgin is free in the Sight of God to marry, and to prescribe and pronounce on many other issues. It is important to recognise that every individual is accountable before God for their own sin. Accordingly, while a Priest who run the councils [inaudible 00:36:53] will be accountable for his sin. The individuals will still be called to account of the Day of Judgement and the best I can determine is that they have committed adultery by following their Pastor's advice, they will still have their part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone.

The Pastor is also likely to be found on the Day of Judgement to have added to or taken away from the Word of God to rely to the couple or be at an ignorance and therefore to have their blood on his hands. Remember also that Matthew 23 continues in verses 14 to 39 to further address the Pharisees and I read again selected verses. It is important to recognise that this passage gives perhaps Jesus harshest condemnation of the Pharisees through how to use his ministry. And this relates specifically to people sitting themselves up in positions of authority over God's people. Verse 15, *"Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you travel land and sea to win one proselyte, and when he is won, you make him twice as much a son of hell as yourselves. Woe to you, blind guides."* Verse 17, *"Fools and blind!"* Verse 19, *"Fools and blind!"* Verse 23, *"And have neglected the weightier matters of the law: justice and mercy and faith."* Verse 24, *"Blind guides, who strain out a gnat and swallow a camel!"* Verse 28, *"Even so you also outwardly appear righteous to men, but inside you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness."*

I have to be blind. I have to ask those who are listening to this teaching to consider carefully what the Church is teaching in the subject of marriage and the subject of adultery. It does not matter what the Pastor believes, what the Church is teaching, or what is being taught in Bible school. If it is contrary to what is being taught here, it is sending people to hell or the very least, it is resulting in them having a part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone. Please note, when I speak about people taking authority, I am not talking about the authority of the Apostle and Prophet and Evangelist in their ministry led by the Holy Spirit. I am talking about religious taking of position and application of titles and then presuming to override the Word of God.

We have to ask ourselves how sure we are that the verses that I have just read do not apply in great measure to many leaders in the Church today. The close reading of the reports of Joyner's visions reported in the book, *'The Final Quest'* indicates [inaudible 00:39:30] far more than most would like to believe. Now is the time for all who call themselves by the name of Christ to carefully examine themselves in the mirror of the Word of God to determine their spiritual state.

### **Judgment revisited**

Some people have the opinion that these people will not burn for eternity, but certainly there seems to be Scripture to suggest that they will spend eternity in an extremely unpleasant place. On the other hand, from the report of Joyner in *'The Final Quest'* it does appear there is a possibility that a person

who truly trusts God by faith for salvation through the name of Jesus may just be saved into Heaven with no treasure and possibly having gone through a [inaudible 00:40:11] judgment experience, which may well involve a part being a portion of time in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone. But it does not seem with gambling on this when there are so many explicit Scriptures to indicate that there is quite possibly another fate which is truly worse indeed.

Luke 16:18-31 gives a story which demonstrates the principle. In fact, it gives two passages, two parables, two teachings which are juxtaposed in a very interesting fashion. Verse 18, *"Whoever divorces his wife and marries another, commits adultery; and whoever marries her who is divorced from her husband commits adultery."* And in the next verse we read, *"There was a certain rich man who was clothed in purple and fine linen and fared sumptuously every day."* And so, we go on in verse 22, *"The rich man also died and was buried. And being in torments in Hades, he lifted up his eyes and saw Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. Then he cried and said, 'Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus that he may dip the tip of his finger in water and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.'"* I believe it is a very interesting and intentional juxtaposition that verse 18 speaks of divorce and adultery, and the story of Lazarus and the rich man started in the next verse. I really believe that God is seeking to tell us something by this passage of Scripture, and that is that those who commit adultery, those who get divorced without due grants and remarry, commit adultery and will end up tormented in Hades, tormented in this flame.

Jude 1:7 states, *"As Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities around them in a similar manner to these, having given themselves over to sexual immorality and gone after strange flesh, are set forth as an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire."* Hebrews 6:2 states *"Of the doctrine of baptisms, of laying on of hands, of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment."* Can there be any doubt that this eternal judgment is eternal fire? Whatever the exact form may be, it is undoubtedly torment and suffering. And I made the point that this is New Testament. Many Christians today seem to have lost sight of the reality of judgment. They seem to have lost sight of the reality of dealing eternally with the consequences of their sin.

[inaudible 00:42:43] that the voice which speaks through word reported in Revelation 21:1-8 cited previously identifies himself in verse 21:6 as the Alpha and Omega, i.e., no less than Jesus himself speaking. Shortly thereafter in 22:18-19, where it specifically cautions not to add to or take away from anything written in this book. Revelation 22:16-20 says, *"I, Jesus..."* It carries on in verse 18, *"For I testify to everyone who hears the Words of the prophecy of this book: If anyone adds to these things, God will add to him the plagues that are written in this book; and if anyone takes away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the Book of Life, from the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book."* I do not believe it is any coincidence that this is in the last chapter of Revelation, which is the last book of the Bible and these same warnings are contained in Proverbs and in Deuteronomy.

I have no doubt that we should not contemplate and suggest that someone who is committing adultery will not have their part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone. So, we have a critical conclusion and that is unrepented adultery will almost certainly lead to a part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone, if not eternal separation from God in hell. And it is true that once confessed, adultery is no longer adultery. As I said before, there are teachings to the effect that if you marry a divorced woman, you are committing adultery, but if you confess your sins and repent of it, it is not adultery after that. Matthew 19:9 in King James states, *"And I say unto you, whosoever shall put away his wife, except be it for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery."* Clearly unless a woman is divorced with [inaudible 00:44:45] is the

innocent party in the Sight of God and has a certificate of divorce as discussed and the teaching to follow, any man having intercourse with her would be committing adultery.

Remember also that we have established that the use of the word 'marry' corresponds to the sexual intercourse. So, this is not talking about a man getting a certificate and the license from the state or the Church; this is talking about a man having sexual intercourse with a woman who is another man's wife, even if he has put her away. We see there also interestingly enough that if the husband puts her away and she sins, the husband will also carry that sin, confirming the earlier teaching.

If this is not divorce Yahweh's blessing, then every time the man has intercourse with her, they are committing adultery. It does not matter if they have a certificate from the state or the Church, they are still committing adultery every time they have intercourse, and Jesus has made this quite clear. If they confess and repent after every sexual encounter, then that is wilful sin and Hebrews 10:23-31 is quite explicit about that.

*Verse 26, "For if we sin wilfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins. But a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and fiery indignation which will devour the adversaries. Anyone who has rejected Moses' law dies without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses. Of how much worse punishment, do you suppose, will he be thought worthy who has trampled the Son of God underfoot, counted the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified a common thing, and insulted the Spirit of grace? For we know Him who said, 'Vengeance is Mine, I will repay,' says the Lord. And again, 'The Lord will judge His people.' It is a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God."*

There can be no uncertainty about the outcome of this conduct. As you studied discussion on the One Flesh Bond and the latent supernatural forces designed by God to make marriage work, as discussed in the previous teaching, we will come to realise just how powerful God's plan for marriage is, just how effectively Satan has corrupted it, and [inaudible 00:46:55], and just how great the opportunity is that awaits for you to make marriage work with your existing marriage partner. The reality is that there is much that we do not understand about godly marriage. If putting away divorces to be avoided and if we recognise that our harsh, legalistic approach will not work, the thinking is developed progressively in this series of teaching.

### **God's Definition with Sexual Sin**

Leviticus 18:1-30 provides a comprehensive statement of God's definition of sexual sin. *"Then the Lord spoke to Moses, saying, 'Speak to the children of Israel, and say to them: I am the Lord your God. According to the doings of the land of Egypt, where you dwelt, you shall not do; and according to the doings of the land of Canaan, where I am bringing you, you shall not do; nor shall you walk in their ordinances. You shall observe My judgments and keep My ordinances, to walk in them: I am the Lord your God. You shall therefore keep My statutes and My judgments, which if a man does, he shall live by them: I am the Lord. None of you shall approach anyone who is near of kin to him, to uncover his nakedness: I am the Lord. The nakedness of your father or the nakedness of your mother you shall not uncover. She is your mother; you shall not uncover her nakedness. The nakedness of your father's wife you shall not uncover; it is your father's nakedness. The nakedness of your sister, the daughter of your father, or the daughter of your mother, whether born at home or elsewhere, their nakedness you shall not uncover. The nakedness of your son's daughter or your daughter's daughter, their nakedness you shall not uncover; for theirs is your own nakedness."*

*The nakedness of your father's wife's daughter, begotten by your father—she is your sister—you shall not uncover her nakedness. You shall not uncover the nakedness of your father's sister; she is near of kin to your father. You shall not uncover the nakedness of your mother's sister, for she is near of kin to your mother. You shall not uncover the nakedness of your father's brother. You shall not approach his wife; she is your aunt. You shall not uncover the nakedness of your daughter-in-law—she is your son's wife—you shall not uncover her nakedness. You shall not uncover the nakedness of your brother's wife; it is your brother's nakedness. You shall not uncover the nakedness of a woman and her daughter, nor shall you take her son's daughter or her daughter's daughter, to uncover her nakedness. They are near of kin to her. It is wickedness. Nor shall you take a woman as a rival to her sister, to uncover her nakedness while the other is alive.*

*Also, you shall not approach a woman to uncover her nakedness as long as she is in her customary impurity. Moreover, you shall not lie carnally with your neighbour's wife, to defile yourself with her. And you shall not let any of your descendants pass through the fire to Molech, nor shall you profane the name of your God: I am the Lord. You shall not lie with a male as with a woman. It is an abomination. Nor shall you mate with any animal, to defile yourself with it. Nor shall any woman stand before an animal to mate with it. It is perversion.*

*Do not defile yourselves with any of these things; for by all these the nations are defiled, which I am casting out before you. For the land is defiled; therefore, I visit the punishment of its iniquity upon it, and the land vomits out its inhabitants. You shall therefore keep My statutes and My judgments, and shall not commit any of these abominations, either any of your own nation or any stranger who dwells among you (for all these abominations the men of the land have done, who were before you, and thus the land is defiled), lest the land vomit you out also when you defile it, as it vomited out the nations that were before you. For whoever commits any of these abominations, the persons who commit them shall be cut off from among their people.*

*Therefore, you shall keep My ordinance, so that you do not commit any of these abominable customs which were committed before you, and that you do not defile yourselves by them: I am the Lord your God."*

Strong defines the word 'nakedness' in the above Scriptures as follows: #6172 'ervah,' from #6168 nudity, literally (especially the pudenda) or figuratively (disgrace, blemish). King James version: Nakedness, shame, uncleanness. Brown-Driver-Briggs defines: Nakedness, nudity, shame, pudenda, genitalia. Pudenda implying shameful exposure, nakedness of the thing, indecency, improper behaviour, exposed, undefended figuratively. Thus, nakedness is not only to sexual act as indicated by certain translations. It is the observance of the sexual organs with the people referred to. Surely, this must extend to sexual intercourse as well. It is fairly widely reported in sacrifice [inaudible 00:51:46] getting rid of unwanted children. Surely, abortion is such an abomination.

The above passages from Leviticus are extremely robust when it comes to stating God's opinion of these sins. He repeatedly states that it is for these sins that he visited judgment on Egypt and that he is driving the people out of Canaan. It appears also that these were the same sins which resulted in the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, and many of these sins are openly portrayed and practiced in the world today. This text is more or less duplicated in Leviticus 20:1-27. Again, in that passage I would urge you to note the close association between sexual immorality and spiritual immorality. Note that the same terms are applied to both: Harlotry, prostitution, fornication, adultery, relating back to the term pornea used by Jesus with respect to his grounds for divorce and adultery.



Deuteronomy 27:14-26 further addresses the subject of sexual sin and various forms of sexual sin, which is specifically trust and includes essentially the same list as in Leviticus. It is important to note that in that passage incest is listed together with bestiality, and so is adultery.

So, how seriously does God view sexual sin? There can be no doubt from these passages that God views sexual sin in a very, very serious light. Adultery is not something to be taken lightly. It is not something that can just be summarily repented of and then repeatedly executed. Divorce, which is not divorce but is putting away and results in a woman having intercourse with a man who is not her first husband, while the husband is alive is adultery. Intercourse with a woman who is not a virgin, who has given her virginity to another man is adultery. Intercourse with a virgin is marriage irrespective of the marital status of the man who takes that woman's virginity. In a very robust concept, there can be absolutely no ambiguity and no uncertainty about what God is saying. And it beholds everyone who calls themselves by the name of Christ to examine critically what they have been believing and what they have been teaching. Because if it does not accord with the Scriptures, implications are very clear.

Let us consider the implications for the Church at the end of the age. Consider Ezekiel 33:8-9, *"When I say to the wicked, 'O wicked man, you shall surely die!' and you do not speak to warn the wicked from his way, that wicked man shall die in his iniquity; but his blood I will require at your hand. Nevertheless, if you warn the wicked to turn from his way, and he does not turn from his way, he shall die in his iniquity; but you have delivered your soul."* Certainly, every person who listens to this teaching and surely every person who has a Bible and certainly every person who reads the Bible should consider the possibility that they are called to be watching into the world in which we live. Surely, if we fail to recognise the importance of Scriptures such as those considered in this teaching, we place ourselves at risk of finding the blood of those who perish for eternity upon our own hands at the Day of Judgement. And for that reason, we risk finding ourselves cast into the Lake of Fire and Brimstone and hearing those dreadful words, *'Depart from me you workers of inequity. I never knew you.'*

There is plan for those who call themselves by the name of Christ to become serious about the truth concerning marriage, being sexual intercourse with a virgin, and adultery being sexual intercourse with a woman who is not a virgin or widow, or who has been divorced in exceptional circumstances permitted by God. I urge everybody who has listened to this series of teachings so far to seriously go before God, even today and examine your heart in terms of your own life, in terms of your past sexual conduct, and in terms of what you have been teaching, preaching, and practising and counselling others to do in their lives. If you have any reason, a question, a veracity of your conduct, I will suggest strongly that you go before the Throne of Grace today with a [inaudible 00:56:47] and a contrite heart and confess your sin and do whatever needs to be done to make right. If you are a Pastor or a Teacher and you have been teaching other than what has been taught in this series, you may find yourself null in the position when you have to contact people that you have advised to marry or even married knowing their circumstances. I would advise them that they may be living in adultery.

I would certainly not rule out based on our own experiences prophetic counsellors that you are going to encounter situations where God is going to sigh with couples who lived together for decades who rise children together are actually living in adultery. God is [inaudible 00:57:32] with our ignorance. God has called us to live according to His word and He does not come down and He does not extend grace to all doing sin. I understand that this is an extremely harsh perspective, but by the Spirit of God I say to you today I truly, truly, truly believe that it is time that each one of us and the Church as a whole examine themselves critically against the Word of God. Judgment is about to come in the

Church. He can no longer afford to play games with the Word of God and teach falsely concerning virginity, concerning marriage, concerning divorce, concerning adultery.

There is much more that I can say on the subject of divorce, and God-willing, this will be a subject of a subsequent teaching in this series. You may have also noted that there are a number of other aspects which rise out of the Scriptures that have been read in this series so far which must cause you to raise questions concerning other areas. I will sincerely ask you to go before God and ask Him to open your eyes to a full revelation of the Scriptures that have been read in this series and the concept that has been read in this series. I would like to pray with every listener right now: Father, in the name of Jesus, firstly I ask you that if there is anything that I have said or taught in this message that is not of You, that You will blow it away and that it will find no root in the hearers. But I ask You Father that everything that has been taught will be word of Scripture that has been read, that You will impart it on the hearts of everyone who hears this teaching and that You will cause it to take root and bear much effect in the name of Jesus.

I further pray particularly that every aspect of this teaching which is contrary to what the Israelites referred, [inaudible 00:59:42] and practices and lived up to this point, but which is according to Your Word and Your Will. Open their eyes to see the truth, that You will cause them to examine their hearts and to come before Your Throne through revelation, confirmation and clarification, that they may come into a place of understanding the truth of what Your Word said concerning marriage. May they come to a place of repentance and a heartfelt turning around and will not hesitate to share the truths that have been brought in all series with those who would like to hear it, [inaudible 01:00:19] leadership and [inaudible 01:00:22] sheep in the flock of the Lord Jesus Christ, who are currently in sin, who are currently in a situation that the demon has footholds in their lives and is killing, stealing, and destroying on an ongoing basis, because they have ungodly sexual relationships that they have One Flesh Bonds which are [inaudible 01:00:37] because they are living in adultery. And Father I pray that you have mercy and that You will extend grace to those who listen to this. I pray also that You will judge severely and correct harshly [inaudible 01:00:52] seek out the truth and come to repentance, in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in Jesus' name, amen.

## **03 08 Tying Up Some Loose Ends - Some Controversial Points**

***James Robertson -- 28 October 2000***

//\*\*

This message is entitled '*Tying Up Some Loose Ends - Some Controversial Points*.' It's part 8 of the series on marriage. The music that was played by the Spirit before the teaching is included on the tape to give some indication of the spiritual context of what the Lord is saying. The teaching commences after about half an hour, in other words about two-thirds of the way through the tape.

[00:16:13]

Good day! This is October 28, 2000, and this teaching is a continuation of the series on marriage which has been given over the last few months. In preparing this message, I have been led to call it '*Tying Up Some Loose Ends -- Some Controversial Points*.' It needs to be stressed that the message contains a

number of controversial points. During the course of the previous teachings, it has become apparent that in some of what was taught from Scripture, there were nonconformities or inconsistencies with current Church doctrine. Today's teaching will address these in more detail and go beyond that into some other areas, which are immensely challenging.

Accordingly, I would suggest that this teaching is not one to be listened to by young believers or people who are not mature adults. It addresses subjects which really should be the preserve of adult believers. At the same time, what is presented is solidly based on Scripture and if the Scriptures that have never before really come to your attention, you may find some of these conclusions and teachings immensely challenging and find yourself in a position where something within you rises up and seeks to deny what is contained in this teaching. I would encourage you to open your minds and your hearts and not to allow things to set in. As with all things, you are at liberty at the end to choose whether we accept something as being of God or not. Even if are unable to convince ourselves that it is not of God, we are at liberty to decide whether to put it into practice in our lives or not.

The important thing is that we should not be found on the Day of Judgement to have added to the Word of God or taken away from the Word of God and I refer you to the first teaching in which the eternal implications of adding to or taken away from the Word of God was stressed. Many of the points today represent a return to the truths which have been lost in some cases for generations, or certainly been ignored by the Church. It is really time that they are now confronted. I believe that these are the things which are absolutely pivotal to come into a full understanding of what the Word of God says concerning marriage, and in applying that which is being taught in the months passed, particularly if we have a desire to see the level of divorce, fornication, etc., in the Church brought to an end. I will also encourage you to take note of the present worship that has preceded this teaching. The Lord God is indeed Lord of His Church and He does indeed require us to submit to Him and to His Word above all things.

To go back to our cornerstone Scripture that has formed the basis of this teaching throughout, Ephesians 5:25-33, *"Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the Church and gave Himself for her, that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the Word, that He might present her to Himself a glorious Church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish. So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies; he who loves his wife loves himself. For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the Church. For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. 'For this reason, a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh.' This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church. Nevertheless let each one of you in particular so love his own wife as himself, and let the wife see that she respects her husband."*

The [inaudible 00:21:09] of this passage of Scripture is that we see everything in Scripture that relates to the relationship between God and man also relates to the relationship between Christ and the Church, and between husband and wife. We see an incredibly powerful parallel which shows us that the entire Bible is a manual for marriage, firstly as a manual for marriage between the Church and Christ. Secondly, a manual of marriage between husband and wife. Its use will be made again of this parallel in the teaching today. A point has also been made previously that sexual lovemaking is a shadow of prayers and worship, and just as prayers and worship should bring us into the presence of our Saviour, and bring us into the presence of the Father, sexual lovemaking in marriage should be the highest ecstatic experience between husband and wife.

Marriage is intended to be a shadow and a type of Heaven. It is intended to be something incredibly wonderful, which is not something that a lot of people today can say regarding marriage. In the area of sexual love, I want to take you on a bit of a journey through the Book of Esther. I refer you to Esther 2:8-18. I will read the story starting here. The King's previous wife, Vashti, had been rebellious and disobedient and he had divorced her because of her rebellion, and that will be addressed, God-willing, in the teaching on divorce. The King is now counselled that he should seek a new wife to be queen. And so, virgins are sought throughout the country, throughout the kingdom. One of those is a young Jewish girl by the name of Esther who is an orphan, who has been raised by her uncle, Mordecai. All of these young virgins were packed into the King's palace and provided with the things that are necessary to prepare them in order to please the King. The objective of the exercise is that the young woman who is most pleasing to the King will become his Queen.

*In verse 12, "Each young woman's turn came to go in to King Ahasuerus after she had completed twelve months' preparation, according to the regulations for the women, for thus were the days of their preparation apportioned: six months with oil of myrrh, and six months with perfumes and preparations for beautifying women. In the evening she went, and in the morning she returned to the second house of the women, to the custody of Shaashgaz, the king's eunuch who kept the concubines. She would not go in to the King again unless the King delighted in her and called for her by name."*

We see that by virtue of the fact that she went in a virgin and she came out as concubine, sexual intercourse was a primary focus of the night that she spent with the King. *"Now when the turn came for Esther, the daughter of Abihail, the uncle of Mordecai, who had taken her as his daughter, to go in to the King, she requested nothing but what Hegai the King's eunuch, the custodian of the women, advised. Esther obtained favour in the sight of all who saw her. So Esther was taken to King Ahasuerus, into his royal palace, in the tenth month, which is the month of Tebeth, in the seventh year of his reign. The King loved Esther more than all the other women, and she obtained grace and favour in his sight more than all the virgins; so, he set the royal crown upon her head and made her Queen instead of Vashti. Then the King made a great feast, the Feast of Esther, for all his officials and servants; and he proclaimed a holiday in the provinces and gave gifts according to the generosity of a King."*

We infer that Esther must have been at least the three hundredth [inaudible 00:25:27] King Ahasuerus in all probability [inaudible 00:25:31] before her. But more importantly we see that she must have made a particular impression on the King. We must also infer that the impression was made at least partially in a sexual context and it seems reasonable to conclude that the manner in which Esther made love to the King was very pleasing to him.

Let's extend that and continue with the story of Esther. Note that God used Esther to save His people. If you refer to chapter 4, verses 7-17 and chapter 5:1-3, I will just read from Esther 4:14, and the story here is that [inaudible 00:26:19] after becoming Queen, Haman obtains an order to destroy all the Jews and neither Haman nor the King knowing that Esther is Jewish, nor the covenant communicates this to Esther. Esther was initially reluctant to do anything about it and Mordecai then communicates to her followers. *"For if you remain completely silent at this time, relief and deliverance will arise for the Jews from another place, but you and your father's house will perish. Yet who knows whether you have come to the kingdom for such a time as this? Then Esther told them to reply to Mordecai: 'Go, gather all the Jews who are present in Shushan, and fast for me; neither eat nor drink for three days, night or day. My maids and I will fast likewise. And so, I will go to the King, which is against the law; and if I perish, I perish!' So, Mordecai went his way and did according to all that Esther commanded him."*

Esther 5:1, *"Now it happened on the third day that Esther put on her royal robes and stood in the inner court of the King's palace, across from the King's house, while the King sat on his royal throne in the royal house, facing the entrance of the house. So, it was, when the King saw Queen Esther standing in the court, that she found favour in his sight, and the King held out to Esther the golden sceptre that was in his hand. Then Esther went near and touched the top of the sceptre. And the King said to her, 'What do you wish, Queen Esther? What is your request? It shall be given to you—up to half the kingdom!'"*

Scripture says elsewhere that favour comes from God and here we see that it appears that God placed Esther in the [inaudible 00:27:59] for such as this, in order to save His people. Surely, He would not have placed her there in the fashion that we have just discussed, if it were to require her to commit any sin. Therefore we must assume that Esther's conduct was right in the Sight of God. We also note that God heard her prayers because she fasted and prayed for three days and we know from John 9:31 that *"God does not hear sinners."* We can also infer from the Scripture that Esther was a worshipper of God and did His will, otherwise God would not have heard her prayer. Again, I refer you to John 9:30-33 which says, *"The man answered and said to them, 'Why, this is a marvellous thing, that you do not know where He is from; yet He has opened my eyes! Now we know that God does not hear sinners; but if anyone is a worshiper of God and does His will, He hears him. Since the world began it has been unheard of that anyone opened the eyes of one who was born blind. If this Man were not from God, He could do nothing.'"*

We must therefore clearly understand that God is not in a habit of answering the prayers of people who are not in right standing with Him and certainly if Esther was an adulteress or indulging in unwholesome practices, it seems highly unlikely that God would have then answered her prayers. And further we must recognise that the only way that the situation with Esther could have come about as God's will to save his people was for God to have permitted the entire situation with Vashti running with Esther to come to pass in such a way. God, knowing the end from the beginning, knowing that the thoughts of [inaudible 00:30:00] we must be certain that God allowed this entire situation to happen for His purpose and His glory for the salvation of His people. The reality is that the Feast of Esther is a major feast for the Jewish or was for many years. So we must conclude that God intended women to make love to their husbands in a way that is pleasing to their husbands.

Let's address the question of sexual desire a little bit further. 1 Corinthians 7-9 states with regards to those who are unmarried, *"But I say to the unmarried and to the widows: It is good for them if they remain even as I am; but if they cannot exercise self-control, let them marry. For it is better to marry than to burn with passion."* It simply states that where a man and an unmarried woman burn with passion for one another, it is better that they should marry. Where a man or a woman burns with passion, they should get married or they should find someone to marry. We taught previously that the word marriage is synonymous with sexual intercourse with a virgin or a widow. Therefore, basically what Paul was saying that if someone cannot exercise self-control, or they burn with passion, they should marry a member of the opposite sex who is available to be married.

In 1 Corinthians 7:39-40 Paul goes on to state, *"A wife is bound to her husband by law as long as he lives. But if her husband dies, she is free to marry whomever she wishes, only provided that he too is in the Lord. But in my opinion a widow is happier and more blessed if she does not remarry. And I also think that I have the Spirit of God."* In this latter section, Paul in a sense, seems to contradict what he says in 1 Timothy 5, which I will get to in a minute. We see Paul expressing his personal opinion that a widow and presumably, a legitimately divorced woman would be happier if they remain single. The

implication is clearly that there are women who will be happier in this state, and therefore by extension, it would seem that the principle of covering is not a rigid spiritual requirement.

We also observe a clear instruction that if she is to marry the man, if she is to remarry, the man she marries must also be a believer. This is a qualification stated repeatedly in passages in Deuteronomy and many other Scriptures. Clearly the passage in Ephesians 5:22-33 does form the backbone of this teaching. It can only apply if both husband and wife, or both, are believers. Accordingly, we must deduce that all we have studied indicates the necessary requirement that a woman must marry a believing man. I stress again the point that was made earlier with regards to the subject of headship, the husband being head of the wife and so forth. It is foolish in the extreme for a believing woman to marry an unbelieving man, or for a believing man to marry an unbelieving woman. One is the child of God; the other is a child of Satan. I am sorry, I have to put it so bluntly, but that is the bottom line. One will not accept the headship of the Lord Jesus Christ and therefore the house will be perpetually divided.

A woman who marries an unbeliever puts herself in a position where the Word of God requires to submit to her husband in all things, and yet she is marrying a man who does not put himself in a place of submission to the Lord Jesus Christ. Consequently that man is entitled in the Sight of Satan to force that believing woman into prostitution, to beat her, maltreat her in any shape or form and she is required by the Word of God to submit no matter what he does to her. Because at the end of the day, he will not treat her worse than the Pharisees and the High Priests treated Jesus when they crucified him. It is absolute spiritual madness for a believing woman to marry an unbelieving man.

Conversely for a believing man to marry an unbelieving woman, it does not recognise the headship of the Lord Jesus Christ. She will not lift him up as we talked about. She will not intercede for him, but she will be constantly striving with him. The Devil will use her to bring strife and division into the household. The family will be perpetually divided and thus we saw even with King Solomon whom the Word of God says was beloved of the Lord, Jedediah. Eventually, his foreign wives, his unbelieving pagan wives turned his heart away from serving God. So again, it is absolute foolish for a believing man to marry an unbelieving woman.

Marriage of widows, 1 Timothy 5:9-14 states with regard to younger widows, *"Do not let a widow under sixty years old be taken into the number, and not unless she has been the wife of one man, well reported for good works: if she has brought up children, if she has lodged strangers, if she has washed the saints' feet, if she has relieved the afflicted, if she has diligently followed every good work.*

*But refuse the younger widows; for when they have begun to grow wanton against Christ, they desire to marry, having condemnation because they have cast off their first faith. And besides they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house, and not only idle but also gossips and busybodies, saying things which they ought not. Therefore, I desire that the younger widows marry, bear children, manage the house, give no opportunity to the adversary to speak reproachfully."* The clear implication here in Paul's letter to Timothy written as we understand that some years after his letter to Corinthians, that Paul appears to change what he expressly said was an opinion in 1 Corinthians 7:40. He is indicating that all women under the age of 60 should be married. Clearly, there are exceptions, people such as Kathryn Kuhlman, who has walked under a really strong anointment and anointing very close to God will not fall into that category. But the vast majority of women that seems clear from this passage of Scripture should be married and they should be married to a believer.

## **Lust and Adultery of the Heart**

Matthew 5:27-30 states, *"You have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not commit adultery.' But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her, has already committed adultery with her in his heart."* Clearly a man who lusts after a woman has committing adultery in his heart. In other words, he is sinning in his heart against God. However, we have seen in the passage in 1 Corinthians 7:9 where a man and woman burn with passion, they should marry. So, we deduce from that, that this passage is referring specifically to a woman who is married. It is important to understand that the word [inaudible 00:37:59], translated 'women' in Matthew 5:28 is variously translated wife, or woman in Scripture as there was no word to distinguish between a wife and a woman in either the Greek or the Hebrew. This is because it was virtually unheard-of for a woman other than an adult woman, other than a widow or a harlot, to be married. So, Jesus is in fact saying, *"He who looks at another man's wife to lust for her has already committed adultery within his heart."* If the woman is unmarried, then the implication is that if he is lusting or burning with passion for her, he should marry her and take her under his covering.

## **Lust is Covetousness and it is Sin**

Exodus 20:17 which is essentially the same Scripture which Jesus is referring to says, *"You shall not covet your neighbour's house; you shall not covet your neighbour's wife, nor his male servant, nor his female servant, nor his ox, nor his donkey, nor anything that is your neighbour's."* In this context, lust and covet are approximately the same concept. So, Jesus was again not introducing a new Commandment in Matthew 5:28, he was restating the Tenth Commandment in a slightly different sense and making it explicit that coveting was the same as looking at a married woman and lusting after her.

If we look at Deuteronomy 5:21, again we see, *"You shall not covet your neighbour's wife."* Ten Commandments are very expressed and very clear about lust. So, we see that lust and coveting of a woman and neighbour's wife with all other forms of lust and covetousness are expressly forbidden by God in the Ten Commandments written by God himself on tablets of stone. Yet, our whole society's approach to marriage places an inordinate emphasis on the physical appearance of the object of affection. Lust in our society is the basis for selecting marriage partners. Young men and women play much on the emphasis on how good-looking a member of the opposite sex is and hence how desirable that person is. It seems to me that this is nothing short of lust. In fact, it is my contention that objective consideration of the entire process of courtship practised in our society and by implication endorsed by the Church is largely driven by lust.

If a young person without the knowledge, experience and wisdom to evaluate the personality, etc., of a member of the opposite sex, is left to select a marriage partner themselves, they are inevitably going to rely on what they can see and therefore make a mistake. Thus, when the Church tells young people that they are too young to marry, they are effectively saying that they are too young to choose. In this regard, they are entirely correct. The scriptural way of betrothal was for the parents of the man and woman to arrange the match, taking account the social standing, etc. In fact, the match was likely to be between cousins, or children of neighbours in the same village. In other words, between children of families who had known each other for years and where the parents had observed the development of one another's children and identified which children are more suited to one another. Conversely, when the Holy Spirit makes the match, He looks at the heart.

For example, 1 Samuel 16:7 says *"But the Lord looks at the heart."* 2 Corinthians 4:18 states, *"While we do not look at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen. For the things which are seen are temporary, but the things which are not seen are eternal."* Thus, we see that by charging God principles of marriage and forcing young people to make their own choice of marriage partner and enforcing them to wait to an age greater than spiritually required, the Church requires a recipe for marital disaster. [inaudible 00:42:21] seeks to counsel his victims on how to select a marriage partner and to make marriages work.

God did not expect us in our teens or early 20s to be capable of selecting a suitable marriage partner. He intended our parents or intended parents to make that choice, and He expected that to be done within the context of what has been said repeatedly in these teachings, how God intended marriage to work. The basic principles that are the backbone of this teaching, the husband seeking Jesus as head and seeking to be head to his wife, the wife submitting to her husband in everything, giving herself to him totally in love, all of the principles that we have talked about, make it inevitable that marriage will work. However, all the Pagan principles which are generally espoused by the Church in terms of basing the marriage decision on waiting until the child is old enough to make up their minds who is a suitable partner, dating numerous people, falling in love with people until they fall in love with Mr. Right, leads them down the completely wrong path.

God did not mean young girls or young men for that matter, to shop around and get personally and emotionally involved with any number of people before deciding who to marry. All that happens is that their hearts get hardened, they get confused, sexual desire is awakened, and it leads them into all sorts of danger and they end up marrying the wrong person. It is no wonder that the level of divorce in the world and in the Church is of such magnitude. The Church has permitted a situation in which looking to the things that are seen forms the basis of marriage. And that also results in a situation where when the object of affection gets a little bit jaded or turns out not to be quite as beautiful or attractive as it was thought of in the initial phase of the relationship, the parties assume they have made a mistake. That is not God's way. God is looking for a lifetime commitment and God has created marriage to work. I mean, this is really high time that the Church recognises this and turns away from using the world's way when it comes to marriage.

Let us consider a bit further, lust as opposed to love. Consider for example, Proverbs 6:23-26, *"For the Commandment is a lamp, and the law a light; Reproofs of instruction are the way of life, to keep you from the evil woman, from the flattering tongue of a seductress. Do not lust after her beauty in your heart, nor let her allure you with her eyelids. For by means of a harlot, a man is reduced to a crust of bread; and an adulteress will prey upon his precious life."* Proverbs 11:6, *"The righteousness of the upright will deliver them, but the unfaithful will be caught by their lust."* Romans 13:8-14, *"Owe no one anything except to love one another, for he who loves another has fulfilled the law. For the Commandments, 'You shall not commit adultery,' 'You shall not murder,' 'You shall not steal,' 'You shall not bear false witness,' 'You shall not covet,' and if there is any other Commandment, are all summed up in this saying, namely, 'You shall love your neighbour as yourself.' Love does no harm to a neighbour; therefore, love is the fulfilment of the law. And do this, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep; for now our salvation is nearer than when we first believed. The night is far spent, the day is at hand. Therefore let us cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light. Let us walk properly, as in the day, not in revelry and drunkenness, not in lewdness and lust, not in strife and envy. But put on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make no provision for the flesh, to fulfil its lusts."*

Can there be any doubt that lust in all its forms is a major sin and a major stumbling block in the lives of the world and the Church today, and particularly in the area of marriage, which are presented so



much in the world on television, in magazines, in terms of selecting marriage partners. It is completely contrary to what the Word of God says, and it should be no wonder that men and women turn to pornography looking for physically perfect, sexual partners. Lust in all its form is an abomination in the Sight of God and it turns men and women from serving God and doing things God's way. If we consider God's definition of love in 1 Corinthians 13:4-8, *"Love suffers long and is kind; love does not envy; love does not parade itself, is not puffed up; does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love never fails."* How different this is from the thing the world calls love today, which is surely nothing more than lust. Surely, the Church must look to itself to determine how it has contributed to this appalling situation.

### **Lust, Pornography, and Fashion**

Consider also Proverbs 23:7, *"For as he thinks in his heart, so is he. 'Eat and drink!' he says to you, but his heart is not with you."* As a man thinks in his heart, so is he. As you lust through pornography with a distorted approach to life portrayed on television, so is he or so he becomes an adulterer. I can confirm this from firsthand experience, it is only by the grace and mercy of God that I am in love today to give this teaching. Lust is indeed one of Satan's most subtle and destructive lies that it is okay to look and to lust and it will not harm you. Consider also Ezekiel 24:15-18, *"Also the word of the Lord came to me, saying, 'Son of man, behold, I take away from you the desire of your eyes with one stroke; yet you shall neither mourn nor weep, nor shall your tears run down. Sigh in silence, make no mourning for the dead; bind your turban on your head, and put your sandals on your feet; do not cover your lips, and do not eat man's bread of sorrow.' So I spoke to the people in the morning, and at evening my wife died; and the next morning I did as I was commanded."*

So, we clearly see that the Lord refers to Ezekiel's wife as the desire of his eyes. In other words, it is not wrong for a man to desire his wife. God has created woman's body, her breasts and her private parts to be attractive to her husband, but only to her husband. As indicated previously, the female sexual organ is the sign of the marriage covenant. So, in Bible times it appeared to be entirely unheard-of for a woman other than a harlot to expose herself in anything approximating a bikini or bathing costume in a place where a man other than her husband can see her. It appears reasonable to conclude that the Lord intended man to be aroused by the appearance of his wife's nakedness in private. So, we should not be unduly surprised that men are stimulated by scantily-clad women whether in the flesh or in pictures. In particular, we should realise that clothing that hugs the breasts or pubic area to all intents and purposes express the naked body. Tightly fitting bathing costumes with the outline of the genitals clearly visible are certainly at the very least causing men to stumble, and potentially asking for trouble and almost certainly in a front or Holy and righteous God.

On the one hand, wives may have an obligation to display their bodies in a pleasing fashion for their husbands in the privacy of the marriage chamber. Consider [inaudible 00:50:59] discussed previously. On the other hand, all women should dress modestly in public. And so far as this is unlikely to happen, there is a general rule in our present society, those who call themselves by the name of Christ would do well to exercise discretion with regard to where they go, what they watch and how they dress. Also the Word of God is quite clear that it is a sin for a woman to dress as a man, and as much as society today would have us believe that it is perfectly acceptable for women to wear trousers and other clothing which approximates men's clothing, we need to understand that this is not God's intention and that women are well advised to wear dresses of old types.

## **Lust and the Dress of Young Woman**

Careful consideration of what is just being said, together with the discussion of virginity should cause all to realise that it is extremely unwise for any woman, in particular, young woman to dress immodestly. In other words, in cloths that reveal her body explicitly. While it is possibly not practical for young women to dress in cloths as modest as those worn by women in certain Middle Eastern countries even today, it would seem that a good maxim would be to ensure that they are dressed materially more modestly than those within their associate. The objective should be not to cause some men to stumble and also critically not inadvertently cause a situation to arise where their virginity is taken through lust provoked by their dress or behaviour. Remember again, that Scripture makes it clear that if a man rapes a woman that woman is married to him for life. This is a passage of Scripture which is completely lost in this day and age.

Rape is not just something that is shocking. It is something which disqualifies a young woman from ever marrying in the Sight of God, because if her virginity is taken, then she is in fact married in the Sight of God to the man who took it, whether she gave it voluntarily or not. It really is high time that the Church teaches this and makes it clear how totally dangerous it is for young woman to expose themselves in a way which invites unadvised sexual intercourse or even rape. Whether this is date rape or whether it is some more shocking form of rape, we need to protect our young women and to do that we need to go back to what the Word of God says.

## **Acceptable Working Hours**

There seems to be an almost universal view in the Christian community today that states that a man who spends more than 8 hours a day at work is incompetent, that a husband who works 12 hours a day, there is something seriously wrong with him, to a point where one gains the impression that many people seem to consider that to be grounds for serious objection, if not divorce. I refer you to Matthew 20:1-16 and I will read selected verses. Remember, this is Jesus speaking. *"For the Kingdom of Heaven is like a landowner who went out early in the morning to hire labourers for his vineyard. Now when he had agreed with the labourers for a denarius a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour and saw others standing idle in the marketplace."*

Verse 5, *"Again he went out about the sixth and the ninth hour and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out and found others standing idle, and said to them, 'Why have you been standing here idle all day?'"* Verse 8, *"So when evening had come, the owner of the vineyard said to his steward, 'Call the labourers and give them their wages, beginning with the last to the first.'"* Verse 12, *"These last men have worked only one hour, and you made them equal to us who have borne the burden and the heat of the day."* It is important to note that Jesus is telling this parable as an indication of the fact length of service alone does not afford a believer any greater reward in the Kingdom of Heaven. In modern day terms, the land owner in the parable went out early in the morning, presumably at close to sunrise, which in Israel would be approximately 6:00, and retreated his labourers. He returned about the third hour of the day, 9 o'clock, the sixth hour, 12 midday, the ninth hour, 3 in the afternoon, and the eleventh hour, 5 in the afternoon, and in the evening one hour after the eleventh, i.e., 6 in the evening, he paid them off.

In other words, the first casual workers within the marketplace seeking work not later than 6 in the morning were paid off at 6 in the evening, having worked a full 12-hour day. It would therefore seem likely that they left their homes not later than about 5:30 or 5:45 to arrive at the market in time to be hired. They returned home not earlier than 6:15, if not 6:30 having been away from home for at least

12 and a half hours. If we take account of the custom of the men assembling at the gate of the city, it is possible that they may have assembled at the gate of the city for a while before returning home.

Furthermore, Scripture quite clearly instructs us that we have to work six days of the week. Consider Exodus 20:8-9, *"Remember the Sabbath Day, to keep it holy. Six days you shall labour and do all your work."* Exodus 23:12, Exodus 34:21, Leviticus 23:3, Deuteronomy 5:13-14, Luke 13-14, all indicate that God intends us to work six days of the week. Can there be any doubt that Yahweh intended man to work a 72-hour working week as opposed to the 40-hour working week, which is regarded as acceptable today. This being the case, is it not reasonable to conclude that a man who works 72 hours a week is not necessarily out of the Will of God and is therefore not in any way neglecting his scriptural responsibilities to his family. Surely, this requires a rethink of the role of husband and wife, which may well be influenced by domestic arrangement in which an extended family collectively provides the fellowship and logistical support to the husband and to the wife.

If we take account of the description of a virtuous wife and Proverbs 31, discussed previously, it is apparent that the role of the husband is not necessarily even as a breadwinner. His tasks to perform, which are must to do, is defending his family and participating in the government of his community and doing the work of the Lord, not just providing for his family. It is particularly interesting to quote Genesis 2:18, *"And the Lord God said, 'It is not good that man should be alone; I will make him a helper comparable to him.'"* 1 Corinthians 11:8-9 confirms this. *"For man is not from woman, but woman from man. Nor was man created for the woman, but woman for the man."*

Surely from this we must conclude that women were created to help man and that man was not created to provide fellowship and companionship and support for women. Surely, Scripture teaches us that a man and his family are an integrated, harmonious team working together for the overall good of the family in accomplishing what God has called the family unit through the husband to accomplish as the calling. Surely, we must conclude that God intended the family to provide fellowship and support to the husband and to one another, rather than requiring the husband to support fellowship to his family or his wife. This does not in any way imply that the husband should sit back and be waited on by his wife. It does require that he busies himself with the work that God has given him to do, both in the Kingdom of God and then his secular occupation, while his wife supports him by running the household and to some, manage the household and family enterprises which do not necessarily require interaction with other men or travelling away from the household.

### **Important Aspects of Marriage**

I would now like to address a number of other principles which relate to marriage, many of which are challenging and thought-provoking, but it seems necessary in order to have a comprehensive treatment of the subject of marriage that we confront these things. A menstruating woman is impure. Leviticus 20:18 quoted previously with regard to God's definition of sexual sin states, *"If a man lies with a woman during her sickness and uncovers her nakedness, he has exposed her flow, and she has uncovered the flow of her blood. Both of them shall be cut off from their people."* Sexual intercourse with a menstruating woman is something which is viewed extremely harshly in the Word of God. Ezekiel 18:5-9, reading verses 5 and 6, *"But if a man is just and does what is lawful and right; If he has not eaten on the mountains, nor lifted up his eyes to the idols of the house of Israel, nor defiled his neighbour's wife, nor approached a woman during her impurity."* We see here sexual intercourse with a menstruating woman is ranked on the same level in the Sight of God as adultery, as is not doing what is lawful and right. So, this is not just a minor infringement. It is something major, but it is something that is seldom, if ever, taught with regards to the subject of marriage. There are many people, as far

as I can determine ,who actually practice sexual intercourse during menstruation as a form of contraception. Clearly, this is an abomination in the Sight of God.

Leviticus 15:26-27 takes this further, *"Every bed on which she lies all the days of her discharge shall be to her as the bed of her impurity; and whatever she sits on shall be unclean, as the uncleanness of her impurity. Whoever touches those things shall be unclean; he shall wash his clothes and bathe in water, and be unclean until evening."* So, we see that the husband is not permitted to touch whatever his wife sits on, let alone to touch his wife. I wonder how many men and women are keeping this Commandment. It certainly is a thought-provoking aspect. Do we understand why God expresses Himself so strongly considering these things? It gives a whole new dimension to why, when Rachel sat on the saddlebag with her father's idols in it when they fled from Laban, and she told him that she was unclean, that Laban did not even think searching the saddlebag because he knew that he would then come unclean.

Consider also Ezekiel 22:10, *"If you men uncover their fathers' nakedness; in you they violate women who are set apart during their impurity."* Again, sex with a menstruating woman is ranked with having sex with a man's mother. Ezekiel 36:17, *"Son of man, when the house of Israel dwelt in their own land, they defiled it by their own ways and deeds; to Me their way was like the uncleanness of a woman in her customary impurity."* Can there be any doubt that requires men and women to respect the period of separation for menstruating women? Can God bless a marriage in which man and wife did not respect the period of separation during menstruation? The penalty for homosexuality is death. Leviticus 20:13 dealing with homosexuality says, *"If a man lies with a male as he lies with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination. They shall surely be put to death. Their blood shall be upon them."*

We need to recognise the extent with which male homosexuality is an abomination in the Sight of God. Again, the Church is compromised on this to a point where it is presented as something acceptable. At the same time we need to understand there is no corresponding explicit reference to sexual intimacy between women. I am not seeking to be controversial. I need to point out that there is no Scripture which prevents it and those Scriptures which deal with male homosexuality can in no way apply to women. It is not possible physically for a woman to lie with a woman as with a man. This is not the physical equivalent for penetration to take place.

I would like to address some even more controversial questions at this point, and in doing so, I refer to the concept which has made very eloquently by Rick Joyner in the book *'The World Aflame'* where he addresses the freedom of believers to do what is not specifically banned. He makes the point that God wants us to exercise our own judgment. I am not necessarily advocating the points which I am about to raise, but I want to draw your attention to the fact that these are things which are not banned in any shape or form in Scripture. Therefore to teach that they are banned is adding to the Word of God or subtracting from it. It is important that we bring our thinking into line with the Word of God, because if we consume energy, teaching and preaching against things which are not banned in the Word of God, we potentially cause people to stumble and we create hurdles which prevent people coming into the Kingdom of God, or cause others to fall away. Even in the process, we neglect some of the things that have already been addressed in this teaching and fail to teach on this significance of the virginity and the fact that intercourse with a virgin is marriage, and fail to address many of the other points like menstruation, etc., that have been dealt with in these teachings, then we are in the process of seriously perverting the Word of God.

As I said before, the section that follows is going to deal with some things of fairly intimate nature and if you feel that you do not want to listen to that, I would suggest you jump about 5 or 10 minutes forward on this tape. Masturbation is a subject in which most Christian teachings are divided. It is alleged that Scriptures are silent on the topic. However, if we consider Leviticus 15:16-19, it says, *"If any man has an emission of semen, then he shall wash all his body in water, and be unclean until evening. And any garment and any leather on which there is semen, it shall be washed with water, and be unclean until evening. Also, when a woman lies with a man, and there is an emission of semen, they shall bathe in water, and be unclean until evening. If a woman has a discharge, and the discharge from her body is blood, she shall be set apart seven days; and whoever touches her shall be unclean until evening."*

Surely, since there is no reference to how the emission of semen comes about, it is reasonable to assume that self-stimulation could give rise to this emission referred to. In fact, practically, it is unlikely that a man will have an emission of semen unless there is some form of stimulation. The next verse, verse 18 deals with emission of semen during sexual intercourse, referring to any semen which is discharged from the woman's body after intercourse. That is likely to be a routine occurrence where a man has sexual intercourse with his wife. In other words, such emission is not simple. It is simply a routine emission which brings about a state of uncleanness in the sight of our Holy God which precludes the people concerned from participating in certain rites of temple worship. From this passage of Scripture, it must be evident that God does not regard seminal emission on the part of the man in response to self-stimulation when he is not able to reach his sexual attention with his wife as being necessarily unacceptable. We could see that the issue of whether masturbation in the part of the male is acceptable and the Sight of God hinges more on the reasons and thoughts that accompany it. And we have referred previously to Matthew 5:28, *"But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart."* On that basis, the word 'woman' in this context refers to wife, or to a woman who is another man's wife. We must really conclude that masturbation while looking at pornography or fantasising about a woman who is not one's wife, is indeed sin.

However, there does not appear to be any Scripture that prevents a man, who is away from home and has a sexual need, fantasising about his wife. By the same token, this presumably concludes that there is no reason why a woman who is not with her husband should not release sexual tension by self-stimulation. Again, with the caveat that she should not fantasise or think about any man other than her husband. [inaudible 01:09:50] husband sexual contact. By extension of the thoughts in the previous section, it does appear there is absolutely no scriptural reason why a husband and wife should not participate in mutual sexual stimulation, including masturbation. By further extension, there appears to be no Scripture which prevents a woman from orally stimulating her husband or a husband from orally stimulating his wife. Whether they do so, and practice is a matter of personal taste and preference and there is not any Scripture that I have been able to identify which prohibits such contact, not withstanding various teachings to the effect that Scripture prohibits it.

While considering the teaching that follows, I ask you to consider in particular the following verses of Scripture. Hebrews 13:4 states, *"Marriage is honourable among all, and the bed undefiled; but fornicators and adulterers, God will judge."* The implication here is quite clear. Sexual intercourse within marriage is honourable and whatever is done in the marriage bed is undefiled. The implication being that there is no sexual practice between husband and wife that is only acceptable in the Sight of God, it is sexual conduct outside of marriage [inaudible 01:11:20] adultery or widespread promiscuity and fornication which God will judge. It is really important that we understand that it is

the spiritual context that is sin, not a physical context. In other words, things which are perfectly acceptable in marriage are completely unacceptable outside of marriage.

Consider also 1 Corinthians 7:1-5, *"Now concerning the things of which you wrote to me: It is good for a man not to touch a woman. Nevertheless, because of sexual immorality, let each man have his own wife, and let each woman have her own husband. Let the husband render to his wife the affection due her, and likewise also the wife to her husband. The wife does not have authority over her own body, but the husband does. And likewise the husband does not have authority over his own body, but the wife does. Do not deprive one another except with consent for a time, that you may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again so that Satan does not tempt you because of your lack of self-control."* The following passage is particularly significant. Implication is if the husband requires sexual release, it is not for the wife to [inaudible 01:12:45] and conversely if the wife requires sexual release, he [inaudible 01:12:50]. By the same token, any sexual act between the two of them is perfectly acceptable in the Sight of God. We should take care in considering this not to introduce any scriptural restraints [inaudible 01:13:09] take account of this [inaudible 01:13:11].

If we take this a step further, we find a challenging concept raised indirectly in Leviticus 18:22, *"You shall not lie with a male as with a woman. It is an abomination."* Leviticus 20:13 makes the same point, *"If a man lies with a male as he lies with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination."* This clearly refers to homosexual contact between two men, which is generally regarded as involving anal penetration. The Hebrew word used in these Scriptures is '*shakab*' which translated here '*lie*' is generally accepted as referring to carnal intercourse or copulation; in other words, penetration. This raises the extension which is very challenging. The Scriptures says that a man should not copulate with a man as he copulates with a woman, and since man does not have a vagina, the reference must be to anal penetration. The extension would seem to suggest that Scripture does not prevent anal penetration for woman by her husband. So far there is secular writings which indicate that many men and women do indeed enjoy anal penetration if the woman has a sexual derivative in form of contraception. This is widely practiced by Roman Catholics as a form of contraception. It would seem that this is not against Scripture.

Again, as offensive as one may find the suggestion, we must truly abide by the prerequisite if we cannot support our opinion of Scripture, we should be cautious about imposing our opinions on others. This may surely be a matter of personal choice to be resolved privately between husband and wife in the Sight of God.

Having addressed a number of issues which have almost certainly challenged you to a point you may have found offensive, I ask you to bear with me as I need to address one or two other subjects which are viewed as highly controversial in the Church today. In this series, it has been apparent, or it may have been apparent to you that it is obvious that a man can take the virginity of more than one woman and consequently, his sexual intercourse with a virgin is marriage, and the man can take the virginity of more than one woman, then from the beginning God created man to be able to have more than one wife. Even in the Garden of Eden, God had created Eve with virginity that she could give to only one man. Every woman that was born from that point on had a seal of virginity and therefore could marry only one man. But man has no corresponding indicator and was therefore capable of marrying many women. So, we must infer that God intended from the beginning that a man should be able to marry more than one woman.

## The End of Age

Isaiah 4:1-6 provides a profoundly challenging Scripture. Reading backwards verse 6, *"And there will be a tabernacle for shade in the daytime from the heat, for a place of refuge, and for a shelter from storm and rain."* Verse 5, *"Then the Lord will create above every dwelling place of Mount Zion, and above her assemblies, a cloud and smoke by day and the shining of a flaming fire by night. For over all the glory there will be a covering."* Verse 4, *"When the Lord has washed away the filth of the daughters of Zion, and purged the blood of Jerusalem from her midst, by the spirit of judgment and by the spirit of burning."* Verse 3, *"And it shall come to pass that he who is left in Zion and remains in Jerusalem will be called holy—everyone who is recorded among the living in Jerusalem."* Verse 2, *"In that day the Branch of the Lord shall be beautiful and glorious; And the fruit of the earth shall be excellent and appealing for those of Israel who have escaped."* Verse 1, *"And in that day seven women shall take hold of one man, saying, 'We will eat our own food and wear our own apparel; Only let us be called by your name, to take away our reproach.'"*

The reason I read that backwards is that it is important when we read verse 1 to know what they were talking about. They were talking about the day at the end of the age when the Messiah returns, when the Lord God makes his dwelling place on Mount Zion. In other words, we are talking about the so-called Church age, the period at the end. And we clearly see that Isaiah 4:1 says, *"And in that day seven women shall take hold of one man. We will eat our own food and wear our own apparel; only let us be called by Your name, to take away our reproach."* We see clearly that it is a reproach for a woman to be unmarried. We see clearly that in that day, and we are very close to that day if we are not already in that day, those women would be so desperate to have their reproach taken away that they will be willing to provide their own food and clothing in order to be called by the name of a man, in other words, to be married to her. And we see in that day there will be seven times as many women as men in the body of Christ, Jerusalem, Zion.

A superficial inspection of virtually any congregation in the world would indicate that there is generally more than one woman to every man in the Church. There are congregations around with as many as ten women to every man present in the congregation. Can we substantiate that? We have already seen that the simple definition of marriage is the taking of a woman's virginity. This means that God, from the beginning of creation intended a man to have more than one wife. We see here that at the end of the age, there will be seven women to one man. It is important to realise that seven is the number of completeness, it is the number of perfection and it is the number of covenants. So, it appears that from the beginning, God created man and woman with the intention that at the end of the age, there would be seven times as many women believers as there are men. If you consider much of what has been taught in the previous teachings, you will recognise that this particular revelation puts a completely different perspective on many of the problems in the Church today, because if a man can have more than one wife, there is absolutely no reason for any believing woman to be married to an unbeliever. In fact, if we look at the discussion on headship over the last few weeks, it becomes apparent that any Christian man has an obligation before God to take to wife any believing woman who is without a husband and desires a husband.

I appreciate that this is highly controversial and totally contrary to what you may have believed about Scripture, but there are literally hundreds of verses of Scripture which support this. Let me take you through a particular train of thought which is just one of many avenues whereby what I have just said can be validated in Scripture. Let's read 2 Samuel 5:13, *"And David took more concubines and wives from Jerusalem, after he had come from Hebron. Also more sons and daughters were born to David."* Now, it is not infrequent to hear preaches from the pope that condemns David as an adulterer and to

label him as an adulterer. But let's see whether that is in fact the case. Going a few chapters further on in 2 Samuel. After David sinned with Bathsheba and recognising that up until this point, God had not rebuked David in any way for taking these additional wives and concubines. In 2 Samuel 12:5-14, God sends Nathan, the prophet to David to correct him and to rebuke him. Reading from chapter 12:5, *"So David's anger was greatly aroused against the man, and he said to Nathan, 'As the Lord lives, the man who has done this shall surely die! And he shall restore fourfold for the lamb, because he did this thing and because he had no pity.' Then Nathan said to David, 'You are the man! Thus says the Lord God of Israel: 'I (Yahweh, God) anointed you king over Israel, and I (God) delivered you from the hand of Saul. I (God) gave you your master's house and your master's wives into your keeping, and gave you the house of Israel and Judah. And if that had been too little, I also would have given you much more!'"*

There we see that God clearly and unambiguously rebukes David for taking another man's wife. But at the same time, God clearly states that He gave David, as well his wives, and we know that David was married at an early age to Maacah, the daughter of Saul that he subsequently married Abigail, the Jewish widow or Carmelites and the other Israelites woman and then he married other women when he came to be king of Judah in Hebron and when Israel fell, it appears that God gave him either even more wives. So, God makes it quite clear that David's adultery is totally unacceptable to Him that has given enemies of the Lord occasion to blaspheme, but God says that He himself gave David those additional women. It is necessary that each one of us ponder that deeply because to preach off that and say that David is an adulterer other than with regards to his adultery with Bathsheba which he repented, and God forgave him, is completely perverse and just to speak against God's form of marriage and to speak against a man of whom God has much to say.

And since David was given Saul's wives by God himself, how dare we presume to speak against any man who takes more than one wife? How dare we say that it is sinful? How dare we say that it is adultery? How dare we, in any way suggest that it is contrary to God's will? Because God Himself gave David many wives. Let us consider that a little bit further, 1 Kings 15:4-5, *"Nevertheless for David's sake the Lord, his God gave him a lamp in Jerusalem, by setting up his son after him and by establishing Jerusalem; because David did what was right in the eyes of the Lord, and had not turned aside from anything that He commanded him all the days of his life, except in the matter of Uriah the Hittite."* David did right in the eyes of the Lord except in the matter of Uriah. In other words, in all other matters including the other ten wives and the ten concubines. And this is stated repeatedly, 1 Kings 11:33, *"To do what is right in My eyes and keep My statutes and My judgments, as did his father David."*

1 Kings 11:38, 1 Kings 14:8, 1 Kings 15:5, 1 Kings 15:11, 2 Kings 14:3, 2 Kings 16:2, 2 Kings 18:3, 2 Kings 22:2, 2 Chronicles 28:1, 2 Chronicles 29:2, 2 Chronicles 34:2, we read repeatedly that David did right in the sight of the Lord all the day of his life except in the matter of Uriah, the Hittite. And we have to ask ourselves how many times must Yahweh, God tell us through the Holy Scriptures that David did right in His sight all his life, before those who seek to argue in support of the Roman Pagan doctrine of monogamy stops slandering David?

Surely, if one feels Yahweh and His judgments, one dare not slander a man whom Yahweh God describes as a man after His own heart. Specifically, 1 Samuel 13:14, Samuel speaking to Saul, *"But now Your kingdom shall not continue. The Lord has sought for Himself a man after His own heart, and the Lord has commanded him to be commander over His people, because you have not kept what the Lord commanded you."* Before you fall into the trap of Samuel that was before David took all these wives. Consider Acts 13:22, *"And when He had removed him, He raised up for them David as king, to whom also He gave testimony and said, 'I have found David the son of Jesse, a man after My own heart, who will do all My will.'"* So, we see not only how repeatedly after David's death, in the Books



of Kings and Chronicles that the Word of God says that David did right in the Sight of God except in the matter of Uriah, the Hittite. We see, even in the Book of Acts that it is reported that David was a man after God's own heart. Taking that in the context of Isaiah 4:1, I have to suggest to you that you should seriously consider the possibility that God is saying through these Scriptures, that it is in His own heart for a man to have more than one wife. In fact, He has appointed for men in this age to accept responsibility for up to seven wives.

In the context of the earlier teachings, I need to say to you this is not about lust, this is not about carnality; it is about responsibility in the Sight of God to unmarried Christian women whose lives are being made hell because they are unable to satisfy their sexual desires. They are unfulfilled because they are unable to have children, they lack a covering, they are exposed, they are falling away, they are marrying unbelievers and their lives have been made hell. And every Christian man in this age, I believe, will stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ one day and be asked to give account for why he did not extend his covering to those single Christian women that came across his path when he had the whole of Genesis to Revelation to tell him that it is his responsibility before God to look after those women. And the Word of God makes it quite clear that every single woman is entitled to her husband.

It is important in raising this issue to see it in the context of what God's Word has to say about marriage. There is more in Scripture on the subject, but that is not the objective of my teaching. I have an entire book of something like 350 pages on the subject, which contains literally hundreds of Scriptures and a large amount of historical information which proves beyond reasonable doubt that monogamy was first implemented in the Christian Church by Justinian in about 615 AD. Monogamy is not what the Word of God says concerning marriage. It is a Doctrine of Demons as its foothold in Scripture. But I do not want to dwell on that subject because that is not the primary objective of this teaching. I want to address one other aspect before I close, and again, it is an extremely controversial and extremely difficult subject, but it has an enormous bearing on the state of marriage in our Church and in the world today. It has an enormous bearing on the level of fornication and it has to be dealt with in an appropriate fashion.

Let's consider the question of the age at which Yahweh intended men and women to marry. The evidence that I am going to present to you is somewhat circumstantial in the sense that there is no expressed statement in Scripture to this effect. But I would ask you to listen carefully to what I have to say and to pray about it. The basis of my revelation is an instance in which I was led by the Lord to pick up a particular book, open the book at a particular page, and I got the interpretation that I am about to show you. Subsequently, it has been confirmed to me by people I have met, who have grown up in communities where it is common practice and in other books. I will just give you the headlines of what this says. The book that I picked up was the Steinsaltz edition of the Talmud, the Tractate Ketubot, volume 9, part 3 and it dealt specifically with the passages of Scripture that we have referenced a number of times. *"If a man seduces a virgin who is not being betrothed, and lies with her, he should surely make her his wife."* Deuteronomy 22:28-29, *"If a man finds a young woman who is a virgin, who is not betrothed, and he seizes her and lies with her, and they are found out, then the man who lay with her shall give to the young woman's father fifty shekels of silver, and she shall be his wife because he has humbled her; he shall not be permitted to divorce her all his days."*

The opening commentary states the laws concerning the seducer, or the rapist of a girl between 12, and 12 and a half years old and it's explicitly stated in the Torah. However because these laws are written in a very [inaudible 01:32:03] many questions demanding practical [inaudible 01:32:06] solutions remain open there. Subsequently, under the heading 'Concept' the following statement is made: *"And from when she produces two pubic hairs until she becomes mature, the [inaudible*

01:32:21] defines legal majority in terms of sexual maturity. Hence it is signalled by the growth of pubic hairs, two hairs, although the sign usually appears close to the age of adolescence, 13 for a boy, 12 for a girl, it is merely the beginning of a process, which continues for a certain time until the child has indeed attained full sexual maturity, not however the completion of his or her physical or spiritual growth." It then goes on and addresses a variety of other things, but the important point about this is that the word 'virgin' referred to in the Scriptures that we have repeatedly cited in this teaching, relates to a girl as young as 12 and a half years old. Now that may be a great shock to you but the point of the matter is that somewhere around about 12 and a half, 13, 14 years old, the average young girl comes to puberty and becomes sexually aware and sexually active. Most of those young girls go on to be challenged by their sexuality. They become highly sexually aware and eventually end up succumbing to sexual temptation.

Statistics indicate that something of the order of 60% of all girls at the age of 16 have already lost their virginity. Something like 95% of all women in the world confessed to being not virgins on their wedding nights. Something like 60% of all women in the world confessed of having intercourse with two or more men prior to the night of their wedding. The net effect of this is that God did not intend young girls to battle with their sexual needs and their sexuality for years before marriage, leading them to be led by their hormones and led by their lust to come into marriage. There are many [inaudible 01:34:14] which indicate that it was commonplace for young girls to marry at about the age of 14 and there is substantial evidence that Mary, the virgin, who gave birth to the Lord Jesus Christ was somewhere between 13 and 15 years old.

There is plenty of evidence regarding not just relatively what we would term primitive cultures, be it in Africa, be it on the Pacific Rim, be it in Asia, be it in South America where the marriage age of 13 or 14 years old is commonplace and accepted as normal. Even in Lebanon, as recently as 30 or 40 years ago, it was commonplace for girls of the age of about 14 or 15 to be given in marriage. It was in fact unthinkable for a woman to live much beyond her 14th birthday without getting married. In fact, it was regarded as a shame for such a girl to be without a husband. And yet today, we have a worldly rule which says that a girl should be at least 16 before she is married and in fact, the Church will have us believe that she should be at least in her early 20s before she is married. The net effect is that her ability to submit to her husband, her ability to accept the headship of her husband is seriously perverted and seriously destroyed.

The other thing we should recognise is that circumstantially, Moses married Zipporah when Moses was about 40 and Zipporah was about 14; Isaac and Rebecca again about 40 and 14, and so it goes. There are numerous instances of Scripture of men of about 40 years old marrying girls of about 14. In that instance, submission is much more straightforward, and it is much easier for the woman to put into effect. It puts a whole new perspective on marriage and it puts a whole new perspective on harsh judgments of young girls who are unable to curb their sexuality.

In closing this teaching, I would pray that you will pray and consider carefully all that has been given. These are challenging subjects, but they have an enormous bearing on many of the facets of why marriage today ends up in divorce so frequently in the Christian Church.

*"Father, I come to you in the name of Yahooshua. I ask you to blow away anything that I have uttered which is not according to Your Word and Your Will, but I ask that everything that I have said is according to Your Word and Your Will, will take root in the hearts of those people who listened to this teaching and it will bring forth abundant fruit in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth. Amen."*

## **03 09 Do you love like Jesus loves?**

**James Robertson -- 29th October 2000**

Entitled, "Do you love like Jesus loves." It was given at the Foundation for Living Church on Sunday, the 29th of October 2000, immediately following the teaching on [inaudible 00:00:14]. It deals with the subject of Christ-like love, self-sacrificial love, laying down one's life for one's friends and one's enemies, and is absolutely congruent with the teaching on marriage. Accordingly, the tape has been included in this series.

Greetings from the man with Lord Jesus Christ. I have a message for you, which has certainly challenged me, and I believe it will challenge you. Many of you are aware that over the last 40 days or so I've been on four, three-day fasts. In that period, I've been seeking to draw closer to the Lord. On this last fast, the Lord really started to challenge me on love, on the love of Jesus and the love that Jesus has for us. And [inaudible 00:01:43] to get this book "Lord, teach me how to love" by Creflo Dollar.

[Inaudible 00:01:47] to tell you I normally read a book this size in about an hour and a half to two hours. It has probably taken me about five or six hours so far and I am only half way through. I've been incredibly challenged by this.

### **The Loveless Church**

The Scripture came to my heart just before I got up and everything I have to say today, if you take it the wrong way, might sound quite harsh, but I am preaching to myself as much as to anybody else and it's something that I really believe that the Lord wants to tackle through Churches of [inaudible 00:02:26] right now. There is a passage in Revelations 2 which the New King James has subtitled "The Loveless Church."

"Nevertheless, I have this against you that you have left your first love. Remember, therefore, from where you are fallen repentant and do the best work. So, I will also come to you quickly and remove your lamp stand from its place unless you repent." And the Lord has really been dealing with me in the last couple of weeks in terms of just how far I have fallen from that first love, just how far I've fallen from that place where it was never difficult to get up at 5 o'clock in the morning and seek His face.

### **Christian, true or false?**

It was never difficult to do whatever He wanted me to do. And the message that the Lord has given me which sounds quite startling, but I believe it's incredibly profound is, Christian, true or false? I believe the Lord will challenge each one of us this morning to ask ourselves, Christian, true or false? We turn to Chapter 11, Verses 25 to 27. "Then Barnabas departed for Tarsus to seek Saul, and when he had found him, he brought him to Antioch. So, it was for a whole year they assembled with the Church and taught a great many people. And the disciples were first called Christians in Antioch, and in these days, prophets came from Jerusalem to Antioch."

My understanding of the word 'Christian' is that it's derived from the Greek. It reflects to the word Christos, some of it refers to little Christ-like ones. And my understanding of what was happening in Antioch in those days is that the Spirit was moving powerfully. People were getting healed, people were getting saved and people were getting delivered.

The question that I believe the Lord asked me, and I believe it's a question that each one of us has to answer, is if we call ourselves Christians. and if we truly are little Christ like ones, When was the last time someone was healed as your shadow passed by? When was the last time blind eyes were opened when you laid hands on them? When was the last time a crippled man leapt and praised God after you had prayed for him? And my brothers and sisters, the answer I have to give the Lord is never. How do I presume to appropriate the name of Christ unless I am saved by His grace, unless His Spirit dwells in me. How dare I presume to call myself a little Christ-like one?

I believe the Lord wants to challenge each one of us with that today. Do you dwell in Christ? Do we dwell in Christ? Are we so full of Christ that He overflows out of us so that the world sees Christ and not James or Peter or whoever? Are we so full of ourselves that there is so little room for Him? We don't have the right to appropriate His name as a label. It is a gift. It is something that people see in us. It is unbelievers to determine whether we are Christ-like, not for us to appropriate His name.

### **Love**

As I pondered this in the last week or two, the thing that has dawned on me which has just been hitting me and hitting me is the difference is love. And about a week or so ago I said, "Lord, I don't think I even understand what is meant by love the way You describe it. Yes, I know what it says in One Corinthians verse 13, I know what the Word of God says, but do I actually know in my Spirit, in my Heart what love is? Do I actually walk the love of Jesus Christ?"

The answer was no. I don't think I even begin to understand it and as I read this book, I've read through one or two pages and just being convicted and said, "Lord, I don't know how to love the way Jesus loved." If we start at a very straightforward point, Deuteronomy, Chapter 6, Verses 4 and 5, "Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God, the Lord is One. You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your strength."

In Matthew 36 to 40, Jesus confirmed that. Somebody came to him and said, "Teacher what is the Great Commandment of the Lord?" Jesus said to him, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul and with all your mind." This is the First and the Great Commandment. And the second is like it. You shall love your neighbour as yourself. On these two commandments hang all, not some, all the law and the profits.

If we do not profoundly have a Revelation of God's love and what it is, and walk in it, we cannot keep the Commandment. We actually are as clanging cymbals. We are without any substance as Christians if we do not have a profound Revelation of what Jesus is saying when He says to love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your mind, with all your soul and with all your strength. It's very easy to get [inaudible 00:08:11] and say, "Oh Jesus, how much I love You." [inaudible 00:08:16] It's going around in many Charismatic circles at the moment which I think must grieve the Lord terribly. Jesus, do you know how much I love you? What an insult. The Mighty God knows the thoughts of our hearts and we presume to ask Him how much if He knows how much we love Him. We don't know ourselves how little we love Him.

### **Receiving Jesus**

John 5, verses 42 to 44, "That I know you that you do not have the love of God in you." I really have to receive that. We have to listen to what Jesus is saying because Jesus is not speaking to people who are far off from us.

I've come in my Father's name and you do not receive Me. Another comes in his own name, and him you'll receive. How can you believe one who received honour from another but do not seek the honour that comes from the only God? And just how often does God send someone to us and we don't receive Him because He doesn't conform.

Today, if an unknown Prophet comes in to the midst of the average assembly and seeks to prophesy in the name of God, the Church will not receive him. The vast majority of assemblies will ask his credentials and tell him that once he has fellowshiped there for six months then perhaps, they will permit him to speak in public. And when they do that, they reject him.

### **Keeping His Commandments**

In John 2:3-11, "Now by this we know that we know Him if we keep His Commandments. He who says I know him and does not keep His Commandments is a liar and the truth is not in him. When you get a Revelation of that verse it's saying it's like a solid slap with a very large piece of [inaudible 00:10:16] that really is profound if I look at my life over the last few years. By this we know that we know Him if we keep His commandments. He who says I know Him and does not keep His commandments, he is a liar and the truth is not in him.

How many times have we half done what we know the Word requires us to do? How many times has He spoken to us with that still, quiet voice and we've said, "No Lord, not now, later." Whoever keeps his word, the love of God is perfected in him. By this we know that we're in Him. Comes back to what I said at the opening. It doesn't help to have Jesus in us, we must be in Christ to the point where He has so encompassed us that we're able to keep His Commandments.

### **The light**

He who says he abides in Him, owes it to himself to walk just as he walked, just as Jesus walked. Again, do we presume to label ourselves Christians? Or can the world in fact see Christ in us? Brethren, I write no new Commandment to you, but an old Commandment which you've had from the beginning. The old Commandment is the Word which you heard from the beginning. Again, a new Commandment I write to you, which thing is true in him and in you because the darkness is passing away and the true light is already shining.

He who says he is in the light and hates his brother is in darkness until now. And again, how many of us can truly say that we did not have unresolved differences and disputes with old school Friends, with old army colleagues, with business associates, with family? I will write a whole list afterwards.

He who loves his brother abides with him in the light and there is no cause for stumbling in him. But he who hates his brother is in darkness and walks in darkness and does not know where he is going, because the darkness has blinded his eyes. And I was saying, Lord help me, I can't hear your voices as well as I used to.

I have to admit that I have been angry with people, I've been offending these people. I still don't know how to make right some of this, but I will not know where I am going until I have, nor will you...

Creflo Dollar makes an extremely important point- Your obedience to the word of God and the Spirit of God is the measure of your love of God. You cannot say you love God if you're not doing what you should according to this Book, know what to do out of this book. I am not saying the things you don't know to do, the way you've read a passage in the Scriptures and you've been convicted If you don't

put that into practice in your life, how can you say you love God? Where the Spirit of God has spoken to you and told you to do something, whether it's to make restitution for somebody who wronged you, whether it's to go and make right with somebody that you've wronged, if you don't do it, then your love is growing cold.

### **Faithfulness**

Obedient delay [inaudible 00:14:09] obedience is disobedience and it's not love. I just printed out a poster that I made for myself and I thought it might help some of you as well. I've only done 10, so a cluster of people could share. It's just some points out of a series of tapes on faithfulness, that I started listening to led by the Spirit of God on my first fast about 35-40 days ago. And that too just really, really rocked me. The heading at the top here is why is it relevant, and what that means is when you come before the judgment seat of Christ, you'll be confronted with the things you've done, that you ought not to have done and the things that you've not done that you ought to have done.

And, at that moment as you stand before the Almighty God, why will it be irrelevant? "But Lord, I had a sore toe, Lord I had flu, Lord you know much that person insulted me..." Lord whatever will count for nothing. The worst that can happen will be, "depart from Me, you worker of inequity. I never knew you."

The Scriptures are written to believers, they're not written to unbelievers this. It's [inaudible 00:15:30]. And in many others, I am not presuming to say that they all apply to you, but they're just headlines that I wrote down as I was going through that document and realising just how faithless I had become in my service of God.

Something else that's really, really rocked me this week because we've been walking by faith for many years and certainly in the last four years, is that we've never gone without food on the table. We've gone through some really, really testing times in large measures, the result of our own disobedience and our own sin as the Lord has taken us through various trials. But a very challenging verse, because we care so much about the faith walk in this age. And I am sure most of us listen to many teachings on faith and consider ourselves to be people who walk by faith.

Galatians 5, verse 6. "For in Christ Jesus be the circumcision nor uncircumcision avails anything that faith working through love. The only thing that counts is faith expressing itself through love." In other words, without love, faith is powerless. Faith cannot work without love and again, these are old truths that one can listen to and says 'yeah, but I've read that Scripture dozens of times, I know about that.' But if you do what I've been doing recently and you kind of read the Scriptures and say, "Lord show me what's wrong in my life," I have to admit my faith was being made powerless by my lack of love. And I want to ask each one of you to challenge yourself on that and again, I've done another little poster here and one currently in 13. We can have this one after this.

"I speak with tongues of men and of Angels but have not love. I've become a sounding brass and a clanging symbol and though I've the gifts of prophecy and understand all mysteries and all knowledge and I've all faith so that I can remove mountains, but have not loved, I am nothing." Without love, we're nothing. We have no standing before God. If we act in Jesus' name without love, it's nothing. "And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor and though I give my body to be burnt but have not love, it profits me nothing. Love suffers long and is kind. Love does not envy, love does not parade itself. It's not [inaudible 00:18:28]. Love does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not perverse,

thinks no evil. Love does not rejoice in iniquity but rejoices in the truth. Love bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endears all things. Love never fails."

### **The Fruits of the Spirit**

One of the tragedies of the world in which we live now is the world will have us believe that love is a transitory thing. People fall in and out of love. They may fall into lust and out of lust but God's love never fails. When a man and woman have love, they can never not love. They may be confused, they may be distracted, but they can never cease loving except in extreme cases of treachery. And we don't walk that. I don't walk that.

And the fruits of the Spirit are love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, and self-control. against such things there is no law. And again, deeply, deeply challenging Scriptures.

I would like to go on and consider a few practical aspects, just out of some things that have really come to my attention again in the last few days and things which were racing through my head last night, thinking about this message.

John 15, 12-15, "This is My Commandment, that you love one another as I've loved you. Greater love has no man than this, to lay down one's life for his friends.", you're my friends if..." if, One of the smallest words in the English language and perhaps one of the biggest words in the bible, "You're my friends if you do whatever I command you." There it is. If you love God, you'll obey His Commandments. no longer do I call you Servants, for a Servant does not know what his Master is doing but I've called you Friends for all things that I heard from My Father that I've made known to you." And certainly, we've seen in this congregation in the last few weeks that the Lord has been speaking to us at some length about the things which are to come to pass shortly. He is doing that because He regards us as friends. It's so vital that we love Him. It's so vital that we obey Him. It's so vital that we do what we know He is calling us to do with the truth that He has given us.

Perhaps you can turn with me to 1 Peter, chapter 2, basically from 1 Peter chapter 2 to 1 Peter, chapter 3 or in fact if you like even the chapter 4, 19. I think it might be one of the most challenging passages of Scripture that each one of us needs to confront in the days to come because it speaks of submission to Governments, it speaks of submission to Masters, it speaks of a Wife's submission to her Husband. I am just going to lift out a couple of verses. I am not going to read the whole thing but I would encourage you to go away and meditate on this in the light of this message.

1 Peter 2:13, "Therefore submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether to the King as Supreme or to Governments, as to those who are sent by Him for the punishment of evil doers and the praise of those who do good." And so, it goes on. Verse 18, "Servants be submissive to your Masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle but also to the harsh." So, this is commendable if, because of conscience towards God, one endures grief and suffering wrongfully. For what created this, if when you are beaten for your faults, you take it patiently. But when you do good and suffer, if you take it patiently, this is commendable before God. For to this you were called because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example that you should follow His steps who committed no sin, nor was the seat found in His mouth. When He was reviled, He did not revile in return. When He suffered, He did not threaten but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously, who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree that we've [inaudible 00:23:04] the sins might live for righteousness by whose stripes you're healed.

And we so readily claimed the last part of that, verse 24 by His stripes we are healed. But do we recognise that when He was reviled, He did not revile in return, that He suffered in silence even though every blow was unrighteous and every blow was unmerited. And yet we're so quick, and I speak for myself again, I can't speak for you, but I just speak for myself. I respond so easily to a false accusation or an insult, something like that.

### **Husbands and Wives**

It carries on and I am not going to pick up the whole passage but 1 Peter 3, verse 1, "Wives likewise be submissive to your own Husbands," and this is a startling Scripture to really hit home a few weeks ago. Wives likewise, what's likewise? Like Jesus, submit to your Husbands in what? In everything? Ephesians 5:22, I think it is Wives submit to your Husbands in everything. Whether your Husband is righteous or whether your Husband is unrighteous, submit to your Husband like Jesus submitted to the Pharisees and the high priests.

That some may be won by the conduct of their Wives. It's an awesome Scripture for any Woman who is married to an unbeliever and it's a salutary warning for any Woman who thinks of marrying an unbeliever. It requires that you lay down your life for that Man in whatever way. It comes to that. And so we go on and I am not going to go all the way down. Verse 7 makes it very clear that the Husband has an obligation to take his Wife under his covering and to take the blows on her account to protect her in the same way that Jesus took the blows for us.

Again, it's this concept of a love that we don't understand. And so we go, to verse 12, "For the eyes of the Lord are on the righteous and His ears are open to their prayers but the face of the Lord is against those who do evil, and who is he who will harm you if you become followers of what is good, but even if you should suffer for righteousness sake, you're blessed and do not be afraid of their threats. They will all be troubled."

We go on to chapter 4, "Beloved do not think it's strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you as though some strange things happen to you, but rejoice to the extent that you partake of Christ's sufferings that when His glory is revealed you may also be glad with exceeding joy."

Verse 17, "For the time has come for judgement to begin at the house of God and if it begins with us first, what will be the end of those who do not obey the Gospel of God?" And I have to say to you that I've no doubt that judgement is about to begin with the House of God. We've heard of the coming tribulation, we've seen the evidence of the war that's [inaudible 00:26:19] in the Middle East that we need to understand that the judgement that will come on the world will come first on the Church. We will be convicted of arsons. We will have to deal with the things that are wrong in our lives which is not a pleasant thought. We need to get our lives right with God. We need to come to that place of love where it is as in Christ, not just Christ in us. We need to come to that place where we can lay our lives down for the sake of the Gospel and count it an honour and a privilege to do that.

### **The Holocaust Museum and the Jews**

When I was in the Holocaust Museum in Jerusalem in about June 1996. The Holocaust Museum is where the Israeli's commemorate the Holocaust, Yad Vashem [inaudible 00:27:11] all of those absolutely terrible atrocities that were committed against the Jews by people who call themselves Christians incidentally. And that same truth I was speaking at two conferences and I've a slide at the end of my presentation with a cross on it.



And I prayed about it and I said "Lord, do you want me to take the slide out? I don't want to offend this Jewish audience." He said, "No leave it. I want you to apologise to them for what has been done to them in the name of Jesus Christ." So, at two conferences in Tel Aviv in 1996 I got up, and at the end I said I want to apologise to you. Jesus Christ, who is a Jew, and the things that have been done to the Jews in the name of Jesus Christ are not right. I ask you to forgive me... It was an incredibly moving experience for me and what was even more astounding for me was the number of elderly Jewish men who came up to me afterwards and said we can't tell you how much that means to us.

### **Rick Joyner**

My brothers and sisters, God is asking us to lay down our lives for our brothers and Christ for the Jews and for the unbelievers. I just want to close by reading three brief passages out of three books which have touched me enormously on the subject. I don't know how many of you have come across this book "The Final Quest" by Rick Joyner. If you haven't, I strongly encourage you to get it and read it. There are five prophetic visions where Joyner was taken up into the third heaven and he comes before the judgement seat of Christ. And a serious, serious wakeup call to the Church.

But I just want to read one little passage. This is where Joyner has come to the throne itself. He is before the Lord Jesus Christ. He has been through the judgement and he has discovered how little of his life he has actually led for Christ. And Jesus offers him a cup. "I then looked back at the Lord and was astonished to see tears in His eyes. He had wiped the tears away from every eye here except His own. As the tear ran down His cheek, He caught them in His hands and then He offered them to me. This is My cup, will you drink it with Me? There was no way I could refuse him. As the Lord continued to look at me, I began to feel His great love even as foul as I was, He still loved me. As undeserving as I was, He wanted me to be close to Him. And then He said, I love all of these- this is now in heaven. I love all of these with the love that you cannot now understand. I also love all who are supposed to be here but did not come. I have left the 99 to go after the one who was lost. My shepherds would not leave the one to go after the 99 who are still lost.

I came to save the lost. Will you share my heart to go to save the lost? Will you help me to fill this room? Will you help to fill these thrones and every other seat in this hall? Will you take up this quest to bring joy to heaven to Me and to My Father? This judgement is for My own household, and My own house is not full. The last battle will not be over until My house is full. Only then will it be time for us to redeem the Earth and remove the Evil from My creation. If you drink My cup, you'll love the lost, the way that I love them."

And every time I read that passage, in some three years I think since I first read it, it just really strikes me how wrapped up I get in the cares of this world and how little I devote myself to the things of the Kingdom. How little I devote myself to bringing Souls to Salvation. How little I devote myself to sharing the truth that the Lord has given me that He seeks to restore the Church to all truth.

### **Communism**

I now want to read a short passage from this book, which I read about two years ago. It's called [inaudible 00:31:52]. It's an Afrikaans book, it's a translation from English but I don't have the translation, so bear with me, I am going to read it in Afrikaans. It's about a young man called [inaudible 00:32:03]. His father was a general in the Russian army in the Second World War. His mother was a Christian. They were murdered shortly after the war, I think when Stalin took over. I am not sure of the details. He grew up in an orphanage. He was extremely talented. He came to be one of the top

recruits at the Russian Naval Military Academy up in North Eastern Soviet Russia. He went on to become the leader of the Communist Youth League in that city.

He was then recruited by the KGB along with about 20 other young men, all exceptionally good athletes, extremely fit, extremely strong, to put down what the KGB had identified as the greatest single threat to Communism. Those people that they call believers, those people who were truthful Christians, who just would not bow the knee to the Communist God.

This young man eventually came to Salvation and I will tell you a bit more about that in a moment, but he came to salvation through the testimony of two Christian women. The first was a young girl of about 16 who they found at a home Church meeting of about 10 or 15 people, a group not bigger than this who were meeting clandestinely in a house. They stripped her naked, and they beat her with their bare hands until the flesh fell from her back. The next day, they went into her place of employment and they told them that she was a Christian. She lost her job.

A week later, they went in to break another clandestine meeting. She was there. They couldn't understand it. She said I love Jesus so much, I can't not be here. They let her go, they couldn't understand. A few days they went to another meeting and I just want to read a page from that. They're just about to break in.

[Foreign language 00:34:28 to 00:38:47].

Do we love to pray for somebody? It's about the precious God and not think for ourselves. That young man subsequently jumped ship in the Pacific Ocean five miles off Vancouver in the middle of a massive storm. by the Grace of God he miraculously; he should have died of exposure within minutes; he was washed up on the shore of Vancouver and came to salvation, to share his testimony. God alone knows how many people's lives have been touched by those two women who loved Jesus so much that they obeyed His Commandment, to love their enemies, to do good to the [inaudible 00:39:55]. Are we ready to do that? If the worst things with some people are speculating as being about to happen in this world really do happen.

If the rumours about the concentration camp near Kokstad, the gas chambers and the ovens designed to kill 3,000 people a day or two. If the rumours about the concentration camp in [inaudible 00:40:26] in an old [inaudible 00:40:28], the similar capacity, a truth. If the rumour is about the 45 concentration camps in the United States, a truth. If the rumour is about a United Nation plan to annihilate two-thirds of the world's population, a truth. The Spirit that was behind the Union of the Soviet Socialist Republic, the Spirit that was behind [inaudible 00:40:54] is about to break loose from this world when you love your enemies the way Jesus did. Will you retreat into self pity, self centeredness? I've got one last passage that I want to read and then I am done. And it's comes very much closer to home.

### **Lord, teach me how to Love**

This is from Creflo Dollar's book, "Lord, teach me how to love." I strongly encourage you to see if you can get hold of it. They do have offices near us if you can't get hold of it elsewhere. It is entitled 'Covering others with love'. He says, I like this translation of 1 Corinthians 13: "It (love) does not rejoice at injustice and unrighteousness, but rejoices when right and truth prevail. Love bears up under anything and everything that comes, is ever ready to believe the best of every person, its hopes are fadeless under all circumstances, and it endures everything without weakening." Verse 6 and 7 from the Amplified.

He says, "I've known preachers who have fallen into sin. One of them had to check himself into an institution. He was shocked to see me the first time I went to visit him. He was so sure that, like many others, I had only come to hurt him more with words of condemnation. He actually asked me to leave, but I refused. I had already predetermined that we would have Communion together that day, so I found a cracker and some juice. Then I sat down with him to make a Covenant agreement with him. I grabbed his face and said, I promise to love you forever. And if you should die, I'll see to it that your Wife is taken care of and that your Children get a first-class education. I will not leave you, no matter what you do. I will love you unconditionally."

He was so moved by the level of God's compassion, by the fact that God would actually send someone to convey his love at such a time that he was blown away. We both cried. I still cry every time we get together, because I think, what if I had killed him with my words and actions? Where would he be today? Now this man of God is whole. He made a complete recovery and is even more Anointed now than he was before.

There's no greater joy than seeing people climb out of the pit of despair and press on to higher levels of spirituality. That's the way God meant it to be."

### **Step up to the Challenge**

That's the end of my message. I believe the Lord is challenging every one of us here today to step up to that measure of love which is the fullness of the man Christ Jesus. To set aside everything to do with self, to set aside all our creek? and [inaudible 00:43:41] notions and to love as we have never loved before. To love of the lust, not just the lust outside the Church, but the lust inside the Church who is so deceived in so many areas. Those people who think being a Christian is a Sunday School picnic, they don't realise that they will have to endure great persecution and tribulation for their faith.

Do we love them enough to tell them the truth no matter what they do to us, to love our enemies if they persecute us? Even if confronted, that angry young man has the capacity to utterly smash our faces in his raging [inaudible 00:44:29]. So Father forgive him, love him, save him. Are we prepared to reach out to those in the faith who fail it and love them unconditionally and pick them up? Father, I just bring this message before You now. I pray Lord above all things if there be anything that I've said which is not of You, that You blow it away right now by Your Spirit that it will find no root. Whatever is of You will take root in the hearts of those who heard me, and we will bring forth Lord abundant [inaudible 00:45:16]. Father, my cry today, myself and all those who hear me as teachers, who teach love like Jesus loved and not to count the cost.

### **A final prayer**

Dear father, in the name of Jesus, I ask you to pour out Your Spirit upon these people right now. I ask you to fill us to overflowing with the Glory and Compassion of your Spirit. Cleanse us of our unrighteousness, cleanse us of our self-centredness and let us see people the way you see the Lord God. Let us know Your world in every situation. Let us experience Your heart in every situation. Let us be vessels for Your love. Let us be vessels for Your faith by love in Christ Jesus. Let us come to the place where there is so little of us and so much of Jesus that the world says, "Look, there is a Christian."

Father take us out of this place where the unbeliever is more able to tell us what's wrong with our lives than we are. Take us into a place where Jesus is everything in our lives Father. Abba, Daddy, we cannot do it in our own strength. We cannot do it in our own ability. All we can say to You is Daddy, in the name of Yahooshua, Your Son, Crucify our flesh, destroy self-centredness, self-righteousness and

self-confidence and everything that has anything to do with self. Let us be Crucified this day with the Lord Jesus Christ. Let's go out of this. Let us go out of this place. Truly New Creatures in Christ.

Father, we ask You by Your spirit to convict us of our sin, to convict us of everything that You've called us to do that we've left undone, and everything You've told us not to do that we've done. We ask You to convict us of our woeful disobedience and our negligence and our just plain carelessness. Father, in the name of Jesus, forgive us Lord. We're not worthy to come before Your throne but we come nonetheless by faith and the saving Grace and the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, for You've said we can come boldly before the Throne of Christ.

We ask You today Father, in the name of Jesus for Grace to serve You, for Grace to love the way Jesus loves and love what you won't deserve. For Grace to love the way those two women in impoverished circumstances in Soviet Russia loved. Love the enemies that the leader of the communist youth league jumped ship to fight [inaudible 00:49:01] to thank you. Lord, take us, make us, break us, use us, fill us with Your love today. Let us never be the same, let us never think the same.

Deliver us from our obsession with the things of the world from our obsession with our own comforts and our own cares and what people think of us in our carnal secular activities. Take us, Lord Jesus. Hold us in Your arms and infuse us with Your love that we're changed forever. Please don't stop. Show us everything that has to change. And we yield ourselves to right now, Lord God. We commit our spirits, our hearts, our minds, our souls, our bodies and all that we have, our families, our children, our houses, our cars, every material things that we have, we give it to You Lord. None of these things are of any worth except the love of Jesus Christ, our Lord. Lord, You gave everything that we might be saved. And we give You everything that we might be saved, that might save others.

Lord, today we commit ourselves to land [inaudible 00:51:00] Heaven and longer to have treasure of Heaven. Let us not squander the few precious years that You've given us of this considering yourselves with carnal things but let us consider ourselves with that which is written in your book concerning us. Let us consider ourselves with that you'll say to us on that great day. Lord, our desires to [inaudible 00:51:29] to be faithful Servants, not to be told. Depart from me, you work as a [inaudible 00:51:37] given you. Praise you Jesus. Praise you to stand and just receive from heaven. He just wants to pour out His spirit, He wants us to stand. Lord, pour out Your Spirit upon Your people now, fill us Lord, fill us, fill us, fill us, fill us, fill us.

Pour out the fire of Your spirit, burn out the dross, burn out the [inaudible 00:52:14], refine us by Your Holy Anointing, refine us by Your Holy Fire. Cleanse us Lord Jesus. Jesus, I just want to say how sorry I am for all the times I disobeyed You. I want to say how sorry I am for all the times I've responded in [inaudible 00:52:40] anger, for all the times that the people around me have seen Your great name brought in to disrepute by my conduct.. Father, I repent of that right now in Jesus name. I ask You to forgive me. I ask You to cleanse me with Your blood. I turn around and I choose to return to my first love and never before, not [inaudible 00:53:16] but by Your Spirit. For I am unable in my own strength to love myself, let alone to love my enemies. By Your Spirit all things are possible. Nothing is impossible for You.

Thank You Jesus for loving us. Thank You Jesus for dying for us. Thank You Jesus. but soon you'll return for us. Amen.

Foundation for Living Community Church is a church based north of Pretoria. It is pastored by Neil Dreyer, an Apostle of God. He can be contacted on Pretoria, 012 808 1650.

This message has been recorded by a Church Without Walls a ministry of End Time Issue Ministries, P.O. Box 898, Randpark Ridge, Randburg 2156, Republic of South Africa. We can be contacted by email at james@end-time-issues.org.za. Our phone number, international dialling code, 0027 but this may vary from country to country, the 27 is standard. Our landline, 0027117912327. When in South Africa, 0117912327. My mobile number 0027832516644 and in South Africa, 0832516644. Our fax number internationally 0027117915004 and locally 0117915004.

All materials produced by this ministry are available at no cost to those who require them irrespective of financial means. At the same time, donations and offerings are clearly welcome to support the work. Please feel free to copy any of our materials in part, or in full as the Lord leads you understanding that the manner in which you utilize these materials and the manner in which you cite them and quote them is for your account and the day of judgement. So, we would ask you to use these materials widely, but please feel free to copy them however you see fit and to share these truths with anybody as the Lord leads.

I would urge those of you who received copies of these tapes at no charge that once you've listened to them that you consider passing them on and blessing others with them. Our hearts' desire that they should not become artefacts sitting on a bookshelf and gathering dust but the Word of God contained in these teachings should be spread as far and as widely as possible.

Should you be led by the Lord to send to this ministry, our bank account is End Time Issue Ministries. The account number is 0427527805. The branch is The Standard Bank of South Africa, Randburg branch and the branch code is 018005.

If you're listening to these messages, and you've realised that you do not have a personal saving relationship with Lord Jesus Christ and that if you were to die right now, you'll be lost in Eternity in Heaven with him, I would urge you to accept Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour and to pray the prayer of Salvation. These steps of salvation are as follows. Firstly, admit and recognise that you're a sinner. Romans 3 verse 23 says, "For all have sinned, and fallen short of the glory of God."

Secondly, accept and believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God, that He came to Earth as a Man, that He was crucified and died on the cross and that on the third day He rose again. He is now seated at the right hand of the Father. And that by His death and resurrection he took your sins for Eternity. Romans 5:8 says "But God demonstrates His own love toward us but while we were still sinners, Christ died for us."

Thirdly, confess your sins, repent of your sins and turn around. Repentance means turning around. It means ceasing to do what you now realise is wrong. 1 John 1:9 says, "If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just forgives us our sins, to cleanse us from all unrighteousness."

Four, confess your faith that Jesus Christ is Lord that you believe this, and receive His salvation and invite Him to dwell in your heart.

Romans 10, 9 and 10 says, "If you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you will be saved. For with the heart one believes into righteousness and with the mouth confession is made and to salvation. Give thanks to God for your salvation. Pray and cry out to God and give thanks to Him for saving you."

Six, work out your salvation by the Spirit of God. Philippians 2:12 says "Therefore, My beloved as you have always obeyed, not only in My presence, but now much more in My absence, work out your own

salvation with fear and trembling." Salvation is a process. You're saved the moment you pray. Sinners pray the prayer of Salvation and invite the Lord Jesus Christ to come into your heart and be the Lord of your life. The salvation is also a process whereby your mind is renewed, and you come to have a personal and deep relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. It is your choice how far you go in that relationship. He desires a wonderful, and a deep and an intimate relationship with you but it is your choice whether you'll do what is necessary to come to that place through reading the Bible, praying, seeking counsel and seeking guidance.

You should be Water Baptised at the first possible opportunity, Mathew 3:6 says "And we're baptised by Him in the Jordan and confessing his sins." Encourage you to ask the Lord to lead you to somebody who has some knowledge of the basic ordinance of Water Baptism who can Water Baptise you or lead you to a Church where they can Water Baptise you. There is no reason why you cannot be Water Baptised today as a symbolic cleansing and washing of your sins. In fact, the minute you pray, the sinner's prayer, it would be preferable for you to be Water Baptised.

Choose to be obedient to the Word of God, accept the Bible in its original Hebrew as given by the Spirit of God and choose to live your life according to that. 1 John 5:3 says "For this is the love of God, that we keep His Commandments. His Commandments are not burdensome." I encourage you to read the Word of God daily and to put into practice everything that you encounter, as a principle which I believe will fruiten your life, I encourage you to make an effort right now after you have prayed this prayer, to start reading your Bible from the Book of John through to the Book of Revelation. Make a discipline of reading the New Testament from Matthew to Revelation, at least two, three, four times a year and read the Old Testament from Genesis to Malachi at least once a year. And I would encourage you to do that using different translations.

Ask God to lead you to the church where He wants you to be at this time. They will teach you, they will guide you, they will pray for you, and they will help you walk in the fullness of what God has called you to be. Be aware that He may move you. God may move you from Church to Church over time to teach you new things and you should not be reluctant to do this.

The service of God is a personal choice. It's a wonderful choice and if you'll step up by faith today and pray the sinner's prayer and follow Him, you'll reap a rich harvest if that is your desire, to be found faithful on the Day of Judgement. Should you have listened to this and have decided that you're now ready to make Jesus Christ the Lord of your life, I would ask you to pray the following prayer with me in Jesus name.

"Father I come to you in the name of Jesus and I confess that I am a sinner. I confess that I don't have a personal knowledge of the Lord Jesus Christ and I recognise that without Jesus if I were to die right now, I will spend Eternity in hell and not with You. I confess that I've sinned and repent of those sins and I turn around. I choose to turn my back on sin and to serve God. I confess that Jesus Christ came to Earth as a Man, that He was crucified, that He died and was buried and that He was resurrected on the third day and that He sits on the right hand of the Father.

I confess by faith that He died to take all of my sins and I thank you Jesus for taking my sin and I give You my sin right now, in Jesus name. I confess by faith of Jesus Christ, as King of Kings and Lord of Lords, and I choose now Lord Jesus to make You the Lord of my life. I invite you to come and dwell in my heart. I invite You to take charge of my life. I invite You to start leading and guiding me and directing me and I give You my life and everything that I have, and I commit myself to serving You now, Lord Jesus.

I thank you that You've heard now, and I thank You that You've now come to live in me and I thank You for saving me. I thank You that I am now a Child of the most high God. I thank You that I am now a Servant of the most high God and that You'll lead me and guide me into the paths that You want me to walk. I ask You Lord, to lead me to the Church where You want me to be. I ask You in the name of Jesus to bring the people that You want in my life, into my life by Your Spirit and to remove the people that You don't want in my life by Your Spirit, in Jesus name.

I ask You to close all doors in my life which You do not want to open, that no man may open, and I ask You to open every door in my life that You want opened and that no man may close it, in Jesus name. Father, I ask You to teach me to be led by Your Spirit. I ask You to open my eyes to have a Revelation of the Word of God. I ask You to give me a hunger for the Word of God and for Your Spirit and I ask You to teach me to pray in Jesus name. I thank You Father, and I thank You Jesus for saving me and I declare that I am now a Child of God and I praise You and I worship You and I glorify Your Holy Name and I thank You for changing me and saving me and delivering me in Jesus name. Amen."

Now that you've prayed that prayer and you're born again into the body of Christ, realise that the Christian walk is a journey with all likening to a marathon race. You need guidance, you need assistance. If you have no one to help you, pray, then ask the Holy Spirit of God to come into your life and to help you. If you need to contact somebody, contact any of the major ministries. If you're not sure who to contact, contact this ministry through the address and telephone and email details that was supplied earlier.

May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His Face to shine upon you. In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, Amen.

## **03 10 Scriptural Divorce Versus Putting Away**

This teaching is entitled '*Scriptural Divorce Versus Putting Away*.' It is the next teaching in the marriage series and follows on after the teaching on adultery, although it was recorded some time later. Having examined in great detail the Scriptures on adultery and determining that, which is currently regarded as divorce, is not. It is necessary that we now more closely investigate God's definition of divorce. As we do this, it is vital that we approach the subject, not with a legalistic view, but with a view to understanding God's heart in the matter. In considering this teaching it is important to recognise that current statistics indicate that approximately two-thirds of all Western marriages, both in the Church and amongst unbelievers end in legal divorce. A recent report suggests there are more divorces in the Church than in the world. Indications are that nearly all these divorces are not recognised by the Lord.

It is also important to understand that an enormous percentage of people who think they are married are living in adultery. Secular statistics indicate that 5% of women are virgins on what the world and the Church call their wedding night, in other words, the night of their contractual marriage. Two-thirds or more have had intercourse with more than one man. In such cases, great wisdom and discernment is required and some aspects of this teaching, which deal with the subject of marrying a so-called divorced woman apply to this case and is well pertaining to a woman who is not a virgin.

### **My Marriage**

As I speak, I am acutely aware that both my wife and I had divorced by the leading of the Holy Spirit and remarried by His guidance. In this section I will endeavour to assist readers, assist listeners to

understand what seemed to me to be some of the critical challenges relating to divorce within the body of Christ in this age. To share a little bit of my own experience, I was married in the sight of God in terms of these teachings for 25 years and then in the sight of the world contractually for 18 years. I did not consider the possibility that I could get divorced, despite the fact that from the outset, the relationship had been unhappy, full of tension, strife, and full of all sorts of unpleasantness. Eventually, at a particular point in time when I was really extremely desperate, I cried out to God for guidance. While I was travelling overseas in London at a time when I was very close to the Lord, as I was praying, I had a vision of a bookshop that I visited earlier in the day, and of a particular gondola in that bookshop and that book at a specific location on that gondola. I could not discern anything about the book, only that the position of the book and the position of the gondola in the shop, and that God wanted me to buy it.

When I returned to the shop the next day, I was flabbergasted to discover that the book was entitled *'When the Vow Breaks'* and was a book on divorce within the Body of Christ. I agonised for some minutes before finally concluding that God definitely did want me to buy this book. When I started reading it that evening, and stayed up most the night reading it, it was as though the book had been written about my marriage, as it contains so many details of the betrayal, the unhappiness and the acrimony that characterised so much of my marriage. I should add perhaps, that at this point, I had been for some three years, continually going for counselling, examining my heart, seeking God for my marriage, trying to get my wife to go to counselling, praying, fasting, and really seeking to do everything that I could to heal my marriage.

I had been told repeatedly in counselling that if there was something wrong in my marriage, it was my fault. I shared with you in a previous teaching the fact that I had an extramarital affair and I was repeatedly told that this was evidence of what was wrong in my heart, and that it would take many years before my marriage would be healed as a consequence of my actions. I found repeatedly that when I went before God and asked Him for guidance, and asked Him what was wrong in my marriage, He spoke to me about aspects of my wife's conduct and my own conduct, which were not in conformity with what I was being told in counselling. And in many times that brought me into places of great distress, in great anguish, if so. But eventually having dealt with everything that the counsellor had told me to deal with, having dealt with everything that I perceived God was telling me to deal with, my marriage was still a mess and it was at this point that I cried out to God. I subsequently confronted my wife with this. She confessed to having deliberately and actively, for 25 years set out to destroy me and to bankrupt me and confessed all sorts of things which were just beyond my ability to comprehend that anyone who said that she loved someone would do.

Having confessed, she repented, and committed himself to seeking to restore the marriage. However, some six months later, she had gone back on everything she confessed and was still conducting herself with no appreciable change. And by this stage, it has also been shown to me by God that He had been speaking to her for over three years regarding major sin, which she had deliberately set up. Certain things, which had given rise to various people being prejudiced, and she refused to repent. Eventually she had a vision in which the Lord Jesus Christ appeared to her and she still refused to repent. He turned His back and walked away from her and a few days later, He told me to get out of the marriage.

I am going to this detail in order that you may understand that when I speak of divorce, I speak of divorce from first-hand, and an extremely painful experience, and by the leading of the Spirit of God decided to get out of the marriage. Getting out of the marriage, I discovered that emotionally and psychologically, I was in a terrible state. I still found myself opposed by the Church and a large number



of people who were not spiritually sensitive to what was going on and were not aware of things that had been happening, that I had never talked about to anybody.

God then brought my present wife into my life shortly after telling me to get out of the marriage. She had a similar but different experience. She had been married for 14 years to a man who, three weeks after the marriage, came home blind drunk and was seriously under the weather, or blind drunk on a regular basis for the next 14 years. He eventually started having major demonic attacks where he would go completely bizarre to a point where the lives of his wife and children were being threatened. When he came around he would have absolutely no recollection of it. The last three months of her marriage, she and the children slept behind locked doors with her husband on the other side of the door before God permitted her to divorce.

### **God permits divorce in certain circumstances**

I share these things also that you may understand that when God does permit divorce, it is only after the party concerned, the believer concerned, has really gone through the law and spent a considerable amount of time seeking to save the marriage. It is also only when the other party has reached a point where God has given up hope that they will repent and turn around and that the marriage can be saved. So, divorce is not something to be taken lightly. With that background, I hope you will understand some of the context that I have to teach today and that what I am teaching is soundly based on the Word of God. It is based on considerable prayer. I pray that you will take serious note of what is taught here. I really believe that if you have been listening to the teachings that have preceded this and have come to a revelation of the sacredness of virginity and a revelation of the fact that adultery will keep you out of the Kingdom of God that you will see that this teaching and divorce is absolutely vital.

I pray also that you will see that by the time this teaching is complete, that divorce is not an option for the vast majority of Christians and that you will see in the context of what I have taught so far that God intended marriage to work, if you will turn around, if you will love the way Jesus loved, and if you will lay down your life for your marriage partner, God will give you a wonderful marriage. God intended marriage to work, God intended marriage to be for life and there is a very limited criteria in terms of which divorce is permissible in the Sight of God. He is calling His Church today to return to His principles and to seek godly marriages. That means that whoever you are married to in the sight of God right now, I really believe that He expects you to make that marriage work unless you have gone through a lengthy period of seeking to make it work no matter what the personal cost to you and the other party has completely turned away from God, has turned away to a point where there is no redemption and God has concluded that in His mercy and His grace towards you and perhaps towards your children, He would release you from that marriage.

I must also stress that as previously stated and said eloquently in the document, *'Wow, so that's how Jesus loves me!'* that I presented in part 1 of this teaching, God's plan for marriage is infinitely better than we know it to be in this age. He has provided supernatural mechanisms to ensure that Godly marriage will work and will be good. We must simply understand these mechanisms and learn how to apply them in our lives by the leading of the Holy Spirit. It is my prayer that by the time you have listened to this full series, you will understand that there is a wealth of Scripture which will assist you to achieve God's plan for your current marriage. Application of the Scriptures requires that you and your spouse commit yourselves a hundred percent to doing things God's way; to recognise that if things are not working, it is because there is a problem on the side of you and your spouse, and not with God. Divorce is only an option if God decides. If you will take this wholeheartedly by faith with a

commitment to God to work it out, I have no doubt that the marriage that will await you on the other side of this Jordan will truly be a land flowing with milk and honey, and a land of great joy and blessing which will be a true witness to the people of God and to the people of this world with your present spouse.

To start off, I want to take you to a couple of passages of Scripture which deal with divorce in practice. Isaiah 50:1 *"Thus says the Lord: 'Where is the certificate of your mother's divorce, with which I sent her away? Or which of my creditors is it to whom I have sold you? For your iniquities you have sold yourselves, and for your transgressions your mother has been put away.'"* Now this is God speaking of Israel who, as we have heard previously in Scripture, is shown to be married and treated as a wife by God; as distinct from the Church, which is married or to be married to the Lord Jesus Christ. Again, in Jeremiah chapter 3:1-25 they say *"If a man divorces his wife and she goes from him and becomes another man's wife, may he return to her again. Would not that land be greatly polluted? But you have played the harlot with many lovers, yet returned to me,"* says the Lord.

The rest of that passage through to verse 25 goes into great detail about Israel's sins against God, the Father. It is important to understand that gives us a pattern of what God considers to justify adultery. It is persistent and wholehearted treachery of a great magnitude that makes it a mockery to suggest that any form of marriage exists. If you read the first chapter of the Book of Esther, I don't propose to read it now, but I would encourage you to go and read it yourselves. It provides an example of divorce for a rebellious wife and while one might argue that the instance there is very harsh according to the current world view of things, when this recognised that in a situation in which both parties understand the way marriage is required to be, the conduct of Queen Vashti in absolutely refusing to come when her husband, the king summoned her to come before his subjects was likely, in fact, as a [inaudible 00:15:17] passage of Scripture to lead to the wrong example to all the subject and all the women in the realm of that King.

We need to understand that rebellion and treachery is the fundamental essence of the way God permits divorce, be it sexual, or be it spiritual as in the case of Vashti where her rebellion was breaking down her husband's house. We have heard in previous teachings that a woman can break down or tear down her house, the house of her marriage with her hands and bring about a state of rotteness in the bones of her husband.

We will see that subject in a variety of conditions, not least of which is the manner in which the husband is conducting himself that it is this form of conduct, which may ultimately give rise to a situation where God may permit divorce, but I stress again, subject to the husband's conduct. It is only when the husband has laid down his life for his wife in a way that Jesus did, and gone to all the links that God may require of him to turn his wife away from her sin that God will ultimately permit a man to divorce his wife. We have to see the shadow and the type that we have used throughout this teaching out of the passage in Ephesians 5, which clearly draws a direct parallel between Christ, the Church and a man and his wife. We have to see that parallel. We have to see that the criteria which Scripture lays down for a believer to lose their salvation to commit the unpardonable sin, to crucify again the Lord of glory, as in Hebrews 6:1-6.

It is that sort of conduct, which will permit a man to divorce his wife. But in the process, he must have sought to become Christ-like. It is no good a husband who is in rebellion against God and is not serving God, divorces his wife because she is in rebellion against him, because as we have seen before, the wife's conduct towards the husband is a mirror of the husband's conduct towards the Lord Jesus Christ. So we have to understand that before a man can divorce his wife for any reason, he has to look

to himself. I believe this even if his wife has committed sexual fornication or sexual adultery under the new covenant. God requires that husband, like the Lord Jesus Christ extends grace to her and that he lays down his life for her, and particularly that he examines his own heart because if he has been unfaithful to the Lord, if he is worshipping idols in the sense of putting his work before his service to the Lord, or before his relationship with the Lord, he should not be surprised if his wife was disloyal to him.

### **Covering and Adultery**

So, we see the double edge sword of the Word of God that I referred to in a previous teaching and particularly in some of the aspects that were dealt within the area of covering and adultery. We see that as that sword is wielded against the conditions in a marriage, it introduces a significant onus on both husband and wife to lay down their lives to make the marriage work. There is absolutely no shadow of a doubt in my mind that a man and woman who apply the principles that have been taught so far in this series will find that they will have a wonderful life, if they will lay down her lives for each other, if they will love with God's agape love unconditionally, and if they will stop being blown by winds of doctrine, emotion and lust, and will constantly seek in a scriptural way to serve and to love one another. If a wife will submit no matter what is happening, if the husband will love unconditionally, and if either party really does things the way God lays out in His word, then the marriage will turn around and the marriage will succeed.

It's important in talking about divorce that we understand the distinction in Scripture between divorce and putting away which is generally translated in most English translations as 'divorce'. I read from Malachi 2:1-17. I won't read the entire passage, verses 7 and 8, *"For the lips of a Priest should keep knowledge, and people should seek the law from his mouth, for he is the messenger of the Lord of hosts. But you have departed from the law. You have caused many to stumble at the law. You have corrupted the covenant of Levi, says the Lord of hosts."* And that passage has relevance in this teaching, because the sad reality is that the majority of people who apply the title 'Pastor' or 'Priest' to themselves are not teaching with regard to marriage in accordance with what the Word of God actually says.

### **Marrying an unbeliever**

Verse 11, *"Judah has dealt treacherously and abomination has been committed in Israel and in Jerusalem. For Judah has profaned the Lord's holy institution which he loves, he has married the daughter of a foreign god."* We see again that it is totally unacceptable and an abomination in the sight of God for a believing man or woman to marry an unbeliever. The Scriptures deal more specifically with a believing man marrying an unbelieving woman, but I have absolutely no doubt that the reverse applies as well and there are certain passages of Scripture which touch on that. As I said before, any believing woman who marries an unbelieving man must realise that she is opening herself up for Satan to make her life hell on earth. And if she does it wilfully and knowingly that the man is an unbeliever, she has no basis for divorce. She went in there with her eyes open and she must live out her life. She must suffer the consequences of her wilful disobedience to the Word of God unless God in His mercy releases her to get out of that marriage.

Observation is that in the vast majority of cases, a woman who truly does the Will of God will find that she is committed to that man for life. She is expected to lay down her life for that man in the hope that one day he will come to salvation. We are turning to Malachi 2:13-16, *"And this is the second thing you do. You cover the Lord's altar with tears, with weeping and crying so He does not regard the*

*offering anymore nor receive it with goodwill from your hands. Yet you say, 'For what reason?' Because the Lord has been witnessed between you and the wife of your youth, with whom you have dealt treacherously. Yet she is your companion and your wife by covenant. Did he not make them one, having a remnant of the Spirit and by one he seeks godly offspring. Therefore take heed to your spirit and let none deal treacherously with a wife of your youth. For Yahweh, Lord, God of Israel says that He hates divorce for it covers one's garment with violence, says the Lord of hosts. Therefore take heed to your spirit that you do not deal treacherously."*

### **Putting away**

So, in this passage of Scripture we see that God specifically hates what we are talking about, and that is ungodly divorce. But it is important to understand that the word that is translated divorced here in the New King James and most other translations in the King James is actually translated *'putting away.'* There are different words in Scripture which are both translated *'divorce'* in most translations, but in actual fact word in Malachi through 16 is *'putting away.'* In other words, it deals with sending a wife away without a scriptural reason. I would really suggest to you that this whole passage of Malachi provides much for the modern Church to consider in the light of what is presented in this series of teachings.

Just to recap, in the King James version of Malachi 2:16 it states, *"For the Lord, the God of Israel, saith that he hateth putting away: for one covereth violence with his garment, saith the Lord of hosts: therefore, take heed to your spirit, that ye deal not treacherously."* So, putting away is something which is an absolute abomination in the sight of God. It is violence against the woman concerned. It's treachery against the woman concerned. People who have put their wives away from no godly reason, for no scriptural reason have to understand that they will be judged very severely on the Day of Judgement. They will be classed as adulterous as we read in previous teachings and this is spelt out in Matthew 5, Matthew 19, and Mark 10.

A woman who leaves her husband for no reason will likewise be judged very severely. This is in stark contrast to a godly man who divorces his wife because of her persistent treachery and adultery, her refusal to repent, her persistent rebellion and a man who comes to a place where having laid down his life, having interceded for his wife, having examined his heart before God, having dealt with the things that God has called him to deal with. Having been like Jesus to his wife still finds that she refuses to repent, still finds that she continues with her adultery and her fornication, be it sexual, be it spiritual. In other words, if she continues with her rebellion, disobedience, her refusal to submit and her insistence in going her own way, her insistence in dividing the house, her insistence in tearing down the house, only then will God permit that man to divorce her.

Matthew 19:9 in the King James very succinctly summarises the Lord Jesus Christ's position on putting away. *"And I say unto you, whosoever shall put away his wife, except it be for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery."* So, unless that woman is put away for fornication, in Greek the word, there is pornea, and its derivatives are used throughout the New Testament to speak of both sexual fornication, adultery, woman having sex with a man who is not her husband, the man having sex with a woman who is another man's wife, and also idolatry and fornication towards God. So pornea speaks both of spiritual unfaithfulness and sexual unfaithfulness.

So, we see that Jesus himself declares that putting away is wrong in the sight of God and declares that those who put away for reasons other than fornication or pornea on the part of the other partner,

specifically on the part of the wife, will be committing adultery. It's important again to understand that this passage of Scripture is quite clear. It is speaking about pornea on the side of the wife, not pornea on the side of the husband, although inference in certain instances and based on the examples that we have encountered where we were quite clear that God has permitted a woman to leave her husband. Pornea would appear to be pornea on the part of the husband towards God, rather than pornea towards the wife. And there is an important distinction there. A man who turns his back on God and turns to follow Satan wholeheartedly is no longer a fit husband for a believing woman. That is a distinction from a man who is just an unbeliever.

Here, I am talking about a man who is beyond redemption. I am talking about a man who has forsaken the Word of God who has perhaps had knowledge of the Way and the Word of God and has turned to serve Satan through persistent alcoholism, persistent extreme abuse of his wife and children, through blasphemy and total rebellion, that his pornea towards God is of such magnitude that God can no longer bear to see His child, His daughter, and the wife of that man subject to that. It seems to me that as long as there is some hope from God's side, that the wife, through her humble submission, her example, her prayers and intercession for her husband, as long as there is some possibility that that man can come to repentance, I find no scriptural basis for that woman to obtain divorce. By the same token, as I said a few minutes ago, until a man has laid down his life as the Lord Jesus laid down His life for the Church and laid down his life for his wife, on no scriptural basis may that man seek to divorce. If he does divorce, in the current jargon of the world and the Church today, he is not divorcing, he is putting away. He is committing treachery, he is committing violence against his own house.

If we go back to Mark 10:1-12 and again, I will read selected verses, *"The Pharisees came to Jesus and asked Him, is it unlawful for a man to put away his wife?"* Most translations read 'divorce' there. And the Scripture goes on tempting Him or testing Him. And He answered and said unto them *"What did Moses command you,"* and they said, *"Moses suffered to write a bill of divorce and to put her away."* Jesus answered and said, *"Because of your hardness of heart he wrote you this precept that from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female. For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother and cleave to his wife, and the twain shall become one flesh. So then they are no more twain but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder."* And in the house the disciples asked him again the same. And he said to them, *"Whoever shall put away his wife and marry another committed adultery against her, and if a woman shall put away her husband and be married to another, she committed adultery."*

This particular passage in Mark 10 does not include the reference to pornea or fornication contained in Matthew 5:32 and Matthew 19:9 as discussed elsewhere as grounds for divorce. However, it serves to place the discussion in this proper context. Note that in verse 2 the Pharisees asked Jesus is it lawful for a man to put away his wife when Jesus asked in verse 3 what Moses commanded. He replied in verse 4 that Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement and put it away. This is a distortion of the Scriptures as Deuteronomy 24:1 clearly states, *"When a man takes a wife and marries her, and it happens that she finds no favour in his eyes because he has found some uncleanness in her, and he writes her a certificate of divorce and puts it in her hand and sends her out of the house."* The key concept in Deuteronomy 24 is uncleanness, which is essentially the same concept as pornea in the Greek. So, there is no change in doctrine brought about by Jesus. Jesus was confirming the doctrine. He was saying in Matthew 5, Matthew 19, and Mark 10, a man may only divorce his wife as a consequence of her fornication, her adultery, her treachery, and no other reason. Yet the Pharisees came and said is it lawful for a man to put away his wife. So, they were testing Him, they were seeking to trap Him and the play on words was in fact, hypocritical.

## Adultery and fornication

So, it's important that we understand Jesus did not change doctrine. If anything, He reinforced what God's intention was from the beginning. In other words, He says for the hardness of your hearts, the hardness of the hearts of the married couple who are unable to lay down their lives for one another. We have to understand that under the New Covenant, we have revelation, and we have the Holy Spirit as a teacher. God will not condone wholesale divorce or putting away under the banner of divorce where there is no scriptural basis. I have to stress that it is my personal understanding of what the Lord is saying. It is that there are very few people in this world today who are believers, who claim to be divorced, or for that matter, even unbelievers who claim to be divorced, who are not in fact guilty of putting away, guilty of treachery, and where they have remarried or one of the partners has remarried, they have in fact committed adultery. They are seen today in the sight of God as adulterers and every time they have intercourse in that marriage, they continue to commit adultery.

If you understand the Scriptures, it says that no adulterer or fornicator will have a place in the Kingdom of God. It is a devastating thought. It means that there are literally billions of people in the world today who face this and have very, very little hope of spending eternity in Heaven unless the Church repents of its false teachings in this area.

We see the same distinction between 'divorce' and 'putting away' in 1 Corinthians 7:10-16, *"And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, let not the wife depart from her husband. But if she departs, let her remain unmarried or be reconciled to her husband: and let not the husband put away his wife. But to the rest speak I, not the Lord: If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. And the woman which hath an husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him. For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy. But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases: but God hath called us to peace."*

I need to stress that this passage of Scripture is addressed to the Corinthians, a gentile of the Church, a group of new believers. So, it is absolutely clear that every believer to whom reference is made was a recent convert. This is not dealing with believers who have wilfully and contrary to the Word of God gone and married an unbeliever. This is dealing with a situation where both who are unbelievers, one has come to salvation and the other is not. And in that case, the believer is told to remain with the unbeliever unless the unbeliever leaves them. If the unbeliever leaves them because of their faith, the unbeliever is rejecting them because of Jesus; that is a separate matter.

It's important to recognise that passage refers to wives departing from her husband and tells her that she may not remarry. She must remain single or else return to her husband. So, if a wife chooses to leave her husband, she is told to remain single. Again, this is clearly referring to separation, which is not related to fornication, pornea or uncleanness as discussed elsewhere. On the other hand, if an unbelieving spouse departs, the believing spouse is free to marry again but it is not for the believing spouse to depart unless God clearly permits him.

Again, to recap, any divorce, which does not result from pornea is not divorce; it's putting away. The vast majority of so-called divorces in the world today are not divorce, they are putting away. Therefore, the vast majority of those who considered themselves divorced and who have remarried are living in adultery. They may well be on their way to the lake of fire and brimstone either temporarily or for eternity. So, from consideration of this in previous teachings, I hope you will see

clearly that the situation results from false doctrines regarding virginity, marriage, and divorce. In taking account of that, I refer you to Mark 9:42-44 which says, *"But whoever causes one of these little ones who believe in me to stumble, it would be better for him if a great millstone were hung around his neck and he were thrown into the sea. And if your hand causes you to sin, cut it off. It is better for you to enter life maimed rather than having two hands to go to hell, into the fire that shall never be quenched, where their worm does not die and the fire is not quenched."*

I believe that my understanding of that passage of Scripture is the little ones that are being referred to are all of the Lord God's children. So, if you are teaching that it is acceptable for a man to put away his wife and for them both to remarry, you are causing them to stumble. It would be better for you to have a millstone hung around your neck and you were thrown into the sea, because at the end of the day, you will be cast into the fire that shall never be quenched, where your worm will not die, and the fire is not quenched. So, anybody listening to this, who has been teaching on divorce or who has been divorced, I urge you to carefully consider your doctrine and your actions with regards to divorce, as you listen to this. I understand this is a hard word, but it is far better for you to deal with what you have to do in this life and come before the judgement seat of Christ and be found to be an unfaithful servant of foolish virgin, [inaudible 00:39:09], tears and not [inaudible 00:39:10] and to be cast into eternal hellfire.

### **Uncleanness**

We have read already the scriptural definition of divorce in Deuteronomy 24:4 and to stress again, the word 'uncleanness' Strong's #6172, is defined by Brown-Driver-Briggs as 'nakedness, nudity, shame, pudenda, genitalia, pudenda implying shameful exposure, nakedness of a thing, indecently, improper behaviour, exposed, undefended. So, it's the same word that is translated 'nakedness' throughout Leviticus 18 and 20 with regard to sexual sin which we have referred to previously. And it correlates closely as I have said before with the word 'pornea' used by Jesus in Matthew 19:19. As I said, in Matthew 5 and Matthew 19 and Mark 10, Jesus was simply confirming what Deuteronomy 24 says in terms of identifying uncleanness or pornea as the grounds for divorce. That is the same basis of Malachi 2:16. God is not saying in Malachi 2:16 that He hates divorce. He is saying He hates putting away. He hates a situation in which a marriage is terminated except if the one spouse is irrevocably committed to hell and is beyond redemption.

With this understanding, I really believe that much of the confusion about what constitutes scriptural divorce should be cleared up. Therefore based on what I have said, there is very little basis for believers to divorce in this age. They have a new and better covenant for you in Hebrews 8:6 which says, *"Now he has obtained a more excellent ministry, and as such he is also a mediator of a better covenant, which was established on better promises."* So, more is expected of us under this better covenant. We have the Holy Spirit dwelling within the Temple of God within us. We have tying and the gifts of the Spirit. We have the atoning sacrifice of Jesus for our sins. We have the name of Jesus to use in our petitions to the Father and in taking authority over the Forces of Darkness. Overall, we surely have much more going for us and the people of the so-called Old Testament. Therefore more is expected of us.

### **Judgement**

I refer you to Luke 12:42-51 and I read verse 48 and 49, *"He who did not know, yet committed things deserving a stripe, shall be beaten with a few, for everyone to whom much was given, from him much will be required, and to him much has been committed of him, they will ask the more. I came to send*

*fire on the earth, and how I wish that it were already kindled!"* So, it's clear that those to whom much has been given, much will be required of them. Jesus said He came to send fire on the Earth. He didn't come to bring peace on Earth at this stage. He came to bring judgement. He came to provide us with the spiritual gifts and the authority to conquer and to walk in victory. But we will be judged if we don't walk in there. Surely, that passage alone tells us that being a Christian in this age is more demanding and will require a stricter judgement than being Jew before the time of Jesus. Does it not only tell us that Christians will be more severely judged than the Jews? Can we not also, therefore infer that more will be required of a Christian before God permits us to divorce, than of a Jew? I really ask you, if you are listening to this, to consider it carefully, and I ask you to consider it in the light of the proceeding series of teaching.

These statements that I am making at the moment with regards to divorce may sound completely untenable and impractical in the light of your current understanding of marriage. But if you look at it in the light of what I have been teaching, if we do what the Word of God tells us to do in terms of the wife submitting, in terms of uninhibited sexual lovemaking, liberating, and making love, creating love in terms of 1 Corinthians 13, in terms of the One Flesh Bond becoming progressively stronger, more harmonious, coming to a place where there is a telepathic oneness of communication between husband and wife, then you will see that this is not unjust, it is not unreasonable. God created marriage to work but we have to put away the modern jezebel inspired teachings which put the wife as the queen that is served and worshipped by her husband. We have to turn things around. We have to put the husband as the head of the house. We have to put the husband as the Priest and the Prophet and the king in the home, seeking God, and ministering to God for his family. We have to put the wife in submission to the husband serving him, being a helpmeet to him, doing everything that is necessary to assist in the home and in the business, and ministering to his needs sexually. It is not for him to go out of his way to please his wife sexually. It is for her to please him sexually and it is for him to please the Lord in his ministry to the Lord in praise and worship, and in the conduct of his family.

### **Christian Marriage**

Christians are expected to do what's required of them by the Word of God to make marriage work. So, I would most sincerely counsel any person listening to this who is considering divorce to consider their position very carefully and only proceed with divorce if they are absolutely one hundred percent certain that it is God's will for their lives. Likewise, people that are already divorced in the sight of the state and the Church are not always divorced in the sight of God. Just by way of a secular example, if you receive a speeding ticket but you were not speeding, that can be squashed in court. In the same way a certificate of divorce for which there is no scriptural basis may be squashed in the Court of Heaven. In such a case, God may well require the spouses to return to their original partners and confess and repent of their adultery.

I have shared with you previously the testimony concerning the woman that we ministered to prophetically. After something like eight hours of ministry, under the guidance of the husband, in which she received a string of visions in terms of which I was given words of knowledge, she realised at the age of around 46, that when she was about 16 years old, she had been hypnotised by a man [inaudible 00:46:31] for marriage ceremony. The marriage had been consummated. He had repeatedly had sex with her by bringing her back under hypnosis and he had subsequently, after she had married another because her father had refused to permit this man to marry her. This man had even seduced her while she was married to another man and her father [inaudible 00:47:05] by her. God in His mercy brought this man back into her life, but as they were now both born again took her out of the legal marriage because that was not a marriage at all. It was adultery. Eventually, after this mystery when



she confronted this man, he confessed, and it turned out that he even had photographs of the ceremony.

### **Marriage in the sight of God**

So, you need to understand if you are a woman, the man who took your virginity may still today be your husband in the sight of God, even if it is 20, 30, 40, 50 years later, even if you have had 5, 10, 20 other men subsequently. This even applies if you have been legally married in the sight of man, in the sight of the state and in the sight of Church with marriage ceremonies performed by a Pastor or a Priest in Church to any number of men. You are still potentially married to that man that took your virginity, and the reason that your walk with God is a mess, the reason your present marriage is a mess is because you are in adultery. Until you repent and turn around and return to the man who took your virginity, you will have no peace. I am not espousing this as a doctrine for every person. Every case has to be treated on this, there is no basis [inaudible 00:48:31] interpretation. Only the Spirit of God knows the truth with regard to your situation, because as with the woman who was hypnotised, she did not even remember having had sex with this man. She did not remember the marriage ceremony she had gone through with this man. So, your understanding is of no use to you in the situation.

### **Divorce in terms of God**

If we go to the contrast where a man is clearly shown by the Spirit of God that he should divorce, he is in terms of Deuteronomy 24:1 perfectly entitled to issue a certificate of divorce as a hand written or typed document with his signature on immediately that God tells him to go ahead with that divorce. He does not have to go through the courts before that divorce becomes effective in the sight of God. Legally he will still need to go through that legal divorce process in order to remove all the yokes between himself and his former wife and to untangle their financial services, etc. But in a spiritual sense, he is entitled to inform his wife that he is divorcing her in terms of Deuteronomy 24:1. My understanding is that he would need to give his several explicit and preferably written warnings before he finally issues a certificate of divorce, but the day that God tells him, you may now divorce or you may get out, he can issue that certificate.

In the case of a woman that God permits to divorce, she needs to get a divorce certificates from her husband and the probability is that she will only get that by going through a formal secular legal divorce process. If in certain societies, where she is not guaranteed of the success of that process, she might need to endeavour to get a letter from her husband or have the discussion with her husband, that the husband has agreed to divorce her. If she is unable to get a certificate of divorce in terms of Deuteronomy 24:1, it's unclear exactly what would apply. Again, it's a situation in which there is no basis [inaudible 00:50:48] legalism every case must be taken on its merits.

We have gone in some of the previous teachings into some detail about the contrast or the characteristics of an immoral woman and the attributes of a virtuous wife. Proverbs 5:15-19 says, *"Drink water from your own cistern, and running water from your own well. Should your fountains be dispersed to abroad, streams of water in the streets? Let them be only your own and not the strangers with you. Let your fountain be blessed, and rejoice with the wife of your youth, as a loving deer, and a graceful doe. Let her breasts satisfy you at all times and always be intoxicated with her love."* Again, we see a very explicit parable there in the manner in which a husband and wife should conduct themselves, and how a godly woman should conduct herself towards her husband with a sexual reference in terms of the fountain being the man's sexuality. There are many other issues that we have dealt with in terms of how a woman should conduct herself and what the attributes are of a

harlot. I don't intend to go into those now. Time doesn't permit it. But they just provide a greater measure of what forms the basis for divorce.

### **Worldly sins**

It's important also to realise that in the present age, as a measure of the depths of the version, this will be sunken to that there are reports that indicate that many men encourage their wives to commit adultery, and even participate with more than one man being sexually active with one woman at the same time. So, we see that there is no wonder that there is massive judgement about to come on the Earth. There is no doubt in my mind that the level of sexual perversion, fornication, adultery and the absolute spiritual mess in the world is at least as severe as it was at the time of Noah, if not worse. It's at least as severe as it was in the case of Sodom and Gomorrah at the time that they were destroyed.

We should be under no illusion that the world is in a terrible spiritual state. If you recognise what I am teaching in the series on marriage, if you understand how the Church has departed from the truth regarding marriage, you will understand that the Church is no better than the world. The level of fornication in the Church is absolutely terrible to behold, as well as the level of divorce and remarriage in the Church. God said to me some time ago at Passover in the year 2000, that every believer who is joined to one person, joined sexually, had a one flesh bond with one person with whom they were not now living as husband and wife, and was effectively joined to every other single person on this planet who likewise had had sex with any person who is not today living with him. In other words, any believer who is joined to a man and woman through one instance of sexual intercourse in their life, and that person is not living with them, has in turn joined themselves to another person and is joined to every Satanist, every Witch, every Warlock and every agent of Satan on this planet. It gives Satan a direct spiritual hotline into the very hearts of believers and it means that the Body of Christ is joined in the most appalling fashion to the world and to the hearts of those who have given themselves over to Satan. worship to their hearts of those who have deliberately and actively invited Demons to take possession of them. It is no wonder that the Church operates in so little power and operates in so little holiness and sanctification.

So, we see again there is very little basis for a man and a woman to leave their present life. So the man or when they were joined to in terms of taking her virginity. It would seem that where a person is married to somebody who becomes an active practising [inaudible 00:55:31], and certain other classes that God would permit a divorce, but where they knew about that state beforehand, again, the same conditions apply. The believing spouse should lay down their lives for the salvation of their partner. I really believe and the more I pray about it, the more I see it, God is only going to permit divorce if the other spouse is irrevocably committed to hell.

Just by way of example, there are numerous testimonies of believing spouses who faithfully served the unbelieving spouses for decades with the love of God and are finally being rewarded by seeing their loved ones come to salvation. Sometimes when one or other of the spouses is on their deathbed, what a treasure it must be to see the soul of a loved one in Heaven for Eternity in return for having laid down one's life in prayer and service. There can be no general rule. Only God knows and He can determine the point at which a woman who is joined to a man can be separated. But I would really submit to you, God wants everybody say it. So, don't believe that because your husband is not serving God the way you think he should, that it gives you a reason to leave him. And the same applies in the reverse.

There are a number of Scriptures which indicate that there are certain instances where putting away is prohibited. Deuteronomy 22:16-19 which deals with a situation where a man falsely accuses his new bride of not being a virgin says that he may not put her away all his days. Deuteronomy 22:28-29 which deals with rape, states that a man may not put away his bride or put away the girl all his days. Basically, this deals with rape or a man who seduces a woman. As far as I can determine, neither of these prescriptions relate if the woman subsequently resorts to pornea.

### **The Ideal Partner**

I want to talk for a minute about the unloved wife. Many divorces today come about because the woman says she does not love her husband or vice versa. Perhaps one of the most difficult Scriptures for the modern Church to accept in this context, is Deuteronomy 21:15-17. It states if a man has two wives, one loved and the other unloved and they have borne him children, both the loved and the unloved, and if the firstborn son is of her who is unloved, then it shall be on the day he bequeaths his possessions to his son that he must not bestow firstborn status on the son of the loved wife in preference to the son of the unloved, the true firstborn. But he should acknowledge the son of the unloved wife as the firstborn by giving him a double portion of all that he has for he is the beginning of his strength, the right of firstborn is his. Here we have a passage with explicit provision for a man to have two wives at least and in addition, we have explicit provision for one of those wives to be unloved. Surely, this must squash the idea of one perfect partner, the idealistic searching for wife after wife and husband after husband or girlfriend after girlfriend, boyfriend after boyfriend, scrapping each previous relationship in the process.

We are clearly taught by the Scriptures recorded in these teachings that once a man has married a woman, they are married for life, barring some specific and extreme situations. So, surely the response of the disciples to Jesus in Matthew 19:10-11 remains true. *"His disciples said to him, 'If such is the case of a man with his wife, it is better not to marry.' But Jesus said to them, all cannot accept this saying, but only those to whom it is given. Perhaps it is indeed better not to marry. It is certainly not to marry lightly or hastily for the wrong reasons."* The fact that the husband does not love his wife, or she does not love him, is no basis of talk. It's also important to understand that the agape love defined in 1 Corinthians 13 is not something that you have or you don't have. It is a decision to love. Therefore, for any believer to say they do not love their wife, or their husband is an absolute abomination in the sight of God. They are commanded to love and the love that is set out in 1 Corinthians 13 is not a love that is subject to whim. It is a decision. It is something that they are commanded to put into place. If you are a believer and you say you don't love your wife, you don't love your husband, then you are saying you don't love God because you are not prepared to obey this Commandment.

Therefore it is absolutely necessary that before marriage, we search our hearts in order to be clear that we are indeed intent on making a lifetime commitment. It's certainly critical that we pay diligently to the Father in the name of the Son in order to ensure that the person you intend to marry is indeed the person that God would have us marry in the time of marriages as we have understood it. It's vital that we lean not to our own understanding. Proverbs 3:5 *"Trust in the Lord with all your heart, and do not lean on your own understanding."* And that we look not to things that are seen but to things that I am seeing. 2 Corinthians 4:18, *"While we do not look at the things which are seen but at the things which are not seen. The things which are seen are temporary, but the things which are not seen are eternal."*

A hasty and unconceived marriage that is not of God but is born out of lust or other wrong motive may well be the most eternally spiritually dangerous thing that anyone can do. I fell into that trap and I was

in that trap for 25 years before the Creator in His mercy and His grace delivered me. Such a relationship is a hell that I would not desire for my worst enemy. It is a hell born out of false doctrine and wrong ideas resulting from the perverted teachings that Satan has infiltrated into the Christian Church for nearly 2000 years, which is hell. I pray those who hear this teaching will start to take active steps in prayer in spiritual warfare to overcome all.

Let us consider some practical situations where divorce is equally considered in the modern world. I have referred previously to the statement of husbands who don't love their wives, wives who don't love their husbands. I refer you to Exodus 21:10-11, if a wife says that she has no desire for her husband or no love for her husband, then as I have said in a previous teaching, Genesis 3:16 says that her desire shall be for her but that's a Commandment. She is not permitted, she was created to desire another man and if she is a believer, she must understand that she is in gross error and deception to suggest that she cannot desire her husband or that she does not find her husband attractive. It's also important to understand that Exodus 21:10-11 makes it absolutely clear that if the man takes another wife, there is no basis for divorce. Exodus 21:10-11 says if he takes another wife, you shall not diminish her (the first wife's) food, her clothing, and her marriage rights. If he does not do these three for her, then she shall go out free without paying money.

So, essentially, if the man puts a wife away, in other words, he stops providing for her in terms of food, clothing, and denies her of her marital privileges, then she has a basis for divorce, and that passage is dealing specifically with bond women, slaves, servants. It's not specifically dealing with a free woman but by extension, one would assume that the same principle applies there. So, there we have the only instance that I am aware of in Scripture which actually provides for a woman to leave her husband and that is if he ceases to provide for her in a fashion consistent with the provision when he first married her. But even then, I would suggest to you that that needs to be taken very carefully and it relates only to where a man has taken another wife and totally discarded the first wife.

### **Work, Abuse, Cheating in Marriage**

In another teaching I have dealt with working of the husband and I have stressed that in Bible times men were working at least 72 hours a week, 6 days a week. They were at work for 12 hours a day. The fact that the husband is away from home a lot of time is no basis for a woman to get involved in adultery or to seek a divorce. I have touched on previously, the discussion of headship and submission. There is no basis in Scripture where a husband is sinning that his wife has a basis for divorce. This thing about a man cheating on his wife has no scriptural basis as a basis for divorce. If a man is not cheating on his wife, he is permitted in Scripture to take more than one wife. And even if we ignore that, the passage in 1 Peter 2 and 3 shows us that a wife is to lay down her life for her husband, to submit to her husband in everything in the same way that Jesus submitted to the Scribes, the Pharisees and the High Priests. They have unjustly and falsely accused him, beat him, and crucified him. By the same token, abuse of the wife is not a reason for the wife to leave her husband or divorce him unless God specifically releases her as we have talked about earlier. It does seem to me that in some cases God will release a woman from the marriage for the sake of the children.

There was a recent report in the public press where a wife of a high-profile Church leader decided to divorce him allegedly because she wanted her own identity. There is absolutely no scriptural basis for her. As I have taught in a previous lesson, a wife gains her identity through her husband. She is one with her husband, she is part of her husband, she is called to be a helper to her husband. She gains her fulfilment through the fulfilment of the husband's calling. She dare not seek her own identity apart from her husband because she is dividing and tearing down her house. Many people advance

incompatibility as a reason for divorce. As you have seen there is no such thing as incompatibility. God created marriage to work between any believing man and any believing woman if they will just apply the principles that have been taught in this series.

I have said before, it is effectively only the wife's pornea that is explicitly given in Scripture as a basis for divorce. And therefore, a wife seeking divorce from her husband has to be led by the Spirit and she has to understand that there are only very specific and very extreme instances where this will be permitted and only God can decide. As I have said before that it may be the case but only in the case of where the spouse, the husband turns totally away from God and commits the unpardonable sin and it is beyond redemption that God will permit divorce, it may not have to go quite that far if the children are being seriously threatened and then they fall away and also end up going to hell but there is no scriptural basis to draw that conclusion. It's only a personal observation in trying to understand situations where we know that God is moved. And we have to be clear that we don't build doctrine on our understanding of how God moved in a particular situation. He knows the hearts of men, we don't. He knows all history, we don't. He gains grace in ways that we do not understand. Again, I will stress the point of this series is God will fix your marriage not we should get divorced.

### **Husbands role in the marriage**

I stress again the husband must serve his family in the same way that David served Israel, not the way that Solomon ultimately forced Israel to serve him. Jesus is the ultimate example of how the husband should serve his wife and serve his family. If the wife is not ministering to her husband as he would like, then he needs to ask himself whether he is ministering to Jesus as Jesus would like. If he is not, he should not be surprised if his wife is not ministering to him as he would like. That includes the wife making love to the husband versus the husband in praise and worship of the Lord Jesus Christ. If the husband is not serving God as a wife would like him to or believes he should, then she has to ask herself whether she is serving the husband as she should.

As I said before, the relationship between the Lord Jesus Christ and the husband and the husband and a wife are mirror images of one another. They are two sides of the same coin. If one is filthy, the other has to be filthy. It's a mirror, it's a sowing and reaping situation. In the same way, if the children are not conducting themselves in a way that is pleasing to the parents with regards to their relationship with the father, with regards to the relationship with the mother, the parents have to look at their relationship with one another, their relationship with God the Father, and their relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ. The two go hand in hand.

The Word of God is a two-edged sword. It cuts both ways. There is an interesting example of the headship of an unbelieving man and a believing wife in Bob Larson's book of Spiritual Warfare. It's also in his book *'In the name of Satan.'* It deals with a situation where a believing woman was heavily appraised by a Demon, that it come to her through a generational curse and was seeking to destroy her. And eventually the only way that Demon could be cast out was for the husband, who is an unbeliever, through his authority over her body, as her head through the One Flesh Bond, to take authority over that Demon to tell her to leave. We do not even begin to comprehend the spiritual power and authority that a husband has over his wife for her good. And also, for her harm if he is a Satanist or an unbeliever who is alert to these things, he can manipulate her in ways she will not understand. But a godly man who is seeking to draw close to God will provide a covering and a protection for his wife, which is absolutely vital for her in this age. He also mentioned that in this context of marrying a woman who is not a virgin. This is a particularly horny issue today since the likelihood of a man finding that woman that he comes to marry, a virgin, is relatively low.

## **Virginity**

I stress again that we have to seek God's guidance, but it is also important to note that God may spiritually restore virginity at salvation if there is true repentance in that area. It may also be restored during ministry with regards to One Flesh Bond. We had an experience where we were praying for a young woman of about 24. She lost her virginity to a close family member, I think, a stepfather or an uncle when she was about 14, in something which was close to a rape situation. She left home and she had been used and abused by a number of men and while we were praying, she saw a vision in which she saw her hymen regrow and her virginity restored.

## **Healing from Divorce**

So, God will restore virginity in the Spirit realm for a woman where He chooses in His mercy and His grace to do so. But again, this is not something we can demand. It is something that is given by grace. So, the restoration of virginity, which is a prerequisite in a sense to have permission to marry or remarry a woman who is not a virgin, is an act of grace. It's not something that we can take as a matter of course. There are various practical implications of divorce and it is important to those who are touched on but in dealing with somebody who is divorced, I would suggest that she contact us or somebody else who is knowledgeable in these things from ministry. So far, divorce in the sight of God is only permissible following serious treachery or spiritual unfaithfulness in the part of the offending spouse. Mostly when the God permits a divorce, it will require considerable ministry with regards to spiritual, emotional, and psychological healing. I personally took several years of healing at the Lord's hand and even some psychological counselling before I was fully restored to a point where the hurt and the deep psychological distraction had been healed.

## **One Flesh Bond**

The minimum actions it requires following a divorce, the foremost certificate of divorce must be issued by the husband, not necessarily a court order but a letter will suffice. However, for legal reasons, a court divorce should be obtained if the couple are married by the Church or state. If they became one flesh through sexual intercourse, then this letter will suffice but it is scripturally a requirement, though again, in the current age, the indications are the Lord will extend grace but that it is not practical. If the woman is the one seeking divorce, this presents certain problems for which the guidance of the Holy Spirit should be sought. In some cases, it may be acceptable for the wife to send a letter to confirm a discussion. However, there can be just situations where there may be problems since we have not ministered in all possible situations. It's not possible to give more detailed guidance at this time, although we have, as I have said before, ministered in situations where the Lord has extended grace and treated relationships that have terminated without any form of contact with the other party. The One Flesh Bond must be broken by fair agreement, requesting the Lord to sever the tie by His grace.

## **Cutting curses**

I don't know of any instance where the One Flesh Bond is cut by an individual praying on their own. It needs to be prayed in agreement with the second person who is knowledgeable in this area. This is not a demonic bond and it cannot be cut and it cannot be renounced. It can only be severed by grace if the Lord has permitted the divorce. The Lord should be asked to sever the bond at both ends and to cover the spiritual realm with the blood of Jesus to heal the wound. The same basic principles to a greater or lesser extent apply to man or woman who has had sex with multiple partners who are no longer living with them as I touched on in the session on the One Flesh Bond. All marriage vows and

all promises must be renounced and cut off unless there are promises of vows which God requires to be fulfilled. Our vows are our words going indefinitely. The soul ties should be cut off at both ends. This is the emotional tie between the man and the woman. All blood line curses of demons which were passed down or were transferred through the male bloodline to the female and vice versa, must be cut off.

All curses spoken against the believing partner by the offending partner and their associates must be regularly cut off. Know that curses are not necessarily satanic or occulted. Any swear words, curses or bad statements made against your spiritual force continue to operate against you until they are cut off. This is particularly important since in a true divorce, the unbelieving party, or the party that has sinned to the magnitude that permits or results in God permitting divorce is unlikely to be friendly towards the person who has divorced them. So they may well continue to speak curses and even seek actively witchcraft or Satanic help against them. We have certainly seen that in our own lives.

All demons transferred between the parties must be bound and cast out. First of all, sin, which may give the demon the right to remain, must be confessed and repented of. This is a complex subject and you are advised to consult a prophetic ministry that is gifted in deliverance. Note that in this day, deliverance is a very specialised prophetic ministry and there are not many who have truly in-depth knowledge and experience in this field. Again, we can help. Any familiar spirits associated with relationship must be drowned and cast out. In the event of true divorce as a consequence of pornea, it appears that God's agape love between the couple would have been destroyed and will be dead by the time God permits a divorce. Conversely to that, in the case of adultery, in other words, where a man or a woman has had an extramarital affair and that is brought to an end, you may find yourself with the agape love of God fixed in your heart towards the person with whom you have committed adultery. In this case, there is no scriptural basis that I know of to cut off that bond of love. The only way to deal with that bond of love in this life is to direct that love to Holy Spirit inspired prayer for the good of the object of that love and their rightful spouse. In other words, pray for blessings on their marriage, healing to their marriage, etc.

Praying that somehow that person may be released to marry you, is very unlikely to be the will of God, no matter how much you love them. Adultery is a terribly destructive thing. And as I said, only in the case of true divorce will you find the agape love that has awakened in your heart through lovemaking and through the relationship will be destroyed. Otherwise, you will find yourself leaving a partner for whom there is still love in your heart.

### **Marriage to a divorced woman**

There are enormous challenges determining God's will and marriage with a divorced woman, in fact, to any woman who is not a virgin. I pray that by now you will realise that there are numerous good reasons why a man should not consummate a relationship with a woman who is not a virgin, without taking considerable care. And equally a woman who is not a virgin, I would hope would also appreciate that there is no way that she should want to join herself to another man until she is absolutely certain that the Lord has permitted it. My advice is that unless you are totally satisfied that it's God's perfect will and it's perfect time to not even think about consummating a relationship in any case where the woman is not a virgin.

### **Punishment and Judgement**

As you consider the subject, you will realise that it was an area that is right for religious [inaudible 01:19:12] laws designed to assist you to make this decision and the Church is full of such laws at the

moment. At the end of the day, there are numerous principles contained in this series of teaching, which will assist you to ascertain when it is probably not safe to consummate a relationship. But since they all rely on the fact at your disposal and the completeness of the memory and integrity of the woman involved, there is no absolute guideline other than ask the Lord to show you. Consider the cases of Jacob married to Leah presented fraudulently in the case of the woman that I have shared with you the testimony who was seduced under hypnosis who only discovered 20 or 30 years later that she was married in the sight of God to a man she did not even remember having taken her virginity.

Only the Holy Spirit knows the truth and only He can be trusted to guide you. This is a critical issue. I recently became aware of a situation in which a gentleman of God, in compassion married a woman who he understood to be divorced, immediately following consummation of the marriage. It's reported that he fell ill and within six months he was dead. And it's understood that this was judgement on him for committing adultery.

I have ministered in a situation of a man, again with a blessing of his Pastors, married a woman whom he understood to be divorced and within six months he was on the brink of bankruptcy, again, having been judged for his adultery. In that case, he realised there was something wrong and he divorced her, but when I ministered to him some years later, he had not cut off the One Flesh Bond. His house was still divided.

## Signs

There is much that I could say about being led by the Holy Spirit and seeking guidance, but that is a subject for another teaching on being led by the Holy Spirit. I refer you to Genesis 24:12-14 where [inaudible 01:21:11] asks the Lord for a sign with regards to the girl to marry Isaac. I refer you also to Gideon with the Fleeces in Judges 6:36-40. In my own experience, I asked the Lord for a number of signs before I married my wife, and the most definitive of those was a miraculous situation in which I was led by the Spirit and I encountered her in the meeting of some 3,000 people in a way that led both of us to know that it could only have been God. Again, we need to seek God and we need to do it carefully. It is no good brashly asking God for signs. Realise that Satan, his Demons and his fallen Angels infest the area around you. And therefore, if you talk about signs and speak not nor write them down, Satan is at liberty to take that and create that situation for you. You have to pray in your heart as [inaudible 01:22:12] did in Genesis 24:45. You should not speak it out to anybody. Don't share the sign that you have asked for with anybody until it is fulfilled, and I would urge you to ask for several signs, James 1 to 6 is asking faith for the doubting.

There are numerous scriptures dealing with being led by the Spirit of God. 1 Thessalonians 3:11, *"Jesus Christ direct our way."* 1 Thessalonians 3:5, *"The Lord direct your hearts."* John 16:13, *"He will guide you."* Psalm 48:14, *"He will guide us, He will be our guide even to death."* Psalm 49:10, *"He will lead them."* Psalm 58:11, *"The Lord will guide you continually."* Romans 8:14-15, *"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God. For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you receive the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry, 'Abba! Father!'"*

You can only be led by the Spirit of God to the extent that you are willing to humble yourself and admit that you do not know what His will is and to admit that you are utterly dependent on Him to help you avoid making a terrible mistake. Do not demand that He lead you. Do not ask for presumptuous signs. Do not go forward presumptuously. Ask in faith without doubting and be alert for supernatural events in your everyday life, which will surprise and encourage you. Whatever you do, do not lean to your



own understanding and do not look at the things that are seen. 2 Corinthians 4:18, *"Ask Him to open your eyes of your heart to see what He is doing in the world around you by His spirit."* It is all too easy in the subject to fall into Pharisees and lean on your own understanding, lean into other people's understanding, look into teachings. If you are thinking of getting divorced, only God can give you the permission to get divorced. If you do not get God's permission before you divorce, you are not divorced in His sight and you are committing treachery in His sight. If you remarry, you are committing adultery and fornication.

If you are thinking of having a marriage or consummating a relationship between a man and a woman where the woman is not a virgin, then again, only God can tell you if it is safe to do and no man has the authority to do that. You can seek prophetic ministry, and if the Lord in His mercy, sends Prophets across your path to give you confirmation, well and good. But you may not go and ask a person to tell you. They can express an opinion. I can express an opinion. We can pray prophetically, but at the end of the day you have to accept that responsibility to discern God's will for your life yourself.

## **Conclusion**

In conclusion, I need to say that God intends your present marriage, provided it is truly marriage in His sight, to be a wonderful blessing to you. I pray that by now out of the series of teachings you will see that God's plan for marriage is very different to that which you have been taught by the Church today. I pray that you will see that these teachings of the Church are great in destructive heresies. But there are truths in what has been taught here which will heal and restore your marriage. Jeremiah 23:1-6, I am reading 5 and 6, *"Behold, the days are coming, says the Lord, that I will raise to David a branch of righteous. A king shall reign in prosper and execute judgment and righteousness in the land. In his days Judah will be saved, and Israel will dwell safely. Now this is his name by which he will be called: 'The Lord is our righteousness.'"*

Judgement is coming upon the Earth, ladies and gentlemen, and if you have not dealt with issues of divorce and fornication in your life, I would encourage you to start doing so today. Realise also that these are the same days spoken of in Jeremiah 23, that are spoken of in Hosea 4, which is dealt with in another teaching. Truly, these are the days in which the truth of the Lord's perfect plan for marriage will be restored as it was outlined in that article *'Wow, so that's how Jesus loves me,'* that I reported in my first teaching. God's plan for the marriage of the Church to His Son, the Lord Jesus Christ requires that we understand the fullness of his plan for marriage in our lives on Earth. As we do this, we will truly see Heaven on Earth and we will learn to live in harmony and unity in godly marriages where divorces are unheard of.

Remember, Luke 18:20, the things which are impossible with men are possible with God. Jeremiah 29:11 is over quoted and misapplied as it is has relevance to that which assumed to come for another thoughts that I think towards you says the Lord. Talks of peace and not of evil to give you a future and a hope. If your marriage seems impossible to take up, He is able to turn it around. If you are in a marriage to an unrepented sinner, take heart. The Lord may see fit to deliver you soon, but He may also see fit to work a miracle in a situation that you believe is beyond hope. But whatever your current marital situation, expect to see change and improvement. If you are an unmarried woman, expect the Lord to provide a husband but not necessarily according to the formula that you may lay down or according to your expectations. If you will change your paradigm and humble yourself before the Almighty God, expect to see good things. However, if you stubbornly insist in retaining your false doctrines and heresies, be aware that the wrath of God is about to be unleashed on this Earth as never before.

I refer you to 1 Peter 2:1-8 and in particularly verse 4, "*As you come to him (Jesus), a living stone rejected indeed by men but chosen by God and precious.*" Verses 6 to 8, "*Therefore it is also contained in the scripture, 'Behold, I am laying in Zion a stone, a cornerstone chosen and precious, and he who believes in him will by no means be put to shame.'* Therefore, to you who believe he is precious but to those who are disobedient, the stone which the builders rejected has become the chief cornerstone. And the stone of stumbling, and a rock of offense, they stumble being disobedient to the Word to which they also were appointed."

I really pray that you understand that it does not matter how much the truth that is taught in this series may offend you, or how much they may be contrary to what you want to hear and what you have been taught throughout your life, they are truths of Scripture. They are the truths whereby marriage will succeed, and divorce will become unnecessary in this life, the truth by which we may overcome and rule and reign with Christ in victory for eternity. But the ignorance of those truths, the denial of those truths, the acceptance of slipshod attitudes with regards to marriage, the failure to recognise the truths with regards to what the Bible teaches us concerning marriage are consigning millions, if not billions of people to burn in hell for eternity and I appeal to you today from this series, please take up to heart and put it into practice, in Jesus name.

Father, I pray that any word that I have spoken in this message, which is not according to Your Word and according to Your Will that You will blow it away and that it will find no root in the hearts of the hearers. I pray Father, in the name of Jesus that every word that I have spoken that is according to Your Word and Your Will, will be implanted and engrafted in the hearts of the hearers and that it will find root and that it will produce abundant fruit in their lives. I pray for the healing and deliverance of every marriage of every person who hears this teaching. Thank You Lord that the fullness of Your blessings for marriage will manifest in their lives. I pray for every person and every man who is currently married to a woman, who is not a virgin at the time that he married her. I pray for wisdom and understanding for them to know whether they are truly married in the sight of God or if not, what adjustments needs to be made.

I pray for every couple or every individual who has been divorced with the permission of the Church who now realises they may in fact not be divorced and may be living in adultery. Father, I pray for the wisdom and the understanding and the boldness and the courage to come before You and say Father, in the name of Jesus that Your Will and not my will be done. Father, I pray that You will heal the aching hearts and the broken hearts. I thank You that You will restore those that need to be restored to their original husbands and wives. I thank You that You will heal those in marriages that You have consented to, that You will extend grace and mercy to those whose grace and mercy was appointed in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. May the Lord make His face to shine upon you and bless you abundantly. In Jesus' name, amen.

## **03 11 Marriage - Summing Up**

***James Robertson -- 4 November 2000***

This teaching is the wrapping up of the series on marriage. The present worship precedes the teaching in order to give an indication of what the Lord was saying through the praise songs. The teaching commences approximately 30 minutes into the tape, that's two-thirds through the first side. [00:31:50]

## The Principles of Marriage as God intended

Today, I am wrapping up the series on marriage. And what I intend to do, God-willing, is just to give an overview of the entire series and share the conclusions that I have reached through this teaching. We started out by looking at various indications of marriage as a prophetic statement. In other words, that everything the Bible tells us about marriage also teaches us about the relationship between Jesus Christ and the Church. So, we see that in 2 Corinthians 11:2 it says, *"For I am jealous for you, with godly jealousy for I have betrothed you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ."* In Romans 12:4-5 we read that we, being many, are one body in Christ and then in Ephesians 5:25-33 we read, *"Husbands love your wife just as Christ also loved the Church and gave himself for her."* And towards the end of that passage in verse 32, *"This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church."* So, we see that everything that the Bible teaches us about marriage, teaches us about God and the relationship between the Church and Jesus Christ, and everything that the Bible teaches us about the relationship between Jesus Christ and the Church also teaches us about how we should conduct marriage.

So, this whole teaching is based on the basic principle that if we can understand more about what God intended marriage to be, we will also better understand how we are expected to conduct ourselves in our relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ and conversely, the more we understand about the relationship between believers and the Lord Jesus Christ, the better we can understand how God intended marriage to be. We looked at an article that had been published in *Joy* magazine in October last year called *'Wow, so that's how Jesus loves me,'* which showed in a very convincing fashion that marriage is indeed a prophetic statement and we also saw that a lot of what goes on in the marriage ceremony today comes out of the occult and is not in fact out of the Bible at all. What is generally practised in the Church with regards to marriage practices, marriage ceremonies, etc., rings and so forth has no scriptural basis.

We also saw it was important to understand these truths because we would each be judged according to the knowledge that was available to us through the Bible, etc., and what we did with it. James 3:1 states, *"My brethren, not many of you become teachers, knowing that we shall receive a stricter judgment."* We saw that Romans 14:10 also showed that we would all stand before the Judgement Seat of Christ. Therefore, it is really important that we understand what the Bible really says about marriage, what it says about divorce, what it says about adultery and so forth, in order that we do not find ourselves on the Day of Judgement being judged because we did not do what the Bible tells us to do. We saw from the visions of Rick Joyner published in *'The Final Quest'* that many believers are currently taken prisoner by the enemy and are not really serving God and are in bondage to all sorts of Demonic falsehoods and lies.

We also saw that the love of God requires that we keep the Commandments of God and that we should not add and take away from the Word of God. We also saw that 1 Timothy 4:1-3 warns us of doctrines of Demons relating to marriage in the End Times. Therefore, we see that it is important that we understand what the Word of God really says about marriage because Revelation 21:8 also says that all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death. We also saw that if we do not understand what adultery is, the Word of God is very clear that all adulterers will go to hell. And therefore, we saw that there was an enormous amount that we needed to learn about what the Word of God says concerning marriage.

## Virginity

In the teachings that follow, we went on and we assessed a number of specific topics. In particular, we went in some length into the question of virginity and what the Bible says about virginity. We saw that the Bible was absolutely unambiguous that the virginity of a woman is the seal which gives rise to marriage. We saw that having sexual intercourse with a virgin is the act of marriage and having sexual intercourse with a woman who is not a virgin is adultery unless that woman is a widow, which means that the man that took her virginity had subsequently died. We saw that there were plenty of Scriptures which indicated that this was the case. We also saw that the marriage covenant is actually the act of sexual intercourse with a virgin with the shedding of blood.

We saw also that covenant is made by the shedding of blood. There are various Scriptures which relate to that. Hebrews 9:18-20 says, *"Therefore not even the first covenant was dedicated without blood."* So, we see that a covenant cannot be made without the shedding of blood. We went at some length into the Hebrew interpretation of the word 'cleave' which is used in Genesis 2:24 to define the act of marriage. Genesis 2:24 says, *"For this reason, a man shall leave his father and his mother and cleave onto his wife, and they shall become one flesh."* That passage in Genesis is pivotal to understanding what Scripture says about marriage. That is the definition of marriage. And we saw that 'split' in the Oxford English dictionary means to break forcibly, especially longitudinally with the grain or the plane of cleavage and we saw that the word 'cleave' occurred in Genesis 2:24 relating to the act of sexual intercourse between a man and a virgin with the shedding of blood.

We also saw that the original meaning of covenant was that the covenant was made by the shedding of blood. The people who make a covenant become one and cannot live without one another and that a person who breaks covenant is to be put to death. We also saw that the Bible was very clear about the fact that adultery gives rise to death even if it is not death in this world, it is death in the life to come. We saw that the Church has almost completely lost sight of this meaning of virginity, the sacredness of virginity, and have failed to preach that having sexual intercourse with a woman who is not a virgin and who is not your wife, who is not a widow, is ensuring that you have a part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone after the judgement. So, we saw that we need to understand a lot more about marriage and what it means. We also saw that sexual lovemaking between husband and wife is a parallel of praise and worship between the Church and Jesus Christ and we learned many other lessons about that which I will touch on a little bit more.

One of the dilemmas that seems to exist concerning Christian marriage is that there are actually very few passages in the Bible, which directly speak about the manner in which a Christian or a biblical marriage, scriptural marriage should be conducted. We saw that particularly Ephesians 5:31-32 unlocks this through the statement that a man shall be joined unto his wife and the two shall become one flesh. This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church and we repeatedly, throughout this series developed this understanding that as we understand the relationship between Christ and the Church and apply that to marriage, we will better understand how marriage should be conducted and conversely, the more we gain understanding of what the practical application of marriage is, the more we will be able to understand the relationship between Christ and the Church.

## One Flesh Bond

We then went into quite a lengthy discussion about the One Flesh Bond, particularly concentrating on Matthew 19:5-6 in the Amplified Bible, which said, *"For this reason, a man shall leave his father and mother and shall be united, joined inseparably to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh. They*

*are no longer two but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder."* Through various things and I shared some of my own experience and the revelation that I have received from the Lord through personal experience, we realised that the One Flesh Bond is a spiritual bond that comes about as a result of sexual intercourse. It comes into being through the act of sexual intercourse. The man becomes one with the woman. In extreme cases of long-term relationship, it gives rise to a telepathic bond where a man and woman can communicate between each other without speaking any words.

We saw also that 1 Corinthians 6:15-20 clearly indicates that a man can become one flesh with any number of women. He can become one flesh with a harlot. We saw that that Scripture says that this is a sin against his own body. We explored the fact that by man having joined himself to more than one woman, and certainly to harlots and women who are not his wives, he finds himself in a situation where his body has been pulled apart, where he cannot prosper because his house is divided, and innumerable spiritual penalties that we pay in this life for a situation in which a man who has had sex with a woman who is not his wife and who is not living with him. We discussed how that could be broken and in that session, we actually prayed for people to have that One Flesh Bond broken.

### **Headship**

We went on from there and we discussed the Concept of Headship. Ephesians 5:23 says, *"For the husband is the head of the wife as also Christ is the head of the Church and he is the Saviour of the body."* 1 Corinthians 11:3 states, *"But I want you to know that the head of every man is Christ and the head of woman is man and the head of Christ is God."* And we discussed subsequently at some length the hierarchy that this last verse actually shows us. So, we see that the relationship between God and Christ tells us something about what the relationship should be between man and God. We saw particularly that the relationship between Christ and the Church is mirrored in the relationship between husband and his wife. We saw also that the relationship between the husband and God, the Father is mirrored in the relationship between the man and his children. And we saw very importantly that where there are situations in marriage where the family is not the way it should be, firstly, the husband is totally responsible before God for the conduct of his wife and his children.

Secondly, we saw that if the husband was dissatisfied with the conduct of his wife towards him, it was very likely that his wife's conduct towards him was a mirror of his conduct towards the Lord Jesus Christ. So, if his wife was rebellious, the possibility existed that he was rebellious towards the Lord Jesus Christ. If his wife did not listen to what he said, the probability was that he was not listening to what the Lord Jesus Christ was saying to him. By the same token, we saw that if the children were rebellious towards the husband, the husband was probably in rebellion towards the father. And looking at these relationships, we saw that God has given us a very powerful indicator of how our spiritual state was relative to Him. We saw also that the relationship between the children and the mother was likely to be a very strong indication of the relationship between the mother and her husband.

We spent some time discussing all of those factors. We came back again to the question of the One Flesh Bond and the point that comes through in the One Flesh Bond is that it is a permanent thing. There is no provision in the Scriptures anywhere for it to be broken. Once sexual intercourse has taken place, it is an Act of Grace for it to be broken. And what we also learned from that is that the more the husband and wife give to one another in love, the more they are joined to each other, the more the bond becomes strong and the more successful the marriage will be. We drew the conclusion from that that God had created man and woman in such a way that marriage would work. We realised that in

fact, there is absolutely no basis for marriage to fail except out and out blatant rebellion resulting from the wife resorting to adultery and turning her back on her husband, or the husband going into complete spiritual rebellion against God and falling away totally to a point where God eventually releases the woman to divorce.

We also saw that it was spiritually to all intention and purposes impossible for a man who has One Flesh Bonds with women who are not his wives, and are not living with him, to prosper because the Devil will constantly go before the Throne of God and show that his house is divided and will steal, kill, and destroy in his life. We saw that the One Flesh Bond creates a spiritual underpinning for the husband and for the marriage and that One Flesh in marriage corresponds to One Body in Christ. We also saw from the passage in Genesis 2:23-24 where Adam says this is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh, and subsequently the word says that they shall become One Flesh. Proverbs 12:4 says *"An excellent wife is the Crown of her husband but she who causes shame is like rottenness in his bones."* So, we saw that a woman who actually deals shamefully towards her husband, a woman who is rebellious, a woman who is contentious, a woman who is disobedient will bring about a sensation in the spiritual realm in which the husband feels like his bones are rotten, that he is weakened and that he is unable to do what he should do.

We saw that Proverbs 21:9 and several other verses said, *"It is better to dwell in a corner of a housetop than in a house shared with a contentious woman or contentious wife."* We saw that there were a number of factors which gave rise to a situation within marriage where a woman who is not in submission to her husband, who is driving against her husband and will cause enormous spiritual distress to her husband. But again the counterpoint to that is if that is happening, the husband needs to look at his relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ to see whether his wife's behaviour is in fact a mirror of his behaviour towards the Lord.

## **Two-Edged Sword**

We continually saw throughout this series of teaching that we are dealing with a closed loop situation in a way where everything is two-sided. We saw that the Scriptures say that the Word of God is a sharp two-edged sword, and the point was made it cuts both ways. In other words, if there is conduct which is unacceptable in the wife, it is an indication of unacceptable conduct on the part of the husband either towards the wife or towards the Lord Jesus Christ. We saw the Word of God cutting in both directions continually. We went on and we dealt with the subject of submission and headship. We saw in Ephesians 5:23-24 where it says *"For the husband is the head of the wife as also Christ is head of the Church and he is the Saviour of the body. Therefore, just as the Church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything."*

## **Submission**

And we spent some time stressing the word *'everything.'* The point about the passages which deal with submission tells a wife to submit to her husband in everything, not just what she feels like submitting to, not just when he is right, not just when she thinks he is in the will of God, but in everything, no matter what he is doing. And we studied that further in 1 Peter 2:1 to 3:18 and we saw in considerable detail how God established a series of parallels where He tells us to submit ourselves to every ordinance of man. He tells servants to be submissive to their masters not only to the good and gentle, but also to the harsh, for this is commendable because of conscience toward God one endures grief, suffering wrongfully and then we saw that even further, for to you were called, because

Christ also suffered for us leaving us an example that you should follow his steps who committed no sin, nor was deceit found in his mouth. When He was reviled, He did not revile in return.

When He suffered, He did not threaten but committed Himself to Him who judges righteously, who Himself bore our sins in His own body on the tree, that we having died to sins, and might live for righteousness, by whose stripes you were healed for you were like sheep going astray, but have now returned to the shepherd and overseer of your souls. Wives, likewise, be submissive to your own husbands, that even if some do not obey the Word, they without a word, may be one by the conduct of their wives.

And we saw very clearly the progression in terms of which wives are told to behave like Jesus Christ to when he was falsely accused, falsely convicted, falsely beaten, falsely crucified by the Scribes, the Pharisees and the High Priests and did not fight back. He did not revile, He accepted the wrong treatment and we saw that very clearly in this passage in 1 Peter 2-3, telling wives in the same way to submit to their husbands in absolutely everything. We saw also that in verses 5-6 of 1 Peter, chapter 3 where it says, *"For this manner in former times the holy woman who trusted in God also adorned themselves, being submissive to their own husbands, as Sarah obeyed Abraham, calling him lord. His daughters you are if you do good and are not afraid with any terror."* And we saw there that there were two examples in Scripture, lengthy examples in the Book of Genesis where Sarah lied about her marital status, pretended that she was Abraham's sister and that she was unmarried, and was taken into the houses of first Pharaoh and subsequently, Abimelech. In both cases God struck Pharaoh and Abimelech because they had taken a married woman into their houses.

We saw that at no stage did God criticise Sarah for obeying Abraham, instead we see that she is praised because she obeyed Abraham in absolutely everything. From that we concluded that the Word of God was saying that a woman should submit to her husband even if he tells her to do something wrong. From that we concluded that it is absolutely vital for an unmarried Christian woman to marry a godly Christian husband, and not to marry out of the faith. If she married out of the faith, she was likely to be highly exposed to an unscrupulous and ungodly man requiring her to do things contrary to the Word of God, which Scripture would require her to submit to and know him beat her and harshly treated her.

This does present certain problems with regards to women who come to salvation when their husbands do not, but we see, and we saw in the discussion in divorce, that there is absolutely no scriptural basis for a woman who finds herself in that situation to be divorced. It is possible that the husband may permit divorce in certain instances for the sake of the children, where the husband has had adequate opportunity to repent and come to salvation and has turned his back on the Lord and has possibly become heavily demonised, where the children's salvation is potentially going to be jeopardised, if the woman does not get out of that marriage and potentially marry a godly husband. This passage of Scripture creates enormous dilemmas, if you like, for the Christian Church today, which would have women believe that if they do not like the way their husbands conduct themselves, they are at liberty to go and find themselves another husband. In fact, what we saw very clearly in this teaching is that Jesus himself said in Matthew 5, Matthew 19, and Mark 10 that is adultery, that it is putting away, it is not divorce and that it is completely unacceptable in the Sight of God.

Coming back to the question of submission again, we noted that our obedience to God is a measure of our love of God. By the same token, a wife's obedience to her husband is a measure of her love for her husband. But we saw that that was not in weakness, and we discussed at some length what the Scriptures say in Proverbs 31:10-31 which speak of a virtuous wife. We saw that woman was strong,

that she exercised initiative, that she conducted her own business, that she was involved in agriculture, she was involved in manufacturing, she was involved in trading and through her exceptional example her husband was known in the Gates of the City, and he sat among the elders of the land. So, we saw that in some respect those people who espouse the views of women's liberation are correct that woman was intended to be active economically in the lives of the community. We also saw that that was intended to happen within the marriage as part of their husband's economic unit, as part of building up the family and building up their house.

We also noted that from the military experience, it takes a strong person to submit. A weaker person does not have the self-discipline to submit. So, to suggest that a woman is weak and effeminate and without strength if she is required to submit, is absolutely contrary to world experience in other things. A good subordinate is a person who actively, and as an act of self-discipline, submits himself to those people who are put in command of him. The military example speaks very clearly of that. A good commanding officer is generally a man who is a good subordinate. If he was not a good subordinate, he would never get to the place of being a good commanding officer. We saw again in base repeating that even when the husband was in error, the wife is required to submit.

### **Covering**

We then went on and discussed the role of the husband in supplying a covering to his wife. We saw that it was very clear that Satan was very open to abusing and mistreating women who were not married or who were out of their husbands' covering, and that it was important for a woman to marry within the faith as I have just said. We also saw that love is absolutely essential and that the husband is called to love his wife no matter what. We saw Proverbs 10:12 says, *"Love covers all sins."* 1 John 4:18 says, *"There is no fear in love, but perfect love crossed out fear because fear involves torment."* 1 Corinthians 13:1-13 spells out in considerable detail what the love of God is, and we are enjoined to love our wives in that same fashion. It is absolutely important that we understand the love of God in order to understand how man is called to love his wife. Is an area which certainly from my experience the church also largely ignores.

God loves us with an unconditional love. He loves us even when we misbehave, even when we get completely out of His will. Yes, He does rebuke us. Yes, He does correct us harshly at times. And again, these are mirrors which are lessons which speak to us of the relationship between a man and his wife. It is important to understand that no matter how bad things get, until somebody commits the unpardonable sin and totally turns their back on God in rebellion and walks away, God will always forgive them. He will always correct them. He will always take them back. And therefore again, we see that only in the extreme cases of persistent rebellion and adultery, either spiritually or sexually, does a man have a basis to divorce his wife. A woman who is in constant strife and rebellion with her husband will eventually come to a place where there is no basis for the marriage to continue, provided she has been given adequate warning, and adequate opportunity to repent and turn around.

But conversely, coming back to the concept of the relationship between Christ and the Church being a mirror of the relationship between a man and his wife, we see that Jesus continually puts up with, and tolerates our disobedience. Therefore extreme love is required of the husband and it is only in extreme cases that divorce is permissible.

I cannot stress this enough, I do not believe that in this age that the Church as a whole even begins to understand the Love of God from a perspective of applying it between a man and his wife. We did not understand the love that caused Jesus to go to the cross. We preach very easily about how Jesus went



to the cross, and it was love that held on to the cross because there was no basis for Satan to crucify him. He could have called ten legions of Angels to take him down. He did not have to be beaten like that. He did not have to have his beard plucked like that. He did not have to have the Crown of Thorns put on his head. He did not have to have his back beaten and lashed until the flesh was falling off. He did not have to lie on that cross, while they drove those rust nails through His hands and His feet. He did it because He loved us. He did it voluntarily. With one word, He could have actually destroyed any, or all of the men who were tormenting and torturing Him like that and yet He uttered not a word.

The scriptures say that He was silent, that when He was reviled, He reviled not. We do not understand how a man can love his wife in that fashion, how he can give his life to protect his wife in that fashion. And because we do not begin to understand it, we do not begin to practice it and that creates a situation where it is very difficult for the wife to love her husband the way she has been commanded to, because her husband is so seldom anything like Jesus, but notwithstanding that she is told to submit.

So, we see the continuous tension about the less the husband is like Jesus, the more difficult it is for the wife to respond to him and submit to him in everything as though he were Jesus. She is still required to do that and conversely, the more rebellious and the more disobedient the wife is, the more difficult it is for the husband to behave towards her the way Jesus does, but he is still commanded to love her the way Jesus loves the Church, irrespective of her conduct. We see that the more the wife seeks to submit in a godly fashion, the more the husband will come back to being like Jesus and conversely, the more the husband loves the wife in a Christ-like fashion and lays down his life. Furthermore, she will be drawn back to submit to him.

It is an iterative and circular process with a godly man and a godly woman. They will progressively draw closer to God if that is their heart's desire, but if one of them is unsaved and an unbeliever and completely disinterested in the things of God, that marriage is destined to be immensely destructive and immensely stressful for the believing partner. But nevertheless, they are still required to lay down their lives the way Jesus laid down His life in the hope that one day they may come to salvation. And there are certainly testimonies of women who lived for 20, 30, 40 years with ungodly men who beat them, who came home drunk every night, who cheated on them in the most appalling manner, and yet they submitted meekly and humbly. They prayed for them daily and came to salvation on their deathbeds. And there is certainly a requirement for wives to lay down their lives for their ungodly husbands where they find themselves in that situation, but for unmarried Christian woman to strenuously avoid getting into that situation, the same applies in the case of the husband.

The fact that his wife is an unbeliever does not provide him with a basis for divorce. He is required to lay down his life the way Jesus did until she comes to a place of committing adultery or complete spiritual fornication, at which place God may permit divorce. But again, from my own experience, we see that the situation may only happen in the case of a man who married an unbelieving woman after 20 or 25 years, once he has dealt with the issues in his life. Therefore, we deal with an extremely complicated set of spiritual issues when we talk about marriage and when we talk about divorce. We saw also that Ephesians 5:28-33 clearly makes it apparent that a woman is bone of her husband's bone and flesh of his flesh. Verse 28, *"So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies. He who loves his wife loves himself. For no one ever hated his own flesh but nourishes it and cherishes it just as the Lord does the Church. We are members of His body, of His flesh and His bones."* And again, we see the intimate circular parallel of our relationship between Christ and the Church, and man and his wife.

We discussed at some length the man providing a covering for his wife and I refer to a vision that I saw in terms of which the man was holding a very large and very solid umbrella. That umbrella is the Lord Jesus Christ who is the man's covering, and in that vision, we saw the woman, provided she stayed in complete submission to the husband, she stayed under that umbrella and that had sheltered both of them. If the husband received serving God, if he was seeking to pursue his high calling, then all the Forces of Hell would be raining down on that family unit. But they would be deflected by the covering, which was Jesus Christ, that in turn would protect the wife. If the wife got into strife, disagreement and division with her husband, she would get out from under that covering and she would be weakened. She would weaken her husband if she would come under attack herself. In the same way if the husband gets out of agreement and out of submission to the Lord Jesus Christ, he comes himself out from the covering of the Lord Jesus Christ and he finds himself being attacked.

We saw that the book of Job gives us a very clear example of that. We saw that when God gave Satan permission to attack Job and told him not to touch his body, everything was destroyed around Job, but his wife was untouched. Even after the Lord told Satan that he was permitted to attack Job's person, the wife was untouched. We saw that therefore the wife is very secure under her husband's covering provided she obeys the Scriptures in terms of submission, etc. She may suffer the same material loss as her husband does, but she will be materially protected in a physical and spiritual sake.

We read some length from a book by William Schnoebelen on the whole issue of covering. Referring to Ruth 3:9, *"And she answered, I am Ruth, your maidservant. Spread your wing of protection over your maidservant for your next of kin,"* reading from the Amplified. We read that in 1 Corinthians 11:3 it says, *"Neither was the man created for the woman but the woman for the man for this cause ought the woman to have power on her head,"* and we saw that the word 'power' was not a lordship thing. It was a protection issue we further saw that this was relating to the sake of the Angels. From that we referred to Jude 1:6, which refers to the Angels who did not keep their proper domain. We saw that there was clear evidence that a woman who found herself outside her husband's covering, who did not in fact have a husband, would find herself very susceptible and vulnerable to attacks by Satan and his cohorts.

Therefore, we saw that there was a very clear responsibility on the part of Christian men to provide a covering to any Christian woman who is not married in these last days, and that this covering was extended by taking her as his wife. We then came back again and looked at the role of the woman and we saw in Proverbs 14:1 that a wise woman builds her house, but a foolish one pulls it down with her hands. And again, we saw the juxtaposition. A woman who does not submit to her husband, a woman who strives with him or a woman who conducts herself foolishly will tear down her house, her husband's house. She will pull her husband down. She will prevent him from going on with God. She will undermine him, so to speak. And again, we saw that this tied back and to the issue of the One Flesh Bond. We saw very clearly that the wife should not see herself as separate from her husband. She is one with her husband and we saw through that, that it unlocks one of the dilemmas of Scripture which seems to talk almost exclusively about men. We saw again, through the example of Job, that because the woman is one with the man, wherever the Scripture talks about the man or even the man's house, it is referring to the man and his wife.

And it is really important that we understand that because God is not sexist, and He is not discriminatory the way that feminists would have us believe. He has clearly defined a role for man and woman as an integral unit. We saw also that there is substantial evidence to indicate that it was virtually unheard of for a woman not to be married when she reached puberty in Bible times. In other words, every single woman would get married at the age of puberty, which is typically about 12 and a

half, 13 years old and she would come under the covering of a man. The modern syndrome of millions of unmarried Christian women is a consequence of the teachings of this age.

We saw again that the Scriptures say that every house divided against itself will fall, Luke 11:17. Therefore again, this question of division in the household brings about a house falling. It allows Satan to kill, steal, and destroy the life. We saw that remarkably God said He is crushed by His people when they deal falsely with Him when they are faithless and when they are adulterous. Ezekiel 6:9 says, *"Then those of you who escape will remember Me among the nations where they are carried captive, because I (God, Yahweh, the father) was crushed by their adulterous heart which has departed from Me and by their eyes which play the harlot after their idols."* And again, we see the parallel of the adulterous wife and the adulterous believer. The one causes immense spiritual distress to her husband, the other causes immense spiritual distress to the Lord Jesus Christ and God, the Father.

We came back again to the subject of love and Ephesians 5, various verses, verse 2, *"Walk in love,"* verse 25, *"Husbands love your wives just as Christ loves the Church,"* verse 28, *"So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies,"* verse 33, *"Nevertheless let each one in particular so love his own wife as himself and let the wife see that she respects her husband."* And again, we see the love of God coming through the self-sacrificial love, the unconditional love which is absolutely vital for marriage to work. We saw also from other Scriptures that the husband is the Priest and he is also the advocate, he is also the king and the lord of the house. That does not mean that he has some right to deal in a lordly condescending ruler type of fashion. Each of these has a job description, each of these is a role.

The husband is Priest, he is responsible for going as an intercessor before God. He is responsible for the spiritual hygiene and the spiritual health of his family. He is responsible for laying down his life for his family and for his house to see the things are in order. He is the advocate which means that he is responsible for going before the Throne of God to intercede again for his family when there is sin. He is the king and the lord of the house, and that means that he is finally responsible for everything that goes on in that house and everything that goes wrong.

He is called to rule but in the sense that Christ rules the Church, which is not with a heavy-handed depression but with a rule of love and justice. We saw that the definition of adultery is straightforward, it is a woman married to her husband who is lying with another man. And we saw that that is evil in the sight of God and that the current teachings of the Church with regards to divorce resulting in millions, if not billions of people committing adultery in this age. We touched on a variety of loose ends including the fact that the Word of God says that the marriage bed is undefiled and that the husband should not withhold himself from his wife, nor the wife with her husband, and that sexual lovemaking is a profoundly important part of marriage.

All of these factors together come back to the conclusion that God intended marriage to work but at the same time, it leads us to the conclusion that almost everything that you may have heard or taught and applied in the Church with regards to marriage today, is not a very close approximation of what has been summarised in the last three quarters of an hour. So, I would really urge those who listen to this teaching to reassess their situation, to recognise that the Word of God is absolutely unambiguous. God created marriage to work. If there is a problem in your marriage, God is able to fix that marriage, but it requires that you return to the basic principles that have been set out in this series of teachings and God will heal your marriage.

It is also important to recognise some very fundamental principles which have an enormous impact on the Church today. The first of those being that virginity is sacred, it's holy. The act of taking the virginity of a virgin is the act of marriage. There is no other act of covenant or marriage in the Word of God that is that any party, any feast, any civil ceremony, any piece of paper is an adjunct which may be required by man, it may be nice from a human worldly point of view, but it does not constitute marriage.

If a man takes a woman's virginity, he is responsible for her in the Sight of God for the rest of his life and her life. The net effect of that is clearly that a man can take the virginity of more than one woman and therefore he would be accountable before God for more than one woman and will be considered in the Sight of God to be married to more than one woman. In a society which espouses monogamous beliefs, it is vital that men and woman understand that a man should only have sex with one woman. If he has sex with more than one woman, he is either committing adultery if he puts her away, or else he is married to those women and he must do whatever he has to do within that monogamous culture to deal with the consequences of his sin, but he cannot put her away. He has to deal with her as his wife and he has to protect her.

These are all the points that have been dealt with in this teaching and again, the question of adultery is absolutely paramount. The question of divorce being something which only happens in extreme circumstances when one spouse has really done everything that God requires of them to heal the marriage, and the other has clearly turned away completely from doing anything to heal the marriage in the Sight of God. This means that the vast majority, perhaps even 95% or 98% of all divorces in the Christian Church right now are not divorce at all; they are putting away. This means perhaps as many as 60% or 70% of all Christians today are living in some form of adultery since the statistics indicate that something in the excess of two-thirds of all Christians today have divorced and remarried.

I pray that as you listen to this teaching, you all have gained a new insight to what God intended marriage to be. I pray that you will be convicted that God intends marriage to work. It is likely that you will find that they are many things that you believed, and possibly things that you have practiced as a result of the teachings that you have heard, where you will now realise that you may be in serious sin in various areas of your life and I would strongly urge you to contact this Ministry for assistance in dealing with that sin. You can contact us over the Internet or email at [James@EndTimeIssueMinistries.org.za](mailto:James@EndTimeIssueMinistries.org.za) or you can contact us in South Africa on 32516644 telephonically. The entire teaching series is available also from us at PO Box 898, Randpark Ridge, 2156, South Africa.

Father, in the name of Jesus, I ask that if I have said anything today, which is contrary to Your Word or contrary to Your Will, that You will blow it away and prevent it from taking root in the heart of the hearers, but everything that I have taught today, which is according to Your Word that by Your Spirit, You would cause to take root in their hearts, that You will nourish it and it will produce abundant fruit in their lives, in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth, amen.

## 03 12 Scriptural Response to the Sexuality of Teenage Girls

**James Robertson**

Year 2000. The teaching is entitled '*The Scriptural Response to the Sexuality of Teenage Girls.*' The teaching is preceded by the prayers and worship of the meeting, which provides a spiritual context for the message. The teaching starts after approximately half an hour, in other words, two-thirds of the way through the first side of the tape. [00:27:37]

### First Sexual Experiences

This message is entitled '*The Scriptural Response to the Sexuality of Teenage Girls.*' It is a continuation of the teaching on marriage, and it seeks to address specific issues regarding the sexual behaviour and the sexual characteristics of teenage girls in this age. The context of this teaching are statistics which indicate that an excess of 60% of all women bear their first child or have an abortion by the age of 19 in South Africa. Other secular statistics which indicate that possibly worldwide an excess of 60% of girls have their first sexual experience by the age of 16. Less than 5% of women in western countries are virgins on the night of their contractual marriage. Greater than 60% of women have had two or more men at the time of contractual marriage. These statistics also indicate that a substantial number of women have their first sexual experience at the age of 13 to 14, with a significant number being molested and raped by close family numbers. Teachers also indicate that girls entering high school at the age of about 13 are sexually precocious and highly sexually aware. This distracts them from their education.

In the light of the teaching so far, you will see that this is a spiritual disaster of catastrophic proportions. Implication is that two-thirds of the world's population will not receive the Kingdom of God on this one point alone. I refer you again to 1 Corinthians 6:9-10, "*Do you not know that the unrighteous will not inherit the Kingdom of God? Do not be deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor homosexuals, nor sodomites, nor thieves, nor coveters, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortionists will inherit the Kingdom of God.*" This is absolutely unambiguous. There can be no doubt that any woman who has had sex with more than one man, and any man who has had sex with a woman, who has had sex with more than one man, will not inherit the Kingdom of God unless they come to a revelation of the truth and they come to repentance. The indications are that these statistics that I have just read out are not that much different within the Body of Christ as a consequence of the wrong teachings, which is so prevalent in the Church today.

### Age for marriage

We need to understand the scriptural basis of this phenomenon and formulate a scriptural response as a matter of urgency, particularly for young girls in the Body of Christ but for the world as a whole, if we are to be a light and salt to the world, it's time that the Church starts to recognise the truth concerning marriage and to teach it. As a point of departure, the Talmud clearly indicates that the Scriptures which relate to virginity, used in the previous teachings, relate particularly to the level of sexual maturity, which applies and comes into effect in the life of most girls at about 12, to 12 and a half years old, indicating that this is the intended age at which they should be married. This is a principle that is applied in most cultures and societies around the world until relatively recently, in the last century or two in most cases. Recently Satan has totally corrupted our thinking to believe that a girl is not ready to marry until she is in her 20s.

## The Talmud

Just to provide a little bit more background to this. I first came to understand what I have just said to you, when I walked into a bookshop and found a set of the Talmud, the Steinsaltz edition on the shelves. I happened to pick up Volume 9, Tractate Ketubot, Part 3, which I opened at a passage dealing with the age of a virgin or [inaudible 00:31:58] at marriage. The particular teaching dealt with Exodus 22:15-16, *"If a man seduces a virgin who is not betrothed and lies with her, he shall surely make her his wife. If her father utterly refuses to give her to him, he shall pay money according to the dowry of virgins."* In Deuteronomy 22:28-29, *"If a man finds a virgin who is not betrothed, and seizes her and lies with her, and they are found, then the man who lay with her shall give to the father of the virgin fifty pieces of silver, and she shall be his wife, for he has humbled her. He cannot let her go all his days."* And these are just two passages which deal with a virgin.

We have dealt with many others in this series. In the same section of the Talmud under the heading 'Concept' the following statement is made. "And from when she produces two pubic hairs until she becomes mature, the [inaudible 00:33:05] defines legal majority in terms of sexual maturity and to the signal by the growth of pubic hairs, two hairs. Although the sign usually appears close to the age of adolescence, 13 for a boy, 12 for a girl, it is nearly the beginning of a process, which continues for a certain time until the child has indeed attained full sexual maturity, not however the completion of his or her spiritual growth.

I subsequently came across a further reference from the document entitled '*The Gospel of the Birth Of Mary*', which is published in a volume entitled, '*The Lost Books of the Bible*', published in New York on January 1, 1926. The document is alleged to have been referenced by [inaudible 00:33:51] to date back to about the 4th century. It is clear that the document is not inspired by God and is the best defence for a fairy tale, which contains much which is not scriptural. However, recognising that it is a work of some antiquity, the following passage is of some significance. In chapter 5:3-4, the following is reported concerning the Virgin Mary, the mother of Jesus. *So that when at length she arrived to her 14th year, at that time the high priest made a public order that all virgins who had public settlements in the Temple and will come to this age should return home, and as they will now have a proper maturity, should, according to the custom of the country, endeavour to be married.*

We thus have a second independent source which indicates that an age of more than 14 years was the age at which a girl should marry. I have subsequently encountered a variety of other sources, which indicate that this is commonplace. It is certainly commonplace in African traditional culture and in many other cultures for a girl to be married. I have met a woman of Lebanese descent who indicated to me that her grandmother and all women of her grandmother's generation, and preceding generation, had all been married at the age of about 14 or 15. In arranged marriages it was taken for granted but that was the manner in which marriage would be conducted. In all cases those marriages had endured for the duration of the lives of those individuals.

## Becoming sexually aware

Considering this and accepting that the substantial historical evidence indicates throughout Bible times, women or girls were married at the age of about 13, maybe 12 and a half, 14, certainly not later than 14 and a half or 15, there are a number of factors which we need to take into account. Through the years since I became aware of this particular reality, and in observing both my own daughter and what is generally being reported in the press and observed by teachers, it appears that the

development of sexuality in teenage girls in the present age seems to go through more or less the following progression.

The ages that I cited for example only, but they appear to be reasonably indicative. From about 12 to 13, the girl tends to be naive, but aware of the changes that are taking place as she reaches puberty. From the age of 13 to 14, she started to become curious about sex. By the age of 14 to 15, she starts to become curious and interested in boys. From about 15 to 17, there is an increasing awareness of her sexual needs and the tendency towards uninhibited flirtation, which may lead to lust. From about 17 onwards, and this may happen as early as 15 from what I can see, or possibly later at about 20, girls seem to follow two divergent paths. They either become intensely promiscuous, indulging in uninhibited sexual practice by which stage lust has taken over, and it would appear that this applies to probably in excess of 50% of all girls certainly in our society.

Alternatively, she becomes increasingly conscious of the need to suppress her sexuality to avoid [inaudible 00:37:46]. This leads to an increased hardening of attitude towards her own sexuality and towards the opposite sex. In either case, girls by this stage, learn that their sexual desirability is something which can be used to manipulate men and in either case, the spirits of lust and harlotry or frigidity tend to be well-established. By this stage, in a strict sense, the girl is probably unsuited as a wife. This is in terms of the submission and other issues that we have taught, without going through an enormous struggle to overcome and unlearn the patterns of promiscuity, or frigidity that she has learnt between age of 13 and 17 approximately. Therefore, she is also extremely prejudiced in terms of her ability to give herself to her husband sexually, and without inhibition. She may also be carrying a burden of One Flesh Bonds and Soul Ties where she has spread her heart over any number of young men with whom she has had flirtations of parties, flirtations of school, or short or long romantic affairs.

It appears that the majority of girls, by the age of 17 or 18 have fallen in and out of love a significant number of times, ranging from so-called puppy love and infatuation, which has never given rise to any contact, possibly not even direct speaking to the boy concerned, through to fully fledged and passionate embraces, kissing, French kissing, petting, and full-blown sex in many instances, as borne out by the statistics that we read earlier.

### **Foundation of Marriage**

If we go back to this progression that I have just worked through, and we look in contrast at a girl who marries at the age of 13, basically at the point at which she is still relatively naive, the phases of curiosity about sex in boys and increasing awareness of sexual needs will then all occur in the early stages of marriage as a marriage is consummated. And as a consequence it is reasonable to conclude that she will channel all her sexual interest and uninhibited sexual energy into her husband. She is also at a point where her emotional and psychological formation is still relatively incomplete. Therefore, provided she marries some years of senior and particularly, if he is a godly man, she will have relatively little difficulty looking up to him, adoring him, submitting to him, as we have learnt that Scripture requires of her.

This will give rise to an extremely robust and substantial marriage, an extremely robust One Flesh Bond, and particularly, the biblical practice of an initial 7 days dedicated to consummation of the marriage is followed. I cite as an example, Genesis 29:27 referring to Laban speaking to Jacob concerning Leah, *"For full her week, and we will give you this one also for the service which you will serve with me still another seven years."* And week there refers to the week or 7-day period during which the bridegroom and the bride are alone together in the bridal chamber, presumably with the

primary intention of sexual consummation of the marriage, making love, and coming to know one another in a very intimate way.

This will undoubtedly lay a very strong foundation for any marriage. And if that is taken together with the prescription in Deuteronomy 24:5 which says, *"When a man has taken a new wife, he shall not go out to war or be charged with any business. He shall be free at home one year and bring happiness to his wife whom he has taken."* So we see there are scriptural provisions, that when a man takes a new wife, he should devote considerable attention to her in the first year. Again, referring to the teaching on the One Flesh Bond, you will see that by the end of the 7-day period, and certainly at the end of the one year where considerable attention is devoted of the husband to the wife, where there is no period of absence of the husband from the wife during that first year, the One Flesh Bond will be extremely strong by the end of that period. Therefore the marriage would be extremely strong by the end of that period.

### **Sexually active**

It's interesting, in another book which I was led by the Lord to purchase, there is a set of statistics which indicates that girls in their early to mid-teens are much more sexually active, but much less fertile than older women. The inferences drawn in that book is that girls in their teens are equipped for love and only subsequently did they become fully equipped for mothers. The implication is that if there is passionate sexual involvement, passionate desire on the part of the teenage girl who is married, she is unlikely to fall pregnant. In some fashion, the Lord has equipped that her hormone will suppress her fertility and therefore she will be better equipped to bond with her husband, whereas by the time she is in her late teens, she is ready to bear children. And consequently, a woman who marries in her late teens or early 20s is very likely to fall pregnant very rapidly if she does not use contraception, whereas the indication which seemed to be that a girl who marries at the age of 13 or 14 and is highly sexually active towards her husband is relatively unlikely to fall pregnant.

So, in this teaching we see that all conventional wisdom regarding the age of marriage of girls is completely and totally wrong, and in fact, is at the heart of the massive spiritual carnage that was described earlier. In the current dispensation where it is illegal for girls under the age of 16 to enter into contractual or civil marriage in many countries, this poses a number of dilemmas for the parents of such a girl. First of all, based on the teachings that have been given so far, I hope that you will recognise that any and all forms of emotional involvement with boys needs to be avoided. That means no hand-holding, no kissing and no hugging. That is all intended in terms of what we have seen so far to be reserved solely for the single man that that girl will marry. Things like petting, fondling of breasts and genitals, of which there is much debate in the Body of Christ as to how far is too far, is completely beyond the power in terms of our current understanding in this series of teachings with regards to any young woman. She is intended to reserve all of those emotions and all of those desires for the man she marries. She is intended also to give those to that man at the age of about 13 or 14.

This is immensely challenging for any parents today, particularly in the light of peer pressure at school and socially. Advertising, television, and magazines, all portray diverse relationships between men and women and encourage the syndrome that one should have numerous relationships and become romantically involved with numerous people in order to select the right one. What we have seen in these teachings is quite clearly that none of us, psychologically, emotionally, or in any other way, are equipped at the time that we generally enter into marriage, to determine whether a marriage partner is in fact suitable for us or not. Only the Spirit of God can determine that for us and furthermore if we



marry a godly partner and we apply the principles that have been taught in this series, that marriage will succeed, whether the couple met the day of the marriage for the first time or [inaudible 00:46:57].

In fact, it is arguable that in the current situation, a couple that meet for the first time and consummate the marriage on the first day of meeting, and apply all the principles in Scripture that we have discussed in the previous teachings, have a greater chance of successful marriage. This is provided they had not been messing around, in the sense that we have been talking about, than a couple that have played games by so-called courting and assessing each other for years where inevitably without the benefit of a strong One Flesh Bond and without wholehearted commitment, there is a high probability of becoming double minded, critical, and finding fault, which will give rise at best in marriage that will not be as good as God intended it to be, at worst, and as evidenced by the statistics most probably to a marriage which will fail.

### **Guidance for teenagers**

So, we find ourselves with a major dilemma for any parents of a young teenage girl, or a girl about to enter into the teens in terms of how does one guide her and how does one manage (if manage is the right word) her relationships. What wisdom and what guidance are required in order to actually direct it in terms of that direction. It is important to understand that with the regards to the subject of petting and hugging, Ezekiel 23:1-4 is very clear. Ezekiel says, *"The word of the Lord came again to me saying 'Son of man, there were two women, the daughters of one mother. They committed harlotry in Egypt; they committed harlotry in their youth; their breasts were there embraced, their virgin bosoms were there pressed.'"* We see there is no reference in that Scripture to sexual intercourse. We see simply that by allowing their virgin breasts to be embraced and their bosom to be pressed, (pressed suggesting hugging, not even direct caressing), that they were already seen by Almighty God as being involved in harlotry.

### **Father and daughter**

So, we see that this introduces a much greater onus on appearance, especially the father, since as we have seen in previous teachings referring to Deuteronomy 22 and specifically verse 16, it is the father who is required to come to his daughter's defence if it is alleged that she is not a virgin on the day of her marriage. From that I think we should infer that the father will also be accountable before God if his daughter has played the harlot and is not a virgin when she comes to marriage. The implication of this is that the parents of any young girl need first of all to instruct her in great detail, and clearly, in terms of the constraints and the implications of breaking those constraints, and in terms of what God's plan for marriage is, and how beautiful and wonderful a godly marriage can be.

It is also important that they clearly stress to her that the sexual feelings and emotions that she is experiencing are not ungodly, are not sinful, but they must be directed in the fashion which God intended, but because of social pressures and special laws, it may be not possible for her to exercise those at the age at which God intended her to. As a consequence, strict curfews and chaperoning will be required after the time it is decided she should marry and until the marriage has been in fact consummated.

By the same token, we see increasingly out of this series of teachings that the average individual, in fact, all individuals are really not in a position to gauge who they should marry, and that marriages should be prayerfully arranged by the parents of the girl, with parents of a suitable husband at a time that they perceive to be right. I realise that this is an extremely difficult principle to apply in this age, but I have no doubt, and the more I observed the developments around me, including those of our

own daughter, I realised just how critical it is that the parents accept their responsibility to assist the suitability of a marriage partner and to ensure that the necessary arrangements are made with the parents of that young man, and that is not left to young men and women to decide on marriage, based on their own youthful lust and based on the fact that their sexual urges are becoming increasingly out-of-control.

### **Sexual feelings**

As I have said a moment ago, the young girl needs to understand that her feelings and desires are natural, but they must be contained and treasured until they are socially acceptable at the time of marriage. It must also be recognised that the age of 14 or 15, or even a bit older, as we have talked about earlier, is the fact that they are extremely sexually aware, and this is something they are not necessarily directly conscious of. Body language, conduct and flirtation is not necessarily something that they are positively actively consciously doing, but it is just a natural response to the change that is taking place in the body and to the stimulus of the presence of the member of the opposite sex. Extreme sensitivity and extreme understanding are required. The Love of God is absolutely prerequisite in responding to this challenge.

As an alternative, since we have seen that statistics indicate that in excess of 60% of young girls marry through sexual intercourse and when I use the word '*marry*' I use marry in the word that the Bible uses it, sexual intercourse with a virgin as we have seen in the previous teachings. Since a majority of girls in excess of 60% marry through sexual intercourse before 16, and then go on to commit adultery and become harlots in the Sight of God, we must accept that a possible course of action is for parents to permit their so-called underage daughter to marry a godly man of their choice, and to dwell with him until they are at an age where they can get contractually marriage in the sight of the state. This offers the young girl the benefit of harnessing her sexuality the way God intended it, without waiting for the necessary contractual arrangements to be made.

I would submit there is a necessary compromise, if you will, in terms of current understanding relative to the practical realities which have been spelt out in this teaching. It is absolutely unconscionable, unjust and unreasonable for us, as parents, to expect our children to have their entire marriage potential and sexual potential perverted, twisted and incorrectly applied over a period of years. This, leading to a situation where the capacity to marry the way God intended them to marry is seriously prejudiced, compromised, and possibly destroyed altogether as evidenced by the 60% plus level of divorce in the world and in the Church with recent reports suggesting that divorce in the Body of Christ is even more prevalent than it is in the world. Therefore, every parent who has a teenager or near teenage girls must prayerfully confront the issues that have been presented in this teaching.

I do not for a minute suggest that this is an easy subject, but at the same time, we cannot afford - with the information that is now at our disposal as a consequence of this series of teachings - to ignore the reality that that girl was created to be married at age 13, that the sexual desires and flirtation and everything else that she manifests are the way God intended it to be towards her husband. They are a gift from God intended to ensure that the marriage gets off to a strong and robust start. They are intended to ensure that a strong One Flesh Bond is formed and therefore they are not to be treated lightly. They are not to be distained and they are certainly not to be treated as though there are indications of perversion or innate sinfulness on the part of the young lady.

### Seek prayerful guidance

I leave you with that thought; anybody who has any relationship with a girl in her teens must prayerfully seek God for guidance as to how to guide and direct that girl. Father, I pray that whatsoever I have uttered in this teaching that is not according to Your Word, not according to Your will, not according to Your Spirit, that You will blow it away, that it will find no root in the hearers, but I ask You Father in the name of Yahooshua, that whatever has been said that is according to Your Word and Your Will and Your Spirit for this age, that it will find root in the hearts of those who heard it, that it will bear abundant fruit, that You will open their eyes of their understanding to see how to apply this in their lives, and that You will give compassion and sensitivity in dealing with the people who are the victims of the false teachings which have been exposed through this teaching. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in Jesus' name. Amen.

## 03 13 The Scriptural Relevance of betrothal

It was originally recorded on the November 6, 1999. Though I have been impressed to include it in the marriage series immediately following the teaching on the scriptural response to the sexuality of teenage girls. It has been re-recorded on the November 15, 2000.

### Betrothal

I want to go through a few Scriptures which I believe are fairly definitive in understanding what the significance of the trifle with regards to marriage and particularly in terms of understanding whether the betrothal is a necessary prerequisite to marriage, or whether the marriage can come into existence without betrothal. And also, in terms of whether betrothal in some fashion creates a legal contract which has greater significance than the act of sexual consummation in marriage.

So, we can start out with Matthew 1:18 and I am reading from the New King James, "*Now the birth of Jesus Christ was as follows: After His mother Mary was betrothed to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Spirit.*" So, we see that betrothal is indicated there as relating to the period before consummation of the marriage. But in terms of understanding betrothal further, if we go to Langes translation, which is the translation from the original Aramaic, whereas all the other English translations are translations from the Greek, which in turn was translated from the Aramaic or Hebrew. Prior to that, Mathew 1:18 says, the birth of Jesus Christ was in this manner. While Mary, His mother was acquired for a price for Joseph before they came together, she was the child of the Holy Spirit. So that translation by a person who grew up in an Aramaic speaking part of the world indicates that betrothal actually relates to the acquisition of a wife for a price. So, we see that the act of betrothal in scriptural terms involves paying a price, the bride price for the bride. That is addressed further in Deuteronomy 22 as an example where we see that if a man takes the virginity of a woman, he will pay the bride price.

So, in Deuteronomy 22:28-29, "*If a man finds a young woman who is a virgin, who is not betrothed, and he seizes her and lies with her, and they are found out, then the man who lay with her shall give to the young woman's father fifty shekels of silver. She shall be his wife because he has humbled her; he shall not be permitted to divorce her all his days.*" Now, the correct translation of divorce is actually 'put her away'. But the fifty shekels of silver if we read elsewhere, is the bride price of a virgin, the dowry if you like, or the lobola that was paid by the husband to the father of the young girl in order to secure the contract for that woman to marry and in terms of Deuteronomy 22 earlier on. In

Deuteronomy 22:13-21 we see that if a woman is found not to be virgin on her wedding night, then she was regarded to be a harlot and should be put to death. So, the interpretation of Deuteronomy 22:29 would appear to be that once that girl had lost her virginity, she would never again be able to marry. And consequently, the man who took her virginity, even in this case by force, should pay the bride price and he would accept the responsibility for her as his wife willy-nilly in perpetuity.

### **Bride Price**

There is another Scripture in Exodus which suggests that the father, in the case of a seduction, would have the opportunity to refuse to give his daughter as the wife of the man who took her virginity. But other than that, the provision is basically the same, and the implication there would also seem to be in the light of Deuteronomy 22:13-22. In such an instance, a girl who had lost her virginity would never be able to marry again and she would have to remain under the protection of her father. If we take that a step further and we go through to the case of Rachel and Leah in Genesis 29, the basic context of that Scripture is that Jacob had supplanted Esau in getting the birth right and the blessing from Isaac and Rachel. Jacob's mother was concerned that Esau was going to kill him and therefore she persuaded Isaac to send Jacob away to Rachel's brother Laban, until Esau had calmed down. So, Jacob travels to Haran where Laban lives, and he meets Laban's daughter, Rachel and he falls in love with her and we see that in Genesis 29:18 it says, *"Jacob loved Rachel; and he said to Laban, 'I will serve you seven years for Rachel your younger daughter.'"*

So, in that case the bride price was seven years of labour on Jacob's part presumably in part, because Jacob had left his father's house in a hurry and only with clothes he stood up. When he arrived at Laban's, he was penniless and therefore fifty shekels of silver which as I understand it was a pretty sizeable financial transaction in those days was something that he could not have to pay and perhaps it was possible that the sacrifices seven years' wages because we see in the preceding verses, in verse 15, Laban said to Jacob *"Because you are my relative, should you therefore serve me for nothing? Tell me, what should your wages be?"* And we see that in response to that, Jacob undertakes to serve Laban for seven years for Rachel.

### **Deception**

In verse 19, *"And Laban said, 'It is better that I give her to you than that I should give her to another man. Stay with me.' So Jacob served seven years for Rachel, and they seemed only a few days to him because of the love he had for her. Then Jacob said to Laban, 'Give me my wife, for my days are fulfilled, that I may go in to her.'"* There we see again that the actual marriage is the act of sexual intercourse, the 'go in' to the virgin. *"And Laban gathered together all the men of the place and made a feast. Now it came to pass in the evening, that he took Leah, his daughter and brought her to Jacob; and he (Jacob) went in to her. And Laban gave his maid Zilpah to his daughter Leah, as a maid."*

*So, it came to pass in the morning, that behold, it was Leah. And he said to Laban, 'What is this you have done to me? Was it not for Rachel that I served you? Why then have you deceived me?' And Laban said, 'It must not be done so in our country, to give the younger before the firstborn. Fulfil her week, and we will give you this one also for the service which you will serve with me still another seven years.' Then Jacob did so and fulfilled her week. So he gave him his daughter Rachel as wife also. And Laban gave his maid Bilhah to his daughter Rachel as a maid. Then Jacob also went in to Rachel, and he also loved Rachel more than Leah. And he served with Laban still another seven years."*

There are a couple of important principles with regards to betrothal and with regards to marriage that come out in that passage. The first one is that notwithstanding the fact that Leah was given to Jacob

deceitfully, and that presumably she was brought into a darkened room where Jacob could not see clearly to distinguish that it was in fact Leah, and that he had sexual intercourse with her, and therefore took her virginity. The next morning, there was no question about *'I was not betrothed to this woman and therefore she cannot be my wife and resulting in Jacob sending her away.'* He accepted that by taking Leah's virginity with knowingly or unknowingly he was now committed to her for life and that she was his wife. And accordingly, we see from that passage that virginity is the deciding factor in whether a marriage has taken place.

We also see that any betrothal agreement beforehand is not a prerequisite for marriage, because there was absolutely no contract of any shape or form between Laban and Jacob with respect to Leah. And yet notwithstanding that because Jacob had taken Leah's virginity. He also further accepted that the bride price that he had paid over the preceding seven years for Rachel, was forfeited in respect of Leah, because he had taken her virginity. In terms of the passage in Deuteronomy 22 that we looked at a few minutes ago, by taking her virginity, it would appear a case of deception by the father that her virginity was forfeited and could never be restored. Jacob acknowledged and accepted that he was liable for the bride price for Leah and that he would have to work another seven years for Rachel.

We see also that it was traditional to have seven days of celebration of the wedding feast during which the bridegroom would focus his entire attention on the bride for the full seven days, which probably has some correlation to the idea of honeymoon today. But the critical principle there is that having taken Leah's virginity without any betrothal arrangement, Jacob found himself married to her. He did not dispute it and he did not fall back on the nonexistence of betrothal agreement as some means of nullifying the marriage.

## **Marriage**

To look at another instance where the same principle is clearly evident, if we turn to Genesis 38, this passage follows on immediately after Genesis 37, which is where Joseph is sold by his brothers into Egypt. In the next verse we see *"It came to pass at that time that Judah departed from his brothers and visited a certain Adullamite whose name was Hirah. And Judah saw there a daughter of a certain Canaanite whose name was Shua, and he married her and went in to her. So she conceived and bore a son, and he called his name Er. She conceived again and bore a son, and she called his name Onan. And she conceived yet again and bore a son, and called his name Shelah. He was at Chezib when she bore him."* So, we see that Judah went and married outside of the tribe of Israel. He took a wife from the Canaanites, rather than doing as his father had done and going back to Hirah and to get a wife from his family.

In verse 6, *"Then Judah took a wife for Er his firstborn, and her name was Tamar. But Er, Judah's firstborn, was wicked in the sight of the Lord, and the Lord killed him."* That presumably flows from the fact that Judah's wife was Canaanite woman and not a Hebrew woman. *"And Judah said to Onan, 'Go in to your brother's wife and marry her and raise up an heir to your brother.' But Onan knew that the heir would not be his; and it came to pass, when he went in to his brother's wife, that he emitted on the ground, lest he should give an heir to his brother."* Other translations say he spilled his seed or he spilled his semen on the ground. In other words, he refused to consummate the marriage fully. *"And the thing which he did displeased the Lord; therefore He killed him also. Then Judah said to Tamar his daughter-in-law, 'Remain a widow in your father's house till my son Shelah is grown.' For he said, 'Lest he also die like his brothers.' And Tamar went and dwelt in her father's house."*

## Covering

*Now in the process of time the daughter of Shua, Judah's wife, died; and Judah was comforted, and went up to his sheepshearers at Timnah, he and his friend Hirah the Adullamite. And it was told Tamar, saying, 'Look, your father-in-law is going up to Timnah to shear his sheep.' So, she took off her widow's garments, covered herself with a veil and wrapped herself, and sat in an open place which was on the way to Timnah; for she saw that Shelah was grown, and she was not given to him as a wife."* It's important to understand that other Scriptures and Deuteronomy which make it very clear that in the event of a woman becoming a widow, there is a very strong obligation to the brothers of the first husband to marry that woman and provide her with a covering. We see the fulfilment of that in the Book of Ruth [inaudible 00:16:22] Boaz, but the passage in Deuteronomy that refers to that requires that if a man will not marry the widow of his brother, the widow is permitted to remove his sandal from him in public before the elders of the city, and to spit in his face for failing to extend his covering to her.

So, the act of Judah failing to give Timnah to Shelah as his wife as soon as Shelah was of an age suitable to marry, was in fact quite a significant event from the scriptural point of view. It is not just a case of Judah breaking his promise to her, it was a case of ignoring a basic scriptural principle. It is important to recognise that when Judah said to Timnah in verse 11, *"Remain a widow in your father's house till my son Shelah is grown,"* he was certainly betrothing Timnah to Shelah, because the bride price had already been paid in respect of Timnah for the first brother. Therefore legitimately, in every sense Timnah was entitled to expect Shelah to marry her and out of desperation recognising that she had not been given to Shelah as wife, and that in terms of the scriptural principles that we have already touched on, she was not really available to be married by any other man and she decided on the face of it to take the law into her own hands and to actually gain a covering for herself from her father-in-law if she could not gain that from his son.

So, we see in verse 15, *"When Judah saw her, he thought she was a harlot, because she had covered her face. Then he turned to her by the way, and said, 'Please let me come in to you'; for he did not know that she was his daughter-in-law. So she said, 'What will you give me, that you may come in to me?' And he said, 'I will send a young goat from the flock.' So she said, 'Will you give me a pledge till you send it?' Then he said, 'What pledge shall I give you?' So she said, 'Your signet and cord, and your staff that is in your hand.' Then he gave them to her, and went in to her, and she conceived by him. So she arose and went away, and laid aside her veil and put on the garments of her widowhood. And Judah sent the young goat by the hand of his friend the Adullamite, to receive his pledge from the woman's hand, but he did not find her."*

*Then he asked the men of that place, saying, 'Where is the harlot who was openly by the roadside?' And they said, 'There was no harlot in this place.' So, he returned to Judah and said, 'I cannot find her. Also, the men of the place said there was no harlot in this place.' Then Judah said, 'Let her take them for herself, lest we be shamed; for I sent this young goat and you have not found her.' And it came to pass, about three months after, that Judah was told, saying, 'Tamar your daughter-in-law has played the harlot; furthermore, she is with child by harlotry.' So, Judah said, 'Bring her out and let her be burned!'"* That was a scriptural requirement that a girl that had played a harlot should be put to death. It's interesting to note that elsewhere in considering Rachel and Leah, we see that repeatedly it was stated in Scripture that it was God who had closed up the wombs, the womb of Rachel. And at various times both Leah and Rachel interceded and asked God to open their wombs that they should bear children. And again, if you consider the birth of Samuel, his father Elkanah, his mother Hannah was

crying out before the Temple of the Lord in Shiloh because she was without a child. And again, the Lord opened her womb.

So, it is interesting that with one act of sexual intercourse Timnah conceived. If one accepts the principle which is laid down in verses of Scripture, only a few chapters before this, subsequently that the Lord determines whether a child will be conceived or not, one might draw the conclusion that God for some reason known best to Him, decided to permit Timnah to become pregnant as a result of her intercourse with Judah.

Verse 25, we see *"When she was brought out, she sent to her father-in-law, saying, 'By the man to whom these belong, I am with child.' And she said, 'Please determine whose these are—the signet and cord, and staff.' So Judah acknowledged them and said, 'She has been more righteous than I, because I did not give her to Shelah my son.' And he never knew her again. Now it came to pass, at the time for giving birth, that behold, twins were in her womb. And so, it was, when she was giving birth, that the one put out his hand; and the midwife took a scarlet thread and bound it on his hand, saying, 'This one came out first.' Then it happened, as he drew back his hand, that his brother came out unexpectedly; and she said, 'How did you break through? This breach be upon you!' Therefore, his name was called Perez. Afterward his brother came out who had the scarlet thread on his hand. And his name was called Zerah."*

## **Genealogy**

A couple of interesting things about the passage that I have just read, it is important to recognise that if we go to Matthew chapter 1 again in verse 3 of chapter 1, looking at the genealogy, verse 1 says *"The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the Son of David, the Son of Abraham."* Verse 2, *"Abraham begot Isaac, Isaac begot Jacob, and Jacob begot Judah and his brothers. Judah begot Perez and Zerah by Tamar, Perez begot Hezron, and Hezron begot Ram. Ram begot Amminadab, Amminadab begot Nahshon, and Nahshon begot Salmon. Salmon begot Boaz by Rahab, Boaz begot Obed by Ruth, Obed begot Jesse, and Jesse begot David the king. David the king begot Solomon by her who had been the wife of Uriah. Solomon begot Rehoboam, Rehoboam begot Abijah, and Abijah begot Asa."* So, it goes on until we get to verse 15, *"Eliud begot Eleazar, Eleazar begot Matthan, and Matthan begot Jacob. And Jacob begot Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus who is called Christ. So, all the generations from Abraham to David are fourteen generations, from David until the captivity in Babylon are fourteen generations, and from the captivity in Babylon until the Christ are fourteen generations."*

So, we see there 42 generations, 42 different men, and yet throughout that genealogy, the only women who are mentioned are first Timnah, second Rahab, the harlot who we read about in Joshua where the Israelites captured [inaudible 00:24:27] and walls of [inaudible 00:24:29] fall down, Ruth whom we read about in the Book of Ruth, the wife of [inaudible 00:24:36] and each one of those women is a fairly extensive story about in Scripture and then finally Mary. Other than that, none of the other mothers are mentioned in that genealogy and it would seem to be significant that thousands of years after the events of Genesis that we have just been reading, God saw fit to name Timnah by name in Matthew 1:3. So, from that it seems to me we must conclude that there was some specific reason in the Lord mentioning Timnah. And in fact, it is also relevant that Timnah is one of the few mothers who is mentioned anywhere in Scripture in the Genealogy of the Lord Jesus Christ, although they are as the wives mentioned throughout Kings and Chronicles. I am not sure exactly what confusion we draw from that, but it would seem that the Lord did see some particular merit in Timnah. He saw fit to have her story recorded in detail in Genesis 38 and then reference again to that in Matthew 1.

## The Book of Ruth

It is also significant that in the Book of Ruth, where Ruth is being blessed by the women of Bethlehem when she is married to Boaz, that the blessing that they say is that she should be blessed and honoured as Timnah, and that she should raise up a seed for Boaz, and in fact, that blessing comes to pass. So, we should be very careful about condemning Timnah for playing the harlot in order to obtain a covering that she was scripturally entitled to, from Judah, in which she had unconsciously failed to give her. And in 26 we see that Judah acknowledge them, and said, *'she has been more righteousness than I because I did not give her to Shelah my son.'*

The key point there, from the point of view in this discussion with regards to betrothal, is that, do not think that there can be any doubt that Timnah was betrothed to Shelah, Judah's son. It is not indicated that it would seem almost certain that a bride price had been paid with regard to Timnah, when she was first taken as wife of Er before slaying him. And therefore in terms of the scriptures by implication, even if it was not stated, there was an implied betrothal between Shelah and Timnah. However, above that, Judah had made a commitment, a vow if you would like, in verse 11 where he said, *"Remain in your father's house till my son Shelah is grown."*

## Timnah and Shelah

So, there was betrothal in fact between Timnah and Shelah and yet when Judah discovered that he had had sex with a widow, and this was the first person to have sex with Timnah, since both her former husbands had died, he did not for a moment suggest that she should now be given to Shelah. There was nothing to suggest that she was betrothed to Shelah. Therefore, she is in fact Shelah's betrothed and Judah had sinned in some way that Timnah belong to Shelah, the inference from the Scripture, and he never knew her again and would indicate that he accepted responsibility for her.

It seems almost certain that she gave birth to those children within Judah's house because they acknowledged throughout Scripture as the sons of Judah, and they were not treated as illegitimate children that were raised by Timnah in her father's house. It seems fairly clear to me that by having intercourse with her and by recognising who she was, the Scripture that says that he did not know her again. It indicates that he expected, that by having intercourse with her, he had extended his covering to her, and that covering could not be withdrawn. If she were to have intercourse with any other man, including his son, she would then be committing adultery. But at the same time, he was acknowledging the requirement, I think it is in Leviticus 18 or Leviticus 20, which says that a man shall not marry or have intercourse with or expose the nakedness of his daughter-in-law.

So, Judah had sinned by having sex with Timnah. Children were conceived, the One Flesh Bond had been formed and all of that was irreversible. Therefore, Judah accepted his obligation to be in [inaudible 00:30:29] her husband to Timnah and certainly to extend his protection and his provision to her for the rest of her life. He also accepted those children as being his children and did not seek to reject them on some legalistic basis. So, the conclusion that I reached out of all of that, is that while betrothal is scripturally indicated as a desirable prerequisite to marriage, it is not an absolute requirement. Furthermore, if there is a betrothal in existence and that woman has sex with another man while she is still a virgin, or while she is a virgin who has known no other man, but a deceased husband or husbands, she automatically becomes the wife of the man who has sexual intercourse with her, and the act of sexual intercourse takes precedence over the betrothal.



### **Betrothal and putting away**

Conversely as we saw in the case of Leah, if there is no betrothal arrangement and the man takes the virginity of the woman, even in deception, he is still married to her. He still has an obligation to pay the bride price to the father of the bride, notwithstanding the fact that there was no betrothal arrangement. So, I believe that those passages of Scripture make it abundantly clear that the act of sexual intercourse is the act of marriage. That is confirmed in Genesis 2:24. Genesis 2:24 says that a man shall cleave unto his wife, which is a very clear connotation of sexual intercourse and sexual penetration.

Therefore, the act of marriage is very clearly the act of sexual intercourse. It is not an oath, it is not a vow, it is not betrothal, it is not the bride price. All of those are relevant in a well-ordered community where people are seeking to live their lives in an orderly respectful fashion, with the bridegroom or the would-be bridegroom. Or his parents approach the father of the bride and asks for her hand in marriage and pays the bride price or lobola as an act of betrothal. Then a wedding feast is held and the bride as a virgin, is given to the man in marriage.

If none of that happens, and the man takes the virginity of the girl, knowingly or unknowingly, or if she as a widow has intercourse with him, immediately the marriage is consummated, a One Flesh Bond is created, and she becomes bone of his bone and flesh of his flesh. That is an irreversible thing. Mark 10 says *"That which God has joined together let no man pull asunder."* What Mark 10 is referring to, is the joining together that comes about as the act of sexual union, not some legalistic joining together that happens through some sort of a contract and God by the act of manner in which He has designed man and woman that in this act of sexual intercourse, the virginity is sacrificed, the blood covenant is cut in the flesh of the virgin through the breaking of the hymen and even if that does not happen, if the woman is a widow, the One Flesh Bond is formed as a result of the sexual act as a result of the immense sexual ejaculation and spiritual ejaculation that goes with it and that is an unbreakable and irreversible bond.

Thereby God has created man to join to woman, to become flesh of his flesh and bone of his bones, and as a consequence, Mark 10 very clearly says to us they cannot, or they may not be put asunder. To separate a woman who has been joined to a man is sin in the Sight of God, divorce, or putting away, unless she has committed major sin which is dealt with in Matthew 5 and Matthew 19 in terms of pornea.

Alternatively, to take that woman and give it another as many people would suggest that if she was betrothed and she had a one night stand, to use modern terminology, with another man that she would still belong to the man to whom she was betrothed is clearly not the case. And if for some reason, the man who was betrothed to her told her that he no longer wants to marry her, and she then understood that she was free to marry another man and she consummated a marriage with another man, at that point, she becomes married to that man. Whatever agreement there may or may not have been for her to marry the first man is null and void as we see in the case of Timnah and Shelah. Once she had sex with Judah, she was One Flesh with Judah. She was bone of Judah's bone, flesh of Judah's flesh and she was no longer available to be married to Shelah. And thus, we come to understand that the principles that it's talking about, we see that there is enormous error in what has been taught by the Church today. It is bringing large numbers of people into sin and into bondage. It is a cause for major concern.

## Lying with others

One further factor to take into account, Deuteronomy 22, reading from verse 22, *"If a man is found lying with a woman married to a husband, then both of them shall die—the man that lay with the woman, and the woman; so, you shall put away the evil person from Israel. If a young woman who is a virgin is betrothed to a husband, and a man finds her in the city and lies with her, then you shall bring them both out to the gate of that city, and you shall stone them to death with stones, the young woman because she did not cry out in the city, and the man because he humbled his neighbour's wife; so you shall put away the evil from among you. But if a man finds a betrothed young woman in the countryside, and the man forces her and lies with her, then only the man who lay with her shall die. But you shall do nothing to the young woman; there is in the young woman no sin deserving of death, for just as when a man rises against his neighbour and kills him, even so is this matter. For he found her in the countryside, and the betrothed young woman cried out, but there was no one to save her. If a man finds a young woman who is a virgin, who is not betrothed, and he seizes her and lies with her, and they are found out, then the man who lay with her shall give to the young woman's father fifty shekels of silver, and she shall be his wife because he has humbled her; he shall not be permitted to divorce her all his days."*

We find three specific instances addressed here in verse 22. The classic example of adultery dealt with in great detail in a previous teaching, and there is no question about that. In verse 23 and 24, we find a situation of a betrothed young woman who is raped or seduced by a man in the city. In such a case, she is assumed to have consented to intercourse. The betrothal is clearly defined as bringing into play a special status for that young woman, and her act of sexual intercourse with another man is treachery towards that man and therefore she should die. Conversely the act of sexual intercourse by the man is an act of violence and treachery against the betrothed husband, and therefore, that man should die.

The majority of translations say that the betrothed girl is already the wife of the man to whom she is betrothed, but it is important to understand that the word there is [inaudible 00:39:21] which is explained on a number of occasions is the same word whether there is one woman or many women and whether those women are married or not. The basic principle is that any adult woman is assumed to be married. Therefore, it would be equally correct to translate that passage in verse 24 as saying because he humbled his neighbour's woman, in other words the woman betrothed him. We cannot draw any conclusion that betrothal gives rise to marriage. This is a fairly widespread teaching and it is based completely on the erroneous translation of [inaudible 00:40:02]. Sorry, I have used the word [inaudible 00:40:05] which is the Greek in the New Testament. This is [inaudible 00:40:09] which is the Hebrew. As with the Greek, [inaudible 00:40:13] in Hebrew there is only one word for one or many women, one or many wives. There is no distinction between woman and wife.

This occurs in both the Greek and the Hebrew and it's really important to understand that any word translated as woman, wife, or women or wives is the same word in Greek or Hebrew and this is an indicator of quantum and marital status before them. So, we cannot construct any doctrine which says that the Word of God says that a woman who is betrothed is actually a wife. She has a special legal status. She has been bought with a price and therefore she is contractually committed to a man to whom she is betrothed. If she breaks that contract, the penalty is serious as we have seen here in Deuteronomy 22:23-24. But it is important to see that in verse 25, 26, and 27 as in the same instance in the country, if the young woman is raped and there was no one around to help her, she is viewed as being innocent and the man who raped her should die. And again, we see there is a specific situation there in terms of betrothal which is different in the case of an unbetroth woman or a married woman.

## Rape

So, there are certain characteristics of marriage associated with betrothal. So, in the event of a betrothal agreement that does exist, any man who has sex with that betrothed woman will die and depending on the circumstances, the woman as well should die. Again, this brings us to a place of recognising the dilemma in modern society where anybody acting on that Scripture is put into death. A young man who has raped his daughter would immediately be arrested and convicted of murder. It is a very real problem in South Africa as we see with the Muslim community, but God actually giving effect to this particular passage of Scripture and find himself in conflict with the law. It does leave one with a very difficult situation if one's betrothed daughter is raped and there is no recourse to putting the man to death. She must be regarded as married to the rapist even if it is undesirable and unacceptable for her to live with him. She would have to be kept in her father's house and would not be able to marry again unless God intervened in a very specific way to indicate that He would release her from that One Flesh Bond, but that is a separate discussion.

We see again, as we saw at the beginning of this teaching, verses 28 and 29, if a man rapes a virgin, they are regarded as married. There is some aspect in terms of Exodus where in the case of seduction, the father is giving the opportunity to deny the girl's hand in marriage, so to speak, to the man who seduced her, but we must infer based on this teaching that if that is the case, there is absolutely no basis on which she can remarry.

So, the bottom line is that yes, in the event of betrothal, there is a particular Scriptural status inferred. However, it is not marriage if the woman loses her virginity to another man. She is then in effect married to him if he cannot be put to death. The parents of that girl are left with some very difficult situation in terms of interpreting Scripture, in terms of either they must give her to a man who had sex with her as his wife, or they must accept the responsibility for her welfare the rest of her life.

The bottom line with regard to betrothal overall is that engagement, etc., as practiced in modern age, bears very little or no resemblance to what is described in Scripture. It is therefore important to understand this in considering the concept of engagement in the modern Church. It is also important to understand that betrothal was a binding irreversible contract, except in the cases we just talked about where the woman lost her virginity to another man. It was a commitment to marry. This idea of getting engaged in order to get to know one another better and thinking that engagements can be called off, is absolutely unscriptural. It has absolutely no basis in Scripture and in the subsequent teaching, God-willing, I hope to address the issue of how binding vows and promises are. I hope that will remove any uncertainty with regards to the fact that betrothal or engagement is a binding contract before God. It is not something that can be played with. It is not something that can be reversed.

Father, I ask in the name of Jesus that if there is anything in this teaching which is not of You, that You will just blow it away and that it will find no root in the hearts of the hearers, but I ask also in the name of Jesus that everything that is of You will be implanted and engrafted in the hearts of the hearers, that it will grow forth and produce abundant fruit in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in Jesus' name, amen.

## 03 14 The Price of Righteousness: Lessons from Judges 19-21 – Rape, Vows, Oaths

Judges 19-21, vows, rape, etc. It was first given on October 30, 1999, but I have been impressed to include it in the series on marriage following the teaching on betrothal.

Teaching on the Price of Righteousness. Scripture is Judges 19-21. Judges 19, *"And it came to pass in those days, when there was no king in Israel, that there was a certain Levite staying in the remote mountains of Ephraim. He took for himself a concubine from Bethlehem in Judah. But his concubine played the harlot against him, and went away from him to her father's house at Bethlehem in Judah, and was there four whole months. Then her husband arose and went after her, to speak kindly to her and bring her back, having his servant and a couple of donkeys with him. So she brought him into her father's house; and when the father of the young woman saw him, he was glad to meet him."* The story continues after several days, the man and his concubine and his servant start on their journey back to the place where he lived and they were seeking a place to stay.

### Homosexuality and rape

In verse 12, *"But his master said to him, 'We will not turn aside here into a city of foreigners, who are not of the children of Israel; we will go on to Gibeah.' So, he said to his servant, 'Come, let us draw near to one of these places, and spend the night in Gibeah or in Ramah.' And they passed by and went their way; and the sun went down on them near Gibeah, which belongs to Benjamin. They turned aside there to go in to lodge in Gibeah. And when he went in, he sat down in the open square of the city, for no one would take them into his house to spend the night."*

*Just then an old man came in from his work in the field at evening, who also was from the mountains of Ephraim; he was staying in Gibeah, whereas the men of the place were Benjamites. And when he raised his eyes, he saw the traveller in the open square of the city; and the old man said, 'Where are you going, and where do you come from?' So he said to him, 'We are passing from Bethlehem in Judah toward the remote mountains of Ephraim; I am from there. I went to Bethlehem in Judah; now I am going to the house of the Lord. But there is no one who will take me into his house, although we have both straw and fodder for our donkeys, and bread and wine for myself, for your female servant, and for the young man who is with your servant; there is no lack of anything.'*

*And the old man said, 'Peace be with you! However, let all your needs be my responsibility; only do not spend the night in the open square.' So he brought him into his house, and gave fodder to the donkeys. And they washed their feet, and ate and drank."*

So we see there, principle of requirement for hospitality. But it carries on, and in the next verse we read, *"As they were enjoying themselves, suddenly certain men of the city, perverted men, surrounded the house and beat on the door. They spoke to the master of the house, the old man, saying, 'Bring out the man who came to your house, that we may know him carnally!'"* So, we see here almost a repetition of the situation that the angels who went to visit Lot in Sodom and Gomorrah before the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah. *"But the man, the master of the house, went out to them and said to them, 'No, my brethren! I beg you, do not act so wickedly! Seeing this man has come into my house, do not commit this outrage. Look, here is my virgin daughter and the man's concubine; let me bring them out now. Humble them, and do with them as you please; but to this man do not do such a vile thing!'"*

So from that particular verse it becomes apparent that the view of homosexuality is far more severe than even rape. And I think that just demonstrates the extent to which the whole attitude of the church to homosexuality is an absolute abomination in the Sight of God.

Verse 25, *"But the men would not heed him. So the man took his concubine and brought her out to them. And they knew her and abused her all night until morning; and when the day began to break, they let her go. Then the woman came as the day was dawning, and fell down at the door of the man's house where her master was, till it was light. When her master arose in the morning, and opened the doors of the house and went out to go his way, there was his concubine, fallen at the door of the house with her hands on the threshold. And he said to her, 'Get up and let us be going.' But there was no answer. So the man lifted her onto the donkey; and the man got up and went to his place. When he entered his house he took a knife, laid hold of his concubine, and divided her into twelve pieces, limb by limb, and sent her throughout all the territory of Israel. And so it was that all who saw it said, 'No such deed has been done or seen from the day that the children of Israel came up from the land of Egypt until this day. Consider it, confer, and speak up!'"*

*So all the children of Israel came out, from Dan to Beersheba, as well as from the land of Gilead, and the congregation gathered together as one man before the Lord at Mizpah. And the leaders of all the people, all the tribes of Israel, presented themselves in the assembly of the people of God, four hundred thousand foot soldiers who drew the sword."* I think one actually reflects on that passage, it presents a number of serious challenges of our modern view of a lot of these things. But without dwelling on some of the other issues, I think the thing that really is evident in the verses is our attitude to rape today is that as a consequence of one gang rape by a group of people in one time, the entire fighting force of the nation of Israel 400,000 soldiers assembled to actually decide what to do. If we look today at a situation where a woman can be raped, gang raped, and where rapists are quite possibly not even going to be sentenced, there is an enormous paradox between our attitude to these things today and what it was then.

Verse 3, *"(Now the children of Benjamin heard that the children of Israel had gone up to Mizpah). Then the children of Israel said, 'Tell us, how did this wicked deed happen?' So, the Levite, the husband of the woman who was murdered, answered and said, 'My concubine and I went into Gibeah, which belongs to Benjamin, to spend the night. And the men of Gibeah rose against me, and surrounded the house at night because of me. They intended to kill me, but instead they ravished my concubine so that she died.'"* Verse 8, *"So all the people arose as one man, saying, 'None of us will go to his tent, nor will any turn back to his house; but now this is the thing which we will do to Gibeah: We will go up against it by lot. We will take ten men out of every hundred throughout all the tribes of Israel, a hundred out of every thousand, and a thousand out of every ten thousand, to make provisions for the people, that when they come to Gibeah in Benjamin, they may repay all the vileness that they have done in Israel.' So, all the men of Israel were gathered against the city, united together as one man."*

*Then the tribes of Israel sent men through all the tribe of Benjamin, saying, 'What is this wickedness that has occurred among you? Now therefore, deliver up the men, the perverted men who are in Gibeah, that we may put them to death and remove the evil from Israel!' But the children of Benjamin would not listen to the voice of their brethren, the children of Israel. Instead, the children of Benjamin gathered together from their cities to Gibeah, to go to battle against the children of Israel. And from their cities at that time the children of Benjamin numbered twenty-six thousand men who drew the sword, besides the inhabitants of Gibeah, who numbered seven hundred select men. Among all this people were seven hundred select men who were left-handed; every one could sling a stone at a hair's*

*breadth and not miss. Now besides Benjamin, the men of Israel numbered four hundred thousand men who drew the sword; all of these were men of war.*

## Judgement

*Then the children of Israel arose and went up to the house of God to inquire of God. They said, 'Which of us shall go up first to battle against the children of Benjamin?' The Lord said, 'Judah first!'"* So, here we see that we have a situation where a group of men have raped and murdered a woman and it is viewed so seriously in the nation of Israel at that time that the entire nation assembles. Secondly, when the people of the community, in which the crime took place, refused to hand over the criminals to be put to death in accordance to Scripture, the children of Israel then take the matter to God, and God says that they show exact judgment on the people of Benjamin.

*So, in verse 19, "So the children of Israel rose in the morning and encamped against Gibeah. And the men of Israel went out to battle against Benjamin, and the men of Israel put themselves in battle array to fight against them at Gibeah. Then the children of Benjamin came out of Gibeah, and on that day cut down to the ground twenty-two thousand men of the Israelites. And the people, that is, the men of Israel, encouraged themselves and again formed the battle line at the place where they had put themselves in array on the first day. Then the children of Israel went up and wept before the Lord until evening, and asked counsel of the Lord, saying, 'Shall I again draw near for battle against the children of my brother Benjamin?' And the Lord said, 'Go up against him.'"*

So, here we see that in seeking to bring about justice in accordance with Scripture, which requires that the rapist should be put to death, and where the children of Benjamin refused to put the rapists to death, but instead took sides with the rapists, twenty two thousand men lost their lives in seeking to enforce that requirement of Scripture for the rapist to be put to death. Yet God still says to them that they should go up again to exact justice.

*Verse 24, "So the children of Israel approached the children of Benjamin on the second day. And Benjamin went out against them from Gibeah on the second day, and cut down to the ground eighteen thousand more of the children of Israel; all these drew the sword. Then all the children of Israel, that is, all the people, went up and came to the house of God and wept. They sat there before the Lord and fasted that day until evening; and they offered burnt offerings and peace offerings before the Lord. So the children of Israel inquired of the Lord (the ark of the covenant of God was there in those days, and Phinehas the son of Eleazar, the son of Aaron, stood before it in those days), saying, 'Shall I yet again go out to battle against the children of my brother Benjamin, or shall I cease?'*

*And the Lord said, 'Go up, for tomorrow I will deliver them into your hand.'"* So, we are now in a situation, two days into this battle, but forty thousand men of Israel have been killed. God again says, go and execute judgment. Verse 29, *"Then Israel set men in ambush all around Gibeah. And the children of Israel went up against the children of Benjamin on the third day, and put themselves in battle array against Gibeah as at the other times. So the children of Benjamin went out against the people, and were drawn away from the city. They began to strike down and kill some of the people, as at the other times, in the highways (one of which goes up to Bethel and the other to Gibeah) and in the field, about thirty men of Israel."*

One of the things that strikes me about that is that these four hundred thousand men that went out and on the face of it, would have expected an easy victory over I think twenty-six thousand men, they lost forty thousand men and yet they went out the third time and another thirty were killed. So those

men felt so strongly about executing judgment on behalf of the Lord and honouring the Word of God that forty thousand and thirty men were prepared to lose their lives for the sake of one rape and murder. Verse 32, *"And the children of Benjamin said, 'They are defeated before us, as at first.' But the children of Israel said, 'Let us flee and draw them away from the city to the highways.' So all the men of Israel rose from their place and put themselves in battle array at Baal Tamar. Then Israel's men in ambush burst forth from their position in the plain of Geba. And ten thousand select men from all Israel came against Gibeah, and the battle was fierce. But the Benjamites did not know that disaster was upon them. The Lord defeated Benjamin before Israel."*

So God now moves to exact judgment. *"And the children of Israel destroyed that day twenty-five thousand one hundred Benjamites; all these drew the sword. So the children of Benjamin saw that they were defeated. The men of Israel had given ground to the Benjamites, because they relied on the men in ambush whom they had set against Gibeah. And the men in ambush quickly rushed upon Gibeah; the men in ambush spread out and struck the whole city with the edge of the sword."* So, all the women and children in Gibeah are now destroyed.

*"Now the appointed signal between the men of Israel and the men in ambush was that they would make a great cloud of smoke rise up from the city, whereupon the men of Israel would turn in battle. Now Benjamin had begun to strike and kill about thirty of the men of Israel. For they said, 'Surely they are defeated before us, as in the first battle.' But when the cloud began to rise from the city in a column of smoke, the Benjamites looked behind them, and there was the whole city going up in smoke to heaven. And when the men of Israel turned back, the men of Benjamin panicked, for they saw that disaster had come upon them. Therefore they turned their backs before the men of Israel in the direction of the wilderness; but the battle overtook them, and whoever came out of the cities they destroyed in their midst. They surrounded the Benjamites, chased them, and easily trampled them down as far as the front of Gibeah toward the east. And eighteen thousand men of Benjamin fell; all these were men of valour. Then they turned and fled toward the wilderness to the rock of Rimmon; and they cut down five thousand of them on the highways. Then they pursued them relentlessly up to Gidom, and killed two thousand of them. So all who fell of Benjamin that day were twenty-five thousand men who drew the sword; all these were men of valour."*

*But six hundred men turned and fled toward the wilderness to the rock of Rimmon, and they stayed at the rock of Rimmon for four months. And the men of Israel turned back against the children of Benjamin, and struck them down with the edge of the sword—from every city, men and beasts, all who were found. They also set fire to all the cities they came to."*

### **The Body of Christ**

So, we see that in executing judgment for that one gang rape and homosexual intent and murder, over forty thousand men of Israel sacrificed their lives to execute judgment. Twenty-five thousand men of Benjamin were destroyed, and all the women, children and cattle of Benjamin and their cities were destroyed. In fact, the whole tribe of Benjamin had only six hundred members left. So, the tribe was almost obliterated. I think that is a very sobering picture in the context of what the Church tolerates today in the form of rape, murder and homosexuality.

I think it is particularly relevant in the context that we are moving rapidly into an age of tribulation. Ezekiel 33 says that if God has called one to be a watchman and one fails to give the message the blood of those that are destroyed will be on the hands of those who failed to give the message. If we accept that the Word of God requires the Body of Christ to warn the world of that which is to come,

and to see that justice and judgment prevail, to at least preach the truth, then it would seem that the amount of blood that is potentially on the hands of the Body of Christ for failing to tell the world the truth about rape, murder and homosexuality, is of absolutely massive proportion.

We go on to chapter 21. We see some more Scripture, which again, is challenging in terms of current teaching. *"Now the men of Israel had sworn an oath at Mizpah, saying, 'None of us shall give his daughter to Benjamin as a wife.' Then the people came to the house of God and remained there before God till evening. They lifted up their voices and wept bitterly, and said, 'O Lord God of Israel, why has this come to pass in Israel, that today there should be one tribe missing in Israel?'"* And the principle there is that because those men, the six hundred men who had survived, had no wives and the tribe would die out.

*"So, it was on the next morning that the people rose early and built an altar there and offered burnt offerings and peace offerings. The children of Israel said, 'Who is there among all the tribes of Israel who did not come up with the assembly to the Lord?' For they had made a great oath concerning anyone who had not come up to the Lord at Mizpah, saying, 'He shall surely be put to death.' And the children of Israel grieved for Benjamin their brother, and said, 'One tribe is cut off from Israel today. What shall we do for wives for those who remain, seeing we have sworn by the Lord that we will not give them our daughters as wives?'"*

*And they said, 'What one is there from the tribes of Israel who did not come up to Mizpah to the Lord?' And, in fact, no one had come to the camp from Jabesh Gilead to the assembly. For when the people were counted, indeed, not one of the inhabitants of Jabesh Gilead was there. So, the congregation sent out twelve thousand of their most valiant men, and commanded them, saying, 'Go and strike the inhabitants of Jabesh Gilead with the edge of the sword, including the women and children. And this is the thing that you shall do: You shall utterly destroy every male and every woman who has known a man intimately.' So, they found among the inhabitants of Jabesh Gilead, four hundred young virgins who had not known a man intimately; and they brought them to the camp at Shiloh, which is in the land of Canaan."*

## **Vows**

So we see further that the men of Israel took their oath and their word so seriously that the consequence of this one group of people from Jabesh Gilead, failing to comply with the action of the rest of Israel, in order to honour the Word of God and in order to exact judgment on the people of Benjamin and Gibeah, who were guilty of the intended homosexuality, rape and murder, that entire community was also put to death. And again we see that we have no level of sincerity and righteousness towards the word of any individual today that we would even consider an action like that within the bounds of comprehension, that a group who have taken a vow would so absolutely sincerely honour that vow that they would give effect to that vow by destroying an entire community. And that furthermore where they have taken a further oath, that none of them would give his daughter to Benjamin as a wife. They would take extreme measures to find some way to provide wives to these six hundred men, bearing in mind that presumably at the time they took the vow, that they did not expect to find only six hundred men surviving from Benjamin which presumably the vow was taken before the Benjamites went into battle.

But be that as it may, the reality is that they were not prepared to revoke that word even if it meant that the tribe of Benjamin would die out. So verse 13, *"Then the whole congregation sent word to the children of Benjamin who were at the rock of Rimmon, and announced peace to them. So, Benjamin*



*came back at that time, and they gave them the women whom they had saved, the women of Jabesh Gilead; and yet they had not found enough for them. And the people grieved for Benjamin, because the Lord had made a void in the tribes of Israel. Then the elders of the congregation said, 'What shall we do for wives for those who remain, since the women of Benjamin have been destroyed?' And they said, 'There must be an inheritance for the survivors of Benjamin, that a tribe may not be destroyed from Israel. However, we cannot give them wives from our daughters, for the children of Israel have sworn an oath, saying, 'Cursed be the one who gives a wife to Benjamin.' So again, we see that even though despite the people grieved, they were not prepared to break their oath.*

*"Then they said, 'In fact, there is a yearly feast of the Lord in Shiloh, which is north of Bethel, on the east side of the highway that goes up from Bethel to Shechem, and south of Lebonah.' Therefore they instructed the children of Benjamin, saying, 'Go, lie in wait in the vineyards, and watch; and just when the daughters of Shiloh come out to perform their dances, then come out from the vineyards, and every man catch a wife for himself from the daughters of Shiloh; then go to the land of Benjamin. Then it shall be, when their fathers or their brothers come to us to complain, that we will say to them, 'Be kind to them for our sakes, because we did not take a wife for any of them in the war; for it is not as though you have given the women to them at this time, making yourselves guilty of your oath.'"*

*And the children of Benjamin did so; they took enough wives for their number from those who danced, whom they caught. Then they went and returned to their inheritance, and they rebuilt the cities and dwelt in them. So the children of Israel departed from there at that time, every man to his tribe and family; they went out from there, every man to his inheritance. In those days there was no king in Israel; everyone did what was right in his own eyes."*

So, you see the Scripture, Exodus, which provides for a father to act against a situation where a man has sex with his daughter without his consent to prohibit that becoming a marriage. You see that being dealt with here by way of the Israelites advising the fathers and brothers of those girls not to exercise that scriptural prerogative that they had through refusing the children of Benjamin to keep those girls as their wives. Again, it gives us a completely different perspective on the whole issue of marriage as being something in terms of which there is a period of courtship and a period in terms of which the couple established whether they are right for one another, and in which there is some consideration of the possibility of the relationship ending. Whereas you see a situation in which none of the modern, socially practices are applied, and yet the entire community accepts that those are valid marriages.

### **Death penalty**

At the end of the day, through those three chapters of Judges we see a very, very different view of the application of Scripture with regards to murder, rape, and homosexuality, with regards to the execution of judgment, and with regards to the definition of marriage according to Scripture. As best as I can determine, although verse 25 in chapter 21 says in those there was no king in Israel. Everyone did what was right in his own eyes. The key point is that the execution of the death penalty for murder, rape, and homosexuality is a scriptural requirement and was faithfully exercised. We see that God required Israel to exact that death penalty even though He permitted over forty thousand men of Israel to be destroyed in the process.

We see that it is not acceptable in the Sight of God for others to act to protect a murderer, a rapist or a homosexual from the death penalty. If they do, that they would be found guilty with the people that they seek to protect, and they will also be put to death. We see that it is acceptable in the Sight of God that even if there is a heavy price to be paid for executing judgment, judgment must nevertheless be

executed. And then we also see out of the same story that it was considered reasonable for every man to have a wife. We see that it was considered absolutely unacceptable for a man to break his vow or oath, no matter how extenuating the circumstances might be, and they were not even prepared to consider breaking their oath. They were only prepared to contemplate some action which was within the confines of their oaths and within the confines of Scripture in order to permit those men to gain wives.

I really believe that the modern Church has to look very, very critically at that passage of Scripture and ask themselves how they reconcile what they teach today and what they do today with that passage of Scripture. Either we believe that the Word of God is the final authority in our lives and we seek to live our lives in accordance with that, and we do not accept that it is tolerable for murderers or rapists and homosexuals to be allowed just to continue living their lives and being protected by society, and we speak out against it. Or we in turn potentially and become part of the problem. In the same way, we need to revisit our whole attitude to what constitutes the preconditions for marriage and more specifically, what constitutes the preconditions for divorce. Because by implication, there is no indication, in this passage of Scripture, that those women who were given to the Benjamites without any courtship, without any process of selection, which either the men or the women had any material choice in the selection of wives, that there was any prospect envisaged that those marriages could be terminated.

Where that really leaves us is with an enormous amount of unresolved challenges in terms of what the Church should be asking itself, saying to itself, preaching about and speaking to the Word about when it comes to the area of righteousness and judgment and dealing with murder, rape, and so forth.

### **Ungodly vows**

Taking this further, I would like to share some thoughts on ungodly vows and vows made under false pretences. We have a tendency in the world today to make promises, or even vows, without fully thinking through the consequences or even understanding the consequences. There seems to be a belief that a broken promise or vow has no consequence. This is particularly the case of so-called marriage vows in the context of two-thirds of marriages ending in divorces as we have heard in previous teachings. However, Scripture has a very different view as already presented in this teaching. It is necessary that we take this further in the context of marriage vows. Consider the following passage from Joshua 9:3-27 and Joshua 10:1-15.

*"But when the inhabitants of Gibeon heard what Joshua had done to Jericho and Ai, they worked craftily, and went and pretended to be ambassadors. And they took old sacks on their donkeys, old wineskins torn and mended, old and patched sandals on their feet, and old garments on themselves; and all the bread of their provision was dry and mouldy. And they went to Joshua, to the camp at Gilgal, and said to him and to the men of Israel, 'We have come from a far country; now therefore, make a covenant with us.' Then the men of Israel said to the Hivites, 'Perhaps you dwell among us; so how can we make a covenant with you?' But they said to Joshua, 'We are your servants.' And Joshua said to them, 'Who are you, and where do you come from?'*

*So, they said to him: 'From a very far country your servants have come, because of the name of the Lord your God; for we have heard of His fame, and all that He did in Egypt,'* It continues and they expound in some detail what they have heard about what has happened to the children of Israel. They elaborate on their lie that they came with new food, new garments and new wineskins, and they have all now become decayed because of the length of the journey. *"Then the men of Israel took some of*

*their provisions; but they did not ask counsel of the Lord. So Joshua made peace with them, and made a covenant with them to let them live; and the rulers of the congregation swore to them.*

*And it happened at the end of three days, after they had made a covenant with them, that they heard that they were their neighbours who dwelt near them. Then the children of Israel journeyed and came to their cities on the third day. Now their cities were Gibeon, Chephirah, Beeroth, and Kirjath Jearim. But the children of Israel did not attack them, because the rulers of the congregation had sworn to them by the Lord God of Israel. And all the congregation complained against the rulers.*

*Then all the rulers said to all the congregation, 'We have sworn to them by the Lord God of Israel; now therefore, we may not touch them. This we will do to them: We will let them live, lest wrath be upon us because of the oath which we swore to them.'" So we see very clearly that they expect judgment if they break the oath. "And the rulers said to them, 'Let them live, but let them be woodcutters and water carriers for all the congregation, as the rulers had promised them.'*

*Then Joshua called for them, and he spoke to them, saying, 'Why have you deceived us, saying, 'We are very far from you,' when you dwell near us? Now therefore, you are cursed, and none of you shall be freed from being slaves—woodcutters and water carriers for the house of my God.'*

*So, they answered Joshua and said, 'Because your servants were clearly told that the Lord your God commanded His servant Moses to give you all the land, and to destroy all the inhabitants of the land from before you; therefore, we were very much afraid for our lives because of you and have done this thing. And now, here we are, in your hands; do with us as it seems good and right to do to us.' So he did to them, and delivered them out of the hand of the children of Israel, so that they did not kill them. And that day Joshua made them woodcutters and water carriers for the congregation and for the altar of the Lord, in the place which He would choose, even to this day."*

*Chapter 10, "Now it came to pass when Adoni-Zedek king of Jerusalem heard how Joshua had taken Ai and had utterly destroyed it—as he had done to Jericho and its king, so he had done to Ai and its king—and how the inhabitants of Gibeon had made peace with Israel and were among them, that they feared greatly, because Gibeon was a great city, like one of the royal cities, and because it was greater than Ai, and all its men were mighty. Therefore Adoni-Zedek king of Jerusalem sent to Hoham king of Hebron, Piram king of Jarmuth, Japhia king of Lachish, and Debir king of Eglon, saying, 'Come up to me and help me, that we may attack Gibeon, for it has made peace with Joshua and with the children of Israel.'" So the kings gathered together for war.*

*Verse 6, "And the men of Gibeon sent to Joshua at the camp at Gilgal, saying, 'Do not forsake your servants; come up to us quickly, save us and help us, for all the kings of the Amorites who dwell in the mountains have gathered together against us.' So Joshua ascended from Gilgal, he and all the people of war with him, and all the mighty men of valour. And the Lord said to Joshua, 'Do not fear them, for I have delivered them into your hand; not a man of them shall stand before you.' Joshua therefore came upon them suddenly, having marched all night from Gilgal. So the Lord routed them before Israel, killed them with a great slaughter at Gibeon, chased them along the road that goes to Beth Horon, and struck them down as far as Azekah and Makkedah. And it happened, as they fled before Israel and were on the descent of Beth Horon, that the Lord cast down large hailstones from heaven on them as far as Azekah, and they died. There were more who died from the hailstones than the children of Israel killed with the sword.*

*Then Joshua spoke to the Lord in the day when the Lord delivered up the Amorites before the children of Israel, and he said in the sight of Israel: 'Sun, stand still over Gibeon; and Moon, in the Valley of Aijalon.' So the sun stood still, and the moon stopped, till the people had revenge upon their enemies. Is this not written in the Book of Jasher? So the sun stood still in the midst of heaven, and did not hasten to go down for about a whole day. And there has been no day like that, before it or after it, that the Lord heeded the voice of a man; for the Lord fought for Israel. Then Joshua returned, and all Israel with him, to the camp at Gilgal."*

So, we see here that the inhabitants of Gibeon were crafty and went and pretended to be ambassadors. In other words, they lied. In response the men of Israel did not ask counsel of the Lord and went and sworn oath. In other words, they took a vow not to harm these people. When they found out that they had made the vow under false pretences, they did not renounce the vow or declare it to be of any effect. They accepted the consequences of their foolish vow and said we have sworn to them by the Lord God of Israel and therefore we may not touch them. In other words, the vow, although given to a group of people whom God had told them to utterly destroy, and given under false pretences, were still binding. Notwithstanding all of this when Joshua goes to protect the Gibeonites, God performs what must be one of the greatest miracles in the Bible. The sun and moon stand still for a day, an occurrence which is apparently provable from astronomical analysis.

Centuries later in 2 Samuel 21:1-9 we read *"Now there was a famine in the days of David for three years, year after year; and David inquired of the Lord. And the Lord answered, 'It is because of Saul and his bloodthirsty house, because he killed the Gibeonites.' So the king called the Gibeonites and spoke to them. Now the Gibeonites were not of the children of Israel, but of the remnant of the Amorites; the children of Israel had sworn protection to them, but Saul had sought to kill them in his zeal for the children of Israel and Judah.*

*Therefore David said to the Gibeonites, 'What shall I do for you? And with what shall I make atonement, that you may bless the inheritance of the Lord?' And the Gibeonites said to him, 'We will have no silver or gold from Saul or from his house, nor shall you kill any man in Israel for us.' So, he said, 'Whatever you say, I will do for you.' Then they answered the king, 'As for the man who consumed us and plotted against us, that we should be destroyed from remaining in any of the territories of Israel, let seven men of his descendants be delivered to us, and we will hang them before the Lord in Gibeah of Saul, whom the Lord chose.'*

*And the king said, 'I will give them.' But the king spared Mephibosheth the son of Jonathan, the son of Saul, because of the Lord's oath that was between them, between David and Jonathan the son of Saul. So the king took Armoni and Mephibosheth, the two sons of Rizpah the daughter of Aiah, whom she bore to Saul, and the five sons of Michal the daughter of Saul, whom she brought up for Adriel the son of Barzillai the Meholathite; and he delivered them into the hands of the Gibeonites, and they hanged them on the hill before the Lord. So, they fell, all seven together, and were put to death in the days of harvest, in the first days, in the beginning of barley harvest."*

## **Famine**

Here we see that centuries after making the oath to the people of Gibeon, Saul killed many of the people of Gibeon in his zeal for God's commandments but ignoring the oath. As a consequence, famine comes upon the land because of Israel's sin and breaking his oath, even though it was an ungodly oath planned under false pretences centuries earlier. In order to obtain deliverance from the consequences of breaking the oath, it is necessary for the children of Israel to go to the Gibeonites and ask what

atonement must be made to the Gibeonites for the sin of Israel against Gibeon. The Gibeonites in turn demanded the death of seven of Saul's descendants, a seemingly harsh sentence, but one which clearly indicates the eternal consequences of a vow broken even if rashly given. Even more of a paradigm challenge in this passage is that we read elsewhere in Samuel that God says that He gave David Saul's wives. Therefore, we must conclude that Rizpah and the wife of Saul was in fact at the time this happened also now the wife of David, and we know that Michal, the daughter of Saul was in fact David's wife. The five sons that were referred to there are presumably the sons that were brought while Michal had been given to another man.

So, we see that David's two wives, two women who lived in his house, who had children, who were Saul's, were forced to give up those children to be put to death in order for David to honour the request of the Gibeonites. I would suggest to you, that is an enormous challenge for any man to actually give up his stepchildren to be put to death as the only way that he can satisfy the requirement of the men of Gibeon, for the fulfilment of the vow that they obtained under false pretences.

It is easy for us westerners with our current view of life to be absolutely horrified by this. But it is not for us to be horrified by the conduct of the man who calls man after his own heart in the Book of Acts and also in the book of 1 Samuel. We have to recognise that we do not understand how critical our words are. Words have eternal input. Words remain in existence long after we die. By the Word of God, the world was created and we are created in the likeness of image of man. We cannot take our words lightly. Jesus said that a 'yes' be 'yes' and a 'no' be 'no'. At the same time, while we could perhaps debate that a promise or a vow may not be as binding as a vow taken in the name of the Almighty God, there does not appear to be any Scripture to indicate this. In any event, the average marriage vow taken in modern Churches today, even before magistrates, is a vow that was supposedly taken before God. And therefore, it is just as binding as the vow between Israel and the Gibeonites.

In any event, even if it is not taken in the name of God or before God, James 5:12 *"But above all, My brethren, do not swear, either by heaven or by earth or with any other oath. But let your 'Yes' be 'Yes,' and your 'No,' 'No,' lest you fall into judgment."* And having considered these passages, we must begin to gain some appreciation for the level of judgment that faces us from making vows that we do not keep or for breaking vows. It is therefore clear that if one has made a vow, oath or sincere promise, at the very least, he is bound by it in the Sight of Heaven and will be held accountable for the consequences of the breaking of that vow. In other words, he will be judged. It is therefore important that we resolve any vows, oaths or promises which have been made and not kept, particularly where those have a significant detrimental impact on the party to whom they were made.

### **Vows, oaths and promises**

Proverbs 6:1-5 gives us some useful guidance with regards to surety-ship but it appears that the same principle would apply to any other vow, oath, or promise. *"My son, if you become surety for your friend, if you have shaken hands in pledge for a stranger, you are snared by the words of your mouth; you are taken by the words of your mouth. So do this, my son, and deliver yourself; for you have come into the hand of your friend: Go and humble yourself; plead with your friend. Give no sleep to your eyes, nor slumber to your eyelids. Deliver yourself like a gazelle from the hand of the hunter, and like a bird from the hand of the fowler."* You must go to the person to whom the vow, oath, or promise was made and ask them to release us. We are enjoined not to rest until the person has released us.

By implication of the story of the Gibeonites committed by Saul, we may have to make atonement or restitution before the other person will release us. There is also nothing to indicate that other than

humbling ourselves or pleading with the other party, we have any basis at all to expect them to release us, other than their good grace and their mercy towards us. This is absolutely critical in terms of discussing modern marriage and divorce. It presents immense dilemmas when a man or woman divorces with no scriptural basis and then marries another and takes vows in Church before God when they still have vows in place with their first wives. [inaudible 00:47:00] to renounce their vows. Either they need to be released by consent, or if the vow was broken by the other party then the vow has been nullified.

Again, we see that divorce is only permissible even if it is a contractual divorce based on marital vows taken before a pastor or a priest in Church or before a magistrate, or even just the reading of typical vows which say to honour and to cherish, from this day forward, until death do us part. Those vows have enormous significance in Heaven and to summarily put away one's wife or husband and to marry another contrary to those vows, is to bring great judgement upon us in the Sight of God.

As one considers these Scriptures and as one considers the example in the Book of Judges with regards to Benjamin, and as one considers this example with regards to Gibeon, we can only be appalled at the total lack of realisation in the world today of the importance of vows, oaths and promises. We can only look and wonder at the magnitude of the judgement that is likely to come upon men and women in this age. While on the subject of vows and oaths made under false pretences, the question may have risen in your mind with the previous passage of Scripture as to surely the Gibeonites lied, and therefore the promise and the vow that the Israelites made was of no consequence. This is a critical subject. It relates to the issue of women who lie about the virginity or lie about their widowhood. It relates to all sorts of things. But basically, the point that we need to realise is that if we believe a liar and act on a lie, we will be judged accordingly in the sense that we will be judged on the basis that we have sinned, even though we sinned as a consequence of somebody else's sin.

If you turn with me to 1 Kings 13, and the story here is about a prophet who goes from Judah to Bethel to speak to Jeroboam, the king. He rebukes him in the Sight of God, gives him a word from God, the king's hand turns leprose, the altar is split, the king repents and in verse 6 we see *"Then the king answered and said to the man of God, 'Please entreat the favour of the Lord your God, and pray for me, that my hand may be restored to me.' So, the man of God entreated the Lord, and the king's hand was restored to him, and became as before. Then the king said to the man of God, 'Come home with me and refresh yourself, and I will give you a reward.'*

*But the man of God said to the king, 'If you were to give me half your house, I would not go in with you; nor would I eat bread, nor drink water in this place. For so it was commanded me, by the Word of the Lord, saying, 'You shall not eat bread, nor drink water, nor return by the same way you came.' So, he went another way and did not return by the way he came to Bethel."*

Clearly, we see we are dealing with a prophet here, a man who hears the voice of God clearly, certainly on this particular occasion, and also a man who is at a level of prophetic calling with God that a true significant miracle is performed. The altar is split, and the king's hand is withheld from being drawn back. Verse 11, *"Now an old prophet dwelt in Bethel, and his sons came and told him all the works that the man of God had done that day in Bethel; they also told their father the words which he had spoken to the king. And their father said to them, 'Which way did he go?' For his sons had seen which way the man of God went who came from Judah. Then he said to his sons, 'Saddle the donkey for me.' So they saddled the donkey for him; and he rode on it, and went after the man of God, and found him sitting under an oak. Then he said to him, 'Are you the man of God who came from Judah?' And he said, 'I am.'*

*Then he said to him, 'Come home with me and eat bread.' And he said, 'I cannot return with you nor go in with you; neither can I eat bread nor drink water with you in this place. For I have been told by the Word of the Lord, 'You shall not eat bread nor drink water there, nor return by going the way you came.' He said to him, 'I too am a prophet as you are, and an angel spoke to me by the Word of the Lord, saying, 'Bring him back with you to your house, that he may eat bread and drink water.' But he lied to them."*

So, we read on, that he in fact listened, he believed the lie, he went back, and they were at table. Verse 21, *"And he cried out to the man of God who came from Judah, saying, 'Thus says the Lord: Because you have disobeyed the Word of the Lord, and have not kept the Commandment which the Lord your God commanded you, but you came back, ate bread, and drank water in the place of which the Lord said to you, 'Eat no bread and drink no water,' your corpse shall not come to the tomb of your fathers."* And in verse 24, we read that he was killed by a lion. The important point here without getting into the detail of how the prophet heard God very clearly on the one point, but then subsequently allowed his flesh to dictate to him, and decided to go back after he had been lied to in order to eat and drink, the key point here is that this prophet, this man of God believed a lie. God judged him because he had acted contrary to the Word of God in believing a lie. He was judged there and then and shortly afterwards he died. We have to understand that our words are binding before God. We have to understand that if somebody lies to us and we act on that lie, or we believe a lie, we will be judged accordingly.

## **Lies**

So there is absolutely no basis to think that if a woman tells a man that she is a virgin, but the token of virginity, her hymen, was ruptured as a result of a sports event, a surgical intervention or as a result of using tampons, and in fact she is lying, and in fact she did lose her virginity - she had a one-night stand or something - that does not, in any way release the man from the fact that he has committed adultery with that woman. He will pay the eternal price. We heard in the previous teaching that adulterers have no place in the Kingdom of Heaven. It cannot be clearer than that. We cannot afford the luxury in the area of marriage of trusting somebody who may be lying to us.

The same applies to a woman who says that she is a widow, when in fact her husband is alive. Even if she truly believes she is a widow, and somebody has lied to her to the effect that her husband is dead, the same applies to a woman who has got divorced and lies, or says that God told her to get divorced. Whether she was confused, whether she was deceived by lying spirits, whether she was laid astray by a pastor who gave her a false interpretation of Scripture or whether it is just an outright lie and she knows well that God did not permit her to divorce, it does not matter. The man who marries her is committing adultery. In the same way, in marriage, promises made are binding. We have to understand that God's ways are not our ways. They are much higher than our ways. The standard of righteousness, holiness and sanctification that He requires of us are far in excess of those which you considered reasonable and acceptable in the age in which we live.

The age in which we live is an age where righteousness and right-standing with God, and where the principles of a godly life are to all intents and purposes totally ignored. Any basis that we have of current social conducts certainly in the Western Eurocentric world is completely defiled. It is completely devoid of validity in the area that we are talking about at the moment, in fact, in the whole area of marriage. Accordingly, if we are to be found pleasing before God, if we are to be found to be faithful servants at the end of our lives, we have to revisit what we believe in the area of vows as well as in the area of marriage.

Father, in the name of Jesus, I bring before you this teaching in the name of Jesus. I ask you to blow away anything that I have uttered which is not according to Your Word and according to Your will in Jesus' name. But I ask too, that which has been spoken, which is according to Your Word and according to Your Will and by Your Spirit will find root in the hearts of those who hear it and will bear much fruit, in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you in Jesus' name. Amen.

### **03 15 Marriage Matters for Men**

This teaching is a continuation of this series on marriage, and it is entitled '*Marriage Matters for Men.*' The teaching is preceded by the prayers and worship songs, music that was played prior to the teaching, which continues for about half an hour to provide some spiritual context to the message. The message begins about two-thirds of the way through the first side of the tape. [00:31:20]

This teaching is a continuation of this series on marriage and it is entitled '*Marriage Matters for Men.*' In the series so far, we have addressed a wide range of subjects concerning marriage, and I felt impressed. Now to address some matters specifically relating to the role of men in marriage, in presenting this teaching, all that is presented is based solidly on Scripture. It is important to understand that the majority of what is contained in this teaching differs dramatically from current social practice. It is important to understand that the fact that this difference exists, does not mean that God is mistaken in what He intended. And I would urge you to listen to this teaching with particular emphasis to seeing the diagnosis or factors which give rise to many problems in marriage today, and to see that they result again as so much in these teachings from the departure, from the principles that God laid down.

Frequently, in discussing these matters, I find that people seem to think that somehow God was confused, and that God's way of doing things is no longer applicable in the current age. However, such people seem to completely ignore the fact that more than 60% of Christians marriages are ending in divorce. Adultery and fornication in the world today is absolutely appalling and widespread to the extent that the vast majority of people on this Earth today are adulterers and fornicators in the Sight of God. And that even within the Church as a consequence of the wrong Doctrines with regards to virginity and divorce, there are numerous believers who are in fact adulterers in the Sight of God, and who are therefore appointed for a part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone.

#### **Age of men for marriage**

I would like to talk first of all about the age at which men should marry. We have had in a previous teaching a fairly lengthy discussion about the fact that God in fact appointed for women to marry at puberty, at the age of 12 and a half to 13 or 14. We have seen that that has a significant bearing on a variety of sectors in marriage. However, when we look at men, we find much greater diversity. We do not find the concept of the [inaudible 00:34:10] virgin, young girl who is generally married in Scripture shortly after she becomes sexually aware and physically ready for marriage.

Consider for example in Genesis 25:1, Abraham took a concubine by the name of Keturah. At that stage, we know that Abraham was well over 100 years old. And he subsequently took several concubines and fathered a significant number of children by those concubines. It came to my attention recently that if we take the Word of God, literally, and we recognise that man was created in the



likeness of image and image of God, Ron White and Jonathan Grave encountered archaeological evidence which clearly suggest that men were created this way, and that man today is a very second-rate replica of the way God created man 6000 years ago. We see in fact through the passages of Genesis how the lifespan of men deteriorated or reduced rapidly after the fall of man as sin got a deeper and deeper hold on their lives.

Therefore, for Abraham, he died at the age of 175, and to take additional wives when he was in his 100's was nothing extraordinary. Whereas today, for anybody to live even to an age of 100 is quite unusual. So, we do see there that men in the past have married at a greater age. Contrast this with King Joash in 2 Chronicles 24:1-3, *"Joash was seven years old when he became king, and he reigned forty years in Jerusalem. His mother's name was Zibiah of Beersheba. Joash did what was right in the sight of the Lord all the days of Jehoiada, the priest. And Jehoiada took two wives for him, and he had sons and daughters."* The context of those verses seems to suggest that the wives were taken soon after he became king, but that is not necessarily the case. I certainly would not like to suggest categorically that there is a scriptural precedent for a man to marry at the age of seven, although there is some [inaudible 00:36:52] Talmudic teaching which suggests that such a thing is perhaps possible.

If we contrast this with the likes of Moses who fled into the wilderness from Pharaoh at the age of 40 and met Zipporah and married her, and we look at a few other Scriptures; Genesis 25:20, *"Isaac was forty years old when he took Rebekah as wife, the daughter of Bethuel the Syrian of Padan Aram, the sister of Laban the Syrian."* Genesis 26:34, *"When Esau was forty years old, he took as wives, Judith the daughter of Beeri the Hittite, and Basemath the daughter of Elon the Hittite."* So, we see a number of instances of men at the age of 40 taking their first wife. Bear in mind again that Moses lived to over 100 years old and Isaac too, I believe, lived to over 100 years old. So, in terms of relative lifespan, they were not as old at 40 as men today are.

If we look elsewhere in Scripture, we find that David was probably in his 50's or 60's when he committed adultery with Bathsheba and took her as his wife. He was even older when the young virgin was brought in to keep him warm. On the other hand, when he took Maachah as wife, David was probably no older than about age 18 or 20 years old, or maybe perhaps a few years older. So, there is significant scriptural basis to indicate that men marry at a very wide spread of ages. If we look at Genesis 11:10-27, *"The genealogy of Shem: Shem was one hundred years old, and Begot Arphaxad two years after the flood. Arphaxad lived thirty-five years, and begot Salah. Salah lived thirty years, and begot Eber."* So, we see three instances, therefore we know that Shem was married before the flood, but we see that Arphaxad was married not later than 34 years to have a child when he was 35. Salah was married not older than 29 years to have a child at 30. So, we see increasingly the age of marriage in those passage is more in the vicinity of 30. *"Reu lived thirty-two years, and Begot Serug. Serug lived thirty years, and begot Nahor. Nahor lived twenty-nine years, and Begot Terah."* And so we see a progressive reduction in the age of men at marriage.

At the same time, it is important to note that there are significant number of Scriptures which indicate that a man becomes of age as an adult effectively at age 20. This contrasts with the man becoming spiritually independent and also having certain other attributes of adulthood, also a sign to puberty which corresponds to the Jewish [inaudible 00:40:41] in the case of girls. But in terms of males playing a material role in society, we find various Scriptures which indicate that this first takes place at age 20. Exodus 38:25-26, *"And the silver from those who were numbered of the congregation was one hundred talents and one thousand seven hundred and seventy-five shekels, according to the shekel of the sanctuary: a bekah for each man (that is, half a shekel, according to the shekel of the sanctuary), for everyone included in the numbering from twenty years old and above, for six hundred and three*

*thousand, five hundred and fifty men.*" That relates to the offering, the half shekel offering which was used as a means of determining the number of adult men, men who could go to war in Israel.

We see again in Numbers 1:1-3, *"Now the Lord spoke to Moses in the Wilderness of Sinai, in the tabernacle of meeting, on the first day of the second month, in the second year after they had come out of the land of Egypt, saying: 'Take a census of all the congregation of the children of Israel, by their families, by their fathers' houses, according to the number of names, every male individually, from twenty years old and above—all who are able to go to war in Israel. You and Aaron shall number them by their armies.'"* Again, in Numbers 14:29, we see referenced, *"from twenty years old and above"* and 31 says, *"but your little ones, whom you said would be victims, I will bring in, and they shall know the land which you have despised."*

There we see that the men who were judged as a result of Israel's disobedience and refusal to go into the promised land were regarded as those twenty years old and above, and the men under the age of twenty are classed as *'little ones.'* So, the men under the age of twenty actually came into the promised land. It is important to recognise that there is a fairly widespread indications in our society today that girls who are 14 now are a good deal more mature emotionally and are more responsible than boys quite a few years older than them. So, we see that God has actually created man and woman differently in that context as well that girls mature earlier from a point of view of being ready to marry and to raise a family from the age of about 13, whereas men mature later and are really only equipped to play a responsible role in society in the Sight of God at the age of 20.

The implication of that is that before a man reaches the age of 20, it is debatable whether he is mature enough and responsible enough to take a wife and to provide the necessary guidance to her. And there, we see a minimum age gap seemingly envisaged by God between husband and wife of about 7, to 7 and a half years. This gap ensures that the husband is sufficiently mature and sufficiently older than his young wife, that she should have no difficulty in accepting him as her head and looking up to him, reverencing him and submitting to him as Scripture requires. I think there can be little doubt if we consider this, and certainly as I prayed about this over the previous few years, it has become increasingly apparent to me that the current social practice which generally sees both husband and wife in their early 20's, with little or no age gap between them, and the wife every bit as worldly and experienced as her husband, creates a recipe for disaster.

We have to ask ourselves, how can we realistically expect a wife in such a situation to respect her husband and reverence him? How can we expect him to command her respect? And I do not say command in an authoritarian way; I say command in the sense of having the stature in her eyes that she is well able to respect him.

### **Worldly principles to marriage**

And then we see on top of that, that the Church perverts the Word of God further by applying worldly principles to marriage counselling directed in making this ungodly recipe work in practice. We have to recognise that the reason that there is so much divorce in the Body of Christ today is because what the Church is teaching is fundamentally unsound, and fundamentally unscriptural. If only we were to revert to these practices. I am under no illusion that it would take some considerable time for the paradigm shift that is implicit and inherent in this teaching to be put into practice. I have absolutely no doubt we would see the level of divorce in the Body of Christ reduce steadily in the years to come. I have no doubt that God requires the Body of Christ to return to his practice of marriage and to put these principles into practice in the age that is at hand.

If we look at another passage of Scripture, Numbers 4:1-3, *"Then the Lord spoke to Moses and Aaron, saying: 'Take a census of the sons of Kohath from among the children of Levi, by their families, by their fathers' house, from thirty years old and above, even to fifty years old, all who enter the service to do the work in the tabernacle of meeting.'"* Now we are looking at the priests. We are looking at those that were set apart to serve God. What is interesting about that is we see that they commenced officiation in the Temple or the Tabernacle at the age of 30, and they ceased at the age of 50. There are a couple of [inaudible 00:46:59].

Jesus was about 12 when he commenced his father's business. If we turn to Luke 2:41-50, and I will just pick up a couple of verses. Verse 42, *"And when He (Jesus) was twelve years old, they went up to Jerusalem according to the custom of the feast."* This is the situation where Jesus lingers behind in Jerusalem and then after three days Mary and Joseph discovered He is not with them. They return and they find him in the temple. Now, verse 46, *"Now, so it was that after three days they found Him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the teachers, both listening to them and asking them questions. And all who heard Him were astonished at His understanding and answers. So, when they saw Him, they were amazed; and His mother said to Him, 'Son, why have You done this to us? Look, Your father and I have sought You anxiously.' And He said to them, 'Why did you seek Me? Did you not know that I must be about My Father's business?'"*

### **Sons taking over from their fathers**

Now, it is important that we understand that Jesus was not being precocious or rebellious, yet at the age of 12 and a half or so, at the age of puberty, a child reaches the age of spiritual maturity, and maturity in certain other areas. At the age of 12 and a half, 13, a boy should start to be trained up about his father's business. His childhood is over, and at that age, he is beginning to be prepared to assume a role in his father's business. The key point as far as Jesus was concerned was that he had an earthly father in the form of Joseph and he was no doubt already at that stage being trained up as a carpenter to take over his father's businesses as his father's firstborn son in the sight of the world. But at the same time, he was also being prepared by the Spirit to take over his heavenly Father's business on Earth and to do what he had come to do. It was customary and I would almost suggest to you, almost unheard of, for the son not to work in the father's business, not to take over the running of the father's farm or the carpentry shop, or whatever form of business the father was in. And so, Jesus became a carpenter like Joseph, and as the Carpenter of Nazareth.

This is not directly evident from Scripture, but there are teachings to this effect, which are apparently based on sound research that it was customary for the son to assume responsibility for the day-to-day running of the father's business at the age of 30. This ties in to the age at which the priests became active in the temple, and since Jesus had come to introduce the new priesthood, He could only start to appreciate being in the office at the age of 30. There is apparently a broader principle, and that is that at the age of 30, it was fairly customary in Jesus' day for the older son to assume the responsibility for the day-to-day running of the father's business.

If you think about that, if the father had married at about the age of 20, that would mean that the father would be about the age of 50 to 60 years old when the son started to take over the business and accepted responsibility. Given that the lifespan of men by the time Jesus was here, it was probably not that much different from today. We can see that the age of 50 to 60 for a man to hand over his business to his son seems imminently practical. The father is still young enough to mentor, coach and guide the son in the day-to-day running of the business, and the son is old enough and responsible enough to be able to run the business to a fairly large extent without undue supervision.

At this age, the father is at a point where his level of accumulated wisdom through his life is such that he can now afford to spend more time contributing to the running of his community. We read repeated references in Scripture to the elders in the gate, and it seems reasonable to conclude that the elder in the gate is quite clearly the man in his 50 to 60 years onwards, whose eldest son has now assumed responsibility for the running of the business. His father is now still active enough to sit in the gate with the other elders of the city to deliberate over matters of social action, corporate decision-making with regards to infrastructure development and judgement with regards to behaviour of criminals, etc. Generally, to take an active role based on his accumulated wisdom over the years of his life, in ordering the affairs of society and the affairs of his family, bearing in mind that by the time a man has reached the age of 50 to 60, it is likely that his father in turn has passed on and will pass on fairly shortly. Therefore, the overall mantle of patriarch passes from the father or the grandfather if you like, just for the sake of consistency, to the father at the time that the son is able to assume the responsibility for the running of the family business, and to a degree consequently, the running of other family affairs.

We see a logical progression where the grandfather is perhaps the patriarch and the overall overseer of the family. The father is the overseer of the business, and the son is the person who actually runs the business. So, there is a logical progressive handover of knowledge, wisdom and experience from generation to generation, which ensures firstly that the family is well-ordered and conducts its affairs in a responsible fashion. Secondly, that the business is well-ordered and well-run. Thirdly, that the affairs of the community are well-ordered and well-run. It avoids a situation in which under-experienced and under-qualified individuals find themselves in positions of responsibility at ages where they are not equipped for it, and it also avoids a situation in which there is a continuous repetition of the mistakes of the previous generation.

### **Men making a living**

The current situation where, at the age of 20, 22 or 24, a man marries, moves out of his parents' house and then sets up house on his own, leaves him in a situation where he finds himself making all sorts of mistakes that his father and grandfather before him, no doubt made as well. And these things have a tendency to repeat themselves down the bloodline. Because of the current perverted social mindset which sees it as right that a young man and a young woman should be completely autonomous, we then get this tragic situation where the young man resents his father's attempts to advise him and guide him. He goes on and squanders immense energy and resources making unnecessary mistakes and struggling to build a family and build a house without the parental guidance that God intended him to have.

We see the same principle contained in our relationship with the Lord. He does not expect us to battle and struggle and do things on our own. He is there for us and He guides us. The Word of God refers to in Scripture, to young men, to children and to old men, and the three phases that have been evident in what I have just said are very apparent in that. So, God the Father and the Son treat us as children in the first period of time after we come to salvation. They expect us to behave responsibly as young men, to fight in the war thereafter, and finally they expect us to be elders, wise men and counsellors to those who are coming after us.

So, just to sum up, based on what has been said so far, it is apparent that the Lord's intention is that a man should grow up in his father's house, and that from about the age of 12, he should become active in the family business, learning the business and developing the necessary skills. At about the age of 20, maybe a little bit earlier in certain circumstances, but generally possibly a little bit later, if

the son has no inclination to marry, he would marry. In the case of the firstborn son, that son would assume responsibility for the day-to-day running of the family business at about the age of 30, and at about the age of 50 to 60, assuming he married at about age 20.

If his first son was born when he was between 20 and 30, that man would retire from the running of the family business and become an elder of his community involved in the day-to-day running of the community, judging disputes, etc., as an elder in the gate. We have Scriptures which refer to the wisdom of men with gray hair. So, the implication is clearly that a girl of about 12 to 14 marries a man of about 20, who is more mature, who is established in his father's business, and is therefore able to teach his wife at home what the Scripture requires. She is then able to, without difficulty, submit to him because it is easy for her to look up to him. He is a man who has a career and responsibility and he has an income.

A young man of 20, who is being groomed by his father since puberty will be capable and will be a responsible man able to look after a family. In most generations, he would also be conscripted into the army and have undergone military training, thus further maturing him. Typically, a man is considered old enough for military service from about the age of 16 to 18 in many countries, although as we have seen a brief while ago in Exodus, that the Scripture indicates that a man is only ready to go to war at the age of 20. A man who is at that age, who has gone through basic military training, who is being prepared for some years for those responsibilities will be well equipped to lay down his life physically and spiritually for his wife and family and to be the prophet, priest, and king in his household. Bearing in mind again, that he is not required to do that at the age of 20 on his own, because he is within an extended family setup. He is subject to his father, who in turn, is subject to the grandfather.

And as much as many people might find it trite or offensive to make reference to the movie, *'The Godfather'* and other movies of that ilk, it is important that we recognise that even in the last century, there was plenty of remaining evidence of this type of patriarchal extended family setup in which the grandfather, the father, the son and the children all lived within an extended community and all had a role to play in the activities of the family. There is a reason for that. There is a reason why those families portrayed in movies like *'The Godfather'*, were so strong.

They were running their families according to God's pattern. They may have been doing nothing else, but according to God's pattern, they may have been murdering, killing, and destroying, dealing in drugs and also sorts of things. Their family structure was according to God's pattern and it was immensely strong, immensely robust, an immensely sustainable family structure and that is why in the Western Church, Satan has so energetically set about destroying it, lying to us and convincing us that it is unjust and unwarranted interference in the lives of the young man in his twenties.

It is also important to recognise that when this young man marries his wife of 12, 13, 14 years old, that young girl is not alone and that young man is not alone in caring for his young wife. She is brought into an extended family where her mother-in-law and other family members will assist her to adapt to married life. They will probably take care of many of the chores in the first year, which Scripture lays down for the initiation of marriage. If we read Deuteronomy 24:5, *"When a man has taken a new wife, he shall not go out to war or be charged with any business; he shall be free at home one year and bring happiness to his wife whom he has taken."* And as it had been touched on in a number of the previous teachings, that one verse of Scripture contains an immensely powerful recipe for the success of marriage.

A man who is able to devote considerable attention to his new wife for the first year of his life, and that means intense intimacy and intense lovemaking on a regular basis, by the end of that year, the magnitude of the One Flesh Bond between that man and woman would be so great, that they truly will be one flesh. She truly will be bone of his bone, and flesh of his flesh. This level of spiritual communication between them will be such that even if they are separated by hundreds of thousands of miles, they will be able to communicate by their spirits as though they were in the same room. Under those circumstances, their prayer life becomes commendably powerful and an enormous threat to the kingdom of Satan. The possibility of adultery and treachery under those situations becomes almost beyond the bounds of comprehension because the intensity of the love, the intensity of the bond is such that neither of them would even consider some form of disloyalty to be other.

And again, we have to understand these principles to understand why divorce is such an extreme event, according to Scripture, and why divorce is an absolute last resort after the most appalling persistent treachery, particularly under the New Covenant. And conversely, we need to understand these principles to understand why God, and how God created marriage to work. If we do not believe that God created marriage to work, we will continue going down this road of destruction which the Church is hell bent on at the moment. If we recognise these principles, if we turn back from our deception and the road to destruction that the Church insists on following, and we look at these principles and we apply them and stop making excuses as to why we do not think God knew what He was doing when He wrote Deuteronomy 24:5. If we do that, if we turn around, we will see miraculous results. There can be no doubt that if we adjust our behaviour to accommodate this, and I am not saying that it will be easy, but I am certain it can be done. We will see marriages which are absolutely robust and sustainable.

### **Young girls marrying**

Recognise also that within the dispensation that I have been talking about, the mother-in-law and the grandmother-in-law would educate the young girl with regards to housekeeping and the raising of children. And recently, somebody offered the objection to me that such a young girl would be undereducated, and therefore this would result in the breakdown of society. The answer to that is quite simple that even in today's age, in the year 2000, there is absolutely no reason why a man's mother cannot help to look after any children that may come if her son marries a girl in her teens or help to look after the children while that new wife completes her education even if she goes to university. It is a major paradigm shift. It requires major sacrifice on the part of the mother, and on the part of the grandmother if she is still around and alive, but the benefits to that family and to the Kingdom of God will be beyond anything that we can comprehend right now.

So, in the same way that we saw the progressive pattern of handover of responsibility from grandfather to father to son, we see a similar principle inherent in the pattern for marriage and the pattern for the young girl. While she is in her teens, she is still a young girl. She is still maturing, she is still forming her character. She can be taught about the family's way of doing things, she can be helped to adapt to her husband and everything that goes with it. As she comes into her twenties, she becomes more and more into the role of a mother and helpmeet in the family. As she comes into her old age, she will play a greater and greater role in looking after the children.

So, we again see a situation in which the young wife in her teens and twenties is not subject to the same pressures of standing on her own feet, making all her own mistakes. She has a grandmother-in-law, and her mother-in-law to assist her and to manage many of the affairs of the household. As per Proverbs 31 says, where we saw so dramatically the true role of a wife as a helpmeet, as somebody

who brings honour to her husband, and we see now that she is not required to do that and figure that out on her own. She has her mother-in-law and her grandmother-in-law to help her and to look after the children. The age difference again provides a useful stagger in terms of the handing over of responsibility from grandmother, to mother, to daughter-in-law.

If we understand these principles, it is now much easier to understand why in the Western World, there is so much conflict between mother-in-law and daughter-in-law, where men marry women their own age, and the mother-in-law still instinctively has the need to coach and develop her daughter-in-law to be the wife her son needs. On the other hand, the young wife has possibly been to university, left home and lived on her own and is highly dependent, resents to this intrusion and instead she struggles on her own to learn the skills of child-rearing and running a family as well as attempting to be all things to her husband. In this process she frequently makes numerous mistakes and becomes lonely and bitter towards her husband who is unable to meet all the roles that she wants him to meet, wherein actual fact, a whole bunch of those roles should in actual fact be fulfilled by her mother-in-law, her grandmother-in-law, perhaps her father-in-law, and her grandfather-in-law; where an extended family would take immense pressure off both the young wife and the young husband.

If we return for a moment to the Ephesians 5 parallel, Ephesians 5:30-32, which has been the cornerstone Scripture of this series, we see again, Jesus Christ is the pattern for men. We have seen that repeatedly throughout this teaching. It is important to recognise that Scripture says that we love Him because He first loved us. 1 John 4:19, *"We love Him because He first loved us."* In the context of marriage, this means that it is the prerogative and the responsibility of the husband to seek a wife, not for the woman to seek a husband. It also means that men are created to seek out a wife. In the context of the teaching on covering, we also see that men are required to provide a covering to any believing woman who requires one. Therefore it is to be expected that men will be attracted to any and all unmarried women. They are programmed by God to seek to protect and cover women. The fact that Satan as like so much out in this series corrupted God's principles by replacing this desire to protect with lust, does not alter the fact that men are programmed in this way. It is also notable that God, the Father constantly seeks those who are ready to be betrothed or married to Jesus, and He sends His Angels to assist in bringing those people into the Kingdom.

### **Responsibilities**

It is clearly the responsibility of the father of the young man to identify a suitable bride and to negotiate with the bride's father to bring her into the family. It is not for the young man to go out, led by his youthful desires, lust, misconceptions and lack of wisdom to go and seek a wife for himself. It is the father's responsibility to identify prayerfully the young woman that is most appropriate for his son, and to negotiate with that young woman's father. It is also notable that we, the Bride of Christ are instructed to preach the Gospel to all the world and to bring further brides to be married to our husband, Jesus Christ. The implication is that any godly woman who has a godly husband is to tell other single women about her husband, that they may too receive his covering. This is paradigm wrenching stuff. It is Scripture. We have to recognise God did not intend women to be single beyond the age at which they are eligible to be married. We have to recognise that God clearly did not intend them to suffer in the way that they suffer in this age, to end up either unmarried and full of shame, or in a situation in which they have married unbelievers, made terrible mistakes or been used and abused by men who do not have the right scriptural background and basis to care for them, love them and cherish them the way the Word of God requires.

A further thought, in weighing up what has just been said, remember Proverbs 31:3, which we have seen sets a very robust standard in terms of the acceptable conduct of a wife and the role that a wife should play starts off in verse 3 by saying, *"Do not give your strength to women, nor your ways to that which destroys kings."* And elsewhere Scripture tells kings not to multiply wives. So, that needs to be taken into account. There is clearly an injunction there which says that a man should not just similarly go out and take more than one wife. And this is quite clear that it is God's will, and that He is prepared for it and He has the necessary family infrastructure behind them to ensure that this will work. It's also important to recognise that practical indications are that girls become highly sexually aware of puberty, and that boys only become sexually aware some years later, other than the degree of latent curiosity resulting from discussion, peer pressure and the social pressures of the world we live in. But oppressing physical need for sexual fulfilment generally only manifests in boys between the age of about 16 to 20. Others can go to the age of 30 or 40 without any particular pressing need to marry. Again, this supports the fact that God has created man and woman from the beginning to be different in this area.

### **Co-residing**

Another point which arises with regard to this discussion and which can cause a bit of confusion; Ephesians 5:31 quoting Genesis 2:24 which is quoted also in Matthew 5, Matthew 19, Mark 10 *"For this*

*reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife and the two shall become one flesh."* The portion of the verse, a man shall leave his father and mother has been used doctrinally to indicate a basis that man and woman should establish their own home independent of the parents of either family. This does not correlate. It is not congruent with the pattern that Jesus has given us with regards to marriage where He has clearly spelt out that at the end of the age, we will be taken. The Bride of Christ will be taken to his Father's house. He says clearly that in his Father's house there, are many rooms or many mansions. Likewise, Jesus sits at the right hand of the Father.

In other words, Jesus who is engaged in the Father's business is directly dwelling in proximity to the Father. It seems to me on one level, that one should recognise that I am not necessarily advocating in this teaching and I do not think that the Bible indicates that the various family members should all co-reside in the same house. I think what it does indicate is that they should dwell in reasonably close proximity to each other. Clearly, in the simplest form in an agrarian economy, they can build additional dwellings on the same property and all participate in the running of the family farm. But obviously a time will come when members of the family have to move out and leave. But certainly it is not the case that they must all dwell in one massive house with 30 or 40 bedrooms to accommodate the whole family. That is not implied, and I do not think by the passage of Scripture which says, *"In my father's house are many mansions."* But I think we do need to recognise that even if logistically, the family members cannot live physically on the same piece of land, even if it in different physical houses, they should seek wherever possible to dwell close together.

And really the point that is made in this teaching has less to do with physical co-residence or co-existence and more to do with spiritual, ethical as well as moral guidance and roles and responsibilities within the family. In other words, what I am saying, it is still possible for the grandparents to play an active role in bringing up the grandchildren even if they live a few blocks away from the younger generation, and conversely in a similar situation. It is possible for the younger generation to take care of elderly parents, although it does seem reasonable to suggest that an age and stage does arrive where it is preferable in that case for them to co-reside on the same property.



Clearly that logistical problem is a challenge in our current society, but that is not fundamental issue as I see; the key point is to recognise that there is the spiritual, moral, ethical division of labour, roles and responsibilities intended in how we conduct our lives and therefore to understand that if there is a compromise that we handle it accordingly. The other point of a man shall leave his father and his mother, in terms of leaving physically, packing his bags and going somewhere else, also does not totally correlate with the concept of us all dwelling with Jesus and the Father in Heaven. It seems to me that since we have seen very clearly that the whole concept of Genesis 2:24 is in fact a spiritual, rather than a physical concept, and that the leaving here, is a spiritual leaving in the sense for the man by cleaving to his wife, creates a new house.

It is certainly an inheritance of the father's bloodline, but it is a new house and therefore in some mysterious way he leaves, it seems the spiritual covering of his father's house, and he creates his own covering in some fashion. I have to be quite honest and say that I do not have all the answers in this particular area, but it is certainly I do not think indicates any basis to discount the various ages of development and maturity of men and women, the different roles of grandparents, parents and children and grandchildren as they have been set out in this teaching.

### **Avoiding broken marriages**

Again, particularly in this area, we are dealing with something which cannot be slavishly implemented in the current era, but I strongly believe something that God is challenging us to really revisit and sort out our thinking in a serious fashion. The way God intended men and women to live together in family life and in business, to raise children, is dramatically different from the lifestyles that we live and practice in the world today. I would submit to you that as much as you may immediately suggest that it is completely beyond the bounds of possibility that people could live in this fashion today, if you are to think about it and pray about it, you would find that it is a lot more possible than you may realise. It will require serious Holy Spirit led adjustment in the way you and the other members of your extended family think.

I would suggest to you that it is not beyond the bounds of possibility to move aggressively back towards a situation where for generations, a resident in one residential compound and the grandparents, parents, young couple and their children live together in harmony and start to fulfil the different functions that had been described in this teaching as with all the relatively controversial matters that have been raised in this series. The objective is not to be controversial for the sake of controversial. It is to make the point that if we are truly concerned about the levels of divorce, fornication, and adultery, and if we truly opt seeking to prepare a spotless bride for the return of the Lord Jesus Christ, we need to get to the bottom of why marriage is such a mess in this age. If the reason that marriage is such a mess in this age require significant logistical, sociological, and other adjustments in the way we view ourselves, then so be it. We must do that, we must look to accept the responsibilities that God intended us to have. We must look to perform the roles and the functions which God intended us to perform.

### **God's way**

Men must have the wisdom and the humility to recognise that their fathers and grandfathers have a role to play in guiding them, and that they have particular responsibility with regards to their children and grandchildren. Conversely, women must recognise that their responsibilities and the domestic infrastructure and social structure in terms of which they are expected to operate is dramatically different to what they have grown up believing. We have to put aside the fairytales and we need to

return to Scripture. We need to seek to know God's will in our lives, and we need to seek above all things godly marriages which are robust, and which cannot be broken by anything until the Church and until the Body of Christ learns to live together in marriage and in harmony. We cannot reasonably expect the Church to live with the Lord Jesus Christ in harmony. We have to recognise that His ways are far higher than our ways, His thoughts are far higher than our thoughts, and His way is the best way.

If we are not living our lives according to God's way, it is time that we change it. It is time that we revert to the principles that God set out from the beginning, which are programmed into us spiritually, emotionally, physically, mentally and in every other way. It is time we stop fighting against God. It is time we stop forcing people to do things that they were never equipped by God to do. It is time we stop forcing young couples in their twenties to stand on their own feet, build careers, and everything else with the enormous tension and stress that comes with that. And at the same time, it is time that we stop forcing people in their sixties and seventies out of society and putting them into old age homes which are really no better than asylums, for those people to decay and die out of the way of the younger generation. That is not the way God intended it to be. Those people were intended to be useful and constructive in their families right to the day of their death. They were intended to be cared for by their families right to the day of their death, and it is an abomination in the Sight of God the way we treat elderly people. We need to reassess our whole attitude to how men manage their marriages, manage their lives, and manage their affairs. It is time to return to God's way of doing things.

There is a tendency in our society today to hold that the Bible treats women as second-rate citizens and suggest that they are incapable. That seems to be behind a lot of the so-called women's liberation movement. However, we have already seen in a previous teaching and a fairly detailed analysis of Proverbs 31, that the woman described in Proverbs 31 is a highly capable, highly effective and efficient woman. She runs the affairs of her household, she purchases land, she engages in commerce, she supervises the working of the land and she is highly profitable. It is also said further that she brings credits to her husband to such an extent that he is highly regarded in the gate of the city. In other words, he is regarded as an elder of repute and is regarded as a man whose opinions are a substance which counts. We saw that also in the context of the contrast between the Scripture which says that a woman tears her house down, verses of Proverbs 31 *"Wife who clearly builds her house up, builds her husband up, and was a major asset in the community."*

Simple observation of countries which have not been unduly subject to the Western feminist ethic, we find that throughout Africa and Middle Eastern countries that women have considerable responsibility in the affairs of the family. They may not be out come about in the community consorting with other men and moving around, but they are attending to the affairs of their family and their business. We read in Genesis, God created woman to be a helper to man. In other words, to be a helper to her husband. And it seems very clear from Scripture that this is basically what we see in Proverbs 31. We see a strong woman who is part of her husband's house, a vital and necessary part of her husband's house. In fact, it is apparent from Proverbs 31 that her husband could not possibly engage in all the commerce and activities that are attributed to his wife over and above the other activities and commerce and business of state and welfare, etc., he might be engaged in.

### **The head of the house**

So, to say that just because a woman is part of her husband's house and builds her husband's house, she is somehow second-rate, completely misses the point of marriage. We have seen in previous

teachings the extent to which a woman becomes one flesh, one body with her husband. This identity is spiritually caught up with that of her husband. If she supports her husband in such a way that he succeeds, then she will succeed. She will bear the fruit of her encouragement, her help and assistance. We have also seen the principle that only one man can lead a military unit. If there are two people trying to command the same military unit, it will fall into disarray. If the subordinates in a regiment do not submit to the authority, the command of the officer commanding that regiment will be defeated in battle. It is not a question of saying that the others are in some way inferior beings to the man in command, it is simply that the man in command is the man who has been put in command, and has presumably been put in command because of a variety of considerations that he is a good leader, etc. But the reality is that, for example, a sergeant major is an absolutely vital role player in any military unit. A military unit is only as good as its weakest link. So, a good regiment comprises good men. A good family comprises good women and children.

But at the end of the day, somebody has to be at the head, somebody has to lead, somebody has to take the final decisions. God is not saying that there is anything inferior about woman. He is just saying that He created and crafted women to perform a different role to the role He created men to play. In the same way that when we read in Scripture that the Father is the head of Jesus Christ, there is no implication that Jesus is in some way inferior to the Father simply because He subordinates His will to the Will of the Father. It is a perversion to suggest otherwise.

Another aspect which is important in this context of marriage matters for me, Exodus 21:1-3, *"Now these are the judgments which you shall set before them: If you buy a Hebrew servant, he shall serve six years; and in the seventh, he shall go out free and pay nothing. If he comes in by himself, he shall go out by himself; if he comes in married, then his wife shall go out with him."* The implication here is quite clear. A man who is married should work with his wife and his wife should work with him. The application of the Scripture as I see it is such that it was not God's intention for women to go and work for one employer and men to work for another employer. If a man came to work, if ignore the context of slave and we simply regard them as employees, if a man came to work for one employer, his wife has come to work with him.

### **Working together**

If we look also at Exodus 21:7-11, *"And if a man sells his daughter to be a female slave, she shall not go out as the male slaves do. If she does not please her master, who has betrothed her to himself, then he shall let her be redeemed. He shall have no right to sell her to a foreign people, since he has dealt deceitfully with her. And if he has betrothed her to his son, he shall deal with her according to the custom of daughters. If he takes another wife, he shall not diminish her food, her clothing, and her marriage rights. And if he does not do these three for her, then she shall go out free, without paying money."*

The implication here is that clearly a single woman who came to work for an employer expects her to get married to that man. It is apparently dealing deceitfully if she comes to work for him and he betroths her, and the implication is that it is a reasonable expectation that he should betroth her even to himself or to his wife and his son and they marry her. A man is also enjoined to treat her like a daughter. In other words, there is no shame attached to such a woman being married to her employer or to her employer's son. It is a reasonable expectation that a woman who comes to be employed and is single is married to either her employer or to one of his sons, and that she should be accorded the same privileges as a daughter in that household. This is not some second-rate abuse. It is recognising that women have a need for a covering and her sexual needs, and that a man who is presented with

a woman in his household will find himself by the nature of the way God created him desiring to provide a covering to her.

The fact that modern society does not see this way does not alter the fact that this is the way God intended it. So, we see that in modern day society, a situation in which a man's wife goes out and works for another man, creates problems. It is no wonder if one understands what these Scriptures are indicating, that we have situations where men employ other men's wives and end up having affairs with them. It really seems quite clear from these Scriptures that that was not God's intention. He intended women to be helpers to their husbands. In other words, He intended them to work with, and alongside their husbands. He did not intend a man to employ another man's wife as a secretary in a very personal and intimate role.

And conversely, He did not expect men to send their wives out to work for other men. If we understand that it is perhaps easier to understand the prevalence of extramarital sexual affairs in the business setting, it is also important to understand that we should be seeking to return as far as we possibly can. Certainly those men who are in a position to determine whether their wives work with them and alongside them or work for other men should seek the Lord to bring them into situations where their wives can work alongside them, and not work elsewhere. With that, I will leave you to consider that there are enormous aspects of what men need to evaluate in terms of how they conduct and manage their marital and family affairs.

Father, in the name of Jesus, I ask that anything that I have uttered which is contrary to Your Word or contrary to Your will, will be blown away and find no root in the hearts of the hearers. I ask You that everything that has been spoken, that is according to Your Word and according to Your will, will find root in the hearts of the hearers and will produce abundant fruit in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you. In the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, Amen.

## **03 16 Learning How to Love**

***James Robertson -- 18 November 2000***

This teaching is entitled, *'Learning How to Love.'* It is part 16 in the marriage series recorded on November 18, 2000. In previous teachings in this marriage series, we have seen the basic scriptural principles and the scriptures which refer to love in a fairly early teaching. There was subsequently a teaching on *'Do You Love the Way Jesus Loves'*, which address some of the profoundly significant ways in which Jesus laid down his life and the way we require to lay down our lives for others with the specific examples of people who submitted to unjust conduct, and by their humble submission brought others to repentance. The teaching today is directed at addressing some of the issues of how do we get to the place by the Spirit of God where we actually can love in that way.

The teaching is based on the book, *'Lord, teach me how to love'* which I have referred to previously. This book by Creflo Dollar is immensely challenging, or certainly I found it immensely challenging in terms of beginning to comprehend just how awesome the love of God is and just what an adaptation it requires in my own life, and may I say in the lives of pretty much all the Christians that I have encountered in my work. To put all of these things into practice in a way that is actually tangible and noticeable to those around us, is an immense challenge. I believe that Creflo Dollar has been made by

the Sight of God in a wonderful way to provide certainly what I would consider to be the most significant teaching that I have encountered on the subject.

Accordingly, I have produced a summary of the headlines of what really struck me in reading that book. In this teaching, I am basically just going to run through, not necessarily with much of my own comment, the points that are raised there. I'll be doing this from the perspective that I believe that as we apply these principles in our lives, we will be transformed by love and come to a place where people can in fact see Jesus in us, and where the compassion and love of God will move through us to an extent that will be tangibly significant to the world around us, that we will be able to make a difference and that we will come to the place where truly unbelievers may call us Christians, because they see Jesus Christ in us and because we do the works that Jesus Christ did.

### **Transformed by love**

I am just going to run through the points that I have noted as I read through the book in sequence. One of the first sections that he addresses is be transformed by love. He makes the point, in a number of places in the book that true love will transform us, the love of God will change us. Therefore, if we decide to love, we must expect and be willing to change. We should never be too busy to love and we should never be too busy to listen to others. Love is patient and love is willing to go the extra mile. He makes the point that others will know us by our love and cites John 13:35, *"By this shall all men know you are my disciples, if they have love one to another."* We have to recognise that Jesus himself requires us to come to a place where our love for others is so visible and so tangible that they will see that we are disciples of the Lord Jesus Christ. We must declare war on complacency. I certainly found myself confronted with the fact that I was highly complacent about walking in love and the love of God.

I had an excellent knowledge of the Word of God. I had experiences in many areas with God and yet I realised that I knew very little about the true love of God as distinct from my worldly western perspective of love, which is incredibly shallow. The more you come to understand God's agape love and to actually apply it in practice, the more you come to realise that the way we understand love in the West is absolutely feeble compared to the love of God. So, we dare not be complacent. We must be consistent in our love to others. We should not be unpredictable. We should not be blown by winds of change and situation.

We must forget the past, not only what we are ashamed of, but also what we are proud of and always [inaudible 00:06:03]. A very important point, he makes the point that if we dwell in the past, if we are looking at our past achievement, it will cloud our judgement with regards to the future. We have to keep our eyes on Jesus and we have to keep pressing forward.

### **Love with Intensity**

Love is not something that is lukewarm and insipid. It can be seen in Revelation what the Lord Jesus has to say about people who are lukewarm. Love must be intense, it must be impassioned. I am not talking about lust; I am talking about the love of God, which is intense. God's loving you grows as you love others. You cannot sit back and grow love. You have to actually exercise and walk in love and apply love in order to have it manifest in your life.

## **Love is a Decision**

Love is not some warm fuzzy feeling that you have one day and do not have the next day. You cannot fall in and out of love, and you cannot stop loving people, except as a consequence of extreme treachery as we taught previously in the passage on divorce. 1 Corinthians 13 says that love never dies. It never ends. It never goes away. God's love is enduring. It can only be terminated if it is utterly destroyed by persistent and [inaudible 00:07:34] treachery, unfaithfulness and fornication on the part of the one party, the object of the love. Love is a decision. It is not something that is emotional or something that comes or goes. Once you have declared your love, you have decided to love. We have to realise that we do not have an option, we have to love as Jesus loved. Therefore, anything that stands in the way needs to be resistant and overcome.

Creflo Dollar makes a statement that love is a force and as I have sought to put some of these teachings into practice, and admittedly in a very basic way, and I have come to experience the flow of that force, the realisation that when we come close to the Holy Spirit, Jesus and the father, and we experience that sensation like electricity, it is His love flowing into us. It is possible, if any individual who will love and seek to love as Jesus loved, for that powerful energy of love that force of love to flow through one. It is something that goes out of us independent of the object that is receiving that love. If a put a barrier and they would not receive that one thing but it is not something that is turned on and off by emotion. The lack of love can stop you receiving results from God. Satan can hinder your faith by taking your ability to love. You are a liar if you say you love God but do not love others. You can prevent God's blessings from manifesting in your life because of your own willingness to love.

## **Perfect love drives out fear**

It is important to note that in the context of marriage, perfect love drives out fear. In other words, if a man loves his wife perfectly with the love of God, she will not have fear. So, one has to draw the conclusion from that, if your wife has fear, you are not loving her perfectly. And that love is not conditional on her behaviour; it is an unconditional Christ-like love. It is important that we understand, in the context of marriage, that one of the key requirements for the husband is to love his wife as Christ so loved the Church. I continue to see in the context of marriage just how profound and important this is. There is not an enormous amount of other specific instruction to the husband other than to love his wife the way Jesus did.

We have seen the parallels but here we have an express instruction to the husband to love as Jesus loved. 1 John 4:8, *"God is love."* John 14, 15, *"If you love me, keep My Commandments."* We have spoken about this previously. You cannot say that you love someone, and you cannot say that you love God if you are not obedient. A wife who says she loves her husband but does her own thing cannot be walking in true agape love; she is in rebellion. An individual who says that they love God, but then does not apply the Word of God in their lives, a man who does not seek to love and to honour his wife as the weaker vessel, is in breach of the Commandment. Therefore, he cannot claim to love God fully, and a wife who is not in submission to her husband, cannot claim to love God.

When one encounters, or too frequently women, who seek divorce because they say that the husband is impeding in their walk with God that the inference is, they are closer to God than their husband is that may be the case, but divorce is not the answer. They have to draw closer to their husband in order to encourage their husband to draw closer to God. A man will experience great difficulty in submitting to God and drawing close to God if his wife is in total rebellion against him. Conversely, a wife will

have great difficulty in submitting to her husband if her husband is in total rebellion against God. Again, this is the concept of the double-edged sword we have spoken about previously.

### **Loving God**

So, we have to learn to love God before we can love others. When we know what to do but procrastinate, that puts us in a questionable position in terms of our love of God. If we allow our love for others to get before our love for God, we are in a questionable again. Procrastination is disobedience and partial obedience is disobedience. Disobedience is lack of love towards God. We have to come to a place where we understand profoundly. We cannot claim to love God if we are not obeying His Commandments, if we not putting into practice the revelation that we have of His words, or if we are not doing the things that He has called us to do. Something that has become profoundly clear to me in this context is that we are so wrapped up in the things and the cares of this world, what we will eat, drink, what car we will drive, what house we will have, how we will pay the debts at the end of the month, etc., that generally speaking, very few Christians indeed really, in any material way, obey God in terms of their calling.

As I was working through this, I was led to produce a list of outstanding activities. Some of these were things that I was called to do a year, two, three years ago, some even longer, and which because of opposition, tiredness, preoccupation with work, other issues, family matters and so forth, have just never been completed. Projects that I'd started are not being finished. Many months of work which, if I had done them diligently, a bit at a time, day by day, from the point at which the Lord called me do them, would have been executed and completed months or years ago and yet all were standing incomplete. It is a devastating indictment, but certainly was for me. I think that without trying to point fingers at anyone, if you examine yourself carefully, if you examine all the things that you have thought or said that God has called you to do in the last few years, you will find that you are quite likely in a similar position. If that is the case, we cannot be surprised if there is a lack of love in our own homes. We cannot be surprised if there is a lack of obedience and submission from our wives. If we are not doing what God called us to do, what on Earth do we expect to happen?

One of the things that struck me forcibly there is that I have certainly encountered a doctrine which says that if a man is not basically providing adequately for his family, etc., then he has not got his priorities right. The inference is comment which tends to be made that people are so spiritual that they are no earthly use. I do not think that is the case. Until we get to a place where we are so absolutely consumed with our love of God, that nothing else gets in the way; that doing God's will is all that matters, it does not matter how little sleep we have, how little money we have, how much we are inconvenienced, we will first and foremost do what God has called us to do each day, until we come to that place we cannot say that we love God and we cannot expect to walk in the fullness of his blessings, in the fullness of his anointing, and we need to understand that as long as we say once I am financially well-off, once I have paid for the house, once I have paid for the car, once I have completed this project, once I have done this report for the boss, whatever the case may be.

Once I have done anything that is not the first thing that God wants you to do, the Devil will make sure that you never complete those tasks in order to ensure that you never get to do what God wants done. If you at least do what God wants done, God is able to provide, He is able to bless you, even though the Devil may be running riot in other areas of your life. Once you are in disobedience to God, once you are no longer in the Will of God, then Satan will take your part. Love is not an option. We are not truly in covenant with God if we do not obey God, but we are His friends if we keep His Commandments. So, we have a choice: Do we put God first in our lives, do we do what He has called

us to do no matter what the cost, or do we actually put God after some other stuff, in which case, we are not truly in covenant with Him. We are in breach of our covenant with Him and we are not His friends. We cannot say that we love Him. It is quite devastating when you actually think about it.

The bottom line is we must obey God at any cost. At the same time, 1 John 4:20, *"If you do not love your brother whom you see daily, and you say you love me (God) whom you have not seen, you are a liar."* References made to love that endures and covers with silence, he who loveth God loveth his brother also, to the degree you love others who love God. Matthew 25:40, *"In as much as you have and to one of the least of these My brethren, you did it to Me."* We have to understand we cannot lose our tempers and get offended with our brothers, sisters, Christ, our family members and other people around us without in a sense, doing that to Jesus. So, if we are behaving like that, we have to understand that we cannot claim to be walking in the love of God. We have to love the whole body of Christ.

The thing that struck me there - that means we love the denominations in the groups that we do not understand, or we do not agree with. The fact that they have elements of doctrine which to us are highly offensive, is not the issue. If they claim the name of Christ, if they declare Jesus Christ the Saviour, even if all sorts of other elements of doctrine are wrong, they are part of His body. So, it does not matter whether they are Anglican, Presbyterian, [inaudible 00:19:36] Calvinists, Roman Catholic, The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints (Mormon), any other fringe group, charismatic group, whimsical group or unknown group, if they confess Jesus Christ is Lord, that as part of the body of Christ, we have to love them, not judge them, not condemn them, not take offensive positions towards them, we are told to love them. If we do not love them, then how can we say that we love Jesus? They are part of His body. It is not for us to decide who is part of the body and who is not part of the body.

We need to straighten out the relationships we have with the people we see every day. We have to forgive those who have wronged us. If I do not walk in love, I am nobody in Heaven's sight and we need to understand that. At the same time, if we allow our love for somebody else whether it be a wife or a husband or anybody else to become more important than love and obedience to God, we are making a major mistake. We cannot walk in true agape godly love towards our wives if we do not first walk in godly agape love towards God. Conversely, if we are not walking in godly love towards our wives, we cannot be walking in love towards God. Again, we see the double-edged sword. Marriage is a mirror of our relationship with God. In the case of love, our relationships with everybody we encounter are a mirror of our relationship with God. We need to seek to be anointed to love, and we need to seek to be rooted and grounded in love. Love is the absolute foundation of God and of Christian service. If you are not rooted in love, we should not expect miracles. We need to understand and we need to see the Bible as a revelation of God's love. It is important that we understand that there is no power in the spiritual sense without love.

## **Compassion**

The book shows very clearly that in Jesus' life, prayer produced compassion for the people. It was the compassion to heal and the compassion for the condition of the people which produced the power for the miracles that Jesus performed. Firstly, we must be in a vertical love relationship with the Father and with Jesus. Secondly, we must be in a horizontal love relationship with the people around us, with our spouses, our children, our families, and with the world at large. But we have to act as a conduit for God's love, which means we have to tap into God first. We need to tap into His love and then His love can flow through us to others. If we are so busy running around looking after our own interests, lusting after the latest car, and worrying about the home loan repayments, and doing all sorts of other



unscriptural things, instead of concentrating all our attention on the Lord God, then God can do very little in our lives. His power cannot work with people who are not connected to Him and to His love.

It is important to recognise that love is about giving, whereas lust takes as much as it can without giving anything in return. We will never see the power of healing operate in our ministries until we first see Jesus. Creflo Dollar says that when he first understood Jesus' compassion, only then did he see Jesus. We need to seek to understand Jesus' compassion as a vital necessity in our Christian walk. In Jesus' life, again, first is prayer from which flowed compassion, from which flowed the powerful for miracles. First vertical love between Jesus and the Father and then the horizontal love from Jesus to the people. Our motivation for displaying God's power must be sincere compassion to see others saved, delivered, and healed, rather than for Earth's praise and recognition, or our own satisfaction. We have to seek God's heart for the people around and we have to seek His compassion. We need to ask ourselves what can I do for you? We have to stop looking at ourselves. We need to focus on others and what we can do for them. The love of God is about serving others, it is about loving others. It is not about self, it is about dying to self, it is about crucifying self.

Galatians 6:2 tells us to *"Bear one another's burdens."* Your thinking should be *"I love others with the love of God, I want so much for their lives to be changed. I want so much for their bodies to be healed. Oh, God, help me to help them."* In particular, in the context of this teaching series on marriage, I would urge everybody to see the massive hurt and destruction in marriage and in relationships between men and women, and in terms of sexuality, family life, children, men and women whose lives are in shambles, in terms of adultery and fornication, broken hearts and broken relationships. We need to see this absolutely [inaudible 00:25:29] heart. We need to seek God's compassion to see marriages healed, not just our own marriages, but those of all that we know and of all those in the world. Not just marriages healed, but this functional sexuality healed, this functional children's relationships healed, this function of personality heal. The more I pray and write and teach on the subject of marriage, the more I come to understand the absolutely appalling, abominable state that marriage is in the Sight of God. We are so far removed from what God intended to be Heaven on Earth and we are so unaware of the fact of what marriage could be, relative to what marriage is today.

I would urge everybody who listens to this tape to seek God, that you may know His heart and experience His compassion from those, for those who are hurting through marriage and related issues that have been addressed in this teaching series. We have to seek God's love to begin operating in our own lives before we can be of any use to others. But at the same time, we have to put the needs of others first in our prayers. We need to stop asking for ourselves and start asking for others. If we do not have love, we are nothing. The Word of God says *'a useless nobody'* in Corinthians. We need to love unconditionally.

Galatians 5:5-6, *"For we, through the Spirit eagerly wait for the hope of righteousness by faith. For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision nor uncircumcision avails anything, but faith working through love."* That is a critical passage of Scripture that is something that opened my eyes. *"Faith works by love."* Our faith will not work if our love is not working. Love is damaged by offence, unforgiveness, and disobedience. Then we cannot expect answers to our prayers. So, one of the critical things we need to understand is if we are not walking in the fullness and blessings of God, we have a revelation that by Jesus' stripes we are healed, yet we are not healed if we have a revelation that our God will supply all our needs according to His riches and glory by Christ Jesus, and we are living in lack and in poverty. If we are under constant attack, if we are suffering constant destruction and loss in our lives, we have to understand that if we are not walking in the love of God, we perhaps do not need to look any further for the problem.

## Faith and Love

Faith works by love and if we are not walking in love, faith is not going to work. We must meditate on the word day and night. We must allow God to handle our circumstances. We can do nothing in our own strength. It is not by might, it is not by power, it is by the Spirit of the living God that we are delivered from our circumstances. We dare not lean to our own understanding. We dare not look to the things that are seen. We have to look to the things that we do not see. We have to seek to look and see what the Father is doing. As we have seen, we cannot see Jesus until we understand his compassion. Love is vital. If we are to accomplish anything for God with God, if we are not to be found to be goats and sheep on the Day of Judgement with tears and not wheat, or are foolish virgins or workers of iniquity, or people to him, the Lord Jesus Christ says, *"Depart from me, I never knew you."* We have to walk in love.

If we do not like our harvest, we need to change the seed. If we are not walking in the streets of love, then we need to start loving. If we are not walking in the streets of love, we should not be surprised that we are in ill-health and lack, and so forth. We have to understand without love, our faith will not work, not in terms of prosperity or anything else. If we are not walking in love, then when God blesses us, our pride and our arrogance will take over and we will lose everything that He gives us. When love is truly operating, only then will the power flow. Only when we love God and love one another, and only when we keep God's Commandments will God bring us to the harvest of our dreams and desires. If not, our dreams and desires will not be of God and they will not be pleasing to God, and they will not be suitable in terms of our calling. We do not want to receive, or we should not want to receive many of the things that we believe God, which will take us away from serving Him.

Satan attacks our love with anger, thus destroying our faith. It does not mean anything to come to Church all the time if you are not willing to work out misunderstandings, mend broken relationships and love, even when it is difficult to do so. True Christianity is walking in love to the point that every time others are around us, they are somehow positively affected by our genuine love. As stated before, love is a force, it is something tangible. It is something that we can experience. Rick Joyner in the book, *'The Final Quest'* describes an incident in which he encounters a man where, when this man hugs him and embraces him, the love that flows out of him is such powerful raw energy, that when he releases Joyner, Joyner feels absolutely drunk with the power of that love.

Until we can walk in a place where we can hug somebody, and the love of God flows into them that when we release them, they have been healed, touched, or changed, we can do nothing. It is only when we get to the place where the love of God is flowing out of us so strongly that there is an aura, a love shield around us, which heals people without us even touching them, that we will come to the place where we are doing the works that Jesus did, and greater works than He did.

We are commanded to love our enemies. God's love is unconditional. He gives His blessings to the good and the bad. He gives reign to the just and the unjust. God's love endures. Even when we distance ourselves from the sinning brother in Christ, we must never stop loving them. We are not to reject them, we are not to condemn them, we are just to put space between us and them in terms of Matthew 18, in order to provide them with an indication of our disapproval and to bring them to a place of true repentance. Romans 2:4, *"The goodness of God leads us to repentance,"* i.e. love brings about change. Goodness of God brings about repentance. Therefore it is our goodness to others that will bring about repentance. For the husband, if your wife is not the wife you would like her to be, it is the goodness of God flowing through you that will bring her to repentance. Wife, if your husband is

not the husband you would like him to be, it is the goodness of God flowing through you that will bring him to repentance.

## **Patience**

Romans 5:3, tribulation, work of patience. Work means that it employs, it uses patience to pull you through tribulation. We need to seek patience. That is one of the tributes of love and one of the fruits of the Spirit. We need to love others when we first meet them before we know anything about them. We need to love them when they may suffer, or when we discover that they have doctrines of beliefs that we do not approve of, or like, or agree with. And we need to love them when they have straightened out the other side. We have got to stop only loving people when they please us, when it suits us. We have to love them all the time because that is what Jesus has commanded us to do.

Recognise that envy stops promotion. We must rejoice when others get blessed. Love is never jealous. Love is not proud. We must give God the glory. Proverbs 6:16-17 tells us clearly that God hates the proud look. God has a problem with people who are always boasting about their accomplishments. Give God the glory, otherwise we make ourselves our own idols. It is suggested that wherever you see the spirit of I, you see the spirit of Satan. We have to recognise that most of the time where we use that word 'I' in our writings and in our speech, we are glorifying ourselves unnecessarily. We have grown up in the society which idolises 'me,' 'I,' 'self', which puts I first. That has come from the god of this world. Jesus did not spend all the time talking about himself. He spends time talking about the Father. He spends time talking about the Kingdom. There are times when the word 'I' is necessary to identify the speaker and what's going on, but since I have read that, I have come to realise that there are far fewer instances where I is really necessary.

Perhaps 'I' is not necessary at all. We should brag on God. We should acknowledge God in all the good he has done to us, not just when we feel that it is not embarrassing to acknowledge God. We need to understand we do not do anything without the help of the master. It is all God. God is a good God and His handiwork is worthy to be displayed. We must acknowledge Him in all things. We must restrain our nerves. Speaking without restraint is pride, it implies that we are saying, regardless of what the Word of God says, I am going to say and do what I want to do this time. We are refusing to comply with God if we do not restrain our nerves. Perhaps we should rather just say, thank God I am saved, and keeping quiet is the suggestion made in the book. Love enables us to shut our mouths, turn our heads, and bless those who curse us. We need to recognise that rudeness is not boldness, and boldness is not rudeness. We need to have manners. We need to understand that love is not rude or unmannerly. Men should seek to be a perfect gentleman.

Love is not self-seeking. Real love always gives. God loves us so much that He gave. Love and giving go hand-in-hand. Give that it costs. This point keeps coming up. We have to lay down our lives. We have to give that it costs. We have got to stop counting the cost of serving God. We have got to serve Him unreservedly. We have got to let go of everything that is standing in the way of us going all the way of running the race to the end.

Love is not touchy, it is not fretful, it is not resentful. If we are letting any of those things enter our lives, we need to grow up. Love lets go. Love does not take account of the evil done to it. It does not pay attention to a suffered wrong. We are not to love based on how we feel. We love others because God first loved us. It is a Commandment. Romans 8:39 *"What can separate us from the love of God."* Nothing. Love covers with silence. 1 Corinthians 13:6, *"Love rejoices not in iniquity."* If we become aware of somebody's problems, we must help that person to get back on their feet, not condemn

them. We should confess our faults one to another, that we may be healed. We must confess our struggles to a trusted friend. It is not for them to be talebearers and take that information elsewhere.

### **Weaknesses and strengths**

A vital point in understanding our relationship with God. God's system is an exchange of weaknesses and strengths, until we eliminate our weaknesses. That is what covenant is about. And if we are to walk His covenant, brothers and sisters in Christ, that is what it is about. Marriage is about an exchange of weaknesses and strengths, until we eliminate the weaknesses. So, it is not for a wife to look down on her husband's weaknesses. She is there precisely to compensate for his weaknesses. It is no good looking for a wife or a husband who is a carbon copy of ourselves. We need to have a wife or a husband who is materially different, who fills the gaps in our ministry, who fills the gaps in our personality, who fills the gaps in our secular gifts, etc. We have to walk in love in order for people to trust us and we need to cover others with love. 1 Corinthians 13:6-7 out of the Amplified, *"It (love) does not rejoice at injustice, and unrighteousness, but rejoices when evil and truth prevail. Love bears up under anything and everything that comes, is ever ready to believe the best of every person. Its hopes are fadeless under all circumstances and it endures everything without weakening."*

In the book, Creflo Dollar reports an incident where he went to see a minister who was in jail, and had fallen in a serious fashion, and just citing an example which moved me greatly. He writes as follows: *"Then I sat down with him to make a covenant, an agreement with him. I grabbed his face and I said, 'I promise to love you forever and if you die, I will see to it that your wife is taken care of and that your children get a first-class education. I will not leave you no matter what you do. I love you unconditionally.'"* This certainly seemed to make a critical example of how Christian love should seek to restore a fallen brother or sister. It is also a critical example of how husbands should love their wives, and wives should love their husbands. We have to get away from the mindset which says *"Because I do not like what you are doing, I do not love you anymore."* God does not treat us that way. He may distance himself, He may create space in order to discipline us. He may regretfully permit Satan to take us apart financially, health wise, and in other ways, to bring us to repentance to discipline us, but He never stops loving us. The minute we come to Him, He is there for us. We have to understand this, and we have to put it into practice in our lives.

The Word of God says the gifts and calling are without repentance. In other words, God does not change His mind. Once He has called us, He has called us. In the context of earlier comments, it is vital that we understand that once we have been called to do something, God is not going to release us from that calling. We are going to be judged on what we did not do, that we should have done and what we did, that we should not have done. The Lord may call somebody else to fill in the gap of our disobedience, but we will still be accountable for all the souls that were not touched by our failure to do what He called us to do.

### **Love covers sin**

Cover sin with love in silence. Proverbs 10:12 says *"Love covers all transgressions."* 1 Peter 4:8 says, *"Love covers a multitude of sins."* This is referring to sin which has been confessed to us. If somebody confesses sin to us, it is not under any circumstances to be shared with anybody else. And if somebody else seeks to share sin that has been confessed to them, we should stop them immediately. Otherwise, we become party to their sin of talebearing. We should not be concerned about what others think. If we associate with a known sinner, the question we have to address is *"Are you without sin?"* The answer that every one of us has to give to that is 'no.' Only Jesus is without sin.

We are not to gossip about the sin of others. We should be prudent, without testimony and share only what is necessary for them to know to avoid it being taken out of context and misuse, which results in the person who misuses that testimony to be sinning. This is something we really need to grasp which has become very apparent to me in recent weeks. Love sees the consequences of sin on the person that is sinning, where his pride causes us to be offended by what that sin does to us. So much of what causes people to go around being offended are actions by others which prejudice ourselves, yet the reality is if we do not respond, if we do not react, if we are not offended, then everything to do with that sin rests on the hands of the party who is sinning. Sin against us may be inconvenient, it may be unpleasant, it may be downright painful if they are killing us, but at the end of the day from an eternal perspective, they are the ones being judged.

So, as one comes to understand this and one comes to understand that if one's enemy is beating one to a pulp or about to smash one's head in with a truncheon, as in the example of the young Russian man in the teaching on *'Loving the Way Jesus Loves,'* we have to realise that the old woman who is going to be hit was certainly going to suffer pain. She was quite possibly going to be killed, but at the end of the day that is all carnal, fleshly. Yes, it is unpleasant, but it was the young man who was sinning. He would have borne the consequences of every single Christian that he had beaten up for eternity, if he had not come to repentance. If that woman had not loved him enough to say, *"Father forgive him, he does not know what he is doing"*, to mobilise the love of God for that young man to turn from his wicked ways. We have to see that when people are sinning against us, it is only our flesh that rises up. If our flesh is dead, if it is crucified with Christ, then what they say about us and what they do to us is of absolutely no material interest and consequence to us, except that the love of Christ requires that we intercede for them, we petition for them, we pray for them, and we love them that by chance they may turn [inaudible 00:46:49].

### **Unconfessed sin**

Unconfessed sin is not covered by the Blood of Jesus. It is not covered by Jesus' sacrifice. Proverbs 28:13 says, *"He who covers his sins will not prosper, but whoever confesses and forsakes them will have mercy."* We must confess our sins, we must repent, we must turn around, we must go to the foot of the cross with a humble spirit and a contrite heart. We must ask for, and receive forgiveness, according to Scripture. The Word of God says that if we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive our sins. So, we can come boldly to the Throne of Grace once we have truly recognised our sin and confessed it. At the same time, we must not violate the law of love and our love must be a love that forgets.

The Father says that when He forgives our sins, He takes our sins as far as the east is from the west, when they are covered by the blood of the lamb, He washes us white as snow. We must be the same. We must forget the sins of others against us. The Word of God says *"Love your enemies, bless them that curse you. Do good to them that hate you and pray for them which despitefully abuse you and persecute you that you may be the children of your Father, which is in Heaven for He make up His son to rise in the evil and the good and send a throne on the just and the unjust."*

We must do right even when someone else is doing me wrong. We have to understand that just because somebody is sinning against us does not give us an excuse to sin in return. We would be judged for our sin whether that sin was in response to somebody else's sin or not. If somebody starts striking me and beating me up and I retaliate by striking him and beating him up, he is sinning against me and I am sinning against him. I am sinning against the Word of God. The Word of God tells me to love him, to bless him, to pray for him; not to retaliate. We must learn from that old woman in Russia

who on her knees, raised her hands to Heaven and said, *"Father, forgive this young man. He does not know what he is doing."* And that young man had the capacity to maim her for life, to kill her, and to inflict terrible pain and suffering on her. And yet, she just raised her hands and asked the Father to forgive him. She did not think of herself. She did not ask for protection. And that love activated the faith that was necessary for her to go unscathed, for an Angel to intervene and grab that young man's hand.

But even if he had beaten her, she was storing up treasure in Heaven while he was storing that wrath of judgement for himself. She had the understanding of the Love of God to realise that his need was far greater than hers that no matter how much he hurt her, he needed forgiveness, he needed Jesus Christ for protection and her healing was provided for. Her salvation was already bought at the Cross and he was headed for Hell. That is the way we should love our enemies. That is the way we should love those who do wrong to us.

If we have problems letting go, we need to take it to God. We must not retaliate. We must love, we must give, and we must forgive. We must let go of past offenses. We must forget. We must give the hurts to God in prayer and let them go. By holding onto past offences, we establish our own righteousness and thereby we forfeit the righteousness God has given us through Jesus Christ. That is a starting statement, but it is so true. If we hold onto past offences, if we continue to talk about the wrong others have done to us, we are setting ourselves up as more righteous than they, and we are rejecting the righteousness of Christ. The Word of God says our own righteousness is as filthy rags.

### **Forgiveness**

Mark 11:22-26, *"Have faith, what thinks whatever you desire, when you pray, believe that you receive them and when you stand praying, forgive."* Unforgiveness hinders spiritual growth. It stops us from operating or receiving the end of our faith. Without faith, it is impossible to please God. Hebrews 11:16, Romans 1:17, *"The just shall live by faith."* If we do not forgive, we cannot walk by faith and therefore we are not just. Our confessions of faith are useless and nothing more than idle words, without forgiveness and without love. Matthew 18:35 says, *"We will be handed to the tormented, if we do not forgive."*

If someone does us harm, we must forgive. We must realise that our spiritual circumstances are as a result of our failure to forgive and our failure to walk in love. We need to be able to say *'bless you'* in the midst of persecution. All of these principles apply just as much if not more so, to family love. We need to love our relatives, our parents, brothers and sisters, our uncles and aunts, our cousins, our children or grandchildren, where they are spiritually, mentally, and emotionally. True love does not give up on people just because they are irritating or make mistakes. Such an incredibly important truth in marriage, a wonderfully important truth, a terribly important truth; we are not to give up on people just because they irritate us or make mistakes. Marriage is for life. We have to love unconditionally. We have to walk and work through all that is wrong, in order to come to a place where marriages are healed. It is only as I have said in previous teachings, in extreme cases of total persistent unrepented treachery and betrayal that the Father will permit us to divorce. That is not because He is unjust, it is not because He is cruel, it is because there is no reason to divorce.

If there is still a flicker of goodwill on either side, that marriage can be healed. But we have to seek God first, we need to seek His love, and we need to walk in His love. We need to understand that love is willing to change. Change is the evidence of love to change, to line up with what God wants with what His words says. We have to change in our own lives in order to reap change in the lives of those

around us. We have to do it first ourselves. We cannot expect a wife or a husband to be the people we want them to be until we are prepared to change to be the people, they want us to be, or they need us to be, or God wants us to be. First and foremost, we must seek to change to be the people that God wants us to be. And as we change to be the people God wants us to be, we will become the people that our spouses need us to be. The fear of God is to be willing to align ourselves with His word, no matter what the cost. The fear of God is to obey Him. Psalm 55:19, *"God shall afflict those who do not change because they do not fear God."*

### **Factors of love**

Love is not rude. We need to watch our tone of voice at all times. Love is not selfish. Love does not insist on its own rights or its own way. Love is more concerned about how one can meet the needs of another and how one would like one's own needs met. Again, a major, major problem in the Western World; we are so focused and so conditioned to having our own needs met at the expense of others, no matter what the cost to others, no matter how we sacrifice our service to God. God's love is about meeting the needs of others with no concern about our own needs, trusting God to meet our needs. Love is not easily provoked. It is extremely important in marriage. We are so prone, certainly speaking for myself, to be provoked. Yes, a disobedient wife who is contentious and fault-finding will bring the sensation of rottenness in the bones that we have spoken about in previous teachings. Yes, it is irritating. Yes, it is uncomfortable. That does not mean that we should be provoked by it. An enormous challenge.

Again, we see the concept of a double-edged sword in so much of what is being taught in this series. The wife needs to understand that her husband is not perfect, and therefore if she does things which produce that sensation of rottenness in his bones, he is going to respond in all likelihood calmly and in a way that Christ would not respond. Conversely, the husband needs to understand that even if his wife does produce that sensation, he is called not to react.

So, as both parties seek to put these principles into practice, the marriage will improve. We must take our eyes off our own agendas and desires in order to serve God and to serve our families. We must think no evil. We must not be quick to take offence. We must not be touchy or fretful or resentful. Loveless homes give rise to a loveless society. Again, we see the absolute centrality of this series of teachings on marriage in terms of the state of the world today. Until Christian marriages are filled with love, until marriage works the way God intends it to work, we cannot expect the world to come right. The world is a reflection of the loveless relationships that characterise so many Christian marriages, which in turn characterise the loveless relationship between the Church and the Lord Jesus Christ. We have to see the state of the world as a direct axiomatic reflection of the absolutely appalling state of the Church today.

Love disciplines. We do not really love our children if we do not take the time to correct them. Children should show respect. Creflo Dollar goes as far as saying that they should use terms of respect like *'yes mom, no mom, yes sir, no sir.'* I am not sure that I find direct Scripture for that but at the same time, we do find Scripture saying that a wife should call her husband *'lord'* and we certainly find instances of children in Scripture calling their fathers *'lord.'* So, we need to revisit a lot of what we believe in that area.

Our children are the way they are because of us. We have touched on this in a variety of ways in previous teachings, but we have to understand if our children are a mess, it is because we have been instrumental in bringing them to that place. We cannot accept a situation where we deny our parental

responsibility for what happens to our children. Most children rebel because they want to get their parent's attention. Children desire to be loved and appreciated and for that matter, so do wives, so do husbands. Our children are mirror images of us. We must pray for our children daily.

The Father's love. God loves us with unconditional everlasting love. Ephesians 3:19, *"Know the love of Christ which passes knowledge that he might be filled with all the fullness of God."* Love is the avenue to being filled with everything God has to offer. We need to pray regularly *"Lord, open my eyes to see Jesus in Your Word and to see Your love in your word. Open the eyes of our heart to see Jesus and to see His compassion and to know You."* Until we have a revelation of the importance of love and the greatness of God's love for us, we will not be able to experience the fullness of God. But we must understand God's love is tough; it is marked by discipline. The true proof of love is a person's honesty. In other words, they love you enough to tell you when you are wrong. If someone says they love you and then they go on and do the wrong thing, then they are lying. [inaudible 01:01:02] any disciplines those who loves. Therefore we must repent and change our hearts, our minds, and our direction. God's love is unconditional and everlasting and it is the ultimate source of power.

Love conquers all. God is love but a love relationship only works when both parties are involved and put forth the effort to maintain it. We see a profound truth. God never stops loving us. If we are not experiencing His love, it is because there is a problem on our side to a point. The point has been made previously in the context of marriage. In a mysterious sense, through man's sexuality, it seems to me that he cannot stop loving his wife. He may behave in ways that are contrary. He may behave in all sorts of unacceptable ways, but a born again man, I do not believe, can actually stop loving his wife until she has betrayed him to such a point that the love that he has for her has been utterly destroyed. However, her conduct can stop her receiving that love and it can produce manifestations in the husband which look as though love has died on his side. We have to get close to God to experience His love. A wife has to get close to her husband in order to experience His love. It is possible for any of us to refuse to receive the love of God, and it is possible for any wife to refuse to receive the love of her husband.

God always loves us, so if we do not experience His love it is because we not putting in the effort to love Him and receive His love. God's love is mature. It does not exhibit childish characteristics, such as jealousy, envy, and selfishness. We need to understand children do not know any better, adults are without excuse. We cannot afford to continue with temper tantrums and outbursts against family members and friends, or people who hurt us. Only a child will hold a grudge or disrespect another person. Jesus said in Scripture that there would be many who would come in His name and prophesy in His name and cast out Demons in His name, and yet He would say to them *"Depart from me you workers of iniquity; I never knew you."*

We have to ask ourselves the question today *"Does God know you? Does God know me?"* Or are we so far removed in our knowledge of God, from His love, His compassion and His selflessness that the little accomplishments that we claim for ourselves, in terms of ministry and deliverance which have been accomplished by the power and the authority of the name of Jesus Christ, and not through anything to do with our own inability, that have been accomplished through the gifts and the calling that we have been given even though we have turned aside into strife and love lessness, does Jesus Christ know you?

God should be the first and the last person we talk to each day. We must put relationship before service. If we do not spend enough time with God, our batteries will run flat and we run on our own power instead of His power. Obedience and not service determines how much we love God. We must



listen to God. The book closes with a series of helpful prayers and confessions. I would like to read some of these prayers and confessions.

### **Prayers and confessions**

*"Father, please forgive me for not loving as I should. Your Word says that I am made in Your image. Therefore, it is my desire to love as You do. Right now, I tap into the anointing to change which is made available to me through Your love. I pray that the atmosphere of my life, my home, my Church, and my place of work will change as a result of Your love demonstrated through me, that it begins today in Jesus' name I pray, amen."*

Confession: *"In the name of Jesus, I decide right now to accept my responsibility in this walk of love. I love You Lord and the evidence of my love is the love I show to others. I receive Your power, Your anointing and all that comes as a result of my obedience to walk in love. I will even demonstrate love to my enemies. I open myself up to this level. Change me, rearrange me, and make me new again. I thank You Father that I will not miss the very best that You have for me. I would not just wear a Christian label, but I will live as a Christian as well. I believe that I receive right now the faith to walk in love, in Jesus' name."*

To minister godly love, prayer: *"Father, in the name of Jesus, I declare the love of God over my life as I receive His corrections, His discipline, and His instruction. I choose no longer to function as an average Christian, but I choose to excel in love. I commit my ways to You Lord God, and You will be exceedingly, abundantly above all I can ever ask or think, in Jesus' name."*

Confession: *"Greater is He who is in me, even he who is in the world. I challenge myself to make an eternal mark in the lives of people. I challenge myself to walk in a greater degree of love. I challenge myself to move instantly when I hear the voice of the Holy Ghost. I make a decision now to be prepared to do every good work. I am anointed and appointed and I will edify the Body of Christ. I will do the work of the ministry. I declare in the name of Jesus, I will not dwell in the land of complacency. I will come out of my comfort zone, I prescient to reach the price of the high calling, which is in the anointed one who is in me. I walk in the favour of God and in the comfort of the Holy Ghost, I am the servant of Almighty God, in Jesus' name."*

To increase in maturity, prayer: *"In the name of Jesus, I decide today not to act as a child any longer. I choose to be spiritually mature. I choose to put away childish things. I choose to practice the love or walk of God in order for God to train me. I declare my desire to be an overcomer. I declare that by faith I have overcome my past and I will not be defeated by unforgiveness, envy, jealousy or resentment. Thank You Father for the power You have made available to me through Jesus Christ, amen."*

Confession: *"In the name of Jesus and by the power of the Holy Ghost, I will give God the glory for every good thing that happens in my life. I will not be a useless nobody. I am more than a conqueror and my faith is rising, my joy is rising, and in the mighty name of Jesus, I am walking in love, in Jesus' name."*

Commitment to spend time with God, prayer: *"Father, in the name of Jesus, I make a quality decision to develop and diligently cultivate an individual love relationship with You. I will not allow my good works alone to communicate my love to You. I will seek the needful thing, which is the Word of God. I will not only be a hero of the word, but a doer also, because I love You. I commit to spending more time with You so that I may know Your voice and do what you instruct me to do, in Jesus' name."*

Confession: *"I declare now that I will spend time with the Father in prayer and in study of the Word of God. I will practice the presence of God, because I love Him. I hear His voice and obey His word, because I love Him, because I practice His presence. I will continually grow in my love for Him and for others, in Jesus' name."*

Father, I ask that anything that I have said in this teaching that is not of You that You will blow it away and it will find no roots in the hearts of the hearers. I ask You Father that that which is of You, that which is according to Your Word and according to Your Spirit, will find root in the hearers' hearts and produce abundant fruit, in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth. Amen.

## **03 17 The Scriptural Response to a Rebellious or Treacherous Wife**

**James Robertson -- 18 November 2000**

This is teaching number 17 in the series on marriage. *'Responding to rebelliousness or treachery on the part of one's wife.'* This teaching was given on the November 18, 2000.

To recap on the teaching thus far, we have covered a wide variety of areas, but there are a couple of particular conclusions which are very relevant to the subject of today's teaching. Firstly, God intended marriage to work. Secondly, the Church today knows almost nothing about God's form of marriage and how He intended marriage to work. Thirdly, it is possible for the wife to tear down or build up the house, the family's house or the husband's house. The wife is required by Scripture to submit in everything to her husband, even if her husband is unjust and ungodly, in the same way that Jesus submitted to those who crucified him unjustly. Fifthly, the husband is the head of the family and it is his responsibility to seek to become like Jesus and to love like Jesus loved.

Sixthly, divorce is a matter of last resort and is only permitted in the case of persistent and unrepentant treachery, pornea, spiritually or sexually. And a wife who is in strife and disagreement with her husband causes a sensation likened to rottenness in his bones and can destroy her husband financially by insisting on going her own way and dividing her husband's house. These broad conclusions give rise to a dilemma. If divorce is only applicable as a matter of last resort after persistent unrepentant treachery, and if a wife can destroy her husband's house by continuous wilful disagreement, what remedies does the husband have to manage this situation, in other words to discipline his wife and bring his wife back into agreement and harmony with him if in fact, discipline is the right word.

Before answering this question, I will address in summary some of the other conclusions reached during this teaching in order to put the overall context of this teaching or put this teaching in the right context. Because it is certainly a particularly difficult subject, and it is a subject which on the face of it, if it is not resolved, leaves us with many of the factors which give rise to divorce or putting away in the Church today undealt with in the series.

### **One Flesh Bond**

To recap, the strength of the One Flesh Bond was discussed at some length. Genesis 2:24 together with Matthew 19:5-6, Mark 10:8, and Ephesians 5:30-32, based on the original language clearly demonstrate that the One Flesh Bond is an unbreakable spiritual bond. Now the Scriptures taken

together with Genesis 2:24 clearly indicates that the marriage covenant is cut when a man takes a woman's virginity, and that multiple One Flesh Bonds can be performed and give rise to the spiritual states known as adultery and fornication, which are amongst the most appalling forms of spiritual carnage that are possible. Conversely, we have also seen that as a man and woman give themselves to one another in sexual lovemaking to the fullest extent possible, the One Flesh Bond becomes massively strong and the spirits of the husband and wife become knit together, so that they are truly one, and can communicate spirit to spirit over great distances as though they were speaking face-to-face in the same room.

When this has been reached, their prayers become extremely powerful. However, very few people reach this level of the One Flesh Bond. In fact, it is probably almost unknown in the current age. If a husband and wife are in constant strife and have erected emotional and spiritual barriers which inhibit their giving and lovemaking, the One Flesh Bond will remain weak and undeveloped and their marriage will remain vulnerable. This is another reason why rebellion in strife on the part of the wife is so immensely destructive within a marriage.

If the One Flesh Bond does not reach its full potential, the spiritual force holding the marriage together in adversity is seriously weakened. This makes it much easier for a man and a woman to contemplate divorce. We saw in a number of teachings, the emphasis on submission in everything. We considered Ephesians 5:24 which states *"Therefore, just as the Church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything."* Wives are told to submit to their husbands in everything, not just that which they approve of, not just that which they enjoy, not just that which is lawful, and not just that which is scriptural, but they are enjoined to submit in absolutely everything.

1 Peter 3:1-2 take this further, *"Wives, likewise, be submissive to your own husbands, that even if some do not obey the Word, they, without a Word, may be won by the conduct of their wives, when they observe your chaste conduct accompanied by fear."* The word *'likewise'* here refers back to the previous chapter which tells us to submit to unjust masters and rulers, in the same way that Jesus submitted to those who unjustly crucified Him, who knew no sin, and who could have called legions of Angels to deliver Him. In other words, this confirms Ephesians 5:24, wives are to submit no matter how unjust or ungodly their husbands are.

This revelation provides a whole new dimension to why woman should not marry a man who is an unbeliever. It is also apparent that if a wife will truly submit in everything in submission to Scripture, God will intervene supernaturally to protect the wife whose husband goes too far provided she walks in faith. We therefore saw that submission is amazingly powerful. We just do not understand that power in this age. We have to learn to submit like Jesus submitted.

## **Harmony**

We then discussed on a number of occasions the importance of harmony. We became increasingly aware of the deep need for husband and wife to be in perfect unity and harmony. The Lord showed us that the husband was like the organ in a group of musical instruments and the wife was like a stringed instrument, which had to be tuned to the same key as the organ so that all musicians play it in harmony. Harmony is beyond agreement. Harmony is the full power of marriage through the One Flesh Bond. Once a really strong One Flesh Bond is in place, and husband and wife are in full agreement and in harmony, their prayers are amongst the sweetest incense that the Father can receive. Their prayers are full of authority because there is complete agreement. Once their spirits are truly one, and are in perfect unity and harmony, amazing spiritual power is unleashed.

This is one of the reasons Satan is so intent on destroying marriage. It is also apparent that when the husband and wife are in this level of harmony, and they are also through the husband in harmony with the Lord Jesus Christ, they are walking in unity with Jesus, they are seeing what Jesus sees, they are doing what Jesus would have them do, they are hearing Jesus speak and they are able to be Jesus' instruments in the Earth. At this point that family unit becomes a formidable force for the Kingdom of God.

A few Scriptures which address this point with regards to why harmony is important. Matthew 12:25, *"Every city or house divided against itself will not stand."* Luke 11:17, *"A house divided against a house falls."* Amos 3:3, *"Can two walk together, unless they are agreed?"* Matthew 18:19, *"If two of you agree on earth concerning anything that they ask, it will be done for them by My Father in Heaven."* 1 Peter 3:7, *"Husbands, likewise, dwell with them with understanding, giving honour to the wife, as to the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life, that your prayers may not be hindered."* It cannot be stressed enough, if a husband and wife are not in agreement, or a house which is divided, and it cannot stand, their prayers will be hindered and not answered. Their lives will be immaterial and spiritual terms will be a total mess. If there is so much teaching about wives having their own identity, etc., it goes against the grain of this principle.

Other teaching uses 1 Peter 3:7 to make it the responsibility of the husband to come into agreement with his wife. That is not what this verse says. It says that because they are weak, husbands should be patient, tolerant, loving, etc., and accept that their wives may not immediately see things the way the husband does. Like Jesus treats us, the husband is to gently guide and lead his wife. If he does not, their prayers will be hindered. There cannot be a godly marriage where the husband is in submission to the wife. He will then expect Jesus to submit to him. At the same time, where the husband is in submission to the wife and agreement with her, whether it is a Christian marriage or a pagan marriage, the house will not be divided and they will walk in agreement. The Jezebel principality that operates over marriage around the world today has exploited that to good effect. There are many, many men who have been forced by circumstances to come into agreement with their wives as the only means in which they can avoid hindering. But as they have come into agreement with their wives, they have inevitably created a distance between themselves and the Lord Jesus Christ. The ultimate objective is for the husband and wife to be in such perfect unity that their spirits harmonise at all times. They are not only singing from the same song book but they are also singing in the same key and they sing in perfect harmony.

### **Mirror relationships**

We also saw that the relationship between the husband and wife was a mirror of the relationship between the husband and the Lord Jesus Christ. It became apparent that as the husband is head of the wife, and Jesus is head of the husband, and Father is head of Jesus, the relationship between the husband and the wife is often, although not always, the mirror of the relationship between the husband and the Lord Jesus Christ. In other words, we saw that if the wife is not giving first priority to the things the husband considers most important and is in fact leaving them frequently to the last minute, or they are not doing them at all, it is probably because the husband is cheating his calling in the same way. If the wife is always arguing and insists on holding onto opposing views, that is probably because the husband is always arguing with Jesus and holding onto views which are contrary to Scripture. He may not consciously be arguing with Jesus, he may be arguing with Jesus in the form of arguing with other servants of God around matters of doctrine, and holding onto doctrines which are contrary to the Word of God, but he is still nevertheless opposing Jesus and opposing the Word of God because Jesus is the Word.

If the wife is not submitting to her husband, it is probably because the husband is not submitting to Jesus. If the wife's service and commitment to her husband is shabby, then it is probably because the husband's own service and commitment to the Lord Jesus Christ is shabby. Refer to the Book of Malachi for more on the topic of poor service to God and second-rate shabby offerings. If the wife is giving love and submission unwillingly and grudgingly, and is making false accusations against the husband, then it is probable that the husband is giving love and submission unwillingly and grudgingly to Jesus and Yahweh, and is making false accusations against Him through false doctrines, etc. If the wife is constantly finding fault with her husband, then it is likely that the husband is constantly finding fault with God. Again, not necessarily through direct statements addressed personally to God, but through the attitude to Scripture, through the application of Scripture and through statements with regards to the Word of God perhaps not working in his life.

If the wife is slow to repent when she is in error, it is probably because the husband is slow to repent to Jesus when he is in error. If the wife is not making love to the husband in a pleasing and fulfilling manner, it is probably because the husband is not praising and worshipping Jesus in a manner that is pleasing to Jesus and so forth. The bottom line is husband, if you do not like something about the way your wife treats you, it is probably a reflection of the manner in which you are treating Jesus. What you are sowing, you are reaping.

This is actually grace from God, because it provides the husband with a more tangible indicator of his relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ from which he can learn, make adjustments and see if the adjustments are taking effect. The relationship between the father and the children is a similar mirror of the relationship between the Father and God the Father, Yahweh, and the relationship between the children and the mother, is a similar mirror of her relationship with her husband. All of these spiritual mirrors are grace from God to assist us to draw closer to Him. This revelation provides a startling indication as to why it is generally unacceptable in the Sight of God for men to divorce his wife because of her unacceptable conduct. If Yahweh were to apply the same standards that the world applies, Jesus would reject us very easily indeed.

If the husband uses these mirrors as an indication and takes action to correct his behaviour towards Jesus, but the wife persists in her conduct because she does not want to change behaviour learnt over time, then a situation of division may arise which requires further action. This is the subject of this teaching. Then, and only then is she truly in rebellion and betraying her husband spiritually. In other words, if the husband has looked closely at everything that is wrong in his life and has really gone before the Throne of God and confessed that there are problems, and sought God urgently by prayer and fasting in whatever manner, to get to the bottom of the problems, and really sought to change his heart, if his wife continues in her old behaviour and does not respond to the change in behaviour of her husband, then we are getting to a place where the wife can truly be viewed as being in rebellion.

There is absolutely no basis on which a husband can justifiably persist in being angry with his wife or being unhappy with his wife, if the reality is that her conduct is a harvest which she is reaping as a consequence of what he is sowing towards God. And having made that point, it is important that we understand and see very clearly that the spiritual mirrors that are just been referred to, indicate that the Church currently is in a shocking state in terms of its relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ, as measured by the 60% plus level of divorce in the Body of Christ. If God were to treat the Church the way the Church is treating marriage at the moment, the vast majority of the Body of Christ will find itself cast into the pit for eternity and not ruling and reigning as so many seem to think will be the case.

## Covering

We also looked at the subject of covering, and the impact on the husband of his wife's sin. From a scriptural point of view, a wife is under a husband's covering in the same way that the husband is under Jesus' covering. I have shown, during the teachings, that the covering can be seen as a sort of rigid umbrella. As long as one is under the umbrella, i.e., under the covering, nothing can harm you. Once you step out from under the umbrella by sinning, all the forces of hell rain down upon you and Satan will attack anyway that he can. The same applies to a wife. As long as she is in complete submission to her husband, nothing can touch her. All attacks will be directed first at the husband because he is the covering. So if he sins, but she remains in submission, he will bear the full brunt of his sin.

However, if the wife is in rebellion, not only will her sin attract attack, which will come primarily on the husband, but a proportion will rain down on her directly in so far as she has stepped out from under her husband's covering. The Lord showed me two elderly woman of similar age whose husbands have known each other since childhood, who had been in similar professional occupations, and who had lived in the same town most of their lives. One woman had been willing and cheerfully in submission to her husband throughout his life, and he had lived to a ripe old age. She was still sprightly and full of life. The other had insisted on doing things her way and had not been in anything near full submission. Her husband had died at a much earlier age and in poor health. She herself was bent over and stooped under the weight of the sin she had brought down on herself by continuously stepping out from under her husband's covering and undermining her husband. The contrast was startling.

The Lord also showed me that a woman who has reached adulthood without marrying, and particularly one who has started her own career, lived on her own, and had her own job before marrying, establishes a sort of proxy self-covering for herself, as an offshoot from her father's covering. If this proxy covering is not renounced, torn down and actively replaced by her husband's covering at the time of marriage, she will experience immense difficulty in accepting her husband's covering and submitting to him. Where a woman has been married and divorces and remarries, she will still be walking technically under her ex-husband's covering unless she renounces this covering and accepts the covering of her new husband. This is assuming that a divorce was sanctioned by God, which is the case with a relatively limited number of divorces. Because of the power of the One Flesh Bond which makes the wife bone of the husband's bone, and flesh of his flesh, she is able to cause a sensation of rotteness in his bones as we have seen previously. Proverbs 12:4 states, *"An excellent wife is the crown of her husband, but she who causes shame is like rotteness in his bones."*

## Love like Jesus loves

We also saw in Proverbs 14:1, *"The wise woman builds her house, but the foolish pulls it down with her hands."* The imagery is powerful. A wife is being given enormous potential for good or bad in her husband's house. Again, this poses a dilemma. What does a God-fearing man do when his wife repeatedly conducts herself in a manner that causes her to be to him as rotteness is in his bones, and which pulls his house down? Particularly if he is seeking to love her unconditionally like Jesus loves, and he cannot bear the thought of divorcing her, but he cannot see any other way. This teaching develops a scriptural approach to this problem. The power of love and the short circle of fear.

As we gained understanding in these areas, I became increasingly conscious of the need to love like Jesus loved. We had a series of teachings in terms of which we first saw the basic scriptural basis, in terms of which love was so important. We then went through a teaching of asking ourselves whether

we love the way Jesus loved. Then subsequently in the preceding teaching, we explored through the book, *'Lord, teach me how to love'*, what some of the steps were that were required for us to love like Jesus loves, to walk in the love of God, to walk in forgiveness, etc. I certainly was immensely challenged by the subject of the teaching and I believe that many other Christians who are sincere about serving God would have been similarly challenged.

So, out of that flows the love which takes 1 Corinthians 13 and Galatians 5 literally. Just to read those scriptures verbatim, 1 Corinthians 13 *"Though I speak with the tongues of men and of Angels, but have not love, I have become sounding brass or a clanging cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, but have not love, I am nothing. And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, but have not love, it profits me nothing.*

*Love suffers long and is kind; love does not envy; love does not parade itself, is not puffed up; does not behave rudely, does not seek its own, is not provoked, thinks no evil; does not rejoice in iniquity, but rejoices in the truth; bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things. Love never fails. But whether there are prophecies, they will fail; whether there are tongues, they will cease; whether there is knowledge, it will vanish away."* 1 Corinthians 13:1-8 and what we saw there is that love never fails. Love never dies. Love never comes to an end. Love is eternal. At the end of the age, prophecies will cease, tongues will cease, knowledge will vanish away. We will reside in heaven for eternity with the Father, and with Jesus, and love will continue in that time. Everything else would have passed away. Heaven and Earth would have passed away, but love alone will continue. Therefore the seeds of love that we sow in our lives now have immense bearing on our future lives. And by the same token, they have immense bearing on our present lives.

Galatians 5:22-23, *"But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, gladness, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, benevolence, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control, self-restraint, continence. Against such things there is no law."* Taking those two passages of Scripture together, we see an immensely challenging, but immensely important statement of the love that we should have for one another, for neighbours and for God, and also in our marriages.

I share that as I applied those principles and opened my heart. I began to experience a physically tangible flow of love. Joyner in his book, *'The Final Quest'* which reports a series of visions in which he was transported into the third Heaven describes this far better than I can. Describing the love that he experienced from a particular person, he reports *"Opening his arms, he gave me a great hug and kissed my forehead like a father. Love poured over me and through me until I felt that it would overload my nervous system. When he finally released me, I was staggering as if I were drunk, but it was a wonderful feeling. It was love like I had never felt it before. I began to realise that love like this is available to each of us and is particularly available to husband and wife in marriage."*

This is the love that husbands are commanded in Scripture to give their wives. But to experience this love, we must love unconditionally. We must take down all our defences and we must give, expecting nothing in return. Then we will experience this love flowing out of us to our wives, our children and those around us and they will experience it flowing from us to the extent that they are willing to receive.

A wife who has her own defences up, who is not in submission to her husband, who is betraying, criticising, finding fault with, or attacking her husband, will have great difficulty receiving such love. In the same way that when our lives are wrong with God, we cannot experience His love towards us even

though it is there and ever present. I also came to understand that this form of love is power. This is the power whereby Jesus raised the dead, healed the sick and so forth. It is the Love of God and the Power of God. Until we come to walk in this love, we are powerless and useless to God and our spouses and our children. This is an immensely sobering realisation as very few people on Earth today even consider that such love can exist, let alone walk in it. At the same time, I discovered that love has some of the characteristics of an electric current. That is why we sometimes experience tingling and similar sensations under the anointing. It flows to those who will receive it. But if a man's wife is in bondage to fear, doubt, and unbelief, and this triggers rebellion and lack of submission in her, this connects her to Satan's negative power. This is not a power source. It is a power drain.

So, when a man is starting to walk in this kind of love, and his wife suddenly opens her heart to fear or rebellion, he is connected directly to the power of God, which is love, and she is connected directly to the power-hungry world of Satan's sphere, which is never satisfied. This produces an outcome like a short-circuit in the electricity. If a massive electric potential is suddenly directly connected to Earth with no resistance, massive electric currents flow until the conductor burns out or the power source is exhausted. In this case, God's love is never exhausted. So the conductor, the husband, suffers massive spiritual overload and finds himself completely spiritually debilitated. Because he is one with Christ and is starting to tap into the love power of God, and his wife is walking in fear and is tapping into the negative drain of Satan's power, and something has to give. Either one, the husband puts up a barrier between himself and Jesus Christ and stops tapping into the love power of God, two, the husband puts up a barrier between himself and his wife to prevent her short-circuiting his love to fear, or thirdly, the wife changes her behaviour, resists fear, submits to her husband and receives his love and loves him in return.

Clearly, the first option is unthinkable. To do this, the man would be making an idol of his wife and putting her before his love for Jesus. Equally clearly the third option is the option to be preferred. However, sadly, the wife does not always see things this way. If she is in bondage to fear and is believing Satan's lie, she cannot necessarily take the spiritual measures necessary to resist Satan and accept her husband's love in humble submission. In such a case, the husband is left with no choice but to adopt the second option, i.e., to put in place a protective barrier to prevent his wife's fear, doubt, and unbelief from short-circuiting his love. In doing this, he must act in love in order that he can come to the place with perfect love and cast out all fear. Incidentally, a similar thing happens in our relationship with Jesus and the Father. If we tap into fear, He cannot pour His love into us because we would be destroyed by the raw spiritual power flowing through us. We have to resist the devil, and in particular, resist fear and seek His love by faith.

If we do not, and we get into increasing sin, there comes a time when our disloyalty creates a distance or a separation, in which Jesus is forced to take his hand off us and permit us to go the way we have chosen. At this time, he cannot pay attention to certain of our prayers. Many people have described this as a brass ceiling experience. But note that in a court of law, a prayer is the request or application of the applicant in a court action. If the applicant is legally disqualified, then the court pays no attention to the prayer. At this point, Satan has effectively got [inaudible 00:29:51] to use all our sin and to attack us in any way he chooses. It is important to note that Yahweh does not command or force our love or submission to Him or to Jesus. He gives us a free choice.

By the same token, a husband cannot command or force or bribe his wife to love him or submit to him. It is a free choice on her part. The husband thus finds himself in a very difficult position. The spiritual short-circuit is the fundamental driver behind God's spiritual definition of treachery, fornication or pornea, which is the ultimate scriptural basis for divorce. Note, in particular that if the



wife has joined herself to another man, then whatever love flows from the husband will be short-circuited through the wife into that other man and so on, indefinitely, debilitating spiritual drain. This is why it is absolutely critical to understand that adultery and fornication are not conceptual meaningless legal terms. They are disastrous and debilitating spiritual states, which can only be dealt with according to the Word of God and by the mercy and the Grace of God.

Returning for a moment to the point of divorce, the point where the disloyalty, treachery and the resulting spiritual short-circuit had become so entrenched and so persistent, and a wife shows no signs of repenting, is the point at which the husband may divorce her. No earlier than that. If a husband is required to do as Jesus does, everything in his power through prayer and supplication, through laying down his life in prayer and fasting and in whatever way the Holy Spirit leads him to seek his wife's deliverance, that she may come into a place where she can willingly submit to him according to the Word of God. It is only when the husband has done all that there is for him to do, all that God requires him to do, and the wife has still steadfastly refused to come into harmony, agreement and submission, then, and only then will the Father permit divorce.

### **Treachery**

So, we again find ourselves through the gap in our understanding between the point at which the husband first becomes aware of the short-circuit or treachery and the point at which his wife's persistent treachery warrants divorce in the Sight of God.

Responding to a wife's treachery: We know that God's way is profitable and easy, but it requires personal self discipline and voluntary sacrifice. On the other hand, rebellion is an insistence on seeing God's way of being burdensome, unprofitable, and personally prejudicial. This results in refusal to discipline oneself and to give the required sacrifices of service, love, praise, and worship. Rebellion favours self-service, self-love, self-righteousness and general idolatry of self. Rebellion stems from pride from 'I', from Satan. Godly love is something that is given freely, so is godly submission. If a wife refuses to love her husband in terms of 1 Corinthians 13, believes the best, etc., he can do nothing about it in his own strength. Love cannot be demanded or commanded. It cannot be earned. Love is something that is given. It is a free will, a conscious act of the will. It is a decision, it is a choice. It is not something that is bought. It is not something that is demanded.

As much as the husband's spirit is grieved and hurt, there is nothing he can do to obtain loyalty, love and submission that the wife chooses not to give as a freewill offering. The more the husband shouts, castigates, and upbraids the wife in response to her treachery, the more fear will grab her and entrench the lies that she believes about it. This is profoundly challenging in terms of the Scriptures regarding rottenness in the bones and so forth. If the husband seeks to walk in love and put God first in his life, the more the love of God flows free into his wife, the more debilitating any active treachery on her part will be. He in turn is required not to revile her. Refer to 1 Peter 2. In considering this situation, we must note that nowhere in Scripture do we find any verses that expressly command or even permit a husband to discipline a rebellious wife, though one might argue from the Scriptures relating to the chastening of the Lord that there is some basis.

Deuteronomy 11:2, *"Know today that I do not speak with your children, who have not known and who have not seen the chastening of the Lord your God, His greatness and His mighty hand and His outstretched arm."* Job 5:17, *"Behold, happy is the man whom God corrects; therefore do not despise the chastening of the Almighty."* Proverbs 3:11, *"My son, do not despise the chastening of the Lord, nor detest His correction."* Hebrews 12:4-9 *"You have not yet resisted to bloodshed, striving against*

*sin. And you have forgotten the exhortation which speaks to you as to sons: 'My son, do not despise the chastening of the Lord, nor be discouraged when you are rebuked by Him; for whom the Lord loves He chastens, and scourges every son whom He receives.' If you endure chastening, God deals with you as with sons; for what son is there whom a father does not chasten? But if you are without chastening, of which all have become partakers, then you are illegitimate and not sons. Furthermore, we have had human fathers who corrected us, and we paid them respect. Shall we not much more readily be in subjection to the Father of spirits and live?"*

However, all of these relate to Yahweh, the Father treating us as children and not to Jesus disciplining his bride. So the Scripture is applied to a father and his children, not a husband and his wife. This does indicate that either Yahweh, or Jesus will discipline the wife since Yahweh disciplines us on behalf of his son Jesus. And presumably Jesus will discipline our wives on our behalf. Yahweh uses Satan as the advisory, or destroyer to discipline us as is clearly shown by judging experience. This is the bottom line of the answer I got to my prayer about how to respond to a treacherous wife when a husband has done all he knows to do to get his own life right with God. The answer was simply hand her over to Satan that she may learn to submit. Understanding the scriptural basis of this instruction, in terms of the preceding discussion, it is apparent that a time will come where the husband is no longer able to bear these attacks by his wife, or the spiritual drain that results. This assumes that the husband has laid down his life in prayer and fasting, and in seeking Yahweh for guidance in judgement of his own sin, and the sin of his house. Also, that he has accepted his accountability before God for the sin of his house and has responsibly sought to deal with every area of sin in his life, and the life of his family that the Holy Spirit has convicted him of.

Once he has done these things, and only once he has done them to Yahweh's satisfaction, will be husband find himself in a position to take the next step, which is to withdraw his covering and hand his wife over to Satan to be disciplined for her own sin. The husband remains accountable to Yahweh for his sin and the broader sin of his house and must realise that when he takes this step, he must expect any areas of his life where he has been less diligent in attending to correcting his own sin to come under a harsh spotlight before the judgment seat.

1 Corinthians 5:4-7 provides the scriptural basis for this action. *"In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when you are gathered together, along with my Spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, deliver such a one to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that his spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus. Your glorying is not good. Do you not know that a little leaven leavens the whole lump? Therefore purge out the old leaven, that you may be a new lump, since you truly are unleavened. For indeed Christ, our Passover, was sacrificed for us."*

We see a number of points here. Firstly, this is for the destruction of the flesh and we are told elsewhere in Scripture that we should be crucified with Christ that we should put our flesh to death daily. So, this is simply a measure to open the door for Satan to more directly deal with the carnal aspects of the wife's conduct, which are leading to the sin that is being dealt with. We also see that it is for a season. It is not something that is permanent. We are not taking some vicious action to destroy the party concerned. Divorce is a far greater violence. We read in Malachi that putting away unjustly is an act of treachery and act of violence. Handling a rebellious wife over to Satan is an act of mercy and grace, to provide her with an opportunity to reassess the position to carry the consequences of her own sin and to provide her with a basis to turn around and repent and come alongside her husband as Scripture requires.

The passage quoted relates to a particular instance of sexual sin which is not relevant to this teaching, but it does confirm a scriptural principle which is clearly evident in the passages regarding the chastening of the Lord cited previously and particularly in Job's experience. From consideration of this, it became clear that once the husband has done all that he can do, by which I mean repented prayer, fasting, humbling himself before Almighty God, repenting and making right, explicitly acknowledging his covering before God, including explicitly praying to extend his covering over his wife, accepting responsibility for her sins, seeing his relationship with Jesus and Yahweh mirrored in his wife and children respectively, and diligently seeking to walk in 1 Corinthians 13 love, then and only then, and preferably at the leading of the Spirit of God, may he take action against his wife. Such action will comprise the husband withdraws his covering over his wife in respect of all sin where she is not in submission to him, and is in rebellion against him. The husband asks the Father in the name of Jesus to judge his wife severely and correct her harshly that they may come into unity before God.

At the same time, the husband must continue to seek God's judgements in his own life. Three, the husband hands his wife over to Satan that she may learn to submit, cease to fear, and cease to rebel. Four, the husband increases his intercession and prayer for his wife's deliverance and wages whatever spiritual warfare the Spirit of God leads him to wage. Five, the husband erects a spiritual barrier to prevent the short-circuiting of his love. In other words, he does not stop loving her, but he does stop pouring his love out to her. In this mode, he should refrain from sexual intercourse unless his wife expressly comes to him for lovemaking. He should refrain from other acts of love, hugs, kisses, etc. towards his wife unless she expressly comes to him for them with a submissive attitude.

He should refrain from any other overt gestures of love that he has been making in an effort to win her affection. The husband is not told anywhere in Scripture to court his wife to win her affection. Both are commanded by Scripture to love, and the giving and receiving of love are required to be unconditional. It is therefore no onus on the husband to make any overt gestures to win her love, or to reassure her. In fact, the history of seeking to earn his wife's love may be at the heart of the problem. The husband is not to be unpleasant to his wife in any way. He is not to sulk, or any other way punish her by his behaviour other than to send her a clear message that her behaviour is not acceptable and that he is obliged to take measures to safeguard his family spiritually, and also in love, to bring about correction in her life through the mechanisms provided in Scripture.

Six, at the same time, the husband should spell out to his wife that she is now accountable before God for her conduct in the areas stated, and that he is no longer going to express continuous concern regarding unscriptural conduct. This assumes that he has taken all reasonable measures to ensure before taking this step that his wife understands what behaviour is unacceptable, and what the scriptural basis is for his stating that this behaviour is unacceptable.

This series of teaching tapes address most of the factors which would need to be dealt with before reaching this point. In fact, I would go so far to say it would be highly desirable for a husband and wife together to listen to all the tapes in this series up to and including this tape, before the husband takes the serious step of withdrawing his covering and handing his wife over to Satan for a season that has been discussed in this teaching.

### **Repentance from the wife**

Once this has been put in place and the wife has been handed over to Satan, the husband must be sensitive to discern the point at which his wife is ready to repent and turn around. Whether that happens after a few hours, a few days or weeks can only be determined by the Spirit of God. If he is

truly walking in love, the husband should be constantly on the lookout for indications of heartfelt desire for change and he should not hesitate to intervene where it appears certain that this is in place. Since the husband is responsible for teaching his wife, he must then guide her to deal with whatever issues may be required and lead her gently to making the necessary confessions of his sin, repenting and receiving forgiveness from himself, praying the necessary prayers of confession, repentance, and receiving forgiveness to the Father. This is not a time for 'I told you so', it is a time for rejoicing that repentance and healing of the marriage relationship.

2 Corinthians 2:1-11 provides the scriptural basis for such restoration. *"But I determined this within myself, that I would not come again to you in sorrow. For if I make you sorrowful, then who is he who makes me glad but the one who is made sorrowful by me? And I wrote this very thing to you, lest, when I came, I should have sorrow over those from whom I ought to have joy, having confidence in you all that my joy is the joy of you all. For out of much affliction and anguish of heart I wrote to you, with many tears, not that you should be grieved, but that you might know the love which I have so abundantly for you. But if anyone has caused grief, he has not grieved me, but all of you to some extent—not to be too severe. This punishment which was inflicted by the majority is sufficient for such a man, so that, on the contrary, you ought rather to forgive and comfort him, lest perhaps such a one be swallowed up with too much sorrow. Therefore I urge you to reaffirm your love to him. For to this end I also wrote, that I might put you to the test, whether you are obedient in all things. Now whom you forgive anything, I also forgive. For if indeed I have forgiven anything, I have forgiven that one for your sakes in the presence of Christ, lest Satan should take advantage of us; for we are not ignorant of his devices."*

At this point, the husband should, in the presence of his wife, expressly pray to extend his covering over his wife once more to accept responsibility for her sin, to release all barriers he has erected and most importantly, instruct Satan to desist from taking any further action against his wife independently of the husband. [inaudible 00:47:12] her life is extremely serious and is a step down the road which may ultimately lead to divorce and potentially to loss of salvation. She should therefore reverently fear the recurrence of such a situation and should seek God and the guidance of her husband with renewed vigour in order to come into agreement and harmony with him. Note to this action, which in terms of the current Church paradigm would be viewed as very harsh as to the contrary in the act of mercy. It is far better than an offender is handed over for disciplining and that they should be divorced, which implies that they are beyond redemption.

This is an immensely challenging subject. However, it is critical in this age, with over two-thirds of all marriages ending in divorce, or putting away, with reports of being more divorces in the Church than outside the Church. Furthermore, with increasing indications that great Spiritual tribulation is already upon many in the Church and that great physical tribulation in the form of a possible Third World War with major persecution is not far away. It is vital that all who call on the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, sanctify themselves and set themselves apart for His service. This requires that those whose marriages are not all they could be, take all necessary measures to seek Yahweh to restore and heal their marriage. The principle set out in this teaching and those that are presented in the tape series which preceded it, are vital to accomplishing the subject.

Finally, God the Father and Yahweh intends marriage to be the most wonderful experience on Earth. He literally intends it to be Heaven on Earth in terms of the magnitude of love, the magnitude of spiritual power, unity, and so forth. I would really like to challenge all of you who listened to this tape to set aside all your ideas you have of marriage which do not fit the description and dare to believe that your marriage can be Heaven on Earth.

In closing, I should just note, as mentioned in one or two previous teachings, the word Yahweh, is used in this teaching to reflect the fact that the correct translation of the Hebrew word translated, the LORD, in the King James version, and many others is in fact, Yahweh. Yahweh is the proper name for our God and occurs 6828 times in the Old Testament. [inaudible 00:49:44] states Lord, the divine name, Yahweh, appears only in the Bible. Its precise meaning is much debated. God chose it as His personal name by which He related specifically to His chosen or covenant people. By way of analogy, my proper name is James, and I have the designation of husband to my wife. It would not be indicative of a meaningful marriage relationship with my wife if you constantly refer to me as husband rather than James. In the same way, it is not indicative of a meaningful relationship with our God to refer to Him as Lord, rather than Yahweh when He has given us His name to use and He uses it throughout Scripture.

Following the name of Jesus, I pray that if there is anything that I have uttered in this teaching that is not of You and not according to Your Word that You will blow it away and it will find no root in the hearers. Likewise, I pray in the name of Jesus that everything that has been spoken that is according to Your Will and according to Your Word will find root in the hearts of the hearers and it will bear abundant fruit, in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, king of kings and Lord of Lords, Saviour of the world. Amen.

## **03 18 Is Polygamy Scriptural?**

***James Robertson -- 1 April 2000***

In the marriage series, entitled '*Is Polygamy Scriptural*.' The original teaching was recorded on April 1, 2000, but is a logical continuation of the series. This particular teaching recognises that earlier tapes in the series have raised the point that since marriage is the taking of a woman's virginity, it is technically possible for a man to marry more than one woman. Previous teachings have also addressed the point that it appears to be God's own heart that men, in this age, should provide a covering to more than one woman. It is being indicated that this is a necessary consequence of the excess of women over men in the Church and that excess was in fact foretold in Scripture in Isaiah 4:1 and is widely evident. This particular teaching is in response to arguments advanced to suggest that monogamy is in fact a Christian doctrine. It seeks to address some of the arguments presented based on a television programme.

### **Polygamy**

This is a question of whether polygamy is scriptural. This is first of the two-part series. Recently a Christian television programme was broadcast on the subject of, "*Is Polygamy Scriptural*" and viewers comments were invited. The following Sunday the same programme broadcast viewers' comments, one of which supported the view that Scripture permitted a man to have more than one wife and one opposed it. The commentary on the viewers' comments offered an interpretation to support the view that Scripture did not permit a man to have more than one wife.

This document analyses the arguments presented in favour of, and against the thesis that Scripture prohibits a man from having more than one wife.

The teaching is based on the document of the same name which contains more supporting information and is available on request. The following is a summary of the programme and what followed. In the body of the television programme, reference was made to the fact that the new constitution of the Republic of South Africa permits polygamy. Interviews were conducted with two family units. One comprising a man with three wives, and another with two wives. Both interviewees expressed themselves in favour of this lifestyle and stated that one wife would not be able to conduct all the business of the family in support of the husband. Both of these men professed to be Christian and one stated that his conduct was permitted by Scripture.

The programme included a discussion panel, one member of which was a lady theology professor who argued in favour of men having more than one wife, on the basis that there are more women than men in society. The Church representative who argued against a man having more than one wife based his argument on Matthew 19:5-6, *"For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh. So then, they are no longer two but one flesh. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate."*

He stated that since the Scripture referred to two, it could obviously not mean three. Other than this, there was almost no reference to Scripture in the programme even that claimed to be a Christian programme. The programme closed without a definitive conclusion, although most viewers probably concluded that the programme had demonstrated that it was a good thing for man to have more than one wife, other than from consideration of the Scripture referred to. In the viewers' comments part of the programme the following week, only two views were broadcast. The first was from a woman objecting to the apparent conclusion that it was acceptable for a man to have more than one wife, and the second, from a man who presented a number of Scriptures and arguments to the effect that he claimed that Scripture clearly permitted a man to have more than one wife, that *'the doctrine of enforced monogamy'* was keeping millions of people out of the kingdom of God and was a stumbling block to the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

He went on to assert that *'enforced monogamy'* was a *'doctrine of demons'* and *'heresy of the worst kind.'* The commentary on the viewer's contributions offered a number of Scriptures and an interpretation based on which it was concluded that those who argued that Scripture permitted a man to have more than one wife, were clearly mistaken, and that their arguments were *'difficult to back up.'*

The conclusion of this commentary was that Scripture did not permit a man to have more than one wife, and that by implication the Constitution of the Republic of South Africa was contrary to the Word of God on this issue, and furthermore the people interviewed on the programme the previous week were living in sin. This is a far-reaching conclusion which seems worthy of careful consideration before it is expected.

You may ask why you should read this discourse and why you should concern yourself with whether a Scripture permits a man to have more than one wife versus the claim that Scripture prohibits a man from having more than one wife. In the first instance, the conclusions reached on the programme effectively passed a judgement on the people interviewed the previous week, and then the Constitution of the Republic of South Africa. By extension it passed a judgment on the lifestyle common to millions of South Africans and others around the world. If this judgement is correct, then millions and possibly billions of people are potentially facing eternal hellfire in the Day of Judgement and need to be warned. However, if the protagonists in Scripture permitting a man to have more than one wife are to be believed, there is another group of people who could be facing judgment.

As with previous discussions in this series, it is apparent that there can only be one correct interpretation and those with advanced view alternative school of thought may potentially face serious consequences on the Day of Judgement. From a scriptural perspective this discussion is important for a wide variety of reasons. 1 John 5:3 states, *"For this is the love of God, that we keep His Commandments. And His Commandments are not burdensome."* Surely if we love God, we will not seek to alter His word. Proverbs 30:5-6 states, *"Every word of God is pure; He is a shield to those who put their trust in Him. Do not add to His words, lest He rebuke you, and you be found a liar."* Surely no one would want to add to the Word of God and find themselves rebuked on the Day of Judgement.

Revelation 21:8 states, *"But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death."* If by adding to the Word of God one is found a liar, then one is condemned to a part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone. And therefore one should certainly not want to add to the Word of God.

### **Marriage – a prophetic statement**

From a different perspective, the October 1999 issue of Joy magazine contains an article entitled *'Wow! So that's how Jesus loves me!'* written by John and Helen Gardiner. This article presents a powerful argument in support of marriage being a prophetic statement concerning the relationship between the Church and the Lord Jesus Christ. It also provides a powerful argument as to why Satan is seeking to destroy marriage. This provides another more positive reason why the analysis presented in this document is important. The document on which this teaching is based contains a verbatim transcript of the programme and commentary. I am quoting from the programme all names have been removed. The objective is to analyse the content and not the people who were responsible for delivering the content. In this way it is hoped to avoid a situation in which anyone speaks against the Lord's anointed.

In opening the programme, the commentator stated *"Polygamy, the practice of having two or more wives or husbands at the same time was dismissed by most Christians as unbiblical. Previous South African government went so far as to outlaw the practice until the constitution was amended in 1994. But long before 1994, many African independent Churches endorsed polygamy and held and blessed wedding ceremonies of a bigamist or polygamous nature, much to the dismay of Christians who felt that this practice was not in line with the Word of God and despite the fact these marriages were not legally recognised. Constitutional law now makes provision for polygamy on the basis that it is part of customary law but the disagreement amongst Christians is still as strong as it ever was. In trying to get to grips with the issue of multiple marriage partners, we have in the studio two Christian leaders and a theologian with an unconventional view point."*

In the introduction, it was stated that the lady theology professor had written extensively on the subject of polygamy and maintains that polygamy was a worthwhile alternative to the ever-increasing rate of divorce. It was stated that the second panellist was adamant that polygamy was not in line with the teachings of the Bible, and therefore could not be an option for God-fearing Christians and it was also stated that the third panellist had said that there was no Scripture that blatantly prohibited polygamy, and that as an African traditional practice, it should be accepted as part of inculturation in the Church.

The following are headlines from the programme. The second panellist stated that he really believed that polygamy should not be accepted as part of Christian teachings, and that people should be told

that in the order of Creation, it was not the ideal. The first panellist stated that polygamy is a subject for discussion in the Church since the [inaudible 00:10:39] 500 years ago. The second panellist stated that he would still maintain that in the order of Creation, God created humans, male and female and did not create many Eves, and one Adam. The first panellist responded by asking about all the patriarchs who had more than one wife and then stated *"Let's look at polygamy from a woman's point of view. The recent debate on polygamy started off with a question. What are we going to do with all the women who are single or divorced and who do not have access to regular relationships. They become mistresses or they become very lonely. What are we going to do with the 200 women to every 70 men we have?"*

An interview was then shown with a polygamous family in Kwa-Zulu Natal. The first man interviewed stated *"There is a provision that is there in the Bible that a man can marry as many women as he likes if he loves them. It is there in the Bible even though I cannot quote it now, but it is there."* The second wife stated that she married her husband because she loved him, despite all the other unmarried men around, she loved him and therefore she married him. The third and youngest wife said that their family was as happy and united as any other family.

The interviewer asked the third panellist if he did not think that polygamy was degrading to women. He replied that what he thought was degrading to women was monogamy and suggested that divorce happens mostly in the monogamous marriages and not in polygamous marriages. The first panellist stated that most western men are polygamous either as serial polygamists who marry one woman and divorce her, marry the next, and divorce her and so forth, or have mistresses. The second panellist stated that in his opinion polygamy dehumanises people, and specifically women.

The second polygamist family was then interviewed. The husband in this marriage stated that polygamy was popular in his area because there was a lot of work to do in the homes. Instead of hiring a person, it was preferable to take additional wives. His first wife stated that with her husband's healing practise and Church duties, two wives were necessary, for example, to attend to patients in the middle of the night. Both his wives grew up in polygamous families. In response to this interview, the second panellist stated that people engage in polygamy because of human weakness of this permissiveness to which the third panellist responded that polygamy was not about debauchery, nor was it a question of people going head hunting for sex partners.

The interviewer asked the first panellist if they could reconcile polygamy with the Scriptures, referring specifically to the Scripture cited earlier in Genesis 2:24 relating to the One Flesh Bond. This panellist replied that by becoming one flesh was just a term for sexual intercourse. So man became one flesh with his own wife and became one flesh with his other wife. She further stated that we should not underestimate the power of women, or the ability of women for sisterhood in polygamous marriages. The interviewer concluded by thanking viewers for joining them and then quoted Ecclesiastes 4:12 *"Though one may be overpowered by another, two can withstand him. And a threefold cord is not quickly broken."* In the case of marriage, a cord of four strains be even stronger or does it break the balance. She asked the viewers' opinions and closed the programme.

The following Sunday, the contributions from viewers were broadcast. The following extract from the transcript of the programme said this. The first viewer who wrote in stated *"Pardon the criticism, but anyway if it is to present unbiased and broadminded discussions of subjects to your direction as a religious programme is lost. Or I have misunderstood your intentions. Sociological arguments are bound for polygamy, but theology, even by a theologian seemed absent. Christianity embraces everything as acceptable for the so-called multi-culturalism. If not, then where must the line be drawn."*



In response the interviewer stated, *"We did our best to present all sides of the story, but that does not mean that we agree or endorse them. As far as we are concerned, the Bible, God's word is the last word on the subject and if our programme got viewers reaching for their Bibles to see what God has to say on the matter, then we achieved our goal. If it didn't, well, here are some of the Scriptures which we think should be considered very carefully before people start embracing polygamy."*

*Matthew 19:4-6 was displayed on the screen. "Have you not read that He who made them at the beginning 'made them male and female,' and said, 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh?'" 1 Corinthians 7:2 was then displayed. "But since there is so much immorality, each man should have his own wife, and each woman have her own husband." This was followed by 1 Timothy 3:2 "A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, temperate, sober-minded, of good behaviour, hospitable, able to teach."*

The interviewer then reported with regards to a second viewer that he had some very different interpretations of Scripture on the subject of multiple marriage partners, claiming that while Scripture permitted a man to have more than one wife, it did not permit polygamy. The interviewer continued *"So what's the difference you ask. The true definition of polygamy is that a man can have more than one wife and that a woman can have more than one husband."* The viewer said that Scripture does not allow for this. He claims that a man can have more than one wife, but a woman who wants more than one husband can forget it. A video clip of this viewer was then played in which the following statements were made. The Scriptures permit a man to have more than one wife.

Deuteronomy 21:15 states *"If a man has two wives, one loved and the other unloved,"* clearly in this and dozens of other Scriptures God permits a man to have more than one wife. One of the implications of enforced monogamy millions of non-Christians cannot expect monogamy as being from God and reject Christ. Monogamy has destroyed the fabric of family life in many nations. Millions of men and women fail to live within the yoke of monogamy. The crucial scriptural importance of virginity is disregarded and now adultery is condemned.

Many Christian women cannot find husbands as prophesied in Isaiah 4:1. Enforced monogamy is a stumbling block to the Gospel of Jesus Christ that is sending millions of souls to hell. 1 Timothy 4 prophesied that in these days many will give heed to doctrines of Demons and forbid people to marry. Surely, this relates to forbidding marriage to more than one wife. Clearly enforced monogamy is heresy of the worst crime. The interviewer responded to this clip with the following statement. That is quite a strong statement, but we believe that you have made some assumptions, which may be a little difficult to back up with scriptural proof. Scripture simply mentioning polygamy cannot automatically be assumed to justify polygamy.

Genesis 2:24 was displayed on screen. *"For this reason a man will leave his father and his mother and be united to his wife and they will become one flesh."* While Genesis 2:24 was displayed, the interviewer stated *"We must remember that the first union in the Bible between Adam and Eve reveals that the first marriage ordained by God was a monogamous one. Polygamy first appeared in the corrupt line of Cain where Lamech took two wives. Genesis 4:19 was then displayed on screen. "Lamech married two women, one named Adah and the other Zillah."*

### **Israel and Polygamy**

The interviewer then stated under the judges and monarchy, the rule of man, not God, Israel shifted toward a looser form of polygamy, but it is clear that the most common form of marriage was

monogamy and amongst the commoners no cases of polygamy are found in the books of Samuel or Kings. The following note was then displayed on screen, Ezekiel 16:1-63 relates an allegory of Israel as one bride of the one true God, and the interviewer stated the image of a monogamous marriage was in the minds of the prophets who represented Israel as the one wife chosen by the one God, and you can read up about this allegory in Ezekiel 16. Ephesians 5:23 was then displayed on the screen. *"For the husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the Church;"* and the interviewer stated this is parallel to the New Testament picture of the Church as the one bride of the one Lord Jesus. The interviewer continued Jewish writings over the time of the Talmudic period and the high regard held for monogamous marriages. This concluded the broadcast. Since we are concerned with what the Lord's view on this matter is, unless we must be determined strictly from the holy Scriptures, I will analyse the Scriptures used in the discussion in interviews first.

### References in Scripture

The first thing that is striking about the debate is that while two of the delegates were ordained ministers and one was a professor of theology, very few Scriptures were cited by either side. In fact, from the discussion one could be forgiven for thinking that Scripture was almost entirely silent on what must surely be a key aspect of doctrine. There is an enormous difference between a man being permitted to have more than one wife and he is not being so permitted by Scripture, particularly when two families have been interviewed who could be living in serious sin, if the argument that polygamy is not permitted by Scripture is valid.

A number of references, direct and indirect, were made to Scripture. The second panellist held a clear cut view that Scripture only permits monogamy. No Scripture was offered to support this view, so it was a difficult statement to analyse effectively. The third panellist said that he saw absolutely no passage of biblical Scripture that says that polygamy was a sin. The second panellist continued to state that in the order of Creation, God had created humans, male and female and He did not create many Eves, and one Adam. Even this does not explicitly quote a Scripture which states that God only intended the man to have one wife but infers this from the story of Creation.

The *'order of Creation'* argument immediately presents some difficulty. Since The Lord only created one man and one woman, it seems apparent that the first generation of children must have intermarried. In other words, brothers had to marry sisters. However, today it is illegal for a man to marry his sister. It is referred to as incest. Furthermore in Leviticus 20:17 this was explicitly forbidden. *"If a man takes his sister, his father's daughter or his mother's daughter, and sees her nakedness and she sees his nakedness, it is a wicked thing. And they shall be cut off in the sight of their people. He has uncovered his sister's nakedness. He shall bear his guilt."* The Scripture leaves us with a number of imponderables regarding other aspects of the order of Creation argument. But it does seem to indicate that what the Lord permitted at the time of Creation changed subsequently.

Accordingly, since the Lord is absolutely explicit about prohibiting a man from marrying, or having sex with his sister, thus bringing an end to any dispensation that might have been flowing from Creation. At the very least we should conclude that He will do a similar thing if He changed the situation regarding a man having more than one wife. Deuteronomy 21:15 states *"If a man has two wives, one loved and the other unloved."* Exodus 21:10 states *"If he takes another wife, he shall not diminish her food, her clothing, and her marriage rights."* This seems clear enough. A man is permitted to take another wife subject to certain conditions regarding the provision for the first wife. Appendix D of the document on which this teaching is based, lifts further Scriptures which support this view. Accordingly, even if the Lord did initially create man to have only one wife, He subsequently made provision for a

man to have more than one wife. It therefore appears that the order of Creation argument is over Scripture.

A direct contradiction, the first man interviewed stated, there is a provision that is there in the Bible that a man can marry as many women as he likes if he loves them. *It is there in the Bible, even though I cannot quote it now, but it is there.* This presents a stark contrast in this brief space of time, viewers saw two men who both claimed to serve the same God and read the same Bible make directly contradictory statements about it. Clearly, there is a need for clarity.

In support argument against polygamy, the first interviewer quoted Genesis 2:24 as indicating monogamy because it refers to becoming one flesh. The first panellist responded that one flesh related to sexual intercourse and that accordingly, it is quite possible for a man to be one flesh with more than one woman. 1 Corinthians 6:16 states: *"Or do you not know that he who is joined to a harlot is one body with her? For the two, He says, shall become one flesh."* From this it is quite clear that a man can become one flesh with more than one woman and a woman can become one flesh with more than one man. It is unclear what the point of the interviewer citing [inaudible 00:25:16] was. It does not immediately appear to say another about marriage and if it does, it will seem to suggest that a marriage has three strands, a man plus two wives is preferable and stronger than a marriage with one wife.

From the basic analysis of the discussion and interviews which included very few direct references to Scripture, and knowing the analysis, it is not possible to draw a definitive conclusion. However, it does appear that the Scripture cited in support of monogamy and does not stand much scrutiny, and that some Scriptures which seem to indicate that the Lord has explicitly provided for a man to have more than one wife as being identified. Furthermore, it seems notable that the extent at which those opposed to a man having more than one wife seemed to use terms like permissiveness and dehumanising, which is subjectively judgmental, and contrary to the evidence presented in the video footage is significant. Any doctrine of any import should be able to clearly and ambiguously stand on Scriptures which do not require explanation and excuses and should not require judgmental labels to back it up.

In the viewers' responses and the surrounding commentary, reference was made to the definition of polygamy. In order to further consider the subject of the television programme systematically, it is important that we define the meaning of the word polygamy. From reference to the Oxford dictionary we find polygamy: having more than one wife, or less, usually a husband, with one polyandry, polygamy in which woman has more than one husband. Polygamy in which man has more than one wife. From Scripture it is apparent that God created woman to marry only one man through the Creation of virginity of woman as discussed later. The woman who has sex more than one man is variously described in Scripture as an adulteress or a harlot. The question is purely whether a man can have more than one wife.

Deuteronomy 22:22 states, *"If a man is found lying with a woman married to a husband, then both of them shall die—the man that lay with the woman, and the woman; so, you shall put away the evil from Israel."* This is quite unambiguous, adultery involves a man, any man, marital state unspecified, lying with a very specific woman, or woman married to a husband and that penalty for adultery is death to both guilty parties. Roman 7:1-3 states, *"Or do you not know, brethren (for I speak to those who know the law), that the law has dominion over a man as long as he lives? For the woman who has a husband is bound by the law to her husband as long as he lives. But if the husband dies, she is released from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband lives, she marries another man, she will be called an*

*adulteress; but if her husband dies, she is free from that law, so that she is no adulteress, though she has married another man."*

Adultery is clearly a woman who marries another man while her husband lives. Therefore the generic form of polygamy or '*many either sex*' which includes polyandry and general fornication, is an abomination in the Sight of God. This is something which seems many spiritually sensitive Christians immediately discern, and therefore the use of the word polygamy should be avoided when discussing the subject. The form of marriage which the television debated effectively revolved around was in fact polygyny, and not polygamy. Nevertheless, this is a Latin term which may have connotations other than the form of marriage ordained in Scripture. And therefore, it is proposed that for the balance of this document, the focus will be on defining scriptural marriage, rather than our examining words which do not occur in Scripture.

### **Viewers' commentary**

Let us now consider the viewers' commentary. The first viewer criticised the lack of theology and it did indeed seem remarkable that a TV programme which claimed to be presenting a Christian view on such an extremely important subject as marriage presented so little Scripture. This was rectified in the commentary that followed. The viewer whose commentary was broadcast concluded by stating, *"Clearly, enforced monogamy is heresy of the worst kind. This was a strong statement against enforced monogamy. Does it have validity? If it does, then millions are indeed being kept from serving Satan and the Lord Jesus Christ, and millions of others are in sin and surely there is a responsibility on every person who call themselves by the name of Christ to carefully examine the fact."*

The commentary on the programme on the second viewer's opinion can rest on a number of Scriptures. In addition, it was clearly stated that the Bible, God's Word, is the last word on the subject. The commentary also suggested that the second viewer's opinion was based on some assumptions which might be a little difficult to back up with scriptural proof, and then proceeded to offer further Scriptures. The Scriptures used in the commentary are analysed in the discussion that follows using the same techniques applied in previous teachings.

Matthew 19:4-6 was quoted, *"And He answered and said to them, 'Have you not read that He who made them at the beginning 'made them male and female,' and said, 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh?' So then, they are no longer two but one flesh. Therefore what God has joined together, let not man separate."* It is argued that since the Scripture explicitly refers to two, it cannot refer to three or more. The Scripture indeed says that the two become one flesh, however, 1 Corinthians 6:16 cited previously clearly proves that a man can become one flesh with more than one woman, *"Or do you not know that he who is joined to a harlot is one body with her? For 'the two,' He says, 'shall become one flesh.'"* If we consider the stated arithmetic, they are no longer two, but one flesh, we found something which, at first glance, is not immediately apparent, i.e., one plus one equals one. This is in stark contrast to conventional arithmetic which states that one plus one equals two. In other words, the Lord's arithmetic in this case is different than ours.

If we then apply some basic algebra to the notation to the formula, one plus one equals one, in Matthew 19:5-6, we can substitute one plus one in brackets for one unless we see that one plus one plus one equals one. In other words, if a man is one flesh with one woman, and he joins himself to another woman, he and his first woman become one flesh with the second woman by extension, one plus one, plus one plus one, plus one plus one equals one. Therefore how many women he joins

himself to, they are still one. In strict algebraic tense, we can state one plus one then equals one. That is, one man joined to one woman is still one flesh with all of them.

In other words, if by adding one to one, the answer is one, then no matter how many times you add one to one, the answer is still one. Clearly Matthew 19:4-6 is nothing about a man not having more than one wife, nor do any of the other Scriptures which refer to two become one including Genesis 2:24. 1 Corinthians 7:2 was cited as evidence that a man should have his own wife. Nevertheless, because of sexual immorality, let each man have his own wife and let each woman have her own husband. Interpretation of the Scripture hinges on the words 'own wife' and 'each woman.' The Greek word translated his own in Strong's number 1438 *'heautou'* including all other cases for which Strong's definition is *'from a reflexive pronoun otherwise obsolete and the genitive case (dative case or accusative case) of G846; him- (her-, it-, them-, also (in conjunction with the personal pronoun of the other persons) my-, thy-, our-, your-) self (selves), etc.:—alone, her (own, -self), (he) himself, his (own), itself, one (to) another, our (thine) own(-selves), + that she had, their (own, own selves), (of) them(-selves), they, thyself, you, your (own, own conceits, own selves, -selves).'* It does not appear that this interpretation or the word itself provides much guidance on the subject of this teaching.

## Wife

Word translated wife in the phrase is own wife is *gynaika*, Strong's number 1135. On close investigation, it transpires of the Greek word for woman, wife and wives, singular and plural is always Strong's number 1135 *guné*, from which it would appear that *gynaika* is a special cursive *guné*, and from none of these cases is there any indication of singular or plural. Strong's definition of 1135 *guné* is probably from the base of 1096 a woman, especially a wife, King James version, wife woman. Thayer's definition of 1135 *guné*: a woman of any age, whether a virgin, or married, or a widow; a wife; of a betrothed woman. With regard to the Greek word translated wife, wives, *guné* 1135 denotes a woman, married or unmarried, see woman, a wife in Matthew 1:20, 1 Corinthians 7:3-4, in 1 Timothy 3:11, woman the reference may be to the wives of deacons as the King James version takes it. With regard to the Greek word translated woman, there is no sacred reference for women since the same root is translated in both forms. Vines states: *gune* 1135, for which see also WIFE, is used of a 'woman' unmarried or married, e.g., Matthew 11:11, 14:21, Luke 4:26, of a 'widow' Romans 7:2; in the vocative case, used in addressing a 'woman,' it is a term not of reproof or severity, but of endearment or respect.

Appendix A in the reference document contains more comprehensive analysis of both *guné* Greek and the Hebrew word is *ishshah* for wife, wives, women and women from Vines Expository Dictionary. For consideration of these takes it is apparent that there is no absolutely no basis on which to interpret any Scripture with either the word *ishshah*, or the word *guné* as indicating singular or plural, married or unmarried and there are other words in the context clearly make this visible.

Appendix B in the document lists many new testament Scriptures containing the Greek word *guné* as an indication of the extent to which the word is translated interchangeably, to signify a single woman or many women. To signify a woman or a wife, it seems clear that there is no basis to conclude that any Scripture containing the word *guné* can be used to determine if a man is permitted more than one wife, unless other words make this explicit. It therefore appears that the word translated 'wife' in 1 Corinthians 7:2 does not provide any basis for the argument presented in the commentary. In fact, it seems quite reasonable to conclude that 1 Corinthians 7:2 could be equally correctly translated *"Nevertheless, because of sexual immorality, let each man have his own wife."* This applies to the word 'wife' singular in all other verses of Scripture and therefore does not signify monogamy. In other

words, any passage of Scripture where the word 'wife' singular occurs could just as well be read as indicating wives plural unless there is a specific indication of one.

The word translated 'every woman' in 1 Corinthians 7:2 is the Greek word *hékastos*, Strong's number 1538 which is defined as each, every. In other words, it appears that the word 'woman' has been added by the translator to improve the English readability. In any event, the Greek word for 'woman' if it were present as demonstrated previously, can also be translated 'women' or 'wives', and therefore this phrase does not support the argument that Scripture prohibits a man from having more than one wife. 1 Timothy 3:2 cited as evidence the Church leader should only have one wife and therefore seemingly, by extension, that what was good for Church leaders should also be good for their flock. This verse, together with 1 Timothy 3:12 and Titus 1:6 seem to represent three of the key Scriptures on which the doctrine of enforced monogamy is based, and from it is argued that Jesus changed the Torah law.

## Mia

1 Timothy 3:2 states, *"A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, temperate, sober-minded, of good behaviour, hospitable, able to teach."* Verse 12 states, *"Let deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well."* Titus 1:6 states, *"If a man is blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children not accused of dissipation or insubordination."* Seemingly, this is definitive. These passages clearly state that a bishop or overseer, the deacon and the elder must all be the husband of one wife. However, if we consider the Greek word translated one, we find that it is the word *'mia'*, number 3391 which Strong defines as follows: irregular feminine of 1520; one or first:—a (certain), + agree, first, one, other.

There is certainly a great difference between one and first. If we apply the Latin interpretation, does that not mean that the bishop, deacon, or elder must be the husband of his first wife? In other words, he should not be divorced or have put away his wife. Does this not in turn suggest that he should have the love of God shed abroad in his heart to the extent that if necessary he can love even a difficult wife through times of difficulty and tension and bring her out in the other side? If such a man not be well suited to dealing with typical tensions and difficulties in the Body of Christ. Can this interpretation be confirmed?

Matthew 28:1 states, *"Now after the Sabbath, as the first day of the week began to dawn, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary came to see the tomb."* Matthew 26:69 *"Now Peter sat outside in the courtyard. And a servant girl came to him, saying, 'You also were with Jesus of Galilee.'"* Here we see another interpretation of *mia* as damsel. Could we read the passage in Timothy and Titus to say that a bishop, etc., should be the husband of a wife, in other words, they must be married. In other words, if a man does not know how to lead a family with at least one wife, he cannot lead a congregation. If we consider the case of the one interviewee, his wife assisted him in his healing ministry as a traditional healer and in his Church ministry.

Mark 12:42, *"Then one poor widow came and threw in two mites, which make a quadrans."* There are several passages when *mia* is translated 'certain' but 'certain' is not uniformly translated 'one'. Luke 24:1 *"Now on the first day of the week,"* John 21 *"On the first day of the week."* [inaudible 00:41:51] multitude of those who believed were of one heart and one soul, neither did anyone say that any of the things he possessed was his own, but they had all things in common. In this case, *mia* was used to relate to a group of people who were one. So, it would appear that *mia* can also signify a group of people who are one heart. Presumably this could apply to a man with several wives who are of one

heart with him. 1 Corinthians 16:2 says again *"On the first day of the week."* Titus 3:10, *"Reject a divisive man after the first and second admonition."* Here we see two chapters further on in the same book of the Bible. In Titus the translators have translated *mia* as 'first', not 'one'. Cannot it be reasonably argued that the translators filtered the translation through the doctrine of monogamy that prevailed at the time they translated the Scriptures. A complete set of Scriptures containing the word *mia* or contained in appendix C of the document.

This interpretation of *mia* is supported by Vines with regard to first. *Mia* 3391, a dramatically feminine form of *heiss* one is translated first and certain occurrences of the phrase on the first day of the week. Also, in Titus 3:10, of the first admonition to hierarchical man C1. Seemingly these words and these passages of Scripture cannot be used to construct a doctrine of enforced monogamy, not even for pastors. If we apply the information concerning *guné* to the Scriptures concerning one wife, we find the following to be possible. 1 Timothy 3:2 *"A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, temperate, sober-minded, of good behaviour, hospitable, able to teach."* 1 Timothy 3:12, *"Let deacons be the husbands of one wife."* Titus 1:6, *"If a man is blameless, the husband of one wife."* It would seem reasonable to apply such an interpretation to a society where it was commonplace for a man to have more than one wife. More appropriate translation might then be still married to his first wives if the intention is not that the bishop, deacon, or elder should be married and have at least one wife.

As best as I can determine, there was virtually no such thing as an adult woman who is not married unless she was a widow. This seems to include those legitimately divorced or a harlot, it would appear that a 30-year-old virgin was unheard of. It seems that girls through puberty, at about 12 years old, at which time they were regarded as virgins, women ready for intercourse but not yet married. Subsequently, they were betrothed and thereafter married. Since a man was permitted to have more than one wife, there was absolutely no statistical reason for her not to marry, and since marriages were arranged by the parents, there was no emotional reason.

### **God's intention**

Genesis 2:24 was cited as indicated that the Lord intended a man to have only one wife at the time of Creation, and that therefore the perfect state for marriage was for a man to have only one wife. This argument has already been addressed to a point in previous discussion. However, the Genesis 2:24 argument falls into the same trap as 1 Corinthians 7:2. The word for 'wife' here is the Hebrew *ishshah*, which as in the Greek signifies one or many and so this verse could also be rejoined to his wives. I have consulted Jewish scholars on the subject and they assured me there is no way the original Hebrew prescribes monogamy. Equally as with Matthew 19:4-6 above, which cites Genesis 2:24, the one plus one equals one argument applies to Genesis 2:24. The document also contains an appendix on virginity which convincingly demonstrates that the Lord intended man to be able to have more than one wife from Creation and before the Creation.

Reference was made to man having more than one wife for the first time in the correct line of Cain and the case of Lamech in Genesis 4:19. It seemed that this remark was intended to suggest that in some way Lamech is not a model for good Christians. Perhaps this is so, perhaps not. We are especially told not to judge others. Matthew 7:1-2 states, *"Judge not, that you be not judged. For with what judgment you judge, you will be judged; and with the measure you use, it will be measured back to you."*

But if we take account of the viewer's position, it would seem that whether Lamech was righteous or not is not the point. If the viewer is correct and Scripture does not prevent a man having more than

one wife, then there are millions, if not billions of people out there who are not living in accordance with this idea of [inaudible 00:46:56] as a result of an allegedly ungodly hurdle. This would appear to include Muslims and Jews who know that the Books of Moses permit a man to have more than one wife and that God never changes. The author has personally encountered a situation in Malawi where the Church allows a Muslim convert with four wives to keep all his wives, but prevents a Muslim convert with one wife, taking more than one wife. As a result, many do not accept Christ. It would seem best in the analysis thus far that this activity might be making the Word of God to no effect. If this is correct, it will appear possible that many millions of souls could indeed be burning in hell allegedly as a consequence of the doctrinal enforced monogamy.

It was further suggested in the commentary that there are no commoners in Samuel or Kings who have more than one wife. Implication seems to be that somehow commoners were more godly than royalty, and that the fact that royalty in the books of Samuel and Kings clearly had more than one wife did not in any way signify that the Lord approved. However, 1 Samuel 1:1-2 states, *"Now there was a certain man of Ramathaim Zophim, of the mountains of Ephraim, and his name was Elkanah, the son of Jeroham, the son of Elihu, the son of Tohu, the son of Zuph, an Ephraimite. And he had two wives: the name of one was Hannah, and the name of the other Peninnah. Peninnah had children, but Hannah had no children."* There is nothing to indicate that Elkanah was not a commoner. In fact, at the time of Elkanah, there was no such thing as royalty in Israel. It would seem that this argument is disproved in chapter 1 of Kings and Chronicles about the kings of Israel. So, it would seem reasonable not to expect to find many references in those books to commoners.

## David

In this case, one could be hard pressed not to question the integrity and/or the scriptural knowledge who made that statement. On further inspection of the books of Samuel and Kings, we find a number of other instances of men with more than one wife. These include David. 1 Samuel 25:43 states, *"David also took Ahinoam of Jezreel, and so both of them were his wives."* At this point, before David became king, in fact while a fugitive, and therefore presumably a commoner by most people's definition, David had two wives in addition to his first wife.

2 Samuel 5:13 states, *"And David took more concubines and wives from Jerusalem, after he had come from Hebron. Also, more sons and daughters were born to David."* This was shortly after his arrival in Jerusalem as king of the United Kingdom after he had reigned the kingdom of Judah for seven years and Hebron. David is repeatedly referred to as a man after God's own heart. Acts 13:22, 1 Samuel 13, 14, etc. In the case such as this one has to ask how any person who fears God can speak out against the man having more than one wife when David, a man with a significant number of wives and concubines, is referred to as a man after God's own heart.

It seems that God has said that it is His heart to have more than one wife, and yet the person who wrote the commentary speaks against it. Since Samuel was raised, let us consider also 2 Samuel 12:7-8 *"Then Nathan said to David, 'You are the man! Thus says the Lord God of Israel: 'I anointed you king over Israel, and I delivered you from the hand of Saul. I gave you your master's house and your master's wives into your keeping, and gave you the house of Israel and Judah. And if that had been too little, I also would have given you much more!'"* Here we see that God says that He gave David, Saul's wives, and yet the commentator says God has opposed to a man having more than one wife. Is this not blatant hypocrisy bordering on blasphemy?



Since Kings was also raised, let us consider 1 Kings 15:5, *"Because David did what was right in the eyes of the Lord, and had not turned aside from anything that He commanded him all the days of his life, except in the matter of Uriah the Hittite."* David did what was right in the eyes of the Lord all the days of his life except in the matter of Uriah, the Hittite. It seems hard to conceive how anyone who reads that verse can ever again speak against the man having more than one wife. Is there not a possibility that if one speaks against a man whom God refers to as a man after His own heart, may cause one to face the most fearful judgment?

### **Monogamy**

Similarly, Abraham is referred to as the Friend of God. James 2:23 and he had more than one wife. Moses is referred to as the man of God, Ezra 3:2, Joshua 14:6, etc., and had more than one wife. It increasingly would seem that no person who fears God can claim that it is against the will of God for a man to have more than one wife.

It was stated in the commentary under the Judges and Monarchy the rule of man not God Israel shifted towards the lesser form of polygamy. But it is clear that the most common form of marriage was monogamy and amongst the commoners, no cases of polygamy were found in the books of Samuel or Kings. I have been unable to locate any Scripture which indicates that the most common form of marriage was monogamy. As best as I can determine, Scripture is entirely silent and the commentator seems to be adding to the Word of God.

Reference was made to Ezekiel 16, indicating monogamy as the ideal as seen by the prophets. On closer inspection we see that this passage refers only to the unfaithfulness of Judah. Ezekiel 23 takes the metaphor further and describes God as also being married to Samaria Israel as well. In other words, God himself describes Himself as married to two women. Again, one is forced to question the integrity and/or the scriptural knowledge of someone who could cause such a statement to be broadcast on national television. Reference was made to Ephesians 5:23 as a parallel to the verses in Ezekiel as an indication that it is God's will for a man to have only one wife. On closer inspection however it turns out that the whole of Ephesians 5:23-33 turns on *guné*. In other words, these verses could just as well refer to wives, as wife.

Seemingly, Ephesians 5:22-33 could be translated *"Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord. For the husband is head of the wives, as also Christ is head of the Church; and He is the Saviour of the body. Therefore, just as the Church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything. Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the Church and gave Himself for her, that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the word, that He might present her to Himself a glorious Church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish. So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies; he who loves his wives loves himself. For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the Church. For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. 'For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wives, and the two shall become one flesh.'"* Take account of the discussion of the one plus one equals one previously. *"This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church. Nevertheless let each one of you in particular so love his own wives as himself, and let the wives see that they respect their husband."*

In the passage that I have just read, I have replaced the word 'wife' singular with the word 'wives' plural in all instances and the passage still makes perfect sense and is absolutely plausible and is technically correct from a translation point of view. Furthermore, it seems that Ephesians 5 argument

ignores the parallel that the bride singular which is the Church comprises many bodies. 1 Corinthians 12:12 states, *"For as the body is one and has many members, but all the members of that one body, being many, are one body, so also is Christ."* This is supported by other Scriptures *"We who are many are one body."* In the same way we could see that many wives are all one flesh or one body with the husband.

Ephesians 5:31-32 seemingly makes this absolutely clear. *"For this reason, a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife and the two shall become one flesh."* This is a great mystery, but I speak concerning Christ and the Church. It certainly seems clear that there is a direct parallel between the Body of Christ comprising many bodies and the man being one flesh with a number of wives. Furthermore, Revelation clearly refers to seven Churches. It certainly seems that God has provided a perfect pattern of the Bride of Christ in marriage between a man and his wives. It would seem irrational and illogical to argue that the many people who have a Church are one body that the Genesis 2:24 and Ephesians 5:23 dictates monogamy. It would certainly seem possible that this could cause a person who considers himself to be logical, to stumble over any doctrine which states that the Scripture prevents a man having more than one wife.

It was stated that during the Talmudic period, monogamy was highly regarded. This is an interesting statement since Jesus condemned, described in Pharisees, the Talmudic law made the Word of God of no effect, Matthew 23 and elsewhere. In addition, it appears that many Jews know that the Bible permits a man to have more than one wife. For example, the Living Torah, a footnote to Exodus 21:10 states *'another wife.'* Polygamy was permitted by Torah law. It was only forbidden later by a ban pronounced by all European rabbis under the leadership of Rabbenu Gershom (circa 965-1029).

Apart from the fact that this text uses the term polygamy to describe polygyny (a man having more than one wife) a widespread semantic error referred to in more detail previously, it makes it quite clear that scriptural marriage in which a man can have more than one wife, was still practised by the Jews until about 1,000 years after the death of Jesus Christ. Maurice Lamm, in his book, *'The Jewish Way in Love and Marriage,'* published by Jonathan David Publishers, Inc, Middle Village, New York in 1980 reports that this ban was renewed for all Jews by Israel's Chief Rabbi when it expired in 1950. Known as the *'Cherem de Rabbenu Gershom,'* it is in force regardless of the wishes of the husband, or the consent of the wife.

From considering other sources regarding the systematic distancing of the Gentile Church, from the Jewish roots of Christianity, as a consequence of Roman influence as early as 300 AD resulting in steadily increasing persecution of Jews, it appears that the Rabbinical decree was as a consequence of increasing persecution by the Roman Church seeking to enforce the proclamation by Justinian enforcing monogamy about three hundred years earlier.

From conversations with a few Jews on this matter it appears that the rabbinical decree is widely known, as is the fact that monogamy is a Roman heresy instituted by the Christian Church. It seems that in at least some Jewish quarters, this is taken as a further indication that Jesus Christ could not possibly be the Messiah. This, in turn, must surely be a contributor to the difficulty that most Jews have in accepting conversion to Christianity.

Other documents indicate that monogamy was outlawed in the Christian religion by the emperor Justinian in the sixth century, apparently after he married a reformed prostitute. Taking account of this information, one is obliged to ask why, if the Bible has always prescribed monogamy, it was necessary for the Jews and the Christians to outlaw it?

Accordingly, it would seem that the Talmudic argument also does not provide a basis to establish that Scripture prevents a man from having more than one wife, nor does it prescribe enforced monogamy. On the basis of the above information it would appear that the arguments presented in the commentary include a number of Scripture references which either indicate that the person writing the commentary was either not very knowledgeable of Scripture, or was being deliberately misleading. Other arguments appear to be irrational and still others seem to reflect an inadequate knowledge of the Greek or Hebrew sources.

Accordingly, it seems necessary to conclude that the commentator failed to prove, in any material form, that Scripture prescribes '*enforced monogamy*' or prohibits a man having more than one wife.

Let us now consider the opinions expressed by the viewer, as reported previously. The viewer stated: "Deuteronomy 21:15 states: '*If a man has two wives, one loved and the other unloved....*' Clearly in this, and dozens of other Scriptures, God permits a man to have more than one wife!" Is this the case? Exodus 21:10 states: "*If he takes another wife, he shall not diminish her food, her clothing, and her marriage rights.*" This seems clear enough. A man is permitted to take another wife subject to certain conditions.

Appendix D in the document lists further Scriptures which support this view. If one is seeking to be even handed in considering both cases, one has to ask why the person who prepared the television commentary did not address these Scriptures. The viewer stated: "*Millions of non-Christians cannot accept monogamy as being from God and reject Christ.*" On the face of it this may be rather difficult to prove. However, the author has encountered a situation in Malawi where it was reported that Moslem men who were on the point of making a decision for Christ, decided not to accept Jesus Christ as Lord when they realized that they would not be permitted to take further wives if they did. If this is extrapolated across the many parts of the world where men have had more than one wife throughout history, it is not difficult to conclude that this statement could be correct.

The viewer stated: "*Monogamy has destroyed the fabric of family life in many nations.*" Again this statement initially appears difficult to prove. However, if we consider the example in Malawi, by implication, those men who converted to Christianity without the traditional number of wives would not have taken further wives, and this could conceivably have resulted in an imbalance. One of the panel members on the original television programme asserted that there were more women than men in society, and that enforced monogamy and forced many women to go without husbands. It is alleged that many of these women then turn to prostitution or have '*affairs*' with married men, breaking up their marriages. There are also reports of missionaries informing new converts that they must get rid of all but their first wife with resultant heartbreak and social dislocation.

If these reports are correct, which I have not been able to validate in any meaningful way, it appears possible that enforced monogamy could indeed be contributing to the break-down of family life. Conceivably this could then be contributing to the spread of AIDS in Africa.

The viewer stated: "*Millions of men and women fail to live within the yoke of monogamy.*" Casual inspection of the newspapers, television, soap operas, magazines and the like confirm that many men and women have sexual relationships with more than one partner. The furore during 1999 with regards to the sexual relationship of a powerful world leader with one of his female aids, also supports this view.

On the face of it there can be little doubt that a large proportion of men have sexual relations with more than one woman during their lives, which implies that they have a desire for more than one wife. The high divorce rate inside and outside the Church, reportedly in excess of 60%, indicates a form of serial polygamy which must also support this conclusion. The viewer stated: *"The crucial scriptural importance of virginity is disregarded and adultery is condoned."*

In the commentary on the viewer's opinion, all that was said ignored the issue of virginity. Deuteronomy 22:13-21 states: *"If any man takes a wife, and goes in to her, and detests her, and charges her with shameful conduct, and brings a bad name on her, and says, 'I took this woman, and when I came to her I found she was not a virgin,' then the father and mother of the young woman shall take and bring out the evidence of the young woman's virginity to the elders of the city at the gate. And the young woman's father shall say to the elders, 'I gave my daughter to this man as wife, and he detests her; now he has charged her with shameful conduct, saying, 'I found your daughter was not a virgin,' and yet these are the evidences of my daughter's virginity.' And they shall spread the cloth before the elders of the city.*

*Then the elders of that city shall take that man and punish him; and they shall fine him one hundred shekels of silver and give them to the father of the young woman, because he has brought a bad name on a virgin of Israel. And she shall be his wife; he cannot divorce her all his days. But if the thing is true, and evidences of virginity are not found for the young woman, then they shall bring out the young woman to the door of her father's house, and the men of her city shall stone her to death with stones, because she has done a disgraceful thing in Israel, to play the harlot in her father's house; so you shall put away the evil from among you."*

This passage of Scripture clearly identifies that a woman must be a virgin when she gets married. If she is not she is a harlot and is to be put to death. If she is not put to death, then it does not mean that she will not have a part in the lake of fire and brimstone, as will any other man who has sex with her. Appendix F in the document offers a detailed analysis of this and related Scriptures and reveals that the act of a man penetrating a virgin, thereby causing the flow of blood from her hymen, is the actual act of cutting the marriage covenant. A woman can only cut covenant once and therefore she can only marry once.

## Virginity

Virginity is a female attribute and is associated with a physical piece of flesh. It can only be taken once, and it can be taken by a man who already has a wife. Once a woman has lost her virginity, she cannot marry another man unless she is a widow or divorced for pornea (fornication - both spiritual and physical). Scripture is quite clear. Therefore it is quite clear that The Lord created man and woman from the outset for a man to have more than one wife. This Scripture taken on its own, clearly demonstrates that a woman cannot have more than one husband, unless the first husband dies, or the woman is divorced for scripturally acceptable conditions relating to pornea or treachery on the part of the husband, as laid down in Matthew 5, Matthew 19, and elsewhere.

It therefore seems clear that virginity is a spiritual safety seal. A man having sex with a virgin marries her, and a man having sex with a woman who is not a virgin, commits adultery in almost all cases. It also seems apparent that man has no corresponding safety seal and that a man is therefore capable of consummating marriage with many virgins. Since the woman is no longer free to marry after she has lost her virginity, by extension, God created man to be able to have more than one wife from before the fall of Adam and Eve!

In considering the subject of adultery, consider 1 Corinthians 6:9: *"Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the Kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind."* Surely any doctrine which is causing people to become unwitting adulterers or adulteresses or fornicators is to be avoided at all costs.

### **More women than men in the world**

The viewer stated: "Many Christian women cannot find husbands; as prophesied in Isaiah 4:1. Isaiah 4:1-3 states: *"And in that day seven women shall take hold of one man, saying, 'We will eat our own food and wear our own apparel; only let us be called by your name, to take away our reproach.' In that day the Branch of the LORD shall be beautiful and glorious; and the fruit of the earth shall be excellent and appealing for those of Israel who have escaped. And it shall come to pass that he who is left in Zion and remains in Jerusalem will be called holy-- everyone who is recorded among the living in Jerusalem."*

The 'Branch' referred to in the second verse is widely accepted as the Messiah, Jesus Christ and the rest of Isaiah 4 must surely refer to His coming. The use of Jerusalem here, in Revelation and elsewhere is widely regarded as referring to the spiritual Church or true Church of the Lord Jesus Christ, which endures to the end. The implication of Isaiah 4:1 is therefore that at the end of the age, arguably the present age, there will be seven times more women in the Body of Christ than men, and those women will be desperate for Godly husbands!

A casual inspection of most of the Christian congregations around the country will reveal that there are considerably more women than men. In some cases one can count as many as ten women to one man! Many of those women are desperately seeking a mature Christian husband without success. Many others are trapped in marriages to unbelieving husbands, some of whom abuse them terribly. Others are trapped in situations where unscrupulous men take advantage of them and then dump them.

It does indeed seem reasonable to conclude that The Lord desires all those women who have chosen Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour to have Christian husbands. We serve a compassionate God, not a legalistic demonic god who condemns his followers to hell on earth. That is the god of this world, not the God who is the Father of the Lord Jesus Christ! The reality is that over 60% of the Church is divorced and remarried - that makes them polygamists in the true sense of the word and then the commentator speaks against polygamy and polygyny. Surely that is gross hypocrisy.

### **Enforced monogamy**

The viewer stated: *"Enforced monogamy is a stumbling block to the Gospel of Jesus Christ that is sending millions of souls to hell!"* As with a number of the earlier opinions, this is difficult to prove definitively. However, if many people are rejecting the Gospel of Jesus Christ on the grounds of not being able to accept enforced monogamy and if the disregard for virginity which is highlighted above is real, which it is, then it seems reasonable to conclude that there are indeed many souls in hell who might otherwise have been in heaven.

Given that Jesus said in Luke 15:7: *"I say to you that likewise there will be more joy in Heaven over one sinner who repents, than over ninety-nine just persons who need no repentance."* If the doctrine of enforced monogamy is not scriptural, which this analysis seems convincingly to demonstrate and if it is keeping even one soul out of Heaven, then surely any person who loves the Lord Jesus Christ should have no difficulty in accepting that a man may have more than one wife.

The viewer stated: *"1 Timothy 4 prophesies that in these days many will give heed to doctrines of demons and forbid people to marry. Surely this relates to forbidding marriage to more than one wife."* 1 Timothy 4:1-3 states: *"Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron, forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth."*

Based on the analysis thus far it certainly seems that enforced monogamy is not scriptural. It would also appear that the person who prepared the commentary was either extremely ignorant of Scripture or was speaking lies in hypocrisy. Certainly they were forbidding people to marry. It would therefore appear that the viewer's claim regarding this prophecy was confirmed through the commentary.

The viewer concluded: *"Clearly, enforced monogamy is heresy of the worst kind!"* From consideration of the discussion thus far it certainly seems that the doctrine of enforced monogamy is, indeed, heresy. If it is indeed committing the number of souls to hell that has been suggested, which appears likely to be the case, then it would appear that we must conclude that enforced monogamy is indeed heresy of the worst kind!

In conclusion, a reasonably comprehensive analysis of the scriptural case for, and against polygamy, and enforced monogamy in contrast to a man being permitted to have more than one wife (polygyny), has been presented. It is concluded that there is overwhelming scriptural evidence to support the view that it is indeed scriptural, and in fact probably God's own heart and plan, that a man should have more than one wife.

It is further concluded that there is considerable evidence to suggest that millions, if not billions, of people are being kept out of the Kingdom of God, or at the very least consigned to a part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone. Consequently it is concluded that the doctrine of enforced monogamy is, indeed, heresy of the worst kind!

At the end of the day, every person has a constitutional right to an informed decision. They also have a scriptural right not to be lied to about something as fundamental as marriage. Equally, those who are deceived and propagate this heresy have a right to be afforded the opportunity to repent, before they find themselves before the Judgment Seat of Christ with the eternal damnation of millions of souls charged to their account. It seems that everyone who hears this teaching has an awesome responsibility to publish these truths!

In considering this teaching in the context of the marriage series, what is vital to recognise is that as we come to terms with the fundamental scriptural principles concerning virginity, the One Flesh Bond, in the manner in which God intend marriage to work, we cannot avoid confronting the issue of the heresy of monogamy. The heresy of monogamy is indeed one of the fundamental roots behind so much of the destruction in marriage. The reality is that many men who have taken the virginity of more than one woman are therefore, in principle, married to them. Equally the reality is that many men today practice serial polygamy or polygyny. These issues have to be confronted. Given that we also establish that godly Christian women have a need, a requirement, and a right to the covering of a godly man, irrespective of whether that man is already married or not, we see the opportunity for massive confrontation of paradise between the pagan western teachings of marriage practiced by the Church over the last 1700 years or so, versus God's plan for marriage.

In particular, we must note that covenant is an exchange of strength and weakness where the one party gives their strength to cover the other party's weakness. Marriage is about covenant. Covenant is about exchange of strength and weakness. Women who are weak and need the strength of a man, need to be afforded that opportunity. Conversely, one woman in a monogamous situation cannot necessarily cover all the weaknesses of her husband. There are different areas of gifting and different areas of secular skills that are required in order to do this. The reality is that in this age, if we truly care about the Word of God, if we truly fear the judgments of God, we must evaluate and return to the truths of Scripture no matter what it costs.

Father in the name of Jesus, I ask that if there is anything that I have uttered in this teaching that is contrary to Your Word that You will blow it away and that it will find no root in the hearers. But Father, in the name of Jesus, I ask that everything that has been spoken according to Your Word will find root in the hearers and it grow abundantly to produce much fruit in Jesus' name. May The Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in Jesus name. Amen.

### **03 19 Facilitating Change in Marriage**

This is tape number 19 in volume 1 of the series on marriage. It is entitled '*Facilitating Change Towards Harmony, Faithfulness, Fear, Self and Other Factors.*' In preparing this series of teachings on marriage which have covered a wide variety of topics, a number of factors have come to attention.

- 1: If husband and wife are not in agreement and in harmony, their house is divided and will fall.
- 2: In addition, their prayers will be hindered and they are likely to suffer continuous financial loss.
- 3: It was God's design for women to marry shortly after they reach puberty, age 12 and a half to 14, at which stage they were able to easily adapt to and submit to husbands who typically would be at least seven years older than them.
- 4: Women who marry at a later age, or who are independent into their twenties or who are widowed or divorced have great difficulty in submitting to their husbands and coming into complete agreement and harmony.
- 5: Modern Church doctrine with regards to marriage is so far removed from Scripture that both husbands and wives need to make major adjustments in order to align themselves with the Word of God and put these teachings into practice.
- 6: Both men and women have great difficulty making these adjustment.
- 7: Love, that is God's agape love is critical to marriage working and God's love does not demand, command, coerce obedience and submission. It seeks to show the loved one what is best for them in terms of the love of God, and to teach them but it then affords the loved one the space to make their own decisions and their own mistakes, and loves them through their mistakes, even though they may not be able to agree with them through the process of the mistakes. This is particularly the case where the loved one goes against the will and the word of God.

8: These principles apply equally to the husband in his relationship with Jesus as the head of the husband and to the wife in her relationship with her husband as her head. In many respects, they also apply to children with regard to their relationship with parents.

9: Various teachings have been presented in the series which deal with aspects of headship and the scriptural requirement for a wife to submit to her husband in everything, no matter how unjust he is.

10: Other teachings establish that Scripture only permits divorce under the most extreme circumstances of spiritual or sexual unfaithfulness or treachery.

11: It was also established that measures were necessary to respond to persistent unrepented treachery and rebellion on the part of a wife, and the scriptural basis whereby such a wife might be handed over to Satan for correction has been established as a mechanism which is to be applied, probably on more than one occasion before a husband can consider divorcing his wife. All of these teachings have however still left a gap in understanding of how to resolve issues of difference between husband and wife.

### **Leading wives into harmony and agreement**

This particular teaching today seeks to address this gap from the perspective of how does the husband, as the head of the wife, lovingly lead his wife into harmony and agreement with her without resorting to shouting, threatening, cajoling, pleading, begging, forcing, beating, bribing and the other mechanisms which the world tends to use to resolve disputes, and also without repeatedly handing his wife over to Satan. The following represents the first revelation received on the subject. It appears that further revelation and experience will be required before this teaching is fully complete.

Let us consider some of the steps in change. In the process of change, it is not just a question of '*Lord change me,*' which is a vital prayer. We must actively choose to change and actively put into practice those things that the Holy Spirit teaches us. This is not a case of striving in our own strength, but of choosing to align our world with His world and choosing to be led by Him. Change is a continuous process of seeking to become more like Jesus. The basic steps in change are firstly to recognise that change is necessary, to recognise that the particular area of one's life that needs to be changed is not as Yahweh would have it, and to recognise that this requires action by oneself.

Secondly, one must decide to change. In other words, to pray and declare one's willingness to change and confess over one's life, the intention to change and the outcome of the change. Thirdly, one should prepare to change in terms of praying for guidance, by reading books, listening to tapes, watching videos, and so forth as the Lord leads. Change is not an overnight process in almost all significant cases of seeking to become more like Jesus and certainly in the area of this present teaching on marriage. My own experience indicates that a lengthy process of change of self and one's spouse is required in order to move towards the vision that is portrayed in this series of teachings.

Consider Romans 12:1-3, "*I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is your reasonable service. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is good and acceptable and the perfect will of God. For I say, through the grace given to me, to everyone who is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think, but to think soberly, as God has dealt to each one a measure of faith.*"



In marriage, the wife must listen to her husband and seek his guidance and in turn, the husband must listen to Jesus and seek his guidance. Fourthly, we must change. And change involves training, practice, returning to the Scriptures and notes that lead to the decision to change until the change becomes entrenched. If different physical or mental behaviour is required, you need to discipline your body to behave in the new profession.

### **Adverse experiences**

Consider 1 Corinthians 9:24-27, *"Do you not know that those who run in a race all run, but one receives the prize? Run in such a way that you may obtain it. And everyone who competes for the prize is temperate in all things. Now they do it to obtain a perishable crown, but we for an imperishable crown. Therefore, I run thus, not with uncertainty. Thus, I fight, not as one who beats the air, but I discipline my body and bring it into subjection, lest, when I have preached to others, I myself should become disqualified."* Fifthly, it is vital to recognise that we all make mistakes; you will fall. Romans 3:23, *"For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God,"* James 3:2, *"For we all stumble in many things. If anyone does not stumble in word, he is a perfect man, able also to bridle the whole body."* We see the absolute necessity of controlling one's tongue and the thoughts that underlie that.

We need to respond to adverse experiences by seeking clarification and increased understanding from the Word of God through prayer and where available, wise counsel, and recognising that the Holy Spirit is the teacher. But above all, we must, where we fall, where we stumble, where we make a mistake, where we sin, we must cry out to Jesus to save us. We cannot deliver ourselves in our own strength. We cannot rectify the mistakes we have made in our own strength. We cannot change ourselves in our own strength. Jesus is the healer, Jesus is the head, Jesus is the one who will change us. We have to cry out to Him. We have to repent with a broken spirit and a contrite heart. We need to truly turn away when we discover that we have made a mistake and say, *"Lord, I ask You to forgive me. I ask You to put me back on the right path."* That is the only way to do it, but you need to make conscious decisions every step of the way.

Recognise also that Jesus and the Holy Spirit of the teacher. Matthew 23:8-10, *"But you, do not be called 'Rabbi'; for One is your Teacher, the Christ, and you are all brethren."* Christ refers to the anointing, the Holy Spirit. *"Do not call anyone on earth your father; for One is your Father, He who is in Heaven. And do not be called teachers; for One is your Teacher, the Christ."* In addition, where necessary you need to discipline the flesh through fasting, prayer and so forth, and tear down vain imaginations. 2 Corinthians 10:3-7, *"For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war according to the flesh. For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds, casting down arguments and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ, and being ready to punish all disobedience when your obedience is fulfilled. Do you look at things according to the outward appearance? If anyone is convinced in himself that he is Christ's, let him again consider this in himself, that just as he is Christ's, even so we are Christ's."*

### **Become more like Jesus**

The implication of this last verse is that if we look at outward appearances, you are not Christ. We need to tear down these vain imaginations. In volume 2 of this series on marriage there is a tape on tearing down vain imaginations and dealing with this sort of thing. In fact, many of the points that have been raised already in this teaching are addressed as detailed teachings in the second series. At the end of the day, our objective in change must be to become more like Jesus. Consider Ephesians

4:11-15, *"And He Himself gave some to be apostles, some prophets, some evangelists, and some pastors and teachers, for the equipping of the saints for the work of ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ, till we all come to the unity of the faith and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to a perfect man, to the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ; that we should no longer be children, tossed to and fro and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the trickery of men, in the cunning craftiness of deceitful plotting, but, speaking the truth in love, may grow up in all things into Him who is the head—Christ."*

Experience in the management of change in the world indicates that it takes time and diligence to bring about an entrenched change. The same applies in matters of the spirit until our spirits, our flesh and our minds are trained in a particular area to a point where the behaviour becomes a conditioned reflex, such as with touch typing or riding a horse. It is easy for us to backslide away from the new conduct. Even then if we do not exercise our new skills and walk in them, we will lose them over time. This has great applicability in the area of marriage. It will take time, patience, commitment, and diligence over time for a woman who is adult at the time of marriage to conform to her husband in all things, and therefore to submit to him in all things. In the same way, it will take a man his entire life, to seek to conform to Jesus therefore to become the husband his wife truly needs him to be and that God truly desires him to be.

## **Deliverance**

Lest us consider a few specific factors. In many cases deliverance from Demonic oppression, cutting off with curses and other actions to deal with a wide range of Demonic and Satanic factors which can oppress our flesh will be required as we seek to change and to be conformed. A subsequent teaching on the subject in Volume 2 will, God-willing, be included. Consider 1 John 4:1-3, *"Beloved, do not believe every spirit, but test the spirits, whether they are of God."* Verse 2, *"By this you know the Spirit of God: Every spirit that confesses that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh is of God, and every spirit that does not confess that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh, is not of God."* This is an important test if one is hearing voices or having dreams and is not sure whether the messages coming from the Lord or some other source.

Mark 16:16-17, *"He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned. And these signs will follow those who believe: In My name they will cast out Demons; they will speak with new tongues."* Clearly if we are told we will cast out Demons, then we can have Demons. There is no indication that Jesus cast Demons out of unbelievers, most if not all, those who Jesus ministered deliverance to were Jews, and Jesus came and said when he came that he came to the last sheep of the house of Israel. In any event, those who came to him for Ministry or believed that there was something about Jesus that would set them free.

Prayer in the Holy Spirit or tongues is also an important aspect of waging spiritual warfare which is largely about bringing about change in ourselves to conform to Christ. Consider Ephesians 6:18, *"Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, being watchful to this end with all perseverance and supplication for all the saints."* This passage deals with spiritual warfare and the reference here is praying in the Spirit in tongues. 1 Corinthians 14:2, *"For he who speaks in a tongue does not speak to men but to God, for no one understands Him; however, in the Spirit he speaks mysteries."* So we see here that by praying in tongues we pray to God. Elsewhere in Scripture it says if we pray the perfect Will of God, the Devil cannot hear or can hear, but he cannot understand what we are praying and therefore we can pray secrets and mysteries to God, which He is able to answer even if we do not know what to pray.

Jude 1:20, *"But you, beloved, building yourselves up on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Spirit."* Again, we see that praying in the Holy Spirit, praying in tongues builds this up in the most holy place. It is a vital component of bringing about change, perhaps one of the most important components in bringing about change in one's life is to pray constantly in the Holy Spirit and in tongues. And if you have not received the baptism of The Holy Spirit with the evidence of speaking in tongues, I would encourage you to seek that anointing. There will, God-willing, be a whole tape on this subject in the Volume 2 of this series.

In the same way, God-willing, in the second volume there will be a tape on tearing down vain imaginations, one on disciplining the flesh and one on controlling our tongues, as well as a variety of other topics relating to bringing about change. It is one thing to realise that one needs to change, it's another thing to actually do what is necessary for that change to come into place. And I am not talking here about doing it in the carnal striving sense, but I am talking about doing it in the spiritual sense. That is what spiritual warfare is about: Praying and seeking God, fasting and praying to bring about change.

### **Spiritual change**

If you are not in the personal discipline of fasting on a fairly regular basis, again, I would encourage you to do that, everything that is necessary in the Scripture to bring the flesh into subjection, to discipline it is vital. If you are to come to a place where the underlying principles contained in this series of teachings become real in your life, or if you are currently in conduct and behaviour which, through the process of these teachings you have now realised is unscriptural and ungodly and you have to change, it is going to take effort to unlearn behaviour that you may have learnt over decades of your life. And that is the basis of this teaching, to lay a foundation for that, and to lay a foundation for Volume 2 of this series which God-willing, will be a comprehensive compendium of teachings on the subject of bringing about spiritual change in one's life.

The following are a variety of points that have been recorded as I was preparing this teaching. A key point in any form of change, and certainly it is applied comprehensively in the world, and it applies equally to bringing about change in one's life and in one's family, the Word of God says in Habakkuk 2:2, *"Then the Lord answered me and said: 'Write the vision and make it plain on tablets, that he may run who reads it.'"* In every area of our lives where we see the need for change, it is highly desirable to write down the vision of where you want to be, what God has shown you, or what you should be seeking to become. Then put it in a place where you can refer to it and make sure that you do refer to it on a regular basis.

It occurred to me that in marriage it would be useful for a husband to clearly define his vision of where his house, i.e., his spiritual house and his physical house, i.e., his family are going, in that order, that the wife and the other family members may know where the husband is taking them, and where the Father is taking them. This vision is not necessary complex and should not be carnal, but it might state we will serve the Lord our God with all our hearts, with all our minds, with all our soul and with all our strength. We will do all that He calls us to do, no matter what the cost. We will place His word first in our lives. We will seek His assistance to utterly destroy anything in our lives that becomes an idol. We will ask Him to judge us severely and correct us harshly that we may serve Him more perfectly and be found faithful on the Day of Judgement.

Those are a few points that I believe are really important. Further components might include specific areas of the Ministry and calling that has been given to the husband, his wife, and his family. It is

possible that the vision might include career, business, and other worldly goals, but it is increasingly becoming apparent to me that this is likely to be counter-productive and not in the Will of God. The moment that we reach a point where we start to focus on the things of this world, we become distracted from the things of God. It does not matter what occupation or career God has given us, the minute we cease through God that occupational or career is [inaudible 00:19:16] making. In other words we cease through God that is a means of God providing finances and accommodation and clothing, etc., for us in order that we may do what He has called us to do, we start to wander from the narrow way and to drift away from God.

It does not matter if one is called to be President of a nation, or President of a multibillion-dollar corporation, God has only put us there for His purpose. Accordingly, if we fail to accomplish the things that He has put us there to do, whether it is to re-establish the Word of God in schools, to use our position for world evangelism to generate large sums of money for the work of the ministry, the minute that career or occupation occupies our time, to even the slightest extent at the expense of the Lord's work, that occupation has become an idol. We should pray for the Lord to utterly destroy it even if that leaves us destitute and living in the ghetto, remembering always that the Word of God says that the righteous will never beg bread.

### **Difficulty changing**

Recognise too, that most people have great difficulty changing. In the secular world, most people have great difficulty changing their behaviour in response to changes in environmental and business conditions. In any business process improvement, information system, or strategy implementation project, the management of change is critical. Many projects fail without effective change management. This includes communicating to start, preparing them for change, training them in the new ways and generally facilitating and easing the change process. It is important to recognise that it is the head that is responsible for thought, reasoning, etc. The behaviour of the body will only change if the head gives different instructions, or if the body is trained to respond differently to instructions. In other words, the behaviour of the body is corrected by training. If the body refuses to accept instructions from the head, the body becomes dysfunctional. In natural terms, a person whose body does not respond to instructions from the head is a paraplegic or is otherwise physically dysfunctional.

### **Training the body**

By the same token, when the Body of Christ of the Church does not respond to instructions from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Church and thus the world, becomes increasingly dysfunctional. The process will seriously hurt the Lord Jesus Christ. In the same way, the wife who refuses to submit to her husband seriously hurts her husband spiritually and emotionally and the marriage becomes dysfunctional. As with learning to type or learning any skill, it takes time to train the body to do new things, particularly when these new things require dexterity, which is contrary to previously learned movements.

For example, when one has been writing with the pen or pencil and one starts to learn how to type, it is necessary to spend a considerable amount of time doing routine exercises and drills in a formal training environment before one is able to type with any confidence without looking at the keyboard. It takes considerably more time before one is able to touch type without looking at the keyboard and at an acceptable speed, until one has learned to type words and not letters, one cannot type with any facility. Once one has learned to type a reasonable vocabulary, and one's hands and fingers have become comfortable with the keyboard, it is possible to type with increasing speed. A new typist might

only be able to type at about 20 words a minute, whereas a well-trained and well-practiced typist may type at 60 words or as much as 90 words in it.

In order to touch type at 20 words a minute, the trainee typist must spend time daily practising basic finger exercise, three letter sequences and then short words, but the hands must be willing to struggle to do what the head tells them. They may even experience cramp and discomfort but the head will require them to keep going if the head is serious about learning to type. At the same time, a person can be really good at typing but not be able to ride a horse. This does not in any way reflect on who they are. If they need or desire to ride a horse, they must also go for lessons. Again, they will first attend beginners classes, then intermediate, and finally advanced classes. In the process, they will almost certainly fall from a horse in a number of occasions and may also injure themselves. However, if they are serious about learning to ride, they will pick themselves up, dust themselves off and start all over again, so to speak. Over time, they will develop skills as a horse rider and if they exercise sufficiently and make the effort they can become extremely proficient. Horse riding is a learned skill.

In both cases, in order to develop a high level of proficiency whether as a typist or a horse rider, a lengthy period of training is required. This training develops muscles, reflexes, knowledge, experience and general skills and confidence, in both the physical and intellectual realms, until one is able to execute the new skills without conscious thought. A typist who types at 90 words a minute does not consciously think of what the fingers are doing or where the letters are on the keyboard, or even how to spell the word. They simply type the word as a learned pattern of coordinated muscle and finger movements. They do not even need to look at the screen or keyboard in order to type accurately. In fact, a typist at this level of performance, types without conscious thought as a purely reflex action.

In the same way, the horse rider eventually sits upon the horse without any conscious thought concerning the muscular and other body reflexes that are necessary to direct the horse and remain seated, even when galloping and jumping over a rough terrain. These two examples serve to give a clearer perspective in the natural realm of the process that is required for us to change and learn new skills. Taking account of these examples which clearly indicate the amount of time and effort that is required for the human body to learn new physical skills, it is apparent that human beings will take time to learn new spiritual skill as well.

### **Stages of development**

Scripture refers to three stages of development in our spiritual walk: Children, young men and fathers, mature men. In 1 John 2:12-15 we read, *"I write to you, little children, because your sins are forgiven you for His name's sake. I write to you, fathers, because you have known Him who is from the beginning. I write to you, young men, because you have overcome the wicked one. I write to you, little children, because you have known the Father. I have written to you, fathers, because you have known Him who is from the beginning. I have written to you, young men, because you are strong, and the word of God abides in you, and you have overcome the wicked one. Do not love the world or the things in the world. If anyone loves the world, the love of the Father is not in him."*

We must therefore expect that as we grow in Christ, we will undergo similar spiritual experiences to growing up from childhood, to young men, to fully grown mature adult men as an analogy. Or in the example of the beginner typist, the intermediate and the advanced typist; same with the horse rider. The same applies in marriage. As we develop the necessary disciplines and skills, whether it is the wife in submitting to her husband, whether it is the husband in drawing close to Christ and serving him, whether it is any prospect of walking in the Spirit, whether it is a revelation of judgement, whether it

is a revelation of some aspect of marriage, whether it is a revelation of the importance of giving and loving, sexual lovemaking within a marriage is a critical component of building a strong house and building an enduring and lasting marriage. All of these require change to a great or lesser extent. All of them require learning. All of them require new skills and many of these aspects will be touched on in Volume 2 of this series, in terms of developing the skills that are necessary to come into the place where God desires us to be with a marriage which truly is Heaven on Earth.

Adaptation in change in marriage applies to the spiritual interpersonal and physical dimensions. At first marriage, spouses should have no experience of making love, and significant effort is required to become proficient in the art of making love. Many people in the Body of Christ would have that statement as carnal, but I would ask you to consider the teachings thus far and realise that sexual lovemaking in marriage is the most intensely spiritual experience available to man in a relationship between husband and wife, as distinct from a relationship between God and man. I would submit to you that if you are not willing to consider the spiritual dimension of your marriage, you will have great difficulty in fully comprehending and experiencing the spiritual dimension of your marriage to the Lord Jesus Christ.

If we address the spiritual realm, in the first instance, the training is undertaken by the Holy Spirit. However, Scripture also tells us that we are led by the Spirit of God, which is the Spirit of the Father. Therefore we see that we are taught by the Holy Spirit and led and directed by the Spirit of the Father. In other words, Jesus personally does not train nor discipline His bride. His Father and the Holy Spirit train and discipline His bride. By the parallel of Ephesians 5:29-31 which we have used repeatedly, we deduce that it is not for the husband directly to train and discipline his wife. However, he is required to teach his wife at home. Consider 1 Corinthians 14:35, *"And if they (women) want to learn something, let them ask their own husbands at home; for it is shameful for women to speak in Church."*

Bear in mind that in the typing and horse-riding examples, a third party gives instructions to the head, which in turn gives instruction to the body. We thus see in the spiritual sense that Jesus, the head of the man takes instruction from his Father with regards to instructing his body, the Church. In an ideal Christian society, the Church would be effectively be all men in the Body of Christ, all of whom, or nearly all of whom would be married. Since we have seen from Scripture that all women are intended to be married, all women would fall under the headship of their husbands. So again, we see that there is a serious anomaly in the Body of Christ today where a very, very substantial number of Christian women are either unmarried or married to unbelievers, whereas it was in fact the Father's intention that all Christian women should be married to believers.

In all things remember that Jesus came that we should have life and have life more abundantly. John 10:10-11, *"The thief does not come except to steal, and to kill, and to destroy. I (Jesus) have come that they may have life, and that they may have it more abundantly. 'I am the good shepherd. The good shepherd gives His life for the sheep.'"* Jesus is the word. John 1:14, *"And the Word became flesh and dwelt among us, and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth."* Also, all good things come from the Father of lights above.

James 1:17, *"Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and comes down from the Father of lights, with whom there is no variation or shadow of turning."* Therefore whatever the Word of God, i.e. Jesus says about marriage, be it submission or anything else, it is for the best. It is good and it is provided that we may have abundant life. This is really important in considering many of the issues of doctrine that have been raised in this series. We need to understand that no matter how much our current understanding and our current societal pressures may say to us, that what has been taught

here regarding virginity, adultery, divorce, and so on and so forth, is onerous and unachievable; that is not the case. That is a life from The Pit of hell.

### **The fullness of love and blessings of God**

If it is in the Word of God, it is because that is what God, in His love for us, has appointed and ordained, and it is right and fitting that we should seek to apply those Scriptures in our lives. If we do, our lives will be blessed, and we will experience the fullness of the love and the blessings of God. It is only by putting the Word of God first that we will come into a place where we can experience Heaven on Earth in our marriages.

Remember also that Jesus is humble, meek and gentle, and the husband should in turn be humble, meek and gentle with his wife. Taking account of the Scriptures addressed previously regarding rottenness in the bones and the wife tearing down her house, this requirement presents considerable challenges to the husband. If we recognise that our own godly and rebellious conduct is the same to Jesus, it should become easier for a man to walk in meekness and gentleness towards his wife. The process of change includes the following: One needs to introduce concepts a step at a time. Start at the beginning and systematically go on until you get to the end. The person must choose to or want to learn. There must be an incentive or a motivation to change. Love, not fear, must be used to encourage people to change. Love Jesus to become different in order to please the object of that love. Men love Jesus and Yahweh, women love their husband and Jesus, children love their mother and father in Jesus. Only love will produce change, not fear and not force.

### **Love**

Extreme force will produce change, but that change will be grudging and will not be permanent. The object of the forceful violence will revert to their previous behaviour once the force is removed. Change must be voluntary. Perfect love casts out fear, John 4:18 and is *patient, kind, long-suffering*, as we have seen. 1 Corinthians 13:1-8 in the Amplified Bible provides an interesting framework for considering the preceding statements.

Verse 1, *"If I [can] speak in the tongues of men and [even] of Angels, but have not love (that reasoning, intentional, spiritual devotion such as is inspired by God's love for and in us), I am only a noisy gong or a clanging cymbal."* We see here the amplification of love reads reasoning, intentional, spiritual devotion such as is inspired by God's love for and in us. This reinforces the point that love is a choice. It is a reason to choose. It is intentional, and it is inspired by God's love for, and in us. The challenge to each one of us, and particularly to husbands, is to tap into God's love in us and to release this to our wives in bringing about change as we are led by the Lord Jesus Christ.

Verse 2, *"And if I have prophetic powers (the gift of interpreting the divine will and purpose) and understand all the secret truths and mysteries and possess all knowledge, and if I have [sufficient] faith so that I can remove mountains, but have not love (God's love in me) I am nothing (a useless nobody)."* We see here that it does not matter if a husband has great revelation of Scripture. If he cannot communicate that knowledge to his wife with the love of God, and through the love of God, she will not be able to receive that knowledge, and she will not be able to change. It does not matter how much he shouts, lectures, or otherwise carries on; without love you will produce no change. To the contrary, he will instil fear, resistance and rebelliousness, in a wife who is not herself, sanctified and walking in love in submission. We thus see that the world, that is Satan's way, produces strife, division, hurt, and general distraction, and does not move the marriage or marital house forward towards unity, or bring in line with the Word and Will of God.

Verse 3, *"Even if I dole out all that I have [to the poor in providing] food, and if I surrender my body to be burned or in order that I may glory, but have not love (God's love in me), I gain nothing."* We see here that it does not matter how well the husband provides for his wife and how many sacrifices he makes to protect her and his children, if he does not walk in love, he gains nothing.

Verse 4, *"Love endures long and is patient and kind; love never is envious, nor boils over with jealousy, is not boastful or vainglorious, does not display itself haughtily."* We see here that love is patient and that love endures long. In other words, the husband never gives up trying to resolve issues with his wife. We also see that love is kind. In other words, the husband should never lose his temper or become angry. We further see that love is never envious or jealous, presumably on a competitive or covetous manner. Numbers 5:12-31 clearly indicates that if a woman commits adultery and is unfaithful to her husband, a spirit of jealousy will come upon him. Further, the husband is not to be boastful, vain, glorious and not to conduct himself haughtily. Presumably this includes pride in his achievements, pride in his knowledge of the Word of God, and pride in his ability to be led by the Spirit of God.

By the same token, the wife must also be patient and kind in her love and should never be envious or jealous towards her husband. This has a particular bearing on her tendency in the world and in the Church today to women to want to have their own identity, and their own career, and not just to go forward on the basis that they are part of their husband's house. Recently, a press report to high-profile divorce, cited a woman as stating that she was tired of being under her husband and she wanted to be her own woman and have her own identity. This is clearly unscriptural, and as we have seen in previous teachings, that woman is not in any way inferior in the sight of God because she is under her husband's covering. That is the way she was created to be.

Verse 5, *"It (love) is not conceited (arrogant and inflated with pride); it is not rude (unmannerly) and does not act unbecomingly. Love (God's love in us) does not insist on its own rights or its own way, for it is not self-seeking; it is not touchy or fretful or resentful; it takes no account of the evil done to it [it pays no attention to a suffered wrong]."*

Pride and bad manners are also not the way of love. 1 Corinthians 13 certainly gives a very strong indication that pride, and aggressive unmannerly conduct do not go together with love. Again, we see that the modern preoccupation with rights and getting one's own way is contrary to the way of God's love. Love is concerned with responsibility and accountability of oneself and with the damage that other's action will do to them. It is important to recognise that when somebody sins against one, as much as their sin may be damaging towards us, viewed from the perspective of the coming judgement, their sin is only damaging to themselves. Remember at all times that those who crucified Jesus were sinning. Jesus had committed no wrong. They had no basis to torture Him and to humiliate and treat Him the way they did, and certainly they had no basis to crucify Him. Recognise also that even if they had a basis to put Him to death, they did not have a basis to ridicule Him and treat Him the way they did. But in all of that where Jesus was without sin and the guilt was entirely on those who were abusing and hurting Him. Jesus, at no point reviled them, at no point spoke back to them, but He just loved them and in the end He said, *"Father forgive them for they know not what they do."*

### **Becoming more like Christ**

It is incumbent on each and every one of us who seek to become more like Christ to come to a place where it does not matter what people you trust say about us, that we do not respond other than in love. [inaudible 00:40:21] is called to account for our own sin. Accordingly, when a wife sins against



her husband, love requires that he gently draws her attention to the fact that she is sinning against him or against God, or against a third party and that because he loves her, he is concerned for her eternal welfare. Therefore, he encourages her to repent and turnaround from that sin.

In the second volume of this series, God-willing, there will be a tape dealing with issues of judgement in this life in order to give a greater understanding of what is being taught here. The reality is that we are judged in this life for our sins depending on how we choose to live our lives, depending on how we pray. We will find ourselves on the Day of Judgement either facing a situation in which our works are found to have been fruitless, and they will be consumed by fire and we may find ourselves carefully saved, or in extreme cases we may find that we have lost our salvation through repeatedly crucifying again the Lord of Glory through our wilful sin. We must see sinful behaviour on the part of others as being sin that is prejudicial to them as much as their sin may actually be hurtful to our flesh.

If the husband becomes preoccupied with the hurt that his flesh, his carnal nature and his pride are experiencing and starts to rant and rave, then he is not walking in love. The same applies to a wife. Furthermore, while he is behaving in this way, his wife will be unable to receive correction as previously indicated. Change cannot be produced by force or fear. Furthermore, where the husband finds his wife's behaviour and comments irritating, upsetting or hurtful, he is still not to be touchy, fretful, or resentful, or to change his behaviour as a consequence of the ungodly behaviour. In the same way, the wife is not to change her behaviour if the husband behaves in an ungodly way. This verse of Scripture contains a principle which is almost universally disregarded in the world today. There is an almost universal tendency if someone does something toward one that is hurtful or offensive, we respond by seeking to be more hurtful and more offensive.

Love behaves in exactly the opposite fashion. From careful consideration of this point, it is apparent that love is capable of producing a very different outcome in situations of strife and disagreement. It is also apparent that for as long as we walk in the flesh, we will have great difficulty in obeying this Commandment. Verse 6, *"It (love) does not rejoice at injustice and unrighteousness, but rejoices when right and truth prevail."* This verse contains a strong counterpoint to the previous verses. The implication of not rejoicing at injustice and unrighteousness but rejoicing when right and truth prevail is what love does not tolerate, injustice and unrighteousness, but seeks to bring correction patiently, lovingly, and gently without compromising.

### **Husbands and wives**

In my own experience this has been an area of love where I have consistently failed dismally. I found it extremely difficult to bring correction in response to injustice and unrighteousness without becoming irritated and [inaudible 00:43:37] with the party conducting themselves in such a fashion. It has been my observation that many other people seem also to have this difficulty. And yet once we express irritation, which is an indication of pride and intolerance, we greatly diminish the possibility of that person being corrected and accepting that correction. Thus, we find ourselves if we are not careful, creating situations in which our own failure to honour the preceding verses interferes with our capability to act as God would have us act.

Given that a key function of the husband is to teach and instruct his wife, it is necessary that he should be able to address issues of injustice and unrighteousness in her. If he is unable to bring correction gently and loving, and out of concern for the spiritual damage that she is doing to herself, as a consequence of his failure to walk in love, he will sin in response to her sin. His house will remain

divided because he has failed to assist her to change her position through love. It is quite possible for a marriage to remain deadlocked, and in sin and division for years if these issues are not resolved.

Similarly, the wife should not rejoice at injustice and unrighteousness in her husband's conduct, but if she becomes offended and does not walk in love, she will not be able to express to her husband her concern that he is sinning. In so far as a wife in her capacity as helper appears to have a spiritual responsibility to act as a watchman for her husband, it is vital that when a wife discerns unjust or unrighteous behaviour on the part of the husband, love requires that she gently communicates her concern to him. However, once that concern has been communicated, Ezekiel 33:1-6 clearly indicates that the responsibility for the sin will then rest with her husband.

At this point, it is not for the wife to endeavour to correct her husband by arguing or striving with him. She should bring the matter to the Lord in prayer, in the process committing herself to the Lord to submit to her husband, irrespective of his wrong conduct, but requesting the Lord to take the necessary measures to turn her husband from his sin. This prayer might go so far as to ask the Lord to bring the people that the Lord wants in her husband's life, into her husband's life, and to take the people that the Lord does not want in his life, out of his life. She might also pray for the Lord to open doors that the Lord wants opened in her husband's life and close the doors that the Lord wants closed in her husband's life. In seeking the Lord's guidance, she should not seek to dictate to him or to pronounce judgement on her husband. She should rather ask the Lord to guide her husband into the correct path and confess that it is possible that she might be mistaken and if the husband is committing an action which is absolutely clearly [inaudible 00:46:30] in Scripture.

Verse 7, *"Love bears up under anything and everything that comes, is ever ready to believe the best of every person, its hopes are fadeless under all circumstances, and it endures everything [without weakening]."* Here we see again that love endures no matter what happens. And it believes the best of every person. The world teaches us to be suspicious of people's motives and to constantly expect the worst. The Word of God is [inaudible 00:47:00]. Accordingly, if we encounter behaviour from somebody which initially looks suspicious or devious, we should believe the best of them. In other words, we should accept the possibility that there is a misunderstanding. Whether they are deceived in some other area, or they have some hurt or something that is causing them to behave in that fashion, we should not assume that there is some [inaudible 00:47:35] or ungodly or evil motive. If that is the case, the Lord will reveal it in due season. We are told to believe the best of every person. Not just the people we like, not just the people we are married to, but every person whether they are believers or unbelievers.

In the context of marriage, this means that both spouses should never give up on each other and should never cease to believe the best of their partner. It is not for spouses to judge one another, to condemn one another, or to write one another off in any fashion. It does not matter how frustrated and despondent either partner may be with the other. Love bears up under anything and everything.

### **Removing covering**

The only deviation from this is the point at which the one spouse has gone so far away from the Word of God, and the Will of God, and has finally been rejected by God that the Lord might at that point, end the marriage and bring about a divorce situation. But even then it is not for the spouse that is in right standing with God and that God tells to divorce to judge or condemn the other.

At the same time, as presented in previous teachings, certain situations may arise where a wife persists in refusing to submit in criticising and attacking her husband, or otherwise acting in a damaging and unacceptable fashion. As we have seen in a previous teaching, it is possible for a wife to pull her house down and to cause a sensation comparable to rottenness in the bones of her husband. If the husband has taken all reasonable measures scripturally and in the Sight of God, he is then in a position to take the measure of withdrawing his covering and handing his wife over to Satan for disciplining that was taught in a previous teaching. However, the husband should ensure that he has made a significant effort before God to work in 1 Corinthians 13, love, as discussed here before he takes such a step.

I am profoundly convinced that if her husband truly starts to walk in love, as dealt with in the preceding teachings on love, the need to discipline a wife by withdrawing covering and handing her over to Satan will be dramatically reduced. At the same time, the Lord has also shown me that there is a further intermediate step. It is possible for a husband who is at his wits' end and who truly believes he is doing right by his wife, to appeal to the Lord to judge both of them, and the matter in question immediately, and correct whichever is at fault. There would seem to be no reason why a wife cannot pray similarly.

### **Prayers**

However, any person who chooses to pray in this fashion must be willing to take the consequences. A suitable prayer would be: *"Father, I come to You in the name of Jesus, I do not know what more to do about the situation. I truly believe that I am doing and saying what You have told me to do and say, but I accept that I could be mistaken. I am really concerned about (name of your spouse) and I truly believe that they are sinning. I ask You Father therefore to judge (the name of your spouse) severely and correct them harshly that they may serve You more perfectly. I ask You also to judge me severely and correct me harshly that I may serve You more perfectly. I ask that You will do this in a fashion that whichever of us is judged will have no doubt that they have been judged in order that we may resolve this matter in the near future. Father I ask You that in this matter Your will and not our will be done, in Jesus' name."*

This is an extremely important prayer as an intermediate step in dealing with a situation in which husband and wife cannot agree in one spouse or bad for that matter, feel that there is no more that can be done about the situation. I must stress here that you must then be alert for the indications of judgement. If one spouse suddenly has taken ill or experiences all sorts of hindrances and difficulties in their work or domestic situation, while the other spouse experiences favour and reflow of the spirit, then that would be a fairly clear indication that the one has been judged. This is not an occasion for gloating on the part of one who has been found to be correct in that situation. It is again a case for the one who prayed that prayer in love to go to this spouse and say, *"I prayed this prayer, and this is what has happened and I would ask you to repent and come into agreement with me, and to resolve this issue so that we can go forward together."* Clearly, with what I have just said, a wife does not want to pray that sort of prayer in a hurry. It is for her husband and for Jesus to discipline her husband, but she can certainly pray to the Lord for Him to discipline her husband.

At the same time, if somebody prays such a prayer and finds that they are taken ill and that they experienced difficulties or whatever, they must have the integrity before God to recognise that in fact they were in error, that they have been judged to repent and turn around, and to repent to their spouse and confess their sin.

It must be stressed that as best I understand the Scriptures, it is only possible for a husband to withdraw his covering and hand a wife over to Satan for correction, it is not possible for a wife to hand her husband over. Only Jesus can do this. It does however seem possible that if a wife appeals to Jesus to intervene when her husband is dealing unrighteously towards her, that Jesus will hand her husband over for correction, if necessary. We must however, recognise that handing over to Satan is not a trivial matter. It is only to be adopted when all other avenues have failed and it is the last resort prior to divorce. I am profoundly convinced that if the principles taught in this series and the second volume are applied, this can be avoided in nearly all instances.

### **Making love**

Verse 8, *"Love never fails [never fades out or becomes obsolete or comes to an end]. As for prophecy (the gift of interpreting the divine will and purpose), it will be fulfilled and pass away; as for tongues, they will be destroyed and cease; as for knowledge, it will pass away [it will lose its value and be superseded by truth]."* Love never fails. This is an enormously important truth when discussing the subject of marriage. We have seen in the preceding paragraphs as well as in the previous teachings on love, *'Do you love like Jesus loves and learning to love,'* that love is fundamentally important to serving God and therefore in making marriage work. We have also seen that God's form of marriage is very different from what is generally believed and talked in the Church today. And particularly, we have seen that it is possible for any believing man to marry any believing woman, and for the marriage to succeed provided they apply the principles contained in the Word of God. We have seen that sexual intercourse within marriage is in fact *'the act'* of marriage. In addition, we have seen that the One Flesh Bond is a direct consequence of sexual lovemaking in marriage, and that the intensity and frequency of lovemaking within marriage, in fact builds, or makes love.

From consideration of the analysis of 1 Corinthians 13, it is also apparent that in marriage in which both the husband and the wife consistently and diligently adhere to the guidelines contained in this passage of Scripture discussed above, will succeed. In fact, I would suggest that a marriage in which the husband and wife consistently love each other according to 1 Corinthians 13, and give themselves sexually to one another without reserve, with the wife desiring her husband and making love to him as Scripture requires, refer Genesis 3:16, and submitting to her husband in love, will be guaranteed to succeed and be unbreakable and be a truly wonderful marriage. This form of love must be contrasted with the lustful love applied by the world. This worldly love is dependent on the appearance, attractiveness or sex appeal, as it is called, of the object of affection, as well as on the conduct of the object of affection. This worldly love has no scriptural basis and is really only lust and covetousness. It has no prospect of success in a long-term relationship.

However, unbelievers who apply the principles of 1 Corinthians 13 in their relationship, where the wife submits to, and desires the husband, and where there is an excellent sexual relationship, will have an excellent marriage. This is an important understanding, as these are fundamental principles of marriage, which God has planted in the heart of man. Sadly, there are probably as many, if not more, excellent marriages outside the Body of Christ as there are in it, and there are not many in either. Accordingly, for the Church to position itself as the world authority on marriage when there is more divorce in the Church and out of it is gross hypocrisy, it is vital that the Church diligently examine its doctrines concerning marriage and the Word of God and makes the adjustments that are necessary, many of which have been identified in this series of teachings. Provided we recognise these fundamental truths and adjust our beliefs and lifestyle to accord with them, we will see a dramatic turnaround in marriages within the Body of Christ.

Continuing with 1 Corinthians 13:9-13 we read, *"For we know in part and we prophecy in part, but when that which is perfect has come, then that which is in part will be done away. When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child, but when I became a man, I put away childish things. For now, we see in mirror dimly but then face-to-face now I know in part but then I shall know just I also in that. And now I abide, faith, hope, love is free, but the greatest of these is love."* This passage reinforces the fact that our knowledge is fragmentary, incomplete and imperfect, and contains other warnings about the limited state of our knowledge and understanding in this life. Accordingly, we are well advised to reassess much of that which is believed and taught by the Church concerning marriage, and also to recognise that this passage of Scripture indicates a greater understanding will be given at the end.

### **The Church and marriage**

Surely, the Church has become a man, and surely the Church is required to put away the childish things of its youth and its young adult years. It is time for the Church to return to the full truth of Scripture. It is time for the Church to stop making childish excuses as to why it ignores passages of Scripture. As I said before, out of a teaching of Creflo Dollar on faithfulness, when we stand before the judgement seat of Christ, 'why' would be irrelevant. We will be judged according to the Word of God, not according to what a wife or a husband, or a son or a daughter, or mother or father, or an uncle or an aunt, or the pastor or the bishop, or the priest, or whoever did. We will be judged according to the Word of God and our excuses and our explanations will be irrelevant.

In this teaching, we continue to see that the subject of making marriage work the way God intended is immensely challenging. God-willing, the teachings that follow will provide further guidance on the issues raised in this teaching. The final tape in Volume 1 of this series will, God-willing, provide a summary of everything that has been taught so far. Thereafter, Volume 2 addresses in considerable detail the compendium of knowledge which is necessary for marriage to work in practice and in fact, it is also a compendium of useful references in terms of how one should draw closer to Christ in every area of one's life.

*"Father in the name of Jesus, I ask that if there is anything that has been uttered in this tape that is contrary to Your Word or contrary to Your Will that You will blow it away and that it will find no root in the hearers. But I ask too Father, in the name of Jesus that that which is of You will find deep root in the hearts of the hearers and that it will grow and blossom and produce abundant fruit in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ. Amen."*

## **03 20 Closure - The Scriptural Definition of Marriage, Divorce and Adultery**

Volume 1 of the series, *'Understanding God's Way in Marriage.'* It is tape number 20, and Volume 1 deals with the scriptural definition of marriage, divorce and adultery. In this tape, I will seek just to provide a headline summing up of the set of tapes in Volume 1 and the messages, and then to give you an outline of Volume 2.

### **First teaching**

I would encourage you, if you are listening to this tape out of sequence, to listen to the whole series of 40 tapes in sequence. I felt throughout this series, as the Lord has been leading me with the

preparation of this series, that He has been putting together a particular message through the sequences of what is presented. But of course, by all means, if you want to depend on the series as you go, that is between you and the Lord. This series comprises over and above this tape, 19 tapes in Volume 1. The tape number 1 led a foundation in terms of the scriptural definition of marriage, divorce and adultery. It provided a fairly comprehensive vision from an article called '*Wow! So that's how Jesus loves me!*' in terms of the prophetic significance of marriage, and why marriage was so important in this age and throughout the ages, and why Satan was so determined to destroy marriage. Throughout this series the foundation Scriptures have been Ephesians 5: 29-31, which clearly establish a very distinct and very close parallel between the relationship between the Church and Jesus Christ as the Body of Christ and the wife and the husband as the One Flesh body of the husband.

In Volume 1 we also considered a variety of Scriptures pertaining to judgement and the fact that adulterers would have no place in the Kingdom of Heaven. We therefore established that a detailed analysis of Scripture concerning marriage was by no means an incidental or trivial expectation of the life of any Christian. It was absolutely fundamental to understanding the relationship between Jesus Christ and his Church, and furthermore given that it was asserted that there were many, many things wrong with marriage, and that the fact that more than 60% of marriages in the world and in the Church end in divorce, and that currently statistics indicate that more marriages in the Church end in divorce and in the world, was an indicator that the state of marriage in the Church, and in the world, was in a terrible shambles, and that the wrath of God was kindled against those who were not preaching the truth concerning marriage. Therefore, the series of which this is the 20th tape was of great importance.

I should perhaps add that when I started this series, I was envisaging about five or six tapes, but every occasion as I completed a tape, as I completed a teaching, the Lord was giving me more messages and giving me the direction. Whereas a week or so ago, when I started preparing the previous message, message 19 in this series on '*Facilitating Change*,' I thought that was going to be the end of the series. By the time of recording this message, I realised that in fact, there will be a complete second volume of another 20 tapes, which will include a diverse range of subjects to assist believers and hopefully you, the listener, to put into practice the implications of these scriptural and doctrinal issues which have been discussed thus far.

## **Second teaching**

In the second teaching, we discussed in some detail how Scripture defines marriage covenant. We discovered with absolute certainty, out of the Word of God, that sexual intercourse with a virgin is the actual act of marriage, that the bloodshed from the hymen of the virgin during sexual intercourse on the first time, is in fact the blood of the marriage covenant. We saw that there were very distinct criteria associated with any covenant, and that no covenant could be cut without the shedding of blood, and that the marriage covenant was particularly significant in the sexual organ of the women faithfully represented the two halves of a covenant animal as represented in the covenant cut between God and Abraham, and also the covenant described in Jeremiah. Therefore, we saw that while the structure and appearance of the sexual organs has no earthly apparent use in Heaven, it is of sublime significance and is intended to provide the husband with a reminder of the covenant that he has with his wife whenever he sees her naked and makes love to her.

We saw also that through this lovemaking and sex, it was an absolutely critical aspect of marriage by way of example. The only thing even in today's world, although in today's world even this has been lost, the only thing that is actually prohibited by Scripture in marriage is actual sexual intercourse and

lovemaking and intimacy between a man and woman unless they are man and wife. From this we began to see that virginity is absolutely critical to understanding marriage and understanding the Word of God and the teachings that suggest that men and women should experiment before so-called marriage are absolutely false. We also saw that marriage is the act of sexual intercourse. Therefore, the talk of premarital sex is an absolute contradiction in terms, as well as being an abomination in the Sight of God. At the end of the day, it was apparent that there is much that needs to be rectified in terms of the teachings of the Church.

We have also seen in the series that wedding rings are a pagan symbol. They have no scriptural basis and no significance before God. Marriage vows have no scriptural significance and again, they have a pagan inheritance and we will hopefully, God-willing, discuss this in more detail in a teaching on the history of the Church in the second volume of this series. We have seen that marriage contracts, etc., also have no scriptural significance, but that is not to say that the vows and the marriage contract are not binding before God. It is just to say that they have no significance in defining marriage. Marriage is not a legal state; marriage is a spiritual state. In the same way, divorce and adultery are not legal states; they are spiritual states.

### **Third teaching**

In the third teaching, we discussed at some length the One Flesh Bond and submission, and we saw in that series that the One Flesh Bond is a spiritual tie that is physically formed in the spirit realm between a man and a woman when they have sexual intercourse. We saw that every time a man or a woman had sexual intercourse with another partner, a One Flesh Bond flesh bond is formed, and that is an unbreakable bond with the result that people who have been promiscuous find themselves in a spiritual state, which could be likened to being in the midst of a spiritual spider's web. They have been pulled in every direction by the spirits of the people to whom they have joined themselves. We saw also that there is no scriptural basis for cutting off this bond, but that it can be cut off as an act of grace and an act of mercy by the Father in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, under certain very specific circumstances.

We saw further that the extent to which a husband and wife gave themselves to one another in uninhibited lovemaking, without holding back, with a wife in submission and loving her husband and desiring her husband, that Scripture requires that this One Flesh Bond would become immensely strong over time. It would reach a point where there was, in modern worldly terms, telepathic spirit-to-spirit communication, where a man and wife, in principle are able to communicate between each other on a spirit-to-spirit basis even if they are halfway around the world, with almost no distance relative to if they were in the same room together.

We saw that submission was a critical part of the One Flesh Bond and we looked at a variety of Scriptures dealing with submission. In particular, we saw that Ephesians 5 says that the wife should submit to her husband in everything, not just when she feels like it, not just when her husband is behaving in accordance with the Word of God, but in everything. We saw also that 1 Peter 2 and 3 indicated that wives should submit to their husbands in the same way that Jesus Christ submitted to those who tortured Him and crucified Him without cause. In other words, a wife should submit to her husband even when her husband deals with her completely unrighteously and unjustly. We saw that Sarah was commended in 1 Peter 3 for calling her husband Lord, and for being a submissive wife.

We noted that in Genesis on two occasions, Sarah complied with her husband's request to lie first to Pharaoh and subsequently to Abimelech to the effect that she was Abraham's sister, and was taken

into their respective harems, but was protected by God. In other words, Sarah was prepared to go into a situation where she could end up committing adultery at her husband's instruction. We saw through analysis of that, that such a woman who submits to her husband in everything, will be protected by the Angels of God, by the Spirit of God, and that God is well able to protect a woman who is in complete submission to His Word and therefore in complete submission to her husband. But we saw that even if that protection was not present for whatever reason, be it sin on the part of the wife, the blood for that sin will be on the hands of her husband, provided she submitted. And we discussed a variety of aspects of factors which have a bearing on that topic.

### **Fifth teaching**

In the fifth teaching, we discussed love at some length from the perspective of a diversity of Scriptures which show the importance of love in serving God, and the importance of love in marriage that husbands are commanded to love their wives in the same way that the Lord Jesus Christ loves the Church. In other words, to lay down their lives no matter what the cost. This laid a foundation for the thread of love that has worked its way through this entire series of teachings up until now and which will continue into the following serious God-willing.

In the fifth teaching entitled '*The husband as covering*,' the wife builds the house. We saw a picture of the husband as a massive umbrella covering his wife from the onslaught of Satan raining down upon her. And in the same way, we saw the Lord Jesus Christ as an umbrella covering the husband. So, the imagery was that as long as the husband was in submission to the Lord Jesus, and was under His covering, none of the attacks of the enemy that were raining down would actually touch the husband. They would be deflected by the Lord Jesus Christ. In the same way, the wife, under her husband's covering in complete submission, was protected by her husband to the extent that if the husband sins and steps out from under the covering of the Lord Jesus Christ, he will bear the brunt of the onslaught; whatever Demonic attacks will take place, will take place against the husband. Whatever killing, stealing, destroying in their lives as a result of their sin will come directly upon the husband, even if the sin is in the wife, but the husband is not doing anything to correct his wife. So, we saw that a wife who sins with her husband's knowledge and alongside her husband, as she brings down wrath upon the husband.

We saw further that a woman who actually steps out from under her husband's covering by sinning, by going against him, brings herself wrath under judgement under the onslaught of the devil. She would bear the brunt of the attack if she was in rebellion against her husband. But at the same time, her husband would be judged for the rebellion and the division in his house. And therefore we saw that submission was in fact not a weak thing; it was a very strong thing directed at bringing the house into unity and protecting the wife. We also talked briefly about an example of two elderly women in their early 80's who had been married to men who had known each other from childhood. One woman had submitted to her husband willingly and joyfully throughout a long marriage. The woman had been very strong-willed and self-willed throughout her marriage. The other woman's husband died at an age of 10 years younger than the other. He was relatively poorly at the time of his death.

The wife who submitted throughout her life, her husband lived to his mid-90's and was fit until shortly before his death. By the same token, the wife who had submitted all her life cheerfully, was strong and fit, and at the same age the woman who had been self-willed and strong-willed, was weighed down with the burden of her own sin and had dragged her husband's house down with it.



So, we saw an enormous spiritual significance associated with much of God's Word around the subject of marriage. In the same way, we found Proverbs 14:1 says that a foolish wife can tear her house down. We saw a variety of other Scriptures which speak of a shameful wife producing a sensation like rottenness in the bones of her husband because she is bone of his bone and flesh of his flesh. If she is divisive and contentious, it brings a very high level of spiritual discomfort in an unsanctified husband who is not walking in love, and is likely to produce wrath, anger and all sorts of ungodly behaviour. We saw further that Scripture says that it is better for a man to live in the corner of a rooftop, or in a wilderness, rather than in a house with a contentious and faultfinding wife. We saw there is enormous responsibility on a woman in terms of how her marriage situation develops.

We also saw the stark contrast of the wife in Proverbs 31; a woman who is diligent, entrepreneurial, supervises servants, engaged in commerce and agriculture produced her own goods, looked after her family, worked hard and brought about a situation in which her husband was honoured and respected amongst the elders of the city in which she lives. We saw that clearly showed us that submission in scriptural terms is not a wishy-washy oppressive misogynistic thing, in fact, it is an extremely powerful thing.

A wife is a partner with her husband, but at the end of the day we saw from the consideration of corporate life in business in the military and so forth, at the end of the day there has to be a single person at the home, be it a Chief Executive Officer, or be it an officer commanding. And the people under that commander are not necessarily any less competent or any weaker than the person in charge. They simply subordinate their will to the will of the person in charge an army that has more than one person giving final command cannot run; people will go in different directions. In the same way, a house divided against itself will fall. So, we saw the importance of the husband covering the wife and the wife submitting and bearing up and being a pillar in the house of the husband.

### **Sixth teaching**

In the sixth teaching with regards to headship, we looked at the relationship between Jesus Christ and the Church as a pattern for the relationship between husband and wife. As we have seen throughout this series, but we concentrated on in this particular teaching, the whole Bible speaks in one way or another of the relationship between believers and God the father, Yahweh and God the son, Jesus Christ, and conversely gives us a pattern for marriage. The fact that there is relatively little explicit guidance given with regards to marriage in the Scriptures is not because God forgot about it. It is because the entire book of the Bible is about marriage. It speaks to us from the birth of the creation of man, through to the Book of Revelation, which speaks to the marriage of the Bride of Christ with the Lord Jesus Christ. We saw that anything that spoke about our relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ also had relevance to the relationship of a wife to her husband. Anything that spoke of the relationship with the Lord Jesus Christ to his Church, spoke of the relationship between the husband to his wife. Anything that spoke of the relationship of a believer to the Father, spoke again of this relationship.

We saw that the Word of God said that the Father is the head of Jesus, Jesus is the head of the husband, the husband is the head of the wife by extension, and since the wife is the head of the children in terms of educating the children and disciplining them and looking after them on a day-to-day basis, we saw that the relationship between the husband and Jesus Christ is mirrored in the relationship between the wife and the husband. We said that the Lord revealed to us that in instances where the wife was behaving in an unacceptable fashion to her husband, for example, she was not submitting, she was in rebellion and arguing with her husband, there was a strong possibility that the

husband was not submitting to the Lord Jesus Christ and was arguing and rebelling against the Lord Jesus Christ, not necessarily consciously, but by doing things which are ungodly and unscriptural.

Therefore, we saw that a sensitive husband, if he looked at his wife's conduct and identified that conduct which was ungodly, unscriptural, and unacceptable would examine himself in the Word of God, examine himself before God and pray, and would seek to correct that behaviour which was being reflected in his wife. We saw the same principle applying between a woman and her children as an indication of the things that the children were doing towards her were probably indications of things that she was doing towards her husband. The things that the children were doing towards the father were probably a reflection of what the father was doing towards Father God. We saw immense revelation coming through this deepening understanding of the parallel. We also saw in various teachings that prayers and worship is a shadow and a type of sexual lovemaking in marriage. We saw that it is incumbent on the wife to seek to come into the husband's presence and to praise him. We saw that the book of [inaudible 00:20:07] particular insight in that and that many of the norms and teachings and values that are espoused today are contrary to this model.

### **Seventh teaching**

In the seventh teaching, we examined in depth the scriptural definition of adultery. We saw categorically that adultery is sexual intercourse with any woman who is not either a virgin, nor a widow, nor divorced scripturally, in terms of a situation which God has permitted a divorce because her husband is beyond redemption. In the subsequent teaching on divorce, incidentally we saw that God [inaudible 00:20:48] from that divorce. So therefore, sexual intercourse with a divorced woman in many, many instances is likely to be adultery. We saw that all adulterers or no adulterers would have a part in the Kingdom of Heaven. We saw that all adulterers and fornicators would have a part in the Lake of Fire and Brimstone.

Therefore we saw that adultery is not something to be taken lightly. We also saw that since marriage is sexual intercourse with a virgin and not a contract or a ceremony in Church, or before an officiating officer, an enormous percentage of the world is actually living in adultery. Statistics indicate that something of the order of 60% of women or more, say that they were not virgins on their wedding night, and a very large proportion of those have had sexual intercourse with more than two men. So any woman who has had a sexual intercourse with more than 2 men, unless she is a widow or was absolutely certain that God permitted to divorce and permitted to marry, both the woman and her husband, or the man she calls her husband, since in many cases it appears scripturally that man is in fact not her husband in the Sight of God are living in adultery.

We saw also that again, this is a spiritual state. It is not a legal definition, it is a spiritual state that the woman is joined to more than one man and because she is joined to more than one man, the men that are joined to her are joined to one another. So, adultery is a spiritual connection between two men through a woman who has had sex with both of them. It is an abomination in the Sight of God. We saw that there was a requirement for the Church to seriously re-examine itself in the Word of God according to the Word of God around this point.

### **Eighth teaching**

In the eighth teaching, which was entitled time *'Tying up Some Loose Ends and Controversial Points,'* we addressed a variety of other issues, a number relating to acceptable sexual practice, etc. We found that a number of things which are regarded as being acceptable in the world today, were apparently not prohibited by Scripture. These addressed a variety of sexual practices which have some bearing

on practice within marriage. We saw that homosexuality is an abomination in the Sight of God, because it results in two men being spiritually joined to each other. We saw that the Church is really not comprehending or teaching adequately what the consequences of homosexuality are.

We also saw that the Word of God, in no way prohibits a man from having more than one wife. And in fact, we saw very convincingly through the passages relating to King David and other passages of Scripture that in fact, it is God's own heart for a man to marry more than one woman and His intention. Isaiah 4:1 shows us very clearly that in this age there will be many more women in the Body of Christ than men. This is a tragedy. It is an absolute abomination in the Sight of God the number of godly Christian women who are either without husbands, who are frantically seeking husbands, who are being used and abused, who have made married out the faith, or have fallen into harlotry, adultery and backslidden and turned away from the faith. Various other points were addressed in this particular teaching.

### **Ninth teaching**

In the ninth teaching, we addressed the question of *'Do you Love like Jesus Loves?'* This is a teaching that was actually preached at another Church, but which has slotted in very perfectly into this entire series in terms of better understanding the way Jesus sacrificed himself on the Cross. In that teaching, we saw an example in which an elderly woman in Russia was about to be beaten over the head by a young naval cadet who was the Head of the Communist Party at his naval academy and was also a KGB operative. Because she completely submitted, and she did not count her life important, but kneeling before him with her hands appraised to God said, *"Father forgive him because he does not know what he is doing,"* even though he was about to bring her [inaudible 00:25:17] down which could quite possibly have smashed her skull. And because of this woman's total trust in God and her total submission, an angelic hand reached out and grabbed this young man's wrist and he fled into the night in terror for what had happened to him.

Subsequently he jumped ship and swam five miles to shore in the middle of an enormous storm in the Pacific offshore of Vancouver in Canada, and eventually came to salvation, having been miraculously saved. We saw that if people will lay down their lives the way Jesus laid down his life, God will be able to touch people's lives in a way that cannot be done if we seek to save our lives. We saw the whole principle of laying down one's life very dramatically magnified in that teaching and it certainly just comes across again and again, if a wife will totally submit to her husband, she will have a profound influence on him.

### **Tenth teaching**

In the tenth teaching, we discussed at length *'Scriptural Divorce versus Putting Away.'* We saw that many of the Scriptures which in most translations of the Bible refer to divorce are in actual fact dealing with putting away, i.e., in other words, sending a wife away for no scriptural reason. As we explored deeper and deeper into what the Scriptures have to say about divorce, we came to understand that divorce is something which is intended by God to be very, very infrequent. It is only because of hardness of heart of either of the spouses which leads them into continual sin and unrepentant behaviour. We saw that it was not possible according to the Word of God for a woman to say that she no longer loves her husband or a man to say that he no longer loves his wife.

We saw that from 1 Corinthians 13:8 that love never fails. If you like, love never dies. We saw that even in that case, the Scriptures say that if a woman is unloved, that is no basis for divorce. We saw that if a man takes another wife, it is no basis for divorce. We examined a variety of other Scriptures

which are very controversial in terms of current teaching, but which are there in Scripture and cannot be ignored. This clearly showed us at the end of the day that there was virtually no basis on which a God-fearing man and woman in Christ could expect to be divorced with God's blessing, unless one of the partners had completely turned his or her back on God and turned to a point where they had committed an unpardonable sin, and had turned away from God. Even then, it would require God's direct leading before that divorce was permitted.

### **Eleventh teaching**

The eleventh teaching was summing up of the teachings thus far. To be quite honest, at that stage I thought it was actually the end of this series. But then, just after giving that message, the Lord started to take me into other areas, and we started to get into a process in our own lives of starting to apply some of these principles and starting to get into the practical aspects of application. The Lord also led me back to lessons, teachings and documents that I prepared previously, to integrate into this whole series. I began to see that this teaching was part of a much bigger picture that the Lord had than I had originally understood.

### **Twelfth teaching**

So, tape 11 is basically a recap of the key points from tapes 1 to 10 with a fair amount of Scripture. Teaching number 12 was entitled '*The Scriptural Response to the Sexuality of Teenage Girls*.' This tape addressed the fact that detailed analysis of Scripture and historical information indicated that the Lord intended girls to marry at about the age of puberty. This is technically about the age of 12 and a half, and throughout history girls are married somewhere in the vicinity of that age through to about 15 years old. Marriages have been arranged by their parents and those marriages have worked. The point was made that it was relatively easy for a girl of 13 or 14 marrying a man in his early 20s to submit to him. Her personality, character and views were still flexible, and therefore it was much easier for her to adapt to, and conform to her husband, and therefore marriage in that situation had a much higher probability of success.

It was also pointed out that the current thinking on that subject is again a reflection of Satan's interference to prevent things which are actually of God from being applied in practice. That does not alter the fact that it is illegal in many countries for contractual marriage to take place with a woman of under the age of 16. At the same time, secular statistics indicate that of the order of 60% of young girls have had their first sexual experience before the age of 16. Therefore, in terms of what the Lord has shown us concerning virginity and marriage, those girls in fact have indeed got married before the age of 16. They were simply told by the world that they are not married, and they are just naughty girls that are having sex. Generally speaking, they end up marrying somebody other than their first sexual partner, which means that in terms of what we have seen in this series, they are committing adultery, and that the man who marries her is also committing adultery. We see continuously, throughout this series, that the spiritual horror and the total abomination that exists with regards to marriage in the world today.

### **Thirteenth teaching**

The thirteenth teaching was on the scriptural relevance of '*Betrothal*'. In that, we went into some of the Scriptures which deal with the subject of betrothal. We saw that betrothal equated to the bride being bought at a price. We saw that there were guidelines with regards to the bride price for virgins in Scripture. But we also saw that there was absolutely no scriptural basis for betrothal to necessarily precede marriage. Again, having said that, sexual intercourse with a virgin is the act of marriage and

that accordingly any form of betrothal, etc., is nice to have, but it certainly does not create a marriage contract. We did see though that once a contract of betrothal had been put in place and a bride price had been paid, that a young girl had a special status due to the consummation of the marriage.

### **Fourteenth teaching**

In the fourteenth teaching, which was entitled '*Price of Righteousness, Lessons from Judges 19 to 21, Rape, Vows, Oaths, etc.,*' this was a tape that I recorded previously and draws some very challenging lessons with regards to how seriously the Lord views rape, vows and oaths. From that we saw that marriage vows are still binding. We saw that even if we take oaths foolishly, they are still binding. We saw that even if a woman says that she is a virgin and she is lying, the man who has sex with her will still be judged as an adulterer. We saw that if a woman truly believed that God had told her that she could get divorced and he had not, that was a lie, and she and the man who married her would both be guilty before God. We saw that even vows made under deliberate false pretence, as we saw the story of the Gibeonites who lied to Joshua, that they had come from a city far away, and in fact they had come from a city close by, Joshua and the leaders of Israel after they defeated [inaudible 00:34:10] and hundreds of years later when Saul broke the vow, God still held Israel accountable for breaking that vow. So we saw that our word is far more important in life and in marriage.

### **Fifteenth teaching**

In the fifteenth teaching which was entitled '*Marriage Matters for Men,*' we went through a fairly detailed examination of the age at which men are intended to get married scripturally. We concluded that there were no explicit guidelines and there were indications of men getting married possibly as early as 6 or 7 years old, but certainly typically from about 20 years old onwards. We concluded that the Lord has intended there to be at least a seven-year age gap between a man and a woman when they got married. In other words, the man should be seven years or more older than the woman. We also saw that some men only married at the age of 40, and that other men like Abraham took additional wives when they were in their 100s, but we also noted that as a consequence of sin, the vitality of men and the human race has declined steadily from creation.

We also saw the contextual traditional background to Jesus, the commencement of His ministry and the reported practice in Jesus day of sons going into their fathers' business when they reached puberty or adulthood, the [inaudible 00:35:45] in Jewish terms being coached in the father's business up until the point, where as a young adult in his early 20's, he was able to play an active role in the conduct of the business, and at the age of 30 take over the running of the business. This meant that a father who had his first child at the age of about 20 or so, would then be 50 to 60 years old, and consequently the father was still in a position to mentor and guide the son while the son ran the family business, but the father was free to participate more in depth in the activities of the community to be an elder in the gate.

We saw also that this progressive generational handover of responsibility in marriage provided an environment in which people could go and mature in a systematic fashion. We saw a parallel in the area of marriage and that a young girl of 12 and a half, 13, 14 marrying a man of 20 and coming into his father's house, or father's domestic arrangement, if you like, in terms of a far more small holding, or whatever would be assisted by her husband's mother and grandmother in the process of learning how to be a wife and a mother and raising children, etc. So again, we saw the unscriptural nature of a situation in which a man and woman, both about 20-22 marry, leave and go out on their own and try and build a life together, in the process making many mistakes, and in the process of allowing the

father's business many times to die. We also saw the responsibility for people to look after their aged parents and noted that this was also something which was not right in modern society.

We also noted that the Word of God says that a man shall leave his mother and father and cleave to his wife. There seemed to be some ambiguity in that relative to the example of Jesus ruling and reigning at the right hand of the Father. And we concluded that given that Genesis 2:24 has been shown in this series to be in actual fact a very spiritual passage, and not a carnal sexual passage in a sense that most people see it, that the leaving the father and mother may in fact refer to a spiritual separation in the sense of when a man joins himself to a wife, he creates his own house, which is distinct and separate from his father's house.

### **Sixteenth lesson**

In the sixteenth lesson, we talked about '*Learning How to Love*,' which was a summary of points out of a book called '*Lord, Teach Me How To Love*,' by Creflo Dollar. We went through an enormous number of very challenging Scriptures. We saw that our obedience to God is a measure of our love for God. We saw that without love, faith will not work. We saw that with lack of love or [inaudible 00:38:54] prayers we saw, that we should not be talebearers. In fact, we saw an enormous amount of that love which I certainly found very challenging and I am sure most of my listeners found very challenging.

It became apparent building on the previous teachings on love that the world today really does not understand God's agape love as set out in 1 Corinthians 13:1-8. They certainly do not put it into practice for the most part. It becomes increasingly clear to me that if we understand and apply by revelation of the Holy Spirit the principles of 1 Corinthians 13, many, many marriages will be turned around and a significant reduction in divorce will come about.

### **Seventeenth teaching**

In the seventeenth teaching, we discussed the '*Scriptural Response to a Rebellious or a Treacherous Wife*'. We noted that since we had seen very clearly in an earlier teaching that divorce is an absolute last resort, and it is only permitted in the event of total persistent unrepented treachery, which effectively means that the one party is headed for eternal damnation without further opportunity to repent. In other words, the magnitude of their sin, and the magnitude of their rebellion against God has reached a point where they can no longer be redeemed and be saved, where they have crucified the Son of God, the Lord of Glory, or committed the unpardonable sins of blasphemy of the Holy Spirit, and so forth.

Accordingly, we saw there was a great deal more to the relationship between husband and wife than we tend to believe today. There is an enormous onus on a husband not just to walk out and abandon or click out his wife using the pretext that she is not in submission or whatever to him. Particularly under the new covenant where we have the Holy Spirit, we have various spiritual gifts to enable us to walk in forgiveness and healing. So we concluded that there was a gap in our understanding, and as I prayed into that and the Lord showed me the basis of the teaching which was given which was essentially that given the husband is the head of the wife, a point may arise where a wife repeatedly refuses to bear the husband if her husband has applied the lessons of learning how to love in the sixteenth teaching and is really seeking to walk in love. A point may arrive where God will permit that husband to hand his wife over to Satan for a season and withdraw his covering with respect to specific sin.

We saw that this is scriptural in 1 Corinthians and 2 Corinthians, and we saw that this is an act which is designed to bring the flesh under control, and not something which is designed to be unpleasant and harsh in a vindictive sort of way. We understood that handing a person over to Satan means that Satan is able to attack those people more freely, particularly a wife who is stepping out from a husband's covering and bringing condemnation upon her husband as well. We saw that the person handing over a person to Satan, or man particularly, handing over his wife, it does not appear that a wife can handover her husband, although she might ask Jesus to hand over her husband. Most walk in love. They must constantly look for opportunities and signs of repentance and at the right moment they must intervene and the husband must re-extend his covering and tell Satan to take his hands off his wife.

However, this provides a very significant and very powerful spiritual means whereby a husband who is battling to deal with a wife who is not in submission, who is in rebellion, may use his authority to ask God to act in that. We also saw that this is necessary since there is no basis in Scripture for a man to believe he has any authority to discipline or punish his wife. He is told to teach her and he is told to love her. We saw from the analogy that it is the Father who chastens, chastises and corrects us, not Jesus. A husband could expect Jesus and the Father to take action against his wife, but he could not take action against his wife himself and certainly a wife cannot take action against her husband. However, by a husband handing his wife over for correction, that is scriptural, and in fact it is merciful since it prevents that wife reaching a place of total rebellion where she falls away, or she falls into apostasy and possibly turns away from life to death, which is the extreme of what tends to happen today.

If we love somebody, we will speak truth to them and we will seek to correct them from their error, not in a harsh and judgemental and proud way, but in a loving way. Handing a person over to Satan for correction is in fact an act of love, mercy and grace in order that they may not be judged in the life to come.

### **Eighteenth teaching**

In the eighteenth teaching, we went on to discuss the question of '*Is Polygamy Scriptural?*' This was based on a TV programme which was aired in South Africa in November 1999. It canvassed both points of view with a member of theology and a couple of ordained ministers and interviewed a number of families in Kwa-Zulu Natal, one with two wives and one with three wives. It presented a very convincing case that polygyny, a man with more than one wife, worked. The two people interviewed considered themselves to be Christians and working in the Church and considered that to be a godly form of marriage and a scriptural form of marriage.

The subsequent readers' discussion and commentary in the follow-up programme was summarised and various arguments for, and against the argument that polygamy was, or was not scriptural, were presented. It was noted that polygamy, per se, is a Latin word which means many either sex, in other words, many men and with many women, which is fornication in Scripture and is clearly an abomination but that polygyny, i.e., one man with more than one wife was scripturally permitted. A large number of different Scriptures were analysed to make this point.

The issue of the subject is not specifically a question of whether men should take more than one wife with living in monogamous societies and there is some stringent legal constraints in many western countries which prohibit a man from contracting marriage with more than one woman, although generally speaking there are a few or no legislative impediments to a man having sex with as many

women as he likes and for that matter, cohabiting with a number of women as long as he does not purported any of them as his wife and he has a constant relationship.

The minute that he seeks to dwell exclusively with more than one woman and treat her as his wife, and declare her to be his wife, he then comes into legislative and legal problems which can result in severe legal penalties in certain countries. Again, the objective of this teaching is not to say that mentions necessarily takes [inaudible 00:47:03] one woman is married to more than one woman. He must accept responsibility for every woman whose virginity he has taken. If she goes on and marries somebody else, she may well be living in adultery. In the teachings we have seen instances where God has retained the woman to the man who took her virginity 30 years after the event, and when the woman did not even know that this man had done it because it had been done under hypnosis. This is not being harsh, it is simply a reality that if we do not do what the Word of God tells us, there are eternal penalties.

The other aspect of polygamy that comes through in the teaching, is that there are many, many unmarried Christian women who cannot find Christian husbands, and that it is a shame that they are not able to find husbands. It is scriptural, and therefore there are responsibilities that Christian men have to face up to. They will have to give account for them on the Day of Judgement. We also saw that Scripture talks about a Doctrine of Demons, which permits people to marry. There was a very robust conclusion in this teaching that monogamy, or enforced monogamy, or a doctrine which permits a man only to have one wife and not to have more than one wife, is in fact a Doctrine of Demons and heresy of the worst kind. It is keeping many people out of the Kingdom of God, because it is a stumbling block to many people in African and Asian countries, to many Muslims, and many others who know either instinctively, or from the Word of God that the Scriptures do permit a man to have more than one wife.

We also saw that many men in the world were almost instinctively polygynous, and therefore we had the situation of many business executives having a wife and one or more mistresses but getting involved in fornication and harlotry because they were not permitted to have more than one wife.

### **Nineteenth teaching**

In the nineteenth teaching which discussed the subject of '*Facilitating Change in Marriage*,' we saw that as a consequence of the revelations contained in this series thus far, change was inevitably going to be required in most marriages. We also saw in terms of the overall vision of this series of teachings in terms of understanding God's way in marriage, that if we were to return to godly standards of marriage, if we were to experience Heaven on Earth as is indicated that marriage was intended by God to be, we will have to change. Husbands will have to make a concerted effort to change and become more like Jesus and to draw closer to Jesus that they can love their wives as Jesus loves the Church. Their wives will have to change, in many cases dramatically, in order to submit to their husbands.

We saw that a woman who is only married in her 20's and 30's, who has perhaps lived independently of her father's house, has had her own career, had her own accommodation in many instances, will have enormous difficulty submitting to her husband. We saw that there are certain measures that need to be taken in order for a woman to forsake the surrogate covering that she may have sought over herself in her single days. But the changes in behaviour and changes in thinking are certainly required in the vast majority of marriages if we are to turn the tide of 60 plus percent of all Christian marriages ending in divorce.



The thought was not unreasonable to expect this to take time. We saw that there was certainly a requirement to say, *Lord change me*, and that we also needed to recognise there was an earnest in each and every one of us to choose to change. Change is a choice; it is not something that can be forced. We saw that Scripture clearly shows us that you cannot bring about change, you cannot bring about submission and obedience by force, by anger, by rage, by demanding. It is something that is given freely and if it is not given freely, it cannot be demanded. We must love, and if we are not loved in return, that is between the object of affection and God. We see that very clearly in the Church where millions and millions of people did not know the love of God. They have never come to the saving knowledge of the Lord Jesus Christ, but God does not deal with them harshly. He loves them because the Word of God says he loved us first and Jesus came to the cross to die for us.

We saw that by way of example, learning to touch type or learning to ride a horse, we went through three major phases of basic induction just learning the basic skills. Then practicing and developing those skills, and finally reaching an advanced level of confidence and ability to do these things as a conditioned reflex without having to think about them. At this stage the skill becomes entrenched and does not necessarily fade away. We saw that this would take time, it would take passion, it would take love on both parts, and it would take both husband and wife, and it would take commitment. We saw also that this potentially applies to people's attitude to sexual lovemaking in a marriage if they are to experience the fullness of what God intended, and to experience the fullness of the One Flesh Bond.

## **Volume 2**

That tape basically closed off the first volume of this series on scriptural marriage, understanding God's way in marriage, and laid a foundation for Volume 2 which deals largely with practical issues surrounding what is necessary to put God's form of marriage into practice in one's life. Volume 2 of this series which follows on from this, deals with a whole spectrum of topics which are necessary to understand how we can experience Heaven on Earth in marriage. This series, as currently outlined, the exact contents may change as the tapes are prepared and begins with a teaching entitled '*Bringing Joy to Jesus*,' which is really to understand more about what brings joy to Jesus, and also to lay a foundation that it brings joy to Jesus if a couple in a really wonderful and blessed marriage and that one of the things that is really close to God's heart is to see marriage restored to what He intended it to be.

## **The Call**

The following lesson will be a summary of the key message from the book, '*The Call*' by Rick Joyner, which is a series of visions which clearly paint a picture of coming judgement and the need for us to sort out our lives. It provides a very stark background to this whole teaching in the sense that there is enormous judgement and wrath stored up for the Church and the world today, because of the heresies that have been taught in the name of Jesus Christ with regards to marriage. The level of divorce, the level of fornication, etc., and the Church is an absolute abomination in the Sight of God, and judgement is about to be poured out on the Church. It is incumbent on everybody who calls on the name of the Lord Jesus Christ to turn away from their sin and seek the truth.

## **Facilitating change in marriage**

The next teaching addresses further the subject of '*Facilitating Change in Marriage*' and builds on the teaching in the tape 19 in Volume 1. The next tape deals with the subject of faithfulness, based on the teaching by Creflo Dollar, which makes the point that when we come before the Judgement Seat

of Christ, the reasons why we did not do what God called us to do, the reasons why we did not comply with the Word of God, and the reasons why we did not honour God's Commandments, will be irrelevant. We will be judged according to the Word of God and what we were called to do, and if we did it, we will be found to be faithful servants. If not, we will be found to be workers of inequity and cast into utter darkness. It is a very challenging tape. It is one of a series by Creflo Dollar which I would certainly encourage you to get and listen to it.

### **Before the judgement seat of Christ in this life**

The next teaching is entitled '*Before the Judgement Seat of Christ in This Life*,' and it explains on a scriptural basis how judgement comes upon a sinless life. It explains more about how Satan intervenes in our lives when we sin. It explains that Jesus is the advocate before the Judgement Throne of God, and Satan is the accuser. Whenever we sin, Satan is at liberty to come before the Throne of God with accusations and seek permission to attack us as we see described in the Book of Job. Jesus is the advocate. He may plead for grace or He may permit us to be re-judged, and in which case, Satan can come and kill, steal and destroy in our lives. We see also in that teaching that Job suffered the way he did because of fear and pride. That again, is one tape out of a series of ten produced by this ministry which goes in to great detail addressing issues as to why people are in lack and in poverty and illness, etc., because of their failure to deal with sin in their lives. The tape is included again just to provide a context for this whole teaching.

### **Praying mysteries in the Spirit**

The next teaching is answers through prayer, '*Praying Mysteries in the Spirit*,' which is a teaching by Creflo Dollar, again, part of a series which proves that the Scriptures clearly indicate that if we pray in the Holy Spirit, if we pray in tongues, if we pray mysteries and secrets, and the prayer is known only to the Holy Spirit and to God, God will answer those prayers if they are prayed in faith. We saw also that praying those prayers in the expectation that they will be answered is most holy faith. And that tape again, one of a very powerful series, until we realise the full power of prayer in the Holy Spirit, we will not be able to bring about the change that we need, because we will not know what to pray.

### **How to discipline your flesh, Renewing your mind and The power of the tongue**

The next tape in the series, '*How to Discipline Your Flesh*,' teaching from Kenneth Copeland deals with issues of disciplining of the flesh. The next tape, '*Renewing Your Mind*' also by Kenneth Copeland and the next, '*The Power of the Tongue*' by Kenneth Copeland, three very important teachings in terms of bringing your flesh into subjection, renewing your mind with the Word of God and bringing it into line with the Word of God, and disciplining and controlling your tongue. All three of these are vital steps in bringing us into a place where our marriages can be healed and restored.

### **Healing**

The next tape in the series deals with the anointing and touching Lord's anointed and shows us that without the anointing we can accomplish nothing in our lives - the anointing of the Holy Spirit. Again, based on teachings from Creflo Dollar and Benny Hinn, they demonstrate the power of God as very few Christians experience it. As we draw closer to God, as we sanctify ourselves, as we deal with the sin in our lives, and as we seek to heal our marriages, we will see the anointing of God in our lives to heal our marriages, to heal our bodies, heal our minds, heal our businesses and so forth. We also see where one is confronted with teachings in this series that are controversial and finds people putting

them into practice or advocating them and attacks them, one is touching the Lord's anointed and that carries serious penalties for eternity, if it is not repented off.

### **Demonic Oppression of the Flesh and Deliverance**

The next tape in this series deals with the '*Demonic Oppression of the Flesh and Deliverance*.' It is the introduction of the series by [inaudible 00:59:39], which is a lengthy teaching of many tapes dealing with the subject of deliverance, an area which is known to very few Christians, but which is absolutely vital. Almost without exception, Christians today have some degree of Demonic oppression. In most cases fairly severe Demonic oppression, bloodline curses passed down through the generations because of sin in previous generations and some cases vows, and so forth, made by members of previous generations who got into witchcraft and Satanism and which bind even the present generation. Other sins of lust, lying, anger, jealousy and many other sins of the flesh are shown to be in significant measure as a consequence of Demonic oppression of the flesh.

These teachings address in great detail how this works and the extent to which, on one hand we need to recognise the sin, repent of it, and seek to resist it, and on the other hand, until we set free of the Demons that are oppressing us, our prospects of walking without that sin are relatively low.

### **Jezebel**

The next teaching addresses the subject of the principality that seeks to destroy marriage, that is Jezebel. The Jezebel principality is an extremely harsh and severe principality. It is a principality behind feminism, women's liberation if you like. It is a principality which seeks to put men in submission to women. It has been dominating the Western Church and probably most of the Church, in fact, for much of the last 2000 years. It has its root in Jezebel and Ahab where the [inaudible 01:01:35] Jezebel wore the pants in that household and the Jezebel has the Jezebel principality of Jezebel Demons and had been dominating marriage. The whole Roman occultic pagan's approach to marriage as it is practised in the Western Church today, lies a lot in Jezebel. The tendency to put the husband in a position where he has to win his wife's favour and submission is very much a Jezebel inspired doctrine. This teaching overviews what the Jezebel spirit is about, and what it is like, and discusses some issues with regards to dealing with it.

### **Cutting the marriage covenant**

The next teaching, God willing, will be on '*Cutting The Marriage Covenant*.' We have seen that there is not too much guidance with regards to marriage ceremonies, etc. The Scripture will address a variety of subjects in terms of how should we, in a godly fashion, prepare for marriage and how do we in fact go about cutting the marriage covenant, given that we have now discovered that cutting of the marriage covenant is the actual act of sexual intercourse with a virgin. There are very challenging aspects which need to be addressed if a young couple are to start marriage on the right footing.

### **Implementing change**

The next teaching, God-willing, will address the subject of '*Implementing Change*.' This will take the subject of change further. It will tie together the previous teachings, which represent a synthesis of what the Lord has been shown me over many years. As previously mentioned, in 1995, I cried out to the Lord concerning the level of divorce. Why was there so much divorce in the Church of Jesus Christ and by implication what should be done to stop it. It has taken from about March 1995, to November 2000 to come to a place where I have had sufficiently comprehensive pictures to be able to say that I

begin to understand the answer to the question of why there is so much divorce, and that was dealt with fairly comprehensively in Volume 1 of this series and how to fix it. This is dealt with fairly comprehensively in Volume 2 in this series.

In that process as I mentioned before, the Lord has taken me through a divorce in my own right and brought me into marriage with a divorced woman, and in the process taught me very many significant and hard lessons, lessons which in some cases we are still learning. And recently, as I fasted and prayed, seeking for my marriage to come into the place that I have described of being Heaven on Earth, the Lord has been dealing with us further on many things, showing us many areas of our lives, which need to change. Those form the basis of much of this teaching and will be addressed as I said, God-willing, to a greater extent in that tape.

### **Building the One Flesh Bond**

Building the house or building the One Flesh Bond as we have seen, the house of the man is fundamentally a spiritual entity. It comes about as a result of cutting covenant with one or more women. Marriage is about the One Flesh Bond that comes into existence, in the same way that adultery is One Flesh Bonds with a woman with more than one man, and fornication is One Flesh Bonds with one man with many women, and each of those women with many men. Homosexuality is One Flesh Bond between two men. So, we see that the need for uninhibited giving and totally considerate and compassionate loving sexual intercourse between husband and wife, is an absolute necessity for building the house. This will be developed more in that teaching.

The next teaching addresses a short history of marriage from 4 BC to 2000 AD. It is a summary of some key aspects of history regarding marriage that the Lord has shown me. These have a serious impact on understanding how the Church happens to be in its present situation, how it came to pass and again, hopefully giving us an insight to many people who have been misguided. For example, we will address, God-willing, the subject of the Jewish ban on polygyny in the 9th century, the Christian ban on polygyny in the 6th century by Justinian, and the introduction of ecclesiastical marriage not more than about 500 years ago (that is marriage by a priest or a pastor).

From that we will begin to see and address questions like if the Bible has ordained monogamy, and why was it necessary for the Christian Church and the Jewish faith to legislate against it? We will also look at marriage in the time of Christ in Rome, which is where the heresy of monogamy originates, about 100 BC. We will see that at about the time of Jesus, an emperor by the name of Caligula, who indulged in the most appalling, loose, sexual practices, murder and all sort of things, was alive and that in fact, the practices that the Pharisees were addressing their questions about to Jesus and when they spoke to him about marriage and divorce in Matthew 5, Matthew 19, and Mark 10, in fact, relates to the free putting away and the absolutely loose morals that were prevalent in Rome, and were filtering into the rest of the Roman empire at the time that Jesus walked here.

This teaching will provide a sharp and a harsh context as to why marriages are such a mess today. Satan has been attacking marriage for thousands of years and has very successfully confused and deluded the Church in the present age.

### **Responsibility of Christian men**

The next teaching will address the responsibility of Christian men towards single Christian women. As previously mentioned, there are many more Christian women in the Body of Christ than men. This presents enormous problems since the Word of God makes it quite clear that every one woman is

entitled to the covering of her husband. This teaching will address that subject and other matters that arise from that.

### **Reaching for the heights and pinnacles of marriage**

The next teaching, *'Reaching for the Heights and Pinnacles of Marriage'* will seek to tie together some of the key things regarding the statement that God has intended for marriage to be Heaven on Earth. Those will be developed in that teaching and will build on all the preceding teachings. And finally, the last tape in that series is a summing up, similar to this tape, of the first series.

### **Conclusion**

With that, I pray that you found this first volume of teachings on understanding God's way in marriage, the scriptural definition of marriage, divorce and adultery, a blessing, and that it has helped you to understand why there is so much divorce in the Church and in the world today. I pray that it has helped you to see that the situation today is absolutely appalling and a total abomination in the Sight of God. I pray that it has helped you to see there is enormous adjustment required and that this is going to be an immense challenge to anybody who calls themselves by the name of Christ. I pray that you will be challenged and that you will not let this go. I have no doubt the Lord spoke to me very sharply a few weeks ago on the subject that I was not doing everything that I could do to spread this truth and to publish it and to make it known.

He said very clearly to me that if I did not take serious, considerate, deliberate and disciplined action to remedy the problem, that I would have the blood of millions of souls on my hands for failing to give His message to the world. I would encourage you that if you have listened to some, or all of these tapes, to understand that you cannot turn back the clock. You have heard the message, you are called to be a messenger and God, the Father is saying to you right now, *"My son or my daughter go out and spread the words. Teach this truth, spread the Gospel that I have created marriage to be wonderful and that what is being done in the world today is an abomination."*

My brothers and sisters in Christ, if you have listened to these messages, I have to say to you that if you do not act on this, the judgement of God will no doubt come in your life and I would really encourage you in love to pray about this. It is a wonderful revelation. It is a real blessing once you come to understand the fullness of what it is about. I would ask you to seek God urgently, firstly in terms of what needs to be done to bring adjustment in your own marriage, and thereafter to share these truths with other people in the faith and even in the world. It is time, at the very least, that the Body of the Lord Jesus Christ and the Church of the Lord Jesus Christ actively and determinately seek to speak the word about virginity, and the fact that sexual intercourse with a virgin is the act of marriage. There is no such thing as premarital sex, and a man who takes the virginity of more than one woman is responsible for her for life before God. And if you get nothing else out of this series, I would pray that you realise the holiness and the sacredness of virginity and the absolutely appalling situation that we have today where even the Church does not recognise the sacredness and the sanctity of virginity.

*"Father in the name of Jesus, I pray that You will pour out Your Spirit on the hearers of this message. I pray that You will touch them. I pray that You will convict them. I pray that You will open their eyes to see the truth and that You will lead them to do whatever You have called them to do. I thank You that it is not by might, it is not by power, it is by Your Spirit that they will be empowered to accomplish everything that You are calling them to do right now, in Jesus' name. And Father, I ask in the name of Jesus that anything that I have uttered in this teaching that is not according to Your Word and Your*

*Will that You will blow it away and that it will find no roots in the hearers. And at the same time Father, I ask in the name of Jesus that everything that has been uttered that is according to Your Word and according to Your Will, will find roots in the hearts of the hearers and will grow and produce much fruit, in Jesus' name. May the Lord bless you and keep you and make His face to shine upon you, in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ of Nazareth. Amen."*

---

## Table of Contents of Volume 10: Part 2

Continuation of Part 1 .....	v
Table of Contents.....	vii
Table of Contents of Volume 10: Part 1 .....	xv
<b>Section 4: Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage .....</b>	<b>3</b>
Introduction.....	3
04 01 Foundation -- Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage .....	4
04 02 Bringing Joy to Jesus .....	15
[00:01:15] Preaching by Neil Dryer: .....	16
04 03 Kingdom Context - The Call - End of the Age .....	26
Divorce or putting away .....	26
Repentance, perdition and destruction.....	27
Rick Joyner .....	28
Seek Jesus .....	29
Judgement and persecution .....	30
Walking in love.....	30
Tribulation.....	31
Marriage .....	33
Judgement .....	34
The Church .....	35
Signs of the End Times.....	38
Sanctification.....	40
The Cross.....	41
Heaven on Earth.....	42
True Christians .....	42
04 04 Preparing for Change in Marriage .....	45
Preparing for change .....	46
Taking a step at a time.....	48
Heaven on Earth.....	49
Muslims and the Western Church.....	50
Do not judge.....	51
Sexual matters .....	51
Prayer for change .....	53
The anointing of the Holy Spirit and the anointing that is available for different areas of our lives.....	55

Principality that seeks to destroy marriage, Jezebel .....	56
Cutting of the marriage Covenant.....	56
Responsibility of Christian men towards single Christian women, reaching the heights, the pinnacles of marriage .....	56
04 05 Faithfulness.....	57
Faithfulness.....	57
Tithing.....	67
04 06 Before the Judgment Seat of Christ in this Life .....	69
04 07 The Realm of Exceedingly Abundantly -- Hidden Answers by the Holy Spirit .....	85
04 08 How to Discipline Your Flesh.....	98
04 09 Renewing Your Mind .....	113
04 10 The Power of the Tongue .....	129
04 11 The Anointing and the Four Offices of Jesus.....	146
04 12 Demonic Oppression of the Flesh and Deliverance .....	166
04 13 Cleansing the Temple of the Holy Spirit – and Jezebel.....	182
Deliverance .....	183
Temple of God.....	183
Demons.....	184
Godly parents.....	185
Sanctification.....	186
Covenants .....	187
Sacrifice, praise and worship .....	187
God's form of marriage .....	188
Heaven on Earth.....	189
Freemasonry and witchcraft.....	191
Lesson 3 deals with doorways to demonic infiltration and occult infiltration .....	191
Lesson 4 - Doorways to demonic infiltration, rebellion, and witchcraft .....	192
Wicker, the witches organisation, Jezebel.....	192
Lesson 5 - Doorways to demonic infiltration and sexual sin .....	194
Rejection, the healing of bruises and wounds .....	195
Seventh lesson .....	195
Love .....	195
Lesson 9 - Spiritual warfare.....	196
Prayer to untangle sexual bondages .....	196
Jezebel and Satan .....	197
Husbands and wives .....	199
Chapter 6, Church and nation .....	202



04 14 Covenant made by Blood -- Hesed - Agape .....	203
04 15 Cutting the Marriage Covenant.....	217
That's how Jesus loves me.....	218
Cutting the Covenant.....	219
Sexual act.....	221
Nudity .....	222
Marriage .....	223
Oaths, the cloth and the evidence of virginity.....	225
Other marriage ceremonies.....	228
Consummation of marriage .....	230
One Flesh Bond .....	231
04 16 Faith and Implementing Change .....	234
04 17 The Power of Negativity -- Preventing Change .....	249
04 18 Building the House - the One Flesh Bond .....	266
A Spiritual act.....	266
Spirit of Truth .....	267
One Flesh House.....	268
Taking accountability.....	269
Spiritual bond.....	270
Building the house.....	271
One Flesh Bond .....	272
Heaven on Earth.....	273
Harlotry.....	276
Consummation.....	276
Circumcision.....	278
The Word of God .....	278
Lessons to be learned .....	279
Esther.....	279
Serving God .....	280
The Covenant .....	281
Submissive wives.....	282
04 19 Building the House Continued .....	284
Wife and Husband .....	284
Lovemaking .....	285
One Flesh Bond .....	286
More than one wife.....	289
Divorce.....	289

Women to seek husbands .....	290
Building the house.....	291
Salvation .....	293
04 20 The World -- the Church and Marriage from 4000 BC to 2000 AD .....	294
04 21 Responsibility of Married Christian Women towards Single Christian Women .....	309
04 22 Living in Excellence - Reaching for the Heights of Marriage.....	326
<b>Section 5: Practical Application of the Marriage Teachings.....</b>	<b>339</b>
Introduction.....	339
05 01 Foundation for a Miracle – Fundamentals of the Faith.....	339
Marriage – Heaven on Earth .....	340
Jesus is the Son of God .....	341
Water baptism .....	342
Communion .....	342
Faith.....	343
Washing of feet .....	343
The Baptism of the Holy Spirit .....	344
Praise and worship .....	345
The name of Jesus .....	345
Love .....	346
The blood of Jesus .....	346
Fellowship.....	347
Fasting.....	347
Charity .....	348
Scripture .....	348
Tithes .....	349
Pray.....	349
Tongues .....	350
Sabbath and Holy days .....	350
Daily self-examination and repentance .....	350
Holiness and sanctification .....	351
Death to self.....	351
The coming judgement.....	352
Greater works .....	352
05 02 Healing Marriage -Who Are You Really Married to? .....	353
Marriage .....	354
Saul .....	356
One Flesh Bond .....	357

Woman's point of view .....	358
Past sexual relationships .....	359
Covering.....	360
Putting away .....	360
Uncovering.....	362
Losing virginity .....	363
Release.....	364
Civil marriage .....	366
Prophets.....	367
Seeking guidance.....	367
05 03 Resolving One Flesh Bonds .....	370
Believers and unbelievers - marriage .....	371
Challenges.....	372
Men and women living together.....	373
Abraham and Isaac.....	374
Testing your faith .....	375
Judah .....	376
Bondwoman.....	377
Vows .....	378
Custody .....	379
Loss of virginity.....	379
Bloodline curses .....	382
Ungodly taking of virginity.....	383
Deliverance .....	384
Restitution .....	385
Responsibility of existing wives.....	386
Transition process .....	387
Covering.....	388
05-04 What Scripture Really Says About Marriage – for Men .....	390
Sinners and adulterers.....	390
Definition of marriage .....	391
Virginity and Marriage.....	392
Covenant.....	394
Sexual immorality.....	396
Wives .....	396
Monogamy.....	397
One Flesh Bond .....	400

Steps to salvation .....	401
05 05 What Scripture Really Says About Marriage – for Women.....	402
Lake of Fire and Brimstone .....	403
Putting away .....	403
Godly marriages .....	405
Virginity.....	406
Marriage Covenant.....	406
One Flesh Bonds.....	408
More than one wife.....	410
Inheriting the Kingdom of God.....	411
Marriage on the altar .....	412
Steps to salvation .....	413
05 06 Divorce – First Seek Healing.....	415
Prayer .....	416
Basis for divorce .....	416
Marriages.....	417
Steps for divorce if necessary .....	418
Volume 1.....	420
Volume 2.....	425
Volume 3.....	429
Final thoughts .....	431
Attacks and guidance .....	434
05 07 Sanctifying Your Marriage and Cutting a Holy Covenant .....	435
Young women .....	437
Unresolved desires.....	438
Sanctifying the Temple of Holy Spirit .....	439
Prayer .....	439
Early days of love.....	441
Steps for spiritual healing .....	443
Cut off coverings .....	445
Rings .....	446
Washing feet.....	446
Consummation.....	447
Diet .....	448
Women and modesty .....	449
Bread and wine .....	450
Covenant.....	451

Vows and prayers .....	453
05 08 Deciding to Marry, Preparing for Marriage and Starting Marriage.....	454
Deciding to Marry.....	455
The Start of Married Life.....	457
Multiple Wives .....	457
The Woman's Perspective .....	458
Marrying the Right Person.....	459
Asking God for Confirmation .....	460
Physical Intimacy .....	461
One man, Seven Women .....	462
Preparing for Marriage .....	462
Sexual Intercourse makes Marriage .....	463
Civil or Ecclesiastical Marriage .....	464
Spiritual Preparation .....	466
Love .....	468
Starting Marriage .....	469
One Flesh Bond .....	470
Final Message.....	471
05 09 Recovering from Adultery, Divorce, Putting Away, Rape, Violence, Homosexuality, Lesbianism, Bestiality, Satanism, etc .....	473
Basic Disciplines .....	475
Adultery by the Wife .....	475
Adultery by the Husband.....	479
Divorce.....	481
Putting Away .....	482
Rape.....	484
Violence .....	485
Homosexuality .....	486
Lesbianism .....	487
Bestiality .....	488
Satanism .....	488
Sanctification.....	488
Final Message.....	490
05 10 The Implications of Isaiah 4:1 .....	492
Isaiah 4.....	493
Seven .....	496
Personality styles.....	498

Predictive Index.....	499
Armor of God .....	505
Isaiah 4:1 Marriage.....	508
05 11 Forging the One Flesh Bond (the Art of Sexual Love Making in Godly Marriage).....	512
Sexual intercourse .....	513
Techniques of lovemaking .....	516
Love .....	519
Dress and conduct.....	521
Basics of lovemaking .....	522
Heaven on earth.....	526
05 12 Further Considerations (and the One Flesh Bond Continued).....	529
Tribulation.....	531
Covering by a Godly man.....	532
Submission.....	534
Truth .....	534
One Flesh Bond .....	536
The art of sexual lovemaking in marriage.....	537
Final message.....	541
<b>Section 6: A Study on the Ministry of Deliverance .....</b>	<b>547</b>
<b>Section 7: Conclusion .....</b>	<b>549</b>
<b>Conclusion .....</b>	<b>552</b>



## End Time Issue Ministries

# The Almighty Creator Desires a DEEP Personal Relationship with YOU!

## Volume 10 - Part 1

Towards Heaven on Earth in Life and Marriage

Yah's Plan for Healing Marriage and Life

Recorded in 2000

Foundational teachings on the Anointed Life

**by Dr James A Robertson**



Following a dramatic encounter with the Almighty in 1993 in which the Almighty spoke audibly to him, James Robertson set himself to seeking the Almighty and serving Him with strong focus by applying all the disciplines of his Engineering training to ensure a rigorous relationship and line of inquiry.

By 1999 James had realized that there was massive error in the formal Christian Church and the Almighty told him to come out of the church.

In 2000, following a series of fasts, associated with prayers like *"lead me into ALL truth by Your Spirit"*, *"show me the level of my present deception and how to correct it"* and *"judge me severely and correct me harshly so I may serve you more perfectly"* James started to receive a stream of revelation and discovery about truths that were not widely known and started to publish what he learned by email to a small list of people.

Over the years, with more fasting, more praying and more seeking, James started to progressively get direct revelation from the Almighty relating to matters that were not known on Earth at this time. He continued to publish by email and more recently also on a website.

As a culmination of this search in 2013 the Almighty said to James regarding an unbelieving friend *"why would I want someone to spend eternity with me when they do NOT believe I exist?"*

Subsequently the Almighty said to James regarding believers generally *"why would I want someone to be close to me in Heaven, which inherently means I will give them great authority, if they do NOT have a deep personal relationship with me and have NOT proven to me that they can be trusted on Earth?"*

Some years before this point James became intensely aware that Father Yah (the true name of the Creator) was extremely lonely and had very few true friends where a friend is someone who does NOT demand things from the Almighty but who seeks to bring joy to their Father in Heaven.

As a consequence of these revelations in 2014 James published an article *"The Almighty Creator Desires a Deep Personal Relationship with YOU"* and *"Seven Components of Drawing Close to the Almighty Creator"*.

James regards these two articles as the most important messages there are regarding the Almighty and they form the core of Volume 1 of this book together with an article on *"Where will YOU Spend Eternity"* and a series of other supporting articles including a summary of the REAL History of the Earth and a detailed discussion of the Proof of a Global Flood.

These are in a set of twelve volumes, fifteen books, publishing nearly all of my articles since 1998. Articles and other material are also available on the Website [www.ETI-Ministries.org](http://www.ETI-Ministries.org) which is also contained on the USB Memory Card with Volume 1. The entire Book Set, taken together, provides an extremely far reaching analysis of many aspects of what is important in order to draw close to the Almighty Creator – this same information is available on the Website.

This volume contains transcripts of a set of teachings on *"Yah's plan for Healing Marriage, Towards Heaven on Earth in Marriage"* which collectively address most aspects of the Anointed Life. These teachings are accompanied by teachings on various associated topics which, together, give an extremely important view of how things are intended to be for Anointed Believers in this age. While there are certain key doctrinal errors in these articles that are addressed in other volumes of this set Yah says that the teachings in this Volume are extremely important.